A PARAPHRASE ON THE New Testament, With NOTES, DOCTRINAL and PRACTICAL. By PLAINNESS and BREVITY fitted to the Use of Religious FAMILIES, in their daily Reading of the Scriptures; and of the Younger and Poorer sort of Scholars and Ministers, who want fuller helps. With an Advertisement of Difficulties in the REVELATIONS.

By the Late Reverend Mr. RICHARD BAXTER. The Second Edition Corrected.

To which is added at the End; Mr. Baxter's Account of his Notes on some particular Texts, for which he was Imprisoned.

Joh. 24. 15. Choose you this day whom you will serve, But as for me and my house, we will serve the Lord.

LONDON:
Printed for T. Parkhurst, at the Bible and Three Crowns at the Lower-end of Cheapside; S. Sprint, at the Bell, in Little-Britain; J. Taylor, at the Ship, and J. Wyatt, at the Rose, in St. Paul's Church-Tard, 1695.
Farewell VAIN WORLD: as thou hast bin to me DUST and a SHADOW: these I leave with thee: The VESSELS VITAL SUBSTANCE I commit To him that's SUBSTANCE LIFE LIGHT LOVE to it The LEAVES & FRUIT are dropt for joye and seed Heavens heirs to generate to heal and feed Them also thou wilt flatter and molest But shalt not keep from Everlasting Rest.
The Farewel.

Time and Work end; Blest Souls are gone before:
Consumed Lights may serve to kindle more;
The dead can speak: God can his Lamps restore.

The Winds that blow them out, will quickly cease:
High Pride, rough Passion, God can soon appease;
TRUTH, LOVE and CONCORD raise with great increase.

The WISE, PURE, PEACEABLE, for this he'll chuse,
PROUD-WORLDLINGS, RAGING-FOOLS he will refuse,
And Snuffers, not Extinguishers, will use.

Yet Satan will not cease: Tares will be sown,
RULERS and GUIDES he'll strive to make his own,
By STORMS and SCANDALS some will be o'rethrown.

Diotrephes must Rule, Judas be Rich,
The Ignorant will err, young Ears will itch:
The blind will lead the blind into the Ditch.

Lord, convert Saul; Check Jewifh rage,
And Sects, which fad Church-Wars do wage;
Let LIGHT and LOVE PROUD WRATH affwage.

But those blest Souls who dwell with thee
Better things fee
And better be,
Than Adam, or the Golden Age.
An Account of the Reason and Use of this Paraphrase.

Reader,

This Paraphrase, written for my own use, being published for yours, in order to that end I owe you this account of it. A Friend long urging me to write a Paraphrase on the Epistle to the Romans, as being hard to be understood; when I had done that, I found so much profit by that Attempt, that it drew me so on still I had finished what I offer you. It was like almost all my other publick works, done by the unexpect'd conduct of God's urgent Providence, not only without, but contrary to my former purposes. God hath blest his Church with many new excellent Commentaries on the Scriptures; and I never thought my self fit to do it better than they have done: But that is best for some persons and uses to others. I long wished that some able Man would furnish vulgar Families with such a brief Exposition, as might be fitted to the use of their daily course in reading the Scriptures and instructing their Houholders. I found that many who have done it better than I can do, are too large and costly for this use: Some (like Doctor) very sound, are unsatisfactorily brief; some have parcelled their Annotations into so numerous Shreds, that Readers (especially in a Family course) will not stay to search and sift them together, to make up the sense. I like Dr. Hammond's order best: But 1. I differ from him in so much of the matter; 2. and took his style to be too lax; 3. and his Criticisms most useful to the vulgar; 4. and his Volume too big and costly: And therefore I chose more plainly, and yet more briefly and practically, by the way of Paraphrase, to suit it to my intended end.

But I must give the Reader's notice, 1. That where I seem, but in few words to vary from the Text, those words answer the large Criticisms of divers Expositors, as the Learned may find by searching them and the Greek Text; though I must not stay to give the reason of them as I go on. 2. That though I have studied plainness, yet brevity is unavoidably obscure to unexercised persons, who, as Learners, cannot understand things without many words. 3. That where the Evangelists oft repeat the same things, to avoid tediousness, I repeat not the whole Exposition; and yet thought not meet wholly to pass it by. 4. That where the Text is plain of itself, instead of an Exposition, I fill up the space by Doctrinal, or Practical Observations, seeing Practice is the end of all, and to Learners, this part is of great necessity. 5. That where great Doctrinal Controversies depend on the Exposition of any Text, I have handled these more largely than the rest, and I hope with Pacification and Satisfactory Evidence.

My great desire and care is, that I may hereby promote Christian Piety in Families. To which special end I also wrote my Poor Man's Family-book, and The Catching of Houholders. And had I not done is in many Books so oft already I should here let my self with greatest earnestness urge and inreat all Christian Parents, to the more faithful practice of Family Religion, especially in the wife and diligent Instruction and Education of their Children. Sure no good Christians would come behind the Jews, who had far less light and help than we have, who are twice Commanded by God, Deu. 6. 11. [Hear O Israel, the Lord God is thy Lord. Thou shalt love the Lord thy God with all thy heart, and with all thy
thy soul, and with all thy might. And these words which I command thee this
day, shall be in thy heart: And thou shalt teach them diligently to thy children,
and shalt talk of them when thou sittest in thy house, and when thou walkest by
the way, and when thou liest down, and when thou risest up:—And thou shalt
bind them for a sign upon thy hand, and they shall be as frontlets between thine
eyes: And thou shalt write them on the posts of thy house and on thy gates.

Yet now many thousand families called Christians, account this much Puritanism,
and needful, pietiness; as if the Scripture (even the Gospel of Salvation) were
only for the use of priests; yea some that disown the Popish restraint of the Laius-
licencyed, from reading it translated in a known tongue, do worse than Popishly re-
strain themselves. And those that in Baptism vowed to bring up their Children as
Christians in the knowledge of the Gospel of Christ, peradventure break that solemn
vow, as they Hypocritically made it; and by ungodly negligence betray Satan the
Souls of their Children (and themselves) which they devoted to God.

Reader, I beg of you as from Christ, for his sake, for your souls, sake, for your
Children's sake, for the sake of Church and Kingdom, that you will conscientiously
and seriously set up Family-Religion, calling upon God, singing his praises, and instructing
your Children and Servants in the Scripture and Catechism, and in a wife
and diligent Education of Youth. Hear me, as if I beg'd it of you, with tears on
my knees. Also, what doth the whole subject of the neglect of this! It is out of
ungodly Families that the world hath ungodly Rulers, ungodly Ministers, and a
swarm of Serpentine Enemies of holiness, and peace, and their own salvation. What
Country groaneth not under the Confusions, M.sries, and horror-Wickedness, which
are all the Fruits of Family neglects, and the careless, and ill Educations of Youth?
It is a work of great skill and constant care to instruct and educate your Children,
and to keep them from tempting Company and Snares. To cry out of drown or un-
faithful Ministers, while you are worse at home your selves, is but self-condema-
tion: Are Ministers more obliged to care for your Children's souls, by nature, or by
Vow and Covenant, than you are? Can they do that for whole Parishes, which
you will not do for your Household or your own Children? The first charge and part
is yours: if families treacherously neglect their part, and then look that all should
be done at the Church, you may as wisely send Boys to the University, before they
are taught to read or write, in lower schools. If there be any hope of the
amendment of a Wicked, miserable distracted world, it must be mostly done by Family
Religion, and the Christian Education of Youth. Godliness is profitable to all things;
but the grace of God is in the house of the wicked, and the ungodly betrayers of
Souls, of themselves, Children and Servants, will very quickly be summomed to a
terrible account: Especially those that should as rulers be exemplary to the vulgar
and are abhaind to own serious Family-Religion, as if all beyond some forms
Hypocrisy and lip-labour, were a dishonour to their bodies, or a needless thing.

This helps which I offer them that need it, is, that when they read the New
Testament daily in their houses, they may (not read all the paraphrase to their
Families, but) such particulars of Exposition and Doctrinal notes, as they find
most suitable to their case.

And I think it will not be unuseful, to the younger weak sort of Ministers
and the poor ones, that cannot buy larger Commentaries. And if rich men will
give their tenants and neighbours such Books as are suitable to the Instruction of
Families, and the People will diligently use them, it may do much to keep up sa-
ving knowledge and Practice, where the publick Ministry faileth most. The gr
of Mercy teach foolish Men to have Mercy on their Families and themselves.
The New Testament of our Lord and Saviour Jesus Christ.

T HO it be not known when, or by whom, all the Books of the New Testament, were gathered and made up into one, nor when, or by whom, this Title was put before them; and tho' for a time some Churches received not the Epistle to the Hebrews, nor that of James, the 2. of Peter, the 2. and 3. of John, that of Jude, or the Revelations; Yet it hath nevertheless satisfactory evidence of its Truth, for this uncertainty and delay.

I For, as long as we know it is all the word of the Spirit of God, it satisfieth our Faith; whether all be bound up in one Book or in many. And John the Apostle, living long after all the rest, it is more than probable that none were received in his time, but by his approbation and consent: and even in the days of the Apostles they gave Testimony to the Writings of one another; so Peter doth of Paul's, and Jude transcribes much of 2. Peter 2. (telling us that even inspired Apostles did not use to repeat and copy each other's Writings; without any guilt of vain repetition or being plagiarists.)

II And that the few books doubted of by some, were commonly afterwards received, tends more to the confirming than the shaking of our belief of their Authority; certainty after doubt, is the most confirmed certainty. It must needs be sometime before all the Churches to whom the several Epistles were written, could produce and Communicate them by convincing proof to all the rest. And yet we must know, that the Epistles to particular Churches were sent to them as to Members of the Church Universal, and they were obliged to communicate them to others: so that we must not take them as private Letters.

III Whoever first gave this Title to the whole Book (The New Testament, &c.) it's of no great moment to know: It was [The New Testament] before it was so entitled as one Volume; But the Church hath by continual owning this Title, shewed that they have received all these Books as God's Word and the whole New Testament, and that no more are to be received as such.

The word New (of which Novum in his Preface hath spoken at large) signifies indeed, God's Statute Law concerning Man's Duty and Salvation, or God's constituted and proposed terms of Life. And the word Testament more strictly signifies usually a Mutual Covenant; this doth but imply the consent of Man to the Law or terms of God. It is the same thing that is called a Law and a Covenant in several respects: As God enacts it, and promulgated it, before Man's consent, it is a Law, and a conditional deed of Gift, and Testament; and an offered Covenant in several respects. When Man consents, it is a Law accepted, a Gift and Testament accepted, and a mutual actual Covenant: The Law hath its introductive History and Doctrine, its precepts, prohibitions, promises, and threats; And the Covenant hath the same parts only denominated from mutual consent. But because there are Laws of more or less rigour, and of various tenours; it is the Law of Faith or Grace which is the Covenant, Testament, and Gospel, which is now before us denominated from the Deutero and Pseudo parts, tho' precept and threatening be included.

IV It is of great importance that we err not by giving too little or too much to the Sacred Scriptures, from both which extremes many dangerous errors flow. On the left hand, those err that deny it to be God's word, of in fellible truth, intelligible, and perfectly as to its proper use, without human supplements written or oral, Judicial or Canon Laws: and those that deny it to have in fellible according evidences of its truth. These befriend infidelity, heresies, prophane messes, Church Tyrants (leading it to Clergy-men to make us a new Faith, new Sacraments, and new Religion at their pleasure; and to persecute good Men that dare not renounce
ounce the Scripture-sufficiency and Christ's perfection, by obeying their Diēs and Canons as Co-ordinate with Christ, if not Co-equal: Those make Chan concord utterly impossible, while they deny the sufficiency not only of the effigials, but of all the Bible to be the terms of Concord, without their implements or additions: as if Christ that is the Author and finisher of our Faith, the maker of his own Church, had not so much as told us what a Church or a Christian is, or whom we must take for such into our Love and Communion, fixed the necessary terms of Union; but left them to none knoweth whom, ex-fallible Men, liable to Error and Tyranny, that can but get uppermost, and say that they are the true Church and the Masters that must be obeyed, while they are themselves of as many minds, as they are of different Countryes, inteere degrees of knowledge and sincerity.

2. On the other side those who do ascribe to the Scripture, who say that God had no Church, or the Church no infallible rule of Faith and Life, before the writing of it: and who say that Men converted by the Creed, Catechism, preaching or tradition without knowing the Scripture can have no saving Faith; and that none can be saved that doubt of any Canonical Books, text or matter, whether it be God's word; or that say, Scripture is so perfect that there is no human imperfection of the Pen-men found in Pharse, word or method, and that God could not have made it better, or that every Book may be known to be Canonical, and every reading to be right when Copies vary, without Historical Tradition, by its own evident light, and that we have no more cause to doubt of a word or matter, than of the truth of the Gospel, and that reason is of small either for the proof or exposition of the Scripture, but the most illiterate, if I found a Bible that he had never heard of, may by its own light know its truth and sense as well as studious learned Men, and that no other Books need to be read; and that the Scripture is a sufficient teacher of Physick, Logick, Grammar, and that nothing is to be used or done in the External Forms, Modes, and Accidents of God's Worship, but what is particularly commanded in Scripture; as that it telleth every Man whether he be sincere and justified or not, and not on telleth him how to know it by inward evidence; with many other such mistakes proceeding from mistaking the use of the Scripture, by which its perfection must be measured. Which all tend to confusion, and at last to infidelity, or doubting the whole, when these errors are discoemned.

V. And thro' all the Scripture be of equal truth, as it is God's word, yet in untruths are in it as uttered by Men and Devils; which God truly recordeth. An all parts are not of equal necessity or weight; and as many err by casting off the Old Testament, so others err by equalling it to us with the New: It is God's work left to acquaint us what was heretofore, and to shew us how Christ was prophesied of and expected, and how the Church was governed in the darker and more servile state and times. But we have great cause to take heed of overvaluing this use to us; lest we contradict Paul that faith, that even that which was written in stone is done away, and the Law changed with the Priesthood, and the old an faulty. Covenant for a better; of which see the nine first Chapters to the Hebrews. &c. Judaisers are they that moth of Paul's Epistles are written against and as John Baptist was greater than the Prophets, so the least in the Kingdom of God is greater than he. Even the holy Patriarchs, and David had a far more obvious Revelation of Christ, and grace, and the love of God, and the glory to come than we have: And accordingly we should have much more faith, holiness, and comfort than they. It is dangerous making the best of them our examples in point of faith or duty, wherein they came far short of Gospel light and Grace. Go doth not now bear with Polygamy as he did then, nor with such divorces; no doth the Gospel countenance such streams of blood as the Israelites ordinarily shed nor such lies as David was oft guilty of; nor such a strange life as Solomon lived. I mean, that such faults will not now confine with true grace under our fuller light and mercy, as would do then to Men in a darker infant Age; and therefore let us...
(3)

The deed of presuming on their examples: Christ and his Apostles are far fitter for imitation. David fills most of his Psalms with such complaints of his enemies and curses against them, as shew a far deeper sense of the suffering of the life, and the concerns of this life, than Peter and Paul shewed, who suffered far more, and for a holier cause, and rejoiced in tribulation; and then is fitable either to precepts or examples of Christ. All was not well laid and done by good causes which is recited in the New Testament, much less in the Old.

So far are they mistaken that say, the Jews and Gentiles were bound to believe the Apostles in no more than they proved out of the Scripture, that most of the cases was to be believed by other evidences, and Christ and his Apostles gave us full proof of the truth of the Gospel, as that their attestation of the Old Testament is to us a more convincing proof of its Divine Authority, than any others.

Therefore Christians must read and honour the Old Testament, and study it, to the New far more; to which it is that the Heart and Life must be conformed. There Heavenly Glory shineth far more clearly, and the wonders of Divine Love are more abundantly manifested; and far greater power of the Spirit is given, to make all effectual in faith, hope, and patience, humility, obedience, and love, which now are become the very nature of a true believer.

VI. How the infallible truth of the Gospel is proved by the sole witness of the Holy Ghost, I have opened so largely in many Books, that I must not here repeat it; that is, 1. By the old Testimonies of Prophecies, Types, Sacrifices. 2. By the internal and concomitant Testimonies, even God's Image of Divine Wisdom, Love, and Power, on Christ and the Gospel. 3. The manifold Testimonies in and by the Apostles, their miraculous works and holy Doctrine, &c. 4. The Testimony of the Spirit in the Christians of those times, who received the Holy Ghost by the Impulsion of the Apostles hands, for the like Gifts and Miracles. 5. The continued evidence of the Spirit's Sanctification in all true believers in all generations, &c.

But it must be known that Christ's Resurrection and Miracles, and most of the Apostles, sealed the Gospel as preached, before it was written. And that the necessary summ of the Gospel so sealed, was in a narrow room, even the Sacramental Covenant with its explication, and the History of Christ therein supposed. And that the sincere belief and practice of so much, will certainly be saving: But yet the usefulness of the whole Scripture as containing the compleat Revelation of God's Will recorded for all succeeding ages, is an unspeakable mercy to the Church: So weak is Man's Memory; so bad a great part of the World, and the Clergy as well as others, so inclined to errors and fictions; and to force even God's word to seem to justify their errors and sins; and of so many crooked interests and minds are Men, so very false the world, and so untrustworthy even the better sort, and so liable all worldly things to degenerate and change, that he is utterly blinded herein, who thinks the oral tradition would have safely delivered down the whole mind of God unchangeably, and with certainty. And yet to his praise we must acknowledge that, 1. The essentials of Religion have by themselves been delivered us in Baptism, and many ways (oft named) with infallible certainty. 2. And so hath the Bible itself, even by such Historical Tradition which hath an evidence truly called Physical; in that it ariseth not only from free contingent, but from necessary causes, even the consent of Men of contrary interests, in acts which are truly necessary; and because there are not in nature causes that could produce a falsification (as is elsewhere opened.)

As for them that are so far from taking the New Testament to have the nature of a Law, that they say, Christ hath no Law, or hath made none, they thereby make him to be no King, and have no Sovereign Governing power (of which Legislation is the chief part:) and so far are they from the truth, as that there is Divine Law but Christ's in force, for all power in Heaven and Earth is given now to him, and all things delivered into his hand, and the Father (without him) judge no Man, but hath committed all judgment to the Son, who for this end died, rose again, that he might be Lord of the dead and living; and Head over all things to
to his Church, Mat. 28, 19. Joh 13, 1, 2, 3, and 17, 2 Joh 5, 22. Rom. 14, 10. Eph. 22, 23. So that the Law of nature continued is now Christ's Law, to which hath added his supernatinal Institutions, and repealed all the Law of Moses: such, having made the natural parts his own.

VII. As to the method of the New Testament, it is perfect as to its intended

1. The method of the Doctrines is exact, though as last up in all the words circumstances the unskilful discern it not; but in the Baptismal Covenant, Christ's prayer and Decalogue, it is easily discerned. 2. And as to the order of the Acts and words, it was meet that it should begin with the History of Christ's Life, Death, Resurrection, and Ascension; and then give us a taste of the History of the Apostles, and last of all give us the applicatory part, first to establish the truth standing in the truth against errors; and then to direct and quicken us to holiness of life, and to comfort and patience in sufferings, and a joyful expectation of glorious reward. For if the History had not gone first, which giveth us both matter and the miraculous reasons and grounds of our belief, the application we have been built upon an insufficient foundation.

VIII. It is the Gospel that is God's most wonderful declaration of his Love to Mankind; the world heareth his greatness, but it was his Goodness and Love which sin, guilt, and fear had made hard to our belief, which God hath glorified in face of Christ: It is Christ that is the believers' daily and delightful study; the report of Learning and Wisdom, which giveth quietness, and hope and comfort to the Soul, when all other studies except in pure subjection to this, are but trifling, diverting, delusive, and vain. To study Christ in his Nature, Person, Offices, Events, Examples, Miracles, Sufferings, and Death, Resurrection, and Ascension, shedding down the Spirit of Miracles and Holiness, reigning and interceding for us, coming to judgment and glorified with his Church for ever; this, the high and noble, the sanctifying and comforting study, daily to behold the Fruit of God's Love in this glass of our Redemption, till confirmed faith raise joy and hope, and turn our very nature into holy Love to God and Man, and establish us in obedience and patience against all temptations, sufferings and fear of death, and make us long to be with Christ, and love his appearing, and cry, Come Lord Jesus: This is the true life of Christian Faith.

Readers, Pray earnestly and daily to God, to give you that same Spirit which directed the Scripture, to qualify you to read and hear it, with understanding, belief, love, and resolved obedience: and make it the Law and Rule of your Hearts and Lives.

And if any Fanaticks tell you, that because the Spirit is greater than the Letter, we must try the Scriptures by the Spirit: and not the Spirit by the Scriptures; tell them in these few plain words, that the question is not rightly put: but whether they or we have the Spirit in the same measure, and to the same uses as the Apostles, and Prophets had. And whether we must not rather try the Spirit in the words of Men now, by the Spirit and words of the Apostles, than theirs by ours. The Spirit was given by Christ to his Apostles, to lead them into all truth, as bring all his Doctrine and Commands to remembrance, to reach them to all Nations recording them to be our continued instruction, Law, and Rules. But the Spirit not given to Quakers to these ends, nor in this measure. And it is given now, the Faithful, not to reveal to them a new Law, and Gospel, but to cause them understand, believe, love and obey that already revealed.
The Gospel according to St. MATTHEW.

CHAP. I.

The Book of the generation of Jesus Christ, the son of David, the son of Abraham.

1. I begin this history of Christ, with the Genealogy of his Ancestors according to the Line of Joseph his reputed legal Father after the flesh, so far as to ensure that he was the Son of David and Abraham, the rightful King of the Jews, and the promised Seed by their own prophecy.

2. Abraham begat Isaac, and Isaac begat Jacob, and Jacob begat Judas and his brethren.

3. And Judas begat Phares and Zara of Hamar, and Phares begat Esrom, and Esrom begat Aram.

4. And Aram begat Aminadab, and Aminadab begat Naflon, and Naflon begat Salmon, and Salmon begat Booz of Rachab, and Booz begat Obed of Ruth, and Obed begat Jesse.

5. And Jesse begat David the King, and David the King begat Solomon, of her that had been the Wife of Urias, and Solomon begat Roboam, and Roboam begat Abia, and Abia begat Asa.

6. And Asa begat Josaphat, and Josaphat begat Joram, and Joram begat Ozias.

7. Ozias, Joseph and Amaziah are here noted, by perhaps as being, by the Mother of Amaziah, of Omri's cursed Line, or for the unknown cause: Note that the Law of Exonexion, which more the Grandchildren or distant issue, is with the Hebrews called the San or Begotten, though not immediately.

8. And Ozius begat Joatham, and Joatham begat Achaz, and Achaz begat Ezekias, and Ezekias begat Manasses, and Manasses begat Amon, and Amon begat Josias.

9. And Josias begat Jechonias, and his brethren, about the time they were carried away to Babylon.

10. They were oft carried away; But this was a little before the most notable Captivity.

11. And after they were brought to Babylon, Jechonias begat Salathiel, and Salathiel begat Zorobabel, and Zorobabel begat Abiud, and Abiud begat Eliakim, and Eliakim begat Azor.

12. One old Copy hath before 

13. These be the generations of Jesus Christ; 

14. And the generations of Jesus from Abraham to David are fourteen
generations, and from David until the carrying away into Babylon are fourteen generations, and from the carrying away into Babylon, unto Christ are fourteen generations.

14. I reduce them to fourteen in the recitation, for memory's sake and other reasons; This sufficeth to my intended end.

18. Now the birth of Jesus Christ was on this wise: When as his Mother Mary was espoused to Joseph, before they came together, she was found with child of the Holy Ghost.

18. Note. The Holy Ghost did miraculously cause Her Conception, without a human Father.

19. Then Joseph her husband, being a just man, and not willing to make her a publick example, was minded to put her away privately.

19. Joseph being a good man, averse to hurtfulness; thought rather to hide all by putting her privily away, than to expose her to the shame and punishment due by the Law, to such as he thought her to be.

20. But while he thought on these things, behold, the Angel of the Lord appeared unto him in a dream, saying, Joseph thou Son of David, fear not to take unto thee Mary thy Wife, for that which is conceived in her, is of the Holy Ghost.

21. And she shall bring forth a Son, and thou shalt call his name Jesus, for he shall save his people from their sins.

20. 21. Note. It was a dream that had its convincing evidence, for ordinary dreams give no such certainty.

2. The name Jesus, a Saviour, signifies his office, which is to save his People from their sins, and from deserved punishment.

22. Now all this was done, that it might be fulfilled which was spoken of the Lord by the Prophet, saying, Behold, a Virgin shall be with child, and shall bring forth a Son, and they shall call his name Emmanuel, which being interpreted is, God with us.

22, 23. In all this the Prophecy of 7-14. to Ahaz, in how short a time God would then deliver them, was fulfilled in a farther sense intended by the Holy Ghost than that nearest foretold event: Note. God, with us, is God taking our Nature, appearing to us, and reconciling and bringing to himself.

24. Then Joseph being raised from sleep, did as the Angel of the Lord had bidden him, and took unto him his Wife:

25. And knew her not, till she had brough forth her first-born Son, and he called his name Jesus.

24, 25. Note. Though these words as no full proof that Mary had any other Children after, yet at least they make it utterly uncertain, and as it is no Article of Faith as to the moment of it, so neither as to the certainty: Yet the Pope and Sect have pretended Tradition for it, the Mary lived and died a Virgin, as of so much weight as to hereticate the deniers of it, and so make all the Scripture insufficient, not only as to matters of order, discipline, and worship, but also as to Articles of Faith; that they may on pretence of Faith and Orthodoxy destroy Christian Unity and Love, and exercise dominion by excommunicating and damning men on pretended tradition or authority, at their pleasure.
3. When Herod the King had heard these things, he was troubled, and all Jerusalem with him.

4. And when he had gathered all the chief priests and Scribes of the people together, he demanded of them, where Christ should be born.

5. And they said unto him, In Bethlehem of Judaea, for thus it is written by the Prophet; 6. And thou Bethlehem is the land of Judah, art not the least among the princes of Judah: for out of thee shall come a Governor, that shall rule my people Israel.

7. Then Herod, when he had privately called the wise men, enquired of them diligently what time the Star appeared. 8. And be sent them to Bethlehem, and said, Go and search diligently for the young child, and when ye have found him, bring me word again, that I may come and worship him also.

9. When they had heard the King, they departed, and to the Star, which they saw in the East, went before them till it came and stood over where the young child was.

10. Now, How this differed from other Stars, and how it moved and directed them, is not to be clearly apprehended by us at this distance of time and place, where saw it not.

11. When they saw the Star, they rejoiced with exceeding great joy.

12. They greatly rejoiced that God thus renewed their direction. N. Some ancient Fathers thought that this Star was an Angel, He maketh his Angel's Spirit, and his Ministers a flame of fire.

13. And when they were come into the house, they saw the young child with Mary his mother, and fell down and worshipped him: and when they had opened their treasures, they presented unto him gifts, gold and frankincense, and myrrhe. 12. And being warned of God in a dream, that they should not return to Herod, they departed into their own country another way.

14. They did their homage as sent by God: And then God defeated the malice of Herod.

15. And when they were departed, behold, the Angel of the Lord appeareth to Joseph in a dream, saying, Arise, and take the young child, and his mother, and flee into Egypt, and be thou there until I bring thee word: for Herod will seek the young child to destroy him. 14. When he arose, he took the young child and his mother by night, and departed into Egypt.

16. N. God could have cut off Herod, or secured Christ by other ways or miracles: But to shew that he will not make miracles ordinary, but work by usual means, Christ must fly into Egypt, a land of Heathen Enemies, to be saved from the King and People of Israel: such Right was not unlawful.

15. And was there until the death of Herod, that it might be fulfilled which was spoken of the Lord by the Prophet, Lying, Out of Egypt have I called my Son.

15. Note, Whether the Prophet Hof. 11. understood this of any more than Israel's first deliverance from Egypt or no, yet the Holy Ghost looked further and meant more, even the case of Christ.

16. Then Herod, when he saw that he was mocked of the wise men, was exceeding wroth, and sent forth, and slew all the children that were in Bethlehem, and in all the coasts thereof, from two years old, and under, according to the time which he had diligently enquired of the wise men.

16. Note, Interest and malignity conjoined, made this King tick at no inhumane bloody cruelty: Innocency was no defence against him.

17. Then was fulfilled that which was spoken by Jeremy the Prophet, saying, 13. In Ramah was there a voice heard, lamentation, and weeping, and great mourning, Rachel weeping for her children, and would not be comforted, because they are not.

17. 18. This was another case, that the Prophet meant, God's Spirit might look to this: Or the words may signify, This case was much like to that mentioned, Jer. 31. 15. and so speak by an allusion.

19. But when Herod was dead, behold, an Angel of the Lord appeared in a dream to Joseph in Egypt, 20. saying, Arise, and take the young child, and his mother, and go into the land of Israel: for they are dead which sought the young child's life.

21. And he arose, and took the young child, and his mother, and came into the land of Israel.

22. But when he heard that Archelaus did reign in Judea, in the room of his father Herod, he was afraid to go thither: notwithstanding, being warned of God in a dream, he turned aside into the parts of Galilee.

23. And he came and dwelt in a city called Nazareth, that it might be fulfilled which was spoken by the Prophets, He shall be called a Nazarene.

19. &c. Note, 1. Still Christ is preserved by avoiding men's rage. 2. The Jews called Christ a Nazarene, from that place of his dwelling; but he was truly Nester the branch, and a Nazarene devoted to absolute purity, of whom Sampson's Order was a Type, desribed also Numb. 6. Lam. 4. 7. Amos 2. 11. 12. This seemeth the fence by allusion.

C H A P. III.

1. IN those days came John the Baptist, preaching in the Wilderens of Judea. 2. And saying, Repent ye for the Kingdom of Heaven is at hand.

1. 2. In those days John, as a Prophet inspired by God, baptized, among preaching it the Wilderens of Judea, that the Kingdom of the Messiah long looked for, was now at hand: and therefore they should by true Repentance be prepared for its Entertainment.

N. 1. It's called the Kingdom of Heaven, because it is a Theocracy, a Special Government of God by a Saviour sent from Heaven to lead Men to Heaven; as distinct from the prophane Kingdoms of the World, who look but to humane Pows and Laws, and bodily prosperity. 2. This of Mal. 3. 7. 4. 2. 3. was here fulfilled. The Jews longed for Christ's coming, supposing he would have exalted their Nation in temporal prosperity: but could not endure him when he was for humility, spirituality, an heavenly Kingdom.

3. The repentance be always a duty, specially necessar to our spiritual and spiritual mercies, and our assurance of pardon by Saviour: A purified mind and life are fit to the consolation of Christ, and indwelling of the comforting Spirit.

3. For this is he that was prophecy.

The voice of one crying in the Wilderness, Prepare ye the way of the Lord, make his paths straight.

It was John that prophesied of, and foretold what his preaching should be. Tho it be grace that prepareth for father grace, man's duty must be used thereunto, and the exalting work of grace prepares the humbling work of repentance as a necessary preparation.

And the same John had his raiment of camels hair, and a leathern girdle about his loins, and his meat was locusts and wild honey.

He was clothed with Hair-cloth, bound to him with a leather girdle, and fed on what the wilderness afforded, which was Locusts (which some think were an Herb to called, but most, a sort of Flies like great Grashoppers that devour all green things) and wild Honey.

Now, the Friers and Hermits, by superfluous overvaluing such austerities, have tempted others to despise them, yet God approved of John's signification of his content of the world and fleshly pleasures by such abstaining of the flesh. And other men Superfluous or Hypocrites, will not excuse men's indolence, or accuse mortification.

Then went out to him Jerusalem, and all Judea, and all the Region round about Jordan, 6. And were baptized of him in Jordan, confesting their sins.

So glad were the people to hear that the Kingdom of the Messiah was at hand, that they all flock to him to be baptized, professing repentance, that they might be prepared for the Kingdom.

Now, 1. We grant that Baptism then was by washing the whole Body; and did not the differences of our cold country as to that hot one, teach us to remember [I will have mercy and not sacrifice] it should be so here. 2. Tho many say John's baptism and Christ's were all one, it's easier to prove, that were any now baptized but with John's baptism, he ought to be baptized again, in the name of the Father, Son, and Holy Ghost, on the profession of many Articles of the Creed which John required not.

7. But when he saw many of the Pharisees and Sadducees come to his Baptism, he said unto them, O generation of vipers, who hath warned you to flee from the wrath to come. 8. Bring forth therefore fruits meet for repentance.

Knowing what these Pharisees and Sadducees were, he said, O generation of Vipers. Are you aware indeed that wrath is coming upon you? And do you think that the Messiah will indulge your fin, and come to promote your carnal interest? If you profess repentance, and would have part in the Kingdom of the Messiah, resolve against your sins, and live in that righteousness and holiness which is the fruit of true repentance.

9. And think not to say within your selves, We have Abraham to our Father: For I say unto you, That God is able of these stones to raise up children unto Abraham.

9. Think not that the Messiah will advance you, for being the Cataract seed of Abraham, if you have not the Faith and Holiness of Abraham: If you be wicked unbelievers, God will cast you off, the Abraham was your Father; and can of the Gentiles (or the very stones) raise up such as shall be blest as Abraham's believing seed.

10. And now also the Ax is laid unto the root of the trees; therefore every tree which bringeth not forth good fruit, is hewn down, and cast into the fire.

10. The Messiah cometh with salvation to some, and judgment to others: He layeth the Ax to the root, to cut down all of you that bring not forth the fruit of true faith and repentance, and will cast such into the fire of temporal and eternal punishment.

11. I indeed baptize you with water unto repentance: But he that cometh after me, is mightier than I, whose shoes I am not worthy to bear: he shall baptize you with the Holy Ghost and with fire.

11. I do but baptize you preparatorily with water to repentance: But he that is coming after me, is mightier than I, whose shoes I am not worthy to bear: he shall baptize not only with Water, but with the
Ch. 3.  He baptizeth Christ.  St. Matthew.  Christ fasteth.  Ch. 4.

Pouring out of his Spirit on believers, and with that fiery trial, which shall refine the gold, the faithful, but separate the dross, and destroy the rebellious unbelievers.

12. Whole fan is in his hand, and he will thoroughly purge his floor, and gather his Wheat into the garner: but he will burn up the chaff with unquenchable fire.

12. He will winnow and thoroughly separate the Wheat from the Chaff, the Faithful from the Rebellious, and will gather the faithful into his heavenly Kingdom, and into his Church in order hereafter, but he will burn the unbelievers and unperishable as Chaff, and that with destruction here, and unquenchable fire hereafter.

13. Then cometh Jesus from Galilee to Jordan unto John, to be baptized of him. 14. But John forbad him, saying, I have need to be baptized of thee, and comest thou to me?

13, 14. Nor, Christ was not baptized to the same ends as other men. He had no sins to repent of, nor Saviour to receive, but, as the General, will wear the same colours with his Souldiers, Christ received baptism for the ends he was capable, as to profess that the Kingdom of God was at hand.

15. And Jesus answering, said unto him, Suffer is to be fo now: for thus it becometh us to fulfill all righteousness. Then he suffered him.

15. I must fulfill the Law of Moses, and thy Prophetic Mission, and be thus entered on my proper work.

16. And Jesus when he was baptized, went up straightway out of the water; and lo, the Heavens were opened unto him, and he saw the Spirit of God descending like a Dove, and lighting upon him.

16. As Jesus went up out of the water, John saw the Heavens open to Christ, and the Spirit of God, in some resemblance of a Dove (or as a Dove doth light on any place) descending on him, (it's like in a fadd appearance) and resting on him.

17. And lo, a voice from Heaven, saying, This is my beloved Son, in whom I am well pleased.

17. And with the Apparition came voice from heaven, saying, This is my beloved Son the Messiah, far from Heaven as the Mediator to reveal a will, and to fulfill it, and by his perfect righteousness and sacrifice to reconcile the world to me, and be the propitiation for their sins.

CHAP. IV.

1. Then was Jesus led up by the Spirit into the wilderness, to be tempted of the Devil.

Note. 1. That the Christ was God, his humane nature was acted by the Holy Ghost, to whom in Scripture is ascribed Divine perfection of operation on Creature.

2. Man was overcome by the temptations of Satan, and to sin and death, and all enemies invade Mankind: Therefore our Redeemer must deliver us from Sin and Satan and Misery, by conquering the Tempter his way of temptation, by which he conquered. To give us also notice that warfare preparatory to our future state, managed by overcoming temptations, being overcome by them. And therefore the study of temptations and the refutation is a great part of the Christian Life. 3. Christ not himself on temptations, but yielded to it by the Spirit. 4. To be tempted is no Sin.

2. And when he had fasted forty days, and forty nights, he was afterward an hungered.

Note. 1. In this Moses was a Type of Christ. 2. Fasting and trial by temptation were great preparatives to Christ's exaltation of his prophetic Office: And his ministers should not be strangers to it; essential are never true to Christ. To feed the flesh by the Ministry, by seeking perfection, honour and fleshly ease, and flesh more than means Salvation, is to feed the Devil, as conquered by his temptation.

3. Hunger and bodily suffering give Satan advantage for many temptations, tho' so dangerously as prosperity, and fleshly pleasures do.
3. And when the Tempter came to him, he said, If thou be the Son of God, command that these stones be made bread.

3. The Son of God can do what he will; feed thyself now by Miracle.

Note. 1. Whether the Devil thought by this to tempt him to do, whether he were the Son of God, or only as supposing it to draw him to sin, by obeying him, is uncertain. 2. Satan cannot tempt us when he will, but when God permiteth him. 3. His design was to obscure Christ's Godhead and Glory.

4. But he answered and said, It is written, Man shall not live by bread alone, but by every word that proceedeth out of the mouth of God.

4. Note. 1. Christ himself was not above making use of God's written word. 2. It is by this word that the tempter must be confuted and overcome. 3. It is by God's will that our food doth nourish us, and his will and love is more necessary to us than our food.

5. Then the Devil took him up into the holy City, and setteth him on a Pinnacle of the Temple, and saith unto him, If thou be the Son of God, cast thyself down: for it is written, He shall give his Angels charge concerning thee, and in their hands they shall bear thee up, lest at any time thou dash thy foot against a stone.

5. Then the Devil, permitted by God, carried the body of Christ through the air, and set him on the Battlements or some high place on the Temple; and said, Cast thyself down, &c.

Note. 1. God may give Satan power even to carry our Bodies about, and yet not overcome our Souls. 2. The Devil would tempt us to think, that we may do anything that hath no danger to us, tho' it be out of the way of our Obedience. 3. He that will have God's protection must keep in the way of his duty to God, and not presume that God shall save him out of his way in our own.

7. Jesus said unto him, It is written again, Thou shalt not tempt the Lord thy God.

7. Note. 1. Thou the Devil use Scripture for temptation, this is no dishonour to Scripture, but we must confute misapplication of Scripture, by Scripture rightly expounded and applied. Papists and all Hereticks, and the Devil himself may use Scripture (and therefore all must not be believed that use it): But that is an honour to it, signifying that it is God's Word, or else it would not serve the Hypocrites turn. As all contenders pretend to Reason, and yet Reason must decide their Controversies.

2. Tempting God is dishonouring his ordinary care, and providence, and presaging to him our own ways.

8. Again the Devil taketh him up into an exceeding high mountain, and showeth him all the Kingdoms of the world, and the glory of them: And saith unto him, All these things will I give thee, if thou wilt fall down and worship me.

8. Note. 1. Satan took advantage of Christ's voluntary poverty and fasting, to tempt his flesh to the desire of earthly prosperity, and dominion. 2. By [all Kingdoms] is meant, many that were within reach. 3. How far God hath given the power of Earthly Kingdoms and Glory to the Devil, is not fully certain. But we see he hath given him power to tempt men by them, and it's like, much to dispose of them as far as those temptations prevail. That he useth almost all the Empires of the world against Christ and holiness, by Malignity and worldly Interests, to keep up ignorance and ungodliness, is notorious by far experience. 4. The Devil thinketh not Kingdoms and Glory too great a price to win and undo Souls. 5. Christ himself was tempted to the most odious sin, even to worship the Devil. Therefore more Temptation, even to Blasphemy, should not discourage melancholy Persons, who hate and relish it.

10. Then saith Jesus unto him, Get thee hence, Satan: for it is written, Thou shalt worship the Lord thy God, and him only shalt thou serve.

10. Note. When it cometh to Blasphemous and Atheistical temptations, Satan should be driven away, and no longer disputed with and endured: 2. Yet even then Scripture must be given for confu-
Ch. 4. Christ tempted. St. Matthew. He begins to preach. Ch. 4.

11. Then the Devil leaveth him, And behold, Angels came, and ministered unto him.

12. Now when Jesus heard that John was cast into Prison, he departed into Galilee.

13. And leaving Nazareth, he came and dwelt in Capernaum, which is upon the Sea coast, in the borders of Zabulon and Nepthaliim: 14. That it might be fulfilled which was spoken by Esaias the Prophet, saying, 15. The land of Zabulon, and the land of Nepthaliim, by the way of the Sea beyond Jordan. Galilee of the Gentiles: 16. The people which sat in darkness saw great light, and to them which sat in the region and shadow of death, Light is sprung up.

17. From that time Jesus began to preach, and to say, Repent, for the Kingdom of Heaven is at hand.

18. And Jesus walking by the Sea of Galilee, saw two brethren, Simon called Peter, and Andrew, his brother, casting a net into the Sea: (for they were fishermen.) 19. And he saith unto them, Follow me, and I will make you fishers of men.

20. And they straightway left their nets, and followed him.

21. And going on from thence he saw other two brethren, James the son of Zebedee, and John his brother, in a ship with Zebedee their father, mending their nets and he called them, 22. And they immediately left the ship and their father, and followed him.

23. And Jesus went about a Galilee, teaching in their Synagogues, and preaching the Gospel of the Kingdom, and healing a manner of sickness, and all manner of disease among the people.

24. And his fame went throughout all Syria: and the people were brought unto him all sick people that were taken with divers diseases and torments and those which were possessed with Demons, and those which were lunatic, and those that had the Palsy, and he healed them. 25. And there followed him great multitudes of people.
Chap. V.

I. And seeing the multitudes, he went up into a Mountain, and when he was set, his Disciples came unto him. 2. And he opened his mouth, and taught them, saying,

1. And seeing the multitude that followed him as admirers and learners, (not for full baptized Christians) he went for convenience of hearing, into a Mountain, and there being set, he taught them, as followed.

2. And seeing the multitude, he opened his mouth, and the multitude was no such absurd phrase, as it would be now.

3. Blessed are the poor in Spirit: for theirs is the Kingdom of Heaven.

4. Blessed are ye my true Disciples, though you be poor in the world, if you have Spirits suited to your poverty, for you shall have the Kingdom of Heaven for riches.

5. Poor in Spirit signifies a mind that above the love of worldly Riches, and the fact that Riches use to breed and feed, that is, Satan’s sins, Pride, Fools, and Idols, and unmercifulness to the Poor; and such are contended with food and raiment, having mortified the lusts of the flesh, which thirsts after worldly plenty and delights.

6. Blessed are they that mourn: for they shall be comforted.

7. Though you are under sorrows now, so are blessed, if you are godly, and have truly sorrow, for your comfort will be thorough and full enough hereafter.

8. There are many sorts of sinful sorrows which have none of this promise, such as are the common fruits of over-loving one creature, and distrusting God. But it is holy mourning that is here meant, that is, for our own or other men’s sins, and God’s dishonour, and displeasure, and our want of more grace, and for the miseries of the wicked, and suffering world.

5. Blessed are the meek: for they shall inherit the earth.

6. Blessed are you, though now you hunger and thirst after righteousness: for they shall be filled.

7. Blessed are you, though now you want of Bread, if you hunger and thirst after righteousness of heart and life towards God and man, as those that would gain be perfect in holiness, and doing good to all, and that not with a flippant and with a definite and effectual endeavour: For you shall have full satisfaction of all such desires, and more than you can desire now, when the full are sent empty away.

8. Blessed are the merciful: for they shall obtain mercy.

9. The God’s grace and mercy be free, yet men must be fit receivers and not reject it: And it is the merciful that are thus blessed, as qualified for saving mercy from God: while the cruel, and oppressors, and persecutors, and unmerciful, reject mercy by their forfeiture and incapacity, and undo themselves by hurting others.

10. Blessed are the pure in heart for they shall see God.

11. God will not bless impure, unholy souls with the light of his Countenance and comfort of his Love; nor dwell with the filthy Workers of Iniquity: without holiness none shall see God. But you whose hearts, his grace hath purified from the
the faith of holy worldly Lusts, and the
love of sin, are a blessed people, for grace
hath fitted you for begun Communion with
God here, and you shall see him in heavenly-
ly glory hereafter. He hath not purified
your hearts in vain.

9. Blessed are the peace-makers:
for they shall be called the children
of God.
10. Tho peace-makers use to be hated by
both extremes and sides of the contentious,
whom they would reconcile, yet they are
blessed that do it sincerely from the predomi-
nant love of God and Man and Peace;
for as Children are like the Father, so are
they to the God of Love and Peace, who
hath reconciled his Enemies to him by
Christ.

11. Blessed are they which are per-
secuted for righteousness sake: for
there is the Kingdom of Heaven.
12. The men think them miserable
that are oppressed and ruined in the World:
they are blessed if they are persecuted
for righteousness sake: For it's God's cause
who will reward them with the Kingdom
of Heaven, and never let any be a loser by
his obedience to him.
13. Blessed are ye when men
shall revile you, and persecute
you, and shall say all manner of
evil against you falsely for my sake.
14. Think not that I come to ad-
vance you to worldly honour: but look
to be reviled and persecuted, not only by
Heathens but by Jews, and to have all
manner of evil charged on you, and repor-
ted of you falsely, for my sake, because
you believe me and obey me: But in all
this you are blessed, while your false ac-
cusers and persecutors are miserable.
15. Rejoice, and be exceeding
glad: for great is your reward
in Heaven: for so persecuted they
the Prophets which were before you.
16. Though such usage would break the
hearts of worldly men and Hypocrites, do
not you only bear it patiently, but joy-
fully, with exceeding gladness, because
your reward in Heaven will be so much
the firer and greater: for you do but fol-
low the Prophets that are gone this way
to Heaven before you, whom the carnal
Church persecuted and murdered, tho their
posterity honour their names when they
are dead, but go on and imitate them
hating and persecuting the living.

13. Ye are the salt of the earth,
but if the salt have lost its favour
wherewith shall it be salted? It
thenceforth good for nothing, but
to be cast out, and to be trodden un-
der foot of men.
14. The World is purified with the cor-
ruption of all sin; and you that follow
me must be as salt to it, to recover it from
this corruption. But if you prove hind
and corrupt your selves, what or will
shall be salt to you, for your recovery
Corrupt professors of Christianity are no
miserable, hopeless and forlorn than He-
thens.
15. Ye are the light of the
world. A city that is set on a hill
cannot be hid.
16. Neither do men light a
candle, and put it under a bushel,
but on a candlestick, and it giveth
light unto all that are in the house.
17. God hath honoured you to be
the lights to a dark World: It is not
therefore an obscure and hidden sort of
goodness that becometh you. You are
called out to be conspicuous in the World
like a City on a Hill that cannot be hid:
by your difference from them in Doctrine
and Life: Men do not light a Candle to hid
it, but to set it up to be a light to the
House; and so doth God call you to be
open Lights in Doctrine and Life.
18. Let your light so shine be-
fore men, that they may see you
good works, and glorifie your Fa-
ther which is in Heaven.
19. Note, That I, the good Works of
Christians are the due appointed means to
win others to the glorifying of God: an-
they that do not this are guilty of per-
diousness to God and men, as dumb Mini-
fers are by omitting their Work. 2. There-
fore our good Works must not be so few
and small as to be undetectable: They
must not be done in hypocrisy to be seen
of men for our praise: But they must
shine forth in sincerity to God's praise.
3. By good Works is meant Holiness to
God, Sobriety to our selves, and Justice and
Works of Love to others.

17. Think not that I am come
Ch. 5. Christ's Sermon
St. Matthew.

Ch. 5.

17. Take me not for an Enemy to the Law and the Prophets, as if I came to blame and destroy them. As to the Ceremonial part, it was but a Typifying prediction of me, and is to be fulfilled in me: and it is the honour of Types and Prophecies to be fulfilled. And as to the natural part I own and establish it, and am far from evacuating it, that I teach the fullest keeping of it.

18. For verily I say unto you, Till heaven and earth pass, one jot, or one tittle shall in no wise pass from the Law, till all be fulfilled.

19. Whosoever therefore shall break one of these least commandments, and shall teach men so, he shall be called the least in the kingdom of heaven: but whosoever shall do, and teach them, the same shall be called great in the kingdom of heaven.

20. For I say unto you, That except your righteousness exceed the righteousness of the scribes and Pharisees, ye shall in no wise enter into the kingdom of heaven.

21. Ye have heard, that it was said by them of old time, Thou shalt not kill: and whosoever shall kill, shall be in danger of the judgment. But I say unto you, That whosoever is angry with his brother without a cause, shall be in danger of the judgment: and whosoever shall say to his brother, Rabaca, shalt be in danger of the Counsel: But whosoever shall say, Thou fool, shall be in danger of Hell-fire.

22. Moses's Law was, that Murthe shall be punished with death (by the literal Sense.) And the carnal Jews have taken this to be all that the Sixth Commandment condemned. But God's Law is perfect, however carnal men misunderstand it. And I tell you, that whoever lessens our passion of hurtful and uncharitable anger against any man, without or beyond just cause, doth in some degree break the Sixth Commandment, and therefore deserves an exemplary punishment. And whoever shall causeth scorns or reviles his Brother, breaketh the Command yet more, and deserves greater punishment. But whosoever shall utterly despise him causeth, with an uncharitable conclusion that he is a Fool or a Wicked Man, or a Schiunatick, or an Heretic, when it is not so, shall have yet far greater punishment, even Hell-fire, answering that in the Valley of Timnom.

23. Therefore if thou bring thy gift to the altar, and there rememberest that thy brother hath ought against thee; 24. Leave there thy gift before the altar, & go thy way, first be reconciled to thy brother, and then come and offer thy gift.

24. Therefore see that you prefer not Sacrifice before Love and Mercy, but if thou
Ch. 5. Of reconciliation with St. Matthew. an offended brother. Ch.

thou bring thy Gift to the Altar, and be just ready to offer it, and remembret that thou hast wronged thy Brother, or given him occasion of uncharitable thoughts of thee; lay more upon love than on thy offering. Leave it there, and go presently and make restitution, confession, or whatever is necessary to reconciliation, and then come and offer thy gift.

N. 1. O Christians, say this deeply to heart, that your Saviour was so great a teacher of love, that he preferred it before all things, even acts of outward Worship, and will take him for no Christian that is not so minded. 2. O what a dreadful aggravation of wickedness is it to turn the very Sacraments themselves into Sources of Wrath and Cruelty, and to Curse, and Damn, and Tear from the Church all that dare not Subscribe and Swear to all the Inventions of Popes and Councils: And for the Preachers of Love and Peace, to say more than [Thus saith] even to Silence, and Ruin, or Burn all as Heretics or Schismatics, that dare not justify all this!

25. Agree with thine adversary quickly, whilest thou art in the way with him; left at any time the adversary deliver thee to the judge, and the judge deliver thee to the officer, and thou be cast into prison. 26. Verily I say unto thee, Thou shalt by no means come out thence, till thou haft paid the uttermost farthing.

25, 26. If thou have wronged any man, delay not reparation of his wrong, and reconciliation: left he extort his reparation from thee by Law, and put thee to extremity, when thou mightest have compounded, or appeased him by submission. And so obey God in thy duty of Love, and Restitution, and Submission to men, left he enter into judgment with thee, and make thy utmost punishment answer the Debt.

27. Ye have heard that it was said by them of old time, Thou shalt not commit adultery. 28. But I say unto you, That whosoever looketh on a woman to lust after her, hath committed adultery with her already in his heart.

27. So says I in the Seventh Commandment, Thou shalt not commit Adultery: And the carnal Jews lookst but little deeper: But I tell you, that whosoever calleth on a Woman a wanton by stirring up Lust, and unlawful carnal Imagination and Pleasure, or useth his artful Sentence to stir up such Lusts, as defilest the Mind, or tend towards Fornication, hath in his heart broken the Seventh Commandment in some degree.

29. And if thy right eye offend thee, pluck it out, and cast it from thee: for it is profitable for thee that one of thy members should perish, and not that the whole body should be cast into Hell. 30. And if thy right hand offend thee, cut it off, and cast it from thee: for it is profitable for the that one of thy members should perish, and not that thy whole body should be cast into Hell.

29, 30. It may be some will say, My Eye is so inclined to enticing looks, and my hand to some forbidden touch or aff, that they offend when I know they should not, and if it go no further, I hope it is safe: But I tell you, this is so poor an excuse, that if you had not the command of Eye and Hand, and had no other way to avoid the sin, it were less hurt to you to pluck out that Eye, and cut off that Hand, than to sin and be damned with it. Not that I bid you so far, for you have power otherwise to avoid the sin; but if you had not, it were your wisest way, much more to deny your Eye or Hand all forbidden pleasure.

31. It hath been said, Whosoever shall put away his wife, let him give her a writing of divorcement. 32. But I say unto you, That whoever shall put away his wife,aving for the cause of fornication causateth her to commit adultery and whosoever shall marry her that is divorced, committed adultery.

31, 32. Moses bade you give your Wife a Bill of Divorcement, if you put her away: And so you have been taught that this is lawful: But I say to you that you must not put away a Wife, save for Fornication, and if you do, you an guilty.
Ch. 5. The Law continued St. Matthew. to be expounded. Ch. 5

gaiy of making her commit Adultery, and he will live in Adultery that shall marry her.

Now, That Christ here supposeth such other causes as Nature it self alloweth: As if husband or Wife should resolutely seek the others death, or be infected with a moral contagious Disease, self preservation alloweth avoidance till the danger is over. And if any other cause make their cohabitation utterly inconsistent, with safety or the ends of Marriage, they may by consent live asunder, while that cause continueth.

33. Again, ye have heard that it hath been said, Thou shalt not commit Adultery, but that perform unto the Lord thine oaths. 34. But I say unto you, Swear not at all; neither by heaven, for it is God's throne: 35. Nor by the earth, for it is his footstool: neither by Jerusalem, for it is the city of the great King: 36. Neither shalt thou swear by thy head, because thou canst not make one hair white or black. 37. But let your communication be Yea, yea: Nay, nay: for whatsoever is more than these cometh of evil.

38, &c. You have been told that Perjury is a heinous sin, and our Oaths must be kept: This is past doubt, but I tell you more; that you must not needlessly swear at all, or make any Oaths a part of your discourse. Think not that it is a small matter to swear by Creatures, while you promise not the Name of God: For all that you can swear by, is related to God, and his Law is broken by it: If it be by Heaven, it is his Throne; if by the Earth, it is his Footstool; if by Jerusalem, it is his holy City; if by the head, it is his work, of which thou makest not so much as the colour of one hair. Therefore content your selves in your discourse with a sober Yea or Nay: For your Oaths, and needles vehemence Profanations, are but the expressions of Passion, or some other Vice, and are furr'd up by Sense.

Note, That the common definition (that the Oath is always an appeal to another as a knower and avenger of falsehood) is not good: It is the swining of the verity or honour of one thing known, to verify another unknown: As to say, This is as true as that the Heaven is over me: Or if this be not true, the Earth is not under my Feet; it's as true as that I have a Head or as that there is a God, who knoweth all things, &c. Tho it's true that Swearing by God, includeth an appeal to him.

38. Ye have heard that it hath been said, An eye for an eye, and a tooth for a tooth. 39. But I say unto you, that ye shall not in evil: but who so ever shall smite thee on thy right cheek, turn to him the other also. 40. And if any man will sue thee at the law, and take away thy coat, let him have thy cloak also. 41. And whosoever shall compel thee to go a mile, go with him twain.

38, &c. You have heard that injuries must be repaid but with equal hurt: an Eye for an Eye: It's true that Magistrates having the charge of the Common-welfare, and the execution of God's Laws, they must punish injuries; and not suffer all men to do as much mischief as they will. But you that are private persons, must prefer LOVE and Patience before Reparation of your Losses, prevarication of your Rights, or personal Revenge: And therefore when it is not the publick good that requireth it, but your own right, resit not injuries, by any means which violate Love or Patience. If, when you are stricken, you strike again, you do but fir up the perfon to more wrath, to hurt you more, when as Love and Patience may make him ashamed that he hath wronged you: Revenge will but enlarge him, and you will suffer more, when Love and Patience may win him. Yea, if he abuse the Law to injure you, prefer not the righting of your selves before the winning of him by Love: And Patience may cost you less than a Law-suit, or Revenge. If he injuriously force you to any service, bear that and more, rather than by striving to violate Charity.

Note, That the Rule here intended by Christ is, That we prefer the winning of a man's Soul by Love, and the exercise of Patience before our Right, and that we bear tolerable.
tordable wrongs rather than alienate men
by exasperation, and increase our own
sufferings by revenge; usually the patient
suffer last, and win Enemies most. But
1. this extendeth not to Magistrates
strengthening sin by impunity. 2. Nor to
private mens pardoning sins against God,
which is not in our power. 3. Nor to
neglect the safety of the Common-wealth
by favouring evil. 4. Nor by forbearing
the necessary defence of our own or oth-
ers lives or welfare against insuffer-
able assaults: nor may we give away that
which is due to Wives and Children, or
the poor, which is not in our power.

42. Give to him that asketh thee: and from him that would borrow of thee, turn not thou a-
way.

43. Note, The sense is, Be not unwilling
to give where-ever thou oughtest, but as willing to give as men are to ask, and asking is one part of thy direction
unto whom to give. But this excludeth not
the use of prudent reason in our giving.
1. We must not give that to one person
which we should rather give to others, not
unto the unworthy or unit, because they
ask, when we should seek after the more
needy and worthy that ask not: nor must
we give that to one that is due to many,
nor give to a leffer good, when by it we
might do a greater; nor give that which
is not in our power. As to the question,
How much we must give, 1. A thousand
come far short, for one that charitably
gives too much. 2. Every man should study to do God the greatest service he can
with his Estate, and prudently discern the
way. 3. The necessities of others must be
preferred before our pleasure and unnec-
essaries.

43. Ye have heard that it hath
been said, Thou shalt love thy
neighbour and hate thine enemy:
44. But I say unto you, Love your
enemies, bless them that curse you,
do good, to them that hate you,
and pray for them which despise-
fully use you, and persecute you:
45. That ye may be the children
of your Father which is in heaven;
for he maketh his sun to rise on
the evil, and on the good, and send-
eth rain on the just, & on the unju-
"

... Sect, or Party, or Opinion, what Sect or Heathens do not the like? As, out of self-esteem, love and honour their Party, and those of their own Opinion. But if you will approve your selves as Children of God, and have his reward, Love men for his sake, even all men impartially, whether they be for you or against you, so far as any thing of God is in them, whether it be Nature or Grace, common Grace or special; yea for their capacity of being good and doing good hereafter. The most full universal Love is that perfection in which you must be like to God. Judge of your selves by it; and reckon that you have no more Goodness than you have Love.

C H A P. VI.

1. Take heed that ye do not your alms before men, to be seen of them: otherwise ye have no reward of your Father which is in heaven.

2. Be careful to avoid Hypocrisy, and a proud desire of praise in your works of Charity: You may do it when men see you; but not to be seen: If you take men's esteem and praise for your reward, you forfeit and lose God's heavenly reward.

3. Therefore when thou doest alms, do not sound a trumpet before thee, as the hypocrites do, in the Synagogues, and in the streets, that they may have glory of men. Verily I say unto you, They have their reward.

4. But when thou doest alms, let not thy left hand know what thy right hand doth: 4. That thine alms may be in secret: And thy Father which seeth in secret, himsel'll shall reward thee openly.

5. And when thou prayest, thou shalt not as the Hypocrites: for they love to pray standing in the Synagogues, and in the corners of the streets, that they may be seen of men: Verily I say unto you, they have their reward.

6. So let not your Prayers be like the Hypocrites, all done in publick, as on a Stage, to be seen of men: I tell you men's praise is all the reward they shall have.

N. Not but that publick Church-Prayer, and Family-Prayer are as good duties as secret prayer: But they must not be done for to be thought Religious, nor secret prayer made open or neglected.

2. Standing is a lawful praying gesture in itself: But where kneeling signifies more reverence, it must be preferred in humbling duties.

6. But thou, when thou prayest, enter into thy closet, and when thou hast shut thy door, pray to thy Father which is in secret; and thy Father which seeth in secret shall reward thee openly.

6. But do thou pray secretly where only God is witness of thy prayers (and therefore approve to him thy secret desires and heart, as well as thy words) and believe that God will openly reward thee.

7. But when ye pray, use not vain repetitions, as the Heathen do: for they think that they shall be heard for their much speaking.

8. Be
8. Be not ye therefore like unto them; for your Father knoweth what things ye have need of, before ye ask him.

7. When you pray do not so repeat over the same words, or lengthen your Prayers with unmeet repetitions, as the Heathens do, that think canting over certain words, or spinning our Prayers to such a length, is acceptable to God; Or as if God were moved by terms or length. For God is your Father, and knows what you need before you speak, and pitieth you according to your needs: And your Prayers are not to move and change him, but by exercising your own desires, and faith, and repentance, and thankfulness, to make you fit to receive his further gifts.

9. After this manner therefore pray ye:

9. I will give a perfect directory for the matter and order of your desires and prayers, and in words fit for your use, when you pray but summarily.

9. Our Father which art in Heaven, Hallowed be thy name. Thy kingdom come. Thy will be done, on earth as it is in heaven. Give us this day our daily bread. And forgive us our debts, as we forgive our debtors. And lead us not into temptation, but deliver us from evil: For thine is the kingdom, and the power, and the glory, for ever. Amen.

9. We come not to thee as our un-reconciled avenging Judge, but as to our merciful Father reconciled to us by Christ; The only God, whose Glory is eminently in Heaven, infinite in perfection of Being, and of Power, Knowledge and Goodness, our Absolute Owner, our Supreme Ruler, and our most loving Father by Creation, Redemption and Regeneration, whose we are, and whom we must serve, and whom we must Love and Trust; we are sinful, needy, miserable and unworthy in ourselves, but thy Children by Christ our Intercessor, who is worthy; whose hearts are by desire towards thee as our God, and to the good of others as our brethren, as well as by necessity to our own felicity: We know that as all things are Of Thee, and Through Thee, and To Thee, to

Thou art our Ultimate end: And therefore we first humbly beg that Thy Great, Wise and Good, and Holy Name may be known and shine forth, and be glorified, and highly regarded upon Earth, and not blashed, or be unknown and disregarded by Atheists, Infidels, or wicked Hypocrites nor the honour of men be set up again thee: But that the Nations of the earth and all Societies, and our own selves, may be wholly devoted and live to thy Glory.

And our next Petition is, that thy world, or its Societies, or our own an our Brethrens Souls, may not be given u to the wicked Tyrannical Kingdom of Satan, or men that are his Ministers, and governed by him, nor to the Wars, Blood and Cruelty of such: But that thy Divin Government, even the Kingdom of thone Messiah may come on Earth in that fulness may destroy the Kingdom of Satan: the Faith, Love and Righteousness may be the Constitution of Societies and Souls and the Reign of Grace may prepare us for Glory which we specially pray for.

And our third Petition is, that in thy Kingdom, Societies and Souls, our own and others, may in disposition be conformed to thy Governing Will, and in practice obey it, and in Faith, Hope and Love, with joyful Trust expect the promised reward, and patiently submit to thine Fatherly corrections and dispensations. And that in all these aforesaid three requests this Earth that is grown so near to Heaven, who Know, Love, and Obey, an Glorifie thee, with Perfection, Unity, an full Delight.

And because thou hast made our natures such as cannot but love our fellow men and hate our enemies, and desire and pray for the conversion of all men to believe in Jesus Christ, who is the Saviour of the world, and to make them holy, and save them from covetousness; and to have a ready and ever-maximum love to worketh fulness, prosperity and wealth, and cause us to subside thy Providence by our wife and diligent labours, and not to forfeit the maintenance by our self-confidence, idleness, or vick fe snaity, or turn our strength to in our sinful Lust.

And knowing that Holiness and Just req:
Of forgiving offences. St. Matthew.

Of fasting. Ch. 6.

Our lips, which we humbly, and earnestly in Faith and Hope do præsent to thee our Heavenly Father, by the motion of thy Spirit, through Jesus Christ, our Intercessor, Lord and Saviour, Amen.

Note, Reader, So perfect is the Method of the Lord’s Prayer, that I had thought to have Anatomized it and set it before thee in a Scheme. But I now write for the less learned, that cannot well comprehend accurateness: They that can, may find it done already in my Latin Method of Theology; and the shorter sort may find such a brief and plain Exposition as such are capable of, in my Family Catechism: And in both, the Controversies here about resolved.

14. For if ye forgive men their trespasses, your heavenly Father will also forgive you. 15. But if ye forgive not men their trespasses, neither will your Father forgive your trespasses.

14. Left you should think that no qualification for pardon and other gifts are necessary in you, I again repeat what foul nature is lost to observe, that God be your heavenly Father, yet your love and forgiveness of your Brother is so necessary to his forgiving you, that without it you shall not be forgiven: For if you have not this in sincerity, you are not God’s children, and he is called your Heavenly Father but as offering you his grace: But if you have sincere Love, with noable defects in your forgiving others, God will correct you as Children, and will not forgive you some sharp chastisements; but make you know that you must love others, if you will have the comfort of his love.

16. Moreover, when ye fa‘lt, be not as the hypocrites, of a sad countenance, for they disfigure their faces, that they may appear unto men to fast. Verily I say unto you, they have their reward.

16. Do nor, for to be thought godly, seem to be more humbled than you are; nor shew that outwardly, which should be a concealed secret fault: such hypocrites shall have no better reward, than the esteem and praise of men which they thus seek.

17. But thou, when thou fa‘stest, anoint thine head, and wash thy face: 18. That thou appear not unto men to fa‘st, but unto thy Father which is in secret: And thy Father which seeth in secret shall reward thee openly.

Digitized by Google
Ch. 6. To avoid worldly Cares.

22. The light of the body is the eye: if therefore thine eye be single, thy whole body shall be full of light. 23. But if thine eye be evil, thy whole body shall be full of darkness. If therefore the light that is in thee be darkness, how great that darkness!

22, 23. As the eye seeth not for it is alone, but for the whole body, to guide action, so thy understanding or practical judgment is that superior vifawe facult that must guide all thy love, and choice and life: If therefore thy judgment I found, and thou knowest the difference between laying up a treasure in Heaven or on Earth, it will rightly guide all the actions of thy heart and life; but if thy judgment be blinded in this great affair, it will misguide thy love, thy choice, and all the tenor of thy life. If thy judgment then is blind which must guide thee, what a miserable erroneous wretch wilt thou be; and how dismal will that error prove.

24. No man can serve two masters: for either he will hate the one, and love the other; or else he will hold to the one, and despise the other. Ye cannot serve God and mammon.

24. And take heed of the self-deceit of Hypocrites, who flatter themselves with the hope of having a treasure both on Earth and in Heaven, resolving to keep and prefer this world while they can keep it, and hope that Heaven will be a reward when they can keep the world no longer; and so they will be as Religious as we, standing with their fleshly worldly interest. But I tell you, no man can serve two masters: He will love one better than the other, or obey and serve one of the neglect and injury of the other. Ye cannot love and serve God as God, and yet love and seek worldly wealth and prosperity, as your most beloved trusted treasure. God will not stoop to the world therefore the world must in your error and choice, stoop to God, and be used by him.

25. Therefore I say unto you, Take no thought for your life what ye shall eat, or what ye shall drink.
drink: nor yet for your body what ye shall put on: is not the life more than meat, and the body than raiment? 25. Therefore take this as my special warning, wisely trust God for life, and all the concerns of life, and shew not your self-indulgence and worldly love, by being distraitly anxious or illicitious, for meat, and drink, and cloaths: If you know not which way to get them, God knows which way to give them. Your Lives and Bodies are his gift, and in his power; and did he give you those, and cannot you trust him for food and clothing. 26. Behold the fowls of the air; for they sow not, neither do they reap, nor gather into barns; yet your heavenly Father feedeth them. Are ye not much better than they? 26. You see that God feedeth the many fowls that make no store-houses or provision for time to come: And God that make you better than they, will not neglect you. 27. Which of you by taking thought can add one cubit unto his stature? 27. Study your duty, and use just means while you trust on God: But your self-troubling disfruitful care and thoughtfulness, is but unprofitable self- vexation. All your care cannot make you any taller of stature, nor keep your bodies from decay or death. 28. And why take ye thought for raiment? Consider the lilies of the field how they grow; they will not, neither do they spin. 29. And yet I say unto you, That even Solomon in all his glory was not arrayed like one of these. 30. Wherefore if God do clothe the grass of the field, which to day is, and to morrow is cast into the oven, shall he not much more clothe you? Ye of little faith? 31. Therefore take no thought, saying, What shall we eat? or what shall we drink? or whereby shall we be clothed? 32. (For after all these things do the Gentiles seek) for your heavenly Father knoweth that ye have need of all these things. 32. This is the practice of the Heathens, who fear and complement their Idol-Gods, but cannot trust them for what they want, but by self-trusting and self-seeking are drowned in worldly love and care. But your Heavenly Father is far better acquainted with all your wants than you are, and doth not disregard them. 33. But seek ye first the kingdom of God, and his righteousness, and all these things shall be added unto you. 33. Put I make this promise which you may holdly trust; see that you seek first God's Kingdom of grace and glory, and that Righteousness (Relative, habitual and affected) to which through Christ he hath promised acceptance and salvation, seek these I say before all worldly prosperity and fleshly interest, with your chief and predominant Endeavour; and then all bodily things shall be given in as additions to the greater blessings, so far as God seeth them fit for you, and you for them, (for Godliness hath the promise of this life and of that to come)
Ch. 7. Christ reproves St. Matthew. rash judgment. Ch. 7.

34. Take therefore no thought for the morrow: for the morrow shall take thought for the things of it self: sufficient unto the day is the evil thereof.

34. Therefore (beg of God your daily bread in faith, and in the use of honest labour; but) take no distrustful, troubling, careful thoughts for the time to come; it will be time enough to morrow to take notice of to morrow wants, and to do to morrows work: Every day hath its own duty and difficulty, and sufferings must be expected: Do not anticipate them, and take to day the trouble on your self by care and fear, which belongs to the time to come: The burden and troubling part by such sufferings as you must expect, will come time enough, and a days sense of the suffering, is enough for one days evil or burden. Preparatory notice of death and suffering is useful: But should we for-know all the particular sufferings that are to come on us, it would but overwhelm us, by an untimely suffering every day by fear and care of all that which we should suffer but by little tolerable parcels, while every day hath its own proportion.

CHAP. VII.

Judge not, that ye be not judged. 2. For with what judgment ye judge ye shall be judged: and with what measure ye mete, it shall be measured to you again.

1. Make not your selves judges of other men and their actions without a just call, and be not censorious meddlers, nor bold severse condemners of others without proof, and beyond cause. For otherwise you must look for severe judgment from God, and to be repaid by man, and used as you used others.

3. And why beholdest thou the mote that is in thy brother’s eye, but considerest not the beam that is in thine own eye? 4. Or how wilt thou say to thy brother, Let me pull out the mote out of thine eye; and behold, a beam is in thine own eye?

3. So censorious are hypocrites of others, that the mote of a small infirmity or diffent is seen in their eyes, as if it were some intolerable thing, which they must pluck out (as the Pharisees cenured Christ and his Disciples for not observing their Ceremonies and Traditions). But if thou know thy self, mayest thou not find worse than this in thy self? (Hath a Pharisee nothing worse than Non-conformity to his Ceremonies and Traditions?) How canst thou think his mote of ceremonial or small difference intolerable, while thou easily bearest thy own formality, magisterial pride and worldly mind, and other great and deadly sins?

5. Thou hypocrite, first cast out the beam out of thine own eye; and then shalt thou see clearly to cast out the mote out of thy brother’s eye.

5. Thou hypocrite, first see that thou have no greater fault thy self, cast away the beam of pride, worldliness, formality, malignity, and fleshly vices out of thy self, and then thou wilt be more capable to judge of thy brother’s failings, and fitter to reprove him.

6. Give not that which is holy unto the dogs, neither cast ye your pearls before swine, lest they trample them under their feet, and turn again and rent you.

6. And as it is not every one that is fit to reprove, so it is not every one that is fit to be reproved. To seek men’s salvation by teaching and reproof, be a work of great moment, when it is used in season, to them that are capable of it; yet take this rule; pretend not duty to teach and reprove when it’s clearly like to do more hurt than good: some men are hardened sinners, and some senseless neglecters, and some hateful perverters: To such as those, holy counsel, doctrine and reproof, is but like casting Sacramental or Consecrated Bread to the Dogs, or Pearls before Swine. To be thus wise and righteous over much, is but the way to perish and be rent, or at least made a scorn to beaftly men. It is no duty where it is no means to good, yea to greater good than hurt.

Note. Yet if a slothful hypocrite shall rashly cenure others to be Dogs and Swine, and desperate, to excuse himself from duty and trouble, this is but a doubling of his sin.
7. Ask, and it shall be given you; seek, and ye shall find; knock, and it shall be opened unto you. 8. For every one that asketh receiveth: and he that seeketh, findeth: and to him that knocketh, it shall be opened.

And to obtain grace and mercy to your selves, true Prayer is God’s appointed means. Ask of God and he will give it you, seek diligently and you shall find, &c. For every one that asketh in sincerity, and seeketh with diligence and constancy shall obtain.

Note. That is, if he pray to God believing his power, and goodites in the name of Christ, and trusting in his merits and intercession, and this first and chiefly for God’s glory and for things spiritual and everlasting, and for earthly things as means to these, and if he be earnest, diligent and constant in such askings, seeking and knockings, he shall certainly have grace and glory, and all outward things as far as they are for him, and he for them.

9. Or what man is there of you, whom if his son ask bread, will he not give him a stone? 10. Or if he ask a fish, will he give him a serpent?

11. If ye then be evil, know how to give good gifts unto your children, how much more shall your Father which is in heaven give good things to them that ask him?

Do not distrust God’s goodnes and willingness to do good: All the love that is good in you, is but a spark from the God of infinite goodness. Therefore, if you would not give a Stone to your Children that ask Bread of you, nor a Serpent to that Child that asketh a Fish; and if you that are so bad men, will give good things, and not evil, to your Children, O how much more abundantly should you bestow your heavenly Father ready, willing and able to do good to his children who ask it of him, being fitted to receive it.

12. Therefore all things whatsoever ye would that men should do to you, do ye even so to them: for this is the law and the prophets.

13. Enter ye in at the strait gate; for wide is the gate, and broad is the way that leadeth to destruction, and many there be which go in thereat: 14. Because strait is the gate, and narrow is the way which leadeth unto life, and few there be that finde it.

15, 14. And let not the strictnes of the gate and way of life discourage you: The gate is wide, and the way is broad that leadeth to destruction: It is easy to please the flesh and to neglect a holy life; and great is the multitude that go this way; But do not you follow the multitude in fin unto damnation. The entrance into a life of Faith and Holiness is strait, and the way is narrow, requiring self-denial, mortification, holy diligence, and patient suffering; and it is but few that find this way and the life to which it leadeth. But life eternal cannot be too dearly obtained: Therefore let no difficulties stop you or turn you off.

Note. 1. It is because of our corrupt aversest, (such as sick men have to a leaff) and the refrains and sufferings of the flesh, that Godliness or Faith is called difficult or strait. But in it self and to a found understanding and will, it is the only pleasant life. To believe God’s love and our everlasting glory, must needs be sweeter than to live in guilt and terror, and in despair of any future happiness. 2. The Gate is the entrance by conversion into a life of Faith and Holiness as the way: and the Devil, the World and the Flesh will strive hard against both: But Grace will conquer and make all a delight.

9. Fewer turned Christians than did after Christ’s ascension. But if most on earth perish

fruit. 18. A good tree cannot bring forth evil fruit: neither can a corrupt tree bring forth good fruit.

19. Every tree that bringeth not forth good fruit is hewn down and cast into the fire. 20. Wherefore by their fruits ye shall know them.

17, 18, 19, 20. As the man is, so will he be. Therefore by the badness of their fruit ye may know that they speak not from the Spirit of God.

Note, That Christ giveth us not this Rule to know ordinary Priests and Preachers Doctrine by: For when Rulers and Counsellors own sound Doctrine, wicked worldly men will own it for pretence and worldly ends. But it is to try Prayers by, who pretend to the Spirit's inspiration: He that is not ruled by the Spirit is not like to be inspired by the Spirit. And the more that is of the kind of wickedness, the more of the truth that Christ specially meareth, is hurtfulness: As the names of Wolves, Thorns and Thistles shew.

3. If a good man speak or do ill, it is because he is not perfectly good, but partly bad. For instance, The Papal Church pretendeth to the infallible guidance of the Spirit when Pop and Councils agree, which is, To Prophetic Inspiration. for beyond the measure improvement of their own knowledge: How shall we know whether their pretence be true? i. We find they cherish ignorance, by forbidding the reading of the Scripture in a known Tongue without a Licensce, and praying in Tongue not understood. 2. We find they divide the Christian world by laying Unity and Peace on impossible terms, even a multitude of their own Canons. 3. We find they are adversaries to Catholick love by damming all the Christian world for their own self, and keeping up their Chast and Religion by bloody Doctrines, Inquisitions, and Mafllaces. 4. And that it is worldly interest that is thus managed. Tho being all Wolph, Thorny, hurtful fruits, do prove their pretence to the Spirit's infallibility. But it being their interest to be for Deity, Christianity, and Immortality of Soul in that they may own the truth. And the Reformed Churches have had some fruits, it is because they are but of imperfect knowledge and reformation.

21. Not every one that saith Lord, Lord, shall enter in the kingdom of heaven; but
that oth the will of my Father which is in heaven.
21. It is not verbal professions, and pretending to the Spirit, or to be Orthodox, or be better than others, nor is it formal vuking God as the Hypocrites do, or knowing me with the lips and knee alone, but will have any one: but it is only the holy obedient believer that shall be saved.
22. Many will say to me in that day, Lord, Lord, have we not prophesied in thy name? and in thy name have cast out devils? and in thy name done many wonderful works? 23. And then will I profess unto them, I never knew you; depart from me ye that work iniquity.
22, 23. Many will then plead, not only that they were Bishops or Preachers in the Church, but even that they prophesied, and wrought miracles in my name: to whom I will say, Depart from me all you that lived wickedly, whatever you said or did in my name, I never owned you, nor will I have you.
24. Therefore, whatsoever heareth these sayings of mine, and doth them, I will liken him unto a wise man which buildeth his house upon a rock: 25. And the rain descended, and the floods came, and the winds blew, and beat upon that house and it fell not: for it was founded upon a rock.
24, 25. He that heareth, believeth and obeyeth that which I have now taught you, is like a wise man.
26. The obedient believer is the only wise man, that buildeth the hopes of his salvation on a sure foundation.
27. And every one that heareth these sayings of mine, and doth them not, shall be likened unto a foolish man which buildeth his house upon the sand.
28. And the rain descended, and the floods came, and the winds blew, and beat upon that house; and it fell, and great was the fall of it.
26, 27. Note, 1. Ungodly men, that hear Christ's Gospel and obey it not, are fools, and build their hopes of salvation as on the sands.
29. All men's religion and hopes shall be tried, as a house by storms, whether it be well founded and built or not. 30. Grevous will be the overthrow of the religious hopes of all hypocrites and ungodly livers.
28. And it came to pass when Jesus had ended these sayings, the people were astonished at his doctrine.
29. For he taught them as one having authority, and not as the Scribes.
28, 29. The hearers admired his doctrine; for he spake not as the Scribes and ordinary Teachers, but as by Prophetic authority and the Majestick power of the Spirit.

CHAP. VIII.

1. When he was come down from the mountain, great multitudes followed him.
2. And behold, there came a leper and worshipped him, saying, Lord, if thou wilt, thou canst make me clean.

1, 2. N. 1. A leprosy is so long and so visible a disease, as that there could be no fraud in the cure. 2. The belief of Christ's power shewed that he believed him to be sent of God; and therefore was an acceptable faith, tho he doubted of Christ's will.

3. And Jesus put forth his hand, and touched him, saying, I will, be thou clean. And immediately his leprosy was cleansed.

3. Note, Christ shewed both Power and Will, to cure him miraculously that believed his power.

4. And Jesus faith unto him, See thou tell no man, but go thy way, shew thyself to the priest, and offer the gift that Moses commanded, for a testimony unto them.

4. Do not thy self divulge this cure, but shew the Priest that thou art cleansed, and let him enquire if he will, how it was done; perform thou thy Offering according to the Law; and let it stand as a testimony of me, whether they will use it or not.
1. Christ would have his miracles divulged but by degrees, and so himself made known; not at first, but in due season, when it would do more good than hurt. Not to encourage men against him before the time; but when his greatest work's all done, might, let together, make a compleat evidence.

2. Tho' the high Priest was no Scribe, nor of Aaron's Line, but yearly brought in by Heidi, powers to him that purchased the place, and the office much corrupted, yet Christ bids the, Leper do his duty according to the Law, so such as had poisection.

5. And when Jesus was entred into Capernaum, there came unto him a Centurion, beseeching him, 6. And saying, Lord, my servant lieth at home sick of the Palsy grievously tormented. 7. And Jesus saith unto him, I will come and heal him.

5, 6, 7. N. This Captain (of an hundred Soldiers) bowed his Faith by asking, and Christ presently promised a cure.

8. The centurion answereth and saith, Lord, I am not worthy that thou shouldst come under my roof: but speak the word only, and my servant shall be healed. 9. For I am a man under authority, having soldiers under me: and I say to this man, Go, and he goeth: and to another, Come, and he cometh: and to my servant, Do this, and he doth it.

8, 9, 10. The Captain saith, &c. And if my Soldiers and Servants obey my words, it's cause with thee to command deliverance.

10. When Jesus heard it, he marvelled, and said to them that followed, Verily I say unto you, I have not found so great faith, no not in Israel.

10. At this Christ expressed admiration by way of praise, saying, I have not found so great faith in any Israelites that waited for the Messiah, as in this Roman Captain.

11. And I say unto you, that many shall come from the east and west, and shall sit down with Abraham, and Isaac, and Jacob in the kingdom of heaven. 12. But the children of the kingdom shall be cast out into outer darkness, there shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth.

11. I tell you that many of the Gentiles shall be gathered into the Church, and into the Heavenly Kingdom, to Abraham, Isaac, and Jacob, whose faithful (though not natural) children they are reputed; when the Jews that are the natural seed, and though that the promise had been only theirs, shall be cast out from Heavenly felicity into outer darkness, and utmost misery; where there be crying, and weeping, and gnashing of teeth (as men do with cold, or with rage.)

13. And Jesus said unto the centurion, Go thy way, and as thou hast believed, so be it done unto thee. And his servant was healed in the self same hour.

13. And Jesus gave him presently the reward of his faith, promising and performing the cure of his servant.

14. And when Jesus was come into Peter's house, he saw his wife's mother laid, and sick of a fever.

14. And he touched her hand, and the fever left her: and the aris and ministered unto them.

14. Note, the speed of the cure: she presently went about her business, and served them.

16. When the eve came, they brought unto him many sick with devils: and he cast out the spirits with his word and healed all those that were sick.

16. Note. 1. The Scripture doth not impartially Dicese and Devils so much as the that think there is no Devil in a Disease hath natural causes. For Devils are often God's executioners, even when there are natural causes of the disease: and do add many extraordinary symptoms by their own operation. 2. Christ healed Bodies to win Souls, by such gifts as are capable of valuing: and to shew his mercy to Bodie and Soul.

17. That it might be fulfilled, which was spoken by Elias, the prophet.
Ch. 8. Devils cast out. St. Matthew. They go into swine. Ch. 8.

16. And he faileth unto them. Why are ye fearful, O ye of little faith? Then he arose and rebuked the winds, and the sea, and there was a great calm.

26. Great fears are the ordinary effects of sinful distrust, and the symptoms of but little faith. 2. Get Christ on our side, and he can command all the world to be for us, or not to hurt us.

27. But the men marvelled, saying, What manner of man is this, that even the winds and the sea obey him?

27. More. 1. Christ's works proved that he was a Saviour fully to be trusted: 2. Do but obey Christ, and he will make all creatures obey him for your good and safety.

28. And when he was come to the other side into the country of the Gergesene, there met him two possessed with devils, coming out of the tombs, exceeding fierce, so that no man might pass by that way.

28. That is, two that were mad and possessed, and acted by devils in their madness.

29. And behold, they cried out, saying, What have we to do with thee, Jesus thou Son of God? art thou come hither to torment us before the time?

29. And the Devils, in them by the mens voice cried out, saying, Middle not with us, Jesus thou Son of God. Increase not our torments before the appointed time of their increase.

30. And there was a good way off from them, an herd of many swine, feeding.

31. So the devils besought him, saying, If thou canst, suffer us to go away into the herd of swine.

30. And (many Gentiles dwelling there who kept Swine, and perhaps some Jews, to fell, tho they eat not Swine's flesh) there was a great herd of Swine; and the Devils being a base sort of Spirits, and bent to all mischief, craved leave, if they must be cast out, to go into the Swine, partly to mischief them, and partly to discontent their owners.

32. And
32. And he said unto them, Go. And when they were come out, they went into the herd of swine: and behold, the whole herd of swine ran violently down a steep place into the sea, and perished in the waters.

32. That is, They were mad, and in madness ran into the sea and were drowned.

33. And they that kept them fled, and went their ways into the City, and told every thing, and what was befallen to the possessed of the devils. 34. And behold, the whole city came out to meet Jesus; and when they saw him, they besought him that he would depart out of their coasts.

33, 34. When they heard all this, the whole City was moved with a desire to see so strange a man: But the loss of their Swine made those treat him to be gone and leave their coasts.

CHAP. IX.

1. And he entered into a ship, and passed over, and came into his own city. 2. And behold, they brought to him a man sick of the palsy, lying on a bed: and Jesus seeing their faith, said unto the man of the palsy, Son, be of good cheer, thy sins be forgiven thee.

1, 2. That is, this disease which is the punishment of thy sin is remitted, and thou shalt be healed.

3. And behold certain of the Scribes said within themselves, This man blasphemeth. 4. And Jesus knowing their thoughts, said, Wherefore think ye evil in your hearts? 5. For whether is easier to say, Thy sins be forgiven thee? or to say, Arise and walk?

3, 4, 5. That is, What is forgiving the sin, but forgiving the punishment of it? And is one any harder than the other when it is the same thing.

6. But that ye may know that the Son of man hath power on earth to forgive sins, (then saith he) to the sick of the palsy) Arise, take up thy bed, and go unto thine house. 7. And he arose and departed to his house.

6, 7. But your own fancies shall tell you that I can forgive sin, that is, the punishment of sin on Earth—Arise, etc. so he was healed before them, and took up his bed and went home.

8. But when the multitude saw it, they marvelled, and glorified God which had given such power unto men.

8. It made them wonder and glorify God that had sent a man with so great power into the world.

9. And as Jesus passed forth from thence, he saw a man named Matthew, sitting at the receipt of custom: and he saith unto him, Follow me. And he arose, and followed him.

9. Matthew that wrote this, a Togatherer; and at Christ’s call he immediately left all and followed him.

10. And it came to pass, as Jesus sat at meat in the house, behold, many publicans and sinners came and sat down with him and his disciples. 11. And when the Pharisees saw it, they said unto his disciples, Why eateth your Master with publicans and sinners?

10, 11. N. The Pharisees pretended greater strictness than Christ, in flying from other men as sinners: But they were not so strict in reforming themselves, nor zealous of love, and doing good.

12. But when Jesus heard that, he said unto them, They that be whole need not a physician, but they that are sick.

12. My work is to save Souls; and who but Sinners have need of a Saviour.

13. But go ye and learn what that meaneth, I will have mercy and not sacrifice: for I am not come to call the righteous, but sinners to repentance.

13. O ye that take on you to be the Teachers
Ch. 9. Christ eateth with St. Matthew. Publicans and Sinners. Ch. 9.

Takest of the ignorant, what great need have you to be taught and to study what the wise meaneth, I will have mercy and not sacrifice. Mercy is a far greater and more pleasing work, than Sacrifice, Ceremonies, or outward Rites. And the greatest good is still to be preferred. & O how wise do the Roman persecuting Clergy regard this.

14. Then came to him the disciples of John, saying, Why do we and the Pharisees fast oft, but thy disciples fast not?

15. We and the Pharisees are stricter than thy Disciples: We fast oft, and ye do not.

16. And Jesus said unto them, Can the children of the bride-chamber mourn, as long as the bridegroom is with them? but the days will come when the bridegroom shall be taken from them; and then shall they fast.

17. He that eateth a piece of new bread in the old garment, is not the better; but he that eateth in his own garment, is better.

18. While he spake these things unto them, behold, there came a certain ruler and worshiped him, saying, My daughter is even now dead; but come and lay thy hand upon her, and she shall live.

19. A Ruler of one of their lesser Judicatures or Confiscitories came, &c.

20. This man did believe the power of Christ, because he had experience of his success: but whether he believed him to be the Christ is uncertain. But it was notable faith, to believe that he could raise the dead.

21. And Jesus arose, and followed him, and so did his disciples.

22. They were all desirous to see whether he could raise the dead.

23. And behold, a woman which was diseased with an issue of blood twelve years, came behind him, and touched the hem of his garment. For she said within her self, If I may but touch his garment, I shall be whole. But Jesus turned him about, and when he saw her, he said, Daughter, be of good comfort; thy faith hath made thee whole. And the woman was made whole from that hour.

Note. A belief of Christ's power was necessary to their receiving the effects of his power, as a belief of his love and good will, is needful to our receiving the special fruits of his Love; and the belief of his wisdom and authority is needful to our obeying him, and receiving his rewards.

24. And when Jesus came into the ruler's house, and saw the mourning and the people making a noise, He said unto them, Give place; for the maid is not dead, but sleepeth. And they laughed him to scorn.

25. When he saw the Mufick and the lamentation, he entered in, and said unto them, Why make ye this noise and trouble the maid? Only believe, and she shall be made whole. Therefore they laughed him to scorn. For they perceived that she was dead.
about the dead, he said, Give place; for the
deth of the Maid shall be but as a sleep
from which I will presently awake her, but
they desired him, seeing that she was dead
indeed.
25. But when the people were
put forth, he went in, and took
her by the hand, and the maid a-
rose. And the fame hereof
went abroad into all that land.
26. Whence was the Soul of this maid
(and Lazarus) after death? Anfw. When
God will tell us we shall know.
27. And when Jesus departed
there, two blind men followed
him, crying, and saying, Thou
Son of David, have mercy on us.
28. And when he was come into
the house, the blind men came
to him: And Jesus took their hands,
and said unto them, Believe ye that I am able
to do this? They said unto him,
Yea, Lord. 29. Then touched
their eyes, saying, According
to your faith be it unto you.
30. And their eyes were opened.
27. &c. Note, These believed Christ to
be the Messiah, tho' it's like they knew little
of the nature of his Office. Their Faith was
their capacity of a cure.
And Jesus strictly charged
them, saying, See that no man
know it. 31. But they, when
they were departed, spread abroad
his fame in all that country.
30, 31. Note, Christ's command of silence,
was partly to give us an example of avoiding
ostentation, and hypocrisy, and to be con-
tent with the approbation of God alone.
32. As they went out, be-
hold, they brought to him a dumb
man possessed with a devil. 33. And
when the devil was cast out, the
dumb spake: and the multitudes
marvelled, saying, It was never
so seen in Israel.
32, 33. Note, His dumbness was caused
by the Devil's possession: And it's like he
was mad also.
34. But the Pharisees said, He
causeth out the devils through
the prince of the devils.
34. Note, This was the blas-
pheoming of the Holy Ghost: what can convince
who when they see all this done, will
The Devil do it? As if Power, and Le
and Government were the Devil's wo
2. This note is out of some Copies: the fame
is in Matth. 12. The Devils,
seems have one Monarch.
35. And Jesus went about all the
cities and villages teaching in the
synagogues, and preaching the
gospel of the kingdom, and heal-
ing every sickness, and every
disease among the people.
35. Note. 1. The Gospel of the Kingdom
is the glad news that the Kingdom of the
Messiah was at hand, and what it was.
2. Had he separated from the Synagogou
manner of worship, they had not permi-
ted him ordinarily to preach among them.
3. Christ that taught us to know false Pro-
phets by their hurtful fruits, (their malice
and cruelty, perverting and hurtful doctrines
in their religious profession) he was the true
prophet and doctrine, by speaking and doing good
all that he did being for men's own benefit,
healing and saving Souls and Bodies. And
the world will judge of men's pretences by
their fruits, when perpecutors have done their
work.
36. But when he saw the mul-
titudes, he was moved with com-
passion on them, because they fain-
ted, and were scattered abroad,
as sheep having no Shepherd.
37. Then faith he unto his dis-
ciples, The harvest truly is plente-
ow, but the labourers are few.
38. Pray ye therefore the Lord of
the harvest, that he will send forth
labourers into his harvest.
36. Note, Christ's Example teacheth Prea-
chers to compassionatize a willing multitude
when they want sufficient teachers; and to
pray God to send forth more labourers, when
there are too few; and not to give over
labouring for them themselves, without be-
ing utterly disabled, the men forbid them.
Some Parishes in London have about 70000
Souls, some 60000, some 50000; and all
the City and Country and much more, have
but
Ch. 10. The Apostles chosen. St. Matthew. Preachers sent. Ch. 10,

And when he had called unto him his twelve disciples, he gave them power against unclean spirits, to cast them out, and to heal all manner of sickness, and all manner of diseases.

And as he said these things unto them, a certain pharisee besought him to dine with him; and he entered into the pharisee's house, and sat down to meat.

And when he had given thanks, he said, Take meat; for thou hast not visited me these thirty years. And he said unto him, Verily, I say unto thee, thou hast not visited me these thirty years, but I have visited thee all these years. In the same manner therefore did the pharisees also misuse Christ's power and grace, not recognizing or acknowledging His authority and teachings.

Alas! the judgment of God awaits us if we neglect to recognize His presence and power in our lives.}

7. And as ye go, preach, saying, The kingdom of heaven is at hand.

8. And when they were come into Jerusalem, all the chief priests and the scribes sought to take him; but they feared the people: for they knew that he had done many miracles among the people, insomuch that they looked to hear him.}

9. And he said unto them, The days will come, when ye shall say, Blessed is he that hath not eaten, nor drunken, nor had silver nor gold; for these things shall be a stumblingblock unto them: but the wise shall understand these things.}

10. And he looked round about upon them, and said, What is this generation, that they are so easily astonished?}

11. And when the Pharisees had heard that he had eaten with publicans and sinners, they found among themselves a reason to说什么。
ledge of the Gospel, fully so called) and that Jesus was the Christ. Such was Zachary, and Elizabeth, and Nathanael, and the Centurion, Acts 10, &c. 2. And those that had but preparatory grace, or a teachable, tractable, willing disposition, were more worthy, (or less worthy) than the re-

factory.

2. Ministers being not heart-searchers, must pronounce God's blessing on men, on uncertainties and near probability of the event: 3. This benediction hath ever a condition implied, if the person be worthy, or capable of it. 4. If that person be unworthy and unblest, the minister is blameless, if he went according to probable profession: The fault was his own. 5. No ministerial blessing, (Baptizing, the Lord's Supper, Absolution, &c.) will give an unworthy person, that is, one not qualified for salvation according to God's promise.

14. And whosoever shall not receive you, nor hear your words: when ye depart out of that house, or city, shake off the dust of your feet.

14. And seeing ye come not for any gain of your own, but to bring them the joyful tidings of salvation, so heinous is the sin of thankless churchfolks, that you shall shake off the dust of your feet, as signifying the labour you used in vain for their salvation, as a witness against them in time to come.

15. Verily I say unto you, It shall be more tolerable for the land of Sodom and Gomorrha, in the day of judgment, then for that city.

15. Note. 1. There are different degrees of punishment hereafter: some are more tolerable than others. 2. Sodom's punishment shall be less than the refusers of the Gospel, because they sinned against less means, light and mercies. False Christians then will have a heavy doom.

16. Behold, I send you forth as sheep in the midst of wolves: be therefore wise as serpents, and harmless as doves.

16. It is not a life of ease and worldly preference, or man-pleasing that I send you on; but as sheep in the midst of many wolves, such enmity against the Gospel and godliness is in the corrupt nature and inte-

To the rest of men, and specially of the obtuse that instead of thankful entertaining and your message, they will tear and wound you, if God do not restrain it. Therefore be wise to carry your self offensively and cautiously, preferring, selves by lawful means; but be ye honest and innocent that they may have no accusation against you: and use no unlawful means: Sheep and Doves are no fighters against Wolves and Hawks.

17. But beware of men, they will deliver you up to councils, and they will scour you in their synagogues. 18. Ye shall be brought before governors and kings for my sake, to testify against them and Gentiles.

17, 18. But keep out of their hands: I do by just means: For the Jews will deliver you up to their Councils of Priests and Elders, and they will scourge you as a factor in their Synagogues: and if they make your crimes seem capital, they deliver you up to the Roman power, both Jews and Gentiles while you are sad, may hear from you what the Gospel and be unexcusable in their fin.

19. But when they deliver up, take no thought how or what ye shall speak, for it shall be given you in that same hour what ye shall speak. 20. For it is no that speak, but the Spirit of your Father, which speaketh in you.

19, 20. And let not your own flax of Speech put you on anxiety (as it did Jésus and Isaiah) For God's Spirit in you, help you and teach you what and how to speak in season.

21. And the brother shall deliver up the brother to death, the father the child: and children shall rise up against parents, and cause them to be to death. 22. And ye shall hate all men for my sake:

21, 22. So great is the enmity of the against the Spirit, and against Faith Holiness, that it will overcome every affection of brethren and parents, chil
24. The disciple is not above his master, nor the servant above his Lord. 25. It is enough for the disciple that he be as his master, and the servant as his lord: if they have called the master of the house Beelzebub, how much more shall they call them of his household?

24, 25. You are not greater or better than I: it's enough if you are used but as I am if they say that I work by Beelzebub, what words or false accusations be so bad which you may not expect that are my followers.

26. Fear them not therefore: for there is nothing covered that shall not be revealed, and hid, that shall not be known.

26. Therefore fear not their false accusations, or their threats: For there is nothing now covered with false pretences, reasonings or fancies, which shall not be uncovered, and truly opened: and not any thing hidden by fraud or force, which shall not be made known.

27. What I tell you in darkness, that speak ye in light: and what ye hear in the ear, that preach ye upon the house tops.

27. What I speak to you alone or in Parables, that publish fearlessly to all the world.

28. And fear not them which kill the body, but are not able to kill the soul: but rather fear him which is able to destroy both soul and body in hell.

28. Your bodies are mortal and must die, and God may suffer men to kill them: But fear not men that can do no more, nor can kill or undo the soul that is immortal: But fear God and offend not him, who can destroy both body and soul in hell.

29. Are not two sparrows sold for a farthing? and one of them shall not fall on the ground without your Father. 30. But the very hairs of your head are all numbered.

29, 30. If God's providence dispose of the least motions and events of the least of his Creatures, such as a poor Sparrow is, will
Ch. 10. Christ must be St. Matthew. preferred before all. Ch. 11.

will be not take care of you that are his
Children. Yea, he regardeth every hair of
your heads, how much more your lives and
souls.

31. Fear ye not therefore, ye are
of more value than many spar-
rows.

31. Trust God and fear not men: For
be that made you better than. Sparrows,
will regard you accordingly.

32. Whosoever therefore shall
confess me before men, him will I
confess also before my Father
which is in heaven. 33. But who-
soever shall deny me before men,
him will I also deny before my Fa-
ther which is in heaven.

32, 33. Note 1. By confessing Christ is
meant, open owning him as our Lord and
Saviour, whatever we suffer by it. 2. To
be owned by God through Christ our Ad-
vocate, is the great interest that we should
first secure.

34. Think not that I am come to
fend peace on earth: I came not
to fend peace, but a sword. 35. For
I am come to set a man at variance
against his father, and the daugh-
ter against her mother, and the daugh-
ter in law against her mother
in law. 36. And a man's foes
shall be they of his own house-
hold.

34, 35, 36. Think not that the coming
of the Messiah is to settle Israel in power,
and bring all Nations to submission or peace-
able confederacy with them, and to set
my disciples in a state of prosperity: you
must expect the contrary, that by owning
me and my doctrine your very friends
and kindred will turn your enemies, Par-
ents and Children will hate and persect
you, and out of your own houses will arise
your most dangerous enemies.

37. He that loveth father or
mother more than me, is not wor-
thy of me: and he that loveth son
or daughter more than me, is not
worthy of me.

37. And let not this turn you off: For
if you love Father or Mother, Son or
Daughter more than me, and would forsake
me rather than be forsaken or persecuted by
them, you are not capable of being my true
Disciples such as I will have.

38. And he that taketh not his
cross and followeth after me, is not
worthy of me.

38. And he that, if he be put to it, will
not follow me under the cross, and suffer
shearful Death rather than deny me, he
derfate rich and godliness, is not a true
Christian, nor qualified for salvation; no,
will I own him in the day of judgment.

39. He that findeth his life shall
lose it: and he that loseth his life
for my sake, shall finde it.

39. He that will lose his life by denying
me, or by any sin, shall lose it, for he
shall everlasting life, and shall die as we
others, and perhaps as soon: And he
that is put to death for faith and righteous
ness, hath not lost his life, when as death
is but his passage to life everlasting.

40. He that receiveth you, receiveth
me; and he that receiveth
me, receiveth him that sent me.

40. And seeing you are my Messenger
and your Commission shall be sealed by th
convincing evidence of the miraculous and
certifying operations of the Holy Ghost,
will own you in all that you say, do, or
suffer according to your commission, and
will reward them that receive you and your
words, as if they received me my self.
(for I am not to stay on earth to do all my
work my self, but will do it by my Min-
nisters.) And he that receiveth me shall
be accepted by my Father, as if he had receiv-
ed him.

41. He that receiveth a pro-
phet in the name of a proph-
et shall receive a prophet's reward,
and he that receiveth a righteous
man, in the name of a righteous
CHAP. XI.

1. And it came to pass, when Jesus had made an end of commanding his twelve disciples, he departed thence to teach and to preach in their cities.

2. Now when John had heard in the prison the works of Christ, he sent two of his disciples, 3. And said unto him, Art thou he that should come, or do we look for another?

4. Jesus answered and said unto them, Go and shew John again those things which ye do hear and see: 5. The blind receive their sight, and the lame walk, the lepers are cleansed, and the deaf hear, the dead are raised up, and the poor have the gospel preached to them. 6. And blessed is he whosoever shall not be offended in me.

5. It is not my own word, but my works that shall answer you: it is by the fruit that the tree must be known: The miraculous works of Divine Power are done, and the works of love to men's bodies, and the Gospel of Salvation is preached for their souls. And these being God's works, are God's testimony what I am. And yet the meanness of my appearance, and my contempt and suffering from men, will be to many, a stumbling block, and make the work of believing difficult, and blessed are they that believe notwithstanding all these difficulties.

7. And as they departed, Jesus began to say unto the multitudes concerning John, What went ye out into the wilderness to see? A reed shaken with the wind? 8. But what went ye out for to see? A man clothed in soft raiment? Behold,
Blaspheming the St. Matthew.

9. But what went ye out for to see? A prophet? yea, I say unto you, and more then a prophet.

7, 8, 9. Jesus took this occasion to describe John to the people, saying, What went you to John in the Wilderness to see? not a toy like a shaken Reed? Nor yet a pompous Gallant in gay cloths? such be not in Wildernesses but in Kings houses: you'll say, A Prophet? Yes, and greater than any foregoing Prophets; A nearer Messen-
ger of the Kingdom of God.

10. For this is he of whom it is written, Behold, I send my messenger before thy face, which shall prepare thy way before thee.

11. Verily I say unto you, among them that are born of women, there hath not risen a greater than John the Baptist: notwithstanding, he that is least in the kingdom of heaven, is greater then he.

12. And from the days of John the Baptist, until now, the king-
dom of heaven suffereth violence, and the violent take it by force.

13. And as the people crowded to John in the wilderness, and now as you see so k after me, for since John began to preach, I may say, they of these multitudes of incomer people, crowd as it were into the Kingdom of Heaven, and will not lose it, while it is neglected by the higher sort.

14. For all the Prophets, and the law prophesied until John.

15. And if ye will receive it, this is Elias which was for to come.

16. But whereto shall I liken this generation? It is like unto children sitting in the markets, and calling unto their fellows, Am saying. We have piped unto you, and ye have not danced: we have mourned unto you, and ye have not lamented.

17. But the unbelievers of this generation, do as children in their game complain of one another; you will neither dance when we pipe, nor lament when we mourn to you; you are crosst to us whatever game we play.

18. For John came neither eating nor drinking, and they say, He hath a devil.

19. The Son of man came eating and drinking, and they say, Behold, a man gluttonous, and a wine bibber, a friend of publican and sinners: but wisdom is justly 

20. Then began he to upbraud the cities wherein most of his mighty works were done, because they repented not.
27. All things are delivered unto me of my Father; and no man knoweth the Son but the Father; neither knoweth any man the Father, save the Son, and he to whomsoever the Son will reveal him.

27. All things are delivered by the Father to me, upon my right of Redemption, in order to the ends of my saving office, so that I am (under the Divine nature) even in my humanity made the universal Owner, Ruler, and Benefactor. And as none can comprehend the mystery of my Perfect Office, and Works, save the Father that sent me, so none can savingly know God the Father, but the Son, and he to whom the Son will make him known, by the Gospel and the illumination of the Spirit.

28. Come unto me all ye that labour, and are heavy laden, and I will give you rest. 29. Take my yoke upon you, and learn of me, for I am meek and lowly in heart; and ye shall find rest unto your souls. 30. For my yoke is easy, and my burden is light.

28, 29, 30. Come to me all ye that are under the slavery of Sin and Satan, and under God's displeasure by your guilt, and under the burdensome ceremonies and curving Law, and the Pharisees' tutorage, and under the toil of a poor afflicted condition in the world; and I will give you deliverance and rest. Take on you the yoke of my Government and Covenant, and learn of me as your Teacher by my Doctrine and Example; for I am meek and lowly, and my Doctrines are not suited to the Pomp and grandeur of this world, nor to the interest and mind of the proud and covetous, but to men of a low and humble quality; and in this you shall find rest to your tired, troubled, fearful souls. For my Service and Law is gracious, and easy, fitted to the relief of the guilty and distressed, and all that I lay on you by my word and works is light in comparison of the heavy burdens that you endure.

CHAP. XII.

1. At that time Jesus went on the Sabbath day through...
the corn, and his disciples were an
hunred, and began to pluck the
cars of corn, and to eat.

Note. Both the labour and the early eat-
ing seem here meant, but specially the
sixth.

2. But when the Pharisees law
in, they laid unto him, Behold,
thy disciples do that which is not
lawful to do upon the Sabbath-
day.

2. Art thou a good Teacher who suf-fer-
eft thy Disciples to break God's Law?

Note. That the Pharisees controversey ag-
ainst Christ was, that he was not religious,
and strict enough in keeping God's Law:
so that pretended strictness is no proof that
men are in the right.

3. But he said unto them, Have
ye not read what David did when
he was an hunred, and they that
were with him. 4. How he en-
tered into the house of God, and
did eat the shew-bread, which was
not lawful for him to eat. neither
for them which were with him,
but only for the priests? 5. Or
have ye not read in the law, how
that on the Sabbath days the priests
in the temple profane the Sabbath,
and are blameless?

3, 4, 5. Your strictness and your accusa-
tion of my Disciples, are but from your igno-
rance of the Scripture. Have ye not read
that hunger justified David and his com-
pany for eating the consecrated Bread,
which else none but the Priests might law-
fully eat. And that the Priests in the temple
labour on the Sabbath, and break the out-
ward rest of the day, which would be
profanation, did not the Temple service ju-
stifie it?

6. But I say unto you, that in
this place is one greater than the
temple.

6. But if the Temple service can justifie
labour, I am greater than the Temple, and
my service and authority can justifie it.

7. But if ye had known what
this meaneth, I will have mercy,
and not sacrifice, ye would not
have condemned the guiltless.

7. If instead of ignorant preciseness &
Ceremonies, you had but learnt the true
meaning of God, in his preferring mercy
before Sacrifice, you would not have thought
that Ceremonies and externals are comman-
ded men for their hurt, and must be obser-
vied against mercy to our fellows or others
God's commands are all for man's good
and he maketh not externals and ceremo-
nies for a snare to hurt men. You would
not have cenfur'd the guiltless as sinners, ha
you understood this.

Note. This (twice repeated) most open
condemneth the Papal Church-Govern-
ment.

8. For the Son of man is Lor
even of the Sabbath day.

8. And as Moses' Law was but to le-
ave men to Christ, in whom it is fulfilled; so
cannot bind any against him and his auth-
rity and saving work; for which world
fake all things are delivered into his hand
even the Law and Sabbath, of which he
Lord.

9. And when he was departed
hence, he went into their syn-
gogue. 10. And behold, there
was a man which had his hand w-
thered: and they asked him, say-
ing, Is it lawful to heal on the
Sabbath days? that they might a-
cuse him.

9, 10. Note. That the ceremonial outwas
strictures of hypocrites, is used to enflame
and hurt those that are not of their mind.

11. And he laid unto them
What man shall there be amor-
you, that shall have one sheep
and if it fall into a pit on the Sa-
bath day, will he not lay hold on
it, and lift it out?

11. Will you not draw a sheep out of
pit on the Sabbath-day, if you have b
one.

12. How much then is a man:
better then a sheep? wherefore
is lawful to do well on the Sab-
bath-days.

12. It is lawful to prefer and do a great
duty before a less.

13. Then faith he to the ma
Stretch forth thine hand: and I
stretched it forth; and it was r
stox

Then the Pharisees went out, and held a council against him, how they might destroy him.

Not. That it is part of the Religion of Hypocrites, to destroy men for doing the greatest good, against their Laws.

But when Jesus knew it, he withdrew himself from thence: and great multitudes followed him, and he healed them all. And charged them that they should not make him known:

Not. 1. It is a duty to avoid the hands of Murderers and Persecutors, unless our sufferings are like to do more good than our lives. 2. Christ forbid them making him known, partly to avoid the envy and rage of persecutors, and partly because the time was not yet come, till all work together with his Resurrection and Spirit, should make up a full proof.

That it might be fulfilled which was spoken by Esaias the prophet, saying, Behold, my servant whom I have chosen, my beloved in whom my soul is well pleased: I will put my Spirit upon him, and he shall shew judgement to the Gentiles. He shall not strive nor cry, neither shall any man hear his voice in the streets. A bruised reed shall he not break, and smoking flax shall he not quench, till he send forth judgement unto victory.

And in his name shall the Gentiles trust.

In all this he fulfilled what was prophesied by Isaiah, Behold, &c. Him whom I have selected for this work of Salvation, in whom I am well pleased, as fulfilling all my will. He shall have the fulness of the Spirit, and he shall teach the Nations the way of Truth and Righteousness: He shall not deceive men by Tumults, Violence, or War, but as the Prince of Peace and Grace, he shall deal gently with the weak, and cherish the least degree of good deeds, and pardon the faults of the penitent, and not use severity of justice, till he have gathered his Church out of the world, and overcome and judged his final enemies: And it is he in whom all nations shall be blessed.

Then was brought unto him one possessed with a devil, blinde and dumb, and he healed him, insomuch that the blinde and dumb, both spake and saw. And all the people were amazed, and said, Is not this the Son of David?

This people were so astonished, to see his works, that they said, Sure this is the Messiah the Son of David.

But when the Pharisees heard it, they said, This fellow doth not cast out devils, but by Beelzebub the prince of the devils. And Jesus knew their thoughts, and said unto them, Every kingdom divided against itself, is brought to desolation: and every city or house divided against itself shall not stand. And if Satan cast out Satan, he is divided against himself; how shall then his kingdom stand?

The Pharisees could not deny the matter of fact, it being notorious, and therefore they had no shift left for their unbelief, but saying, that All such works are not of God. The Prince of Devils, to deceive the people, gives him power to cast out devils, and do his miracles. But Christ said, If the Devil have a Kingdom, he hath wit to preserve it. Is it the Devil's work to do good to men's Souls and Bodies? If holy doctrine, and casting out devils, and healing the diseased, be against Satan and his Kingdom, then he is against himself, if he be the author of it. Kingdom, City or House will not stand if it be divided and fight against it self.

And if I by Beelzebub cast out devils, by whom do your children cast them out? therefore they shall be your judges. But if I cast out devils by the Spirit of God, then the kingdom of God is come unto you.

And if you think me a Conjuror and confederate with Satan, what say you of your own Countrymen my Disciples who
31, 32. All other sin and blasphemy against me, as I appear in my humane nature hath some excuse, and may be cured, and so be pardoned: But seeing the great work of the Holy Ghost done by me and to be done by my Disciples, in Miracles and Sanction, are the greatest evidences that God will give the world to convince them of the truth of my Gospel, he that is convinced of the fact that all these Miracles and this holiness is wrought, and will ye deny it to be God's attestation, and blasphemy mously stand to it, that it's the work of the Devil, this man rejecteth the greatest evidence, and shall have no greater, and so his infidelity is incurable, and aggravated with blasphemy and obstinacy, and will never be repented of, nor forgiven.

Note, This blaspheming the Holy Ghost is, in my Book called, The unreasonableness of Infidelity.

33. Either make the tree good and his fruit good; or else make the tree corrupt, and his fruit corrupt: for the tree is known by his fruit.

34. Judge of the tree by the fruit: or the power which I work by, by the works: If it be no good work to heal the Sick, and Blind, and Lame, and cast out Devils, and preach repentance and forgiveness of sin, to convert and save Souls, then God is not the Author of them. If they be bad works they have a bad cause; If they be good works, they have a good Author: either say plainly (you that ascribe them to the Devil) that the works are good, and the Devil is good: or else that the Devil is bad and the works are bad: Or if you confute the works to be good, confess that they are done by the Spirit of God.

34. O generation of vipers, how can ye, being evil, speal good things? for out of the abundance of the heart the mouth speaketh.
38. Then certain of the Scribes, and of the Pharisees answered, saying, Master, we would see a sign from thee.

39. But he answered and said to them, An evil and adulterous generation seeketh after a sign; and there shall no sign be given to it, but the sign of the prophet Jonas. 40. For as Jonas was three days and three nights in the whale's belly; so shall the Son of man be three days and three nights in the heart of the earth.

41. The men of Nineveh shall rise in judgment with this generation, and shall condemn it, because they repented at the preaching of Jonas, and beheld, a greater than Jonas is here. 42. The queen of the South shall rise up in judgment with this generation, and shall condemn it: for the came from the uttermost parts of the earth to hear the wisdom of Solomon, and beheld, a greater than Solomon is here.

43. When the unclean spirit is gone out of a man, he walketh through dry places, seeking rest,
and findeth none. 44. Then he saith, I will return into my house from whence I came out, and when he is come, he findeth it empty, swept, and garnished. 45. Then goeth he, and taketh with himself seven other spirits more wicked than himself, and they enter in and dwell there: and the last state of that man is worse than the first. Even so shall it be also unto this wicked generation.

46. &c. The case of this wicked generation is like that of a man that had the Devil cast out of him, but being unthankful, and continuing in his sin, the Devil (by God's permission) possessed him again, and brought him seven worse spirits, and so his end is worse than he was before he was delivered: So I have preached the Gospel, and cast out Devils in this land; but being rejected by the obstinate unbelievers, the Devil will get a worse possession of them than that from which I did eject him, and they shall be cut off for their unbelief.

47. While he yet talked to the people, behold, his mother and his brethren stood without, desiring to speak with him. 48. Then one said unto him, Behold, thy mother and thy brethren stand without desiring to speak with thee. 49. But he answered and said unto him that told him, Who is my mother? and who are my brethren? 50. And he stretcheth forth his hand towards his disciples, and saith, Behold my mother, and my brethren. 51. For whosoever shall do the will of my Father which is in heaven, the same is my brother, and sister, and father.

46. &c. Note. 1. Christ spake not this to teach men to disown and despise their natural affection: but to let all know that Regeneration puts men into a more honourable, beloved, and happy state than natural generation. 2. Which is exceeding comely for every true Christian. 3. And direceth us how to love such. 4. And a terrible prognostick of the misery of those that be and perfect them.

C H A P. XIII.

1. The same day went Jesus out of the house and saith by the sea side. 2. And great multitudes were gathered together unto him, so that he went into a ship, and sat, and the whole multitude stood on the shore. 3. And he spake many things unto them in parables, saying, Behold a sow went forth to sow.

1, 2, 3. N. Christ thought a Ship, or House, or a Mountain no unmeet place to preach in, and yet avoided not the Temple or Synagogues. 2. They that will have the word with God's blessing must follow it after it. 3. Similitudes were suitable to his learners. 4. Preaching is like sowing seed.

4. And when he had说完, some seeds fell by the wayside, and thence fowls came and devoured them up. 5. Some fell upon stony places where they had not much earth and forthwith they sprang up, because they had no deepness of earth. 6. And when the sun was up, they were scorched; and because they had not root, they withered away. 7. And some fell among thorns: and the thorns sprung up and choked them. 8. But other fell into good ground, and brought forth fruit, some at an hundred fold, some sixty fold, some thirty fold. 9. Who hath ears to hear, let him hear.

4, &c. Note. The first sort was not earthy. The second sort had little earth and rooting. The third sort had earth and rooting, but among thorns which had greater possession, and choked it. Of so great weight is it to understand this difference of hearers, that it is as much as our ears and understandings are worth.

10. And
And the disciples came, and said unto him, Why speakest thou unto them in parables? 11. He answered and said unto them, Because it is given unto you to know the mysteries of the kingdom of heaven, but to them it is not given.

11. Because the kingdom of heaven is like unto a soverign, who gathered to himself both what was his own and what was that of his neighbors. But to you it is given to know the mysteries of the kingdom of heaven. 12. For whatsoever hath not, from him shall be taken away even that, which he hath. 13. Therefore speak I to them in parables: because they seeing, see not; and hearing, they hear not, neither do they understand.

14. And in them is fulfilled the prophecy of Esaias, which saith, By hearing ye shall hear, and shall not understand; and seeing ye shall see, and shall not perceive. 15. For the heart of this people is waxed gross, and their ears are dull of hearing, and their eyes they have closed, lest they should see with their eyes, and hear with their ears, and understand with their heart, and should be converted, and I should heal them.

16. For where is the wisdom of this world, or the wisdom of the ages, or the wisdom of princes, in this scripture? As the wise man saith, The kingdom of heaven is as a man sowing seed in a field. 17. But no one receiveth seed of himself, but it is given him of heaven. 18. For the sower soweth the word, but the power thereof is of God. 19. But he that receiveth the seed in his heart, the same is he that heareth the word, and understandeth it; which also receiveth seed, and beareth fruit, and increaseth a hundred fold. 20. But if he have no seed in his heart, the same is he that heareth the word, and it doth no fruit, because he hath not received it of his father's heart.
Ch. 13. Divers bearers. St. Matthew. Tares suffer'd. Ch. 1

seed into stony-places, the same is he that heareth the word, and anon with joy receiveth it: 21. Yet hath he not root in himself, but endureth for a while: for when tribulation or persecution ariseth because of the word, by and by he is offended.

20, 21. Note, That the reason why such fall away, was the want of rooting of the word, is plain. But whether such should be favored if they had died before they fell away, is a controversy too long to be here handled, and not so needful as some think.

22. He also that received seed among the thorns, is he that heareth the word: and the care of this world, and the deceitfulness of riches choked the word, and he becometh unfruitful.

22. That is, He loveth the wealth and prosperity of this world more than the Word, and so that which he most loveth doth prevail against the other, and he liveth more to the world than unto God; and for the world will for sake his duty, and Christ himself in strong temptations.

23. But he that received seed into the good ground, is he that heareth the word, and understandeth it, which also beareth fruit, and bringeth forth some an hundred fold, some sixty, some thirty.

23. Note, See What is it that maketh the ground called Good, before the receiving of the word? Answer. 1. There was a certain degree of faith which was a state of Salvation before Christ was personally known or preached as incarnate: Those persons that had this, were good ground, ready to hear the Gospel when it was preached: Those that truly repented according to John's Preaching, were prepared to receive Christ. 2. And those that faithfully obey that Light of Truth already revealed to them, defining more, are better prepared for more, than other men.

24. Another parable put he forth unto them, saying, The kingdom of heaven is likened unto a man which sowed good seed in his field; 25. But while men slept, his enemy came and sowed tares among the wheat, and went his way.

24, 25. Another similitude he used, shew how the Church will be corrupted with Heresies and Vices.

26. But when the blade was sprung up, and brought forth fruit, then appeared the tares also.

26. Note, Heresies and Church-corruptions appear not at first, but when trial and temptation ripen them.

27. So the servants of the householder came and said unto him, Sir, didst not thou sow good seed in thy field? from whence then hath it tares?

27. Note, Seeing God and his word are good, it puzzled men to think, how the Church and world come to be so bad.

28. He said unto them, An enemy hath done this. The servants said unto him, wilt thou that we go and gather them up? 29. But he said, Nay, left while ye gather up the tares, ye root up also the wheat with them.

28, 29. N. 1. Satan is the father of Heresies and Vice (Whoever be his Ministers)
2. Ministers and others are more inclined to vindictive severity oft than Christ is. 3. God forbeareth the hypocrites and wicked (not through indifference, but) left the godly suffer by their destruction. 4. Christ condemns the revengeful and severe defines his servants.

30. Let both grow together until the harvest, and in the time of harvest I will say to the reapers: Gather ye together first the tares; and bind them in bundles to burn them: but gather the wheat into my barn.

30. Note, 1. God's delay to execute his judgment on the wicked, is no sign of their safety. Their misery will surely come at last. 2. We must not misinterpret God's patience with the ungodly.

31. Another parable put he forth unto them, saying, The kingdom of heaven is like to a grain of mustard seed.
37. He answered and said unto them, He that soweth the good seed, is the Son of man: 38. The field is the world: the good seed are the children of the kingdom: but the tares are the children of the wicked one: 39. The enemy that sowed them, is the devil: the harvest is the end of the world: and the reapers are the angels.

37, &c. It is Christ that sower the good seed, by Preaching the Gospel and planting the Churches by himself and his servants. The World is the first object of the Gospel preached, and out of which believers are gathered: The good seed (as sown, is the Gospel, but as springing up in fruit, are the faithful, who are properly the members of the Church of Christ: The Tares (as sown, are evil doctrines and temptations, but) as sprung up in fruit are the Children of the Devil, who is the father of wickedness: The enemy of God and goodness and man that sowed them, by himself and his servants, signifies the Devil: the time of harvest is, the end of this world, even the day of judgment: The reapers or executioners are the Angels.

40. As therefore the tares are gathered and burnt in the fire: so shall it be in the end of this world.

41. The Son of man shall send forth his angels, and they shall gather out of his kingdom all things that offend, and them which do iniquity:

42. And shall cast them into a furnace of fire: there shall be wailing and gnashing of teeth.

40, &c. So in the end of this World: Christ shall send forth his Angels as his executing Ministers, and they shall gather out of the world (which he is over), and specially out of the visible Church, all rebellious, unholy, wicked, scandalous, carnal men, and shall cast them into hell, which is likened to a lake of Fire, where they shall lie in torment and a self-afflicting Conscience.

43. Then shall the righteous shine forth as the sun, in the kingdom of their Father. Who hath ears to hear, let him hear.

43. Then shall the righteous, who are now obscured by infirmities and malignant flanders,

ders, and are oppressed in the world, shine forth in glory in the kingdom of Love, even of God as their Father in Christ, as the Sun shineth in the heavens in resplendent glory. As ever you will use your ears or understandings, believe and forsee this glorious blessed day to Believers.

44. Again, the kingdom of heaven is like unto treasure hid in a field: the which when a man hath found, he hideth, and for joy thereof goeth and selleth all that he hath, and buyeth that field.

44. The way of Salvation by Christ, sheweth men the certain hopes of so infiniteable a treasure in the life to come, as maketh the faithful choose it for their best, and part with all their pleasure, profit, and honour of the World to obtain it.

45. Again, the kingdom of heaven is like unto a merchant man, seeking goodly pearls: 46. Who when he had found one pearl of great price, he went and sold all that he had, and bought it.

45, 46. Note, He that findeth not by faith, enough in the love of God and heavenly glory, and in Christ the way thereto, to make him content sincerely and practically, to fell or part with all the world rather than lose it, is not capable of a just title to it, nor shall obtain it.

47. Again, The kingdom of heaven is like unto a net that was cast into the sea, and gathered of every kind. 48. Which when it was full, they drew to shore, and sate down, and gathered the good into reesseffs, but cast the bad away.

47, 48. The Church is gathered, as men by casting a net into the Sea gather fishes good and bad: And at the day of judgment, Christ will take the good to heaven, and cast away the bad to hell.

Note. 1. It is not to be wondered at, that the visible Church hath good and bad. 2. Yet this is not the design of the Gospel, which is fitted to make all good, but by the intrusion of Hypocrites. Nor is it an excuse for the neglect of discipline, and the just discrimination of the good and bad.

49. So shall it be at the end of the world: the angels shall come forth, and sever the wicked from among the just. 50. And shall cast them into the furnace of fire: where shall be wailing and gnashing of teeth.

49, 50. These plain and dreadful words more need belief and deep consideration than exposition.

51. Jesus saith unto them, He that hath ears to hear, let him hear.
57. And they were offended in him. But Jesus laid unto them, A prophet is not without honour, save in his own country, and in his own house. 58. And he did not many mighty works there, because of their unbelief.

57, 58. Unbelief made men incapable of those miracles which else Christ (had) would have wrought.

CHAP. XIV.

1. At that time Herod the tetrarch heard of the fame of Jesus. 2. And saying unto his servants, This is John the Baptist; he is risen from the dead; and therefore mighty works do they forth themselves in him.

1, 2. Note, That Herod did believe the immortality of the soul; else he could not have believed John's resurrection.

3. For Herod had laid hold on John, and bound him, and put him in prison for Herodias' sake, his brother Philip's wife. 4. For John said unto him, It is not lawful for thee to have her. 5. And when he would have put him to death, he feared the multitude, because they counted him as a prophet.

3, 4. Note 1. Faithful Prophets did tell kings of their sin. 2. But such as Herod cannot bear reproof. 3. The Persecution of faithful Teachers is usually for telling great men of their sins. 4. The multitude did so much reverence prophets, that they were a terror and restraint to persecuting rulers. 6. But when Herod's birthday was kept, the daughter of Herodias danced before them, and pleased Herod. 7. Whereupon he promised with an oath, to give her whatsoever she should ask. 8. And she being before instructed of her mother, said, Give me here John Baptist's head in a charger.

6, 7, 8. Note, Men feast and frolick in a time of gross sin, and general pleasures are their shares. 2. Rais Oaths are the fruit of vice, and the seed of more. 3. Voluptuous wantons are oft the most cruel and bloody percutors. 4. The Devil seduced women to suggesters of cruelty.

9. And the king was sorry: nevertheless for the oath's sake, and them which sat with him at meat, he commanded it to be given her.

9. Note, Wicked men oft sin with troubled conscience; but yet will do it for their base ends. 2. Hypocrites that dare murder the just, yet may make the Conscience of a wicked Oath their pretense. (How connivably then should bad Oaths be avoided, and good ones kept?) 3. The repugnance of men in bad company, is a usual share of iniquity.

10. And he sent and beheaded John in the prison. 11. And his head was brought in a charger, and given to the damsel: and she brought it to her mother. 12. And his disciples came, and took up the body and buried it, and went and told Jesus.

10, 11, 12. Note, The blood of Saints is vile and cheap to Tyrants, that can sell them to a Whore or wanton: But they shall pay dear for it at the last. 2. So great a Prophet as John must be a Martyr, that he may be like to Christ. 3. It's a true Martyrdom to suffer for Duty, as for Faith. 4. The blood of Saints is part of the sport and pleasure of lascivious wicked women.

13. When Jesus heard of it, he departed thence by ship into a desert place apart: and when the people had heard thereof, they followed him on foot out of the cities.

13. Note, 1. The Lord of Life, that came in flesh to save the world, was fain to fly for his life into a wilderness from the face of men, yea of the eminent members of the Jewish Church. 2. It is not cowardice, or unlawful to fly from Persecutors, till we have some special call to suffer.

14. And Jesus went forth, and saw a great multitude, and was moved with compassion toward them, and he healed their sick.

14. Note, Those that follow Christ, and seek to him, are liker to find his compassion, than those that drive him away.

15. And
15. And when it was evening, his disciples came to him, saying, This is a desert place, and the time is now past: send the multitude away, that they may go into the villages, and buy themselves victuals. 16. But Jesus said unto them, They need not depart, give ye them to eat. 17. And they say unto him, We have here but five loaves, and two fishes. 18. He said, Bring them hither to me. 19. And he commanded the multitude to sit down on the grass, and took the five loaves, and the two fishes, and looking up to heaven, he blessed, and brake, and gave the loaves to his disciples, and the disciples to the multitude.

15, &c. Note. 1. Christ fed the Body to win the Soul, and fomust we. 2. Nothing is too little which God will bless. 3. The God be every where, yet Christ directed us in prayer to him, to look up to heaven; for there is the glory in which he will appear to glorify his people. 4. If the Son of God must look up to heaven and bless his food, surely we must not take it like brutes, without craving God's blessing on it.

20. And they did all eat, and were filled: and they took up of the fragments that remained, twelve baskets full. 21. And they that had eaten were about five thousand men, beside women and children.

20, 21. Note. 1. This Miracle was done before five thousand Wines and more, that there might be no suspicion of deceit, or misreport. 2. He that was Lord of all, and could feed by miracle, yet would not have the fragments left.

22. And straightway Jesus constrained his disciples to get into a ship, and to go before him unto the other side, while he sent the multitudes away. 23. And when he had sent the multitudes away, he went up into a mountain apart to pray: and when the evening was come, he was there alone.
32. And when they were come into the ship, the wind ceased.
33. Then they that were in the ship, came and worshipped him, saying, Of a truth thou art the Son of God.
34. And when they were gone over, they came into the land of Genezareth.
35. And when the men of that place had knowledge of him, they sent out into all that country round about, and brought unto him all that were diseased.
36. And besought him, that they might only touch the hem of his garment, and as many as touched were made perfectly whole.

CHAP. XV.

1. And when Jesus had crossed over again by ship unto the other side, great multitudes followed him, and he tarried there two days.
2. And multitude came unto him, and he was and said unto them, Ask me anything, whatsoever ye desire.

4. For God commanded, saying, Honour thy father and mother; and he that curseth father or mother, let him die the death.
5. But ye say, Whosoever shall say to his father or his mother, It is a gift by whatsoever thou mightest be profited by me, 6. And honour not his father or his mother, he shall be free. Thus have ye made the commandment of God of none effect by your tradition.

7. Ye hypocrites, well did Esaias prophesy of you, saying, 8. This people draweth nigh unto me with their mouth, and honour me with their lips; but their heart is far from me. 9. But in vain they do worship me, teaching for doctrines the commandments of men.

10. And he called the multitude, and said unto them, Hear and understand: 11. Not that which goeth into the mouth defileth a man: but that which cometh out of the mouth, this defileth a man.
that the Pharisees were offended after they heard this saying.

12. *Note.* Erroneous men and hypocrites are offended at the clearest truth, which crosteth their odd opinions and way.

13. But he answered and said, Every plant which my heavenly father hath not planted, shall be rooted up. 14. Let them alone: they be blind leaders of the blind. And if the blind lead the blind, both shall fall into the ditch.

15. Then answered Peter and said unto him, Declare unto us this parable. 16. And Jesus said, Are ye also yet without understanding? 17. Do not ye yet understand, that whatsoever entereth in at the mouth, goeth into the belly, and is cast out into the draught. 18. But those things which proceed out of the mouth, come forth from the heart, and they defile the man.

19. For out of the heart proceed evil thoughts, murders, adulteries, fornications, thefts, false witness, blasphemies. 20. These are the things which defile a man: but to eat with unwashed hands, defileth not a man.

21. Then Jesus went hence, and departed into the coasts of Tyre and Sidon. 22. And behold, a woman of Canaan came out of the same coasts, and cried unto him, saying, Have mercy on me, Lord; thou son of David, my daughter is grievously vexed with a devil.

23. But he answered and said, I am not sent but unto the lost sheep of the house of Israel.

24. 24. Dissim her, that she trouble me not. He said, My personal Ministry is to be to the straying Jews, and not to the Heathens.

25. Then came she and worshipped him, saying, Lord, help me. 26. But he answered and said, It is not meet to take the children’s bread, and to cast it to the dogs. 27. And she said, Truth Lord: yet the dogs eat of the crumbs which fall from their master’s table.

28. Then Jesus answered and said unto her, O woman, great is thy faith: be it unto thee even as thou wilt. And her daughter was made whole from that very hour.

29. And Jesus departed thence, and came nigh unto the sea of Galilee, and went up into a mountain, and sat down there.

30. And
And great multitudes came unto him, having with them those that were lame, blinde, dumb, maimed, and many others, and cast them down at Jesus's feet, and he healed them:

Note. How earnestly will men seek for bodily health, who are sufferers of their souls' concerns: if Christ's Ministers could give all men health and wealth, what abundance of followers would they have, and who would for this, imprisonment, persecution or death then?

In so much that the multitude wondered when they saw the dumb speak, the maimed to be whole, the lame to walk, and the blind to see: and they glorified the God of Israel.

Note. Great and sensible miracles and benefits force men to acknowledge the hand of God, and to praise him.

Then Jesus called his disciples unto him, and said, I have compassion on the multitude, because they continue with me now three days, and have nothing to eat: and I will not send them away fasting, lest they faint in the way. And his disciples say unto him, Whence should we have so much bread in the wilderness, as to fill so great a multitude? And Jesus faith unto them, How many loaves have ye? and they said, Seven, and a few little fishes. And he commanded the multitude to sit down on the ground. And he took the seven loaves and the fishes, and gave thanks, and brake them, and gave to his disciples, and the disciples to the multitude. And they did all eat, and were filled: and they took up of the broken meat that was left, seven baskets full. And they that did eat, were four thousand men, beside women and children. And he sent away the multitude, and took ship, and came into the coasts of Magdala.

And this was the second Miracle of compassionate feeding the hungry. Is not Christ in Heaven as merciful and sufficient for soul and body, as he was on Earth?


d Ch 16.

He Pharisees also with the Sadducees, came, and tempting, desired him that he would shew them a sign from heaven.

1. Not believing the reports of all his miracles, they desired that they themselves might see some sign from Heaven, which might certainly prove that God had sent him: thinking that he could not do it.

2. He answered and said unto them, When it is evening, ye say, It will be fair weather: for the skie is red. And in the morning, It will be foul weather to day: for the skie is red and lowring. O ye hypocrites, ye can discern the face of the skie, but can ye not discern the signs of the times?

3. You can conjecture what weather will be by the sky: And is it to you so hard a matter to know by my doctrine and all the miracles and good works that I have done, that I am sent of God, that you must prescribe what signs God shall shew you from heaven, before you will believe?

4. A wicked and adulterous generation seeketh after a sign, and there shall no sign be given unto it, but the sign of the prophet Jonas. And he left them, and departed.

4. When your own wickedness hindereth your belief, you call for a sign from heaven to convince you. But I again tell you, You shall have no sign, but that of the Prophet Jonas. He that is filthy, let him be filthy still.

5. And when his disciples were come to the other side, they had forgotten to take bread. Then Jesus said unto them, Take heed and beware of the leaven of the Pharisees, and of the Sadducees.
5, 6. Note, Christ doth not bid them to avoid all converse with these men, or not to hear them read the Law of Moses, but to take heed of receiving any of their false doctrine.

7. And they reasoned among themselves, saying, Is it because we have taken no bread? 8. Which when Jesus perceived, he said unto them, O ye of little faith, why reason ye among your selves, because ye have brought no bread? 9. Do ye not yet understand, neither remember the five loaves of the five thousand, and how many baskets ye took up? 10. Neither the seven loaves of the four thousand, and how many baskets ye took up? 11. How is it that ye do not understand, that I spake it not to you concerning bread, that ye should beware of the leaven of the Pharisees, and of the Sadduccees? 12. Then understood they how that he had them not beware of the leaven of bread, but of the doctrine of the Pharisees, and of the Sadducees.

7, &c. We are dull of understanding till Christ instruct us, and apt to put carnal sense upon his words.

13. When Jesus came into the coasts of Cesarea Philippi, he asked his disciples, saying, Whom do men say that I, the Son of man, am?

13. Note, Christ would not so much exasperate his own disciples to confess him to be the Christ, till his works were a copious testimony; that their faith might not be precarious, nor by bare command; but by convincing evidence.

14. And they said, Some say that thou art John the Baptist, some Elias, and others Jeremias, or one of the prophets.

14. Note, Men were convinced that he was of God, (that is, the multitude, but not the rulers;) but they thought he was not the Messiah, but some great prophet's Saviour in a new body. 2. By this it is evident that the multitude then believed the mortality of the soul; else they could think that these souls came into other dies.

15. He faith unto them, I whom say ye that I am? 16. A Simon Peter answered and said, Thou art the Christ, the Son of living God.

15, 16. Note 1. It was meet, that those that were to preach Christ to others, should be brought to an open confession of themselves. 2. It's like the rest believed Peter, the he only spake.

17. And Jesus answered and said unto him, Blessed art thou Simon Bar-jona: for flesh and blood hath not revealed it unto thee, but my Father which is in heaven.

17. It is a point of so great importance to salvation, justification, and salvation, verily to believe me to be the Christ and Saviour, that this faith is the evidence and means of thy blessedness: It is a certain man that hath revealed this, so as to make thee a true believer, but my heavenly Father, by my works and word, and by grace.

18. And I say also unto thee, That thou art Peter, and upon this rock I will build my church; and the gates of hell shall not prevail against it.

18. And as thou hast confessed me to be Christ, I will say to thee, that art the Christ, a Rock or Stone, so by me and thy brethren I will build my church on this Rock, against all the power of hell, the Devils and wicked men shall not prevail.

Note. 1. It is a great controversy when by [his Rock] is meant, 1. Christ himself. 2. Or the faith and confession of Christ. 3. Or Peter himself. But no dogma is founded on it: For all three are certain truths. 1. No doubt but Christ is the Rock on which the Church is built. 2. And no doubt but faith and confession being the condition of our part, the Church is so far built there. 3. And no doubt but the Apostles are called foundations-stones on which the Church is built, and therefore Peter whose name is Peter, is the chief or principal one of them, as the foreman of a jury. 2. Thou
22. Then Peter took him, and began to rebuke him, saying, Be it far from thee, Lord: this shall not be unto thee.

23. But he turned and said unto Peter, Get thee behind me, Satan; thou art an offence unto me: for thou savourest not the things that be of God, but thou savourest not the things that be of men.

24. Then charged he his disciples that they should tell no man that he was Jesus the Christ.
5. It is no railing, on just occasions to tell tempting friends, and godly men or Ministers, that they are doing the Devil's work, and are instead of Devils to the tempted.

6. To hinder us in God's work and means of Salvation, is to be Satan's to us. O how many Satan's then are called Reverend Fathers, who silence and perfect men for God's work, as the whole course of the Papal Discipline and worship man feareth.

7. It is carnal favouring worldly and fleshly interest too much, and the things of God, the Soul, and Heaven too little, which is the common cause of the sinful counsels, and course, even of Sacred men.

24. Then said Jesus unto his disciples, If any man will come after me, let him deny himself, and take up his cross, and follow me.

25. For whosoever will save his life, shall lose it; and whosoever will lose his life for my sake, shall finde it.

24. Christ took this occasion to preach self-deny to his Disciples; saying, Let him that will be my Disciple follow me, and expect Salvation by me, resolve to deny his carnal self, and self-interest, and resign himself to me, as being not his own, but mine: Not making the cross, but patiently taking and bearing it when it is laid upon him, and follow me by sufferings unto glory. For this is the method determined by God, that whosoever resolveth to save his life, and not be undone in the world to avoid sin, this man shall finally lose his life, and life eternal. And whoever will lose his life, rather than by sin to forswake me and his duty, shall find that life with felicity in heaven, which he lost on earth.

26. For what is a man profited, if he shall gain the whole world, and lose his own soul? or what shall a man give in exchange for his soul?

26. Will it not be an ill bargain to gain all the world for a short time to the flesh, and lose one's own Soul and its happiness for ever? And what will compensate the loss of the Soul? For what price would you sell its happiness?

26. Man hath a Soul that liveth when he leaveth this world. It were a mad bargain to sell a man's Soul for all that this world can afford. O how many do that daily in deed, which they durst not do by an express bargain with the Devil!

27. For the son of man that cometh in the glory of his Father, with his angels; and then he shall reward every man according to his works.

27. Believe it, I shall come at last in judgment, in Divine Glory, attended by Angel and then I will reward those that were faithful to me, or perfidious, and all men according to their works: therefore whatever you suffer now, prepare for the judgment of that day.

28. Verily I say unto you, There shall be some standing here, which shall not taste of death, till they see the Son of man coming in hisKingdom.

28. And I tell you, lest you think this coming in Glory to judgment incredible that some shall live to see a visible representation of that my glorious appearing.

Note. That this is meant of his transfiguration, the addition of it in the several Evangelists: see. Nor is Dr. H. his reason against it from the former verse of an air, it being not the same coming that is here spoken of, but its representation.

CHAP. XVII.

1. And after six days, Jesus taketh Peter, James, and John his brother, and bringeth them up into a high mountain in a part, and was transfigured before them, and his face did shine as the sun, and his raiment was white as the light.

1, 2. And as Christ had promised them a glimpse of his Kingly Glory, so within six days he performed it to Peter, James, and John, whom he selected for peculiar favour in a high mountain, he was transfigured into a glorious appearance, his face shining like the Sun, and his raiment like light.

Note. Christ would have this help of fence to confirm their Faith. Of this transfiguration I have written at large in a Book called, My Dying Thoughts.

3. And...
3. And behold, there appeared unto them Moses and Elias talking with him.

4. **And all the disciples fell down and were greatly afraid.**

5. Then said he unto them, **Watch and pray, lest ye enter into temptation.**

6. **And when the disciples heard it, they fell on their face.**

7. And Jesus came and touched them, and said, **Arise, and be not afraid.**

8. And when they had lifted up their eyes, they saw no man, save Jesus only.

9. And as they came down from the mountain, Jesus charged them, saying, **Tell the vision to no man, until the Son of man be raised again from the dead.**

10. **And the disciples asked him, saying, Why then say the scribes, that Elias must first come?**

11. **And Jesus answered and said unto them, Elias truly shall first come, and restore all things.**

12. **But I say unto you, That Elias hath come already, and they knew him not, but did unto him whatsoever they pleased.**

13. **And then the disciples understood that he spake unto them of John the Baptist.**

14. **And when they were come to the multitude, there came to him a certain man kneeling down to him, and saying, Lord, have mercy on my son, for he is lunatick, and sore vexed: for oft-times he falleth into the fire, and oft into the water.**

15. **And I brought him to thy disciples, and they could not cure him.**
Ch. 17. The passion foretold. St. Matthew. Christ payeth tribute. Ch. 17

14. N. By [Lunatick] is meant one that had the Epilepsie, or some such diseas upon the change of the Moon: A real disease of which yet the Devil was the executioner, and further joyned with it extraordinarily.

17. Then Jesus answered and said, O faithless and perverse generation, how long shall I be with you? how long shall I suffer you? bring him hither to me.

17. It is long of your own unbelief and perverseness, that they could not cure him: how long shall I work miracles among you before you will believe? will you drive me from among you by your unbelief, to go to others?

N. This seems plainly spoken to the man of himself and such others, and not as some say, to the disciples.

18. And Jesus rebuked the devil, and he departed out of him: and the child was cured from that very hour. 19. Then came the disciples to Jesus apart, and said, Why could not we cast him out?

20. And Jesus said unto them, Because of your unbelief: for ye have not believed in your heart, and ye believe not with your heart.

18, &c. Your unbelief as well as the man's, was that which hindered you; you are all therein to be blamed.

20. For verily I say unto you, If ye have faith as a grain of mustard-seed, ye shall say unto this mountain, Remove hence to another place, and it shall remove; and nothing shall be impossible unto you.

20. For if you have the least true belief and trust in my Power and Will for the working of any such miracle, as I committed you to work, if it were as hard as the removing of a mountain, it should not be too hard for you.

Note. It is not faith, but presumption which hath no promise of success, if they or any are confident of working any miracle, which Christ never commissioned or called them to work, or promised his blessing to.

24. Howbeit this kind goeth not out, but by prayer and fasting.

21. But by faith, I mean not confident presumption, that God will do it in your own way: But for such as this, God will be sought by fasting and fervent Prayer, which way you may expect success, if it person also be capable that seeketh help.

22. And while they abode in Galilee, Jesus said unto them, The Son of man shall be betrayed into the hands of men: 23. And the shall kill him, and the third day he shall be raised again: and they were exceeding sorry.

22, 23. Again, Christ foretells them his death and resurrection, to instruct and prepare them for it: which they were grieved at.

24. And when they were come to Capernaum, they that received tribute-money, came to Peter, and said, Doth not your master pay tribute? 25. He said, Yes. And when he was come into the house, Jesus prevented him, saying, Wha thinkest thou, Simon? of what do the kings of the earth take toll from or tribute of their own children, or of strangers? 26. Peter faith unto him, Of strangers. Jesus faith unto him, Then are the children free.

24, 25. They had two sorts of tribute, but that here meant it's likely with Poll-money, imposed by Augustus first, and by (children) is not meant freeSubjects; for such did pay: but their own families. And then it's hard to know, when Christ's answer meant, unless it were as many say, Then this tribute belongs of right to this house of David, and is being of it am free, else, If kings own families be not taxed, I that am the Son of the universal King from whom is all power, and whose Subjects they are, am rightfully freer than the Children. This seemeth to me to be the sense. But he questioneth not but Tribut is due to kings and other Powers.

27. Notwithstanding, left we should offend them, go thou to the sea, and cast a hook, and take up the fish that first cometh up: and when thou hast opened his mouth, thou shalt find a piece of money.

that take, and give unto them for me and thee.

27. But we must deny our own right to avoid offence: Go therefore and take a hook, and I will bring a fish to thy hand with half a Gown (a Stater) in his mouth; which is the Poll-money for two persons: Pay them that for thee and me.

Note, This shewed the great power of Christ. 2. But why did he pay for Peter and not the rest? Answ. Peter had a house in Capernaum where they were, and was there to pay his Poll-money, Matt. 5, 8.

14. If be, as others think, the Tax to the Sederay that is here means, it will make no daurnal alteration: The sense then will be, I a Tax, due to God, is rather due to me, than from me, that am the Son of God.

CHAP. XVII.

A t the same time came the disciples unto Jesus, saying, Who is the greatest in the kingdom of heaven?

1. Ambition stirred in them, to debate who should be greatest in Christ's Church or Kingdom, next himself.

2. And Jesus called a little child unto him, and set him in the midst of them. And said, Verily I say unto you, Except ye be converted, and become as little children, ye shall not enter into the kingdom of heaven.

3. Christ set a child before them as a visible answer, and said, Except true conversion give you a new and humble mind, and take you off from ambitious overvaluing earthly pomp and power, that as reachable and obedient Disciples to me, you may be drawn to set more by heavenly things, you cannot be capable of entering into the heavenly Kingdom, much less of being greatest there: nor are you fit for a place in the Church on earth (much less of power) without coveting this.

4. Whosoever therefore shall humble himself as this little child, the same is greatest in the kingdom of heaven.

5. The worldly men will think otherwise, I tell you that the humblest Christian is the best, and the best is indeed the greatest, as being dearest unto God, and he is fittest also for Church power.

5. And who so shall receive one such little child in my name, receiveth me.

6. And he that receiveth or sheweth kindness to any such humble Godly Christian, I will take and reward it as done to me.

N. How do the Papal Clergy read this, that hate, revile, silence, and mine or burn such? But they cheat their Souls by saying, that such are but Hereticks and Schismaticks, and deny them to be Christ's, and then they think they are disobliged, and may use them as they first judge and call them.

6. But who so shall offend one of these little ones which believe in me, it were better for him that a millstone were hanged about his neck, and that he were drowned in the depth of the sea.

6. But whoever he be that shall gall, discourage, or by threatening, derision, or perfection seek to drive the leaf from faith and holy living, it were less hurt to that man, (how big soever he now look and talk) that he were drowned in the Sea, with a millstone about his neck: for God will take vengeance on him.

7. Wo unto the world because of offences: for it must needs be that offences come: but wo to that man by whom the offence cometh.

7. Wo to the world by reason of the Scandals, oppositions and impediments to faith, holiness and salvation, which men will lay before each other, some by error, some by crimes, and some by perfection: such scandals and hinderances and temptations there will be: God will permit them for trial, and men will commit them. But the sin is great, and it will be wo to the guilty, especially the malignant perfecters and seducers.

8. Wherefore if thy hand or thy foot offend thee, cut them off, and cast them from thee: it is better for thee to enter into life halt or maimed, rather than having two hands or two feet, to be cast into everlasting fire. 9. And if thine eye offend thee, pluck it out, and cast
8. Caft it from thee: it is better for thee to enter into life with one eyz, rather then having two eyes to be caft into hell-fire.

9. Let nothing seem too dear to thee to secure thy salvation against such scandals and hindrances and temptations: If it be a friend, or interest, as dear to thee as thy hand, or foot, or eye, it is a smaller loss to caft it away here, and be saved hereafter, then to keep it here, and be damned hereafter to endless misery. If thou hadst no other way to avoid sin but dismembering thy body, it would be a duty and no loss to do it.

Note. 1. Christ had said this before, Mat. 5. 30. It's no fault to say the same thing often. 2. If it be so dangerous to be tempted by others, its worse to be our own tempters.

10. Take heed that ye despise not one of these little ones: for I say unto you, that in heaven their angels do always behold the face of my Father which is in heaven.

11. Note. O what men are they, that read and preach this, and yet not only despise them, but first ignorantly or maliciously slander them, and then by this justifie their railing, persecuting and destroyng them. What a comfort is it to the least true Christian, that they have their Angels that have charge of them, who always see God's face in glory: And shall not we then see it?

12. For the son of man is come to save that which was lost.

13. And I that came into the world to save sinners, will require it at your hands, if you wrong or persecute them, or hinder them from the way of their salvation.

14. How think ye? if a man have an hundred sheep, and one of them be gone astray, doth he not leave the ninety and nine, and goeth into the mountains, and seeketh that which is gone astray?

15. And if so be that he find it, verily I say unto you, he rejoiceth more of that sheep, then of the ninety and nine which went not astray.

16. Christ likenezth himself to men that have, by unexpected successes in recovering the lost, a more sensible joy than for the rest, tho' not a higher esteem. And if he much rejoice in them, how will he take of those that hate, persecute or tempt them!

17. Even so it is not the will of your Father which is in heaven that one of these little ones should perish.

18. God loveth them better than ye love sheep; therefore he will save them, and judge all those that would affright, or drive away from their duty, the meanest person.

19. Moreover, if thy brother shall trespass against thee, go and tell him his fault between thee and him alone; if he shall hear thee thou hast gained thy brother.

20. But if he will not hear thee then take with thee one or two more, that in the mouth of two or three witnesse every word may be established.

21. And if he hear not, tell it unto the church: but if he neglect to hear the church, let him be unto thee as an heathen man, and a publican.

Twice of the Church, that they may not publick and do their office. And neglect to hear this publick exhortation, are no more communion or familiarity with him than with a Heathen or Pagan; but to carry it, that he and others may be thou esteemest not him as one of a Christian Society whom Christ will own.

Now, this Text, which is Christ's Law of Church-discipline, is perverted divers ways, by several sorts of mistakers. Some feign that it speaketh not of sins against God, but injuries against men; and that the Church is meant the Civil Judicature that now is (in subior or superior Sanhedrin.) But it is evident that it is to Christians or Disciples, that Christ giveth this Law; others moved no Law from him. And it was how to deal with a Brother in order to Repentance and Salvation, as the foregoing showed. 2. Christ knew that the Sanhedrin were his deadly enemies, and foretold that they would condemn him; And therefore never made a Law to his Disciples to use them as their ordinary Judicature. He knew that they would hate and persecute his Disciples, and therefore restrain them to right. 4. He came to subvert the Law, and overthrow their judicial policy. And therefore did not fulfill it by this Law. 5. He could never mean that Christians must take him for a Heathen, that heard not the Jews Council, when he foretold them how that they shall enjoin them in their Synagogues, and call out their names, and say all manner of evil against them falsely.

Nor did Christ set up a Christian Judicature of Magistrates, having the power of the sword, instead of the Jews. For, 1. Christ himself refused to use such a power on earth. 2. He forbade his Disciples that should it. 3. The Text speaketh of no judging power, but persuasively, and of no penalty, but Alienation and disowning. 4. The Apostles did never set up any such civil Judicature, nor the Church for them for 300 years and much more: which they would have done had Christ commanded it. 5. But they did set up such judicial Judicatures wherever they gathered Churches, which was their actual visible exposition of this Law of Christ. 6. It is not retribution or recovery of Lands, Goods, or Rights that is here mentioned as bond, but the winning of a brother by 

Christ, as an offence or trespass against us, than scandal, and dishonouring the Christian name and society, and grieving good men by sinning against God. I think these evidences prove past doubt, that it is the discipline of Christian Churches Christ herein institutes by a standing Law, for which he gave the power of the Keys.

2. The Church is told and heard, when the Rulers are told and heard, either before the whole congregation, or that they may publish it. The whole congregation is not to speak and be heard, nor necessarily to be told by the offended himself. But as the city is said to receive and to execute any Order from the King, when the Magistrates do their part in it, and the people theirs, so it is with the Church.

3. But how the telling of one Lay-cellar or Civilian, and hearing or not hearing him, and being Excommunicate by him concerns this Law, I know not; no not telling, or not hearing one single person that judgeth alone over many Hundred Churches at a distance and without their notice.

4. This discipline is of great moment, for the honour of Christ and his Church, that it be not as impure as the Inhabit world, nor a Swine-fly instead of a Society of Saints: And that it may be known that Christ came not as deceivers do, to get himself a number of followers as bad as other men: but to sanctify a peculiar people to God, zealous of good works, and forking the world, the flesh and the devil, and to keep Christians from the snare and the flame of infectious and wicked Associates: and to keep sin unclean open disgrace.

5. Yet if Pfaters neglect this holy discipline, the sin is theirs: It doth not necessitate the innocent to forsake the Church, unless their Doctrine or Practice amount to a profest rejection of some essentials of Christianity, or else they force men to sin, or to own their sin. But they that can shew better without more hurt than benefite, should prefer it before undisciplined Churches.

18. Verily. I say unto you, whatsoever ye shall bind on earth, shall be bound in heaven: and whatsoever ye shall loose on earth, shall be loosed in heaven.

18. I tell you, that my Church on earth is the Seminary or Suburbs of my Church in heaven, and those that you, as my Ministers, absole according to my word, they being no deceitful, but true professors of faith.
and repentance, they shall be absolved in heaven; and those that you bind over as
impenitent to my judgment, being such in-
deed, shall be condemned and shut out of
heaven: and I will own and confirm your
judgment of men by the power I give you,
if you do it according to my word.

N. God giveth Passors power to condemn
and cast out none from heaven, nor to save
any, but only such as condemn and cast out
themselves, or such as save themselves by
faith, more than the Church can do.

19. Again, I say unto you, that
if two of you shall agree on earth,
as touching any thing that they
shall ask, it shall be done for them
of my Father which is in heaven.

19. And I tell you, that I may encourage
you to concord, that if two of you (much
more, if all, or many) shall agree in your
Prayers, Discipline or Appeal to God, he
will accept your endeavours, and they shall
not be in vain, but blessed.

20. For where two or three are
gathered together in my name,
there am I in the midst of them.

20. For as I am with every single Chri-
tian, so will I more eminently bless with
the fruits of my presence, the Assemblies
of the faithful, be they never so small.

N. It is in hatred to Christ's presence and
name, that Satan perverts such meetings.

21. Then came Peter to him,
and said, Lord, how oft shall my
brother sin against me, and I for-
give him? till seven times?

21. Peter said unto him, What if my
brother do often sin to my injury or scan-
dal, and be often thus admonished; how
oft must I forgive him? seven times seems
much.

22. Jesus said unto him, I say
not unto thee, Until seven times:
but, until seventy times seven.

22. It is not the number of times, but
his true repentance that is to be here re-
garded: Nor, There are some sins that oft
committing, will prove that the Repentance
is not true. He that should daily or weekly
bear you, steal, murder, fornicate, and as
oft say, I Repent, is not to be believed, but
forfeiteth his credit. But he that is but oft
angry, or defective in the degrees of sincere
duty, may be believed, if he oft profess re-
penance.

23. Therefore is the kingdom
of heaven likened unto a certain
king which would take account of
his servants. 24. And when he had
begun to reckon, one was brough
to him which ought him ten
thousand talents. 25. But for so
much as he had not to pay, his lord
commanded him to be sold, and his
wife and children, and all that he
had, and payment to be made.

23, 24. And that you may know on what
terms you must look for mercy and forgive
nefs your selves, I will liken God's govern-
ment to a King's that would call his servant
to account, and demand his due, and make
his Debtors know what he might expect of
them in justice.

26. The servant therefore fell
down and worshipped him, saying
Lord, have patience with me, and
I will pay thee all.

26. The servant unable to pay, appeals
from justice, and begged mercy, promising
to pay when he should be able.

27. Then the lord of that serv-
vant was moved with compassion
and loosed him, and forgave him
the debt.

27. As he appealed to mercy, he found
mercy, and his Lord forgave him, and set
him free.

28. But the same servant went
out, and found one of his fellow-
servants, which ought him an hun-
dred pence: and he laid hands on
him, and took him by the throat,
laying, Pay me that thou owest.

29. And his fellow-servant fell
down at his feet, and besought him
laying, Have patience with me, and
I will pay thee all. 30. And he
would not: but went and cast him
into prison, until he should pay the
debt.

28, 29. He that had received so much
mercy, used his fellow-servant with unmer-
ciful rigour, exacting all his due.

31. So when his fellow-servant
faw what was done, they were ver-

1. "And it came to pass, that when Jesus had finished these sayings, he departed from Galilee, and came into the coasts of Judea beyond Jordan.

2. And great multitudes followed him, and he healed them there.

3. The Pharisees also came unto him, tempting him, and laying unto him, Is it lawful for a man to put away his wife for every cause?

4. And he answered and said unto them, Have ye not read, that he which made them at the beginning, made them male and female?

5. And said, For this cause shall a man leave father and mother, and shall cleave to his wife: and they twain shall be one flesh. Wherefore they are no more twain, but one flesh. What therefore God hath joined together, let no man put asunder.

6. "And no servant can serve two masters: for either he will hate the one, and love the other; or else he will hold to the one, and despise the other. Ye cannot serve God and mammon."
7. They thought to take 'advantage by this against him, as contradicting Moses's Law, and said, etc.

8. He saith unto them, Moses, because of the hardness of your hearts, suffered you to put away your wives: but from the beginning it was not so.

9. You mistake a permission for a command: Your Fathers were an ignorant dull unrighteous sort of people, and Moses was put so make but such Laws as they could bear: Therefore he permitted putting away, but only commanded that they should not do it without a bill of Divorcement.

10. And I say unto you, Whosoever shall put away his wife, except it be for fornication, and shall marry another, committeth adultery; and whoso marrieth her which is put away, doth commit adultery.

11. Note, 1. The Fornication must be proved and not only suspected. 2. It must be Fornication since Marriage. 3. A man is not commanded for this to put her away; and not forgive it, if there be reason for it, but only permitted. 4. In Common-wealths the Magistrate must be judge, for publick safety. 5. The woman is not so fully said to put away her husband; but by the Magistrate may have the same remedy of a Divorce, when the doth desire it.

12. His disciples lay unto him, If the cause of the man be so with his wife, it is not good to marry.

13. Then the danger and misery of an unsuitable marriage is so great, that it is better never marry.

14. But he said unto them. All men cannot receive this saying, save they to whom it is given.

15. He said, Men must not avoid a lesser evil by a greater. Some men's temperament, and some men's condition in the world, make Marriage necessary to them. All have not the gift of chastity.

16. For there are some eunuchs, which were so born from their mothers womb: and there are some eunuchs, which were made eunuchs of men: and there be eunuchs, which have made themselves eunuchs for the kingdom of heaven's sake. He that is able to receive let him receive it.

17. There are some unapt for cong with Women, who were born so: some are made so by men, by castration. And some have made themselves such, they might the better avoid all venereal temptations. He that is able to live a continent single life, without greater help, let him so do it, but all cannot.

18. Then were there brought unto him little children, that should put bis hands on them, to pray: and the disciples rebuked them. 14. But Jesus said, Suffer little children, and forbid them not to come unto me: for of such is the kingdom of heaven.

19. Some brought their children him, that he would lay his hands on them and bless them according to their infanta: and the Disciples chide them thinking such company below him: But Jesus said, Hinder them not, and forbid them little children to come or he brought to me. For I tell you, that it is not the self-conceived wife, but those that are ready learn and be ruled as such children are, that yet set not their wit and will against instruction, but are as it were beginning the work that will make up the Christian Church.

20. And he laid bis hands on them, and departed thence.

21. But why did he not Baptize them? He Baptized few of the Aged yet it is believed, and that Baptism which he used was but little differing from John's, till at his Resurrection the Christian Baptism was not fully instituted, as the entrance into Gospel-Church.

22. And behold, one came and said unto him, Good master, what good thing shall I do that I may have eternal life?

23. Note. 1. It was then taken for granted except by the Sadducees, that an enter life of happiness was to be attained. 2. At that well-doing on Man's part, was the way to attain it.

24. And he said unto him, What callest thou me good? There is none good but one, that is God: but

But this seemed so hard a motion to him, that he would not consent, but went away sorrowful; for he was very rich.

23. Then said Jesus unto his disciples, Verily I say unto you, that a rich man shall hardly enter into the kingdom of heaven. And again I say unto you, It is easier for a camel to go through the eye of a needle, than for a rich man to enter into the kingdom of God.

24. The difficulty of a rich man's being a sound Christian, and saved, is great, that I may express it by the common Proverb, of a Camel's going through a Needle's eye.

25. When his disciples heard it, they were exceedingly amazed, saying, Who then can be saved?

26. But Jesus beheld them, and said unto them, With men this is impossible, but with God all things are possible.

27. Then answered Peter, and said unto him, Behold, we have forsaken all, and followed thee; what shall we have therefore?

28. And Jesus said unto them, Verily I say unto you, that ye which have followed me in the regeneration, when the Son of man shall sit in the throne of his glory, ye also shall sit upon twelve thrones, judging the twelve tribes of Israel.

Note,
The Laboueurs of St. Matthew.

Ch. 20.

Note, It is doubted by Expositors, Whether this speak only of their chief Power on Earth in the Catholick Church, and answerable Glory in Heaven: Or of any peculiar reign over the Tribes of Israel, in Heaven, or on Earth, after the resurrection. The General sense is sure, tho' what more there is be doubtful.

29. And every one that hath forsaken houses, or brethren, or sisters, or father, or mother, or wife, or children, or lands for my name's sake, shall receive an hundred-fold, and shall inherit everlasting life.

30. And it is not you only, but all others that lose and forsake anything here, for my Name's sake, in the hope of the Kingdom of Heaven, shall be so great gainers by it, that they shall have in this Life a hundred-fold better in value than they lost, and in the World to come Everlasting Life. The worst condition of the Faithful, is an hundred times better than others.

31. But many that are first, shall be last; and the last shall be first.

30. But as to the degree of Glory, I must tell you, it will not be given according to priority of Age, or Conversion, but according to the preparations of Grace. And many that are now called, and have left Holi-ness, will have less Glory, than many that will be more Eminent Saints many Ages hence.

C H A P. XX.

For the kingdom of heaven is like unto a man that is an householder, which went out early in the morning to hire labourers into his vineyard. 2. And when he had agreed with the labourers for a penny a day, he sent them into his vineyard.

2. Note, The Parable is to shew, That God will not give men more Glory than others, because they were the first Christians; but, because his Grace hath made them the best, tho' in time after others.

3. And he went out about the third hour, and saw others standing idle in the market-place. 4. And said unto them, Go ye also into the vineyard, and whatsoever right, I will give you. And they went their way. 5. Again he went out about the sixteenth and ninth hour, and did likewise. 6. And about the eleventh hour he went out and found others standing idle, faith unto them, Why stand ye all the day idle? 7. They say unto him, Because no man hired us. He saith unto them, Ye also go into the vineyard, and whatsoever shall ye receive shall be at even.

8. So when even was come, lord of the vineyard, faith unto the labourers, Call the labourers, and give them their hire.

9. And when they came they received every man a penny. 10. But when the first came, they supposed that they should have received more: and they likewise received every man a penny. 11. But when they had received it, they murmured against the good-man of the house. 12. Saying, These have wrought but one hour, and thou hast made them equal unto which have born the burden and heat of the day.

10. Note, He made no difference in their Wages for the Time of their Work: But he will make difference for the Work itself: They that are called, near the end of the World, shall have as much, as though they had been Christ Preachers: And those that are Converted in their Age, if they, more Holy, than those that began in Youth, will be more Happy. 2. This Parable may not, that our Reward is Wages for value of our Work, as beneficial to God, Commutative Justice; but only speaketh
Then came to him the mother of Zebede's children, with her sons, worshipping him, and desiring a certain thing of him. And he said unto her, What wilt thou? She saith unto him, Grant that these my two sons may sit, the one on thy right hand, and the other on the left in thy kingdom.

Ambition is even in Christ's Disciples, till special grace humble them, seeking Preferment and Honour in the Church, as a Vice that Christ giveth us this warning to avoid. Carnality is apt to corrupt the Minds even of Eminent Ministers, and Disciples.

But Jesus answered and said, Ye know not what ye ask. Are ye able to drink of the cup that I shall drink of, and to be baptized with the baptism that I am baptized with? They say unto him, We are able.

22. You think to find Worldly Honour and Dignity in my Kingdom, But you are mistaken; It is Suffering for me, that you must expect: Can you drink of this bitter Cup, as I must do, and be Baptized in Blood, as I must be? And they over-confidently answered, We are able: Not knowing their trial, or their weakness.

23. And he saith unto them, Ye shall drink indeed of my cup, and be baptized with the baptism that I am baptized with: but to sit on my right hand, and on my left, is not mine to give, but it shall be given to them for whom it is prepared of my Father.

Ye shall indeed suffer more than now you think of (James was quickly Martyr'd!) But to be next me in my Kingdom, is not to be given by me upon such Petitioning, but only to those to whom my Father hath prepared it; and who shall be fittest for it?

And when the ten heard it, they were moved with indignation against the two brethren.

24. Note, 1. As some are prone to Ambition, so others to envy them, and be too much offended. 2. This ambitious part of Christ's Ministers here, began Discontent that...

Hosanna. Ch. 2.

that tended to Schism, had not Christ soon rebuked it. 3. Christ's own Twelve Apostles had their mutual Distaet.

25. But Jesus called them unto him, and said, Ye know that the Princes of the Gentiles exercise dominion over them, and they that are great, exercise authority upon them. 26. But it shall not be so among you: but whosoever will be great among you, let him be your minister. 27. And whosoever will be chief among you, let him be your servant.

25, 26, 27. Christ reburketh these Ambitious desires of Superiority among them, and faith, The Civil Government by the Sword, which the Gentiles exerciseth, is as of Lords by force and fear, and the Great in strength command the rest to do their wills. But in my Church as such, among you my Disciples it shall not be so: But (tho you must be subject to the coercive Government of Magistrates, yet) your own proper Government and pre-eminence shall be, by serviceable Humility and Love, over Volunteers: Church-greatnes shall consist, in being most greatly serviceable to the conversion and Edification of Souls, and in most humble condescension to that end: And he shall be accounted the Chief Pastor and Christian, who is most humbly serviceable to all. And the Proud, and domineering, and Un-serviceable, shall be the lowest or basest.

28. Even as the the Son of man came not to be ministered unto, but to minister, and to give his life a ransom for many.

28. As I my self came not to live in State, with great Attendance of Servants, but to serve Men for their good; not to receive by their service to me, but to serve them by my Service for them, and giving my very Life a Ransome for many.

29. And as they departed from Jericho, a great multitude followed him. 30. And behold, two blind men sitting by the way-side, when they heard that Jesus passed by, cried out, saying, Have mercy on us, O Lord, thou son of David.

31. And the multitude rebuked them, because they should he their peace: but they cried the more, saying, Have mercy on us, O Lord, thou son of David.

29, 30, 31. The Blind hearing by faith that he healed all, cried to him for Mercy believing that he could heal them.

32. And Jesus stood still, called them, and said, What will ye that I shall do unto you?

32. Note, Believers may have what will of Christ, which is meet for them, they for it.

33. They say unto him, I that our eyes may be opened. 34. Jesus had compassion on them, a touched their eyes: and immediately their eyes received sight, and they followed him.

33, 34. Note, 1. Bodily Calamities are sily felt, and Bodily Welfare is easily red. 2. And tho Christ most value thos who prefer Spiritual Mercies, yet he had compassion also on mens Bodies, as serv able to their Souls, and to his Glory.

C H A P. XXI.

1. And when they drew n unto Jerusalem, and came to Bethphage, unto the mount of Olives, then sent Jesus his disciples, 2. Saying unto them, into the village over against ye and straightway ye shall find an ass, and a colt with her: lo them, and bring them unto me. And if any man say ought unto you, ye shall say, The Lord need of them; and straightway will send them. 4. All this done, that it might be fulfilled which was spoken by the prophet saying, 5. Tell ye the daughter Sion, Behold, thy king cometh to thee, meek, and sitting upon ass, and a colt the fulse of an ass.

1. &c. Note, Christ's way of Travail, as poor mens, on Foot: And it was the for of persons that rode on Asses, (being thare bigger than ours) and only of great State or War that rode on He
Not knowing that the People would
in Jerusalem, to the Temple, all that
toll from their Money-changers, and the
of them that fold Dores,
13. And said unto them, It is writ-
ten, My house shall be called the
house of prayer, but ye have made
it a den of thieves.
12, 13. In this State he went on to
the Temple, and as one in Power, he cast out
them that had turned the Temp' into a Mr.
ket-place, to furnish men with Sacrifices ;
and overthrew the Tables of them that like Gold-
smiths or Bankers Exchanged Money for
advantage ; Alleging, [ISA. 56:7, 66. H. etc.
Ye have made a Market-place of it, where
the Covetous Deaf and Men for gain.
14. And the blind and the lame
came to him in the temple, and he
healed them.
14. He wrought out his Miracles openly
in the temple, as he had done in the Country.
15. And when the chief priests
and scribes saw the wonderful things
that he did, and the children cry-
ing in the temple, and saying, Hos-
anna to the son of David; they
were fore displeased. 16. And said
unto him, Hearest thou what these
say?
15, 16. The Rulers that knew they were
under the Roman Power, and saw that Jesus
was not like to deliver them from it, were
greatly displeased when they heard the in-
nferior Multitude, and Youths crying him
up as the King, and Messiah, and said, Hearest
ths what these say of thee? wilt thou stir
them to raise a Sedition for thee, and expose
us all to the Romans Wrath?
16. And Jesus went unto them,
Yea ; have ye never read, Out of
the mouth of babes and sucklings
thee hast perfected praise?
16. Yea, as it is Written, Mal. 3. 2. G:
The Sept. says, which Matthew uses,
differs from the Hebrew : but not in sense.
17. And he left them, and went
out of the city into Bethany, and
lodged there. 18. Now in the
morning as he returned into
the city, he hungered. 19. And when
he saw a fig-tree in the way, he
came to it, and found nothing
thereon, but leaves only, and said
unto it, Let no fruit grow on thee
hence-
henceforward for ever. And presently the fig-tree withered away. 20. And when the disciples saw it, they marvilled, saying, How soon is the fig tree withered away?
17. 18, 19, 20. N. It began then to die: but it was the next day that the Disciples saw it, and wondere.
21. Jesus answered and said unto them, Verily I say unto you, If ye have faith, and doubt not, ye shall not only do this which is done to the fig-tree, but also if ye shall say unto this mountain, Be thou removed, and be thou cast into the sea; it shall be done. 22. And all things whatsoever ye shall ask in prayer, believing, ye shall receive.
21, 22. Nothing shall be too hard, which God hath promised, and ye by faith and Prayer are fit to receive.
23. And when he was come into the temple, the chief priests and the elders of the people came unto him as he was teaching, and said, By what authority doest thou these things? and who gave thee this authority?
23. The Chief Priests and Elders Examined him, to shew his authority.
24. And Jesus answered and said unto them, I also will ask you one thing, which if ye tell me, I in like-wise will tell you by what authority I do these things. 25. The baptism of John, whence was it? from heaven, or of men? And they reasoned with themselves, saying, If we shall say, From heaven: he will say unto us, Why did ye not then believe him? 26. But if we shall say, Of men; we fear the people; for all hold John as a prophet.
24, 25, 26. They perceived the advantage Christ would have by their Answer; Either John’s Testimony, or the power of the Multitude, who revered Prophets sent from God, and would havetoned Them. Luke 20. 6.
27. And they answered Jesus, and said, We cannot tell. And he said unto them, Neither tell I you by what authority I do these things.
27. If you will not answer my Question, neither will I answer yours.
28. But what think you? A certain man had two sons, and he came to the first, and said, Son, go to work to day in my vineyard. 29. He answered and said, I will not: but afterward he repented, and went. 30. And he came to the second, and said likewise. And he answered and said, I go, sir, and went not. 31. Whether of them twain did the will of his father?
28. &c. That you may see that you highest profession of Holiness and Knowledge while you disdobe God, doth leave ye worse than the Publicans, and vulgar whom you villain: I will tell you a Parable, &c.
31. They say unto him, The first. Jesus faith unto them, Verily I lay unto you, that the publicanes and the harlots go into the kingdom of God before you. 32. For John came unto you in the way of righteousness, and ye believed him not: but the publicanes and the harlots believed him. And ye when ye had seen it, repented not afterward, that ye might believe him.
32. These despised Sinners believed John and repented: which you with all your Knowledge did not, nor yet do, and so are further from the Kingdom of God, thev: having no obedient Religion, &c.
33. Hear another parable: There was a certain householder which planted a vineyard, and hedged round about, and digged a wine-press in it, and built a tower, and let it out to husbandmen, and went into a far country.
33. Ver. God did what was necessary have made the Jews a happy Church, as
and was prepared: By digging a Wine-press, 
senting, hollowing a Trough to bruise the 
Grapes in, and building a Tower, is a setting 
up Building a Lodge or Dwelling for the 
Workmen.

34. And when the time of 
the fruit drew near, he sent his servants 
to the husbandmen, that they might 
receive the fruits of it.

35. God required the Fruit of all his 
Teachings, and Mercies to the Jews.

36. And the husbandmen took 
his servants, and beat one, and 
killed another, and stoned another.

37. Again, he sent other servants, 
more than the first; and they did un- 
to them likewise.

38. They persecuted and murdered 
the Prophets, Age after Age, and yet seem- 
ted to honour Prophets.

39. But last of all, he sent unto 
them his Son, saying, They will 
reverence my Son.

40. This does not mean, that God 
thought it, and was mistaken; but speak- 
ing after the manner of Men, tells them, 
what he might require in reason of them.

41. But when the husbandmen 
Saw the Son, they said among them- 
selves, This is the heir, come, let us kill him, and let us seize on his 
inheritance.

42. And they caught him, and cast him out of the 
vineyard, and flew him.

43. This meant not, that the 
Jews reckon him to be the Son of God, but 
ought and should have known it.

44. When the Lord therefore 
of the vineyard cometh, what will 
it be done unto these husbandmen?

45. They lay unto him, He will 
mercifully destroy those wicked 
men, and will let out his vineyard 
unto other husbandmen, which shall 
render him the fruits in their seca- 
sions.

46. Thus God will destroy the 
Murderous Jews, and call the Gentiles.

47. Luke records these words as Christ's, 
and tells us, That the Grandees said, God 
abhor. It's like they consented to it, till 
they heard it applied to themselves; and 
then said, God forbid.

48. Jesus spake unto them, Did 
yet never read in the Scriptures, The 
stone which the builders rejected, 
the same is become the head of the 
corner: this is the Lord's doing, and 
it is marvellous in our eyes?

49. Note, This was spoken 
only; it ultimately meant 
Christ, who should be the Foundation and 
Head of the Church, when the Jews had 
Crucified him.

50. Therefore say I unto you, 
The kingdom of God shall be taken 
from you, and given to a nation 
bringing forth the fruits thereof.

51. I tell you this doleful Truth, You that 
boasted of your peculiarities and hopes of the 
Kingdom of the Messiah, shall be deprived 
of it for your Sin; and it shall be given to 
the Gentiles, who will better entertain it, and 
obeys it, and be thankful for it.

52. And whosoever shall fall on 
this stone, shall be broken: but on 
whosoever it shall fall, it will grind 
him to powder.

53. Bare Unbelief of such as stumble at 
the Cross, or turn away from Christ, through 
offence and Temptation, will undo all that 
continue in it: But to those that prove 
Malignant Enemies, and fight against Christ, he 
will be as a Stone, too heavy for him that 
taketh it up to cast away, which will fall 
upon them, to their greater Destruction.

54. And when the chief 
priests and Pharisees had heard his para- 
bles, they perceived that he spake of 
them. 46. But when they sought 
to lay hands on him, they feared the 
multitude, because they took him 
for a prophet.

55. N. 1. Personal close reproofs, and 
denunciation of God's Judgments enrageth 
hardened Sinners. 2. The Jews that 
appaled Christ, thought it no Sedition to 
defend a Prophet against their High Priest 
and Rulers, who for fear of them, durst not 
openly take Christ.

CHAP. XXII.

1. And Jesus answered, and 
spake unto them again by 
parables, and said, 2. The king-
dom of heaven is like unto a certain king which made a marriage for his son. 3. And sent forth his servants to call them that were bidden to the wedding: and they would not come.

1, 2, 3. The calling of men into the Church, is like a King's inviting Guests to his Son's Marriage feast, that would not come.

4. Again he sent forth other servants, saying, Tell them which are bidden, Behold, I have prepared my dinner: my oxen and my fatlings are killed, and all things are ready: come unto the marriage.

4. Christ's Ministers are oft to invite men, and importune them to come in; and to tell them that Christ and his merits are sufficient for them, and all is ready and done on his part, preparatory to their belief, reception and confidence: they shall not perish for want of a sufficient Sacrifice.

5. But they made light of it, and went their ways, one to his farm, another to his merchandise:

6. And the remnant took his servants, and entreated them spitefully, and slew them.

5, 6. Note, As did the Jews, so do many others, make light of Christ, and all his offers of Grace and Glory, and mind more their Farms and Merchandize, their worldly interest and prosperity. And others more wicked than they do persecute those that would convert and save them. O odious unthankfulness, thus to require the greatest offers of Christ and his servants!

7. But when the king heard thereof, he was wroth: and he sent forth his armies, and destroyed those murderers, and burnt up their city.

7. Note, So did God send the Romans to destroy the Jews and burn Jerusalem; and hath often plagued Persecutors; and the day of revenge will come.

8. Then faith he to his servants, The wedding is ready, but they which were bidden were not worthy. 9. Go ye therefore into the high-ways, and as many as ye shall find, bid to the marriage.

8, 9. All was ready on Christ's part, but the Jews unworthily rejected him. Go call all the Gentiles that will come.

10. So those servants went out into the high-ways, and gathered together as many as they found both bad and good: and the wedding was furnished with guests.

10. So the Gospel was preached to the Gentiles of all sorts, and high and low came into the Church.

11. And when the king came in to see the guests, he saw there a man which had not on a wedding garment. 12. And he faith unto him, Friend, how camest thou in hither, not having a wedding garment? And he was speechless.

11, 12. Not Among the Jews the Marriage of rich men were solemnized with extraordiary pomp and festivity; and by the Wedding or festival garment, is meant, true Faith and Repentance. N. Though all must be called in to the Church, it is meant that they come as Christians indeed, with true Faith and Repentance, and dishonour not the Church by worldly common hearts and lives.

2. God will find out every Hypocrite in the Church. 3. None will be more uncouth and speechless in judgment, that ungodly hypocrites called Christians, that live wickedly. 4. It is not the Minile that called such, nor the company that joined with them, that are blamed.

13. Then said the king to the servants, Bind him hand and foot and take him away, and cast him into outer darkness: there shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth.

13. Not, As it is a double sin to be ungodly after Baptism, and in the Church, dishonouring the Christian name, so such that have greater punishment than ignorant in fideis.

14. For many are called, but few are chosen.

14. For those that are Baptized and called Christians are many, but those that have true faith and repentance and godliness, and shall be saved, are few.

15. Then went the Pharisees and took counsel how they might intangle him in his talk.
Paying to Cesar, as being an owning of his power? 2. Whether it be a duty? and, 3. Whether Cesar had true right to demand it? And Christ was desired to answer the first: And he had taught his disciples how lawful it was for peace to give away their right: much more now doth he intimate this to be lawful for publick peace and safety. 2. And the second question is by intimation resolved in the first: For if it be lawful, publick peace will make it a duty. But he answered so coldly as not to resolve the third question, Whether Cesar had right, or were an Usurper, and so avoided their snare. Some think that Hierotheus's dedication to the Romans gave them Right, and others think he represented not the Nation. And some think that many years possession gave him right, and others say that mere possession without right growth not to right by time. And some think that the Jews so long using Cesar's Cony and Officers, signified consent, and gave him right. And others say, That this alone signifies but Submission or Non-resistance, through disability and not subjection or consent to Government. If Cesar were an Usurper, paying tribute owned not his right, any more than contribution to conquering Soldiers; A man may buy his life or peace of a Robber. But Christ seemeth to answer but to the question asketh him, and not to meddle with any more.

Oft. The Tax intended in the question, was that which Cesar alienated from the Temple, and therefore the meaning was, (Is it not Sacrilege to pay that to Cesar that should be paid to God.) Ans. And Christ's answer is perfectly suited to such a question: as if he had said, (without determining Cesar's right to govern them,) You need not ask whether you shall pay it to God or to Cesar: You may do both, if you are able: Pay Cesar that which is Cesar's, and give God nevertheless his due.

22. When they had heard these words, they marvelled, and left him, and went their way.

22. When they saw they could not ensnare him, they went away confounded and disappointed.

23. The same day came to him the Sadducees, which say that there is no resurrection, and asked him.

24. Saying, Master, Moses said, If a man die, having no children, his brother shall marry his wife, and
raise up seed unto his brother.
25. Now there were with us seven brethren, and the first when he had married a wife, deceased, and having no issue, left his wife unto his brother. 26. Likewife the second also, and the third, unto the seventh. 27. And last of all the woman died also. 28. Therefore in the resurrection, whose wife shall be the be of the seven? for they all had her.

23. &c. These Sadducees were Hereticks that believed no life after this, nor Angels nor Spirits, and yet professed to believe the five Books of Moses, and so pretended Moses’s words to countenance their foolish error.

29. Jesus answered and said unto them. Ye do err, not knowing the scriptures, nor the power of God. 30. For in the resurrection they neither marry, nor are given in marriage; but are as the angels of God in heaven.

29, 30. You err through the ignorance of your gross and carnal minds, and carnally misununderstand the Scriptures, and the nature and power of God, and so of Spiritual things. In the Life after this, they have not flesh and blood that lusteth and generate as here; but they are Spiritual substances like the Angels in Heaven that generate not.

31. But as touching the resurrection of the dead, have ye not read that which was spoken unto you by God, saying, 32. I am the God of Abraham, and the God of Isaac, and the God of Jacob? God is not the God of the dead, but of the living.

31, 32. That there is a life after this, is proved by God’s words: I am the God, &c. That God is their God, implies that they are his people, and therefore live: For to be Their God, is to be their Ruler and their Benefactor and felicity; a relation which the dead are not capable of. And it is not said, I was their God, but, I am their God. And is Abraham, &c. be alive, so are the souls of other men; and as they die not with the body, but live with Spirits, so they are capable of a Spiritual body which God will give them.

33. It is well noted by Dr. Hammond, that as the Sadducees denied not only the rising of the body, but the immortality of the Soul, and all our life after this, so it was this future life which they here meant, and Christ doth prove out of the books which they received: And that signifies not only the resurrection of the Body, but our living after this life, when the body is dead. And if the Soul were not Immortal, there could be no resurrection of the same man: Another Soul would be another man imbodyed: And God doth not make new Souls to be rewarded or punished for that which they never did.

33. And when the multitude heard this, they were astonished at his doctrine.

34. But when the Pharisees had heard that he had put the Sadducees to silence, they were gathered together.

35. Then one of them, which was a lawyer, asked him a question, tempting him, and laying.

36. Master, which is the great commandment in the law?

33. &c. To try whether they could please him, or ensnare him in his answer, one ask’s this question.

37. Jesus said unto him, Thou shalt love the Lord thy God with all thy heart, and with all thy soul and with all thy mind. 38. This is the first and great commandment. 39. And the second is like unto it, Thou shalt love thy neigh bourn as thy self.

37. &c. Note, 1. Heart, Soul and Mind seem to mean but wholly with all thy power. Tho we may distinguish them, as meaning the faculties Viral, Sensible and Intellectual must be devoted to God: Or as some say The Will, Affections and Understanding. 2. Christ tells us of a great difference between God’s commands: These two are Great above the rest.

40. On these two commandments hang all the law and the prophets.

49. The
5. But all their works they do, for to be seen of men: they make broad their phylacteries, and enlarge the borders of their garments, 6. And love the uppermost rooms at feasts, and the chief seats in the synagogues, 7. And greetings in the markets, and to be called of men, Rabbi, Rabbi.

5, 6, 7. They place their Religion in outward ceremonies and actions of the body, which man can see: They write out the Law in Rolls, and wear them like a chain, and make broad the borders of their garments, as Num. 15.38. Deut. 22.12. And affect preeminence, great names and applause.

8. But be not ye called Rabbi: for one is your Master, even Christ, and all ye are brethren.

8. Do not you affect these titles of Reverence, such as Doctor, or any that giveth too much to man.

9. And call no man your father upon the earth: for one is your Father which is in heaven.

9. And call none in excess of Reverence, the Father of your Religion: for God only is such a Father.

10. Neither be ye called masters: for one is your Master, even Christ.

10. And affect not the title of Masters in Religion, for you are all Scholars to your Master Christ.

11. But he that is greatest among you, shall be your servant.

11. And whosoever shall exalt himself, shall be abased: and he that shall humble himself, shall be exalted.

12. Church greatness and dignity consisteth in being most greatly serviceable: But if you affect domination and preferment, you shall be abased: and he that humbleth himself shall be accounted the chief by God, and used accordingly.

13. But wo unto you scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites; for ye shut up the kingdom of heaven against men: for ye neither go in your
selves, neither suffer ye them that are eating, to go in.

13. You keep men from believing that they might be saved, pretending to be Masters and Teachers of the Law, you pervert it, and harden your selves in unbelieft, and are against others preaching the Gospel and believing it.

14. Wo unto you scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites; for ye devour widows houses, and for a pretence make long prayer; therefore ye shall receive the greater damnation.

14. You are unmerciful, covetous, and oppressors, and think your long prayers will save all with God, and men, and conscience.

15. Were they extemporary Prayers, or long Liturgies and forms? Anfw. If the former, the Pharisees had more of the gift of utterance than Christ's Disciples then. Fu: no doubt but they were long Liturgies or Forms; for else they were not suitable to the times or the character of the Pharisees, who were Church-rulers, and all for tradition, and ceremony and outside: And yet Christ b'anneth not the forms, or the length, but their hypocrisy, and oppressing cruelty. Only good is fit to cover evil.

15. Wo unto you scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites; for ye compass sea and land to make one profession: and when he is made, ye make him twofold more the child of hell than your selves.

15. Ye are very diligent to convert men to your Religion, and make them more guilty and more fierce against Christians than your selves.

16. Wo unto you, ye blind guides, which say, Whosoever shall swear by the temple, it is nothing: but whosoever shall swear by the gold of the temple, he is a debtor.

16. By a foolish distinction you feign a man not bound to keep his oath, nor guilty if he break it, who swear by the Temple; and yet say he is bound that sweareth by the gold of the Temple, as more holy.

17. Ye fools, and blind: for whether is greater, the gold, or the temple that sanctifieth the gold?

17. Is not the Temple consecrated to God before its Gold, which is but an accident to the Temple?

18. And whosoever shall swear by the altar, it is nothing: but whosoever sweareth by the gift that is upon it, he is guilty. 19. Y fools, and blind: for whether is greater, the gift, or the altar that sanctifieth the gift?

18. Is not the Altar consecrated before the Gift, on which the Gift must be sired if consecrated?

20. Who so therefore shall swear by the altar, sweareth by it, and by all things thereon. 21. An whosoever shall swear by the temple, sweareth by it, and by him that dwelleth therein. 22. An he that shall swear by heaven, sweareth by the throne of God and by him that sitteth thereon.

20. &c. The Altar is to be taken relating to the Offering, and the Temple as Heaven relating to God, in the sense the Oath.

23. Wo unto you scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites; for ye profit of mint, and anise, and cummin, and have omitted the weightier matters of the law, judgment, mercy, and faith: these ought to have done, and not to leave the other undone.

23. What hypocrisy is it to be precise in Tything and trifling small things, as wished to neglect the great duties of the Law, just judging, mercy, and faithful dealing! these are the things which you have first done, with greatest zeal and care, and the small things to come in their proper place.

24. Ye blind guides, which strain at a gnat, and swallow a camel.

24. They may be sharply reproved as blind guides, who place their Religion in Ceremonies and small things; while they are judge, mercy, fidelity, and such great
25. Wo unto you scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites; for ye make the outside of the cup, and the platter, but within they are full of extortion and excess.
26. Thou blind Pharisee, cleane\textit{f}t that\textit{f} which\textit{f} is within the cup and platter, that the outside of them may be clean also.
27. Wo unto you scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites; for ye are like unto whitened sepulchres, which indeed appear beautiful outward, but are within full of dead mens bones, and of all uncleannesse. 28. Even so ye also outwardly appear righteous unto men, but within ye are full of hypocrisy and iniquity.
29. Wo unto you scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites; because ye build the tombs of the prophets, and garnish the sepulchres of the righteous, 30. And say, If we had been in the days of our fathers, we would not have been partakers with them in the blood of the prophets. 31. Wherefore ye be witnesses unto your selves, that ye are the children of them which killed the prophets. 32. Fill ye up then the measure of your fathers.
29. &c. As Hypocrites ye honour by your Ceremonies and words the memory of the Prophets and Righteous men, whom your Fathers Murdered; and you say, you would not have done it; and yet you do the same, and worse. You confess, that you are the off-spring of those Murderers, and therefore liable to be plagued for your Fore-fathers sins, if you Repent not: No wonder if you imitate them, and fill up the measure till you be ripe for Vengeance.
33. Ye serpents, ye generation of vipers, how can ye escape the damnation of hell?
33. How can ye escape Damnation, who are the Seed of such Serpents and Vipers, of the same nature, and go on in the same way of sin?
34. Wherefore behold, I send unto you prophets, and wise men, and scribes; and some of them ye shall kill and crucifie, and some of them shall ye scourge in your synagogues, and persecute them from city to city: 35. That upon you may come all the righteous blood shed upon the earth, from the blood of righteous Abel, unto the blood of Zacharias, son of Barachias, whom ye slew between the temple and the altar. 36. Verily I say unto you, All these things shall come upon this generation.
34. &c. I foretell you now what will befall you: I will send unto you yet greater Prophets, &c. And thus you will use them. And so when you have filled up the measure of your National Sin, the Destruction deferred by your Ancestors, but suspended by the patience and long-suffering of God, shall be suspended no longer, but shall fall on this forsaken Generation, and God will remember all at once, in the day that he dreadfully destroyeth you.

XII. Whether this Zacharias was the Son of Jemima, in Joshua's days; and the Name of Barachias, lipt into the Text by some Scribes' conjecture out of the Description of the Prophet Zachary: or whether it were any other, is of no great Moment.

2. The Sons of their Ancestors are said to be punished on that Generation; because it being a National Punishment, which was procured by National Sins, many
many Ages. 2. Because Children derive Nature and Guilt in part from Parents Sin, and not from Adam only, as the whole History of Scripture teacheth. 3. Because they sinned as their Ancestors did.

The Sin here described, is much like theirs now, who Canonize the Saints whom their Ancestors Persecuted and Murdered, and keep Holidays for them, and visit their Shrines, and carry their Relicks, and account their Names the Honour of their Church; and at the same time, Hate, Persecute, Silence and Murder those that imitate them.

37. O Jerusalem, Jerusalem, thou that killest the prophets, and stonest them which are sent unto thee, how often would I have gathered thy children together, even as a hen gathereth her chickens under her wings, and ye would not!

37. How oft have I offered by my Messengers, and attempted to gather thee into a State of greatest favour and safety, with tenderest Love; but you would not Conscier?

N. 1. Christ would have taken the whole City and Nation into his Church, had they not refused: And therefore Infants as they were before. 2. If the Jews had all believed in Christ, he would not have continued the Law of Moses, and that Police, which did but lead to him; nor have forsaken the rest of the World, to make them only his Church; but would have made them a part of the Catholic Church.

38. Behold, your house is left unto you desolate. 39. For I say unto you Ye shall not see me henceforth, till ye shall say, Blessed is he that cometh in the name of the Lord.

38, 39. Your Temple and City are near to certain Desolation. When you have executed your fury on me, I will leave you to the fury of Destroyers, and you shall see me no more, till Conviction constrain you to desire me, as your Saviour.

Now, That the Country of Judea where the remnant of the Jews, after the Destruction of Jerusalem, abode, were Converted to Christ, as other Countries were, in the days of Constantine, and after; and a Patriarch settled at Jerusalem; an a Bishop at Cæsarea, and many Bishops and Churches among them, though some remained obdurate.

### C H A P. XXIV.

1. And Jesus went out, and departed from the temple and his disciples came to him for they saw the buildings of the temple. 2. And Jesus said unto them See ye not all these things? Verily I say unto you, There shall not be left here one stone upon another that shall not be thrown down.

1. 2. All this shall be cast down for the Sin of this People.

3. And as he sat upon the mount of Olives, the disciples came unto him privately, saying, Tell us, when shall these things be? and what shall be the sign of thy coming, and of the end of the world?

3. They defined him, that had so oft to them, that he must be Crucified, and Risen, and yet come again, to tell them the meaning, and signs of this his coming, which they did not well understand. Some Expositors of this hard Chapter think, That the Question meaneth no more, than the Signs of of thy Coming to Destroy Jerusalem; and of the end of the World. Others think, That they expect that Christ should presently come, and Reign at Jerusalem, and set up a Kingdom so excellent, as should be the beginning of a New Age, or World; as Noah's after the Deluge when all the World of wicked men was to be destroyed. Others think these questions are put of different things, and times, and accordingly Answered. When the Temple should be Destroyed.

2. When Christ would set up his Víspit Kingdom? 3. When the World should End. The two first undoubtedly they meant; by his Coming, I do not think they meant, that his sending the Roman Army, nor coming at the Day of Resurrection a Judgment; but his Coming to be a Víspit Monarch, and Declaring himself King, a Reigning according. And 3. By End of the World, whether they meant a utter Desolation at last, or the End of an Unreformed Age or World, which his Kingdom should overthrow, I am not certain.

And Christ doth not profusely blame their
speculations, his Answers approve them,
but tend to reprove them.

4. And Jesus answered and said
unto them, Take heed that no man
deceive you. 5. For many shall
come in my name, saying, I am
Christ: and shall deceive many.

4. 5. It's true, that this 'Temple shall be
destroyed, and my Kingdom shall be set up,
and the world of Enemies be subdued, (and
the of Nature be dissolved.) But for your
question of the time, let me first admonish
you to be fortified by Patience and Faith,
and many Deceivers, which for tryal
be permitted to pretend, that not I, but
they are the true Messiahs: (such were Si-
man, Judas, Taras.) and look not for a
visible Monarch.

6. And ye shall hear of wars and
rumours of wars; see that ye be not
troubled: for all these things must
come to pass, but the end is not yet.

6. There will be fearful Comotions, Ri-
sings, and Wars, before these things come
to pass, let not that disturb you.

7. For nation shall rise against
nation, and kingdom against king-
dom: and there shall be famines,
and pestilences, and earthquakes
in divers places. 8. All these are
the beginning of sorrows.

7. 8. War by sedition among your selves,
and Wars of other Nations, with other
Pages and Comotions, and Signs, shall
be but for-runners of that sorrowful
time.

9. Then shall they deliver you
up to be afflicted, and shall kill you:
and ye shall be hated of all nations
for my name's sake.

9. And before that day foreknow what
shall befall your selves: Persecution, Murder,
and common Hatred, for my Name sake.

10. And then shall many be off-
fended, and shall betray one an-
other, and shall hate one another.

10. And the temptations of those days
shall prevail against many that profess
him, and shall pervert them, and draw
them to betray, and here my true Disciples,
and new their unfaithfulness.

11. And many false prophets
shall rise, and shall deceive many.

11. And many that make themselves the
Masters of Sects and Heresies, shall pretend
Inspiration and Revelation for Lies, and per-
nicious Doctrines, and many shall be de-
ceived and follow them.

12. And because iniquity shall
abound, the love of many shall wax
cold.

12. And iniquity shall so far abound, both
in the World assaulting the Church, and in
the declining of Church Members (by Worldlines, Fleshlines, Pride, and Her-
eresies,) that the first favours of Christian
Love shall be abated.

13. But he that shall endure
unto the end, the same shall be
saved.

13. But he that overcometh these Tem-
prations, and keepeth his Integrity, and per-
severeth in his Fidelity, shall attain the end
of his Faith, and be Saved.

14. And this gospel of the king-
dom shall be preached in all the
world for a witness unto all nations,
and then shall the end come.

14. And the Jews driving you away by
Persecution, you shall Preach the Gospel to
the Heathen Nations, that by receiving it,
shall condemn the Jews: And then shall come
the desolation of their State, and the ending
of their Law and Policie.

15. When ye therefore shall see
the abomination of desolation, spoken of by Daniel the prophet, stand
in the holy place, (whoso readeth)
let him understand. 16. Then
let them which be in Judea, flee
into the mountains. 17. Let him
which is on the housetop not come
down to take any thing out of his
houe: 18. Neither let him which
is in the field return back to take
his clothes.

15, 16, 17, 18. When ye see the desola-
ting Heathen Army come to use their force
and violence, against the Sacred Place of
the Jews, answering that which Daniel faith
of others, then stay not but be gone, and
be glad if by Flight you can save your Lives,
but stay not to save your Goods or
Cloths.

19. And wo unto them that are
with child, and to them that give suck in those days.

19. And they that are made slow by impediments of children, &c., are like to lose their lives.

20. But pray ye that your flight be not in the winter, neither on the sabbath day:

20. It will increase the calamity of your flight, if it should fall out in the winter, when the weather will delay you, or on a sabbath day, when the Jews scruple journeying, or a sabbath year, when the land is tilled barren: not fruit.

21. For then shall be great tribulation, such as was not since the beginning of the world to this time, no, nor ever shall be.

22. And except those days should be shortened, there should no flesh be saved: but for the elects those days shall be shortened.

22. N. This was most dreadfully fulfilled, as Joseph, who was then among them, hath fully written, 110,000 killed, and 97,000 Captives. 22. If these Slaughterers by the Romani should continue long, no Jews would be left alive. But God will so far preferre the Believers, that their Armies shall stay but a little while.

23. Then if any man shall say unto you, Lo, here is Christ, or there: believe it not.

24. For there shall arise false Christs and false prophets, and shall shew great signs and wonders, insomuch that (if it were possible) they shall deceive the very elect. 25. Behold, I have told you before.

24. 25. In this Desolation it will add to their misery, that False Christs and Prophets shall arise, and promise to deliver them, and lead them further into snares: And they shall do such Signs and Wonders, as, if God did not preferre them, would deceive the very chosen of God, the true Believers. But whatever name you hear of such, believe it not: I have fore-warned you.

26. Wherefore, if they shall say unto you, Behold, he is in the desert, go not forth: behold, he is in the secret chambers, believe it not.

26. Go not after any such Deceiver wherever they say he is, though he pretend deliverance.

27. For as the lightning cometh out of the east, and shineth even unto the west: so shall also the coming of the Son of man be.

27. For as you must look for no other Saviour, so my coming will not be such an appearance in Flesh, but by Heavenly Light shining forth from the East unto the Western Parts of the World, by my Word and Spirit turning men from Darkness to Light; it is preparation to my coming to Judgment, in which I will suddenly appear from Heaven in Glory to all the World, as Lightning doth in a moment in the Skies.

Note, Some Expositors rather think, he speaketh of his sudden Destroying Jerusalem.

28. For wheresoever the carcase is, there will the eagles be gathered together.

28. And as for these forlorn Jews whose deserved Destruction is decreed of God, they are as a carcase to the Eagles: the Roman Messengers of God’s Wrath will find them out.

Note, Others expound it, [where the Gospel is Preached, thither will the People flock.]

29. Immediately after the tribulation of those days, shall the sun be darkened, and the moon shall not give her light, and the stars shall fall from heaven, and the powers of the heavens shall be shaken.

29. N. Some expound this metaphorically, of the overthrow of all the Jewish State, Power, Police. Others, of the Roman Wars and Concupiscence. Others, properly, of dreadful Prodigies that shall appear before Christ’s coming to Judgment. Joel 2. 31, and 3. 15.

30. And then shall appear the sign of the Son of man in heaven: and then shall all the tribes of the earth mourn, and they shall see the Son of man coming in the clouds of heaven, with power and great glory.

30. A
36. But of that day and hour knoweth no man, no not the angels of heaven, but my Father only.

36. The day and hour of the coming, say some, Of the End of the World, say others, none knows but God.

Note. 1. Whence the Ancient Doctors gathered, that Christ hath a two-fold Knowledge, (Will and Operation.) One Humane and Imperfect, the other Divine and Perfect. 2. Angels may increase in knowledge.

37. But as the days of Noe were, so shall also the coming of the Son of man be. 38. For as in the days that were before the flood, they were eating and drinking, marrying, and giving in marriage, until the day that Noe entered into the ark. 39. And knew not until the flood came, and took them all away; so shall also the coming of the Son of man be.

37, 38, 39. As in the days of Noe they would not believe their danger, till it surprised them, but liv'd pretumptuously in their fleshly pleasure, and worldly business: so will it be with Sinners at my Coming (Both at the destruction of Jerusalem, and at the day of Judgment.)

40. Then shall two be in the field, the one shall be taken, and the other left. 41. Two women shall be grinding at the mill, the one shall be taken, and the other left.

40, 41. [Then I will manifest my distinguishing Providence: One, that is, a Believer shall be taken to me, and be Saved; and the other left to delusion, and destruction in unbelief. Note,

Note. The difficulty of most of these foregoing Texts forbids me to be peremptory in determining, whether they spake only of the destruction of Jerusalem, (as in Mark, the Question seemeth to intimate) or also of the End of the World, (as some words in the Answer seem to intimate.) And I incline to think, that as the Types and Prophecies of the Old Testament, spake principally of the things and persons Typifying, but remotely and chiefly thereby of Christ, and things Typified: so these Texts speak, first, of the destruction of Jerusalem; and next, of the Calling of the Gentiles, and Catholick Church; but thereby finally and chiefly, of the End of the World: As if Christ said, As it will be here now, so it will be then, parabolically.

42. Watch therefore, for ye know not what hour your Lord doth come.

42. This therefore is the necessary wisdom of all, to be as men on their watch, never asleep, or mindless: but always ready, as expecting the Coming of your Lord: And then, though you understand not all Circumstances beforehand, you shall be safe.

43. But know this, that if the good-man of the house had known in what watch the thief would come, he would have watched, and would not have suffered his house to be broken up. 44. Therefore be ye also ready: for in such an hour as you think not, the Son of man cometh.

43, 44. Seeing men will watch against a Thief, if they knew when he would come, watch you for the preventing of surprise, because you know not, but it may presently be the time; and it must be a continual readiness, that must be your safety, not only as to the destruction of Jerusalem, but as to every man’s particular Judgment. (For Christ spake for the use of us all to the end, and not only for the few Jews that heard him.)

45. Who then is a faithful and wise servant, whom his Lord hath made ruler over his household, to give them meat in due season? 46. Blessed is that servant, whom his Lord when he cometh, shall find so doing.

45, 46. And those that are faithful and wise Teachers and rulers of his Church, and shall give them meet and seasonable instruction as food for their Souls, shall be found at the Lord’s coming. Blessed Persons, and shall abundantly gainers by their labours and their Sufferings.

47. Verily I say unto you, that he shall make him ruler over all his goods.

47. I tell you, such Ministers, (how poor or despised soever now by the world,) shall be advanced to a far greater dignity than their present Pastoral Office, even to a participation under Christ of the Universal Government.

48. But and if that evil servant shall say in his heart, My Lord delayeth his coming, 49. And shall begin to finite bis fellow-servants and to eat and drink with the drunken:

48. But and if any Asume the Sacred Ministry, and shall say in his heart, It is k of Christ promised to come; and now coming is either uncertain, or will not in haste; and thereupon shall indulge foolishly Lusts; and shall turn a malignant biter of his fellow Servants; and Persecute Silence, and Oppress them, and give himself up to the pleasure of his Appetite, Feasting and Drunkenness,

50. The Lord of that servant shall come in a day when he looketh not for him, and in an hour that he is not ware of; 51. A shall cut him alunder, and appo his portion with the guilty: there shall be weeping; gnashing of teeth.

50. The Lord of that Servant will prise him in his Sin and Security, when least suspected; and will execute Vengeance on him, which is due to his aggravate their wickedness, by Hypocry and make him feel that it is odious it is dreadful to prophan Holy things, to fight against holiness in the Name of Christ, and at once, to be a Ministrant, a Worldling, a Sensualist, and a Pervert.

Annotation. It is of great moment the understanding of this Chapter, and of Christ’s Gospel, to know the true
The Ten Virgins. 

Ch. 25.

Christ's Kingdom. St. Matthew.

The Ten Virgins.

Ch. 25.

Christ's Kingdom, and his Coming. The time directly of his last coming to judge ye; ordinance, this sacrament his sign, his Kingdom is that Reign in heaven at once, which he was to come as the Messiah, or God Incarnate, being redeemed lost Man. The little poor group of Israelites were his peculiar People: Upon his Ascension, the Gentile field was to be Called, and a Catholic Church gathered over the Earth, in a more ancient covenant of peculiarity; and this Catholic Church is the Kingdom of the Messiah: His coming, is not his sending his armies to destroy Jerusalem, nor yet his visible Appearance in Person, (till Judgment,) but his sending up this his Kingdom: his coming to Reign, that is, to erect this Catholic Church: This is plainly expounded in a Lat. 17, 20, 21, 23. The Pharisees demanded, when the Kingdom of God should come: He told them, The Kingdom of God cometh not with observation or outward show, (by personal visible Appearance of the King, in Pomp and Splendor, with a Court, & Mace and staff) nor shall they say, Lo here, or Lo there; (no Head, King, or Court shall be visible:) for behold, the Kingdom of God is in you, (or among you;) It is a Spiritual Reign in Souls, and in the Church, of which you have already some beginnings.

For as the Lightening that lighteneth out of one part under the Heaven, shineth to the other part under Heaven; so shall also the Son of man be in his Day: but first he shall Suffer, and be rejected of this Generation, & that is, when he hath Suffered, and been Rejected, he will Rise, Ascend, and from Heaven send his Spirit and Word, to enlighten the World from East to West, and call a Catholic Church amongst the Gentiles, and this is his Kingdom and Reign; and this Generation shall not pass till this Catholic Church be thus gathered, though not perfected. What else can be meant by Christ's many Parables, that the Kingdom of God is like a grain of Mustard Seed. A Leaven hid in Meal. A Field sown, and Tares had Tares. A Net cast into the Sea, &c. When the Catholic Church was made, Christ's Kingdom came; and when his Kingdom came, he came as King to Govern, & his Spirit, Word, and Ministers, Matthew 13: 35.

The Kingdom of God, (that is, the Church State of peculiarity) shall be taken from you, and given to a Nation (the Gentiles) bringing forth the Fruit thereof; the perfection of the Kingdom will be at last. And as to the Time of his Appearing for Judgment, it must specially be observed, that he tells them, That it was not known either to Angels, or to himself. And if Christ knew it not, (as man,) how presumptuous are they that foretell it. And whereas they say, It was but the Day and the Hour, and not the Year, that he knew not? I answer, That by Day and Hour, is meant in general, The Time. And if Christ knew it not, no wonder if he foretold it not to his Disciples, but told them to this Effect, It shall be uncertain to you, that you may be always ready! Therefore, though it be false that Jesus said, That Paul thought, that the Coming of Christ would be in his days; It is true, that Paul knew not but that it might be in his Days. They might know indeed, that it would not be till certain Signs foretold, came to pass; but after that, they were still to expect it as uncertain.

CHAP. XXV.

1. Then shall the kingdom of heaven be likened unto ten virgins, which took their lamps, and went forth to meet the bridegroom. 2. And five of them were wise, and five were foolish.

1. When Christ cometh to Judgment, either on the Jews as aforesaid, or on any with Death, or on all, at the last Day,) the Administration of his Kingly Government, towards the Ready, and Unready may be illustrated by this similitude, of Ten Virgins, &c.

Note, The Custom of the Jews was, to make very Pompous Feasts, at Weddings, and many Virgins used to go to the Bride's House, and thence with hand Lamps to go, and attend her to the Wedding.

3. They that were foolish took their lamps, and took no oyl with them. 4. But the wise took oyl in their vessels with their lamps.

3. 4. The Foolish made no preparation but for the present; but the Wise provided for the time to come, supposing there might be some delay.

Note, The Parable is, to stir up all to preparation for Death and Judgment; and all the Tryals that are to come: and to prove it damming Foolishness, after all warnings to delay, and be unprepared.

5. While
While the bridegroom tarried, they all slumbered and slept.

Note: The Lamp, and the Vessel of Oyl signify, Preparation by sudden act, and Preparation by a stated habit: Wife and Foolish, Good and Bad, may sleep upon delay; and keep not up still the same lively Activity: But the Godly have still the holy Nature and Habits.

And at midnight there was a cry made, Beheld, the bridegroom cometh, go ye out to meet him.

And when they are deepest in security, or forgetfulness, and minding Worldly things, they suddenly hear that Christ by Death or Judgment is coming; He is just at hand: There's no more delay, you must presently come away to Judgment, and to be saved, if you are his.

Then all those virgins arose, and trimmed their lamps.

When the Midnight cry cometh, and there is no longer stay, all men, good and bad, wise and foolish, will be awakened, to attempt some sudden preparation: The work almost under the sentence of Death will think, what now must I do to be Saved? Self-love, and fear, will make them cry for Mercy, with some kind of Repentance, though they be Unconverted.

And the foolish said unto the wife, Give us of your oyl, for our lamps are gone out.

The unprepared unholy Souls, when Death and Judgment comes, would fain then be found in the State of holy Believers, and would die the death of the righteous, and with for their preparations.

But the wife answered, saying, Not so; left there be not enough for us and you: but go ye rather to them that fell, and buy for your selves.

These wishes then are vain: One man cannot be Saved by another man's Righteousness: It must be your own, or it will not save you. Go therefore and make your own preparation.

And while they went to buy, the bridegroom came, and they that were ready, went in with him to the marriage, and the door was shut.

10. Death and Judgment will not stay for the unready: They that are found unanointed, only under fears and wishes to be saved, will be shut out, when holy prepared Souls are all let in.

11. Afterward came also the other virgins, saying, Lord, Lord, open to us.

12. But he answered and said, Verily I say unto you, I know you not.

13. Watch therefore, for ye know neither the day nor the hour wherein the Son of man cometh.

13. God hath purposely concealed the time of Christ's Coming from the knowledge of all Men, that all might be obliged to be in constant, watchful readiness: ye, it is said, That Christ himself knew it not as man. They that say, The Year may be known, though not the Day, or Hour, distort the Text which meaneth, by Day and Hour, the Time: as if he had said, You are not fit (save by the Signs forementioned not Filled) but it may be the next Day, or Hour: so that the Apostles themselves were uncertain, tho' they rebuked them that pretend to know, that it was at hand, before Jerusalem was Destroyed. From their days to now, God hath kept the Church uncertain, but that it might quickly come. So that Grotius is mistaken, that thinks Paul believed it would be in his days; as if he had by a false Motive drawn men to godliness. But Paul knew not how soon it might happen. Ignorance of it is needful, but Error is hurtful: (of which before.)

14. For the Kingdom of heaven as a man traveling into a far country, who called his own servant, and delivered unto him his good

15. And unto one he gave five talents, to another two, and another one, to every man accordi
to his several ability, and Christ passing into the Heavens, committed to his Servants the Word, means, and mercies of his Grace, that they may improve them till he come by Death and Judgment, to call them to account: Not giving the same degree of means and mercy to all, but to some more, and to some less.

16. Then he that had received the five talents, went and traded with the same, and made them other five talents. 17. And likewise he that had received two, he also gained other two.

16, 17. They that had the greater means and helped improved them, to their own increase of Grace, and the good of others, and the service and honour of their Lord.

18. But he that had received one, went and digged in the earth, and hid his lord's money.

18. Not, Theo the least helps should be advantageously improved, yet the least (such as they have, who have little more than the Light of Nature) excite not men so powerfully to an improvement.

19. After a long time, the Lord of those servants cometh, and reckoneth with them.

19. Not, Christ here intimateth that his coming to reckon with them would not be late.

20. And so he that had received five talents, came and brought other five talents, saying, Lord, thou deliveredst unto me five talents: behold, I have gained besides them five talents more.

20. I have used them to the increase of thy grace in me, and to the good of men, and to thy glory.

21. His lord said unto him, Well done, thou good and faithful servant; thou hast been faithful over a few things, I will make thee ruler over many things: enter thou into the joy of thy lord.

21. His Lord who freely gave him his means to use, yet rewarded his faithful use of them, and praised his fidelity, saying, I will give thee great things, because thou hast well and faithfully used the smaller mercies of this life which I gave thee.

22. He also that had received two talents, came and said, Lord, thou deliveredst unto me two talents; behold, I have gained two other talents besides them. 23. His lord said unto him, Well done, good and faithful servant; thou hast been faithful over a few things, I will make thee ruler over many things: enter thou into the joy of thy lord.

23, 23. N. 1. The reward of glory given for our diligent improvement of the mercies of this life, is consistent with the freeness of the gift. 2. God himself will praise the fidelity of his Servants, as worthy of praise. 3. Great rewards will crown the faithful for little things here sincerely done. 4. It is our Lord's own joy that the faithful shall enter and partake of.

24. Then he which had received the one talent, came and said, Lord, I knew thee that thou art an hard man, reaping where thou hast not sown, and gathering where thou hast not laboured: 25. And I was afraid, and went and hid thy talent in the earth: lo, there thou hast that is thine.

24, 25. The fear of the uncertainty makes me think it safer to keep thy money merely from being lost.

N. Hard thoughts of God make men backward to his service, which is a work of love; and sinful fear is an enemy to holy diligence and fruitfulness.

26. His Lord answered and said unto him, Thou wicked and slothful servant, thou knewest that I reap where I sowed not, and gather where I have not laboured:

27. Thou oughtest therefore to have put my money to the exchangers, and then at my coming I should have received mine own with usury.
unfaithfulness in us that are but Stewards and Servants. To do no harm is a praiseful fit for a slave and not for a man. 2. To confess God's holy Government, and yet be unholy, is to be self-condemning.

28. Take therefore the talent from him, and give it unto him which hath ten talents. 29. For unto every one that hath shall be given, and he shall have abundance: but from him that hath not shall be taken away, even that which he hath.

30. And cast ye the unprofitable servant into outer darkness: there shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth.

31. When the Son of man shall come in his glory, and all the holy angels with him, then shall he sit upon the throne of his glory. 32. And before him shall be gathered all nations; and he shall separate them one from another, as a shepherd divideth his sheep from the goats: 33. And he shall set the sheep on his right hand, but the goats on the left.

34. Then shall the King lay upon his right hand, Come ye blessed of my Father, inherit the kingdom prepared for you from the foundation of the world.

35. For I was an hungered, and ye gave me meat: I was thirsty, and ye gave me drink: I was a stranger, and ye took me in: 36. Naked, and ye clothed me: I was sick, and ye visited me: I was in prison, and ye came unto me.

37. Then shall he answer him, saying, Lord, when saw we thee an hungered, and feed thee? or thirsty, and gave thee drink? 38. When saw we thee a stranger, and took thee in? or naked, and clothed thee? 39. Or when saw we thee sick, or in prison, and came unto thee?

39. Christ doth more interest himself in his servants love and good word than they thought or can easily believe and vaileth these more than we do selves.
And the King shall answer, Verily I say unto you, In as much as ye have done unto one of the least of these my brethren, ye have done it unto me.

43. N. The wicked shall suffer, not only for hurting, but for not helping the faithful, as if it had been Christ himself that they neglected. O what a motive is this to Charity?

44. Will it not be endless thus to convince and judge all the world? Ans. No; though this be spoken after the manner of Men, God can at once open every man's case to his own Conscience, and judge all the world in a moment, as the Sun doth at once enlighten all the eyes on earth.

45. And these shall go away into everlasting punishment: but the righteous into life eternal.

46. The Execution shall presently follow the Sentence. All that showed not their faith in Christ, and love to him, by loving his servants above their worldly wealth and pleasure, shall go to everlasting punishment with devils that deceived them: And the faithful that loved Christ, and his interest and servants above their fleshly interests, shall go into endless life and blessedness. But this doth not extend to condemn Infants or poor unable persons for not doing what they could not; nor to deprive them of a reward that had a will to do more than they were able.

CHAP. XXVI.

1. And it came to pass, when Jesus had finished all these sayings, he said unto his disciples, Ye know that after two days is the feast of the passover, and the Son of man is betrayed to be crucified.

2. And it came to pass, when Jesus had finished all these sayings, he said unto his disciples, Ye know that after two days is the feast of the passover, and the Son of man is betrayed to be crucified.

3. Then assembled together the chief priests, and the scribes, and the elders of the people, unto the palace of the high priest, who was called Caiaphas. 4. And consulted that they might take Jesus by subtlety, and kill him. 5. But they said, Not on the feast day, lest there...
there be an uprose among the people.

3. &c. N. 1. The chief Men, Priests and Rulers were the chief Murderers. 2. It's a wonder that the people were not destroyed as Sedicious Rebels, rather than feared by such Rulers; when they would have reviled or stoned them that had assaulted Christ, or a Prophet.

6. Now when Jesus was in Bethany, in the house of Simon the Leper. 7. There came unto him a woman having an alabaster-box of very precious ointment, and poured it on his head, as he sat at meat.

8. But when his disciples saw it, they had indignation, saying, To what purpose is this waste? 9. For this ointment might have been sold for much, and given to the poor.

6. &c. 1. It being usual at great feasts in the Country to anoint, she signified by this her great love and honour to Christ. 2. Judas was the chief murmurer, but perhaps some others might object.

10. When Jesus understood it, he said unto them, why trouble ye the woman? for she hath wrought a good work upon me. 11. For ye have the poor always with you, but me ye have not always. 12. For in that she hath poured this ointment on my body, she did it for my burial.

10. &c. N. The works of Charity to the poor are highly esteemed by Christ, and preferred before many riches and smaller matters, yet some works of piety must be preferred before them. And that duty may in its season be greater, which is not so at another time.

13. Verily I say unto you, Wheresoever this gospel shall be preached in the whole world, there shall also this that this woman hath done, be told for a memorial of her.

13. N 1. How highly Christ valued the true love and costly piety of the meanest! 2. Christ knew and decreed that the Gospel or History of his Life, Death, and Burial, and Resurrection should be preached throughout the world, yea and written too: That words in Matt. 24. [Let him that readeth understand] seem to be Christ's own word and to imply that all those his words were written; at least we may well suppose them that ask, Where did Christ command them to write the Scripture? that the Spirit in them commanded it. 2. Write is but the most publick sort of preaching.

14. Then one of the twelve called Judas Iscariot, went unto the chief priests, 15. And said unto them, What will ye give me, and will deliver him unto you? As they covenanted with him for thirty pieces of silver. 16. And from that time he sought opportunity to betray him.

14, 15, 16. N. Christ knowingly permitted an Hypocrite in the Apostleship, and betray him, to foretell us that Covetous falchered Hypocrites will be in the Wili Church; and will betray it. 2. Covetous love of Money is the root of treachery Hypocrite Ministers and others. 3. Judas was not by sudden Passion, but deliberated contrived and contrived (for three pence fifteen Shillings).

17. Now the first day of the feast of unleavened bread, the disciples came to Jesus, saying unto him, Where wilt thou that we prepare for thee to eat the passover?

17. On the fifth day of the week called now Thursday at eventide, &c.

18. And he said, Go into the city to such a man, and say unto him, The Master saith, My time is at hand, I will keep the passover in my house with my disciples.

18. N. As to the great controversy whether Christ & the Jews did eat the Passover the same day, and whether Christ did the Paschal Lamb, or only the unspotted and bitter herbs; which was the beginning of the passover, being to have eaten the Lamb at the next evening; if he had not sacrificed himself: I leave the discussion to Commentators, who handle it at large, not troubling ordinary Readers with them.

19. And the disciples did as

had appointed them, and they
ready the passover. 20. Now
the even was come, he sat
down with the twelve. 21. And
they did eat, he said, Verily I
tell you, that one of you shall
treach me. 22. And they were
exceeding sorrowful, and began
every one of them to say unto him, Lord, is it
? 23. And he answered and
said, He that dippeth his hand with me
in the dish, the same shall
treach me.

19. N. Christ being under the Law,
how to keep the Law of the Passover. 2. The
Israelites were troubled both at the
ing of the thing, and that they
should be under suspicion.

24. The Son of man goeth as it
is written of him; but wo unto that
man by whom the Son of man is
betrayed : it had been good for that
man, if he had not been born.

25. Then Judas, which betrayed
him, answered and said, Master, is
it I? He said unto him, Thou hast
said.

21. N. Judas was before resolved and
betrayed; so that this notice did not stop
him from the sin.

26. And as they were eating,
Jesus took bread, and blest it,
and brake it, and gave it to the
disciples, and said, Take, eat; this
is my body.

24. N. 1. This bread was unleavened, and
of the Passover. 2. The blest of it, was
separating it to this holy use, and praying
God to blest it, and pronouncing it blest.

The breaking of it, signified the breaking
of Christ's Body, represented hereby as the
Bread for sin. 4. The giving it, signified
himself to believing receivers; for their
spiritual and everlasting

For the Sacrament as Administered
These three parts, 1. The Consecration,
it we sin not by neglecting discipline; for the Keys are given to the Pastors to keep out men proved uncapable by impi-

e
tance.

27. And he took the cup, and gave thanks, and gave it to them, saying, Drink ye all of it. 28. For

this is my blood of the new testament, which is shed for many for

the remission of sins.

27, 28. 1. Giving to one by one, is not Necessary. 2. The evangelists speak not all the same words in reciting Christ's

administration. Matthew hath no more but [This is my Body] nor Mark, neither; leaving out [Which is given for you] as Luke hath it, or [Which is broken for you], as Paul hath it, [Do this in Remembrance of me.] And of the

Cup, there are different words of Matthew, Mark, Luke and Paul; and Mark mentions their drinking it before Christ's words, [This is my blood of the new Testament, &c.] But what is not spoken by one, is by another, and the sense is the same; and it tells us, that if such a difference be in our admin-
adistration, it nullifies not the Sacrament.

28. (This wine is representatively or Sacramentally my blood shed, not as that of the Paschal Lamb, for Jews only to feel that Old Covenant of their peculiarity, but) for the Gentiles also, or the world, to purchase and seal the Universal Covenant of Grace, which gives free pardon and life to all true believing accepters.

29. But I say unto you, I will not drink henceforth of this fruit of the vine, until that day when I drink it new with you in my Fa-

der's kingdom.

29. Two difficulties here arise. 1. Did not Christ drink with them after his Resurrec-
tion? Answer. 1. Some say, He drank no wine, but water which was his Ordinary drink. 2. Others answer, The Kingdom of his Father began at his Resurrection. 3. Others say it is meaneth, [Shortly I shall leave you, and drink no more with you.] 4. Others probably think he meant, [I shall no more keep a Pastor or Sacrament with you.]

2. The other difficulty is; How he will drink of it in the Kingdom of his Father.

1. Some say, Literally after the Resurrection on Earth: 2. Some say, that a thousand years before the end of the World, all things shall be restored to the primitive Paradise.

30. And when they had sung a hymn, they went out into the mount of Olives.

30. N. Whether this Hymn was that use by the Jews, (which were all the 113, 115, 116, 117, 118, Psalms,) or one made for that use by Christ is uncertain: But the all joyed, and tell us, how suitable Thanksgiving, and singing Psalms or Hymns at S

craments and Feasts is.

31. Then the sun Jesus unto them All ye shall be offended because of me this night: for it is written, will finite the shepherd, and the sheep of the flock shall be scattered abroad.

31. You will all be troubled at my A

prehension, and be affrighted away from me as it is written, &c.

32. But after I am risen again I will go before you into Galilee.

32. N. Christ off foretelling his Resurrec-
tion, proveth his Truth, why he would not appear in Jerusalem, and to all, but Galilee, and to few; he gave us not the reason of it: But he fore-knew the Rejection, and would not force belief them by Right.

33. Peter answered and said unto him, Though all men shall be offended because of thee, yet will never be offended.

33. Nothing shall affright me from the N. His resolution was good, But his a

confidence was bad.

34. Jesus said unto him, Verily say unto thee, that this night before the cock crow, thou shalt say me thrice.

34. Before the time called Cock's crowing be past, &c. Here, Christ knoweth before, what man free-will will do.

35. Peter said unto him, Thou should die with thee, yet will I
Ch. 26.

Prayer.

Chrift's

St. Matthew.

must desire good, and not evil, which desirous that I may not Suffer. But it is thy Will, and my Content to Suffer: Therefore thy Will, and not my simple Volition be done.

40. And he cometh unto the disciples and findeth them asleep, and faith unto Peter, What, could ye not watch with me one hour?

41. Watch and pray, that ye enter not into temptation, the spirit indeed is willing, but the flesh is weak.

40, 41. Note, Chrift was to have no support from man in his Sufferings. 2. Sleeping, when we should Watch and Pray is a fault, but such a one as may stand with Grace. 3. Watching and Praying is God's means appointed to save men from, and in Temptation. 4. The spirit of the Faithful is willing to do more good than they are able. 5. The Flesh in Faithful Men, may prevail against the Spirit in sins of natural incontinence, for a time, though not in gross Sins, in the design and bent of heart and life. 6. Chrift tenderly excepteth his Servants incontinencies.

42. He went away again the second time, and prayed, saying, O my Father, if this cup may not pass away from me, except I drink it, thy will be done.

42. I resign my will to submit to thine, and I desire to fulfill it, for which I came in Flesh.

43. And he came and found them asleep again; for their eyes were heavy. 44. And he left them, and went away; again, and prayed the third time, saying the same words.

43, 44. Oft speaking the same things in Prayer, is meet for them that have the same causes and waits.

45. Then cometh he to his disciples, and faith unto them, Sleep on now, and take your rest; behold, the hour is at hand, and the Son of man is betrayed into the hands of sinners. 46. Rise, let us be going: behold, he is at hand.
that doth betray me. 47. And while he yet spake, lo, Judas, one of the twelve came, and with him a great multitude, with swords and flaves, from the chief priests and elders of the people.

45, 46, 47. Note, To be hunted to death by the Chief Priests and Rulers, to have a Multiplicity ready to serve them in it with armed Violence, to be betrayed by One of his Disciples, and foraken by the rest, was the case of Christ's Suffering, in which we must be prepared to follow him.

48. Now he that betrayed him, gave them a sign, saying, Whomsoever I shall kiss, that same is he, hold him fast. 49. And forthwith he came to Jesus, and said, Hail, Master? and kissed him. 50. And Jesus said unto him, Friend, wherefore art thou come? Then came they, and laid hands on Jesus, and took him.

48, etc. Note. 1. Hypocrites cruelty is exercised under the name of Friendship. How many Thousand perfecure Christ, in his cause, and Servants, on pretences of Faith, Religion, Order, and Enmity to Sin? 2. It's a pitiful sight to see poor ignorant People, in obedience to Rulers, Persecuting Christ, to their own Destruction? as if it were he and his servants, that were their dangerous Enemies.

51. And behold, one of them which were with Jesus, stretched out his hand, and drew his sword, and stroke a servant of the high priests, and smote off his ear.

52. Then said Jesus unto him, Put up again thy sword into its place: for all they that take the sword, shall perish with the sword.

52. Put up thy Sword, and let us patiently submit to Violence: For as none must use the Sword, without just Warrant and Authority; so usually they that fight for themselves, are destroyed, and suffer more than they that patiently endure Violence and Injustice.

53. Thinkest thou that I cannot now pray to my Father, and he shall presently give me more than twelve legions of angels?

53. Note. 1. Angels are ready to serve Christ, at his desire. 2. It should stop our impatient thoughts of rash, and unlawful self-defence, to think, that God can other-wise deliver us.

54. But how then shall the Scriptures be fulfilled, that thus it must be?

54. N. We must not strive against Events which we foreknow will come to pass.

55. In that same hour said Jesus to the multitudes, Are ye come out as against a thief with swords and flaves for to take me? I sat daily with you teaching in the temple, and ye laid no hold on me.

55. Why did you not take me in the Temple, but thus in the Night like a Thief.

56. But all this was done, that the Scriptures of the prophets might be fulfilled. Then all the disciples forsook him, and fled.

56. All this was foretold in Scripture. They let his Disciples go, and they fled away in fear.

57. And they that had laid hold on Jesus, led him away to Cai-phas, the high priest, where the scribes and the elders were assembled.

58. But Peter followed him afar off unto the high priest's palace, and went in, and sat with the servants to see the end.

57, 58. They brought him to their Arch-priest, as glorying in their success: And Peter went in where the Servants sat.

59. Now
**Ch. 26. Christ examined. St. Matthew. His answer. Ch. 26.**

59. Now the chief priests and elders, and all the council, sought false witnesses against Jesus to put him to death, 60. But found none: ye, though many false witnesses came, yet found they none. At the last came two false witnesses, 61. And said, This f:How said, I am able to destroy the temple of God, and to build it in three days.

65. & N. 1. As Hypocrites in Religion, so worse than Pagans, in that they feather their wickednesses on God, and Religion; so Hypocrite Judges, and Lawyers are herein worse than lawless Murderers, that they abuse and disgrace Law, and Government, by using them to injustice, and bloodshed. 2. No man is so good or innocent, that false Witness may not Condemn.

62. And the high priest arose, and laid unto him, Anwester thou not nothing? what is it which these witnesses against thee? 63. But Jesus held his peace.

65, 66. Then the High Priest had that which he desired, and by rending his Clothes, scowed his Abhorrence of the supposed Sin of Christ, and demanded the sentence of the Court against him, as a Blasphemer. And they voted him for it guilty of Death.

**Note.** 1. How foolish a thing is it to think, that any Law, or any mans Innocency, or Goodness, will preserve Justice or Piety, while bad Men are Judges. Can any Law be better than Gods? or any Person better than Christ? The Devil's Judges possefing the place that God instituted to defend Truth and Equity, will condemn God himself manifest in Flesh, by his own Law, and as finning against himself. And they are since the same.

2. The very Murderers of Christ, would seem greater enemies to Blasphemy, and more zealous for God's Honour, than God himself: So little are False Men to be believed.

67. Then did they spit in his face, and buffeted him, and others smote him with the palms of their hands, 68. Saying, Prophesie unto us, thou Christ, who is he that smote thee?

67, 68. N. It was God in the Flesh that submitted to all this scorn and abuse for our Sin. 1. O then, what doth Sin deserve? 2. And

2. And why should we look for better, and be over-tender of our Flesh or Reputation.

69. Now Peter sat without in the palace: and a damsel came unto him, saying, Thou also wert with Jesus of Galilee.  70. But he denied before them all, saying, I know not what thou sayest.  71. And when he was gone out into the porch, another maid saw him, and said unto them that were there, This fellow was also with Jesus of Nazareth.  72. And again he denied with an oath, I do not know the man.

69. & 71 N. T. A man that is forwardest in professing Courage, and in drawing the Sword, and saying about him, is in greater danger; basely Cowardly by silly Wrenches. So uncertain a thing is Man.  2. Difficultly of fear, and love of Life, may draw men into multiplied heinous Sin.

73. And after a while came unto him they that stood by, and said to Peter, Surely thou also art one of them, for thy speech bewrayeth thee.  74. Then began he to curse and to swear, saying, I know not the man.  And immediately the cock crew.

73. Matthew mentioneth but one Cock-crowing, It being the middle or second that is meant.  2. To ask, what had become of Peter, if he had died in this Sin, and how far he did fall from Grace, is not so profitable, as to consider our own frailty and danger, and how to escape the like.

75. And Peter remembered the words of Jesus, which said unto him, Before the cock crow, thou shalt deny me thrice.  And he went out, and wept bitterly.

75. N. Chriff look'd on Peter, (as John faith,) and this began to melt him into Repentance, with the hearing of the Second Cock: Yet though he wept, he did not return, and openly Confess Chriff, as he did after. Doubtless the Disciples had far more Grace, and were less liable to Fall after the Holy Ghost came down on them at Pentecost, than before.

C H A P.  XXVII.

1. When the morning was come, all the chief priests and elders of the people took counsel against Jesus to put him to death.

1. Note, The Romans had taken from the Jews the power of putting men to Death. Therefore they consulted how to get the Roman Government to do it: Priests, and Rulers, all Conspire it.

2. And when they had bound him, they led him away, and delivered him to Pontius Pilate the governor.

2. When they had judged him to deserve Death after their Law, they bring him bound to Pilate the Roman Governor, to have him Condemned, and Crucify him.

3. Then Judas which had betrayed him, when he saw that he was condemned, repented himself, and brought again the thirty pieces of silver to the chief priests and elders.  4. Saying, I have sinned, in that I have betrayed the innocent Blood.  And they said, What is that to us? See thou to that.

3, 4. N. T. It is uncertain whether Judas was before emboldened to betray him for gain, by thinking that he would deliver himself by a miracle, or whether he was made subject by the Devil, till now that God awakened his conscience.  2. O how differently doth sin appear in the hour of flattering temptation, and when conscience is thoroughly wakened? It seems not then the same thing, because conscience is not in the same case.  3. We see here what cold comfort companions in sin will give a man in misery or despair? See them to that, is all that can be got then from them that tempted and hired him to sin.  4. O the stupidity of feared sleepy consciences! That these Arch-priests and Rulers should not be touched with Judas's terror and repentance, but say, What is that to us, when it was they that hired him to sin, and sinned still.

5. And he cast down the pieces of silver in the temple, and departed
11. And Jesus stood before the governor; and the governor asked him, saying, Art thou the king of the Jews? And Jesus said unto him, Thou sayest. 12. And when he was accused of the chief priests and elders, he answered nothing. 13. Then said Pilate unto him, Hearest thou not how many things they witness against thee? 14. And he answered them again nothing. And so Pilate left them, and let Jesus be taken and crucified. 15. Now at that feast the governor was wont to release unto the people a prisoner, whom they would. 16. And they had then a notable prisoner, called Barabbas. 17. Therefore when they were gathered together, Pilate said unto them, Whom will ye that I release unto you? Barabbas, or Jesus, which is called Christ? 18. For he knew that for envy they had delivered him. 19. When he was set down on the judgment-seat, his wife sent unto him, saying, Have thou nothing to do with that just man: for I have suffered many things this day in a dream, because of him. 20. But the chief priests and elders persuaded the multitude that they
Ch. 27. Christ renounced St. Matthew. and derided. Ch. 27
they should ask Barabbas; and de-
stroy Jesus.
20. N. It is the Priests and Rulers that stir up the malignity of the rabble to do mischief.
21. The governour answered and said unto them, Whether of the twain wi' ye that I release unto you? They said, Barabbas.
21. N. The people were of two Parties: One part were for Christ, and that so many that the Priests for fear of them durst not take him openly: But the other Party were the malignant rabble, who were ready to call for innocent blood, if Priests and Elders did but set them on.
22. Pilate saith unto them, What shall I do then with Jesus, which is called Christ? They all say unto him, Let him be crucified.
22. N. Nothing is so bad that ignorant wicked men may not do; nor any so good that they may not murder.
23. And the governour said, Why, what evil hath he done? But they cried out the more, saying, Let him be crucified.
23. N. It's in vain to call for reason or justice to an ignorant malignant rabble. A Heathen Ruler was less unjust, than the Priests and their blind followers.
24. When Pilate saw that he could prevail nothing but that rather a tumult was made, he took water, and washed his hands before the multitude, saying, I am innocent of the blood of this just person: see ye to it.
24. N. Just Judges will not do unjustly for the sake of any: But this hypocrite thought the rabble, and the Priests' importunity would excuse him; and the guilt was only theirs.
25. Then answered all the people, and said, His bloud be on us, and on our children.
25. N. And so it hath been to this day with a most dreadful Vengeance, they being killed with a most horrid slaughter, their City and Temple Burnt, and the unbelieving off-spring being Vagabonds over the earth, abhorred by all Nations where they come. O dreadful curse! What need any other than themselves to make ignorant wicked people miserable? They are the most direful enemies, yea Devils, and a Hell unto themselves.
26. Then released he Barabbas unto them: and when he had scourged Jesus, he delivered him to be crucified.
26. N. He was scourged after he was sentenced to death: Yet John mentioneth it before.
27. Then the soldiers of the governour took Jesus into the common hail, and gathered unto him the whole band of soldiers. 28. And they stripped him, and put on him a scarlet robe. 29. And when they had platted a crown of thorns, they put it upon his head, and a reed in his right hand: and they bowed the knee before him, and mocked him, saying, Hail King of the Jews. 30. And they spit upon him, and took the reed, and smote him on the head.
27. N. It was God in flesh that was thus made as a fool, the common sport and scorn for our sins: And shall we think to be saved in a life of fleshly pleasure; without partaking of the Cross? No wonder if the Cross was a stumbling block to the Jews, and foolishness to the Gentiles; to trufl Life and Soul on one that was thus used; till the Holy Ghost by miracle and power conquered unbelief.
31. And after that they had mocked him, they took the robe off from him, and put his own raiment on him, and led him away to crucifie him.
31. N. When they had done with derision, they proceed to his Execution. All this was suffered for us.
32. And as they came out, they found a man of Cyrene, Simon by name: him they compelled to bear his cross.
32. N. He that was compelled was innocent, but they that compelled him were the Murderers.
3. And when they were come
unto a place called Golgotha, that
is to say, a place of a scull, 34. They
gave him vinegar to drink, mingled
with gall: and when he had
tasted thereof, he would not drink.
35. This called Gall, and by Mark,
Lyre, is supposed to be a drink that was
poisonous, commonly given to malefactors
to happen death for their case, which Christ
refused.

And they crucified him, and
charged his garments, casting lots:
that it might be fulfilled which was
spoken by the prophet, They parted
my garments among them, and
upon my vesture did they cast
lots.

35. They divided his other Garments,
aid cast lots for his seamless coat.
36. And sitting down, they
watched him there: 37. And
set up over his head his accusation
written, THIS IS JESUS THE
KING OF THE JEWS.
38. Then were there two thieves
crucified with him: one on the
right hand, and another on the
left.
39. And they that pained by,
reviled him, wagging their heads.
40. And saying, Thou that
destroyest the temple, and buildest
it in three days, save thy self: if
thou be the Son of God, come
down from the cross. 41. Like-
wise also the chief priests mocking
him, with the scribes and elders,
said, 42. He saved others, himself
he cannot save: if he be the king
of Israel, let him now come down
from the cross, and we will believe
him. 43. He trusted in God; let
him deliver him now, if he will
have him: for he said, I am the
Son of God.

39. Ec. Note. Had these known him, and
foreknew what would follow, this form
had been forborn. 2. They make his own
words the matter of their accusation, by per-
verting them. A way still used by such
men. 3. They turn his profession of him-
self into scorn, little knowing that this de-
pired King would judge them and all the
world. 4. They turn his saving of others
into his derision: Neither the Goodness nor
the Greatness of his miraculous works will
restrain them. 5. They turn his very re-
lation to God, and trust in him, to his scorn.
6. Infidels will prescribe Christ the terms
on which they will believe in him, or else
they will not believe: But the faithful take
God’s terms and cogent evidences, and pre-
sume not to prescribe terms unto him.

44. The thieves also which were
crucified with him, cast the same
in his teeth.

44. N. 1. All conspire to reproach the
Son of God. 2. When we are in suffering,
all foes take liberty to load him that is cast
down: As in wars all talk against them that
are conquered. 3. The thieves here are said
to do that which only one of them did,
(a usual Phrase).

45. Now from the sixth hour
there was darkness over all the
land unto the ninth hour.

45. N. It was extraordinary darkness; but
not so great as to hinder converse: therefore
it did not convince them. 2. The Sun must
not shine on that odious fact, which yer the
hardened agents glory in, and in darkness
go on in the works of darkness.

46. And about the ninth hour,
Jesus cried with a loud voice, say-
ing, Eli, Eli, lama sabacthani? that
is to say, My God, my God, why hast
thou forsaken me?

46. N. He either spake in the Syriack
Tongue, P.1. 22. 1. (which was a Prophetic
of him) or as some think the express He-
brew words, the now variously written.
2. By God’s forsaking him, is not meant
any abatement of Divine Love: but that
God both exposed him to this death by
wicked men, and withdrew from his Hu-
mane
Christ crucified.

St. Matthew. His burial.

Ch. 27.

And they that were with him watching Jesus, saw the earthquake, and those things that were done, they feared greatly, saying Truly this was the Son of God.

44. N. The Beaten Soldiers were no so obdurate as the hypocrite Priests and Rulers and their followers.

55. And many women were there (beholding afar off) which followed Jesus from Galilee, ministering unto him. 56. Among which was Mary Magdalene, and Mary the mother of James and Jo ses, and the mother of Zebedee's children.

55, 56. N. Thse women stuck close to Christ than his twelve chief discip did.

57. When the even was come there came a rich man of Arimathrea, named Joseph, who also him self was Jesus disciple: 58. He went to Pilate, and begged the body of Jesus; then Pilate commanded the body to be delivered.

57, 58. N. Christ's death endeth no Jesah's love. 2. Pilate was less malignant than the Jews.

59. And when Joseph had taken the body, he wrapped it in a clean linen cloth, 60. And laid it in his own new tomb which he had hewed out in the rock; and he rolled great stone to the door of the sepulchre, and departed.

59, 60. N. Well might he lend him grave, who would have him from the grave by a resurrection.

61. And there was Mary Mag dalene, and the other Mary, sitting over against the sepulchre.

61. N. To follow him in love as they were able.

62. Now the next day that followed the day of the preparation the chief priests and Pharisees came together unto Pilate, 63. Saying Sir, we remember that that dece
Ch. 28. Christ's St. Matthew. Resurrection. Ch. 28.

Ver. 1, while he was not alive, 

After three days I will rise again.

4. Command therefore that the sepulchre be made sure until the third day, lest his disciples come by night, and steal him away, and say unto the people, He is risen from the dead: so the last error shall be worse then the first.

5. Pilate said unto them, Ye have a watch, go your way, make it as sure as you can. 66. So they went and made the sepulchre sure, sealing the stone, and setting a watch.

62 &c. Note, God permitted and overruled their malignant suspicion, to prevent such calumnies and objections against our Saviour, ever after.

C H A P. XXVIII.

In the end of the sabbath, as it began to dawn towards the first day of the week, came Mary Magdalene, and the other Mary, to see the sepulchre.

1. Note, They came in love with spices to have embalmed his body.

2. And behold, there was a great earthquake; for the angel of the Lord descended from heaven, and came and rolled back the stone from the door, and sat upon it.

3. His countenance was like lightning, and his raiment white as snow. 4. And for fear of him the keepers did shake, and became as dead men.

2. &c. Note, 1. Well might Abraham say, I am sole of the dead, they will not be swayed, when all this would not convince me. 2. If an Angel be so dreadful, what if God be to the wicked?

3. And the angel answered and said unto the women, Fear not ye: I know that ye seek Jesus which was crucified. 6. He is not here: he is risen, as he said: come, and see the place where the Lord lay.

7. And go quickly, and tell his disciples that he is risen from the dead; and behold, he goeth before you into Galilee, there shall ye see him, lo, I have told you.

8. At Angels were the preachers of Christ's birth to Shepherds, and they are the first preachers of his Resurrection to Women.

8. N. Women must be the first preachers of Christ's resurrection to his Apostles.

9. And as they went to tell his disciples, behold, Jesus met them, saying, All hail. And they came and held him by the feet, and worshipped him.

9. N. It was poor Women that had been sinners, that Christ honoured with his first appearance.

10. Then said Jesus unto them, Be not afraid: go tell my brethren, that they go into Galilee, and there shall they see me.

10 N. 1. He would not shew himself openly to the malicious forsaken people at Jerusalem. 2. His disciples and kinmen are called his Brethren. 3. No one evangelist mentioneth the whole of this History, but what one omitteth, another hath (of which after.)

11. Now when they were going, behold, some of the watch came into the city, and shewed unto the chief priests all the things that were done. 12. And when they were assembled with the elders, and had taken counsel, they gave large money unto the foukiders.

12. Saying, Say ye, His disciples came by night, and stole him away while we slept. 14. And if this come to the governor's ear, we will persuade him, and secure you.

11. N. What will convince hardned, forsaken men.
15. So they took the money, and did as they were taught: and this saying is commonly reported among the Jews until this day.

16. Then the eleven disciples went away into Galilee, into a mountain, where Jesus had appointed them. And when they saw him, they worshipped him: but some doubted.

17. And the evangelists say no more of Christ's meeting them on this Mountain, and what he there said to them; and Luke and John say nothing of it, and there seems a strange difference in their Narratives of Christ's appearances, it is but one saying what another had omitted; and no one of them saying all (of which after on John 20. and 21.)

18. And Jesus came, and spake unto them, saying, All power is given unto me in heaven and in earth. Go ye therefore and teach all Nations, baptizing them in the name of the Father, and of the Son, and of the holy Ghost:

18. After these and other appearances to them, Jesus said, As I have died to redeem the World, in order to the ends of my undertaking, the Father hath given me an Universal Propriety and Governing power by the right of Redemption, as chief Administrator under him in Heaven and Earth. So that henceforth all the concerns of men in this World and the other, are at my disposal, and all men under my Government by Right and Obligation. By which authority I now commit you, to go abroad in the World, and make all Nations (to the utmost of your power) my Disciples; taking them into my Church by Solemn Covenant, celebrated by Baptizing them, into the name of the Father, Son and Holy Ghost.

N 1. Christ's Right of Dominion and Empire is founded in the Father's Covenant with him as redeemer. 2. And being Universal Lord, Redemption is so far universal, as to prove the other and other common effects. Rom. 14. 9. To this end Christ died, rose, and revived, that he might be Lord of the dead and of the living.

2, The word translated Teach, sign [Disciple to me] or [make Nations my disciples.]

3. All Christians should endeavour to Christi: the National Religion, the Kingdoms of the World may become Kingdoms of the Lord, and of his Christ that is, that they be [Christian] Kings and not only Christians gathered or Kingdoms.

4. This makes not all to be Christ who are in those Kingdoms, but only are Disciples.

5. Infants being parts of all Kingdoms, this text commandeth to Disciple and raise them, they are made Disciples, by being justly dedicated to Christ, by those that have true Power to dispose of them, to fear him, and obey him as they grow up are capable. As Christ was relatively, 5. King of the Church in his Infancy, when his nature was incapable of the actual ministration; so are Infants capable of being Disciples by Covenant, Dedicated (by those that have the disposal of them their good, and can covenant for them with men) and by Relation and Obligation. And had never a Church on Earth, of which infants were not Infant-members, since it were Infants in the World.

6. To be baptized into the name of Father, Son and Holy Ghost; is no less by solemn Covenant to give up ones to God the Father, as our Father reconciled by Christ, our chief owner and ruler, as our chief Benefactor, even as our God and to Christ as our Saviour, and the Holy Ghost as our Sanctifier. And merely to be sent to learn of Christ, makes none a birevable disciple.

7. Baptism is Christening, and is the birth of those that must love and take each other for Christians; and the terms of Church-nity, till it be nullified by verbal or act apostasy.

And it is Church Tyranny and Schism, make Canons which shall exclude those in the Church of Christ, whom he taketh by baptism; before they imperiously notify that Covenant in whole or in some essential part, viz. by proved denying effect of Faith, or forfaking some essential part obedience.

8. Baptism making us Christians, is a state of Regeneration by which we then know our right to Justification and Salvation.

28: The commission.

28. Teaching them to observe all things whatsoever I have commanded you: and lo, I am with you always, even unto the end of the world. Amen.

29. And when you have baptized them, and so united them to me and your univerfal Church (upon their understanding professed faith and repentance, and dedication of their seed to me), then congregate them in order under faithful Pastors. And as you as general Teachers to all the Churches, must deliver to them all the commands which I have committed to your trust (by word and writing); so these Pastors must further instruct them that they may grow up in knowledge of all these my commands: And in the performance of this charge, I shall by the help of my Spirit and Providence, be pleased with you and such pastors in their work, to the end of this World, (or age,) all I shall come in glory to the final judgment. Tho you see me not, I shall be as really assisting to you, and regarding of you, even in all your labours and sufferings, as if you saw me.

Note. 1. This general command of teaching all Nations Christ's commands, includeth writing the Scriptures, without which they could not teach Pottery in all Nations his commands.

2. It maketh them his intrusted Apostles, from whose fidelity we may believingly receive his commands: And therefore implieth the promise of his Spirit to make them true and credible reporters.

3. It implieth that his commands are the univerfal Laws for his Catholicy Church. And no man or men have authority to make Laws for the univerfal Church on Earth but he; and to undertake it, is to undertake the prerogative of Christ, and to be Vice-Christ by usurpation; be it Pope or Counsil.

4. Yet the precept of observing his commands, forbids not the observing of the commands of any lawful limited local Rulers under him, not crossing his commands; Parents, Masters, Pastors, Princes must be obeyed in their Provinces and Places; even about God's worship. If men make subordinate Laws, according to Christ's General Laws of Love, Concord, Edification, Order, they must be obeyed, (as e.g.) what Translations of Scripture to use, what Psalms, Meeters, Tunes, Gestures, Time, Place, and abundance such like.
The Gospel according to St. MARK.

Note, 1. That this is the same Mark, against whom, as not fit to be taken with them, St. Paul sharply contended with Barnabas, even parting asunder. But it was not as charging him with any crime but as unfit to be taken with them in so long and hard a work, which he before deserted. 2. It is said by some to be a tradition, that Mark wrote this from the Mouth of Peter; but that is uncertain. 3. It is questioned, seeing it is only the eleven Apostles to whom Christ promised the Eminent help of the Spirit to bring all his Doctrine to their remembrance, and lead them into all Truth; How can we be sure that Mark and Luke, who were no Apostles, and had not this promise, did never mistake in their writing the Gospel? Antw. Tho Christ promised not Infallibility to all Preachers then, he promised and gave the Eminent Miraculous gifts of the Spirit to others, as well as to the Apostles, as appeared in Stephen, Philip, and others. And this Spirit was to fit them for the work to which they were called, which his Miracles by them attested. 2. And the Apostles that then lived, approved these writings of Mark and Luke and so did the Churches where the gifts of the Spirit did: then most a bound; who also delivered them down to us.

Whether this Mark was Bishop of Alexandria, or only a transient Evangelist there a while, is an Historical controversy of no great Moment. When Antioch had at once so many great Apostles, Prophets and Teachers, and no one of them then a Bishop to rule the rest as their Pastor, we may well conjecture that the case of Alexandria did not much differ from that of Antioch and Jerusalem, (where neither James nor any one as Governor of the Apostles).

The Reader must not expect that I repeat at large the Paraphrases or Notes which are written on Matthew, when the same History and words are by Mark repeated.

CHAP. I.

The beginning of the gospel of Jesus Christ, the Son of God. 2. As it is written in the prophets, Behold, I send my messenger before thy face, which shall prepare thy way before thee. 3. The voice of one crying in the wilderness, Make straight the way of the Lord.
Ch. John
St. Mark.

baptizeth. Ch. 1:

8. I indeed have baptized you with water: but he shall baptize you with the holy Ghost.

9. My Baptist doth but prepare you, but his shall pour out the Spirit on the Baptized.

9. And it came to pass in those days, that Jesus came from Nazareth of Galilee, and was baptized of John in Jordan.

9. N. 24. Did Christ Profess Repentance for the Remission of Sins? If not, how was he capable of John's Baptism? Answ. He was not baptized to the same use, as other men, but as owning John's Baptism, and the Coming of the Kingdom of God. As a General will wear the same Colours with his Soldiers, though their signifie subjection to him.

10. And straightway coming up out of the water, he saw the heavens opened, and the Spirit like a dove descending upon him.

11. And there came a voice from heaven, saying, Thou art my beloved Son, in whom I am well pleased.

11. N. God from Heaven Preached the Gospel at Christ's Baptism.

12. And immediately the Spirit driveth him into the wilderness.

13. And he was there in the wilderness forty days tempted of Satan, and was with the wild beasts, and the angels ministered unto him.

12, 13. N. 1. To conquer Temptations, is to conquer Satan. 2. Angels brought him meat at the end of the Forty days.

14. Now after that John was put in prison, Jesus came into Galilee, preaching the gospel of the kingdom of God,

14. That the Kingdom of God was coming.

15. And saying, The time is fulfilled, and the kingdom of God is at hand: repent ye and believe the gospel.

15. The promised time of the Messiah's appearing.
16. Now as he walked by the sea of Galilee, he saw Simon, and Andrew his brother, casting a net into the sea; for they were fishers. 17. And Jesus saith unto them, Come ye after me, and I will make you to become fishers of men. 18. And straightway they forsaketh their nets, and followed him.

16, &c. See on John i. 40. and Matt. 4. 18.

19. And when he had gone a little further thence, he saw James the son of Zebedee, and John his brother, who also were in the ship, mending their nets. 20. And straightway he called them: and they left their father Zebedee in the ship with the hired servants, and went after him.

19, 20. ¶ He spake to their hearts.

21. And they went into Capernaum, and straightway on the sabbath-day he entered into the synagogue, and taught. 22. And they were astonished at his doctrine: for he taught them as one that had authority, and not as the scribes.

21, 22. ¶ He spake, as Authorized by God to speak in his name, and not as an ordinary Expounder of the Law.

23. And there was in their synagogue a man with an unclean spirit, and he cried out. 24. Saying. Let us alone, what have we to do with thee, thou Jesus of Nazareth? art thou come to destroy us? I know thee who thou art, the holy one of God. 25. And Jesus rebuked him, saying, Hold thy peace, and come out of him. 26. And when the unclean spirit had torn him, and cried with a loud voice, he came out of him. 27. And they were all amazed, insomuch that they questioned among themselves, saying, What thing is this? what new doctrine is this? for with authority commandeth he even the unclean spirits, and they do obey him.

28. And immediately his fame spread abroad throughout all the region round about Galilee. 29. And forthwith when they were come out of the synagogue, they entered into the house of Simon and Andrew, with James and John.

29. ¶ Christ's Chief Apostles dwell in Capernaum.

30. But Simon's wife's mother lay sick of a fever, and anon they told him of her. 31. And he came and took her by the hand, and lifted her up; and immediately the fever left her, and she ministered unto them.

30, 31. ¶ She was presently so cured, that she served them.

32. ¶ And at even, when the sun did set, they brought unto him all that were diseased, and them that were possessed with devils. And all the city was gathered together at the door. 34. And he healed many that were sick of divers diseases, and cast out many devils, and suffered not the devils to speak, because they knew him.

32, &c. ¶ He needed not the Devil's Testimony.

35. ¶ And in the morning, rising up a great while before day, he went out, and departed into a solitary place; and there prayed.

35. ¶ Have not we Sinners more need to break our sleep for secret Prayer? He prayed not with his Disciples, because the same Confessions and Prayers were not fit for him and them.

36. And Simon, and they, that were
were with him, followed after him. 37. And when they had found him, they said unto him, All men seek for thee. 38. And he said unto them, Let us go into the next towns, that I may preach there also: for therefore came I forth. 36, 37, 38. I must preach in more places than one.

39. And he preached in their synagogues throughout all Galilee, and cast out devils. 40. And there came a leper to him, beseeching him, and kneeling down to him, and saying unto him, If thou wilt, thou canst make me clean. 41. And Jesus moved with compassion, and forthwith stretched forth his hand, and touched him, and said unto him, I will, be thou clean. 42. And straightway as he had spoken, immediately the leprosy departed from him, and he was cleansed.

39, 40. Believing his Power, he found that he was willing.

43. And he straitly charged him, and forthwith sent him away; 44. And said unto him, See thou say nothing to any man: but go thy way, shew thyself to the priest, and offer for thy cleansing those things which Moses commanded, for a testimony unto them.

43. Also Christ required the Legal Duties to the unlawfully-called, and bad Priests.

45. But he went out, and began to publish it much, and to blaze abroad the matter, insomuch that Jesus could no more openly enter into the city, but was without in desert places: and they came to him from every quarter.

45. Publication raised Envy, and caused Christ to withdraw into the Wilderness: what wonder if our Heretics indiscrimination hurt us!

CHAP. II.

1. And again he entered into Capernaum, after some days, and it was noised that he was in the house. 2. And straightway many were gathered together, insomuch that there was no room to receive them, no not so much as about the door: and he preached the word unto them.

1, 2. He Preached to them that were within the house, and without the door, not fearing the Reproach of a Conventicle.

3. And they came unto him, bringing one sick of the palsy, which was born of four. 4. And when they could not come nigh unto him for press; they uncovered the roof where he was: and when they had broken it up, they let down the bed wherein the sick of the palsy lay. 5. When Jesus saw their faith, he said unto the sick of the palsy, Son, thy sins be forgiven thee.

5. The Sin for which thou art thus afflicted, is forgiven thee.

6. But there were certain of the scribes sitting there, and reasoning in their hearts. 7. Why doth this man thus speak blasphemies? who can forgive sins but God only?

7. None, but God, can forgive any wrong done to God. But 1. Christ was God. 2. A Minister of God may declare God's forgiveness.

8. And immediately, when Jesus perceived in his spirit that they so reasoned within themselves, he laid unto them, Why reason ye these things in your hearts? 9. Whether is it easier to say to the sick of the palsy, Thy sins be forgiven thee; or to say, Arise, and take up thy bed and walk? 10. But that ye may know that the Son of man hath power on earth to forgive sins: (he faith to the sick of the palsy) 11. I say unto thee, Arise, and take up thy bed, and go thy way into thine house. 12. And immediately he arose, took up the bed,
bed, and went forth before them all, insomuch that they were all amazed, and glorified God, saying, We never saw it on this fashion.

8. &c. Is it not all one to forgive the Sin, and to forgive the Punishment. We never saw such works before.

13. And he went forth again by the sea-side, and all the multitude returned unto him, and he taught them.

13. N. In Field-Meetings, House-Meetings, Mountain-Meetings, Ship-Meetings, Synagogue-Meetings, and Temple-Meetings, he taught the People, and Preached the Gospel.

14. And as he passed by, he saw Levi the son of Alpheus sitting at the receipt of custom, and said unto him, Follow me. And he arose and followed him.

14. N. He called Publicans.

15. And it came to pass, that as Jesus sat at meat in his house, many publicans and sinners sat also together with Jesus and his disciples: for there were many, and they followed him. 16. And when the scribes and Pharisees saw him eat with publicans and sinners, they said unto his disciples, How is it that he eateth and drinketh with publicans and sinners?

17. When Jesus heard it, he said unto them, They that are whole have no need of the physician, but they that are sick: I came not to call the righteous, but sinners to repentance.

15. &c. N. The Hypocrite Pharisees will be more strict and holy than Christ, if separating from others, and aggravating other men's Sins, and justifying themselves be Holiness. 2. I came to be a Saviour to Sinners, by calling them to Repentance, that they may be Converted and Forgiven. If you are no Sinners, I am no Saviour for you.

18. And the disciples of John, and of the Pharisees asked to fast; and they come and say unto him, Why do the disciples of John, and of the Pharisees fast, but thy disciples fast not? 19. And Jesus said unto them, Can the children of the bride-chamber fast while the bridegroom is with them? as long as they have the bridegroom with them, they cannot fast. 20. But the day will come, when the bridegroom shall be taken away from them, and then shall they fast in those days.

18. Why do you think you merit by you fasting? Which is to be used only in the season. You use not to fast, but feast at your Marriages; my presence is more joyful to them, than a Marriage-feast; when they are ascended, and they are exposed to the scorn and persecution of men, they shall Fast Humiliation will be more suitable to their outward state, tho' they inwardly rejoice.

21. No man also seweth a piece of new cloth on an old garment: else the new piece that filled it up will take away from the old, and the rent is made worse. 22. And no man putteth new wine into old bottles, else the new wine doth burst the bottles, and the wine is spilled. But new wine must be put into new bottles.

21, 22. They are not yet fit for Austrities.

23. And it came to pass that he went through the corn-fields on the sabbath-day, and his disciples began as they went, to pluck the ears of corn. 24. And the Pharisees said unto him, Behold, why do they or the sabbath-day that which is not lawful?

23, 24. Ceremonious Hypocrites will be still stricter than Christ in the Ceremonious part, while they violate morals.

25. And he said unto them, Have ye never read what David did, when he had need, and was an hungred, he, and they that were with him? 26. How he went in
the house of God in the days of Abiathar the high priest, and did eat the shew-bread, which is not lawful to eat, but for the priests, and gave also to them which were with him?

21, 22. Do you not know that precepts of kires and Ceremonies, give place to Necessity, and precepts of Charity, and self-preservation? And that David's instance proveth this, in the days of Abiathar, a little before he was High-Priest, even in his father Abiathar's Priest-hood, he and his company did eat the hallowed bread, which without necessity had not been lawful.

27. And he said unto them, The sabbath was made for man, and not man for the sabbath: 28. Therefore the Son of man is Lord also of the sabbath.

27, 28. The Sabbath is appointed to be a mean of the good of Man, and not man a mean of it: And no means is to be used against its end, but for it; even the good of Man. And therefore, I that come to settle the Laws of Grace, as conducing to the recovery and good of man, have power of dispensation or alteration of the Sabbath, as shall tend to the ends of mans good and Salvation.

C H A P. III.

1. And he entered again into the synagogue, and there was a man there which had a withered hand. 2. And they watched him, whether he would heal him on the sabbath-day, that they might accuse him.

1. 2. N. Malignity is not restrained by Miracles.

3. And he faith unto the man which had the withered hand, Stand forth. 4. And he faith unto them, Is it lawful to do good on the sabbath-days, or to do evil? to save life, or to kill? but they held their peace.

3. 4. Do you, ceremonious murderers, that by wait for my life now, keep the sabbath? and do I break it by saving mens lives?

5. And when he had looked round about on them, with anger, being grieved for the hardness of their hearts, he faith unto the man, Stretch forth thine hand. And he stretched it out: and his hand was restored whole as the other.

5. N. 1. Anger and grief for mens sin, were justified by Christ's example. 2. A hard heart can sin against Miracles and Mercy.

6. And the Pharisees went forth, and straighthway took counsel with the Herodians against him, how they might destroy him.

6. N. It's folly to doubt whether there be Devils, while Devils incarnate dwell among us; what else but Devils sure, could make ceremonious hypocrites, consult with Politick Royalists to destroy the Son of God, for saving mens health and lives by Miracle?

7. But Jesus withdrew himself with his disciples to the sea: and a great multitude from Galilee followed him, and from Judea.

7. N. They that will drive away mercy from them, shall be without it, and speed as they choose, and those that follow after Christ and mercy sincerely, shall have their desires.

8. And from Jerusalem, and from Idumea, and from beyond Jordan, and they about Tyre and Sidon, a great multitude, when they had heard what great things he did, came unto him. 9. And he spake to his disciples, that a small ship should wait on him, because of the multitude, left they should throng him. 10. For he had healed many, infomuch that they pressed upon him for to touch him, as many as had plagues.

9, 19. Were men but as regardful of their souls?
Ch. 3. The Twelve

St. Mark. 20, 21. His kindred thought that all this ado, did signify some estrange, and would have got him home. But one very old Greek Copy (Beza's) reads it thus, Where the scribes and the chief of the people heard of it, they came to apprehend him; for they said, that he made men mad.

22. And the scribes which came down from Jerusalem, said, He had Beelzebub, and by the prince of the devils casteth he out devils.

23. And they denied not the matter of his miracles, but said that he did it by the Prince of the Devils.

24. And he called them unto him, and said unto them in parables. How can Satan cast out Satan?

25. And if a kingdom be divided against it self, that kingdom cannot stand.

26. And if house be divided against itself, that house cannot stand.

27. No man can enter into a strong man's house, and spoil his goods, except he will first bind the strong man, and then he will spoil his house.

28. Verily I say unto you, All sins shall be forgiven unto the sons of men, and blasphemies where with ever they shall blaspheme;

29. But he that shall blaspheme against the holy Ghost, hath never forgiveness, but is in danger of eternal damnation:

30. Because they said, He hath an unclean spirit.

31. There...
There came then his brethren and his mother, and standing without, sent unto him, calling him. And the multitude sat about him, and they said unto him, Behold, thy mother and thy brethren without seek for thee. And be answered them, saying, Who is my mother, or my brethren? And he looked round about on them which sat about him, and said, Behold my mother and my brethren. For whosoever shall do the will of God, the same is my brother, and my sister, and my mother.

If you would know me, you must look beyond my earthly kindred and relations: As I am of an higher Offspring, I have higher works to do, than to please natural kindred. (I draw you not from regard to your natural kindred: God commands you to honour Parents. But, Spiritual Relations to me are such, are more amiable and happy than mere Natural Relations as such. It is a more amiable thing to be a Lover of God, and to obey him, than to be my Mother, Sister, or Brother: if they had no better, they would perish forever. But all that love God and obey him, shall be saved. This is great comfort to every true Christian, that they are dear to Christ, than Mother, Brother, or Sister, as such, would have been, had they not been holy.)

CHAP. IV.

And he began again to teach by the sea-side: and there was gathered unto him a great multitude, so that he entered into a ship, and sat in the sea, and the whole multitude was by the sea, on the land. And he taught them many things by parables, and said unto them in his doctrine. Hearken, Behold, there went out a sower to sow: And it came to pass, as he sowed, some fell by the way-side, and the fowls of the air came and devoured it up. And some fell on stony ground, where it had not much earth, and immediately it sprang up, because it had no depth of earth. But when the sun was up, it was scorched, and because it had no root, it withered away. And some fell among thorns, and the thorns grew up, and choked it, and it yielded no fruit. And other fell on good ground, and did yield fruit that sprang up and increased, and brought forth some thirty, and some sixty, and some an hundred. And he said unto them, He that hath ears to hear, let him hear.

See Paraphrase on Mat. 13:

10. And when he was alone, they that were about him with the twelve, asked him of the parable.

11. He is said to be alone, when the multitude were gone.

12. And he said unto them, Unto you it is given to know the mystery of the kingdom of God: but unto them that are without, all these things are done in parables: That seeing they may see, and not perceive, and hearing they may hear, and not understand; left at any time they should be converted, and their sins should be forgiven them.

See Mat. 13, 13, 13. God hath vouchsafed you greater help and light than to those without, that are not my Disciples: Parables are fitted to their ignorant state, who willfully neglect instruction, and are never the better for what they hear, so that it doth not convert and heal them. Did they enquire and diligently search for truth, it should be fuller opened to them.

13. And he said unto them, Know ye not this parable? and how then will you know all parables?

13. If ye understand not this plain similitude,
14. The fower foweth the word.
15. And these are they by the way-side, where the word is sown, but when they have heard, Satan cometh immediately, and taketh away the word that was sown in their hearts. 16. And these are they likewise which are sown on stony ground, who when they have heard the word, immediately receive it with gladness: 17. And have no root in themselves, and so endure but for a time: afterward when affliction or persecution ariseth for the words sake, immediately they are offended. 18. And these are they which are sown among thorns: such as hear the word. 19. And the cares of this world, and the deceitfulness of riches, and the lusts of other things entering in, choke the word, and it becometh unfruitful.

See Matthew 13. The several Writers of Christ's words give us the same in sense, tho' there be some small difference in the words.

20. And these are they which are sown on good ground, such as hear the word, and receive it, and bring forth fruit, some thirtyfold, some sixty, and some an hundred.

21. And he said unto them, Is a candle brought to be put under a bushel, or under a bed? and not to be set on a candlestick?

21. God doth not give you more light than others, to hide it, but to use it for the good of many.

22. For there is nothing hid which shall not be manifested:

neither was any thing kept secret but that it should come abroad.

22. Light is for the manifesting of things, and it will manifest all things, hide or secret fower they seem.

23. If any man have ears hear, let him hear.

23. Let him that hath ears and understanding see that he hear God's word carefully, with all the serious attention his heart; for it is of greatest concernment to his soul.

24. And he said unto them, Take heed what you hear: with what measure ye mete, it shall be measured to you: and unto you that hear shall more be given. 25. For he that hath, to him shall be given and he that hath not, from him shall be taken even that which he hath.

24, 25. See that you set your hearts on the word you hear: For as you use God's word, he will use you: Learn faithfully and you shall be taught more: but if ye stifle or neglect the truth, your knowledge will be as none, or worse than none to you, and God may forake your understandings.

26. And he said, So is the kingdom of God, as if a man should cast seed into the ground, 27. And should sleep, and rise night and day, and the seed should spring and grow up, he knoweth not how.

26, 27. N. Man soweth, but God beth it, and we see it not grow, but see it that it hath grown. Who shall then ascribe another an account, but when or how it was converted?

28. For the earth bringeth forth fruit of her self; first the blade then the ear, after that the full corn in the ear. 29. But when the fruit is brought forth, immediately he putteth in the fickle, because the harvest is come.

28. Do your part in sowing, and God will prosper it: And thou see not present fruit, it will ripen and shew it itself a laity, and be rewarded and fully blest.
Ch. 4. Christ asleep.  St. Mark.  One possessed, &c.  Ch. 5.

30. And he said, Whereunto shall we liken the kingdom of God? or with what comparison shall we compare it? 31. It is like a grain of mustard-seed, which when it is sown in the earth, is less than all the seeds that be in the earth. 32. But when it is grown, it groweth up, and becometh greater than all the seeds that be in the earth, and shall receive the fowls of the air into the shadow of it.

39. And he arose, and rebuked the wind, and said unto the sea, Peace, be still: and the wind ceased, and there was a great calm.

40. And he said unto them, Why are ye fearful? how is it that you have no faith? 41. And they feared exceedingly, and said one to another, What manner of man is this, that even the wind and the sea obey him?

39, &c. N. All things obey Christ, save voluntary sinners. 2. It is but a word of his, that is needful to allay all our dangers.

C H A P. V.

1. And they came over unto the other side of the sea, into the country of the Gadarenes. 2. And when he was come out of the ship, immediately there met him out of the tombs, a man with an unclean spirit. 3. Who had his dwelling among the tombs, and no man could bind him, no not with chains: 4. Because that he had been often bound with fetters and chains, and the chains had been plucked asunder by him, and the fetters broken in pieces: neither could any man tame him.

5. And always night and day he was in the mountains, and in the tombs, crying, and cutting himself with thorns.
Ch. 5.  Details  St. Mark: in a swine.  Ch.

Matt. 8: 28. Tells us, that they were two; which Mark, denieth not, tho he mentioneth but one.

6. But when he saw Jesus afar off, he ran and worshipped him,

6. Devils. Worship is but a constrained confession of Christ's power over them.

7. And cried with a loud voice, and said, What have I to do with thee, Jesus, thou Son of the most high God? I adjure thee by God, that thou torment me not.

7. N. It is no wonder if malicious hypocrites abuse the name of God by Excommunications and reproaching of his truest servants, when the Devil durst use God's name to adjure Christ himself.

8. (For he sate unto him, Come out of the man, thou unclean spirit).

8. N. It appeareth that Devils are not always just in the same condition, but when they are restrained from going about to do mischief, it is to them an imprisonment and torment; as it is to a Wolf to be tied up from killing sheep.

9. And he asked him, What is thy name? And he answered, saying, My name is Legion; for we are many.

9. N. Spirits lost not their individuation by falling into one common soul. 2. Seeing the greatest multitude is among the least of beings (there are more Boughs and Shoots than Trunks of Trees, more Flies than Men, &c.) It seems that the very nature of Devils is debased with their quality; and they are not now of so light a spiritual nature, as they were before their fall, if there were so great a number to affright one man.

10. And he besought him much, that he would not send them away out of the country. 11. Now there was there nigh unto the mountains, a great herd of swine feeding. 12. And all the devils besought him, saying, Send us into the swine, that we may enter into them. 13. And forthwith Jesus gave them leave. And the unclean spirits went out, and entered into the swine, and the herd ran violently down a steep place into the sea, (they were about two thousand) and were choked in the sea.

14. &c. Let us play a small game rather none: It will somewhat abate our pain, do some mischief tho a lea, and not to imprison in the deep. N. The reason why Devils hurt us no more, is because God will not give them leave.

14. And they that fed the swine were told, and told it in the city, and in the country. And they went out to see what it was that was done. 15. And they came to Jesus, and see him that was possessed with the devil, and had the legion, sitting, and clothed, and in his right mind, and they were afraid. 16. And they that saw it, told them how it befell to him that was possessed with the devil, and also concerning the swine. 17. And they began to pray him to depart out of the coast.

14. &c. N. When they were healed by Christ, they followed him: But when they left their Swine by him, they would bar him.

18. And when he was come into the ship, that had been possessed with the devil, prayed him that he might be with him. 19. Howbeit, Jesus suffered him not, but to depart from him, Going home to his friends, and tell them how great things the Lord hath done for thee, and hath had compassion of thee. 20. And he departed, and began to publish in Decapolis, how great things Jesus had done for him: and all men did marvel.

18. &c. N. All must honour God in his places; but not all in one place, and station.

21. And when Jesus was passed over again by ship unto the other side, much people gathered unto him.
him, and he was nigh unto the sea. 22. And behold, there came one of the rulers of the synagogue, Jairus by name, and when he saw him, he fell at his feet. 23. And he brought him greatly, saying, My little daughter lieth at the point of death, I pray thee come and lay thy hands on her, that she may be healed, and she shall live. 24. And Jesus went with him, and much people followed him, and thronged him;

21. And the Synagogue had more than one Ruler. 2. It was then a great mercy to be Afflicted: For such came to Christ for help; while others maligned him.

29. And a certain woman which had an issue of blood twelve years, 26. And had suffered many things of many physicians, and had spent all that she had, and was nothing bettered, but rather grew worse. 27. When she had heard of Jesus, came in the press behind, and touched his garment. 28. For she said, If I may touch but his clothe, I shall be whole. 29. And straightway the fountain of her blood was dried up: and she felt in her body that she was healed of that plague.

25. &c. Her strong Faith prepared her for a speedy cure.

30. And Jesus immediately knowing in himself, that virtue had gone out of him, turned him about in the press, and said, Who touched my clothes? 31. And his disciples said unto him, Thou seest the multitude thronging thee, and sayest thou, Who touched me? 32. And he looked round about to see her that had done this thing. 33. But the woman fearing and trembling, knowing what was done in her, come and fell down before him, and told him, all the truth. 34. And he said unto her, Daughter, thy faith hath made thee whole; go in peace, and be whole of thy plague.

35. &c. Many touched his clothes, that were never the better: So many used his name, when they thought he was Faith, are healed. 2. She feared Christ was angry with her, when he healed her.

35. While he yet spake, there came from the ruler of the synagogue's house, certain which said, Thy daughter is dead, why troublest thou the Master any further? 36. As soon as Jesus heard the word that was spoken, he amazed unto the ruler of the synagogue, Be not afraid, only believe.

35, &c. Take heed, lest distrust deprive thee of thy desire.

37. And he suffered no man to follow him, save Peter, and James, and John the brother of James. 38. And he cometh to the house of the ruler of the synagogue, and seeth the tumult, and them that wept and wailed greatly. 39. And when he was come in, he said unto them, Why make ye this ado, and weep? the damsel is not dead, but sleepeth. 40. And they laughed him to scorn: but when he had put them all out, he took the father and the mother of the damsel, and them that were with him, and entreated in where the damsel was lying. 41. And he took the damsel by the hand, and said unto her, Talitha cumi, which is, being interpreted, Damsel (I say unto thee) arise. 42. And straightway the damsel arose, and walked; for she was of the age of twelve years: and they were astonished with a great astonishment. 43. And he charged them straitly, that no man should know it; and commanded that something should be given her to eat.
And he went out from thence, and came into his own country, and his disciples follow him. And when the sabbath-day was come, he began to teach in the synagogue: and many hearing him, were astonished, saying, From whence hath this man these things? and what wisdom is this which is given unto him, that even such mighty works are wrought by his hands? Is not this the carpenter, the son of Mary, the brother of James and Joses, and of Judah, and Simon? and are not his sisters here with us? And they were offended at him.

Because they knew his vincible Original, and Education, and Kindred to be like that of other of their Neighbours, they were, by this, made backward to believe Him to be the Son of God.

But Jesus said unto them, A prophet is not without honour, but in his own country, and among his own kin, and in his own house.

It is usual for Prophets to be least set by at home, where men that see their Natural Original, yet see not the Spirit of God in them, nor know his operations.

And he could there do no mighty work, save that he laid his hands upon a few sick folk, and healed them. And he marvelled because of their unbelief. And he went round about the villages, teaching.

It was not for want of Power in Christ, but because they were uncapable receivers. Thus Sin goes on from bad to worse: Unbelief deprived them of the Miracles, that should have cured it.

7. And he calleth unto him twelve, and began to send them forth by two and two, and gave them power over unclean spirits:

8. And commanded them that they should take nothing for their journey, save a staff only; no scrip, no bread, no money in their purse: But be shod with sandals, and not put on two coats.

9. And he said unto them, In what place soever ye enter into an house, there abide till ye depart from thence.

11. And whatsoever shall not receive you, nor hear you, when ye depart thence, shake off the dust under your feet for a testimony against them. Verily I say unto you, it shall be more tolerable for Sodom and Gomorrah in the day of judgment, than for that city.

12. And they went out, and preached that men should repent.

13. And they cast out many devils, and anointed with oil many that were sick, and healed them.

14. And king Herod heard of him (for his name was spread abroad) and he said, That John the Baptist was risen from the dead, and therefore mighty works do shew themselves in him.

15. And Herod believed the Immorality

15. Others said, That it is Elias, and others said, That it is a prophet, or as one of the prophets.
16. But when Herod heard thereof, he said, It is John whom I beheaded, he is risen from the dead.


17. For Herod himself had sent forth and laid hold upon John, and bound him in prison for Herodias sake, his brother Philip's wife; for he had married her.

17. X He could bear the guilt, but not the reproof; but God will make the proudest bear more.

18. For John had said unto Herod, It is not lawful for thee to have thy brother's wife.

18. X He that hath a call to tell Kings of their Sin, must do it faithfully.

19. Therefore Herodias had a quarrel against him, and would have killed him, but she could not.

19. X See the bloody mind of a wicked Queen! The cause of John's Death, is but his telling a Sinner of his Sin.

20. For Herod feared John, knowing that he was a just man, and an holy, and observed him, and when he heard him, he did many things, and heard him gladly.

20. X His Conscience telling him, that John was a just and Holy man, made him reverence him; and do many things which John Preached to him; and hear him with some pleasure: But could not make him leave his darling Sin.

21. And when a convenient day was come, that Herod on his birthday made a supper to his lords, high captains, and chief estates of Galilee. 22. And when the daughter of the said Herodias came in, and danced, and pleased Herod, and them that sat with him, the king said unto the damsel, Ask of me whatsoever thou wilt, and I will give it thee. 23. And he sware unto her, Whatever thou shalt ask of me, I will give it thee, unto the half of my kingdom.

21, 24. X Yet will such wretches lose the Kingdom of Heaven, rather than let go a base lust for God. So much more liberal are they to their flesh and fellow-sinners!

24. And she went forth, and said unto her mother, What shall I ask? And she said, The head of John the Baptist. 25. And he came in straightway with haste unto the king, and asked, saying, I will that thou give me by and by in a charger, the head of John the Baptist.

24, 25. X Blood and Revenge is by a Lufful Woman preferred before half a Kingdom. Such are the Enemies of holy men.

26. And the king was exceeding sorry, yet for his oaths sake, and for their sakes which sat with him, he would not reject her.

26. X All unwillingness and sorrow for Sin, is not true Repentance; but That, which is more effectual against Sin, than the Temptation is for it.

27. And immediately the king sent an executioner, and commanded his head to be brought: and he went and beheaded him in the prison. 28. And brought his head in a charger, and gave it to the damsel: and the damsel gave it to her mother.

27, 28. X This wicked, bloody King wanted not an Executioner to do his Will, in the most heinous Sin.

29. And when his disciples heard of it, they came and took up his corps, and laid it in a tomb. 30. And the apostles gathered themselves together unto Jesus, and told him all things, both what they had done, and what they had taught.

29, 30. X Of
Ch. 6. Five thousand fed. St. Mark. Christ walketh on the sea, Ch. 6.

29. 30. Of their Doctrine and Miracles.
31. And he said unto them, Come ye yourselves apart into a desert place, and rest a while: for there were many coming and going, and they had no leisure so much as to eat. 32. And they departed into a desert place by ship privately. 33. And the people saw them departing, and many knew him, and ran about thither out of all cities, and overtook them, and came together unto him. 34. A fervent desire is very diligent and laborious.

34. And Jesus when he came out, saw much people, and was moved with compassion toward them, because they were as sheep not having a shepherd: and he began to teach them many things. 35. And when the day was now far spent, his disciples came unto him, and said, This is a desert place, and now the time is far passed: 36. Send them away, that they may go into the country round about, and into the villages, and buy themselves bread: for they have nothing to eat. 37. He answered and said unto them, Give ye them to eat. And they said unto him, Shall we go and buy two hundred penny-worth of bread, and give them to eat? 38. Their penny was seven pence halfpenny. 

Note. The luxurious belles of this land would have taken bread but for a dry feast, though they had the fishes also.

38. He saith unto them, How many loaves have ye? go and see. And when they knew, they said, Five, and two fishes. 39. And he commanded them to make all sit down by companies upon the green grass. 40. And they sat down in ranks by hundreds and by fifties.
hands oft, eat not, holding the tradition of the elders. 4. And when they come from the market, except they wash, they eat not. And many other things there be, which they have received to hold, as the washing of cups, and pots, brazen vessels, and of tables.

1. &c. If these Hypocrites had not Ceremony and Tradition, and Obedience to their Councils to make Religion of, how could they quiet their Consciences in their worldly wicked lives? And what pretence could they have had to persecute Christ and his Apostles, had not disobedience to their Matterships, and Councils, and Traditions in Ceremony, served their malignity, for a pretence? The Devil will be religious, to destroy Religion.

5. Then the Pharisees and scribes asked him, Why walk not thy disciples according to the tradition of the elders, but eat bread with unwashed hands?

6. Why observe you not the Canons?

5. He answered and said unto them, Well hath Esaias prophesied of you hypocrites, as it is written, This people honoureth me with their lips, but their heart is far from me. 7. Howbeit, in vain do they worship me, teaching for doctrines the commandments of men.

6. &c. Well saith Esaias. This people, &c. give me an outside ceremonious Worship, but their hearts are void of true Holiness, Religion; and Spiritual Worship. But all their Hypocritical Worship of me is in vain, while they make Doctrines and Laws of Religion of the Injunctions of men, and the Traditions or Canons of their Councils or Elders.

8. For laying aside the commandment of God, ye hold the tradition of men, as the washing of pots and cups: and many other such like things ye do.

8. God commands one to preach and obey his Word, and to live in Love; and shew mercy, &c. These you lay aside, and hinder the Preaching of his Word, and pert.

7. And when he was entred into the house from the people, his disciples asked him concerning the parable. 18. And he, faith unto them, Are ye so without understanding also? Do ye not perceive that whatsoever thing from with out entred into the man, it cannot defile him. 19. Because it entred not into his heart, but into the belly, and goeth out into the draught purging all meats?

17. &c. Meat maketh not a fruitful hear or Will, as such.

20. And he said, That which cometh out of the mouth, defileth the man. 21. For from within, out of the heart of men, proceed evil thoughts, adulteries, fornications, murders, thefts, covetousness, wickedness, deceit, lasciviousness, an evil eye, blasphemy, pride, foolishness: 23. All these evil things come from within, and defile the man.

22. These make him a Sinner and Guilty. And so do Gluttony and Drunkenness, but not as Meat and Drink, but as sinful Excess.

24. And from thence he arose and went into the borders of Tyre and Sidon, and entred into a house, and would have no man know it: but he could not be hid.

25. For a certain woman, whose young daughter had an unclean spirit, heard of him, and came and fell at his feet: 26. (The woman was a Greek, a Syrophoenician by nation) and she besought him that he would cast forth the devil out of her daughter. 27. But Jesus said unto her, Let the children first be filled: for it is not meet to take the children’s bread, and cast it unto the dogs.

26. N. Pheenisca and Caanaeans were at place. 27. I am sent first to the Israelite God’s peculiar people, with whom ye called.
And she answered and said unto him, Yea, Lord: Yet the dogs under the table eat of the children's crumbs.

And he said unto her, For this saying, go thy way; the devil is gone out of thy daughter.

And when she was come to her house, she found the devil gone out, and her daughter laid upon the bed.

And again departing from the coasts of Tyre and Sidon, he came unto the sea of Galilee through the midst of the coasts of Decapolis.

And they bring unto him one that was deaf, and an impediment in his speech; and they beseech him to put his hand upon him.

And he took him aside from the multitude, and put his fingers into his ears, and he spit and touched his tongue.

And looking up to heaven, he sighed, and saith unto him, Ephphathah: that is, Be opened.

And straightway his ears were opened, and the string of his tongue was loosed, and he spake plain.

And he charged them that they should tell no man: but the more he charged them, so much the more a great deal they published it.

And they were beyond measure astonished, saying, He hath done all things well: he maketh both the deaf to hear, and the dumb to speak.

And straightway he entred into a ship with his disciples, and came into the parts of Dalmanutha.

And the Pharisees came forth, and began to question with him, seeking of him a sign from heaven, tempting him.
10, 11. They would trie whether he were
the Son of God, by a sign from Heaven of
their own choosing.
12. And he sighed deeply in
his spirit, and faith, Why doth
this generation seek after a sign ?
verily, I say unto you, There shall
no sign be given to this genera-
tion.
12. He deeply groaned in grief for their
Obdurate souls, and said, Have not this kind
of men had signs enough to convince them?
Must they further chafe what Miracles they
shall have? Verily no such desire of those
pervasive-men, shall be satisfied (the miracle
of my Resurrection shall they have.)
13. And he left them, and en-
tried into the ship again, departed
to the other side. 14. Now the
disciples had forgotten to take
bread, neither had they in the ship
with them more then one loaf.
15. And he charged them, saying,
Take heed, beware of the leaven
of the Pharisees, and of the leaven
of Hero.
15. The dangerous Enemies of the Gospel
are the Ceremonial Pharisees, and King
Herod, a jealous Roman Governor. Take
special heed that neither the Pharisees de-
duce you by their Deceits, nor the King
and his Officers affright you from the Faith by
their cruelty.
16. And they reasoned among
themselves, saying, It is because we
have no bread. 17. And when
Jesus knew it, he faith unto them,
Why reason ye, because ye have no bread? perceive ye not yet, nei-
ther understand? have ye your
heart yet hardened? 18. Having
eyes, see ye not? and having ears,
have ye not? and do ye not re-
member? 19. When I brake the
five loaves among five thousand,
how many baskets full of frag-
ments took ye up? They say unto
him, Twelve. 20. And when the
seven among four thousand, how
many baskets full of fragments
took ye up? And they said, Seven.
21. And he said unto them, How
is it that ye do not understand?
21. N. It is a great Sin to have a power of
understanding and considering, and not to
use it. 2. And a great Sin quickly to
forget Miracles, or marvellous Providences,
and to fall into new distrustful reasonings
in our next wants.
22. And he cometh to Bethsaida,
and they bring a blind man unto
him, and besought him to touch
him. 23. And he took the blind
man by the hand, and led him out
of the town; and when he had
spat on his eyes, and put his hands
upon him, he asked him if he saw
ought? 24. And he looked up,
and said, I see men as trees, walk-
ing.
24. &c. I discern not Men from Trees
by their Shape; but suppose them Men,
because they walk.
25. After that, he put his hands
again upon his eyes, and made him
look up: and he was restored, and
saw every man clearly. 26. And
he sent him away to his house, say-
ing, Neither go into the town, nor
tell it to any in the town.
25, 26. To avoid Offenstation and Envy.
27. And Jesus went out, and
his disciples, into the towns of Ce-
faras Philippi: and by the way he
asked his disciples, saying unto
them, Whom do men say that I
am?
27. Not but that he knew: but his question
was to occasion their Confession.
28. And they answered, John
the Baptist: but some say, Elias
and others, One of the prophets.
29. And he faith unto them, But
whom say ye that I am? An
Peter answered and faith, unit
him, Thou art the Christ. 30. An
he charged them that they shoul
tell no man of him.
29. Men were to discern who he was in
his Works: And he would not have it cor


And he began to teach them, that the Son of man must suffer many things, and be rejected of the elders and of the chief priests, and scribes, and be killed, and after three days rise again. And he spake that laying openly. And Peter took him, and began to rebuke him. But when he had turned about, and looked on his disciples, he rebuked Peter, saying, Get thee behind me, Satan: for thou savourest not the things that be of God, but the things that be of men.

1. Christ made them know that he designed not a Worldly Kingdom, when he told them of his Death and Resurrection.
2. Peter in his foolish wisdom thought Christ would not be wise as he. No wonder if Notice now think themselves wiser than their wisest Teachers: And specially, if such are esteemed as imprudent for not avoiding sufferings.
3. Even a Peter by such carnal wisdom may so far serve Satan, as to deserve a sharp rebuke as to be called a Satan.
4. Savoring the things of Men and Flesh, more than of God, is the great Sin that we are in danger of, and deserve a sharp Rebuke.

And when he had called the people unto him with his disciples also, he sitteth unto them, Whosoever will come after me, let him deny himself, and take up his cross, and follow me. For whoever will lose his life, shall save it; but whoever shall lose his life for my sake and the gospel's, the same shall save it.

This case of Peter occasioned Christ to call off all his Disciples from Worldly Expectations, and to tell them what they must submit to; and that they are no Disciples for Him, if they cannot trust Him with their Lives; and if they believe not that they shall gain more by Him than their Lives to save: & To deny a man is, is to forsake his Life rather than forfake Christ.

As to deny Christ, was to forsake Him to save life or any thing else. He that will save his Life by denying Christ, shall lose it and his Salvation: And he that denieth his Life for Christ and the Hope of Salvation, shall save it for ever.

For what shall it profit a man, if he shall gain the whole world, and lose his own soul? Or what shall a man give in exchange for his soul?

How poor a price is all the Profit and Pleasure of this life, to hire a man by sin to lose his Salvation: or what can make up that man's loss? As And will Pride, Revenge, Gluttony, Drunkenness, or Formication then make him a Saver, that loseth his Soul by them? or will Preferment, Lordship, and Pomp, and Power recompense him?

Whosoever therefore shall be ashamed of me, and of my words, in this adulterous and sinful generation, of him also shall the Son of man be ashamed when he cometh in the glory of his Father, with the holy angels.

If men be so far ashamed of a crucified, a scorned, a persecuted Christ, as to deny Him, to escape Shame or Suffering: a glorified Christ in Judgment before Angels and Men will disown them, and say, I know you not. It is not a Popedom, or a Cardinalship, nor a Lordship, that nominal Christians are ashamed of; but it is poor persecuted Christianity.

CHAP. IX.

And he said unto them, Verily I say unto you, that there be some of them that stand here, which shall not taste of death, till they have seen the kingdom of God come with power.

Till they see a glimpse of that glorious or powerful appearance of the King of the Church, in which he shall come at the last.

And after six days Jesus taketh with him Peter, and James, and John, and leadeth them up into an high mountain apart by themselves; and he was transfigured before
before them. 3. And his raiment became shining, exceeding white as snow; so as no fuller on earth can whiten them. 4. And there appeared unto them Elias, with Moises: and they were talking with Jesus. 5. And Peter answered and said to Jesus, Master, it is good for us to be here: and let us make three tabernacles; one for thee, and one for Moises, and one for Elias. 6. For he wist not what to say, for they were sore afraid.

This was the performance of the foregoing promise. See on Matt. 17.

Note. For glorified Saints from Heaven to wait on Christ in his own splendour, was a Glimpse resembling his Last Coming. 2. If the sight of Christ, Moises and Elias, in glorious Splendour made the Three Apostles, through the strangeness of it, sore afraid: no wonder, if even the Thought of what we shall see after Death, poffeis us with Dread, though it be our Hope and Joy.

And there was a cloud that overshadowed them: and a voice came out of the cloud, saying, This is my beloved Son: hear him.
7. Hear, and obey him, as the chief Messenger of my Will, of whom I give you this Testimony from Heaven.
8. And suddenly when they had looked round about, they saw no man any more, save Jesus only with themselves. 9. And as they came down from the mountain, he charged them that they should tell no man what things they had seen, till the Son of man were risen from the dead. 10. And they kept that saying with themselves, questioning one with another what the rising from the dead should mean.
11. And they asked him, saying, Why say the Scribes that Elias must first come? 12. And he answered and told them, Elias verily cometh first, and resteth all things, as how it is written of the Son man, that he must suffer many things, and be set at nought. 13. But I say unto you, that Elias is not come, and they have done unto him whatsoever they listed, as he was written of him.

And when he came to his disciples, he saw a great multitude about them, and the Scribes questioning with them. 15. And straightway all the people, when they beheld him, were greatly amazed, and running to him, saluted him. 16. And he asked them, What question ye with them? 17. And one of the multitude answered and said, Master, I have brought unto thee my son, which hath a dumb spirit: 18. And wherefoever he taketh him, he teareth him, and he foameth, at gnaatheth with his teeth, and pine away: and I spake to thy disciples, that they should cast him out, and they could not.

O faithless generation, how long shall I be with you? how long shall I suffer you? bring him unto me.

The want of Faith in you, did come to your Frustration, than the want of Power in my Disciples.

And they brought him unto him: and when he saw him, straightway the Spirit tare him, and he fell on the ground, and wallowed in ming.

Here is the perfect description of EPILEPSY: And the folly of Atheists.

and ye ought to be impiured to Devils: That is, Because an Axe, or a Halter kills a Man; therefore the Law, the Judges, the Executioner are no caules of it.

21. And he asked his father, How long is it ago since this came unto him? And he said, Of a child.
22. And oft-times it hath cast him into the fire, and into the waters to destroy him: but if thou cannot do any thing, have compassion on us, and help us.
23. And Jesus said unto him, If thou canst believe, all things are possible to him that believeth.
24. If thy faith make thee a Capable Receiver, thou shalt find that I want not Power.
25. And straightway the father of the child cried out, and said with tears, Lord, I believe; help thou mine unbelief.
26. He was afraid of losing the Cure of his Child for want of Faith, and yet his Faith was weak, and wavering, and therefore he said, If I had no belief in thee, I had not come to thee, but I am weak and timorous, and therefore pray thee to strengthen my Faith, and make up in thy mercy what is wanting in my Belief. This is (alas!) the Cafe of most Christians.
27. When Jesus saw that the people came running together, he rebuked the foul spirit, saying unto him, Thou dumb and deaf spirit, I charge thee, Come out of him, and enter no more into him.
28. And the spirit cried, and rent him sorely, and came out of him; and he was as one dead, insomuch that many said, He is dead.
29. But Jesus took him by the hand, and lifted him up, and he arose. And when he was come into the house, his disciples asked him privately, Why could not we cast him out? And he said unto them, This kind can come forth by nothing, but by prayer and fasting.
30. And they departed thence, and passed through Galilee; and he would not that any man should know it. 31. For he taught his disciples, and said unto them, The Son of man is delivered into the hands of men, and they shall kill him, and after that he is killed he shall rise the third day. 32. But they understood not that saying, and were afraid to ask him.
33. And he came to Capernaum, and being in the house, he asked them, What was it that ye disputed among yourselves by the way? 34. But they held their peace: for by the way they had disputed among themselves, who should be the greatest. 35. And he sat down, and called the twelve, and said unto them, If any man desire to be first, the same shall be last of all, and servant of all.
36. And he took a child and set him in the midst of them: and when he had taken him in his arms, he said unto them, Whosoever shall receive one of such children in my name, receiveth me: and who-
foever shall receive me, receiveth not me, but him that sent me.

36, 37. Humble and harmless Christians are so dear to me, that whosoever in Love and Mercy receiveth and sheweth Kindness to one of thee, I will take it, as if he did it to My Self: and my Father will take that which is done in Love and Obedience to me, to be done as to Himself. If you will be great in my Kingdom, and dear to me, be Humble, and harmless.

38. And John answered him, saying, Master, we saw one casting out devils in thy name, and he followeth not us: and we forbade him, because he followeth not us.

39. N. Had John been now as full of Love, as he was afterwards, he would not have forbidden this man to do good.

40. But Jesus said, Forbid him not: for there is no man which shall do a miracle in my name, that can lightly speak evil of me.

41. For he that is not against us, is on our part.

42. N. Men that preach in Christ's Name, therefore, are not to be silenced, though faulty; if they do more good than harm. Dreadful then is the Caufe of them, that Silence Christ's faithful Ministers.

43. In point of Service to the Church, He that is not against it, is some way for it: as Soulers say of Courteys men that are not against them. But as to their own Salvation, He that is not for Christ above all the World, is against him, and no sincere Christian. As Captains say to their lifted Soldiers, Fight, or be Captured.

44. For whofoever shall give you a cup of water to drink, in my name, because ye belong to Christ, verily I say unto you, he shall not lose his reward.

45. He that doth the least good to a Christian, from a true Love to Christ, would do more, were it in his Power: And he that doth good but from common Principles, though he be not Saved, shall have some Reward, and shall be no Looser, but a Gainer, by all the good that he doth.

46. And whofoever shall offend one of these little ones that believe in me, it is better for him that a millstone were hanged about his neck, and he were cast into the sea.

47. N. O then, what will become of Tempers, Persecutors, and malignant Enemies! By [offending] is meant, [hindering from Faith and a holy Life.] And by [better], is meant, [It's a smaller hurt.]

48. And if thy hand offend thee, cut it off: it is better for thee to enter into life maimed, than having two hands, to go into hell, into the fire that never shall be quenched.

49. Where their worm dieth not, and the fire is not quenched.

50. And if thy foot offend thee, cut it off: it is better for thee to enter halt into life, than having two feet to be cast into hell, into the fire that never shall be quenched.

51. Where their worm dieth not, and the fire is not quenched.

52. So great is the difference between the welfare of this Flesh, and the Life to come, that you cannot get Heaven, and escape Hell-fire at the same time. If a Hand or Foot, or Eye, were strong a hindrance, as that you had no other way to avoid Sin, and Hell, it is a far les evil to lose such a Member, than to lie in Hell. N. The meaning is not, that any man is in such a Cafe, that he hath no better way to avoid Sin and Hell: But if he had no better, he should choose this: Nor doth it mean, that maimed Persons are maimed in Heaven: but if it were so, it were a less evil.

53. For every one shall be salted with fire, and every sacrifice shall be salted with salt. Salt is good: but if the salt have lost his saltiness, wherewith will ye season it? Have salt in your lyes.
And be sure, that the fire of Jealousy shall be as Salt to you all, that now are thinking of Preeminence: and those of you that are found, it shall make fitter to be pure Sacrifices to God. And you that are Preachers, and Professors of Christianity, being thus salted, your selves shall be the Salt of the Earth, to Seafon othen, by holy Doctrine and Practice. But if you should lose that Doctrine, and Christianity, what then shall Seafon you? Keep your sound Truth (that Seafoneth, though it came some smart,) in your selves, and instead of seeking Superiority, live in peace, and give Meekness with one another.

5. This Law was good in itself, because it was fixed to your condition: But it was the hardness and harshness of your hearts, that made such a Toleration needful to you, to keep you from worse; so it was not a full approbation of the thing: For the perfect Law of Innocency so united Man and Wife, that no man should Separate them, for his own pleasure, without God's license.

10. And in the house his disciples asked him again of the same matter. 11. And he said unto them, Whosoever shall put away his wife, and marry another, comitteth adultery against her. 12. And if a woman shall put away her husband, and be married to another, she committeth adultery.

10, e. N. Though Mark mention nor the exception of the case of Adultery, mentioned by other Evangelists, it is implied.

1. Quest. Doth Adultery dissolve Marriage? Answ. It is given cause of a dissolution, by divorce, or desertion: But in some cases, it is lawful for the injured Person to forgive the wrong, and continue in the relation, without being Married over again.

2. Quest. May the Woman put Away her Husband for Adultery? Answ. They that deny it, because only the Man hath Governing Power, lay nothing: For the Man doth it not as a Gouvernour, but as an injured Contractor, seeketh it as Justice from the Magistrate; or righteth himself, if permitted by the Magistrate; or if unjustly forbidden. And the Woman may be an injured Contractor, as well as the Man, and may seek to the Magistrate for a Divorce; and in some cases, if denied by the Magistrate, may right her self by Desertion. But whether that Desertion shall be called, A putting away, is but a controversy about the Name, and not the Thing. In what cases it is Lawful to marry again, is a different Controversie.

13. And they brought young children to him, that he should touch them; and his disciples rebuked those that brought them.

14. But when Jesus saw it, he was much displeased, and said unto them,
Children received.

13. Though they brought them not to be baptized, (Christian Baptism being not fully instituted till after Christ’s Resurrection,) yet they are offered to Christ for his acceptance and benediction. He gave them such acceptance and blessing, and declared them to be such, as the Kingdom (or Church) of God consisteth of: He could not mean only of adult persons that are like these Infants in the Kingdom of God: Else he might have taken up a Lamb or a Dove, and blessed them, and said of such harmless creatures is the Kingdom of God. But he must mean of them and such as them, or of such both in age, and also in humble, reachable receptivity is the kingdom of God: Else there would be no reason to bless them. Which can be nothing lower than acceptance as Visible-Infant-Church-Members.

2. He that in all ages from the beginning took Infants to be infant-Members of his Church, and came not to destroy, but to enlarge mercies to the faithful and their seed, and faith, They are holy; and was much displeased with his erroneous Apostles for forbidding them to be brought for his benediction: sure will not be well pleased with those that now forbid them to be dedicated in the Baptistical Covenant to him. But yet if any man will say, I deny not the interest of the Infants of the Faithful in the Church and Covenant, but only think that Baptism was appointed only for the solemn reception of the adult, and so will be Baptized at age, after (or without) Infant Baptism, meerly to satisfie Confidence, and then live in Love and Peace with those of another mind, I should gladly live in Love and Peace with such.

15. Verily I say unto you, Whoever shall not receive the kingdom of God as a little child, he shall not enter therein. And he took them up in his arms, put his hands upon them, and blessed them.

N. 1. These words plainly intimate that he received them as capable of the Kingdom of God, that is the Church on Earth, and in Heaven. Christ doth not thus bless unbelievers and their seed, but those that live. 7. 14. are called holy.

17. And when he was gone a little into the way, there came one, and kneeled to him, and said him, Good Master, what do I that I may inherit eternal life?

17. It hence appeareth that there is none good, but one, 

18. Why callest thou me good? There is none good, but one, God.

18. Good indeed in the prime of life, high title, none being more proper to himself, and none perfectly pure and effentially good, but God: It’s a great matter to be good than thou deemest.

19. Thou knowest the Commandments, Do not commit adultery, Do not kill, Do not steal, Do not bear false witness, Deceive not, Honour thy father and mother.

19. Defraud not, is the sense of the Tenth Commandment, that is, Love Neighbour as thyself, so as not to do from him any thing to his hurt. Q. 1. Why doth Christ mention none of the Commandments of the first Table? Answ. The is supposed to confess God, and consequent his duty to him, and to mean in his fiction, What good works must I do toward others? Q. 2. Why doth not Christ the Commandments in their true on Answ. When the matter alone is intent the order is not necessary. 2. The Preachers recite not all Christ’s words in the same order that he spake them, as is evident in the difference of their recitals. These words are otherwise recited by Matthew 18. 19. Thou shalt do no murder is and, Thou shalt love thy Neighbour as thyself, is last, and instead of [Defraud not.

20. And he answered and said unto him, Master, all these have I observed from my youth.

20. He meant that he had not died in the outward act broke any of the not knowing how far the Law reached.

21. Then Jesus beholding him, but
Ch. 10. Riches hinder salvation. St. Mark.

Ch. 10.

Verse 14: ... and said unto him, One thing thou lackest: go thy way, sell whatsoever thou hast, and give to the poor; and thou shalt have treasure in heaven; and come, take up the crosis, and follow me.

Verse 21: Jesus beheld him with kindness, approving in him what was good, and said, So far thou hast done well; but there is more than this necessary to obtain everlasting life, even to prefer it before all the wealth and pleasure of this world, and life itself; and to rise thee hereina, Go, and sell all and give to the poor, and take Heaven for thy treasure instead of all, and follow me in self denial unto suffering. Not all are bound to sell all; but all are bound so to prefer heaven, as will make them for sake all that stands against it.

Verse 22: And he was sad at that saying, and went away grieved: for he had great possessions.

Verse 23: And Jesus looked round about, and faith unto his disciples, How hardly shall they that have riches enter into the kingdom of God!

Verse 24: How hard is it to persuade rich men to love heaven better than earth, and to yield to the conditions of salvation.

Verse 25: And the disciples were astonished at his words. But Jesus answered again, and faith unto them, Children, how hard is it for them that trust in riches to enter into the kingdom of God!

Verse 26: It is easier for a camel to go through the eye of a needle, than for a rich man to enter into the kingdom of God.

Verse 27: So heart is the heart of man, that it is exceeding hard to have riches; and not to place mens trust in them: and such as do so cannot be true Christians and be saved.

Verse 28: To trust in riches is to take them for our best, and to take and expect more comfort from them, than from Christ and Heaven.

Verse 29: And they were astonished out of measure, saying among themselves, Who then can be saved? And Jesus looking upon them, faith, With men it is impossible, but not with God: for with God all things are possible.

Verse 30: Sure the inordinate desire to be rich mustneeds signifieth unbelief: Can men seek that which they believe maketh their salvation almost impossible? The same I say of murmuring poverty.

Verse 31: Then Peter began to say unto him, Lo, we have left all, and have followed thee.

Verse 32: And Jesus answered and said, Verily I say unto you, There is no man that hath left house, or brethren, or sisters, or father, or mother, or wife, or children, or lands, for my sake and the gospels.

Verse 33: But he shall receive an hundred fold now in this time, houses, and brethren, and sisters, and mothers, and children, and lands, with persecutions, and in the world to come eternal life.

Verse 34: But many that are first, shall be last; and the last, first.

Verse 35: N. To for sake them for Christ, is rather to displease them or part with them, than with Christ and our Duty; when they stand in Competition, as comforts, or in opposition, as adversaries; it is not to for sake them in Passion, or for want of due Love to them; nor to go into a Monastery, or as rebellious Prodigals, or on any unjust cause.

Verse 36: A hundred fold in this life, is in value: God will here do better for them, in things of greater worth. And all Christians shall be endeared to them in Love and Communion.

Verse 37: And they were in the way going up to Jerusalem: and Jesus went
Ye shall indeed drink of the cup that I drink of; and with the baptism that I am baptized withal, shall ye be baptized: 40. But to sit on my right hand, and on my left hand, is not mine to give; but it shall be given to them for whom it is prepared.

39. N. Their purpose was good, but not in their self-confidence. 40. It is to be given by way of reward to the most excellent and meet, according to my Father's Decree, and not by me now by way of partial favour, as Courtiers obtain of Princes.

41. And when the ten heard it, they began to be much displeased with James and John.

41. N. Christ's own followers and Apostles had their great displeasures and indignation at each other; no wonder then if such arise in the Church now. 2. It was then the aspiring Ambition of two that would have been above the rest, that caused this breach and indignation: No wonder if the same Cause have the same Effects, and woes, when it is in worse Men, and in very many.

42. But Jesus called them together, and said unto them, Ye know that they which are accounted to rule over the Gentiles, exercise lordship over them; and their great ones exercise authority upon them. 43. But so shall it not be among you: but whosoever shall be great among you, shall be your minister: 44. And whosoever of you will be the chiefest, shall be servant of all.

42, &c. Jesus purposely thus decided the controversy: You are not called to an Empire or Dominion. The Rulers of the Nations exercise Lordship and Command over them. Put your Preeminence shall be Moral, and he that is the worthiest in Humility and Serviceableness to the rest, and in that Light and Love that fits them for it, shall have the Chief Authority with you: For his Wisdom, and Service, Reafon and Love shall most prevail with Christians for refuge in Church Affairs.

43. For even the Son of man came not to be ministered unto, but to minister, and to give his life a ransom for many.
of Olives, he sendeth forth two of his disciples, 2. And faith unto them, Go your way into the village over against you; and as soon as ye be entered into it, ye shall find a colt tied, whereon never man sat; loose him, and bring him. 3. And if any man say unto you, Why do ye this? say ye that the Lord hath need of him; and straightway he will send him hither. 4. And they went their way, and found the colt tied by the door without, in a place where two ways met: and they loosed him. 5. And certain of them that stood there said unto them, What do ye loosing the colt? 6. And they said unto them even as Jesus had commanded: and they let them go.

1. Now Christ knew things distant, and what men would say and do. Though men As be free, God accomplieth his will, by man's free A's. 2. It was an A with her Colt; though Mark names but the Colt.

7. And they brought the colt to Jesus, and cast their garments on him; and he sat upon him. 8. And many spread their garments in the way: and others cut down branches off the trees, and strawed them in the way. 9. And they that went before, and they that followed, cried, saying, Hosanna, blessed is he that cometh in the name of the Lord. 10. Blessed be the kingdom of our father David, that cometh in the name of the Lord; Hosanna in the highest.

7. We receive with all joyful Applause the Messias that is come from God; Blessed be He, and blessed be His Kingdom: Let the Heavens applaud and bless it.

11. And Jesus entred into Jerusalem, and into the temple; and when he had looked round about upon all things, and now the eventide was come, he went out unto Bethany
Bethany with the twelve. 12. And on the morrow when they were come from Bethany, he was hungry. 13. And seeing a fig-tree afar off, having leaves, he came, if haply he might find any thing thereon; and when he came to it, he found nothing but leaves; for the time of figs was not yet.

11, &c. N. It's not likely that Christ was ignorant, that Figgis hit not that year, and that this Tree was fruitless: But by this Miracle he shewed, The Destruction of Fruitless Jews and Hypocrites. 3. It's like he lay out of Door at Bethany, as he used to do by night in the Garden where he was taken, because he would not burden poor mens Houfes with all his followers: Else fare he would not have come away hungry.

14. And Jesus answered and said unto it, No man eat fruit of thee hereafter for ever. And his disciples heard it.

14. Note. 1. This Phrase of answering to a fig-tree, must be expounded by the use of the word in thoses times, when [to answer] signified but [to say]. 2. The Curse hungereth nor the Tree, but to instruct men.

15. And they come to Jerusalem: and Jesus went into the temple, and began to cast out them that sold and bought in the temple, and overthrew the tables of the money-chargers, and the seats of them that sold doves; 16. And would not suffer that any man should carry any vessel through the temple.

15. N. He shewed that he had the authority of a King, tho he would not set up a temporal Kingdom. 16. Christ now seemed to be more ceremonious than the Pharisees: But he was made under the Law, and would not abrogate one Tittle, till all were fulfilled by him: He was to keep it, to save men from it. 3. He yet teacheth us to reverence the place of solemn worship, for the worship fake.

17. And he taught, saying unto them, Is it not written, My house shall be called of all nations the house of prayer? but ye have made it a den of thieves.

17. The Temple was dedicated for Holy worship, for Jews and Prophets of all Nations; but they use Merchandize here, and rob men by deceit.

Ques: May places now be temples dedicated to Holy worship? Answ. No doubt of it, but that the reverence of God’s name and worship, not only alloweth, but requitteth us when we can, to separate comely places to Holy worship, from common use; And why they may not be called Temples, I know not.

18. And the scribes and chief priests heard it, and sought how they might destroy him: for they feared him, because all the people was astonished at his doctrine.

18. The one would think Christ’s zeal for the Temple should have pleased them that cried it up as their Glory, and accused Christ, and Stephen, and Paul for dishonouring it; yet because Christ did it as he did, by the People’s countenance, they feared the wrath of the Romans, lest they would take it for Sedition, and so they should suffer by it.

19. And when even was come, he went out of the city.

19. Let they should surprize him in the Night, as they did at first.

20. And in the morning, as they passed by, they saw the fig-tree dried up from the roots. 21. And Peter calling to remembrance, faith unto him, Master, behold, the fig-tree which thou cursedst, is withered away. 22. And Jesus answering, faith unto them, Have faith in God. 23. For verily I say unto you, that whatsoever shall fay unto this mountain, Be thou removed, and be thou cast into the sea, and shall not doubt in his heart, but shall believe that those things which he faith shall come to pass, he shall have whatsoever he faith.

24. Therefore I say unto you, What things soever ye desire when ye pray, believe that ye receive them, and ye shall have them.
No difficulty shall hinder you from obtaining what God hath promised, and is to be done, if you firmly trust his Love and promise.

And when ye stand praying, forgive, if ye have ought against any: that your Father also which is in heaven may forgive you your trespasses.

And forgiving and Charity is necessary to success as well as Believing: Believing supposeth other requites.

But if you do not forgive, neither will your Father which is in heaven forgive your trespasses.

Note. This speecheth that the promise of granting Believers Prayers, meaneth natura paribus, other requites being answerable.

And they come again to Jerusalem; and as he was walking in the temple, there come to him the chief priests, and the scribes, and the elders.

And say unto him, By what authority doest thou these things? and who gave thee this authority to do these things?

Note. They judged truly that they were not to be done without authority: but knew not that his authority was from God.

And Jesus answered and said unto them, I will also ask of you one question, and answer me, and I will tell you by what authority I do these things.

The baptism of John, was it from heaven, or of men? answer me.

Note. Had they confessed John to be of God, he would have produced his testimony: had they denied it, they had gainfayed themselves and the peoples voice: For the generality of them were baptized by John, is hope that their Messiah and his Kingdom, and their deliverance were at hand.

And they reasoned with themselves, saying, If we shall say, from heaven, he will say, Why then did ye not believe him? But if we shall say, Of men, they feared the people: for all men counted John, that he was a prophet indeed.

And they answered and said unto Jesus, We cannot tell: And Jesus answering, faith unto them, Neither do I tell you by what authority I do these things.

N. It was well that they considered what might be said against them, which now most Christians do not in their disputes. 2. These Persecutors and the Romans had some Charity and consideration, in that they were restrained by the fear of the People, and did not accuse and fines them as for Routs, Riots and Seditions. 3. They that deny necessary premisses are not to be disputed with.

And he began to speak unto them by parables. A certain man planted a vineyard, and set an hedge about it, and digged a place for the wine-fat, and built a tower, and let it out to husbandmen, and went into a far country.

And at the season he sent to the husbandmen a servant, that he might receive from the husbandmen of the fruit of the vineyard.

And they caught him, and beat him, and sent him away empty.

And again he sent unto them another servant; and at him they cast stones, and wounded him in the head, and sent him away shamefully handled.

And again he sent another; and him they killed; and many others, beating some, and killing some.

1. See on Matth. 21. Note. Who did this? Answer. The only national Church on Earth.

2. Did they cease upon this warning of Christ? Answer. No, but do worse. 3. Why did they do it? Answer. Through folly and wickedness. 4. The things that have been, are: This is no strange thing yet on Earth.

6. Having yet therefore one son, his well-beloved, he sent him also
left unto them, saying, They will reverence my son. 7. But those husbandmen said amongst themselves, This is the heir; come, let us kill him, and the inheritance shall be ours. 8. And they took him, and killed him, and cast him out of the vineyard.

8. Note, No wonder that so innocently, or worth can preserve his Ministers from their rage, and from being cast out of the Vineyard.

9. What shall therefore the Lord of the vineyard do? he will come and destroy the husbandmen, and will give the vineyard unto others.

9. He will destroy these Jews, and call the Gentiles to become his Church.

10. And have ye not read this scripture? The stone which the builders rejected is become the head of the corner. 11. This was the Lord’s doing, and it is marvelous in our eyes.


12. And they sought to lay hold on him, but feared the people; for they knew that he had spoken the parable against them: and they left him, and went their way.

12. N. That which is spoken against bad men ensnareth them, be it never so true and necessary.

13. And they send unto him certain of the Pharisees, and of the Herodians, to catch him in his words. 14. And when they were come, they say unto him, Master, we know that thou art true, and carest for no man: for thou regardest not the person of men, but teachest the way of God in truth: Is it lawful to give tribute to Cæsar, or not?

13. They send those that thought Cæsar an Usurper, or at least had no right to that sort of tribute, alienated from the Sanctuary, and the Herodians that were for Cæsar’s right. Note, They give Christ a flattering Character to confound him.

15. Shall we give, or shall we not give? But he knowing the hypocrite, said unto them, Where in this image and superscription? And they said unto his Cæsar’s. 17. And Jesus answering said unto them, Render to Cæsar the things that are Cæsar’s, and to God the things that are God’s. And they marvelled at him.

15. See on Matt. 21. Note. We are no bound to answer directly to all such inquiring questions, nor to satisfy the Tempers.

18. Then came unto him the Sadducees, which say there is no resurrection; and they asked him, saying, 19. Master, Moses wrote unto us, If a man’s brother die, and leave his wife behind him, and leave no children, that his brother should take his wife, and raise up seed unto his brother. 20. Now there were seven brethren: and the first took a wife, and dying left no seed. 21. And the second took her, and died, neither left he any seed: and the third likewise. 22. And the seven had her, and left no seed: last of all the woman died also. 23. In the resurrection therefore, when they shall rise, whose wife shall she be of them? For the seven had her to wife.

18. Erroneous Men, from one false supposition, infer many that are worse.

24. And Jesus answering, said unto them, Do ye not therefore err, because ye know not the scriptures, neither the power of God? 25. For when they shall rise from the dead, they neither marry, nor
given in marriage: but are as
the angels which are in heaven.

24. Carnal Men think Carnally of things
Heavenly: Spiritual Glorified bodies are like
Angels, and as they die not, so they gene-
rate, not any more than they; (not eat and
drink as here.)

26. And as touching the dead;
that they rise: have ye not read in
the book of Moses, how in the
bith God spake unto him, saying,
I am the God of Abraham, and
the God of Isaac, and the God of
Jacob? 27. He is not the God of
the dead, but the God of the liv-
ing: ye therefore do greatly err.

See on Mart. 22.

28. And one of the scribes came,
and having heard them reasoning
untogether, and perceiving that he
had answered them well, asked him,
Which is the first commandment of
all? 29. And Jesus answered him,
The first of all the commandments
is, Hear, O Israel, the Lord our
God is one Lord; 30. And thou
shalt love the Lord thy God with
all thy heart, and with all thy soul,
and with all thy mind, and with all
thy strength: this is the first com-
mandment. 31. And the second
is like unto this, Thou shalt love
thy neighbour as thyself; there is
none other commandment greater
than these.

Now, Love is the most full and final act
of the Soul. It is the total inclination, and
requisite of the will to God as God, the
highest good, and Man, for his sake, as
far as his Conformity to God hath made
him amiable. It fervently and towards
God here by desire and seeking; and fully
enlightened in him hereafter.

32. And the scribe said unto
him, Well Master, thou hast said
the truth: for there is one God,
and there is none other but he.
33. And to love him with all the
heart, and with all the understand-
ing, and with all the soul, and with

all the strength, and to love his
neighbour as himself, is more than
all whole-burnt-offerings and sacri-
fices. 34. And when Jesus saw
that he answered discreetly, he
said unto him, Thou art not far
from the kingdom of God. And
no man after that durst ask him
any question.

34. Note, If the confession of these two
great commands, was a matter so greatly
esteemed both of Christ, and by this Scribe;
how greatly do they differ from Christ, who,
besides the profession of the whole Baptist,
faith and Covenant, require abundance
of unnecessary or uncertain things to Church
Communion and concord, if not to Salva-
tion?

35. And Jesus answered and said,
while he taught in the temple,
How say the scribes that Christ is
the son of David? 36. For David
himself said by the holy Ghost, The
LORD said to my Lord, Sit thou
on my right hand, till I make thine
enemies thy footstool. 37. David
therefore himself calleth him Lord;
and whence is he then his son?

37. He is the Lord in his Divine Nature,
and his Son in his human Nature.

38. And the common people
people heard him gladly. 38. And
he said unto them in his doctrine,
Beware of the scribes, which love
and to go in long clothing, and love
flauntations in the market-places,
39. And the chief seats in the syn-
agogues, and the uppermost rooms
at feasts: 40. Which devour widows
houses, and for a pretence make
long prayers: these shall receive
greater damnation.

37. Let not these proud Hypocrites de-
ceive you, who by their long Liturgies, and
Ceremonies, and claim of Superiority, do
but cloak their Worldliness, Pride and Oppre-
sion, and are Religious to their greater
Damnation.

41. And Jesus sat over against
the treasury, and beheld how the
K people
people cast money into the treasury: and many that were rich cast in much. 42. And there came a certain poor widow, and she threw in two mites, which make a farthing. 43. And he called unto him his disciples, and faith unto them, Verily I say unto you, that this poor widow hath cast more in, than all they that have cast in the treasury. 44. For all they did cast in of their abundance: but she of her want did cast in all that she had, even all her living.

41. It is no note of self-denying piety, to serve God so liberally of that which the flesh can spare, and which costeth the flesh no denial of its desires, but to serve it with the first, and God with its leavings. 2. God accepteth a willing mind, where wealth and power is wanting.

CHAP. XIII.

1. And as he went out of the temple, one of his disciples faith unto him, Master, see what manner of stones, and what buildings are there. 2. And Jesus answering said unto him, Seest thou these great buildings? there shall not be left one stone upon another, that shall not be thrown down. 3. And as he sat upon the mount of Olives, over against the temple, Peter, and James, and John, and Andrew, asked him privately, 4. Tell us, when shall these things be? and what shall be the sign when all these things shall be fulfilled?

See in Matt. 24. Note, Nature would foreknow even the evil to come.

5. And Jesus answering them, began to say, Take heed left any man deceive you. 6. For many shall come in my name, saying, I am Christ: and shall deceive many.
12. Now the brother shall betray the brother to death, and the father the son: and children shall rise up against their parents, and shall cause them to be put to death.

13. And ye shall be hated of all men for my name's sake: but he that shall endure unto the end, the same shall be saved.

14. But when ye shall see the abomination of desolation, spoken of by Daniel the prophet, standing where it ought not, (let him that readeth, understand) then shall they see that be in Judea flee to the mountains:

15. And let him that is on the housetop, not go down into the housetop, neither enter therein, to take any thing out of his house:

16. And let him that is in the field, not turn back again for to take up his garment:

17. But wo to them that are with child, and to them that give suck in those days.

18. And pray ye that your flight be not in the winter.

19. For in those days shall be affliction, such as was not from the beginning of the creation which God created, unto this time, neither shall be.

20. And except that the Lord had shortened those days, no flesh should be saved: but for the elect's sake, whom he hath chosen, he hath shortened the days.

21. And then if any man shall say to you, Lo, here is Christ, or, Lo, he is there: believe him not.

22. For false Christs and false prophets shall rise, and shall shew signs and wonders, to seduce, if it were possible, even the elect.

23. But take ye heed: behold, I have foretold you all things.

24. But in those days, after that tribulation, the sun shall be darkened, and the moon shall not give her light:

25. And the stars of heaven shall fall, and the powers that are in heaven shall be shaken.

26. And then shall they see the Son of man coming in the clouds with great power and glory.

27. And then shall he send his angels, and shall gather together his elect from the four winds, from the uttermost part of the earth, to the uttermost part of heaven.

28. Now learn a parable of the fig-tree: when her branch is yet tender, and putteth forth leaves, ye know that summer is near:

29. So ye in like manner, when ye shall see these things come to pass, know that it is nigh, even at the doors.

30. Verily I say unto you, that this generation shall not pass, till all these things be done.

31. Heaven and earth shall pass away: but my words shall not pass away.

29, 30. Expect the destruction of Jeru-
salem, when ye see these signs: And doubt
not of my Word: Some now alive shall live
to see it. (It was not 40 years.)

32. But of that day and that
hour knoweth no man, no not the
angels which are in heaven, neither
the Son, but the Father.

32. But these things not coming discerni-
ibly, as effects of natural causes, neither An-
gels, nor Christ as man can foresee just the
day and hour, because they depend on the
merit will of God.

33. Take ye heed, watch and
pray: for ye know not when the
time is.

33. It is kept unknown to you, that you
may watch and pray, and be still prepa-
red.

34. For the Son of man is as a
man taking a far journey, who left
his house, and gave authority to his
servants, and to every man his work, and commanded the porter to
watch. 35. Watch ye there-
fore, (for ye know not when the
master of the house cometh; at
even, or at midnight, or at the
cock-crowing, or in the morn-
ing). 36. Left coming suddenly,
he find you sleeping. 37. And
what I say unto you, I say unto
all, Watch.

34. So long shall Christ be out of sight,
that he will seem to men as one in a far
Country: But see that you do the work
he set you, and watch for his coming in
a wakeful prepared state continually. This
is my charge to you, and to all.

Note. It occasioneth great perplexity to
the Readers here and Matth. 24. that the
destruction of Jerusalem, and the final com-
ing of Christ, seem to be set so near to-
tgether, as if the latter were to come soon after
the former. V. 24. [In those days] or Im-
immediately], which causeth them to expound
the latter part allegorically, as meaning on-
ly the great commotions in Judea: Which
seemeth a very hard exposition of Christ's
coming with his Angels visibly in the
Clouds, and gathering his Elect from the
four ends of Heaven, &c. The apparition to
Constantine, and the powerful deliverance

of the Christians from Heathen rage is left
harsh than this. But 1. Things of greatest
distance may be quickly set together in Writ-
ing; and the questions may occasion the
Conjunction. 2. Christ spake for all Ages
as well as for them. 3. A thousand years
with the Lord is as one day. 4. And it is
undeniable that the Writers gave us not
just all the words that Christ spake. For
1. He spake in Calvar, and they translate
them into Greek. 2. In this and other in-
stances, their words oft differ among them-
selves. 3. They profess to omit much that
Christ said. 4. They place his words oft
in diverse orders. Therefore we must not
gather any thing from a word, or from the
omission of a clause, which contradiceth
the scope of the Text, and the certain
truth.

CHAP. XIV.

1. After two days was the feast
of the passover, and of
 unleavened bread: and the chief
priests and the scribes sought how
they might take him by craft, and
put him to death. 2. But they
sai d, not on the feast-day, lest ther
be an uprore of the people.

2. They feared the peoples reduc-
him.

3. And being in Bethany, in the
house of Simon the leper, as he sit
at meat, there came a woman, havi
ng an alabaster-box of ointment
of spikenard, very precious; an
she brake the box, and poured
on his head.

3. Note. This Simon, it is most like, hav
ing been cured by him of a leprosy, sco
ed his thankfulness in entertaining h
2. Bethany like the villages near Lem
contained a large circuit of ground, it be
usual for Citizens so to set their Coun
houses, and for such grounds to be fo
pulous. 3. It was a Crude of precious Sp
Oyl, shaken and poured out.

4. And there were some that
had indignation within themselves
and said, Why was this waste of o
ointment made? 5. For it might
have been sold for more than thr
hund
hundred pence, and have been given to the poor. And they murmured against her.

6. And Jesus said, Let her alone, why trouble ye her? she hath wrought a good work for me. 7. For ye have the poor always with you, and as long as ye have the poor, ye will have the poor with you. 8. But she hath done what she could; she hath poured it upon my head for my burial.

9. Verily I say unto you, Wherever this gospel shall be preached, there shall this also be said of the daughter of Solomon, How great is she who shewed forth the alabaster box. 10. And Judas Iscariot, one of the twelve, went unto the chief priests, to betray him unto them.

11. And when they heard it, they were glad, and promised to give him money. And he sought how he might conveniently betray him.

12. And the first day of unleavened bread, when they killed the passover, his disciples said unto him, Where wilt thou that we go and prepare, that thou mayest eat the passover? 13. And he sent forth two of his disciples, and said unto them, Go ye into the city, and there shall he meet you a man bearing a pitcher of water: follow him. 14. And wheresoever he shall go in, say ye to the goodman of the house, The Master saith, Where is the guest-chamber, where I shall eat the passover with my disciples? 15. And he will shew you a large upper room furnished and prepared: there make ready for us.

16. And his disciples went forth, and came into the city, and found as he had said unto them: and they made ready the passover.

22. **Note,** Here it is called at once *Bread* and his *Body*: *Bread* naturally, and his *Body* Sacramentally, that is, Representatively and Significantly: For [*it*] is the Relative, and [*Bread*] is the Antecedent: What did Christ Take? *Bread*: What did he *Bless*? *B.*: What did he *Break?* [*it*] What is [*it*] but that before-named *Bread?* Yet by so doing he made it his *Body*. How? As the King maketh a piece of *Wax* to become his *Great Seal*, by which he conveyeth Land, Liberty and Life: Or a piece of *Silver* to be *Money*.

23. And he took the cup, and when he had given thanks, he gave it to them: and they all drank of it. 24. And he laid unto them, This is my blood of the new testament, which is shed for many.

25. By the Cup is meant the Wine.

26. *Note,* It is strange that men, who find that Christ through the Gospel still taught by Parables or Similitudes, (saying, *This* is such a thing, and *That* is such a thing; as the *Seed* is the *Word*, the *Field* is the *World*, the *Reapers are the Angels*, &c.) should force themselves to believe that there is no similitude used here. The Lord deliver his Church from those who turn men that believe not that *Bread* is *Bread*, but made *Christ himself*; while themselves believe not that Christ himself is Christ indeed, but are Inidels.

27. Verily I say unto you, I will drink no more of the fruit of the wine, until that day that I drink it new in the kingdom of God.

28. And when they had sung an hymn, they went out into the mount of Olives.


30. But Peter fainted even unto the cock crowing, though all shall be offended, I will not. 31. And Jesus said unto him, Verily I say unto thee, That this day, even in this hour, before the cock crow twice, thou shalt deny me thrice.

32. **Note,** This is not contrary to or Evangelists, that say [*Before the Cock crow*].

33. For 1. They mean (before Cock's crowing time be past, or before the second Cock crowing.) 2. Writers speak the form of Christ's words, and not always the precise words themselves.

34. But he spake more vehemently, If I should die with thee, I will not deny thee in the Gates of Hell. Likewise also said they all.

35. *Note,* If the Apostles so little knew themselves, what wonder if most Christians know not how bad they are?

36. And they came to a place which was called Gethsemani, and he fell on his knees, and prayed, saying, O Abba, Father, all thy will be done.

37. And he cometh and findeth the
them sleeping, and faith unto Peter, Simon, sleepest thou? couldst not thou watch one hour? 38. Watch ye, and pray, lest ye enter into temptation: the spirit truly is ready, but the flesh is weak.

37. Hast thou strength to die with me, who canst not watch one hour with me? Watching and praying is the means to avoid temptation, and consequently finning and suffering for sin. The Mind and Will, sanctified by God's Spirit, is inclined to duty, but it hath not an absolute Dispositional power over the fleshly weakness and backwardness, but a political only.

39. And again he went away and prayed, and spake the same words. 40. And when he returned, he found them asleep again (for their eyes were heavy) neither wist they what to answer him. 41. And he cometh the third time, and faith unto them, Sleep on now, and take your rest: it is enough, the hour is come; behold, the Son of man is betrayed into the hands of sinners.

40. They were ashamed. 41. Now I have no more use for your watching with me: Take your own course, or rest: My apprehenders are at hand.

42. Rise up, let us go; lo, he that betrayeth me is at hand.

43. And immediately, while he yet spake, cometh Judas, one of the twelve, and with him a great multitude with swords and staves, from the chief priests, and the scribes, and the elders. 44. And he that betrayed him, had given them a token, saying, Whomsoever I shall kiss, that same is he; take him, and lead him away safely. 45. And as soon as he was come, he goeth straightway to him, and faith, Master; master; and kissed him.

46. And they laid their hands on him, and took him. 47. And one of them that stood by, drew a sword, and smote a servant of the high priest, and cut off his ear.

47. Note. Had but one Peter done this rash unwarrentable act against Papias, when they are killing true Christians, as Butchers do Sheep, they would publish to the World, that the whole Party are Seditious Rebels: yea, if any do but speak against their Murders. I mean they have done thus.

48. And Jesus answered and said unto them, Are ye come out as against a thief, with swords and with staves, to take me? 49. I was daily with you in the temple, teaching, and ye took me not: but the Scriptures must be fulfilled.

49. The Scripture foretold all this usage.

50. And they all forsook him and fled. 51. And there followed him a certain young man, having a linen cloth cast about his naked body; and the young men laid hold on him. 52. And he left the linen cloth, and fled from them naked.

50. All the Disciples locally forsook him to save themselves, though not so as totally to desert him with their heart. 51. Being in the night, some young man, either undressed, or raimed out of bed, was come thither.

53. And they led Jesus away to the high priest: and with him were assembled all the chief priests, and the elders, and the scribes.

53. They led Christ as Prisoner to those that sent them to take him, which was the Jew's Church-representative, or Council.

54. And Peter followed him afar off, even into the palace of the high priest: and he sat with the servants, and warmed himself at the fire. 55. And the chief priests, and all the council fought for witnesses against Jesus to put him to death; and found none.

56. For many bare false witnesses against him,
but their witness agreed not together.

55. They first resolve of his Death, and after search for some pretended cause: But their suborned witness spoke not crime en- enough for Death:

57. And there arose certain, and bare false witness against him, say- ing, 58. We heard him say, I will destroy this temple that is made with hands, and within three days I will build another made without hands. 59. But neither so did their witness agree together.

58. Note, We have men seemingly wise now, that would say, Why did Christ speak so unadvisedly as to give occasion to such accusers? But what can be spoken so well, from whence such men will not take occasion of Calumny.

60. And the high priest stood up in the midst, and asked Jesus, saying, Art thou the Christ, the Son of the Blessed? 62. And Jesus said, I am; and ye shall see the Son of man sitting on the right hand of power, and coming in the clouds of heaven.

61. When the high priest could prove nothing against him, he craftily puts a que- tion to him (equal to an ex officio oath) which he knew he would answer, that he might out of his own words accuse him.

63. Then the high priests rent his clothes, and said, What need we any further witnesses? 64. Ye have heard the blasphemy: what think ye? And they all condemned him to be guilty of death.

65. Note, He had been better have rent his heart for his wickedness: Here is Diabolism if it cloathed with the highest presence of holy zeal, by the holy Prelate, and his Confessors. No wonder if the whole Convocation condemn Christ, when such an High-Priest leads them.

65. And some began to spit on him, and to cover his face, and to buffer him, and to say unto him, Prophesie: and the servants did strike him with the palms of their hands.

65. Note, This the Son of God endured for our sins: And doth it be seem us to be tender of suffering abuse?

66. And as Peter was beneath in the palace, there came one of the maids of the high priest. 67. And when the law Peter warming him- self, she looked upon him, and said, And thou also wast with Jesus of Nazareth. 68. But he denied, saying, I know not, neither understand I what thou sayest. And he went out into the porch; and the cock crew.

66. Note, It is dangerous among Persecu- rers to be a friend to Christ. 2. Wonderful that the first Cock did not waken Peter's Conscience, having been so warned! But what will we not do, if God leave us to our selves.

69. And a maid saw him again and began to say to them that stood by, This is one of them. 70. And he denied it again. And a little after, they that stood by said again to Peter, Surely thou art one of them: for thou art a Galilean, and thy speech agreeth threso. 71. But he began to curse and to swear, saying, I know not this man of whom ye speak. 72. And the second time the cock crew.

70. Note, No man is long safe in the mouth of great temptation, if extraor- dinary mercy save him not.

72. And Peter called to mind the word that Jesus said unto him: Before the cock crow twice, thou shalt...
Ch. 15: Christ

St. Mark: condemned. Ch. 15.

11. But the chief priests moved the people, that he should rather release Barabbas unto them. 12. And Pilate answered, and saith again unto them, What will ye then that I shall do unto him whom ye call the king of the Jews? 13. And they cried out again, Crucifie him.

12. Note, The People are but the mouth of the Priests.

14. Then Pilate said unto them, Why, what evil hath he done? And they cried out the more exceedingly, Crucifie him. 15. And so Pilate willing to content the people, released Barabbas unto them, and delivered Jesus, when he had scourged him, to be crucified.

14. Pilate to please the People, and they to please the Priests, all please the Devils, displease God, and undo themselves. And ye by all this God is savoring the World.

16. And the Soldiers led him away into the hall called Pretorium; and they call together the whole band. 17. And they clothed him with purple, and platted a crown of thorns, and put it about his head. 18. And began to salute him, Hail King of the Jews. 19. And they imote him on the head with a reed, and did spit upon him, and bowing their knees, worshipped him. 20. And when they had mocked him, they took off the purple from him, and put his own clothes on him, and led him out to crucifie him.

16. As the Priests are the chief contrivers of the Murder, the Soldiers are fittest for execution; such usually being hardened by blood and wickedness into a destroying inclination, the great executioners of the Devil for the ruine of the World. Alas, mad Sinners, little know you whom you scorn, and how your sport will end at last! Reader, see here what fin is: and what thou and I have deserved, that needed such a Sacrifice.
21. And they compel one Simon a Cyrenian, who passed by, coming out of the country, the father of Alexander and Rufus, to bear his cross. 22. And they bring him unto the place Golgotha, which is, being interpreted, the place of a skull. 23. And they gave him to drink, wine mingled with myrrhe: but he received it not. 24. And when they had crucified him, they parted his garments, casting lots upon them, what every man should take. 25. And it was the third hour, and they crucified him. 26. And the superscription of his accusation was written over, THE KING OF THE JEWS.

See on Mat. 27.
26. Meaning that they put him to death, for proclaiming his Kingdom, (though it was a spiritual one.)

27. And with him they crucifie two thieves; the one on his right hand, and the other on his left. 28. And the scripture was fulfilled, which saith, And he was numbered with the transgressours.

27. Note, Men imputed sin it self to him: God only reputed him a Sacrifice for our sins.

29. And they that passed by, railed on him, wagging their heads, and saying, Ah thou that destroyest the temple, and buildest it in three days, 30. Save thy self, and come down from the cross. 31. Likewise also the chief priests mocking, said among themselves, with the scribes, He saved others, himself he cannot save. 32. Let Christ the king of Israel descend now from the cross, that we may see, and believe. And they that were crucified with him, reviled him.

29. Note, All this tells us what sin is; And when his servants follow him in sufferings, Priests, Soldiers; and Rabble will insult with scorn.

33. And when the sixth hour was come, there was darkness over the whole land, until the ninth hour. 34. And at the ninth hour Jesus cried with a loud voice, saying, Eloi, Eloi, lama sabachthani? which is, being interpreted, My God, my God, why hast thou forsoaken me?

33. Note, Christ was forsaken so far as to be left to the power of Satan's servants, and deprived of life, and to have the sense of God's justice against Man's sin: And this to shew that we deferred to be forsoaken, and to keep us from being utterly forsoaken. But God's love and esteem of him was not abated, but his suffering was meritorious.

35. And some of them that stood by, when they heard it, said, Behold, he calleth Elias. 36. And one ran and filled a spunge full of vinegar, and put it on a reed, and gave him to drink, saying, Let alone; let us see whether Elias will come to take him down.

36. In scorn they still insult.

37. And Jesus cried with a loud voice, and gave up the ghost. 37. Saying, Father, into thy hand I commend my Spirit.

38. And the vail of the temple was rent in twain, from the top to the bottom. 39. And when the centurion which stood over against him, saw that he was cried out, and gave up the ghost, he said, Truly this man was the Son of God.

39. That he died not as other men in that case do.

40. There were also women looking on afar off: among whom was Mary Magdalene, and Mary the mother of James the less, and of Joses, and Salome; 41. Who also, when he was in Galilee, followed him; and ministered unto him; and many other women which came up with him unto Jerusalem.

42. And now when the even was come
And when the sabbath was past, Mary Magdalene, and Mary the mother of James, and Salome, had bought sweet spices, that they might come and anoint him.

And very early in the morning, the first day of the week, they came unto the sepulchre at the rising of the sun.

And they said among themselves, Who shall roll us away the stone from the door of the sepulchre?

(And when they looked, they saw that the stone was rolled away) for it was very great.

The Angel had before done it, and frightened away the soldiers.

And entering into the sepulchre, they saw a young man sitting on the right side, clothed in a long white garment; and they were affrighted.

And he saith unto them, Be not affrighted: ye seek Jesus of Nazareth, which was crucified: he is risen, he is not here: behold the place where they laid him.

See on Job 20. The reconciling of the seeming differences of the Evangelists, about the Apparitions.

But go your way, tell his disciples and Peter, that he goeth before you into Galilee: there shall ye see him, as he said unto you.

And they went quickly, and fled from the sepulchre; for they trembled, and were amazed: neither said they any thing to any man; for they were afraid.

Fear made them silent.

Now when Jesus was risen early on the first day of the week, he appeared first to Mary Magdalene, out of whom he had cast seven devils.

The sepulchre was also sealed and guarded.

Christ’s Burial hath in some sort Sanctified the Grave, to true Believers. We may boldly there lay down these bodies, as still in his power and care that was buried for us.
And he went and told them that had been with him, as they mourned and wept.

She was the first messenger of joy, to the mourning weeping Disciples.

And they, when they had heard that he was alive, and had been seen of her, believed not.

Nor, Christ's Disciples found a great difficulty to believe, his Resurrection; and he took them not at the word.

After that, he appeared in another form unto two of them, as they walked, and went into the country. And they went and told it unto the residue: neither believed they them.

Afterward he appeared unto the eleven as they sat at meat, and upbraided them with their unbelief, and hardness of heart, because they believed not which had seen him after he was risen.

Mark doth but give us a brief touch of some of Christ's appearances, and leaves much recorded by others. Note, unbelief and hardness of heart, are radical sins in us, and of difficult cure. Note, Christ findeth so much of these in us, as to upbraid us with them, as our fault and shame; and directeth us what to blame and resist in our selves.

And he said unto them, Go ye into all the world, and preach the gospel to every creature. He that believeth and is baptized, shall be saved; but he that believeth not, shall be damned.

To all men as far as ye are able. He that upon your Preaching believeth the Gospel, and sincerely giveth up himself in the Baptistical Covenant to God the Father, the Son and the Holy Ghost, by a practised and obedient Trust, and Dedication, shall be forgiven and be saved from sin, from the curse of the Law, from Satan, and from Hell; But thole to whom you Preach who will not believe, and take me for their Saviour, and God for their God, shall be condemned to Hell as refusers of Salvation.

And these signs shall follow them that believe; In my name shall they cast out devils, they shall speak with new tongues, they shall take up serpents, and if they drink any deadly thing, it shall not hurt them; they shall lay hands on the sick, and they shall recover.

And because it cannot be expected that all people believe things so strange and unlikely to nature, upon your bare affirmation, I will by sending down the Holy Ghost, attest your word by these miraculous signs: They that believe, and specially you my Disciples, shall in my name cast out Devils from the Possessed, and make them obey me and confess me: You shall speak in various Languages, which you never learnt. Poyson shall not hurt you, either Serpents outwardly, or taken inwardly: And you shall pray and lay your hands on the sick in my name, and they shall recover. Note, 1. That not every one shall have all these gifts, but some one, and some another; not that you shall use them, when and how you will, but as pleareth the Holy Ghost that giveth them.

So then after the Lord had spoken unto them, he was received up into heaven, and sat on the right hand of God.

Note, His Ascension they beheld, and his Glorification they believed, by the Spirit's revelation.

And they went forth, and preached every where, where the Lord working with them, and confirming the word with signs following. Amen.

And accordingly they began in Jerusalem, and thence went abroad through the Gentile World, where Preaching the Gospel of Christ, (his Person, Life, Doctrine, Sufferings, Resurrection, Ascension, Kingdom, Judgment, Glory and Blessing to his Church,) The Lord by his Grace making their teaching successful, and assisting, and confirming it by the promised Miracles.

The

Chapter I.

Forasmuch as many have taken in hand to set forth in order a declaration of those things which are most surely believed among us,even as they delivered them unto us, which from the beginning were eye-witnesses, and ministers of the word;

1. Divers having published the declaration of History in order of those matters of Faith and Doctrine, which have been done, and are fully believed among us, 2. Even as those men did faithfully deliver them to us, who from the beginning were eye-witnesses of the works of Jesus, and Ministers who attended him, and have preached his word.

3. It seemed good to me also, having had perfect understanding of all things from the very first, to write unto thee in order, most excellent Theophilus,

3. I also thought good to write the like manner in order to thee, most excellent Theophilus, both to confirm what is by others written, and to add, especially in the beginning of the history, what in others is wanting: having myself, by very diligent search, got full notice of these matters from the very first, which others mention not.

4. That thou mightest know the certainty of those things wherein thou hast been instructed;

5. That I may contribute my endeavour to increase thy knowledge, and confirm thy belief of those things concerning Jesus Christ, which thou hast already learned among us.

Here was in the days of Herod the king of Judea, a certain priest named Zacharias, of the course of Abia: and his wife was of the daughters of Aaron, and her name was Elisabeth.

6. And they were both righteous before God, walking in all the commandments and ordinances of the Lord blameless.

6. They were both sincere godly persons, living in true obedience to all the Commandments and ordinances of God, according to the Law and discipline which they were under, without the blot of any gross or scandalous sin.

7. And they had no child, because that Elisabeth was barren, and they both were now well stricken in years. 8. And it came to pass, that while he executed the priest’s office before God in the order of his course. 9. According to the custom of the priest’s office, his lot was to burn incense when he went into the temple of the Lord. 10. And the while multitude of the people were praying without, at the time of incense.

7, 8, 9, 10. Note. The Priest went into the Sanctuary to offer, and the people that while prayed without the Sanctuary, not without the Temple. In imitation of which our Temples usually are built in three parts: The Chancel for the Clergy, the body of the Church for the Laity, and all below the Font for the Catechumens, and suspended, who are no Communicants; (as the outward Court was for Gentiles.)

11. And there appeared unto him an angel of the Lord, standing on the right side of the altar of incense. 12. And when Zacharias saw him, he was troubled, and fear fell

13. But the angel said unto him, Fear not, Zacharias: for thy prayer is heard; and thy wife Elisabeth shall bear thee a son, and thou shalt call his name John.
14. And thou shalt have joy and gladness, and many shall rejoice at his birth.

11, 12, 13, 14. He was born to an austere life, and to martyrdom, yet his birth was joyful, though to such a painful life and death, for the Church's service.

15. For he shall be great in the fight of the Lord, and shall drink neither wine nor strong drink; and he shall be filled with the Holy Ghost, even from his mother's womb.

15. Note. 1. The best men and most useful are greatest in God's sight. 2. Extraordinary denying the flesh agreeeth well with the extraordinary gift of the Spirit. 3. Infants may have the Holy Ghost, before it appeareth.

16. And many of the children of Israel shall he turn to the Lord their God.
16. Note, To turn many by repentance to God, was the effect of the Holy Ghost, and of John's extraordinary worth and work.

17. And he shall go before him in the Spirit and power of Elias, to turn the hearts of the fathers to the children, and the disobedient to the wisdom of the just, to make ready a people prepared for the Lord.

17. He shall be pleased with such fulness of Spirit and Power, to prepare the way for Christ, as Elias had, as is prophesied in Mal. 4. 6. Note, By turning the hearts of the Fathers to the Children, some think is meant turning the tyrannical oppression of Rulers, to fatherly love and lenity to inferiors. But Dr. H. more probably translates it [with the Children.] That is, he shall turn Fathers and Children, old and young. Others say it is but to turn men's minds to the Love of one another, and those that disobey God, to the true wisdom of just men, who obey and trust him.

18. And Zacharias said unto the angel, Whereby shall I know this? for I am an old man, and my wife well stricken in years.
19. And the angel answering said unto him, I am Gabriel, that stand in the presence of God: and am sent to speak unto thee, and to shew thee these glad tidings.
20. And behold, thou shalt be dumb, and not able to speak, until the day that these things shall be performed, because thou believest not my words, which shall be fulfilled in their season.

18, 19, 20. I am one of the many Angels that stand before God, and am sent to tell thee this; and to prove thy unbelief; And to convince thee, for a sign, thou shalt be dumb, etc.

21. And the people waited for Zacharias, and marvelled that he tarried so long in the temple.
22. And when he came out, he could not speak unto them: and they perceived that he had seen a vision in the temple: for he beckened unto them, and remained speechless.

21, 22. Sanctuary. 22. Some Revelation.

23. And it came to pass, that as soon as the days of his ministration were accomplished, he departed to his own house.
23. That Ceremonial service might be done by a dumb man; but so cannot the Gospel Ministration.

24. And after those days his wife Elisabeth conceived, and hid her self five months, saying, 25. Thus hath the Lord dealt with me, in the day wherein he looked on me, to take away my reproach among men.
24, 25. She retired from People's observation and discourse, saying, the Lord hath showed me mercy in taking away my reproach.

26. And in the sixth month the angel Gabriel was sent from God unto
unto a city of Galilee, named Nazareth, 27. To a virgin espoused to a man whose name was Joseph, of the house of David; and the virgin's name was Mary.

14, 15. Not married, but betrothed.

28. And the angel came in unto her, and said, Hail thou that art highly favoured, the Lord is with thee: blessed art thou among women.

28. Rejoice, for thou art highly favoured of the Lord, who maketh thee blessed above all women.

29. And when she saw him, she was troubled at his saying, and cast in her mind what manner of salutation this should be. 30. And the angel said unto her, Fear not, Mary; for thou hast found favour with God. 31. And behold, thou shalt conceive in thy womb, and bring forth a son, and shalt call his name Jesus. 32. He shall be great, and shall be called the Son of the Highest; and the Lord God shall give unto him the throne of his father David.

32, 30, 31, 32. She understood it not. That Glorious Kingdom meant in the promise to David's seed, of which his kingdom was but a type.

33. And he shall reign over the house of Jacob for ever, and of his kingdom there shall be no end.

33. His Kingdom over the Faithful Israel of God, begun in grace, shall be Everlasting in Glory.

34. Then said Mary unto the angel, How shall this be, seeing I know not a man? 35. And the angel answered and said unto her, The holy Ghost shall come upon thee, and the power of the Highest shall overshadow thee: therefore also that holy thing which shall be born of thee, shall be called the Son of God.

34, 35. This shall be done, without Man, by the Holy Ghost, and the overshadowing power of God, and therefore he shall be properly called the Son of God.

N. 1. Though this gives us the most known reason, why Christ is called the Son of God in Scripture, it is not said to be the only reason, excluding his eternal Generation. 2. Yet Christ oft calleth himself, the Son of Man, which signifies no more, but that he was truly a Man, and born of a Woman.

36. And behold, thy cousin Elizabeth, she hath also conceived a son in her old age: and this is the sixth month with her, who was called barren. 37. For with God nothing shall be impossible.

36, 37. Note. 1. Though Elizabeth was of the Tribe of Aaron, and Mary of the Tribe of Judah, they were a kin by Elizabeth's Mother marrying a Levite.

2. Nothing should seem difficult to faith, when it is known to be God's will and word.

38. And Mary said, Behold the handmaid of the Lord, be it unto me according to thy word.

38. Amen! Let thy word come to pass: (They are the expression of Mary's faith and hope.)

38. And the angel departed from her. 39. And Mary arose in those days, and went into the hill country with haste, into a city of Judah, 40. And entered into the house of Zacharias, and saluted Elisabeth.

38, 39, 40. The Angel's words made her go see how it was with Elisabeth.

41. And it came to pass, that when Elisabeth heard the salutation of Mary, the babe leaped in her womb: and Elisabeth was filled with the holy Ghost. 42. And she spake out with a loud voice, and said, Blessed art thou among women, and blessed is the fruit of thy womb. 43. And whence is this to me, that the mother of my Lord should come to me? 44. For lo, asoon as the voice of thy salutation sounded in mine ears, the babe leaped in my womb for joy.

45. And
45. And blessed is she that believed: for there shall be a performance of those things which were told her from the Lord.

46. And Mary said, My soul doth magnify the Lord. 47. And my spirit hath rejoiced in God my Saviour. 48. For he hath regarded the low estate of his handmaid: for behold, from henceforth all generations shall call me blessed.

48, 47, 48. Mary also filled with the Spirit, speaks these words of praise to God; My Soul, etc. 48. He hath raised me highest who was one of the lowest.

49. For he that is mighty hath done to me great things, and holy is his name. 50. And his mercy is on them that fear him, from generation to generation.

49, 50. Mercy to all that fear God and their posterity, is the great name or notification of the most Holy God to man.

51. He hath shewed strength with his arm, he hath scattered the proud, in the imagination of their hearts. 52. He hath put down the mighty from their seats, and exalted them of low degree. 53. He hath filled the hungry with good things, and the rich he hath sent empty away.

51, 52, 53. He hath shewed that it is he that is Almighty, by scattering the proud in their own vain imaginations; And by casting down the high, and exalting the low; and by satisfying the needy, and bringing the prosperous to distress.

54. He hath holpen his servant Israel in remembrance of his mercy.

55. As he spake to our fathers, to Abraham and to his seed for ever.

54, 55. The promises, which he made to Abraham and his Seed, he is now performing in their proper season, for the favoring of all the believing seed: The mercy which promised it, is now performing it.

56. And Mary abode with her about three months, and returned to her own house.

56. Note. It was many months between Mary’s Spousal to Joseph, and their Marriage.

57. Now Elizabeth’s full time came, that she should be delivered; and she brought forth a son. 58. And her neighbours, and her cousins heard how the Lord had shewn great mercy upon her; and they rejoiced with her.

57, 58. In giving a son to one so old.

59. And it came to pass, that on the eighth day they came to circumcise the child; and they called him Zacharias, after the name of his father. 60. And his mother answered and said, Not so; but he shall be called John. 61. And they said unto her. There is none of thy kindred that is called by this name. 62. And they made signs to his father, how he would have him called. 63. And he asked for a writing-table, and wrote, saying, His name is John. And they marveled all.

59, 60, 61, 62. Note. They would have the name keep the memorial of Ancestor. 63. By signs.

64. And his mouth was opened immediately, and his tongue loosed, and he spake, and praised God.

65. And fear came on all that dwelt round about them: and all these sayings were noised abroad through-out all the hill-country of Judea.

66. And all they that heard them, laid them up in their hearts saying, What manner of child shall this be? And the hand of the Lord was with him.

64, 65, 66. Is raised in all the Countrey; great expectations, what this Child would prove: And God did extraordinarily bless him.
67. And his father Zacharias was filled with the holy Ghost, and prophesied, saying, 68. Blessed be the Lord God of Israel, for he hath visited and redeemed his people, 69. And hath raised up an horn of salvation for us, in the house of his servant David; 70. As he spake by the mouth of his holy prophets, which have been since the world began; 71. That we should be saved from our enemies, and from the hand of all that hate us.

67, 68, 69, 70, 71. Spake by inspiration. Here, Christ was prophesied of from the beginning of the World, after Adam's fall: The God's Spirit in him understood just what manner of Saviour Christ would be, and what sort of deliverance from enemies he would bring (by the destruction of the Jew and calling the Gentiles); we know for the Zachary, Elizabeth and Mary understood this while they thus prophesied.

72. To perform the mercy promised to our fathers, and to remember his holy covenant: 73. The oath which he swore to our father Abraham, 74. That he would grant unto us, that we—being delivered out of the hands of our enemies, might serve him without fear, 75. In holiness and righteousness before him, all the days of our life.

73, 74, 75. That the Messiah delivering us from all our enemies, spiritual and temporal, may serve him, not hindered by them.

Not, H. lines, and Righteousness are the sum of God's acceptable service.

Not, The chief benefit of deliverance from our enemies, is, that we freely and peaceably serve God.

76. And thou child shalt be called the prophet of the Highest: for thou shalt go before the face of the Lord, to prepare his ways; 77. To give knowledge of salvation unto his people, by the remission of their sins.

76, 77. Thou shalt be a Prophet of God, to go before Christ, to prepare men to receive him, by calling them to repentance, proclaiming that a Saviour is come to save his people, by pardoning their sins.

78. Through the tender mercy of our God; whereby the day-spring from on high hath visited us, 79. To give light to them that sit in darkness, and in the shadow of death, to guide our feet into the way of peace.

78, 79. The tender mercy of God, having given us from Heaven, the sun of heavenly Light to visit us, 79. Even to them that lived in the darkness of sin and misery, and to guide us into the way of life and happiness.

80. And the child grew, and waxed strong in spirit, and was in the deserts till the day of his shewing unto Israel.

80. And John, with his increase of age and strength, grewed great strength of the Spirit of God in him, and he dwelt in the wilderness (or, say some, in the hill Court, of Judea); (bred up in a life of holiness, and mortification,) till the time that he set upon his publick ministry, of preaching the Kingdom of Messiah, and repentance, and baptizing.
14. In Christ the Redeemer God will be glorified in Heaven, Peace will be made on Earth, by this great Reconciler, and God's Love or Benevolence will be towards men.

Or, [Glory be to God in the Heavens through the Redeemer, and Reconciliation, or Peace, on Earth to men that are the objects of God's good will.]

9. Is it necessary or lawful to keep a day as holy in remembrance of Christ's birth? Ans. If any should appoint a weekly day for it, it would be an usurping of the same power, that hath already separated a weekly day for it, it would be an usurping of the same power that hath already separated a weekly day for commemorating the work of Redemption, though especially for Christ's Redemption: And it would seem an accusing Christ's Law of insufficiency. 2. And if any should make it a yearly day's observance necessary to the universal Church, 1. They would usurp a power, not given to any, (to make Law for all the Church.) 2. And they would accuse Christ's Law as imperfect.

But if particular Christians, Churches, or Countries, voluntarily agree to celebrate yearly, the memorial of Christ's birth, it is but what almost all the Churches on earth do, and have done at least 300 years; And it is lawful to keep a yearly day of remembrance for any great deliverance, or mercy to the Church, even in an Apostle. But if any Christian think that it is an unlawful addition to the institution of the Lord's day, which God for a purpose for our commemorating the whole work of Redemption, such should not be forced to keep it against their Consciences; but must avoid affronting them that do.

5. And it came to pass, as the angels were gone away from them into heaven, the shepherds said one to another, Let us now go even unto Bethlehem, and see this thing which is come to pass, which the Lord hath made known unto us.

16. And they came with haste, and found Mary and Joseph, and the babe lying in a manger. 17. And when they had seen it, they made known abroad the saying which they had heard concerning this child. 18. And all they that heard it wondered at those things which were told them concerning this child.
and at those things which were told them by the Shepherds. 19. For Mary kept all these things, and pondered them in her heart.
20. And the Shepherds returned, glorifying and praising God for all the things that they had heard and seen, as it was told unto them.

17, 18. In a Stable. 19. Regard of them, as tending to what was promised. 20. Angels are not first sent to Princes but to poor Shepherds, who must preach Christ.

21. And when eight days were accomplished for the circumcising of the child, his name was called Jesus, which was so named of the angel before he was conceived in the womb.

21. Jesus is a Saviour; He was circumcised as a bond to keep the Law of Moses, not as a seal of pardon of sin to him.

22. And when the days of her purification, according to the law of Moses, were accomplished, they brought him to Jerusalem, to present him to the Lord.

22. To the Priest, as in Num. 3:12, 146.

23. (As it is written in the law of the Lord, Every male that openeth the womb shall be called holy to the Lord), 24. And to offer a sacrifice according to that which is said in the Law of the Lord, A pair of turtle doves, or two young pigeons.


25. And behold, there was a man in Jerusalem, whose name was Simeon; and the same man was just and devout, waiting for the consolation of Israel: and the Holy Ghost was upon him. 26. And it was revealed unto him by the Holy Ghost, that he should not see death before he had seen the Lord's Christ.

25. Note: The Messiah was much expected in that time.

Note, They are just and devout men, that God specially favoureth by extraordinary gifts of His Spirit.

27. And he came by the Spirit into the temple: and when the parents brought in the child Jesus, to do for him after the custom of the law, 28. Then took he him up in his arms, and blessed God, and said, 29. Lord, now lettest thou thy servant depart in peace, according to thy word. 30. For mine eyes have seen thy salvation:

31. Which thou hast prepared before the face of all people:

32. A light to lighten the Gentiles, and the glory of thy people Israel.

27, 28, 29, 30, 31. Praised God, saying, Now thou hast performed thy word, by letting me see to see Christ, let me die in peace as soon as it pleased thee: For I have seen the Saviour, whom thou hast appointed to be a light to the Gentile World; to lead them into the way of Faith and Righteousness to thee, and to be the honour of the Jews, of whom he is born after the flesh, but the special glory of all that by Faith receive him.

33. And Joseph and his mother marvelled at those things which were spoken of him. 34. And Simeon blessed them, and said unto Mary his mother, Behold, this child is set for the fall and rising again of many in Israel; and for a sign which shall be spoken against:

33, 34. Hes shall prove eventually, a stumbling-block, on which many Israelites shall fall to their destruction, and the chief Corner Stone, on which Believers shall be built up to Salvation; and the rock and obloquy of Men.

35. (yea, a sword shall pierce through thy own soul also,) that the thoughts of many hearts may be revealed.

35. Yea thou shalt bear a deep part in sufferings by grief of heart; and Men, in these Trials, shall shew what they are, even the different State of their fatter Thoughts. 26. And
36. And there was one Anna a prophetess, the daughter of Phanuel, of the tribe of Asher; she was of a great age, and had lived with an husband seven years from her virginity: 37. And she was a widow of about fourscore and four years: which departed not from the temple, but served God with fasting and prayers night and day.

36, 37. She kept close to the Temple: Worship, and was constant in the duties of Fasting, Mortification and Prayer.

Note, It is not proved that she deft aed all outward calling or hour in the World, on pretence of Religion; while she was able for it: And if it be done but when age or sickness disableth one, it is lawful, and well.

Note, Some think Fasting unfit for age and weakness: But digestion being then weaker, and most dying by that suffocation of crudities, and not by mere defect of nutrimental matter, moderate Fasting may be fit for the aged, as well as for the young.

Note, She was not of the sick mind of the prophaned nominal Christians, that cannot abide long Prayers, and Religious frie ned.

38. And she coming in that instant, gave thanks likewise unto the Lord, and spake of him to all them that looked for redemption in Jerusalem.

38. She was inspired then to come in, and to Prophesy of Christ, and declare him to the People, that look’d for the Messiah.

39. And when they had performed all things according to the law of the Lord, they returned into Galilee, to their own city Nazareth. 40. And the child grew and waxed strong in spirit, filled with wisdom; and the grace of God was upon him.

39, 40. Q. What increase of Spiritual strength was Christ capable of, and what greater fullness of Wisdom and Grace? Ans. His Divine nature was capable of no increase: But the humane was capable, of increase of bodily nature and strength. 42. Could he see more objects, than he saw at first? 43. Could he actual knowing them by that sight? 44. Could he improving them to holy use, as known which he did not in Infancy? 5. Of doing many good works, which he could not do in Infancy. 6. And of the increase of such habits, by all these acts as are acquired by them. As Adam when new Created had perfections of faculties, but not knowledge of all the Creatures before he saw them, nor the full extent of improvement of them, nor the perfect habit of such use, as it is distinct from the faculties perfection.

41. Now his parents went to Jerusalem every year at the feast of the passover. 42. And when he was twelve year old, they went up to Jerusalem, after the custom of the feast. 43. And when they had fulfilled the days, as they returned, the child Jesus tarried behind in Jerusalem; and Joseph and his mother knew not of it. 44. But they supposing him to have been in the company, went a days journey, and they found him among the kinsfolk and acquaintance.

41, 42, 43, 44. Note, It may seem an unnatural neglect of a Child: But they had found him to manlike in all other matters that they trusted him with himself.

45. And when they found him not, they turned back again to Jerusalem, seeking him. 46. And it came to pass, that after three days they found him in the temple, sitting in the midst of the doctors both hearing them, and asking them questions.

45, 46. Note, Christ himself disdain not to hear the Jewish Doctors, and to ask them Questions.

47. And all that heard him were astonished at his understanding and answers. 48. And when they saw him, they were amazed: and his mother said unto him, Son, why hast thou thus dealt with us? Behold, thy father and I have sought thee sorrowing.
Ch. 3. John the Baptist St. Luke in the Wilderness. Ch. 3.

Chap. III.

1. Now in the fifteenth year of the reign of Tiberius Cesar, Pontius Pilate being governor of Judea, and Herod being tetrarch of Galilee; and his brother Philip tetrarch of Ituraea, and of the region of Trachonitis, and Lysanias the tetrarch of Abilene; 2. Annas and Caiaphas being the high priests, the word of God came unto John the son of Zacharias in the wilderness.

1, 2. Note; A Tetrarch is the Governor of the fourth part of a Province, or large Country. Whether Annas and Caiaphas were both High Priests (by corruption) at once, or exercised it by turns; or being yearly chosen, one had it in one part of the year, and the other succeeded him; or whether Annas is so called for his power with, or over the High Priest by affinity and interest, or whether Annas though so called, had another sort of Government distinct from the Priesthood, Expositors are not agreed. But it's certain, that the High Priesthood was greatly corrupted, and usually bought of the Romans.

3. And he came into all the country about Jordan, preaching the baptism of repentance for the remission of sins;

3. Preaching Pardon to all true Penitents, and telling them that publick deliverance from their National Calamity was at hand to be offered them, if they would prepare for it by Repentance.

4. As it is written in the book of the words of Elias the prophet, saying. The Voice of one crying in the wilderness, Prepare ye the way of the Lord, make his paths straight. 5. Every valley shall be filled, and every mountain and hill shall be brought low; and the crooked shall be made straight, and the rough ways shall be made smooth; 6. And all flesh shall see the salvation of God.

4, 6. Prepare ye the way of the Lord, make his paths straight. 5. Every valley shall be filled, and every mountain and hill shall be brought low; and the crooked shall be made straight, and the rough ways shall be made smooth; 6. And all flesh shall see the salvation of God.

4, 5, 6. Prepare ye the way of the Lord, make his paths straight. 5. Every valley shall be filled, and every mountain and hill shall be brought low; and the crooked shall be made straight, and the rough ways shall be made smooth; 6. And all flesh shall see the salvation of God.
humble and the oppressed, and take down
the proud and the oppressors, and will bring
in justice and Reformation into an unright-
eous, wicked World; and the Saviour of
the World shall appear, and his Salvation
be proclaimed and wrought throughout the
Earth.

7. Then said he to the multitude
that came forth to be baptized of
him, O generation of vipers, who
hath warned you to flee from the
wrath to come? 8. Bring forth
therefore fruits worthy of repen-
tance, and begin not to say within
your selves, We have Abraham to
our father: for I say unto you, that
God is able of these stones to raise
up children unto Abraham.

7, 8. Do you think to escape the wrath
that is coming upon you by an Hypocritical
Shew that you truly repent by your reformed
lives, and presume not on your being
Abraham's Seed: For God, that can make
Men of Stones, can of the Gentiles raise
a Seed of Believers to Abraham.

9. And now also the ax is laid
unto the root of the trees: every
tree therefore which bringeth not
forth good fruit, is hewn down and
cast into the fire.

9. God is entering into judgment with
you, and will cut down wicked and fruit-
less Hypocrites for the fire.

10. And the people asked him,
saying, What shall we do then?
11. He answered and said unto
them, He that hath two coats, let
him impart to him that hath none;
and he that hath meat, let him do
likewise.

10, 11. Love others as your selves, and
see them not suffer in want, while you have
supply for them, and can spare it from
your plenty: Prefer their necessity before
your fulness of superfluity.

12. Then came also publicanes
to be baptized, and said unto him,
Mastcr, what shall we do? 13. And
he said unto them, Exact no more
then that which is appointed you.

12, 13. Excise, or Tax-gatherers.
14. And the soldiers likewise
 demanded of him, saying, An
what shall we do? And he said:
unto them, Do violence to no man
neither accuse any falsely, and
content with your wages.

14. Live not as Sordid us use to do, I
violence to the poor people that cannot
sift them, and by false accusing, and
robbing, and plundering.

Note: He meaneth not that it is enough
to Salvation, to amend the crimes of th
lives, without a renewed, holy heart; b
that this also must be done.

15. And as the people were
expectation, and all men muted
their hearts of John, whether
were the Christ or not; 16. Jul
answered saying unto them: a
I indeed baptize you with water;
but one mightier than I cometh,
the latchet of whose shoes I am
worthy to untie: he shall bap-
tize you with the holy Ghost, a
with fire.

15, 16. See on Matth. 3. Note: The gi
and peculiar work and notification of Christ
was his sending the Holy Ghost on his
disciples.

17. Whose fin is in his han
and he will throughly purge
floor, and will gather the wh
into his garner; but the chaff
will burn with fire unquench
ble. 18. And many other thin
ing his exhortation preached
f to the people.

17, 18. Who will winnow you thor
ly, and will gather and save all true Bo
vers, and burn the Unbelievers in fire
quenchable.

Note: Christ, that is a Saviour, is th
vacc destroyer of his obstinate Enemies.

19. But Herod the tetra
being reproved by him, for He
dias his brother Philip's wife,
for all the evils which Herod
done, 20. Added yet this above
that he shut up John in prison.
which was the son of Er, 29. Which
was the son of Jofe, which was the
son of Eliazer, which was the son of
Jorim, which was the son of Matthat,
which was the son of Levi, 30. Which
the son of Simeon, which was the son
of Juda, which was the son of Joseph,
which was the son of Jonan, which
was the son of Eliakim, 31. Which
was the son of Melea, which was
the son of Menan, which was the son
of Matthew, which was the son of
Nathan, which was the son of David,
32. Which was the son of Jesse, which
was the son of Obed, which was the
son of Booz, which was the son of Sal-
mon, which was the son of Nafton,
33. Which was the son of Aminadab,
which was the son of Aram, which
was the son of Esrom, which was the
son of Phares, which was the
son of Juda, 34. Which was the
son of Jacob, which was the
son of Ilaac, which was the son of
Abraham, which was the son
of Thara, which was the son of Na-
chor, 35. Which was the son of Saruch, which was the son of Rag-
aus, which was the son of Phale,
which was the son of Heber, which
was the son of Sala, 36. Which was
the son of Cainan, which was the son
of Arphaxad, which was the son
of Sem, which was the son of Noe,
which was the son of Lamech, 37.
Which was the son of Mathutafar,
which was the son of Enoch, which
was the son of Jared, which was the
son of Maleleel, which was the
son of Cainan, 38. Which was the
son of Enos, which was the son of
Seth, which was the son of Adam,
which was the son of God.

Ch. 3. Christ's

19, 20, N. 10. John would not forbear the
duty of his office in reproving
a wicked King to save his liberty or life.

2. To implou and persecute his reposer,
as wicked in Herod above all his former
wickedness.

21. Now when all the people
were baptized, it came to pass,
that Jesus also being baptized, and pray-
ing the heaven was opened: 22.
And the holy Ghost descended in
a bodily shape like a dove upon him,
and a voice came from heaven,
which said, Thou art my beloved
Son, in thee am I well pleased.

21, 22. Note; Baptism, with his own
Prayer, were the means thus miraculously
approved by God, in which he will bear
witness to his Son from Heaven.

N. 2. The descent of the Holy-Ghost on
Chait, with God's vocal Testimony, was a
queen-nesture of him in the office of the
Chief of our Salvation, who was to mark
out his Soldiers with the same gift of the
Holy-Ghost, and his adopting word.

23. And Jesus himself began to be
about thirty years of age, being
(as was supposed) the son of
Joseph, which was the son of Heli,
24. Which was the son of Matthea,
which was the son of Levi, which
was the son of Melchisi, which was
the son of Janna, which was the son
of Joseph, 25. Which was the son
of Matthew, which was the son of
Amos, which was the son of Naum,
which was the son of Eli, which
was the son of Nagge, 26. Which
was the son of Math, which was
the son of Mattathias, which was the
son of Semel, which was the son of
Joseph, which was the son of Judah,
27. Which was the son of Joanna,
which was the son of Rebecca,
which was the son of Zorobabel,
which was the son of Salathiel,
which was the son of Ofarabah,
which was the son of Melchisi,
which was the son of Addi, which
was the son of Cofam, which
was the son of Elmodam,
And Jesus being full of the Holy Ghost, returned from Jordan, and was led by the Spirit into the wilderness. 2. Being forty days tempted of the devil; and in those days he did eat nothing; and when they were ended, he afterward hungered. 3. And the devil said unto him, If thou be the Son of God, command this stone that it be made bread. 4. And Jesus answered him, saying, It is written, That man shall not live by bread alone, but by every word of God. 5. And the devil taking him up into an high mountain, showed unto him all the kingdoms of the world in a moment of time. 6. And the devil said unto him, All this power will I give thee, and the glory of them; for that is delivered unto me, and to whomsoever I will, I give it. 7. If thou therefore wilt worship me, all shall be thine. 8. And Jesus answered and said unto him, Get thee behind me, Satan: for it is written, Thou shalt worship the Lord thy God, and him only shalt thou serve.

9. And he brought him to Jerusalem, and set him upon a pinnacle of the temple, and said unto him, If thou be the Son of God, cast thyself down from hence. 10. For it is written, He shall give his angels charge over thee, to keep thee. 11. And in their hands they shall bear thee up, lest at any time thou dash thy foot against a stone. 12. And Jesus answering, said unto him, It is said, Thou shalt not tempt the Lord thy God.

9, 10, 11, 12. Note, Satan useth to tempt by perverted Scripture, yet it is by right expounded Scripture, that he must be repelled.

9. How did the Writers know these secret things? And Christ told them to his Disciples (though that be not written).

13. And when the devil had ended all the temptation, he departed from him for a season.

13. Luke reciteth them not in the same order with Matthew, but the same things.

Note, Christ's Victory over the Temptation was part of his saving work, and to prepare for our Victory.

14. And Jesus returned in the power of the Spirit into Galilee: and there went out a fame of him through all the region round about.

14. Note, Though the Constitution of Christ's Person was by the Divine Nature o the second in the Trinity, yet the Scripture usually ascribeth his works to the operation of the Holy Ghost in him.

15. And he taught in their synagogues, being glorified of all.

16. And he came to Nazareth, where he had been brought up and, as his custom was, he went into the synagogue on the sabbath day, and stood up for to read.

15, 16. Note, Christ separated not from the Jews corrupt Church.

17. And there was delivered unto him the book of the prophet Esias; and when he had opened the book, he found the place where...
it was written, 18. The spirit of the Lord is upon me, because he hath anointed me to preach the gospel to the poor, he hath sent me to heal the broken-hearted, to preach deliverance to the captives, and recovering of sight to the blind, to set at liberty them that are bruised, 19. To preach the acceptable year of the Lord.

17, 18, 19. Note; He chose a text that described his own office, and applied it.

20. And he closed the book, and gave it again to the minister, and sat down: and the eyes of all them that were in the synagogue were fastened on him. 21. And he began to say unto them, This day is this scripture fulfilled in your ears.

20, 21. Note; This instance proveth it not necessary to sit in preaching; but lawful, where custom or circumstances forbid it not.

22. And all bare him witness, and wondered at the gracious words which proceeded out of his mouth. And they said, Is not this Joseph’s son?

22. They applauded his preaching, but undervalued him for being known to be their neighbour’s son.

23. And he said unto them, Ye will surely say unto me this proverb, Physician, heal thyself: whatsoever we have heard done in Capernaum, do also here in thy country.

23. As a Physician must first heal himself, so do thou do thy miracles here among thy kindred and neighbours.

24. And he said, Verily, I say unto you, No prophet is accepted in his own country.

24. God can cause him to be accepted; but as he worketh ordinarily by means, familiarity breeds contempt.

25. But I tell you of a truth, many widows were in Israel in the days of Elias, when the heaven was shut up three years and six months, when great famine was throughout all the land: 26. But unto none of them was Elias sent, save unto Sarepta, a city of Sidon, unto a woman that was a widow. 27. And many lepers were in Israel in the time of Elisha the prophet: and none of them was cleansed, saving Naaman the Syrian.

25, 26, 27. Prophets cure not all that are diseased: You shall not see miracles, nor be favored, for being my neighbours, if you be not believers; and familiarity and prejudice makest fewer of you believe, than of others.

28. And all they in the synagogue, when they heard these things, were filled with wrath. 29. And rose up, and thrust him out of the city, and led him unto the brow of the hill (whereon their city was built) that they might cast him down headlong.

28, 29. Note; They that applauded his preaching, when the application grated on them, would have killed him; even the Nazarite neighbours that hated him not heretofore.

30. But he passing through the midst of them, went his way: 31. And came down to Capernaum, a city of Galilee, and taught them on the sabbath-days. 32. And they were astonish’d at his doctrine: for his word was with power.

30, 31, 32. By miracle, unhurt.

33. And in the synagogue there was a man which had a spirit of an unclean devil, and cried out with a loud voice, 34. Saying, Let us alone; what have we to do with thee, thou Jesus of Nazareth? art thou come to destroy us? I know thee who thou art; the holy one of God.

33, 34. Christ’s power over devils forced this confusion.

35. And Jesus rebuked him, saying,

Ch. 5.

ing. Hold thy peace, and come out of him. And when the devil had thrown him in the mids, he came out of him, and hurt him not. 35. And they were all amazed, and spake among themselves, saying, What a word is this? for with authority and power he commandeth the unclean spirits, and they come out. 36. And the fame of him went out into every place of the country round about.

35, 36, 37. Christ specially cured the distemper, that the Devils caused, to show that he came to conquer Satan, and save men from his power.

38. And he arose out of the synagogue, and entered into Simon's house: and Simon's wife's mother was taken with a great fever; and they besought him for her. 39. And he stood over her, and rebuked the fever, and it left her. And immediately he arose and ministered unto them.

38, 39. Note; We have still the same Physician.

40. Now when the sun was setting, all they that had any sick with divers diseases, brought them unto him: and he laid his hands on every one of them, and healed them. 41. And devils also came out of many, crying out, and saying, Thou art Christ, the Son of God. And he rebuking them suffered them not to speak: for they knew that he was Christ.

40, 41. Experience made them believe that he could heal them.

42. And when it was day, he departed, and went into a desert place: and the people sought him, and came unto him, and stayed him, that he should not depart from them. 43. And he said unto them, I must preach the kingdom of God to other cities also: for therefore am I sent. 44. And he preached in the synagogues of Galilee.

42, 43. Note; Preaching the Gospel was his great business, to the belief of which, his Miracles were but means subservient.

CHAP. V.

1. And it came to pass, that as the people pressed upon him to hear the word of God, he stood by the lake of Gennesaret.

2. And saw two ships standing by the lake: but the fishermen were gone out of them, and were washing their nets. 3. And he entered into one of the ships, which was Simon's, and prayed him that he would thrust out a little from the land: and he sat down, and taught the people out of the ship.

1, 2, 3. That he might not be crowded.

4. Now when he had left speaking, he said unto Simon, Launch out into the deep, and let down your nets for a draught. 5. And Simon answering said unto him, Master, we have toiled all the night, and have taken nothing: nevertheless at thy word I will let down the net. 6. And when they had this done, they enclosed a great multitude of fishes; and their net brake. 7. And they beckoned unto their partners which were in the other ship, that they should come and help them. And they came and filled both the ships, so that they began to sink.

4, 5, 6, 7. Note; The Sea, and Earth, and all therein are at Christ's command.

8. When Simon Peter saw it, he fell down at Jesus' knees, saying, Depart from me; for I am a sinful man, O Lord. 9. For I was full, and all that were with him, at the draught of the fishes which they had taken: 10. And so was also James and John the sons of Zebedee, which were partners with Simon. And Jesus said unto Simon,
Ch. 5. Leprosie cured.


men, Fear not; from henceforth thou shalt catch men.

8, 9, 10. Note; The miracle and danger made him afraid.

11. And when they had brought their ships to land, they forsook all, and followed him.

11. Note; It was not only by his base Command (Follow me;) but by this miracle that they were moved.

12. And it came to pass, when he was in a certain city, behold, a man full of leprosies: who seeing Jesus, fell on his face, and besought him, saying, Lord, if thou wilt, thou canst make me clean. 13. And he put forth his hand, and touched him, saying, I will; be thou clean. And immediately the leprosies departed from him. 14. And he charged him to tell no man: but go and shew thyself to the priest, and offer for thy cleansing, according as Moses commanded, for a testimony unto them.

12, 13, 14. Note; A miracle that the priests themselves were to have notice of. See Matt. 8.

15. But so much the more went there a fame abroad of him: and great multitudes came together to hear, and to be healed by him of their infirmities. 16. And he withdrew himself into the wilderness, and prayed. 17. And it came to pass on a certain day, as he was teaching, that there were Pharisees and doctors of the law sitting by, which were come out of every town of Galilee, and Judea, and Jerusalem: and the power of the Lord was present to heal them. 18. And behold, men brought in a bed a man which was taken with the palsy: and they sought means to bring him in, and to lay him before him. 19. And when they could not find by what way they might bring him in, because of the multitude, they went upon the house-top, and let him down through the tiling with his couch, into the midst before Jesus.

15, 16, 17, 18, 19. Note; O that we were all as diligent and believing for the healing of our souls!

20. And when they saw their faith, he said unto him, Man, thy sins are forgiven thee. 21. And the scribes and the Pharisees began to reason, saying, Who is this which speaketh blasphemies? Who can forgive sins, but God alone? 22. But when Jesus perceived their thoughts, he answereth them of the same, saying, What reason ye in your hearts? 23. Whether is easier to say, Thy sins be forgiven thee, or to say, Rise up and walk? 20, 21, 22, 23. To forgive the punishment, is to forgive the sin; which you shall see I have power to do.

24. But that ye may know that the Son of man hath power upon earth to forgive sins, (he said unto the sick of the palsy) I say unto thee, Arise, and take up thy couch, and go into thine house.

25. And immediately he rose up before them, and took up that whereon he lay, and departed to his own house, glorifying God. 26. And they were all amazed, and they glorified God, and were filled with fear, saying, We have seen strange things to day.

24, 25, 26. The Glory of all great things, is due only to God, whoever is the Agent.

27. And after these things he went forth, and saw a publican named Levi, sitting at the receipt of custom: and he said unto him, Follow me. 28. And he left all, rose up, and followed him.

27, 28. Levi is Matthew.

29. And Levi made him a great feast in his own house: and there was
was a great company of publicanes, and of others that sat down with them. 30. But their scribes and Pharisees murmured against his disciples, saying, Why do ye eat and drink with publicanes and sinners? 31. And Jesus answering, said unto them, They that are whole need not a physician: but they that are sick.

29, 30, 31. Note; It is none of the meaning of God's Law, to be against Charity, or man's good, but to keep us from encouraging evil.

32. I came not to call the righteous, but sinners to repentance.

32. They are Sinners that need me for a Saviour, and the unconverted that need conversion.

33. And they said unto him, Why do the disciples of John fast often, and make prayers, and likewise the disciples of the Pharisees; but thinke eat and drink?

33. The Disciples of John, and the Pharisees, used more strictness in tasks of fasting, and making prayers, and in bodily austerities, than Christ's Disciples did.

34. And he said unto them, Can ye make the children of the bride-chamber fast, while the bridegroom is with them? 35. But the days will come, when the bridegroom shall be taken away from them, and then shall they fast in those days.

34, 35. Then shall they have days of fasts.

36. And he spake also a parable unto them, No man putteth a piece of a new garment upon an old: if otherwise, then both the new maketh a rent, and the piece that was taken out of the new, agreeth not with the old. 37. And no man putteth new wine into old bottles; else the new wine will burst the bottles, and be spilled, and the bottles shall perish. 38. But new wine must be put into new bottles; and both are preserved.

36, 37, 38. Doctrines and Precepts must be suited to men's capacity. See Matthew 9.

39. No man also having drunk old wine, straightway desireth new; for he faileth. The old is better.

39. They that have been used to a freer life, will not suddenly like austerities.

CHAP. VI.

1. And it came to pass on the second sabbath after the first, that he went through the corn-fields: and his disciples plucked the ears of corn, and did eat, rubbing them in their hands. 2. And certain of the Pharisees said unto them, Why do ye that which is not lawful to do on the sabbath-days?

1, 2. The reason of the name of the second Sabbath, after the first, is doubtful to us that live at this distance. Many Conjectures there be. Some, that it is the last day of unleavened bread; others, that it is the day of Pentecost, &c.

3. And Jesus answering them, said, Have ye not read so much as this, what David did, when himself was an hungry, and they which were with him: 4. How he went into the house of God, and did take and eat the shew-bread, and gave also to them that were with him, which is not lawful to eat, but for the priests alone?

3, 4. Hypocrites will be stricter than Christ, but it is when they err, or are strict in evil, or in shadows against the greater things.

5. And he said unto them, That the Son of man is Lord also of the sabbath.

5. I have power to use all Ceremonies to the ends of Redemption, for the good of Man.

6. And it came to pass also, on another sabbath, that he entered into the synagogue and taught: and
and there was a man whose right hand was withered. 7. And the scribes and Pharisees watched him, whether he would heal on the sabbath-day: that they might find an accusation against him. 8. But he knew their thoughts, and said to the man which had the withered hand, Rise up, and stand forth in the midst. And he arose, and stood forth. 9. Then said Jesus unto them, I will ask you one thing, Is it lawful on the sabbath-days to do good, or to do evil? to save life, or to destroy it?

6, 7, 8, 9. See Matt. 12. What better work for the sabbath-day, than to save life? And he that will not do that, when he may, is guilty of murder.

10. And looking round about upon them all, he said unto the man, Stretch forth thy hand. And he did so: and his hand was restored whole as the other. 11. And they were filled with madness; and communed one with another what they might do to Jesus.

10, 11. Note: Nothing so enraged the Devil and his Servants, as doing the greatest good: This is to them the greatest crime.

12. And it came to pass in those days, that he went out into a mountain to pray, and continued all night in prayer to God.

12. Note: What need then have we to pray?

13. And when it was day, he called unto him his disciples: and of them he chose twelve, whom also he named Apostles:

13. Note; His prayer seemeth to be in order to the choice of his Apostles, that is, Deputed Commissioned Messengers, next under him, to gather and guide his Church.

14. Simon (whom he also named Peter) and Andrew his brother, James and John, Philip and Bartholomew, 15. Matthew and Thomas, James the son of Alpheus, and Simon called Zelotes; 16. And Judas the brother of James, and Judas Iscariot, which also was the traitor. 17. And he came down with them, and stood in the plain, and the company of his disciples, and a great multitude of people out of all Judæa and Jerusalem, and from the sea-coast of Tyre and Sidon, which came to hear him, and to be healed of their diseases; 18. And they that were vexed with unclean spirits: and they were healed. 19. And the whole multitude sought to touch him: for there went virtue out of him, and healed them all.

14, 15, 16, 17, 18, 19. O the wonderful mercy of our Saviour to Bodies and Souls!

20. And he lifted up his eyes on his disciples, and said, Blessed be ye poor: for yours is the kingdom of God.


Note; Matthew more fully repeateth this Sermon than Luke.

21. Blessed are ye that hunger now: for ye shall be filled. Blessed are ye that weep now: for ye shall laugh.

21. See Matt. 5.

22. Blessed are ye when men shall hate you, and when they shall separate you from their company, and shall reproach you, and cast out your name as evil, for the Son of man's sake.

22. Blessed are ye though you now hunger, weep, are hated, &c. because it is for Righteousness sake.

23. Rejoice ye in that day, and leap for joy: for behold, your reward is great in heaven: for in the like manner did their fathers unto the prophets.

23. Note. But we must see that the cause be good, and that our hearts be found with God in the main, and in all other Cases.

24. But
24. But ye unto you that are rich: for ye have received your consolation. 25. Wo unto you that are full: for ye shall hunger. Wo unto you that laugh now: for ye shall mourn and weep. 26. Wo unto you when all men shall speak well of you: for so did their fathers to the false prophets.

24, 25, 26. Wo you ungodly unbelievers, though you be now rich, and full, and merry, and well spoken of: (Not because you are rich and full, &c.) But though you are so, because you have no better: For man's whoredom is to be judged of, by what he shall have hereafter, and not by what he hath here.

Note, Luke omitteth divers of the beatitudes, but reciteth the woes which Matthew omiteth: Whether this Sermon was twice spoken by Christ, or (which is liker) but once, is uncertain.

27. But I say unto you which hear, Love your enemies, do good to them which do you evil, and pray for them which despitefully use you. 28. Be not ye therefore judges, as the heathen judges; neither be ye merciful as the same. 29. But be ye merciful, as your Father also is merciful.

27, 28, 29, 30. See on, Matt. 5. prefer charity and peace before thy rights; and right not thy self to thy neighbours greater hurt.

30. And as ye would that men should do to you, do ye also to them likewise.

31. Love your neighbours as your selves, and make not too great a difference between their interest and your own: For injustice will not be maintained without love.

32. For if ye love them which love you, what thank have ye? for sinners also love them that love them. 33. And if ye do good to them which do good to you, what thank have ye? for sinners also do even the same. 34. And if ye lend to them of whom ye hope to receive, what thank have ye? for sinners also lend to sinners, to receive as much again.

32, 33, 34. All this is but the exercise of self-love, and is not so much as virtue much less that charity, in which you must excel all wicked men.

35. But love ye your enemies, and do good, and lend, hoping for nothing again: and your reward shall be great, and ye shall be the children of the Highest: for he is kind unto the unthankful, and unto the evil.

36. Be ye therefore merciful, as your Father also is merciful.

35, 36. Let your love and good works be in imitation of God your Father, taking his approbation for your full reward.

37. Judge not, and ye shall not be judged; condemn not, and ye shall not be condemned: forgive, and ye shall be forgiven. 38. Give, and it shall be given unto you: good measure, pressed down, and shaken together, and running over, shall men give into your bosom. For with the same measure that ye mete withal, it shall be measured to you again.

37, 38. God's rewards are sure and full.

Note, The word [men] v. 38. is not in the Text: but [They shall give] signifieth, [It shall be given] as Luke 26. 9. (They shall receive you into the everlasting habitations.) Is. [That ye may be received]: And Angels are liker to be the Instruments then men, from whom we cannot expect to be merited to, as we merited to them. Ye the Promised may extend this, that when God seeth it good, he will make them, or enemies the Instruments of his reward.

39. And he spake a parable unto them: Can the blind lead the blind? shall they not both fall into the ditch?
39. He that will be a teacher of others, must himself first understand what he teacheth. Teaching ignorance is the calamity of the Church, the deceived of souls, and the condemnation of the teachers.

40. The disciple is not above his master: but every one that is perfect shall be as his master.

41. You must look to speed no better than I that am your master; but it will be your perfection to imitate me. Learn of me, and suffer with me, and you shall be blessed with me.

But some expound it, (you cannot expect the Disciples of ignorant Teachers should attain to any higher perfection than their Masters,) which they gather from the context: But Luke withal to conjure various sayings and subjects. See Matthew 10. 24.

41. And why beholdest thou the mote that is in thy brother's eye, but perceivest not the beam that is in thine own eye? 42. Either how canst thou say to thy brother, Brother, let me pull out the mote that is in thine eye, when thou thyself beholdest not the beam that is in thine own eye? Thou hypocrite, first cast out the beam out of thine own eye, and then shalt thou see clearly to pull out the mote that is in thy brother's eye.

41, 42. It is of great necessity for Teachers and Reprovers, to know themselves, and be free from scandals, and the crimes which they reproce, and not as Pharisees, to be look in Morals, and cruel to others, while they are zealous for their Ceremonies, etc. Their Hypocrisy will aggravate their Iniquity.

43. For a good tree bringeth not forth corrupt fruit: neither doth a corrupt tree bring forth good fruit. 44. For every tree is known by his own fruit: for of thorns men do not gather figs, nor of a balsam bough gather they grapes.

44. If thou be a bad man thy self, and guilty of worse than thou preachest against, who wilt believe thee, or expect good fruit from so bad a man?

Note; But Matthew otherwise connecteth these sayings.

45. A good man out of the good treasure of his heart, bringeth forth that which is good: and an evil man out of the evil treasure of his heart, bringeth forth that which is evil: for of the abundance of the heart his mouth speaketh.

46. As the man is, so usually will he work and act: for hypocrisy is usually short lived.

47. And why calle ye me Lord, Lord, and do not the things which I say?

48. All the good words and praises of God and Religion, from disobedient men do but aggravate their sin.

47, 48. As a building on a rock will stand in storms, so he that obeyeth my Word, will stand in Tryal. 9. How is our Obedience made the Rock that we build on? Is not Christ the Rock? No! Similitudes must not be stretched beyond their intent. It's only the stability of the obedient that is meant.

49. But he that heareth and doeth not, is like a man that without a foundation built an house upon the earth, against which the stream did beat vehemently, and immediately it fell, and the ruin of that house was great.

49. Hypocritical, Disobedient Hearsers, and Professors, have no firm foundation and stability, trusting to a barren Opinion instead of the Faith, and so fall by worldly ruin in their Tryals.

CHAP.
Now when he had ended all his sayings in the audience of the people, he entred into Capernaum. 2. And a certain centurion's servant, who was dear unto him, was sick, and ready to die. 3. And when he heard of Jesus, he sent unto him the elders of the Jews, beseeching him that he would come and heal his servant. 4. And when they came to Jesus, they besought him instantly, saying, That he was worthy for whom he should enter under my roof. 5. Wherefore neither thought I my self worthy to come unto thee: but as a word, and my servant shall be healed. 6. For I also am a man set under authority, having under me soldiers, and I say unto one, Go, and he goeth: and to another, Come, and he cometh: and to my servant, Do this, and he doeth it.

6, 7, 8. Note: The Devotion of this man in building a Synagogue, and his great Humility, shew that he was better prepared for Faith than many others.

9. When Jesus heard these things, he marvelled at him, and turned him about, and said unto the people that followed him, I say unto you, I have not found so great faith, no, not in Israel.

9. As Man, he marvelled; as God, he foreknew it.
bath sent us unto thee, saying, Art thou he that should come, or look we for another?

20. See Mat. 11.

21. And in that same hour he cured many of their infirmities, and plagues, and of evil spirits, and unto many that were blind he gave sight. 22. Then Jesus answering, said unto them, Go your way, and tell John what things ye have seen and heard, how that the blind see, the lame walk the lepers are cleansed, the deaf hear, the dead are raised, to the poor the gospel is preached. 23. And blessed is he whosoever shall not be offended in me.

21, 22, 23. Tell John what is done, and let him judge by the works. But men's great danger is, of being scandalized at my visible meanness, and my sufferings.

24. And when the messengers of John were departed, he began to speak unto the people concerning John, What went ye out into the wilderness for to see? A reed shaken with the wind? 25. But what went ye out for to see? A man clothed in soft raiment? Behold, they which are gorgeously apparelled, and live delicately, are in kings courts. 26. But what went ye out for to see? A prophet? Yea, I say unto you, and much more than a prophet. 27. This is he of whom it is written, Behold, I send my messenger before thy face, which shall prepare thy way before thee. 28. For I say unto you, Among those that are born of women, there is not a greater prophet than John the Baptist: but he that is least in the kingdom of God, is greater than he.

24, 25, 26, 27, 28. The least true Believer in my Church hath a more honourable start and work, See Mat. 11.

29. And all the people that heard him, and the publicanes justified God, being baptized with the baptism of John.

29. All the People that heard Christ speak so highly of John, were pleased at it, and justified God that sent him; see they had been baptized by him. Or, as others expound it, all the People that heard John; and the publicans received his Message from God, &c.

30. But the Pharisees and lawyers rejected the counsel of God against themselves, being not baptized of him.

30. [Rejected God's Message sent by John] or [Rejected Christ's Testimony of John.]

31. And the Lord said, Whereunto shall I liken the men of this generation? and to what are they like? 32. They are like unto children sitting in the marketplace, and calling one to another, and saying, We have piped unto you, and ye have not danced: we have mourned to you, and ye have not wept. 33. For John the Baptist came neither eating bread, nor drinking wine; and ye say, He hath a devil.

31, 32, 33. See Mat. 11. 33. That he is distracted.

34. The Son of man is come eating and drinking; and ye say, Behold, a gluttonous man, and a wine-bibber, a friend of publicanes and sinners. 35. But wisdom is justified of all her children.

34, 35. Neither his austerity, nor my free conversation, do escape your censure. But the wise will justify Wisdom.

36. And one of the Pharisees desired him that he would eat with him. And he went into the Pharisee's house, and sat down to meat. 37. And beheld, a woman in the city, which was a sinner, when she knew that Jesus sat at meat in the Pharisee's house, brought
brought an alabaster-box of ointment.

38. And stood at his feet behind him weeping, and began to wash his feet with tears, and did wipe them with the hairs of her head, and kissed his feet, and anointed them with the ointment.

36, 37, 38. A Woman who had been of a bad life.

39. Now when the Pharisee which had bidden him, saw it, he spake within himself, saying, This man, if he were a prophet, would have known who and what manner of woman this is that toucheth him: for she is a sinner.

39. Christ and the Pharisees agreed that sin is hateful.

40. And Jesus answering, said unto him, Simon, I have somewhat to say unto thee. And he said, Master, say on. 41. There was a certain creditor which had two debtors: the one owed five hundred pence, and the other fifty.

42. And when they had nothing to pay, he frankly forgave them both. Tell me therefore, which of them will love him most? Simon answered and said, I suppose that he to whom he forgave most. And he said unto him, Thou hast rightly judged.

40, 41, 42, 43. Note: When God forgiveth great sins, it is that we may love him much.

44. And he turned to the woman, and said unto Simon, Seest thou this woman? I entered into thine house, thou gavest me no water for my feet: but she drew my feet with tears, and wiped them with the hairs of her head. 45. Thou gavest me no kiss: but this woman, since the time I came in, hath not ceased to kiss my feet. 46. Mine head with
Ch. 9. The Parable

1, 2, 3. In the thankful sense of their deliverance attended him, and contributed to his maintenance.

Note. Christ that was Lord of all, and gave others Life and Salvation, disdained not to live on others gifts, and contribution.

4. And when much people were gathered together, and were come to him out of every city, he spake by a parable: 5. Aower went out to sow his seed: and as he sowed, some fell by the wayside, and it was trodden down, and the fowls of the air devoured it. 6. And some fell upon a rock, and as soon as it was sprung up, it withered away, because it lacked moisture. 7. And some fell among thorns, and the thorns sprang up with it, and choked it. 8. And other fell on good ground, and sprang up, and bare fruit an hundred-fold. And when he had said these things, he cried, He that hath ears to hear, let him hear.

11, 12, 13, 14. Note, Hopeful and fair beginnings, in very many, fall short of Salvation.

15. But that on the good ground, are they which in an honest and good heart, having heard the word, keep it, and bring forth fruit with patience.

16. No man when he hath lighted a candle, covereth it with a vessel, or putteth it under a bed; but setteth it on a candlestick, that they which enter in may see the light.

17. For nothing is secret, that shall not be made manifest: neither any thing hid, that shall not be known, and come abroad.

18. Take heed therefore how ye hear: for whoever hath, to him shall be given; and whoever hath not, from him shall be taken away even that which he seemed to have.
ever hath not, from him shall be taken even that which he seethm
to have.

18. The thankful receiving of what is given you, and the well using of what you have, is the way to have more given you: But the rejection or abuse of it, forfeiteth what you have.

Note: When Luke collected several passages, spoken on several occasions, like Solomon’s Proverbs; to reign an Analysis, and thence put the fence on them, is to make the fence, and not to expound it.

19. Then came to him his mother and his brethren, and could not come at him for the press.

20. And it was told him by certain, which said, Thy mother and thy brethren stand without, desiring to see thee. 21. And he answered and said unto them, My mother and my brethren are thefe which hear the word of God, and do it.

19, 20, 21. N. He knew that their acquaintance with his Parents, Kindred, and Education, was the hinderance of their Faith; and therefore he lets them know that he had a higher Original and Kindred, and valued spiritual before carnal Relations.

22. Now it came to pass on a certain day, that he went into a ship with his disciples: and he said unto them, Let us go over unto the other side of the lake. And they launched forth. 23. But as they failed, he fell asleep: and there came down a storm of wind on the lake, and they were filled with water, and were in jeopardy. 24. And they came to him, and awoke him, saying, Master, master, we perish. Then he arose, and rebuked the wind, and the raging of the water: and they ceased, and there was a calm.

22, 23, 24. Note: And cannot he with a word rebuke all popular and tyrannical rage against his Church?

25. And he said unto them, Where is your faith? And they being afraid, wondered, laying one to another, What manner of man is this? for he commandeth even the winds and water, and they obey him.

25. Note: And shall not we obey him?

26. And they arrived at the country of the Gadarenes, which is over against Galilee. 27. And when he went forth to land, there met him out of the city, a certain man which had devils long time, and were no clothes, neither abode in any house; but in the tombs.

28. When he saw Jesus, he cried out, and fell down before him, and with a loud voice said, What have I do with thee, Jesus, thou Son of God most high? I beseech thee torment me not. 29. (For he had commanded the unclean spirit to come out of the man. For oftentimes it had caught him: and he was kept bound with chains, and in fetters; and he brake the bands, and was driven of the devil into the wilderness.) 30. And Jesus asked him, saying, What is thy name? And he said, Legion: because many devils were entred into him. 31. And they besought him that he would not command them to go out into the deep.

26, 27, 28, 29, 30, 31. See on Math. 8, and Mark 5, 8, 9. The bottomless Pit. N. The Devils are not yet confined to Hell, nor in their utmost misery.

32. And there was there an herd of many swine feeding on the mountain; and they besought him that he would suffer them to enter into them. And he suffered them.

33. Then went the devils out of the man, and entred into the swine; and the herd ran violently down a steep place into the lake, and were choked. 34. When they that fed them
them saw what was done, they fled, and went and told it in the city and in the country. 35. Then they went out to see what was done; and came to Jesus, and found the man out of whom the devils were departed, sitting at the feet of Jesus, clothed, and in his right mind: and they were afraid. 36. They also which saw it, told them by what means he that was possessed of the devils, was healed.

32, 33, 34, 35, 36. Note 1. One man is of more worth, than multitudes of Swine; (though swinish sinners vilifie themselves).
2. What would not Devils do against us, if God should permit them?
37. Then the whole multitude of the country of the Gadarenes round about, besought him to depart from them; for they were taken with great fear: and he went up into the ship, and returned back again. 38. Now the man out of whom the devils were departed, besought him that he might be with him: but Jesus sent him away, saying, 39. Return to thine own house, and shew how great things God hath done unto thee. And he went his way, and published throughout the whole city, how great things Jesus had done unto him.

37, 38, 39. Note 2. All mens service of God is not in one way; some may do most good at home, and in a private state of life, and some more publicly.
40. And it came to pass, that when Jesus was returned, the people gladly received him: for they were all waiting for him. 41. And behold, there came a man named Jairus, and he was a ruler of the synagogue: and he fell down at Jesus feet, and besought him that he would come into his house: 42. For he had one only daughter, about twelve years of age, and the lay a dying. (But as he went, the people thronged him.)
43, 44, 45. Bodily Gifts are gladly received, and carefully sought.
44. And a woman having an issue of blood twelve years, which had spent all her living upon physicians, neither could be healed of any. 44. Came behind him, and touched the border of his garment: and immediately her issue of blood stanched. 45. And Jesus said, Who touched me? When all denied, Peter, and they that were with him, said, Master, the multitude through thee, and press thee, and sayest thou, Who touched me? 46. And Jesus said, Some body hath touched me: for I perceive that virtue is gone out of me.
43, 44, 45, 46. Note 3. Peter carp't at Christ's words, because he knew not the reason of them.
47. And when the woman savieth that she was not hid, she came trembling, and falling down before him, she declaered unto him before all the people, for what cause she had touched him, and how she was healed immediately.
47. She was afraid lest he would be angry with her, for stealing a Cure without his consent.
48. And he saith unto her, Daughter be of good comfort: thy faith hath made thee whole; go in peace.
48. Note : Faith healeth not efficiently, but as the necessary moral qualification of the receiver of a free gift.
49. While he yet spake, there cometh one from the ruler of the synagogue's house, saying to him, Thy daughter is dead; trouble not the matter. 50. But when Jesus heard it, he answered him, saying, Fear not: believe onely, and she shall be made whole. 51. And when he
he came into the house, he suffered no man to go in, save Peter, and James, and John, and the father and the mother of the maiden. 52. And all wept, and bewailed her: but he said, Weep not; she is not dead, but sleeppeth.

49, 50, 51, 52. Permitting it to come to extremity, magnified the Miracle.

53. And they laughed him to scorn, knowing that he was dead.

53. She was dead by the cessation of natural life and motion, and not dead, by a remote departure of the Soul; it being deemed to restore the suspended life. And to both Christ and they said true.

54. And he put them all out, and took her by the hand, and called, saying, Maid, arise. 55. And her spirit came again, and the arsle shratteeway: and he commanded to give her meat. 56. And her parents were astoniished: but he charged them that they should tell no man vhat vvvas done.

54, 55, 56. See on Mark 5.

CHAP. IX.

1. Then he called his twelve disciples together, and gave them power and authority over all devils, and to cure diseases. 2. And he sent them to preach the kingdom of God, and to heal the sick.

1, 2. To Save Bodies and Souls.

3. And he said unto them, Take nothing for your journey, neither staves, nor scrip, neither bread, neither money; neither have two coats apiece. 4. And whateuer house ye enter into, there abide, and thence depart. 5. And whomever vvill not receive you, vhen ye go out of that city, shake off the very dust from your feet for a testimony against them.

3, 4, 5. See on Matt. 10:30, 11. Towlness, that it is not long of your unwillingness, but their own, that they are forlorn and perish.

6. And they departed and went through the towns, preaching the gospel, and healing every where.

7. Now before Herod the tetrarch heard of all that was done by him: and he was perplexed, because that it was said of some, that John was risen from the dead. 8. And of some, that Elias had appeared: and of others, that one of the old prophets was risen again. 9. And Herod said, John have I beheaded: but vwho is this of whom I hear such things? And he desired to see him.

6, 7, 8, 9. Note; Christ, that was familiar with the Poor, would not gratifie the desire of the King, a persecutor, that desired to see him.

10. And the apostles vhen they were returned, told him all that they had done. And he took them, and vvent aside privately into a desert place, belonging to the city called Bethsaida.

10. Note; Had we the History of all the Apostles Miracles before, and after Christ's Resurrection, how large would it be!

11. And the people when they knew it, followed him: and he received them, and spake unto them of the kingdom of God, and healed them that had need of healing.

11. Note; Christ rejected none that followed after him, with desire and diligent seeking him.

12. And when the day began to wear away, then came the twelve and said unto him, Send the multitude away, that they may go into the towns and countrey round about, and lodge, and get victuals: for we are here in a desert place.

13. But he said unto them, Give ye them to eat. And they said, We have no more but five loaves and
and two fishes; except we should go and buy meat for all these people. 14. For they were about five thousand men. And he said to his disciples, Make them sit down by fifties in a company. 15. And they did so, and made them all sit down.

12, 13, 14, 15. See Matt. 8. Then they obeyed, expecting some miracle.

16. Then he took the five loaves, and the two fishes, and looking up to heaven, he blessed them, and brake, and gave to the disciples to set before the multitude. 17. And they did eat, and were all filled: and there was taken up of fragments that remained to them, twelve baskets.


18. And it came to pass as he was alone praying, his disciples were with him: and he asked them, saying, Whom say the people that I am? 19. They answering, said, John the Baptist: but some say, Elias; and others say, that one of the old prophets is risen again.

18, 19. Came to him. See Matt. 16.

20. He said unto them, But whom say ye that I am? Peter answering, said, The Christ of God. 21. And he straitly charged them, and commanded them to tell no man that thing.

20, 21. Q. What then was the Gospel which they were sent to preach, and which he preached? Ans. Much like John Baptist's preaching that the Kingdom of God is come; and moreover, that Jesus did such and such Miracles, as he told John's Disciples; not directly saying, I am the Christ, but proposing those Evidences from whence they were themselves to gather it: Because his Resurrection, &c. was to make the Evidence full, before the Gospel was fully preached.

2. But what then was the Baptist's he used before his Resurrection, if men were not to be told, and to profess that he was the Christ? Ans. Just answerable to his preaching; and like John's Baptism; but much different from the following Baptism in the name of the Father, Son and Holy Ghost. Men were to profess Repentance and hope of Salvation, by learning of Christ, and so lifted themselves under him as his Disciples; but not yet to profess that he was the Christ; which after was necessary.

22. Saying, The Son of man must suffer many things, and be rejected of the elders, and chief priests, and scribes, and be slain, and be raised the third day.

22. All this is part of the Gospel which you must hereafter preach; and when this is done, it will be reasonable to preach it.

23. And he said to them all, If any man will come after me, let him deny himself, and take up his cross daily, and follow me. 24. For whoever will save his life, shall lose it: but whoever will lose his life for my sake, the same shall save it.

23, 24. Carnal Self-love, and the love of worldly prosperity being man's lapsed sinful state: it is from these that I come to save men; and therefore will save none, but by saving them from these, and teaching them to deny their carnal selves, and worldly prosperity.

25. For what is a man advantaged, if he gain the whole world, and lose himself, or be cast away?

25. See on Matt. 10. and Mark 8. Alas then, for how little a part of this vain world do millions sell their Souls!

26. For whoever shall be ashamed of me and of my words, of him shall the Son of man be ashamed, when he shall come in his own glory and in his Father's, and of the holy angels.

26. They that, to save their estates or lives, are ashamed now to own me and the Gospel, I will reject them as ashamed to own them, or such as them, in the day

27. But I tell you of a truth, there shall not taste of death till they see the kingdom of God.

27. *Note:* All the three Evangelists, prefixing this immediately before the History of Christ's Transfiguration, do plainly tell us, that it was that glimpse of his Glory which he meant.

28. And it came to pass about eight days after these sayings, he took Peter, and John, and James, and went up into a mountain to pray.

28. Matth. 17.1. Saith, after six days, not reckoning the two parts of the foregoing and the last day.

29. And as he prayed, the fashion of his countenance was altered, and his raiment was white and glittering. 30. And behold, there talked with him two men, which were Moses and Elias. 31. Who appeared in glory, and spake of his decease which he should accomplish at Jerusalem. 32. But Peter, and they that were with him, were heavy with sleep: and when they were awake, they saw his glory, and the two men that stood with him. 33. And it came to pass, as they departed from him, Peter said unto Jesus, Master, it is good for us to be here; and let us make three tabernacles, one for thee, and one for Moses, and one for Elias: not knowing what he said. 34. While he thus spake, there came a cloud, and overshadowed them: and they feared as they entered into the cloud. 35. And there came a voice out of the cloud, saying, This is my beloved Son, hear him.

36. And when the voice was past, Jesus was found alone: and they kept it close, and told no man in those days any of those things which they had seen.

36. For Christ so commanded.

37. And it came to pass, that on the next day, when they were come down from the hill, much people met him. 38. And behold, a man of the company cried out, saying, Master, I beseech thee, look upon my son, for he is mine only child. 39. And lo, a spirit taketh him, and he suddenly crieth out, and it teareth him that he fometh again, and bruising him, hardly departeth from him. 40. And I besought thy disciples to cast him out, and they could not. 41. And Jesus, answering, said, O faithless and perverse generation, how long shall I be with you, and suffer you? Bring thy son hither. 42. And as he was yet a coming, the devil threw him down, and tore him; and Jesus rebuked the unclean spirit, and healed the child, and delivered him again to his father.

37, 38, 39, 40, 41, 42. See on Matth. 17.15, 16. Since I have my self known one yet living, that had an old and violent Epilepsy, once, twice, or thrice a day, perfectly cured (near thirty years ago, and so continueth) after other great means used, merely by fasting and earnest prayer, suddenly in the midst of prayer the second day, I do the easier believe that the Devil and a natural Disease, of which he is the Executioner, may consist together.

43. And they were all amazed at the mighty power of God: But while they wondered every one at all things which Jesus did, he said unto his disciples, 44. Let these sayings sink down into your ears: for the Son of man shall be delivered into the hands of men.
43. 44. Let not my Glory and Power 
as you into vain expectations of earthly 
Delusion. Observe, and forget not that I 
tell you again and again, that I must suffer, 
and rise again.

45. But they understood not this 
lying, and it was hid from them, 
that they perceived it not: and 
they feared to ask him of that say-
ing.

46. Note; Even the Apostles understood 
not that Christ must be crucified, and rise 
again, though he oft told it them, and 
didst them that it might sink down into 
their Ears. Therefore the belief of it was 
not then necessary to Salvation, as it is 
now.

46. Then there arose a reason-
ing among them, which of them 
should be greatest.

47. Note; Alas, that Pride and Ambition 
should begin so near to Christ, and fororef 
the Calamity of the Church!

47. And Jesus perceiving the 
thought of their heart, took a child, 
and led him by him, 48. And laid 
unto them, Whosoever shall receive 
this child in my name, receiveth me: and 
whosoever shall receive me, receiveth him that sent me: for he that is least among you all, 
the same shall be great.

48. Humility must be your great-
ness.

49. And John answered and said, 
Master, we saw one casting out de-
vils in thy name; and we forbad 
him, because he followeth not with 
us. 50. And Jesus said unto him, 
Forbid him not: for he that is not 
against us, is for us.


51. And it came to pass, when 
the time was come that he should 
be received up, he steadfastly set 
his face to go to Jerusalem.

51. The time of his approaching Cru-ci-

dation, and his Ascension to Heaven.

52. And sent messengers before 
his face: and they went, and en-
tried into a village of the Samari-
tanes to make ready for him.

53. And they did not receive him, 
because his face was as though he 
would go to Jerusalem.

54. 55. Note; For the Jews and the Sa-
marians disowned each other, upon their 
Controversies about Worship.

54. And when his disciples, 
James and John saw this, they said, 
Lord, wilt thou that we command 
fire to come down from heaven 
and consume them, even as Elias 
did? 55. But he turned and re-
buked them, and said, Ye know 
not what manner of Spirit ye are 
of. 56. For the Son of man is 
not come to destroy men's lives, but 

to save them. And they went to 
another village.

54. 55. 56. That which you take for the 
Spirit of Elias, and Zeal for me against sin, 
is a selfish, uncharitable, revengeful Spirit, 
and not that which I will give you, which 
is a Spirit of Love and Gentleness: You 
know not your own hearts, but take that 
for good in you, which is evil; and you 
know not me as you should do: I come to 
give, and not to destroy men.

This is the third sin against Charity, re-
corded of John, who was after the great 
Preacher of Love.

57. And it came to pass that as 
they went in the way, a certain 
man said unto him, Lord, I will 
follow thee whithersoever thou 
goest. 58. And Jesus said unto 
him, Foxes have holes, and birds 
of the air have nests, but the Son 
of man hath not where to lay his 
head.

57. 58. I have no entertainment for any, 
but self-denying persons, that can fortake 
all for me.

59. And he said unto another, 
Follow me: But he said, Lord, 
suffer me first to go and bury my 
father. 60. Jesus said unto him, 
Let the dead bury their dead; but 
go thou and preach the kingdom of 
God.

59. 60. The work of my Gospel, and 
God's
Ch. 10. Seventy Disciples St. Luke. sent forth. Ch. 10.

God's Kingdom, must be preferred before the burying of a Father.

Note: Christ fitted his Answer to the disposition of those he spake to. He knew that this man was fitter to be put on, and the former to be stop.

61. And another also said, Lord, I will follow thee: but let me first go bid them farewell which are at home at my house. 62. And Jesus said unto him, No man having put his hand to the plough, and looking back, is fit for the kingdom of God.

61. 62. If thou wilt be my Minister, thou must be like a man plowing, who looketh still before him on the Furrow, and not behind him: The Kingdom of God must be first sought, and all things that would hinder the true service of it, must be put behind, and denied, and forsaken: (Not that it dishonoreth Relation duties, but puts all behind the works and interest of God, and forsaken that which is against it.)

CHAP. X.

1. After these things, the Lord appointed other seventy also, and sent them two and two before his face into every city, and place, whether he himself would come. 2. Therefore said he unto them, The harvest truly is great, but the labourers are few: pray ye therefore the Lord of the harvest, that he would send forth labourers into his harvest.

1. 2. As he had chosen twelve, with respect to the twelve Tribes; so he chose seventy, according to the number of the great Council, it's like 70 being put for 72, as an ancient Copy hath it. By which it appeareth he sented a disparity in his Ministers.

2. Mrs; Priests now are many, but Labourers few: What men are they that hate and silence the faithfulst Labourers, supposing that they are not for their interest?

3. Go your ways: behold, I send you forth as lambs among vVolves. 4. Carry neither purse,
Ch. 10. Christ's commission to the Apostles. Ch. 10.

because your names are written in heaven.

20. Even wicked men may cast out devils, but it's greater matter of joy to be saints that shall be saved.

21. In that hour Jesus rejoiced in spirit, and said, I thank thee, O Father, Lord of heaven and earth, that thou hast hid these things from the wise and prudent, and hast revealed them unto babes: even so, Father, for so it seemed good in thy sight.

21. That thou hast revealed the heavenly wisdom to those that are despised, as unlearned in the world, rather than women counted wise and learned for their human wit and knowledge. See Mark 11:25.

22. All things are delivered to me of my Father: and no man knoweth who the Son is, but the Father; and who the Father is, but the Son, and he to whom the Son will reveal himself.

22. Christ is made the Lord of all; and he is perfectly known by none but God: And there is no true knowledge of God the Father, but by the teaching of Christ.

23. And he turned him unto his disciples, and saith privately, Blessed are the eyes which see the things that ye see.


24. For I tell you, that many prophets and kings have desired to see those things which ye see, and have not seen them; and to hear those things which ye hear, and have not heard them.

24. Such as David, Solomon, Isaiah, &c.

25. And behold, a certain lawyer stood up, and tempted him, saying, Master, what shall I do to inherit eternal life?

25. To try his skill.

26. He said unto him, What is written in the law? how readest thou?

26. Note. They err who say, that the Law of Moses prescribed not the means to Eternal Life.
27. And he answering, said, Thou shalt love the Lord thy God with all thy heart, and with all thy soul, and with all thy strength, and with all thy mind; and thy neighbour as thyself. 28. And he said unto him, Thou hast answered right: this do, and thou shalt live.

27,28. Note, This is not the same History that is mentioned, Matt. 19. 16. there is much of the same, and yet much difference: There Christ repeateth the Commands particularly, but here the Lawyer repeateth them summarily. So Mark 10. 17. agreeeth with Matthew. But that in Luke 18. 19. is the same with this, and a distinct History.

Note, Whoever loveth God sincerely, and his Neighbour as himself, shall be saved. But this will never be done without Regenerating Grace.

29. But he willing to justify himself, said unto Jesus, And who is my neighbour?

29. Note, This overwillingness to justify our selves, is one of the deepest rooted, and commonest vices in corrupted Nature.

30. And Jesus answering, said, A certain man went down from Jerusalem to Jericho, and fell among thieves, which stripped him of his raiment, and wounded him, and departed, leaving him half dead. 31. And by chance there came down a certain priest that way; and when he saw him, he passed by on the other side. 32. And likewise a Levite, when he was at the place, came and looked on him, and passed by on the other side. 33. But a certain Samaritan, as he journeyed, came where he was: and when he saw him, he had compassion on him. 34. And went to him, and bound up his wounds, pouring in oil and wine, and set him on his own beast, and brought him to an inn, and took care of him. 35. And on the morrow when he departed, he took out two pence, and gave them to the host, and said unto him, Take care of him; and whatsoever thou spendest more, when I come again, I will repay thee.

30,31,32,33,34,35. The Priest and the Levite, who should be the most holy and charitable, past by him without helping him; but a Samaritan, one contemned by them as a Heretic, or prophane Rustick, took him up, and helped him.

Note, They abuse the Text that say, by the Samaritan, is meant Christ, and by two pence, the two Testaments, &c.

36. Which now of these three, thinkest thou, was neighbour unto him that fell among the thieves?

36. Which of them took the man for his Neighbour, and dealt as a Neighbour with him?

37. And he said, He that shewed mercy on him. Then said Jesus unto him, Go, and do thou likewise.

37. So do thou, and though he be a Samaritan, a Schismarick, a Heretic, use him with such charity as thy Neighbour.

Note, Do they so, that ruin, hunt, and destroy such, and better men?

38. Now it came to pass, as they went, that he entred into a certain village: and a certain woman named Martha, received him into her house. 39. And she had a sister called Mary, which also sat at Jesus feet, and heard his word.

38,39. Martha was the House-keeper or Owner.

40. But Martha was cumbered about much serving, and came to him, and said, Lord, dost thou not care that my sister hath left me to serve alone? bid her therefore that she help me.

40. The followers of Christ to be provided for, were many, and the work seemed necessary.

41. And Jesus answered, and said unto her, Martha, Martha, thou art careful, and troubled about many
my things: 42. But one thing is needful, And Mary hath chosen that good part, which shall not be taken away from her.

41, 42. Thou troubledst thy self more than needed, and unseasonably, about many things of less necessity. But to learn the way of Salvation, and so to be blessed in the Kingdom of God, is the one thing of absolute necessity. This Mary hath preferred, and so shouldst thou, and have left serving in the second place: And none shall deprieve her of that better portion which she hath chosen.

Note. 1. Christ doth not blame Martha for her care and work, but for not preferring better: Nor speaks this so much to blame her, as to commend Mary, and to teach us all what to prefer.

2. One thing only (in a comprehensive sense, as containing Salvation, and its necessary means), is of such absolute necessity to man, that all things else should be put behind it.

3. Preferring things lesser necessary, though good, and troubling our selves about needless, is a common fault, even of religious persons.

4. That is a fault out of its due time and place, which is a great duty in its season.

5. They that prefer and chuse the best, shall have the best, whoever is against it.

6. Even godly persons and near, are apt upon cross Interests and Opinions, to censure and accuse each other upon mistake, when the fault is in the accuser, and that to Christ.

7. But Christ will justify the right.

CHAP. XI.

1. And it came to pass, that as he was praying in a certain place, when he ceased, one of his disciples said unto him, Lord, teach us to pray, as John also taught his disciples.

1. It seems they had till now been too little, and unskilful in prayer.

2. And he said unto them, When ye pray, say, Our Father which art in heaven, Hallowed be thy name. Thy kingdom come. Thy will be done, as in heaven, so in earth. 3. Give us day by day our daily bread. 4. And forgive us our sins; for we also forgive every one that is indebted to us. And lead us not into temptation, but deliver us from evil.

2, 3, 4. See the Exposition of the Lord’s Prayer on Mat. 6, 9.

Note. It is evident that Christ gave them this prayer to be used both as a Directory for Matter and Method, and as a meet fundament of words, when they pray comprehensively and summarily, though not saying them always to use these very words, nor to go through the whole Method, when occasion confines them to some one branch, or requires them to insist more on it; much less obliging or allowing them to use no other: And so the Apostles, and all the Churches understood it.

The small difference in words between Matthew and Luke, are not material; save that Luke omitteth the doxology in the end.

By [Deb] verse 4. is meant chiefly wrong or sin: For so the Syriack signifies, in which Christ speaketh: Though also our obligation to keep the Law of Innocency on pain of death, or for Justification, is a Debit which God remitteth by the Law of Faith and Grace, and accepteth on our part Faith and sincere Obedience, for the Merit of Christ, who fulfilled that perfect Law.

5. And he said unto them, Which of you shall have a friend, and shall go unto him at midnight, and say unto him, Friend, lend me three loaves; 6. For a friend of mine in his journey is come to me, and I have nothing to set before him: 7. And he from within shall answer and say, Trouble me not: the door is now shut, and my children are with me in bed; I cannot rise and give thee. 8. I say unto you, Though he will not rise and give him, because he is his friend: yet because of his importunity, he will rise and give him as many as he needeth.

5, 6, 7, 8. Though God be not as Man, that giveth to the importunate to be eased of them, yet importunity also prevails, with
with him as it was the Receiver for his
Gifts.

9. And I say unto you, Ask, and it shall be given you; seek, and ye shall find; knock, and it shall be opened unto you. 10. For every one that asketh, receiveth: and he that seeketh, findeth: and to him that knocketh, it shall be opened.

9, 10. He that will spare for no labour, and take no denial, shall have no denial finally: He that easily giveth over his sin, and will not be at pains and patience, forfeiteth mercy by contempt.

11. If a son shall ask bread of any of you that is a father, will he give him a stone? or if he ask a fish, will he give him a serpent? 12. Or if he shall ask an egg, will he offer him a scorpion? 13. If ye then, being evil, know how to give good gifts unto your children: how much more shall your heavenly Father give the holy Spirit to them that ask him?

11, 12, 13. Note: God’s Goodness is a great ground of hope that he will grant our prayers; that is, as far as he hath promised; 1. Grace and Glory certainly to all penitent Believers. 2. And the things of this life on these three conditions: 1. If they are such as are fit for the person. 2. And he be fit for them. 3. And it be to subserve God’s higher ends, his Glory, and the publick good, and do not cross them. So much of his Spirit as is necessary to Salvation, he will give to all true Believers: And the additional degrees and gifts, he giveth on the terms aforesaid.

14. And he called out a devil, and it was dumb. And it came to pass, when the devil was gone out, the dumb spake: and the people wondered. 15. But some of them said, He casteth out devils through Beelzebub, the chief of the devils.

14, 15. See Math. 12. They were so convinced of the fact of his Miracles, that they had no plea, for their unbelief left them, but to say, he did them by Conjunction which is the blasphemy of the Holy Ghost.

16. And other tempting him sought of him a sign from heaven. 17. But he knowing their thoughts, said unto them, Every kingdom divided against itself is brought to desolation: and a house divided against a house, falleth. 18. If Satan also be divided against himself, how shall his kingdom stand? because ye say, that I cast out devils through Beelzebub. 19. And if I by Beelzebub cast out devils, by whom do your sons cast them out? therefore shall they be your judges.

16, 17, 18, 19. Note: When Satan laboured to divide the Church of Christ, it is that he may destroy it: And should we do worse against Christ’s Kingdom, than Satan will do by his own.

20. But if I with the finger of God cast out devils, no doubt the kingdom of God is come upon you.

20. It is the approving work of God, to set up his Kingdom against the Devils.

21. When a strong man armeth himself, he keepeth his palace, his goods are in peace. 22. But when a stronger than he shall come upon him, and overcome him, he taketh from him all his armour wherein he trusted, and divideth his spoils.

21, 22. If I did not conquer Satan, I could not call him out of his pollution of Bodies and Souls.

23. He that is not with me, is against me: and he that gathereth not with me, scattereth.


24. When the unclean spirit is gone out of a man, he walketh through dry places, seeking rest: and finding none, he saith, I will return unto my house whence I came out. 25. And when he cometh,
26. Then goeth he, and sendeth to him seven other spirits more wicked than himself; and they enter in, and dwell there: and the last state of that man is worse than the first.

27, 28, 29, 30. But let him that is delivered from Satan’s possession of Body or Soul, heed that he return not: For when Satan is cast out, he travaileth by his temptations to get possession of some others: And when he hath assuaged many, and is refreshed and frutstrate by the grace of God, he moveth again to try his attentails, on him where he was delivered; And finding him careless, unwatchful, and ready to receive his temptations, he suggesteth worse things to him than those that he had renounced, and bringeth in on fair pretences seven-fold worse vices than he had before: And the end of that man is worse than was his first captivity to Satan.

Note. It is some kind of rest to Devils to deceive and destroy Souls; As it is to a malicious man to do mischief by revenge. Devils are not yet at their most easyless state. See Matt. 13, 43.

31. And it came to pass, as he spake these things, a certain woman of the company lifted up her voice, and said unto him, Blessed is the womb that bare thee, and the paps which thou hast sucked.

32. But he said, Yea, rather blessed are they that hear the word of God, and keep it.

28, 29. Note. Carnal persons most regard civil relations. Christ accounth them that hear and keep God's Word, as more amiable and blessed, than it would be to have been his own Mother: And we must judge aright: Though when God maketh the provision for our Families, our duty, we must obey him as his Stewards in our dispositions; yet Grace is more amiable than natural relations.

30. And when the people gathered thick together, he began to say, This is an evil generation: they seek a sign; and there shall no sign be given it, but the sign of the prophet Jonah: 30. For as Jonas was a sign unto the Ninevites, so shall also the Son of man be to this generation.

31. The queen of the south shall rise up in the judgment with the men of this generation, and condemn them; for she came from the utmost parts of the earth, to hear the wisdom of Solomon; and behold, a greater than Solomon is here.

32. It shall appear that the Jews are worse than she, and deserve destruction for being so much worse, and averse to Faith.

33. The men of Nineve shall rise up in the judgment with this generation, and shall condemn it; for they repented at the preaching of Jonas; and behold, a greater than Jonas is here.

34. See Matt. 12, 42.

35. No man when he hath lighted a candle, putteth it in a secret place, neither under a bushel; but on a candlestick, that they which come in may see the light.

36. God would not have us hide his Truth, much less silence it by Diabolical Persecution.

37. The light of the body is the eye: therefore when thine eye is single, thy whole body is full of light: but when thine eye is evil, thy body also is full of darkness.

38. The Light of Man is his true Understanding: As that is, so is the man of Light, or of Darkness.

39. Take heed therefore, that the light which is in thee be not darkness.

40. Take heed lest that Understanding be ignorant, or erroneous.

41. If thy whole body therefore be full of light, having no part dark, the
Ch. 11.  Woan pronounced St. Luke, against the Pharisees. Ch. 11.

the whole shall be full of light, as when the bright shining of a candle doth give thee light.


37. And as he spake, a certain Pharisee besought him to dine with him: and he went in and sat down to meat. 38. And when the Pharisee saw it, he marvelled that he had not first washed before dinner.

37, 38. See Math. 7. 3, Math. 15. 2.

39. And the Lord said unto him, Now do ye Pharisees make clean the outside of the cup and the platter: but your inward part is full of ravening and wickedness. 40. Ye fools, did not he that made that which is without, make that which is within also? 41. But rather give alms of such things as you have: and behold, all things are clean unto you.

39, 40, 41. True Cleanliness is to be acceptable to God: Be charitable and liberal, and your meat will be clean unto you.

42. But wo unto you Pharisees: for ye tithe mint and rue and all manner of herbs, and pass over judgment and the love of God: these ought ye to have done, and not to leave the other undone.

42. See Math. 23. 23. The Love of God, and Justice with Men, are far greater matters than Religious Rites and Ceremonies, or Church-Orders. God's Laws are some far greater than others, though none to be violated.

43. Wo unto you Pharisees: for ye love the uppermost seats in the synagogue, and greetings in the markets. 44. Wo unto you scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites: for ye are as graves which appear not, and the men that walk over them, are not aware of them.

43, 44. Not: Hypocrites is Pride covered with formal, Ceremonious shews of Religion, sometime unknown to the Hypocrite himself.

45. Then answered one of the lawyers, and said unto him, Master, thus saying, thou reprochest also. 46. And he said, Wo unto you also ye lawyers: for ye lays men with burdens grievous to be born, and ye your selves touch not the burden with one of your fingers.

45, 46. Note 1. Bad men can bear guilt but not reproach for it. 2. Strict Doctor condemneth loose and guilty Preachers.

47. Wo unto you: for ye build the sepulchres of the prophets, and your fathers killed them. 48. Truly ye were witnesses that ye allow the deeds of your fathers: for they indeed killed them, and ye build their sepulchres.

47, 48. See Math. 23. 30. Hypocrisy in the names and honour of the Martyrs and Saints, and kill the living.

49. Therefore also said the wise dom of God, I will send them prophets and apostles, and Jerome them they shall slay and persecute: 50. That the blood of the prophets which was shed from the foundation of the world, might be required of this generation;

49, 50. Your Fore-fathers sins, and you shall be revenged on you shortly.

51. From the blood of Abel unto the blood of Zacharias, which perished between the altar and the temple: verily I say unto you, shall be required of this generation.

52. Wo unto you lawyers, for ye have taken away the key of knowledge: ye enter not in, and them that were entering, ye hindered.

51, 52. Note: The just description of wicked Clergy.

53. And as he said these things unto them, the scribes and the Pharisees began to urge him vehemently, and to provoke him to speak of many things: 54. Laying wa
for him, and seeking to catch something out of his mouth, that they might accuse him.
33, 34. Their wrath set their wits on work to ensnare him.

CHAP. XII.

In the mean time, when there were gathered together an innumerable multitude of people, inasmuch that they trode one upon another, he began to say unto his disciples first of all, Beware ye of the leaven of the Pharisees, which is hypocrisy.

Note: He disdained none from joyning with them in any good, or hearing the law from them, but to avoid their hypocrisy, and ceremonious covers of iniquity, joined with malice against Christ.

2. For there is nothing covered, that shall not be revealed; neither hid, that shall not be known.
3. Therefore whatsoever ye have spoken in darkness, shall be heard in the light; and that which ye have spoken in the ear in closets, shall be proclaimed upon the housetops.

2, 3. Truth not to Scretifie and Decel; for all secret sins shall be opened at the last.

Note: O how many will that day shame! If our wisdom, by due confession, take came fromer to our selves.

4. And I say unto you my friends, Be not afraid of them that kill the body, and after that, have no more that they can do. 5. But I will warn you whom you shall fear: Fear him, which after he hath killed, hath power to cast into hell; yea, I say unto you, Fear him.

5, 6. I give it you as the most friendly counsel. Take heed of too much fear of man, lest it cause you to betray your Souls: They can but kill the Body: The Soul overthrows it; and man's welfare or misery is after death: Persecutors or Tyrants cannot reach of hurt you after death. But, as you live your selves, fear God, whose justice

will be executed on the ungodly after death, and when he hath taken away their Souls, he will cast them into Hell: Again, I say, be sure to fear him.

8. Are not five sparrows sold for two farthings, and not one of them is forgotten before God? 9. But even the very hairs of your head are all numbered. Fear not therefore: ye are of more value than many sparrows.

6, 7. God's Providence extends to a Sparrow, and to the smallest creatures; (for he is omnipotent, and all-sufficient, and maintaineth all;) and much more to you! There is not an hair of your heads not caused, not known, and not regarded by him: And doth he disregard your lives or welfare, whom he hath raised above the rank of Brutes?

Note: God is as sufficient for every creature and event, as if he had but that one in mind.

8. Also I say unto you, Whosoever shall confess me before men, him shall the Son of man also confess before the angels of God.

8. Own me sincerely in the time of Tryal, and I will own you before Angels, where are your greatest concerns.

9. But he that denieth me before men, shall he denied before the angels of God.

9. Without true Repentance.

10. And whosoever shall speak a word against the Son of man, it shall be forgiven him: but unto him that blasphemeth against the holy Ghost, it shall not be forgiven.

10. To speak against me, as a man, is pardonable: But when I shall send the Spirit of Miracles and Holiness to be my Witness in the World, they that will not be convinced by this Spirit, but blasphemously say, It is the power and work of the Devils, do sin against the left and great means of Conviction, and being uncured, are unpardoned.

11. And when they bring you unto the synagogues, and unto magistrates, and powers, take ye no thought

N

Digitized by Google
thought how or what thing ye shall answer, or what ye shall say: 12. For the holy Ghost shall teach you in the same hour, what ye ought to say.

11, 12. Let not the fear of your unready speech discourage you, but trust the Spirit of God to help you.

13. And one of the company said unto him, Master, speak to my brother, that he divide the inheritance with me. 14. And he said unto him, Man, who made me a judge, or a divider over you?

13, 14. Whether the man would have had Christ taken on him an authoritative Decision, or only a free Arbitration, is uncertain; which ever it was, Christ refused it: A work of worldly Rule he disclaimed: And he would not be so imprudent as to offend men by an Arbitration without need.

15. And he said unto them, Take heed, and beware of covetousness: for a man's life consisteth not in the abundance of the things which he possesseth.

15. Take heed of being too desirous of wealth or plenty: For neither life, nor the comfort of life, depends on plenty, but on the holy and obedient life of what you have, and on the blessing and love of God.

16. And he spake a parable unto them, saying, The ground of a certain rich man brought forth plentifully. 17. And he thought within himself, saying, What shall I do, because I have no room where to bestow my fruits? 18. And he said, This will I do: I will pull down my barns, and build greater; and there will I bestow all my fruits and my goods. 19. And I will say to my soul, Soul, thou hast much goods laid up for many years; take thin ece, eat, drink, and be merry. 20. But God said unto him, Thou fool, this night thy soul shall be required of thee: then whose shall those things be which thou hast provided?
much more will he do, the you, O ye of little faith? 24, 25, 26, 27, 28. 29. Note: All this is against distrustful care and trouble, and not diligent labour in a Calling, or prudent care to do our work, and avoid evil. See Matt. 6.

29. And seek not ye what ye shall eat, or what ye shall drink, neither be ye of doubtful mind. 30. For all these things do the nations of the world seek after: and your Father knoweth, that ye have need of these things.

31. But rather seek ye the kingdom of God, and all these things shall be added unto you. 32. Seek first, etc. 33. Fear not, little flock: for it is your Father's good pleasure to give you the kingdom. 34. Note 1. Christ's Flock was then little, and will be so comparatively on Earth, but not in Heaven. 2. They shall have a Kingdom. 3. By the gift of God's good pleasure. 4. That they shall have the Kingdom of Heaven, should be above distrustful fear of Earth.

35. Sell that ye have, and give alms: provide your selves bags which wax not old, a treasure in the heavens that faileth not, where no thief approacheth, neither moth corrupteth. 36. See Matt. 6. 19, 20. The wisdom of Faith is to do all we can in this World, in preparation for another, and at any rate, to make fare of Salvation.

37. For where your treasure is, there will your heart be also. 38. Either by De sire, if you are uncertain to obtain it, or by Devi ght, if you have Assurance or strong hope; or in full Joy, when you possess it. 39. Note: A man's Treasure is that which he desireth will make him most happy, and with and seeketh it accordingly.

A dreadful Word to worldly men, whose hearts are not on Heaven 35. Let your loins be girded about, and your lights burning: 36. And ye your selves like unto men that wait for their Lord, when he will return from the wedding, that when he come and knocketh, they may open unto him immediately.

35, 36. Live in a constant prepared waiting for my coming, and your change; and let not your preparation be to make an end last.

37. Blessed are those servants whom the Lord when he cometh shall find watching: verily I say unto you, that he shall gird himself, and make them to sit down to meat, and will come forth and serve them.

38. Christ will do more for them, than if he were a Servant to them.

39. And if he shall come in the second watch, or come in the third watch, and find them so, blessed are those servants. See Matt. 24, 45.

40. And this know, that if the good-man of the house had known what hour the thief would come, he would have watched, and not have suffered his house to be broken through.

41. Then Peter said unto him, Lord, speakest thou this parable unto us, or even to all? 42. And the Lord said, Who then is that faithful and wise Steward, whom I shall make ruler over his household, to give them their portion of meat in due season? 43. Blessed is that servant, whom his Lord when he cometh,

He cometh, shall find so doing.
44. Of a truth I say unto you, that he will make him ruler over all that he hath.

41, 42, 43, 44. I speak it to all so far as they are God's Stewards of their several trusts: But especially to those that are ruling Stewards over the Churches, appointed to give the Children their due food in season: All such shall be rewarded.

45. But and if that servant say in his heart, My lord delayeth his coming; and shall begin to beat the men servants, and maidens, and to eat and drink, and to be drunken: 46. The lord of that servant will come in a day when he looketh not for him, and at an hour when he is not aware, and will cut him in sunder, and will appoint him his portion with the unbelievers.

45, 46. Note, This dreadful threatening is also a prophecy of a worldly persecuting fire, that should arise under pretence of ruling and feeding the household of Christ, both Civil and Ecclesiastical.

47. And that servant which knew his lord's will, and prepared not himself, neither did according to his will, shall be beaten with many stripes.

47. The sins against knowledge are greater far than those of ignorance.

Note, There are degrees of pain in Hell.

Note, And wicked Clergy men and Teachers will have the greatest Torture.

48. But he that knew not, and did commit things worthy of stripes, shall be beaten with few stripes. For unto whomsoever much is given, of him shall be much required: and to whom men have committted much, of him they will ask the more.

48. Some in hell have few stripes comparatively.

Note, Great gifts must be used with great diligence; and great power and trust, and charges, are rather to be feared than ambitiously sought. Little do the Great Con-querors of the World, or those that thrive for Church-preferment: believe and consider what Duty, or deep Damnation, they so much labour for.

49. I am come to send fire on the earth, and what will I, if it be already kindled? 50. But I have a baptism to be baptized with, and how am I straitened till it be accomplished!

49, 50. I come to do that work that was set the World on fire, and occasion persecution: And it is already begun. And I am to lead the way in suffering, and to through those flames my self; And I am in pain till it be accomplished.

51. Suppose ye that I am come to give peace on earth? I tell ye, Nay; but rather division. 52. For henceforth there shall be five in one house divided, three against two, and two against three. 53. The father shall be divided against the son, and the son against the father; and the mother against the daughter, and the daughter against the mother.

51, 52, 53. Some think that the Com of the Messiah, will settle an universal peace but they are mistaken: I come to conq Saran's Kingdom, and give Souls from which will not be without a conflict come to divide men from sin and Satan, possess them in peace: And the Sold of Satan will pursue those that by escape; natural kindred will not recon them.

54. And he said also to the people, when ye see a cloud rise out of the west, straightway ye say, This cometh a shoure: and so it is.

55. And when ye see the foul wind blow, ye say, There will be heat: and it cometh to pafs. 56. Hypocrites, ye can discern the fig of the skie, and of the earth: how is it, that ye do not disc this time?

54.
The necessity of Repentance.

1. Some Pilate had killed for stirring up the People against the Roman's Government.

2. And Jesus answering, said unto them, Suppose ye that these Galileans were sinners above all the Galileans, because they suffered such things? 3. I tell you, Nay; but except ye repent, ye shall all likewise perish.

3. Note, We must not judge them the greatest sinners that suffer most here: The Judge on the bench may do more wrong than the thief whom he haggeth: And famous conquerors, than robbers. The day is coming that must set all right. These Jews after suffered much more.

4. Or those eighteen, upon whom the tower in Siloam fell, and slew them, think ye that they were sinners above all men that dwelt in Jerusalem? 5. I tell you, Nay: but except ye repent, ye shall all likewise perish.

6. He spake also this parable: A certain man had a fig-tree planted in his vineyard, and he came and sought fruit thereon, and found none. 7. Then said he unto the dresser of his vineyard, Behold, these three years I come seeking fruit on this fig-tree, and find none: cut it down, why cumbereth it the ground? 8. And he answering, said unto him, Lord, let it alone this year also, till I shall dig about it, and dung it: 9. And if it bear fruit, well: and if not, then after that, thou shalt cut it down.

10. And he was teaching in one of the synagogues on the Sabbath.

11. And behold, there was a woman which had a spirit of infirmity eighteen years, and was bowed together, and could in no wise lift up herself.
12. And when Jesus saw her, he called her to him, and said unto her, Woman thou art loosed from thine infirmity. 13. And he laid his hands on her: and immediately she was made straight, and glorified God.


14. And the ruler of the synagogue answered with indignation, because that Jesus had healed on the sabbath-day, and said unto the people, There are six days in which men ought to work: in them therefore come and be healed, and not on the sabbath day.

15. The Lord then answered him, and said, Thou hypocrite, dost not each one of you on the sabbath loose his ox or his ass from the stall, and lead him away to watering? 16. And ought not this woman being a daughter of Abraham, whom Satan hath bound to these eighteen years, be loosed from this bond on the sabbath-day?

14, 15, 16. Note: It is the part of Hypocrites to set up Ceremony and Circumstances against Moral Duties, (or necessary good Works) to Body or Soul.

17. And when he had said these things, all his adversaries were ashamed: and all the people rejoiced for all the glorious things that were done by him.

18. His Resurrection and his Miracle convinced the common people of the shameful Error of that ceremonious Ruler.

19. Then said he, Unto what is the kingdom of God like? and what re-employs shall I resemble it? 19. It is like a grain of mustard-seed, which a man took and cast into his garden, and it grew and waxed a great tree: and the fowls of the air lodged in the branches of it.

20. And again he said, Whereunto shall I liken the kingdom of God?
and all the prophets in the kingdom of God, and you your selves thrust out.

28. It will increase your torment, to see those that never saw and heard what you have done, to be in Heaven, and you thrust out to Hell for your unbelief and wickedness.

29. And they shall come from the east, and from the west, and from the north, and from the south, and shall sit down in the kingdom of God. 30. And behold, there are last which shall be first, and there are first which shall be last.

29, 30. The faithful shall be received from all parts of the Earth: And some that shall be born and called long hence, shall be more excellent persons, and have a more glorious Crown, than many that are called now; and when you Jews are rejected, who were a Church before them.

31. The same day there came certain of the Pharisees, saying unto him, Get thee out, and depart hence: for Herod will kill thee.

32. And he said unto them, Go ye and tell that fox, Behold, I cast out devils, and I do cures to day and to morrow, and the third day I shall be perfected.

31, 32. N. I. E. He liken's Herod to a Fox for futility and cruelty. This Example of Christ will not justify any contumelious Language against Kings; though they, that are called to it, may plainly and humbly tell them of their fin and danger, regarding their due honour. And Historians may truly describe them when they are dead.

33. Nevertheless, I must walk to day and to morrow, and the day following: for it cannot be that a prophet perish out of Jerusalem.

33. Whatever Herod do, I shall do my work, and finish it; and shall not suffer by Herod in Galilee, which is his Jurisdiction; but at Jerusalem, the place of killing Prophets.

34. O Jerusalem, Jerusalem, which killest the prophets; and stonest them that are sent unto thee: how often would I have gathered thy children together, as a hen doth gather her brood under her wings, and ye would not?

34. O sinful, miserable Jerusalem! How oft would I have gathered thy whole City and Nation (old and young) into my Bosom of Love, and my Church, by making you my disciples, as tenderly as a Hen doth gather and love her Chickens, not casting out your children, but taking in your Nation, as God did before: if you had not cut off your selves by unbelief, and obstinate rejecting the Grace offered to your Nation?

35. Behold, your house is left unto you desolate: And verily I say unto you, ye shall not see me, until the time come when ye shall say, Blessed is he that cometh in the name of the Lord.

35. Your Temple, which you glory in, shall shortly be demolished; and your City destroyed: And I tell you, that you shall not rejoice in the Salvation of the Messiah, for whom you wait; till you learn to honour me with Hosannas, and to welcome them that preach my Gospel to you.

CHAP. XIV.

1. And it came to pass, as he went into the house of one of the chief Pharisees to eat bread on the sabbath day, that they watched him. 2. And behold, there was a certain man before him, which had the drospie. 3. And Jesus answering spake unto the lawyers and Pharisees, saying, Is it lawful to heal on the sabbath-day? 4. And they held their peace. And he took him, and healed him, and let him go:

1, 2, 3, 4. N. O. Christ chose so usually to heal on the Sabbath, that it seems he purposely chose that time, to shew them what work should be preferred. He would not forbear doing good, to avoid the offence of erroneous Hypocrites.

5. And answered them, saying:
Which of you shall have an ass, or an ox fallen into a pit, and will not straightway pull him out on the sabbath-day? And they could not answer him again to these things?

7. And he put forth a parable to those which were bidden, when he marked how they chose out the chief rooms; saying unto them, When thou art bidden of any man to a wedding, sit not down in the highest room; but in the lowest room; lest a more honourable man than thou be bidden of him; and he that bade thee and him come and say to thee, Give this man place; and thou begin with shame to take the lowest room. But when thou art bidden, go and sit down in the lowest room; that when he that bade thee cometh he may say unto thee, Friend, go up higher: and thou shalt have worship in the presence of them that sit at meat with thee.

7, 8, 9, 10. Note: Christ disdained not to give Rules of Decency for civil Conversation, when the Virtue of Humility, or the Vice of Pride are concerned therein.

11. For whatsoever exalteth himself, shall be abased; and he that humbleth himself, shall be exalted.

11. God will exalt the humble, and abase the proud; and therefore we must humble our selves.

12. Then said he also to him that bade him, When thou makest a dinner or a supper, call not thy friends, nor thy brethren, neither thy kinsmen, nor thy rich neighbours; but bid the poor, the maimed, the lame, the blind: And thou shalt be blessed; for they cannot repent thee: for thou shalt be recompensed at the resurrection of the just.

12, 13, 14. It is good in its season to make Feasts of Charity, and to rejoice with Friends; but to avoid Prodigality, let thy most usual feasting be Feasts of Charity; And in them it is the Poor that thou must feed, and from God that thou must expect thy reward.

Note: Some hence infer, that there is no reward till the Resurrection: But in Scripture the Resurrection is oft taken for the Life after this, even before the Resurrection of the Body.

Note: Christ oft forbids things in absolute words, when he meanteth but comparatively: So here, feast not rich Friends, that is, not so much as the Poor.

15. And when one of them that sat at meat with him, heard these things, he said unto him, Blessed is he that shall eat bread in the kingdom of God.

15. They will be happy, that shall live to see, and rejoice in the Kingdom of the Messiah when he cometh.

16. Then said he unto him, A certain man made a great supper, and bade many: And sent his servant at supper-time to say to them that were bidden, Come, for all things are now ready.

16, 17. Note: God sent his Son and the Gospel to few, and invited them into the Kingdom of the Messiah; and bade his Ministers tell them, that Christ was come, and all is ready on his part. He is a sufficient Saviour, and none shall perish for want of the performance of his part (antecedent).

18. And they all with one consent began to make excuse. The first said unto him, I have bought a piece of ground, and I must needs go and see it: I pray thee have me excused. 19. And another said, I have bought five yoke of oxen, and I go to prove them: I pray thee have me excused. 20. And another said, I have married a wife, and I must needs stay at home: I pray thee have me excused.
21. So that servant came and heared his lord these things. Then the master of the house being angry, said to his servant, Go out quickly into the streets and lanes of the city, and bring in hither the poor, and the maimed, and the halt, and the blind. 22. And the servant said, Lord, it is done as thou hast commanded, and yet there is room.

22. God was angry with the Jews, and sent his Ministers to call the Gentiles when the Jews despised as.prophane.

23. And the Lord said unto the servant, Go out into the high ways, and hedges, and compel them to come in, that my house may be filled.

24. Go to the most barbarous remote Nations, and call them into the Church, and be importunate with them, and take no denial, that my Church may be Catholick and enlarged.

25. For I say unto you, that none of those men which were hidden, shall taste of my supper.

26. Those refusing Jews, that were first invited, shall not come into the Church of Christ.

27. And there went great multitudes with him: and he turned, and said unto them. 28. If any man come to me, and hate not his father, and mother, and wife, and children, and brethren, and sisters, yes, and his own life also, he cannot be my disciple.

29. If he love them not less than my Kingdom, and cannot for it forsake them, men do a hated thing.

30. This disobedience none from natural affection and duty, but Christ must be preferred.

31. And whosoever doth not bear his cross, and come after me, cannot be my disciple.

32. He that cannot suffer for me, and for Salvation, but less more by his life, can be no true disciple of mine.

33. For which of you intending to build a tower, fittest not down first, and counteth the cost, whether he have sufficient to finish it? 34. Left hasty after he hath laid the foundation, and is not able to finish it, all that behold it, begin to mock him. 35. Saying, This man began to build, and was not able to finish. 36. Or what king going to make war against another king, fittest not down first and consulteth whether he be able with ten thousand to meet him that cometh against him with twenty thousand? 37. Or else, while the other is yet a great way off, he sendeth an ambassage, and deserveth conditions of peace.

38. And whatsoever be of you, that forsaketh not all that he hath, he cannot be my disciple.

39. If he prefer not the Kingdom of Heaven before all worldly interest, and forsake it not all comparatively in esteem and resolution now, and in act when he is called to it.

40. Salt is good: but if the salt have lost his savour, wherewith shall it be seasoned? 41. It is neither fit for the land, nor yet for the dunghill; but men cast it out. He that hath ears to hear, let him hear.

42. Ye are the Salt of this corrupted World: But if you, my Disciples, especially Preachers, should apostatize, you would be the vilest and most hopeless men on Earth, despised.
friends and her neighbours together, saying, Rejoice with me, for I have found the piece which I had lost. 10. Likewise I say unto you, There is joy in the presence of the angels of God, over one sinner that repenteth.

8, 9, 10. Note 1. Oh what Love do we owe to Angels, who is much love us? Why do we not desire their company more, that of this wicked World?

Angels Love is but a Copy of God's Love And shall we distrust, fear, and flee from Love it self? 2. Angels and good Men rejoice at a Sinner's conversion: Devils and wicked men are against it. How contrar are these? 3. Do Angels rejoice at the conversion of a sinner? What joy should the converted themselves then have in it? 4. Unconverted sinners gratefully Devils, and deny Angels the joy of Love.

11. And he said, A certain man had two sons: 12. And the younger son gathered all together and took his journey into a far country, and there wasted his name and life with riotous living.

11, 12, 13. Note 1. Foolish sinners have their concerns in their own hands, than in God's. Note 2. When it left to themselves, it is soon wasted. Note 3. Riotous flesh-pleasing is the destructive sin. Note 4. When sinners go from God their Father, they go to destruction.

14. And when he was spent a there arose a mighty famine in the land; and he began to be in want. 15. And he went and joined himself to a citizen of that country: and he sent him into his fields to feed Swine. 16. And he would fain have filled his belly with the husk that the Swine did eat: and no man gave unto him.

14, 15, 16. He hired himself a Servant to feed Swine, to prevent famishing; and they would not let him fill his belly w...
the Code of the Carube Tree, which was
the Swine's mese.

17. And when he came to himself, he said, How many hired ser-

18. I will arise, and go to my father, and will say unto him, Father,

19. And am no more worthy to be called thy son; make me as one of thy hire-

20. And he arose, and came to his father. But when he was yet a

21. And the son said unto him, Father, I have sinned against heav-

22. But the father said to his servants, Bring forth the best robe,

23. And bring hither the fatted calf, and kill it; and let us eat and

24. For this my son was dead, and is alive again; he was lost, and

25. Now his elder son was in the field: and as he came and drew

26. And he called one of the servants, and asked what these things meant; 27. And he said unto him, Thy brother is com;

27. And he said unto him, Thy brother is com;

28. And thy father hath killed the fatted calf, because he hath received

29. And peradventure he is. 5. God is reconcilable to the sinner, by his goodness, though not to his sin.

30. Our own humble and penitent confessions must go before God's forgivenness

31. But the father said unto his servants, Bring forth the best robe, and put it on him, and put a ring on his hand, and shoes on his feet.

32. God findeth sinners in shamefull rags, and misery, but clotheth them as his Children with righteousness and holiness.

33. And bring hither the fatted calf, and kill it; and let us eat and be merry.

34. Let us feast and rejoice for the return of a Prodigal Son.

35. For this my son was dead, and is alive again; he was lost, and is found. And they began to be merry.

36. The state of sin is a lost condition, and a converted sinner is found and recovered, it is a dead condition, and conversion is a reviving. It giveth the life of Grace in order to the life of Glory.

37. God speaketh of himself, as rejoicing in a sinner's conversion. How little cause then have such to doubt whether God will receive them? 2. How is God called a Father to wicked Prodigals? And as his Nature is Love it self, and as he made man's Nature capable of happiness, and as he hath conditionally pardoned all through Christ.
25, 26, 27. Thy Father hath received him with joy.

28. And he was angry, and would not go in: therefore came his father out, and intreated him.

29. He envied his Brother's Entertainment, and was offended with his Father's Love and Mercy.

Note 1. The elder Brother is the Jew, (who not only in his unbelief despised the Gentiles, but) when converted to Christ, is hardly brought to communion with the Gentiles. And also all that have from their childhood served God, and are ready to grudge at the Entertainment of wicked men converted. Note 2. There is in the best of us, though we need God's mercy ourselves, a disposition to envy his Grace to others. Note 3. God is put to bear with the faults of his Children, and in mercy to foop to them in their envy and quarrelsome with others. Note 4. There is a sinful affect of their own goodness, that inclineth God's own Servants even to withdraw and separate from his House, because he entertaineth returning Prodigals. Thus God is put to bear with all.

29. And he answering, said to his father, Lo, these many years do I serve thee, neither transgressed I at any time thy commandment, and yet thou never gavest me a kid, that I might make merry with my friends:

Note 1. We be apt to overvalue our own service of God, and to undervalue his Mercy.

30. But as soon as this thy son was come, which hath devoured thy living with harlots, thou hast killed for him the fatted calf.

Note 1. Even good men are apt to grudge at God's Mercy to sinners, and would not have him so gracious to them as he is; and they are not so ready to forgive it, but upbraid others with sin which God doth not upbraid them with, who have it more than we can do. 2. Were we in the hands of our best Brethren, we should speed worse than in God's hands.

31. And he said unto him, Son, thou art ever with me, and all that I have is thine.
And I say unto you, Make to your selves friends of the mammon of unrighteousness; that when ye fail, they may receive you into everlasting habitations.

9. It is counsel of great importance to you, so to use your time and estate, which worldly men abuse to fin, that when you must surely and certainly die, and leave all your wealth behind you, ye may be received into the everlasting heavenly Mansions.

Note 1. The wealth, that by the wicked is abused to damnation, may, by Believers, be used to salvation. 2. All this World will fail and forsake us. 3. It is not those that we do good to, but yet it is God, for the good we do them, that will receive us into Heaven. 4. This is a Testimony of the Soul's immortality, and of the Life to come: When we leave this World, we are received into everlasting habitations.

10. He that is faithful in that which is leaft, is faithful also in much: and he that is unjust in the leaft, is unjust also in much.

10. God will much judge men according to their use of the little things of this World, and will judge them meet for the great things of Glory, that have used these well: But he will judge them unmeet for heavenly felicity, that could not use well the small things of this transitory life.

11. If therefore ye have not been faithful in the unrighteous mammon, who will commit to your trust the true riches?

11. Do you think God will judge you meet for Heaven, that were false in your use of earthly things?

12. And if ye have not been faithful in that which is another man's, who shall give you that which is your own?

12. And if ye have proved false and untruthly in your Stewardship, and use of God's entrusted Mercies in this life of Trypt, where you had no assurance to stay an hour, do you think God will place such, as Proprietors, in the Everlasting Kingdom.

13. No servant can serve two masters: for either he will hate the one, and love the other; or else he

he will hold to the one, and despise the other. Ye cannot serve God and mammon.

13. A divided heart between God and the World, is false to God and, so it self: Ye cannot be true Christians and worldlings too.

14. And the Pharisees also who were covetous, heard all these things: and they derided him.

14. Note; The love of Riches rife up against holy and mortifying Doctrine, with hatred; and scorn.

15. And he laid unto them, Ye are they which justify your selves before men; but God knoweth your hearts: for that which is highly esteem'd amongst men, is abomination in the sight of God.

15. You applaud another, and keep up a worldly Reputation, but God seeth all the evil of your hearts; and he abhorreth the covetous, whom you blest; and all proud, and prosperous worldlings, when they are highest in men's esteem.

16. The law and the prophets were until John: since that time the kingdom of God is preached, and every man predesteth into it.

16. Till John's days, the Law and the Prophets, that darkly foretold the Kingdom of God as afar off, were the chief Teachers of the Church; but since John's preaching, that this Kingdom is at hand, multitudes gladly receive that Tydings, and crowd oppress it with earneffness.

17. And it is easier for heaven, and earth to pass, then one title of the law to fail.

17. The Law is God's true Word, and shall never prove false; for the natural moral part shall continue; the Ceremonious part, the Types and Prophecies, pass not away unfulfilled: They all pointed unto Christ, who fulfilleth them, though he abrogate them.

18. Whosoever putteth away his wife, and marrieth another, committeth adultery: and whosoever marrieth her that is put away, from her husband, committeth adultery.

18. See Matt. 5. 32.

19. There was a certain rich man which was clothed in purple, and fine linen, and fared sumptuously every day.

19. Note; This is the description of a Sensualist that liveth after the flesh, To be clothed in Purple and Silk, and to have every day a costly Table of delightful meat and drink. Sensual flesh pleasing is the common damning sin, and Riches are the fuel of fleshly desires.

20. And there was a certain beggar named Lazarus, which was laid at his gate, full of sores. He longed to be fed with the crumbs which fell from the rich man's table: moreover the dogs came and licked his sores.

20. Note. 1. It is like he had some relief there, else he would not have lain there. 2. The worst men are not usually most afflicted in this life. 3. Rich fleshly men make too great a difference between themselves and the Poor, and think their superfluities, and fumption of delicious fare, must be preferred before the necessities of their poor Brethren. 4. Dogs help him, whom the rich Sensualist would not help in any competent degree.

22. And it came to pass that the beggar died, and was carried by the angels into Abraham's bosom: the rich man also died and was buried.

22. Note; Though this be a Parable, Christ would not by it instruct false Doctrine: Therefore in the which, that the Soul of a man may be without the Body, but goeth to Joy or Misery. Abraham is there alive, and Lazarus in his bosom; (before the final Resurrection). 2. Death quickly levelleth Rich and Poor; the voluptuous and the afflicted. 3. Angels that guard the just in life, refuse not at death to serve their Sould as their Convoy unto Happiness. 4. To be buried in a Grave, and not to dust, is the best that the pumperned flesh of the wicked can expect.

23. And in hell he lift up his eyes, being in torments, and seeth Abraham.
24. And he cried and said, Father Abraham, have mercy on me, and send Lazarus, that he may dip the tip of his finger in water and cool my tongue; for I am tormented in this flame.

Note 1. The Parable speaketh metaphorically, of souls, as if they had tongues; which signifies no more than, they have a current faculty of their kind. 2. Voluptuous rich men would shortly beg even for a very little, and that of those whom they despised, if they could help them. 3. By flame is meant a means of torment.

25. But Abraham said, Son, remember that thou in thy lifetime receivest thy good things, and likewise Lazarus evil things: but now he is comforted, and thou art tormented.

26. And besides all this, between us and you there is a great gulf fixed: so that they which would pass from hence to you, cannot; neither can they pass to us, that dwell here from hence.

27. Then he said, I pray thee, therefore, father, that thou wouldst send him to my father's house: 28. For I have five brethren; that he may testify unto them, lest they also come into this place of torment.

29. O send him to my brethren on Earth, to tell them what I suffer? and why: that they may not come hither, who are yet recoverable, and in a state of hope, though my case be desperate.

Note: Whether the damned retain any love to, and care of their brethren on Earth, or whether this be spoken only to explain their condition here, is uncertain.

29. Abraham saith unto him, They have Moses and the prophets: let them hear them.

30. The God of Wisdom and Power hath determined of the way and means of converting men, which is by his Word and Ministers, and not by Messengers from the Dead. If they will be faved, it must be by God's appointed Means, and not any other.

30. And he said, Nay, father Abraham: but if one went unto them from the dead, they will repent.

31. Sure such an Apparition would convince them, and affect them to Repentance.

31. And he said unto him, If they hear not Moses and the prophets, neither will they be persuaded, though one rise from the dead.

31. (If it were so, God will not change his way of Salvation to persuade wilful, sensual sinners. But it is not so; for God's Word and Ministers are a more suitable means of converting sinners, than a man would be from the dead: God will bless his own Means: And afterwards men will not renew their Nature, and Kindle in them a Love to God and Holiness. And how little should we know whether one from the Dead
Ch. 17: Offences to be avoided. St. Luke. The power of Faith. Ch. 1

to thee, saying, I repeat; thou art to forgive him.

3, 4. Take heed that you hinder not a man in the matters of his Salvation, by persuasion, example, or perdition: But if a man offend you by sin, or injury, repent; and if he repent, forgive him.

Note 1. The meaning is not that the more repentance of one that will seven times a day commit gross sin, or injury, and say repent, when it is notorious that he do not, should be forgiven for an hypocritical word: But that True Repentance should be accepted, how oft soever men offend.

Qd. Must we not forgive men, unless they confess and repent? Ans. There are five degrees of forgiveness: 1. We must forgive the impenitent, as to love them not, and to desire and endear them to us without revenge. 2. But we must forgive none but the penitent so far as to take them into the special Love, which belongeth to Christian Friends. But then it suppose that the fault be a gross sin, and not an intry by tolerable Errour, which he is not convinced of, nor can be.

5. And the apostles said unto the Lord, Increase our faith.

6. Seeing it is by Faith that we must have Miracles, and must be saved. Give us more Faith.

6. And the Lord said, If ye have faith as a grain of mustard seed, it might say unto this mycamine tree Be thou plucked up by the roots be thou planted in the sea and it should obey you.

6. If your Faith be true, though it small, no difficulty shall prevail against nor any Miracle be too hard, when God his Spirit shall move you to it, who will do the office of Miracles.

7. But which of you having a servant plowing, or feeding cattle shall say unto him by and by, when he is come from the field, Go, as fit down to meat? 8. And will not rather say unto him, Make ready wherewith I may sup, and gird thy self, and serve me till I have eaten and drunken, and afterward shalt eat and drink? 9. Doth not thank that servant because he did
the things that were commanded him? I traw not. to. So likewise ye, when ye shall have done all those things which are commanded you, say, We are unprofitable servants: we have done that which was our duty to do.

7, 8, 9, 10. But see that neither your Faith nor Miracles puff you up, or make you think too highly of your selves: Nor must you desire it to make you conspicuous in the world, but for your Master's Service, which is your duty, and by which you must not think that you are profitable to him, but obedient to him for your own and others good. If you have Servants your selves, you will not let them prefer themselves and their own interest, before you and your commands: So you, when you have preacht and cast out Devils, and done your best, think not that you have profited God, and thereby deserve to be dignified for the merit of your work; but say, we did but our duty, and the privilege and benefit is our own and others.

Note, It's hard to Analyze Luke's words, because it is uncertain when he sets them together that were spoken together; and when he joyneth words spoken on divers occasions.

2. When Christ judgeth the unprofitable Servant to enter darkness, and yet here calleth all unprofitable: the sense is, that no man can add any thing to God; or profit him, nor is he a Receiver, but a Giver; no Angel can merit of him in Commutative Justice. But we must be Profitable to one another, and our selves, by improving God's Mercy: And Christ to loveth his own, as he will reward this, as if it profited himself.

11. And it came to pass, as he went to Jerusalem, that he passed through the midst of Samaria and Galilee. 12. And as he entred into a certain village, there met him ten men that were lepers, which stood afar off: 13. And they lifted up their voices, and said, Jesus Master, have mercy on us. 14. And when he saw them, he said unto them, Go show your selves unto the priests. And it came to pass, that as they went, they were cleansed.

15. And one of them, when he saw that he was healed, turned back, and with a loud voice glorified God; 16. And fell down on his face at his feet, giving him thanks; and he was a Samaritan.

17. And Jesus answering said, Were there not ten cleansed? but where are the nine? 18. There are not found that returned to give glory to God, save this stranger.

Note; Many receive Mercies, but few glorifie God with true thanksgiving.

19. And he said unto him, Arise, go thy way; thy faith hath made thee whole.

Note; This oft-used word of Christ, is against them, that say, that because it is Christ that healeth, or justifieth, it is not Faith: As if the Office of Christ, and of Faith, might not Concur henceto.

20. And when he was demanded by the Pharisees, when the kingdom of God should come; he answered them, and said, The kingdom of God cometh not with observation. 21. Neither shall they say, Lo here, or lo there: for behold, the kingdom of God is within you.
Ch. 17. How Christ

St. Luke.

will come.

Ch. 17.

22. And he said unto the disciples, The days will come when ye shall desire to see one of the days of the Son of man, and ye shall not see it.

23. And they shall fall to you, See here, or see there: go not after them, nor follow them. 24. For as the lightning that lighteth out of the one part under heaven, shineth unto the other part under heaven: so shall also the Son of man be in his day.

25. But he must suffer many things, and be rejected of this generation. 26. And as it was in the days of Noe, so shall it be also in the days of the Son of man.

27. They did eat, they drank, they married wives, they were given in marriage, until the day that Noe entered into the ark: and the flood came and destroyed them all.

28. Likewise also as it was in the days of Lot; they did eat, they drank, they bought, they sold, they planteth, they builded: 29. But the same day that Lot went out of Sodom, it rained fire and brimstone from heaven, and destroyed them all: 30. Even thus shall it be in the day when the Son of man is revealed.

31. In that day, he which shall be upon the house-top, and his servant in the house, let him not come down to take it away: and he that is in the field, let him likewise not return back.

32. Remember Lot’s wife.

33. Whosoever shall seek to save his life shall lose it; and whosoever shall lose his life for my sake shall preserve it.

34. I tell you, in that night there shall be two men in one bed; the one shall be taken, and the other shall be left. 35. Two women shall be grinding together; one shall be taken, and the other left.

36. And all that hear these sayings of mine, and do them, shall receive of the Holy Ghost, joyned with the Fall of them and other Enemies, or his Self coming, is doubted of by Expastors.

37. And they answered and said unto him, Where, Lord? And he saith unto them,

And he spake a parable unto them, saying, that men ought always to pray, and not to faint;
1. To hold on in earnest importunity and hope, and not to grow cold, and slack, and heartless.

2. Saying, There was in a city a judge which feared not God, neither regarded man. 3. And there was a widow in that city, and she came unto him, laying, Avenge me of mine adversary.

3. Note; Woe to the Land that hath such Judges. She said, Do me Justice against my Adversary.

4. And he would not for a while but afterward he said within himself, Though I fear not God, nor regard man; 5. Yet because this widow troubleth me, I will avenge her, lest by her continual coming she weary me.

4, 5. Note; Where there is no fear of God, yet avoiding slander and shame for injustice, may make a Judge do Justice to the oppressed. But they that come to Diabolical Malignity, will delight to do mischief, and destroy the Just, and will take their wickedness for their glory.

6. And the Lord said, Hear what the unjust judge faileth. 7. And shall not God avenge his own elect, which cry day and night unto him, though he bear long with them? 8. I tell you that he will avenge them speedily. Nevertheless, when the Son of man cometh, shall he find faith on the earth?

6, 7, 8. Will importunity prevail with a wicked Judge? and will not importunate prayer prevail with God to do Justice for his chosen, praying people? I tell you, though the time seem long to you, he will make no delay to do them Justice in due time.

Note; Importunity moved the man by wearying him; but it procuredth mercy from God only, by making us fit Receivers of it. Men will depend by impatience, before deliverance cometh.

9. And he spake this parable unto certain which trusted in themselves that they were righteous, and despised others:

9. He thought meet to rebuke those who thought too well of their own goodness, and were too contemptuous and contemptuous of those that seemed worse than they.

10. Two men went up into the temple to pray; the one a Pharisee, and the other a publican.

11. The Pharisee stood and prayed thus with himself, God, I thank thee, that I am not as other men are, extortioners, unjust, adulterers, or even as this publican.

12. I fast twice in the week, I give tithe of all that I possess.

10, 11, 12. The Pharisee's Prayer was a boasting of his goodness, and not an humble bewailing of his sins and wants. All this was pride-worthy in itself, but much more was necessary in him.

13. And the publican standing afar off, would not lift up so much as his eyes unto heaven, but he smote upon his breast, saying, God be merciful to me a sinner.

13. His Prayer was in the deep sense of his sin, a humble begging mercy of God; (not with a purpose to go on in sin, but with penitence and conversion, resolving of a new life.)

14. I tell you, this man went down to his house justified rather than the other: for every one that exalteth himself, shall be abased; and he that humbleth himself, shall be exalted.

14. God took this for a juster or better man, for his penitent confession than the Pharisee, for all that formal righteousness which he boasted of: For God will exalt the humble, and abase the proud. (But this supposeth the Publican's Repentance to be a true Conversion, and not mere conviction and confessing in fear.)

15. And they brought unto him also infants, that he should touch them: but when his disciples faw it, they rebuked them. 16. But Jesus called them unto him, and said, Suffer little children to come unto me, and forbid them not: for of such is the kingdom of God.

17. Verily I say unto you, Whosoever shall not receive the kingdom of God as a little child, shall in no wise enter therein.


18. And a certain ruler asked him, saying, Good Master, what shall I do to inherit eternal life? 19. And Jesus said unto him, Why callest thou me good? none is good save one, that is God. 20. Thou knowest the commandments, Do not commit adultery, Do not kill, Do not steal, Do not bear false witness, Honour thy father and thy mother. 21. And he said, All these have I kept from my youth up.

22. Now when Jesus heard these things, he said unto him, Yet lackst thou one thing: sell all that thou hast, and distribute unto the poor, and thou shalt have treasure in heaven: and come, follow me. 23. And when he heard this, he was very sorrowful: for he was very rich.

18, 19, 20, 21, 22, 23. See Matth. 19, 20, and Mark 10, 17.

Note. This renunciation of the World is not required by Christ, to a high degree of holiness only, but to the obtaining of Eternal Life.

Note, Multitudes of nominal Christians go not so far as this worldly few; in believing a Life Eternal, and in a care to inherit it, and in doing so much for it, from his youth.

24. And when Jesus saw that he was very sorrowful, he said, How hardly shall they that have riches enter into the kingdom of God! 25. For it is easier for a camel to go through the eye of a needle than for a rich man to enter into the kingdom of God.

26. And they that heard it, said, Who then can be saved?

24, 25, 26. See Matth. 19.

Note. To enter into the Kingdom of God, and to be saved, was understood by the hearers to be all one.

27. And he said, The things which are impossible with men, are possible with God.

27. Note, Possibility, though with great difficulty, must make us true Seekers, and then we may attain to certainty.

28. Then Peter said, Lo, we have left all, and followed thee.

29. And he said unto them, Verily I say unto you, there is no man that hath left house, or parents, or brethren, or wife, or children for the kingdom of God's sake, who shall not receive manifold more in this present time, and in the world to come life everlasting.

28, 29, 30. You shall be no losers by me.

Note, The blessings even of suffering Christians in this Life, are better than all that they forsake for Christ.

31. Then he took unto him the twelve, and said unto them, Be hold, we go up to Jerusalem, and all things that are written by the prophets concerning the Son of man shall be accomplished.

32. For he shall be delivered unto the Gentiles, and shall be mocked, and spit upon, and scourged, and spit upon, and mocked.

33. And they shall scourge him, and put
put him to death: and the third day he shall rise again. 34. And they underlood none of these things: and this saying was hid from them, neither knew they the things which were spoken.

31, 32, 33, 34. Note, We must not wonder if many of our Hearer then are dull of understanding.

35. And it came to pass, that as he was come nigh unto Jericho, a certain blind man sat by the way-side begging. 36. And hearing the multitude pass by, he asked what it meant. 37. And they told him, that Jesus of Nazareth passeth by. 38. And he cried, saying, Jesus, thou son of David, have mercy on me. 39. And they which went before rebuked him, that he should hold his peace: but he cried so much the more, Thou son of David, have mercy on me. 40. And Jesus stood and commanded him to be brought unto him: and when he was come near, he asked him. 41. Saying, What wilt thou that I shall do unto thee? And he said, Lord, that I may receive my sight. 42. And Jesus said unto him, Receive thy sight: thy faith hath saved thee. 43. And, immediately he received his sight, and followed him, glorifying God: and all the people when they saw it, gave praise unto God.

33, 36, 37, 38, 39, 40, 41, 42, 43. See on Matt. 20, 18, 19, 20. A Faith firtest us to receive Mercy; and Mercy teacheth us to glorifie God.


As who he was, and could not for the press, because he was little of stature. 4. And he ran before, and climbed up into a sycamore-tree to see him; for he was to pass that way. 5. And when Jesus came to the place, he looked up and saw him, and said unto him, Zaccheus, make haste, and come down: for to day I must abide at thy house.

1, 2, 3, 4, 5. Desire, and diligent seeking, prepare us for Christ’s acceptance and abode with us.

6. And he made haste, and came down, and received him joyfully.

6. Note, He hoped but for a sight of him, and obtained more. Mercy exceedeth the seeker’s expectation.

7. And when they saw it, they all murmured, saying, that he was gone to be guest with a man that is a sinner.

7. Note, As if Christ were not holy and strict enough, because he went to sinners for their Salvation.

8. And Zaccheus stood, and said unto the Lord, Behold, Lord, the half of my goods I give to the poor: and if I have taken anything from any man by false accusation, I restore him fourfold.

8. Note 1. This proceeding from Faith in Christ, proved him a true Convert. 2. False accusation was the Publican’s notable sin.

9. And Jesus said unto him, This day is Salvation come to this house, forasmuch as he also is the son of Abraham.

9. Note 1. Where true Faith and Conversion cometh, there Salvation cometh. 2. All true Believers are Children of Abraham, that is, of the Promise made to Abraham and his seed.

10. For the Son of man is come to seek and to save that which was lost.

10. To this end came I into the World, to redeem, convert, and save lost sinners.

O 3 11. And
11. And as they heard these things, he added, and spake a parable, because he was nigh to Jerusalem, and because they thought that the kingdom of God should immediately appear.

12. To take them off such expectations.

13. He said therefore, A certain noble man went into a far country, to receive for himself a kingdom, and to return.

14. Christ was to go from Earth to Heaven, to receive his own Kingly glory, and to reign there over Heaven and Earth, and to return to judge men according to their works.

15. And he called his ten servants, and delivered them ten pounds, and said unto them, Occupye till I come.

16. He giveth men, that professeth to be his servants, his Gifts and Mercies, and commands them to use them faithfully in his Service, and to do good in his Church, and profit others, expecting his return.

17. But his citizens hated him, and sent a message after him, saying, We will not have this man to reign over us.

18. The Jews, to whom he first offered Grace, rejected him and his Government with scorn.

19. And it came to pass, that when he was returned, having received the kingdom, then he commanded those servants to be called unto him, to whom he had given the money, that he might know how much every man had gained by trading.

20. When he came to exercise Judgment over his Subjects and Servants, he called first those that professed Christianity, to make an account how they had used the blessings of the Gospel.

21. Then came the first, saying, Lord, thy pound hath gained ten pounls.

22. Thy Grace and Gifts have been improved to the profit of many, and to my own increase in Holiness.

23. Thou shalt have a reward above others, according to thy service.

24. Christ will praise his faithful Servants, and their Works. 2. He rewarded them, because they have been faithful, as the Moral Qualification of the Receivers; but not in Commutative Justice, nor in Distributive Governing Justice, according to the Law of Innocency, or of Mistrust, but in Distributive Paternal Justice, according to the Law of Grace and Faith.

25. And the second came, saying, Lord, thy pound hath gained five pounds.

26. And he said likewise to him, Be thou also over five cities.

27. Their reward shall be answerable.

28. And another came, saying, Lord, behold, here is thy pound which I have kept laid up in a napkin: 21. For I feared thee, because thou art an austere man: thou takest up that thou laidest not down, and reapest that thou didst not sow.

29. Here is thy own, I have waited none of it: But thou art so severe, that I durst not trade with it, lest I should lose it.

30. And he faith unto him, Out of thine own mouth will I judge thee, thou wicked servant. Thou knewest that I was an austere man, taking up that I laid not down, and reaping that I did not sow: 23. Wherefore then gavest thou my money into the bank, that at my coming I might have required mine own with usury?

31. Note: Wicked men are apt to excuse their sloth, and accuse God's strictness. But out of their own confessions and words shall Hypocrites, that profess Christianity be condemned.

Q. What图为 is it which Christ by this Parable foretells to countenance? Ans. Such as God had not forbidden: To us now all Ufury is sinful, that is against either Justice or Charity, or the publick good, and no other: For Moses's Political Law bindeth not us.

24. And he said unto them that follow him, Take from him the pound, and give is to him that hath ten pounds. 25. (And they said unto him, Lord, he hath ten pounds). 26. For I say unto you, that unto every one which hath, shall be given: and from him that hath not, even that he hath shall be taken away from him.

24. Add it to his reward.

25, 26. He that hath gained by this faithful industry, shall be trusted and rewarded with more; and he that unfaithfully neglected to use the mercy trusted with him, shall be deprived of that mercy, gifts, time, &c. which he neglected.

27. But those mine enemies which would not that I should reign over them, bring hither, and slay them before me.

27. Those Jews that hated and rejected me, and all such Rebellious Infidels, shall be destroyed.

28. And when he had thus spoken, he went before, ascending up to Jerusalem. 29. And it came to pass, when he was come nigh to Bethphage and Bethany, at the mount called the mount of Olives, he sent two of his disciples, 30. Saying, Go ye into the village over against you: in the which at your entering ye shall find a colt tied, whereon yet never man sat: loose him, and bring him hither. 31. And if any man ask you, Why do ye loose him? thus shall ye say unto him, Because the Lord hath need of him. 32. And they that were sent, went their way, and found even as he had said unto them.

33. And as they were looking the colt, the owners thereof said unto them, Why loose ye the colt? 34. And they said, The Lord hath need of him.

28, 29, 30, 31, 32, 33, 34. Note, Though Luke name only the Colt, that denotes not the A& named by other Writers.

See Matt. 21. 1, 7, 8.

35. And they brought him to Jesus: and they cast their garments upon the colt, and they set Jesus thereon. 36. And as he went, they spread their clothes in the way. 37. And when he was come nigh, even now at the descent of the mount of Olives, the whole multitude of the disciples began to rejoice, and praise God with a loud voice, for all the mighty works that they had seen. 38. Saying, Blessed be the King that cometh in the name of the Lord: peace in heaven, and glory in the highest.

37. See on Matt. 21. 9, 10, 11.

39. And some of the Pharisees from among the multitude said unto him, Master, rebuke thy disciples. 40. And he answered and said unto them, I tell you, that if these should hold their peace, the stones would immediately cry out.

39, 40. They do but what God doth cause them to do, and if they did not, God would have it done, though by Miracle.

41. And when he was come near, he beheld the city, and wept over it, 42. Saying, If thou hadst known, even thou, at least in this thy day, the things which belong unto thy peace! but now they are hid from thine eyes.

41. O that thou hadst known the things that are necessary to thy own peace and safety, before the day of Grace be past. But by thy wilful sin and blindness, they are unknown to thee.

Note, Christ, as Man, by weeping over self-destroying sinners, sheweth his love and pity.

pity, though not equal to that, which he
exerciseth on his Eleæ whom he will
save.

43. For the days shall come up-
on thee, that thine enemies shall
cast a trench about thee, and com-
pass thee round, and keep thee in
on every side. 44. And shall lay
thee even with the ground, and thy
children within thee; and they
shall not leave in thee one stone
upon another: because thou knew-
left not the time of thy visita-
tion.

43, 44. All this was done about thirty
eight years after, by the dreadful
Siege for Famine and Murder, that any History
recordeth.

45. And he went into the tem-
ple, and began to cast out them
that sold therein, and them that
bought, 46. Saying unto them,
It is written, My house is the house
of prayer: but ye have made it a
den thieves.

45, 46. See Matth. 21. 12. Note; Christ
showed his Authority by Reforming; and
his Zeal even for the Temple, while the
Law stood.

47. And he taught daily in the
temple. But the chief priests and
the scribes, and the chief of the
people sought to destroy him.

47. The Priests and Rulers were they that
were Christ's Enemies and Persecutors.

48. And could not find what
they might do: for all the people
were very attentive to hear him.

49. They durst not lay hands on him,
because the multitude hearing and admiring
him, were as his guard.

CHAP. XX.

1. And it came to pass, that on
one of those days, as he
taught the people in the temple,
and preached the gospel, the chief
priests and the scribes came upon
him, with the elders, 2. And spake
unto him, saying, Tell us, By what
authority doest thou these things
or who is he that gave thee this
authority?

1, 2. Such things are not to be done with
out Authority.

3. And he answered and said unto them, I will also ask you one thing; and answer me: 4. The
baptism of John, was it from heav-
en, or of men? 5. And they
reasoned with themselves, saying,
If we shall say, From heaven; he
will say, Why then believed ye him
not? 6. But and if we say, Of
men; all the people will stone us:
for they be persuaded that John
was a prophet. 7. And they an-
swered, that they could not tel
 whence it was. 8. And Jesus
said unto them, Neither tell I
you by what authority I do these
things.

3, 4, 5, 6, 7, 8. They ought to have known
his Authority by his Miracles. See Matth.
21.

9. Then began he to speak to
the people this parable: A certain
man planted a vineyard, and let it
forth to husbandmen, and went in
to a far country for a long time.
10. And at the season, he sent a
servant to the husbandmen, that
they should give him of the fruit
of the vineyard: but the husband-
men beat him, and sent him away
empty. 11. And again he sent
another servant, and they beat him
also, and entreated him shamefully,
and sent him away empty. 12. And
again he sent the third; and they
wounded him also, and cast him
out. 13. Then said the lord of
the vineyard, What shall I do? I
will send my beloved son: it may
be they will reverence him when
they see him. 14. But when the
husbandmen saw him, they reason-
ed among themselves, saying, This
is

is the heir: come, let us kill him, that the inheritance may be ours. 15. So they cast him out of the vineyard, and killed him. What therefore shall the lord of the vineyard do unto them? 16. He shall come and destroy these husbandmen, and shall give the vineyard to others. And when they heard it, they said, God forbid.

9, 10, 11, 12, 13, 14, 15, 16. The Vineyard is the Land of Israel; the Husbandmen are the Israelites; the Owner is God; the Messengers are the Prophets; the Son is Christ, &c. See Matt. 21.

17. And he beheld them, and said, What is this thing then that is written, The stone which the builders rejected, the same is become the head of the corner? 18. Whosoever shall fall upon that stone, shall be broken: but on whomsoever it shall fall, it will grind him to powder.

17, 18. Whoever sins against Christ by unbelief, will perish in his sin: But they that sin against him by malignity and opposition, will fall under his victorious judgment, which will make them the most miserable.

19. And the chief priests and the tribes the same hour sought to lay hands on him; and they feared the people: for they perceived that he had spoken this parable against them.

19. Note: That which is said against their sin, engageth the impenitent, be it never so true and needful to their conviction.

20. And they watched him, and sent forth spies, which should feign themselves just men, that they might take hold of his words, that so they might deliver him unto the power and authority of the governor.

20. Blood-thirsty Hypocrites would ensnare him to get some word for which they might accuse him, to the Roman Governor; as Treason against Caesar.

Note: How like in all Ages are the nature and ways of wicked men! Thus was Nebuchadnezzar used by Nebuchad, &c.

21. And they asked him, saying, Master, we know that thou sayest and teachest righteously, neither acceptest thou the persons of any, but teachest the way of God truly. 22. Is it lawful for us to give tribute unto Caesar, or no? 23. But he perceived their craftiness, and said unto them, Why tempt ye me? 24. Shew me a penny: whosoever image and superscription hath it? They answered and said, Caesar's. 25. And he said unto them, Render therefore unto Caesar the things which be Caesar's, and unto God the things which be God's. 26. And they could not take hold of his words before the people: and they marvelled at his answer, and held their peace.

21, 22, 23, 24, 25, 26. Note: There is poison in the seeming kindness of cruel Hypocrites; they flatter that they may hurt. Note: It is lawful to put off bloody enquirers with doubtful Answers.

27. Then came to him certain of the Sadducees (which deny that there is any resurrection) and they asked him. 28. Saying, Master, Moses wrote unto us, If any man's brother die, having a wife, and he die without children, that his brother should take his wife, and raise up seed unto his brother. 29. There were therefore seven brethren: and the first took a wife, and died without children. 30. And the second took her to wife, and he died childless. 31. And the third took her; and in like manner the seven also. And they left no children, and died. 32. Last of all the woman died also. 33. Therefore in the resurrection, whose wife of them is she; for seven had her to wife.

27, 28.

27, 28, 29, 30, 31, 32, 33. Carnal men, from their own Errour, do foolishly cavil against the Truth which they understand not.

34. And Jesus anwering saith unto them, The children of this world marry, and are given in marriage: 35. But they which shall be accounted worthy to obtain that world, and the resurrection from the dead, neither marry, nor are given in marriage. 36. Neither can they die any more; for they are equal unto the angels, and are the children of God, being the children of the resurrection.

34, 35, 36. Note: Worthiness of that World, is such a qualification as is required in God’s Promise. Note: The Blessed shall be like the Angels, and with them, and be immortal. Note: By the Resurrection here is meant the next Life, even to separated Souls, and not only the Resurrection of the Body. O why do we not long for such a change!

37. Now that the dead are raised, even Moses shewed at the bush, when he calleth the Lord the God of Abraham, and the God of Isaac, and the God of Jacob. 38. For he is not a God of the dead, but of the living: for all live unto him.

37, 38. See Math. 22. He is the Lord and Owner of the Dead and Living: But to be Their God, signifies more, even to be their Governor and Protector, and their End and Portion, and their All.

39. Then certain of the scribes anwering said, Master, thou haft well said. 40. And after that, they durst not ask him any question at all.

39, 40. They were out of hope of entrapping him by their Questions.

41. And he said unto them, How say they that Christ is David’s Son? 42. And David himself saith in the book of psalms, The LORD said unto my Lord, Sit thou on my right hand, 43. Till I make thine enemies thy footstool. 44. Da-
Matter, but when shall these things be? and what sign will there be when these things shall come to pass.

7. *Note;* Corrupt Nature is more devious to know things to come, than to prepare for them by present duty.

8. And he said, Take heed that ye be not deceived: for many shall come in my name, saying, I am Christ; and the time draweth near: go ye not therefore after them.

8. Take you more care of your selves, than to know the time; and be not deceived by false Christs, and false Prophets.

9. But when ye shall hear of wars and commotions, be not terriified; for these things must first come to pass, but the end is not by and by. 10. Then you be unto them, Nation shall rise against nation, and kingdom against kingdom: 11. And great earthquakes shall be in divers places, and famines, and pestilences, and fearful sights, and great signs shall there be from heaven. 12. But before all these, they shall lay their hands on you, and persecute you, delivering you up to the synagogues, and into prisons, being brought before kings and rulers for my name’s sake. 13. And it shall turn to you for a testimony.

10, 11, 12, 13. See Matth. 24. *Note;* Christ did not draw in Disciples with the hopes of prosperity. It shall be your Witness or Martyred, to divulge the Gospel, and condemn unbelievers.

14. Settle it therefore in your hearts, not to meditate before what ye shall answer. 15. For I will give you a mouth and wisdom, which all your adversaries shall not be able to gainsay, nor reftift.

14, 15. *Note;* It is Christ in Heaven that giveth Grace and Gifts to his Servants on Earth by his Spirit.

16. And ye shall be betrayed both by parents, and brethren, and kinsfolks, and friends; and some of you shall they cause to be put to death. 17. And ye shall be hated of all men for my name’s sake.

18. But there shall not an hair of your head perish.

16, 17, 18. Ye shall be no losers by all your sufferings; You shall be preserved till you are ripe for your full reward.

19. In your patience posses ye your souls.

19. While you keep your Innocence and Patience, you keep your Souls from danger and los.

20. And when ye shall see Jerusalem compassed with armies, then know that the desolation thereof is nigh. 21. Then let them which are in Judea, flee to the mountains; and let them which are in the midst of it, depart out; and let not them that are in the countreys, enter thereinto. 22. For these be the days of vengeance, that all things which are written may be fulfilled.

20, 21, 22. Jerusalem’s Calamity shall be so great, that all that will be safe, must flee from it.

23. But wo unto them that are with child, and to them that give suck in those days: for there shall be great distress in the land, and wrath upon this people. 24. And they shall fall by the edge of the sword, and shall be led away captive into all nations: and Jerusalem shall be trodden down of the Gentiles, until the times of the Gentiles be fulfilled.

23, 24. Till the Heathens be turned Christians themselves, (in Constantine’s days,) and then Jerusalem shall be restored, and be the dwelling of Christians.

25. And there shall be signs in the sun, and in the moon, and in the stars; and upon the earth distress of nations, with perplexity,

the sea and the waves roaring; 26. 
Mens hearts failing them for fear, 
and for looking after these things 
which are coming on the earth: 
for the powers of heaven shall be 
shaken. 27. And then shall they 
see the Son of man coming in a 
cloud with power and great glory. 
28. And when these things begin 
to come to pass, then look up, and 
lift up your heads; for your re-
demption draweth nigh.

25, 26, 27, 28. See Mark. 24. Judgment, 
though flow, is sure and terrible.

29. And he spake to them a pa-
table. Behold the fig-tree, and all 
the trees; 30. When they now 
shoot forth, ye see and know of 
your own selves, that summer is 
now nigh at hand. 31. So like-
wise ye, when ye see these things 
come to pass, know ye that the 
kingdom of God is nigh at hand.

29, 30, 31. The Kingdom of God is the 
Reign of the Messiah, destroying Satan’s 
Kingdom, beginning indeed at his Resur-
rection, but notable as Catholick, upon the 
great conversion of the Gentiles, specially 
when Emperors owned Christ, the Jews 
being partly destroyed, and partly conver-
ted; and at last perfected in glory.

32. Verily I say unto you, This 
generation shall not pass away, till 
all be fulfilled. 33. Heaven and 
earth shall pass away: but my word 
shall not pass away.

32, 33. Till the Jews be destroyed, and 
the Gentiles begin to receive the Gospel 
through the World.

34. And take heed to your selves, 
left at any time your hearts be o-
vercharged with surfeiting and 
drunkenness, and cares of this life, 
and so that day come upon you un-
awares. 35. For as a share shall it 
come on all them that dwell on the 
face of the whole earth.

34, 35. Either the ruin of the Jews shall 
suddenly come on all that Land; or the 
day of Judgment on all the World: And 
our duty is to be always ready; and there-
fore to avoid sensuality and worldliness, 
which is unready.

36. Watch ye therefore, and pray 
always, that ye may be accounted 
worthy to escape all these things 
that shall come to pass, and to stand 
before the Son of man.

36. A life of obedient watching against 
sin, waiting for Judgment, and constant 
Prayer, is our Gospel-worthiness to escape 
God’s Judgments, and our preparation for 
a comfortable meeting our Judge.

37. And in the day-time he was 
teaching in the temple, and at night 
he went out, and abode in the 
mount that is called the mount of 
Olivea. 38. And all the people 
came early in the morning to him 
in the temple, for to hear him.

37, 38. Note: They could not silence 
him, 1. Because it was the Jews Law, that 
Prophets and great Teachers should speak 
freely. 2. And the Romans limited their 
Power. 3. And they feared the multitude 
of his hearers.

CHAP. XXII.

1. Now the feast of unleaven-
end bread drew nigh, 
which is called the Passover. 2. And 
the chief priests and Scribes sought 
how they might kill him; for they 
fears the people.

1, 2. The feast of unleavened Bread, was 
the day of the Passover, and seven days 
after.

3. Then entred Satan into Judas 
surnamed Iscariot, being of the 
number of the twelve. 4. And he 
went his way, and communed 
with the chief priests and cap-
tains, how he might betray him 
unto them.

3, 4. Note: There is more of Satan in sin, 
than sinners think: He hath access as a 
Tempter to the Imagination, and when his 
Temptation prevalleth, he gets greater pos-
session of the heart.

5. And they were glad, and co-
venanted to give him money.

5. Note.
5. Note. Wicked purposes or desires, to meet with encouragement from wicked men. 2. It is a heinous crime, when men dare covenant to sin for gain.

6. And he promised, and sought opportunity to betray him unto them in the absence of the multitude.

6. To avoid tumult.

7. Then came the day of unleavened bread, when the passover must be killed. 8. And he sent Peter and John, saying, Go and prepare us the passover, that we may eat. 9. And they said unto him, Where wilt thou that we prepare? 10. And he said unto them, Behold, when ye are entered into the city, there shall a man meet you, bearing a pitcher of water; follow him into the house where he entrench in. 11. And ye shall say unto the good-man of the house, The Master faith unto thee, Where is the guest-chamber, where I shall eat the passover with my disciples? 12. And he shall shew you a large upper room furnished: there make ready. 13. And they went and found as he had said unto them: and they made ready the passover.

7,9,10,11,12,13. Note. Christ knew what would befall them out of sight. 2. Being made under the Law, he would keep even that part that typified himself.

14. And when the hour was come, he sat down, and the twelve apostles with him. 15. And he said unto them, With desire have I desired to eat this passover with you before I suffer.

14. Note. Christ earnestly desired the fulfilling of his undertaken work, and holy Communion with his Servants.

16. For I say unto you, I will not any more eat thereof, until it be fulfilled in the kingdom of God. 17. And he took the cup, and gave thanks, and said, Take this, and divide it among your selves.

8. For I say unto you, I will not drink of the fruit of the vine, until the kingdom of God shall come.

16, 17, 18. Till we meet in Heaven, or till I celebrate that Sacrament which is the Christian Passover with you, in the holy Assemblies, where I will be spiritually present.

Q. How comes the cup twice mentioned? Anf. The first was part of the Passover. But Beza noteth, that the 15th and 19th verses are not in the Syrian Translation, which is most ancient: And in his very old Greek Copy now at Cambridge, [This do in remembrance of me.] Is left out of the 19 verse, and he conjectures some verses are transposed.

19. And he took bread, and gave thanks, and brake it, and gave unto them, saying, This is my body which is given for you: this do in remembrance of me. 20. Likewise also the cup after supper, saying, This cup is the new testament in my blood, which is shed for you.

19, 20. See Matth. 26. Note: Seeing the Evangelists use not all the very same words, it seems not of absolute necessity to use just the same still: Yet all the substance must be retained; and it's safest repeating all let together which they recite; and as Paul most fully reciteth them.

21. But behold, the hand of him that betrayeth me, is with me on the table. 22. And truly the Son of man goeth as it was determined: but wo unto that man by whom he is betrayed. 23. And they began to enquire among themselves, which of them it was that should do this thing.

21, 22, 23. Note: How hard was Judas's heart, that took not this warning!

24. And there was also a strife among them, which of them should be accounted the greatest.

24. Note: This strife was before, Matth. 20. But Luke keepeth not to the order of time.

25. And
25. And he said unto them, The kings of the Gentiles exercise lordship over them; and they that exercise authority upon them, are called benefactors. 26. But ye shall not be so: but he that is greatest among you, let him be as the younger; and he that is chief, as he that doth serve.

25, 26. (I am not for parity among all my Disciples: You know I have chosen you only to be Apostles: But though you be over the Churches, you must not be Rulers of one another: And that sort of Preeminence which you have, must not be like that of the Princes of the World, who rule by the Sword, or outward Force, and in worldly Pomp or State, constraining Subjects to flatter them with high Titles, but must be grounded in an excellency of Grace and Gifts, Love, Meekness, Humility, being the most useful, and devoted to the good of all, as Ruling only the voluntary, and therefore by the clearest Reason, and greatest Love, and most exemplary profitable Lives: Strive and (pardon not, for this Pre-eminence and Difparity.)

27. For whether is greater, he that sitteth at meat, or he that serveth? Is not he that sitteth at meat? but I am among you as he that serveth.

27. Would you rule, as greater than I? what hath my Government of you been, but to do you good, by Doctrine, Love, and good Example, without force?

28. Ye are they which have continued with me in my temptations. 29. And I appoint unto you a kingdom, as my Father hath appointed unto me:

28. As a reward for your faithfull sticking to me in all my Tryals and Sufferings, I appoint, etc.

Note: This Promise is three ways expounded; 1. The aspiring Clergy say it is, I make you Apostles the chief Rulers of my Church, though in perfecting times, and your Successors shall be Patriarchs, Metropolitans, Arch-Bishops, &c. and over top Emperors and Kings.

2. Others say, that this lower World is but a shadow of the upper; and that the Office of Angels, and the Titles in Daniel of Michael your Prince, and of other Angels, wersheth, that there be Kingdoms in the Spiritual World above us, answerable to all the Kingdoms on Earth, and incomparably more; and that therefore Christ saith, In my Father's House are many Mansions: And that there the twelve Apostles have their Kingdoms, (at least over the twelve Tribes,) as being equal with the Angels.

3. But most think that it is only an expression of the eminent Glory of the Apostles after the Resurrection.

I fee not but part of all these Exploits may be included, that is, you shall be Chief in my Church on Earth, and equal with Angels after Death, but specially after the Day of Judgment.

30. That ye may eat and drink at my table in my kingdom, and sit on thrones, judging the twelve tribes of Israel.

30. That ye may be clothed with me in Heaven with spiritual everlasting joys, and may be Superiors to the glorified Ierarchs, and in the mean time on Earth may be the chiefest in my Church.

31. And the Lord said, Simon, Simon, behold, Satan hath desired to have you, that he may sift you as wheat: 32. But I have prayed for thee, that thy faith fail not; and when thou art converted, strengthen thy brethren.

31, 32. Satan hath got leave to try and sift you all, and thee in special. But I have by Prayer prevailed, that thou in denying me, thou mayest not fall from sincere Faith: And when by Repentance thou art recovered from thy fall, strengthen thy brethren, who will for sake me also.

33. And he said unto him, Lord, I am ready to go with thee both into prison, and to death. 34. And he said, I tell thee, Peter, the cock shall not crow this day, before that thou shalt thrice deny that thou knowest me.

33. Note: Christ that knew Satan's Request, and knew the Event, knew Peter's weakness better than he himself did.

35. And he said unto them, When I sent you without purse, and

and scrip, and shoes, lacked ye any thing: And they said, Nothing.
36. Then said he unto them, But now he that hath a purse, let him take it, and likewise his scrip: and he that hath no sword, let him sell his garment, and buy one. 37. For I say unto you, that this that is written, must yet be accomplished in me. And he was reckoned among the transgressors: for the things concerning me have an end.

35, 36, 37. When the People followed and applauded me for my Cures and Miracles, I knew that they would receive you, and provide for you for my sake: But now I am to be crucified and scorned as a transgressor, they will also cast you off: Therefore now look for hard usage, and moderately provide for your selves.

38. And they said, Lord, behold, here are two swords. And he said unto them, It is enough.

39. And he came out, and went, as he was wont, to the mount of Olives; and his disciples also followed him.

40. It seems he used there to lodge out of doors on the ground, and his Disciples with him.

41. And when he was at the place, he said unto them, Pray, that ye enter not into temptation.

42. Prayer is the way both to escape Temptation, and in it to overcome.

43. And there appeared an angel unto him from heaven, strengthening him.

44. N. Had Christ, as Man, need of an Angel's strengthening? What need then have we in the approach of death and great sufferings? And may we not also expect Angels help?

45. And being in an agony, he prayed more earnestly: and his sweat was as it were great drops of blood falling down to the ground.

46. N. This was not from the fear of death, but the deep sense of God's wrath against sin, which he, as our Sacrifice, was to bear, in greater pain than mere dying, which his Servants oft bear with peace.

47. And when he rose up from prayer, and was come to his disciples, he found them sleeping for sorrow. And said unto them, Why sleep ye? rise and pray, lest ye enter into temptation.

48. N. We are apt to sleep when we have most need to watch and pray, and have need to be awakened.

49. And while he yet spake, behold a multitude, and he that was called Judas, one of the twelve, went before them, and drew near unto Jesus, to kiss him. But Jesus said unto him, Judas, betrayest thou the Son of man with a kiss?

50. N. God permitted one so near Christ to betray him, to warn us how far to expect evil from our professed friends.

51. When they which were about him, saw what would follow, they said unto him, Lord, shall we smite with the sword? And one of them smote the servant of the high priest, and cut off his right ear.

52. N. Self-defence is natural, but God's Law must rule it: They were the more put to fly, because they had refrained.

53. N. This Miracle, wrought for one
that came to destroy him, neither melted nor convinced hardened sinners.

52. Then Jesus said unto the chief priests, and captains of the temple, and the elders which were come to him, Be ye come out as against a thief, with swords and staves? 53. When I was daily with you in the temple, ye stretched forth no hands against me: but this is your hour, and the power of darkness.

52, 53. This is the time which God hath granted Satan to make use of you his Instruments against me, and the Prince of darkness will seem to conquer.

54. Then took they him, and led him, and brought him into the high priest's house. And Peter followed afar off. 55. And when they had.kindled a fire in the midst of the hall, and were set down together, Peter sat down among them. 56. But a certain maid beheld him as he sat by the fire, and earnestly looked upon him, and said, This man was also with him. 54, 55, 56. N. When Tryal must come, Instruments will not be wanting.

57. And he denied him, saying, Woman, I know him not. 57. N. Had he not been conscious of finicking with the Sword, he had not been in so much danger of fear.

58. And after a little while another saw him, and said, Thou art also of them. And Peter said, Man, I am not. 58. N. It was a Woman, here called 'Man,' only as one of Mankind, not to distinguish the Sex.

59. And about the space of one hour after, another confidently affirmed, saying, Of a truth this fellow also was with him; for he is a Galilean. 59. N. To belong to Christ, and follow him, is crime enough, when Enemies are Judges.

60. And Peter said, Man, I know not what thou sayest. And immediately while he yet spake, the cock crew. 61. And the Lord turned, and looked upon Peter; and Peter remembered the word of the Lord, how he had said unto him, Before the cock crow, thou shalt deny me thrice. 62. And Peter went out, and wept bitterly. 60, 61, 62. N. Christ's own danger did not make him forget a sinning Disciple.

63. And the men that held Jesus, mocked him, and smote him. 64. And when they had blindfolded him, they struck him on the face, and asked him, saying, Prophesier, who is it that smote thee? 65. And many other things blasphemously spake they against him. 63, 64, 65. N. What is it that the ignorant Rabble will not say and do against the best of men, when men called Sacred and Great encourage them?

66. And as soon as it was day, the elders of the people, and the chief priests, and the scribes came together, and led him into their council. 67. Saying, Art thou the Christ? tell us. And he said unto them, If I tell you, you will not believe: 68. And if I also ask you, you will not answer me, nor let me go. 66, 67, 68. It's in vain to discourse with you; for you are resolved what to do with me, and truft to force, and not to Truth.

69. Hereafter shall the Son of man sit on the right hand of the power of God. 69. I shall shortly be advanced in Heaven as Man, to be Lord of all.

70. Then said they all, Art thou then the Son of God? And he said unto them, Ye say that I am. 71. And they said, What need we any further witness? for we our selves have heard of his own mouth. 70, 71. N. Though Christ answered not their other Accusations, he would not say
Ch. 23. Christ accused.  St. Luke, He is sent to Herod. Ch. 23.

6. When Pilate heard of Galilee, he asked whether the man were a Galilean. 7. And as soon as he knew that he belonged unto Herod's jurisdiction, he sent him to Herod, who himself was also at Jerusalem at that time. 8. And when Herod saw Jesus, he was exceeding glad: for he was desirous to see him of a long season, because he had heard many things of him; and he hoped to have seen some miracle done by him.

6, 7, 8. N. When the King of Glory, in the form of a Servant, was thus robed in triumph and scorn, a Ruler to Ruler, it was to show what we deserved, and what we must expect.

9. Then he questioned with him in many words: but he answered him nothing.

9. N. As he was not over solicitous to refil their Accusations; so he would not accuse himself, nor give them matter against him out of his own mouth: He would not have taken an ex Officio Oath, to answer whatever Question they should ask him, though they told him not what.

10. And the chief priests and scribes stood and vehemently accused him.

10. N. Consecrated men are Sarah's agents with the King against Christ.

11. And Herod with his men of war set him at nought, and mocked him, and arrayed him in a gorgeous robe, and sent him again to Pilate.

11. N. The King and his Souldiers thought they were far enough above a despised mean-er.

12. And the same day Pilate and Herod were made friends together; for before they were at enmity between themselves.

12. N. They can agree in enmity and perfection of the just, who cannot agree about their worldly interest.

13. And Pilate when he had called together the chief priests, and the rulers, and the people, 14. Said...
unto them, Ye have brought this man unto me, as one that perverteth the people; and Behold, I having examined him before you, have found no fault in this man touching those things whereof ye accuse him; 15. No, nor yet Herod: for I sent you to him, and lo, nothing worthy of death is done unto him. 16. I will therefore chastise him, and release him. 17. For of necessity he must release one unto them at the feast.

13, 14, 15, 16, 17. His accusation of sedition is not proved to me, nor to Herod: I will therefore release him, and to release him.

18. And they cried out all at once, saying, Away with this man, and release unto us Barabbas:

18. N. A Murderer, or the most debauch, seems better than Christ himself, to malignant Hypocrites.

19. (Who for a certain sedition made in the city, and for murder, was cast into prison). 20. Pilate therefore willing to release Jesus, spake again to them. 21. But they cried, saying, Crucifie him, crucifie him. 22. And he laid unto them the third time, Why, what evil hath he done? I have found no cause of death in him, I will therefore chastise him, and let him go.

19, 20, 21, 22. N. The malignant Jews are worse than the Heathens in perpetuating rage.

23. And they were infatuated with loud voices, requiring that he might be crucified: and the voices of them, and of the chief priests prevailed. 24. And Pilate gave sentence that it should be as they required.

23, 24. N. Wicked men dare deny God's importunity and mercy, but cannot deny temptations from mens importunity and worldly interest.

25. And he released unto them, him that for sedition and murder was cast into prison, whom they had desired; but he delivered Jesus to their will.

25. N. 1. It is the greatest means of bad men's ruin, to let them have their wills. 2. God in flesh was not innocent enough in the eyes of wicked men, to escape condemnation.

26. And as they led him away, they laid hold upon one Simon a Cyrenian, coming out of the country, and on him they laid the cross, that he might bear it after Jesus. 27. And there followed him a great company of people, and of women, which also bewailed and lamented him. 28. But Jesus turning unto them, said, Daughters of Jerusalem, weep not for me, but weep for your selves, and for your children. 29. For behold, the days are coming, in the which they shall say, Blessed are the barren, and the wombs that never bare, and the paps which never gave suck.

26, 27, 28, 29. It is not my care that you havecause to lament, but your own and your Childrens, for the dreadful destruction that is coming.

30. Then shall they begin to say to the mountains, Fall on us; and to the hills, Cover us. 31. For if they do these things in a green tree, what shall be done in the dry?

30, 31. Dreadful will be the approaching vengeance: For if they thus use me for a good works, what shall they endure, which by their hainous sin are as wood dried to the fire.

32. And there were also two malefactors led with him to be put to death. 33. And when they were come to the place which is called Calvary, there they crucified him, and the malefactors; on the right hand, and the other on the left.
33. ... and the people stood beholding: and the rulers also with them desiring him, saying, He saved others; let him save himself, if he be Christ the chosen of God.

34. And the soldiers also mocked him, coming to him, and offering him vinegar. And saying, If thou be the King of the Jews, save thyself.

35. And there was also a superscription written over him in letters of Greek, and Latin, and Hebrew, THIS IS THE KING OF THE JEWS.

36. And he came to for us, and not himself; all his Resurrection: How glad would his Enemies shortly be to be saved by him? And how will their tares be changed?

37. And one of the malefactors, which were hanged, reviled him, saying, If thou be Christ, save thyself and us.

38. And the Composite of Christ was the great scandal to all. They thought that he could not be the Christ, that did not save himself: because they knew not the use of his Sacrifice for Man’s Redemption. But it shows the power of sin, when even a Malefactor crucified shall go out of the World in such reproach.

39. But the other answering, rebuked him, saying, Dost not thou fear God, seeing thou art in the same condemnation? And we indeed justly: for we receive the due reward of our deeds: but this man hath done nothing amiss.

40. Wilt thou die in sin? Are we justly suffering for it, when he unjustly suffereth, being innocent?

41. And he said unto Jesus, Lord, remember me when thou comest into thy kingdom.

42. Lord; I believe that thou art the true Messiah, and the promised King: Remember me a Sinner, with pardoning mercy and acceptance, when thou reignest in thy glory.

43. And Jesus said unto him, Verily I say unto thee, To day shalt thou be with me in paradise.

44. True Conversions are not too late, to the obtaining of Mercy and Salvation.

45. True Faith and Repentance, how late never, will have its fruits. This man was not saved without good works. 1. He confessed his sin. 2. He confessed the justness of his punishment. 3. He confessed Christ’s Kingdom. 4. He justified Christ’s Innocency. 5. He reprieved the Reverser, and taught him to repent. 6. He prayed even
to a crucified dying Christ. 7. He prayed not for present deliverance, but for a place in Christ's Kingdom.
5. The departed Souls of the faithful go presently to Paradise.
6. This Paradise is where Christ will be with us.

Some Heretics, by gross perversion, joyn [This day] with [I say,] as if it had been only the day of Christ's speaking this, and not of the man's being in Paradise: But it is by falsification, contrary to the pointing of all Greek Copies; and one Copy, faith Beza, hath [That this day.]

44. And it was about the sixth hour, and there was darkness over all the earth, until the ninth hour.
44. Over all the Land, from twelve a Clock till three, there was an unusual degree of darkness, whether by an Eclipse, or extraordinary Clouds, is uncertain: But it was not such darkness as is in the night.

45. And the sun was darkened, and the veil of the temple was rent in the mids.

45. Some take the veil to be a hanging, but it's liker it was a wall: For the Temple was divided into three parts: 1. The outer Court, where the Gentiles might come. 2. The Sanctuary, where the Jews came. 3. The inner Sanctuary, or Holieft, where only the High Priest came once a year. If it was the Wall that enclosed the Holieft, then the rending signified the access we have now to God by Christ: If it was the second wall, it signified the removal of the Mofical Separation of Jews and Gentiles.

46. And when Jesus had cried with a loud voice, he said, Father, into thy hands I commend my spirit...and having said thus, he gave up the ghost.
46. N. The certain Glory that Christ expected, was by the way of Trufiting his Soul into his Father's hands: And what other way have we to die in hope and peace, but to commit our Souls with Truf to our Father and our Redeemer, and conjoin the dying words of Christ and Stephen?

47. Now when the centurion saw what was done, he glorified God, saying, Certainly this was a righteous man.
47. See Matt. 27. 54. Though Matthew recite his words thus, [Verily this was the Son of God.] Luke's words are not contrary, but we may conclude that the Centurion sake both.

48. And all the people that came together to that sight, beholding the things which were done, smote their breasts, and returned. 49. And all his acquaintance, and the women that followed him from Galilee, stood afar off beholding these things.
48. 49. All Soldiers and common people were not so hardened as the Priests and Rulers.

50. And behold, there was a man named Joseph, a counsellor, and he was a good man, and a just:
50. One of the Council that governed.

51. (The same had not confented to the counfell and deed of them) he was of Arimathea, a city of the Jews, (who also himself waited for the kingdom of God).
51. Who having looke for the coming of the Messiah, believed that Christ was he.

52. This man went unto Pilate, and begg'd the body of Jesus.
52. N. 1. He that concealed his Faith before, shewed his Love to Christ when he was dead. 2. The Body of the Son of God was at the dispofed power of: a Heathen, even his who was Lord of all the World.

53. And he took it down, and wrapped it in linen, and laid it in a sepulchre that was newen in Stone, wherein never man before was laid.
53. Prepared for himself.

54. And that day was the prepara- tion, and the sabbath drew on.
55. And the women also which came with him from Galilee, followed after, and beheld the sepulchre, and how his body was laid.
56. And they returned, and prepa...
Chap. XXIV.

Now upon the first day of the week, very early in the morning, they came unto the sepulchre, bringing the spiccs which they had prepared, and certain others with them.

Did not Nicodemus and Joseph wrap his body in spices at his burial? And they laid it in haste in the dry Aedes and Myrrh, defecting the full Embalming of it, with the added Ointments, till after the Sabbath.

And they found the stone rolled away from the sepulchre. And they entered in, and found not the body of the Lord Jesus. And it came to pass, as they were much perplexed thereabout, behold two men stood by them in shining garments. And as they were afraid, and bowed down their faces to the earth, they said unto them, Why seek ye the living among the dead?

See the reconciliation of the seeming differences of the Evangelists herein, on Matth. 28. and Mark 16. & John 20.

He is not here, but is risen; remember how he spake unto you when he was yet in Galilee. Saying, The Son of man must be delivered into the hands of sinfull men, and be crucified, and the third day rise again.

Luke saith more of this Sermon of the Angels to the Women, than the other Evangelists did.

And they remembered his words. And returned from the sepulchre, and told all these things unto the eleven, and to all the rest.

It was Mary Magdalene, and Joanna, and Mary the mother of James, and other women that were with them, which told these things unto the apostles. And their words seemed to them as idle tales, and they believed them not.

Here is much part by which the other Evangelists have: For no one of them pretended to write all that was done.

Then arose Peter, and ran unto the sepulchre, and stooping down, he beheld the linen clothes laid by themselves, and departed, wondering in himself at that which was come to pass.

See this more fully in John 20.

And behold, two of them went that same day to a village called Emmaus, which was from Jerusalem about threescore furlongs.

And they talked together of all these things which had happened.

And it came to pass that while they communed together, and reasoned, Jesus himself drew near, and went with them.

Christ came to them but as unknown.

But their eyes were holden, that they should not know him.

It's like the cause: was partly in them, and partly in the change of the countenance of Christ.

And he said unto them, What manner of communications are these that ye have one to another, as ye walk, and are sad?

He was not ignorant of their discourse, but asked them, that he might instruct them.

And the one of them, whose name was Cleopas, answering, said unto him, Art thou only a stranger in Jerusalem, and hast not known the things which are come to pass there?

there in these days? 19. And he said unto them, What things? And they said unto him, Concerning Jesus of Nazareth, which was a prophet mighty in deed and word before God, and all the people:

18. 19. In which, said Prophesie, and Doctrine.

20. And how the chief priests and our rulers delivered him to be condemned to death, and have crucified him. 21. But we trusted that it had been he which should have redeemed Israel: and beside all this, to day is the third day since these things were done.

20. 21. \( \text{M} \) They will believed that he was a Prophet: For many Prophets were murdered: But they now seemed to doubt, yea almost to give up their belief that he was the Messiah.

22. Yea, and certain women also of our company made us asto-nished, which were early at the sepulchre; 23. And when they found not his body, they came, saying, that they had also seen a vision of angels, which said that he was al-vive. 24. And certain of them which were with us, went to the sepulchre, and found it even as the women had said: but him they saw not.

22. 23. 24. And yet we know not what to think, but are under much astonishment, and further expectation: for certain Women, &c.

25. Then he said unto them, O fools, and slow of heart to believe all that the prophets have spoken! 26. Were you not very ignorant Men, and of dull hearts, you would not be so unacquainted with, and backward to believe, that which all the Prophets did foretell.

26. Ought not Christ to have suffered these things, and to enter into his glory?

26. Have they not all foretold that Christ must thus suffer, and then enter into the heavenly glory, where is his Throne, where he is to reign?

27. And beginning at Moses, and all the prophets, he expounded unto them in all the scriptures, the things concerning himself.

27. N. Though it hath not pleased God to give us down this Expository Sermon of Christ, yet his Spirit, by his Apostles, hath given us enough for our use.

28. And they drew nigh unto the village, whither they went: and he made as though he would have gone further.

28. N. Not by any false words, but by his carriage, concealing his purpose to stay with them.

29. But they constrained him, saying, Abide with us, for it is towards evening, and the day is far spent. And he went in to tarry with them.

29. N. Inimportunity is the means to prevail for Christ's presence, even when he purposeth to stay.

30. And it came to pass as he sat at meat with them, he took bread, and blest it, and brake, and gave to them.

30. N. Not the Sacrament, but as the Master of the Family was wont to do, gave the peculiar holiness of his manner of doing it.

31. And their eyes were opened, and they knew him; and he vanished out of their sight.

31. It's like partly by God's change on them, and partly by Christ's more discernible discovery, they knew him.

32. Though Christ rose in the same Body, and was not yet fully glorified, it was greatly changed, so that he could appear and vanish when and where he pleased; and be known or unknown to beholders.

32. And they told one another, Did our heart burn within us, while he talked with us by the way, and while he opened to us the scriptures?

32. N. They told each other how they felt their hearts arched while he preached to them.

33. And
Ch. 24. Christ appeared to his Disciples. Ch. 2.4.

32. And they rose up the same hour, and returned to Jerusalem, and found the eleven gathered together, and them that were with them, 34. Saying, The Lord is risen indeed, and hath appeared to Simon.

35. As soon as they came in among them, the eleven first told these two, that the Lord was risen, &c.

36. And they said what things were done in the way, and how he was known of them in breaking of bread.

37. Then the two also told the eleven, and the company, what they had seen and heard in the way, &c.

38. And as they thus spake, Jesus himself stood in the midst of them, and shewed unto them, Peace be unto you.

39. We need not feign that he opened the door, when he could appear and disappear, when and where he would: He did not lie hidden in some corner, when they saw him seldom in forty days, but disappeared.

40. Peace is the voice of a risen Saviour, who purchased it so dearly, and gives it as the great Peace-maker.

41. But they were terrified and affrighted, and supposed that they had seen a Spirit.

42. If he had opened the door, and come in as other men, it's like they would not have taken him for a Spirit.

43. And he said unto them, Why are ye troubled, and why do thoughts arise in your hearts?

44. Behold my hands and my feet, that it is I myself: handle me, and see, for a Spirit hath not flesh and bones, as ye see me have. 40. And when he had thus spoken, he shewed them his hands and his feet.

45. Troubling thoughts are ready to surprise ignorant persons, but Christ to suppress them, appealed to their senses: For man is apt to believe what he seeth and feeleth, but is hardly brought to believe any thing above fells. N. Spirits have not flesh and blood.

44. And while they yet believed not for joy, and wondered, he said unto them, Have ye here any meat?

45. There was some belief called Hope, or else they could not have had joy: But it's hard fully to believe great things which we desire, through the power of fear, lest it should not prove true.

46. And they gave him a piece of broiled fish, and of an honeycomb. 43. And he took it, and did eat before them.

47. They dined skilfully: Broiling and Honey correct both the pitious Stiflidity, and the corpulence of his.

48. Eating proved Christ to be no mere Spirit. When Angels did eat, they first took Bodies, or else seemed to do what they did not: Therefore glorified Bodies eat not, because they are spiritual, though not mere Spirits, and have their sustenance without eating.

49. And he said unto them, Those are the words which I spake unto you, while I was yet with you, that all things must be fulfilled which were written in the law of Moses, and in the prophets, and in the psalms concerning me.

50. N. This Testimony of Christ confirmeth the Law of Moses, the Prophets and the Psalms, to be the true Word of God.

51. Then opened he their understanding, that they might understand the scriptures.

52. N. This was a greater effect of Divine Power, (to open mens understandings,) than to appear without opening the door: The understanding of man is shut up against the understanding of things spiritual, till Christ open it. O pray for this opening.

53. And said unto them, Thus it is written, and thus it behoved Christ to suffer, and to rise from the dead the third day:

54. This should not seem new or strange to you, which the Scriptures so fully foretold.

P 4
47. And that repentance and remission of sins should be preached in his name, among all nations, beginning at Jerusalem. 48. And ye are witnesses of these things.

47, 48. I have by Redemption purchased an Act of Grace and Oblivion, a free universal pardon of sin to all that repent and will accept it, as my gift: This must be preached to all Nations; and you must do it first by Office, who are my Witnesses of the matter of it.

49. And behold, I send the promise of my Father upon you: but tarry ye in the city of Jerusalem, until ye be endued with power from on high.

49. And the great Promise of the Holy Ghost, for Miracles, Tongues, and Holiness, as my Agent, Seal and Earnest, I will quickly pour out upon you. But wait together at Jerusalem, till it be done, and you be endued with the foresaid power from God.

50. And he led them out as far as to Bethany: and he lifted up his hands, and blessed them. 51. And it came to pass, while he blessed them, he was parted from them, and carried up into heaven.

50, 51. And afterward, at the end of forty days, when he had ascended up to them, and given them their Commission to go and Disciple all Nations, baptizing them in the name of the Father, Son, and Holy Ghost, teaching them to observe all things that he had commanded them, promising to be with them to the end of the World, Matt. 28. 19, 20. Mark 16. 13, 16. See Acts 1. 5.

52. And Christ, that parted from Earth with a Blessing, will bless his Church here and forever.

52. Note: Though their Lord was gone from them on Earth, they were now assured that they had a King and Saviour in Heaven, whence his influence would be most extensive and efficacious.

53. And were continually in the temple, praising and blessing God. Amen.

53. As they worshipped their glorified Redeemer, so they continued together assembled in the Temple, (not yet alienated from all Jewish Worship,) praying and magnifying the Name of God, who had bestowed a Saviour and his Grace upon them, and had given the Church so gracious and glorious a Saviour and Head, and done such wonders to confirm their Faith. Amen.
The Gospel according to St. JOHN.

CHAP. I.

1. In the beginning was the Word, and the Word was with God, and the Word was God. 2. The same was in the beginning with God.

3. All things were made by him, and without him was not any thing made that was made.

4. In him was life, and the life was the light of men.

5. And this Light shineth communicative unto this darkened World; which receiving it but according to the mode and disposition of the receivers, through their willful resistance, receiveth the illumination and Teaching so defeavently, as that most (in Judaea and elsewhere) remain in darkness still.

6. There was a man sent from God, whose name was John. 7. The same came for a witness, to bear witness of the light, that all men through him might believe. 8. He was not that light, but was sent to bear witnesses of that light.

9. That was the true light, which lighteth every man that cometh into the world.

10. He was in the world, and the world was made by him, and the world knew him not.

11. He came unto his own, and his own received him not.
11. He came in flesh to his people the Jews, and they not believing him received him not.

12. But as many as received him, to them gave he power to become the sons of God, even to them that believe on his name:

13. Which were born, not of blood, nor of the will of the flesh, nor of the will of man, but of God.

14. And the Word was made flesh, and dwelt among us (and we beheld his glory, the glory as of the only begotten of the Father) full of grace and truth.

15. John bare witness of him, and cried, saying, This was he of whom I spake, He that cometh after me, is preferred before me; for he was before me:

16. And of his fulness have we all received, and grace for grace.

17. For the law was given by Moses, but grace and truth came by Jesus Christ.

18. No man hath seen God at any time; the only begotten Son, which is in the bosom of the Father, he hath declared him.

19. And this is the record of John, when the Jews sent priests and Levites from Jerusalem, to ask him, Who art thou? 20. And he confessed, and denied not; but confessed, I am not the Christ. 21. And they asked him, What then? Art thou Elias? And he saith, I am not. Art thou that prophet? And he answered, No.

22. Then
30. This is he of whom I said, After me cometh a man which is preferred before me: for he was before me. 31. And I knew him not: but that he should be made manifest to Israel, therefore am I come baptizing with water.

32. And John bare record, saying, I saw the Spirit descending from heaven, like a dove, and it abode upon him. 33. And I knew him not: but he that sent me to baptize with water, the same said unto me, Upon whom thou shalt see the Spirit descending and remaining on him, the same is he which baptizeth with the holy Ghost. 34. And I saw, and bare record that this is the Son of God.

32. N. John's Testimony was both by Revelation and Vision of the descent of the Spirit in some visible appearance. And whether John only heard the voice from Heaven mentioned Mat. 3.17. is uncertain.

35. Again the next day after, John stood, and two of his disciples: 36. And looking upon Jesus as he walked, he said, Behold the Lamb of God. 37. And the two disciples heard him speak, and they followed Jesus.

37. Not followed him yet as his Disciples, but as enquirers after him, in order to a closer following him.

38. Then Jesus turned, and saw them following, and said unto them, What seek ye? They said unto him, Rabbi, (which is to say, being interpreted, Master) where dwellest thou? 39. He said unto them, Come and see. They came and saw where he dwelt, and abode with
with him that day: for it was about the tenth hour. 40. One of the two which heard John speak, and followed him, was Andrew, Simon Peter’s brother. 41. He first findeth his own brother Simon, and faith unto him. We have found the Messias, which is, being interpreted, the Christ. 42. And he brought him to Jesus. And when Jesus beheld him, he said, Thou art Simon the son of Jona: thou shalt be called Cephas, which is by interpretation, a stone.

43. The day following, Jesus would go forth into Galilee, and findeth Philip, and faith unto him, follow me. 44. Now Philip was of Bethsaida, the city of Andrew and Peter. 45. Philip findeth Nathanael, and faith unto him. We have found him of whom Moses in the law, and the prophets did write, Jesus of Nazareth, the son of Joseph.

43. The long expected Messias is now come, and we have found him, he is Jesus of Nazareth, &c.

46. And Nathanael said unto him, Can there any good thing come out of Nazareth? Philip faith unto him, Come and see.

46. Do the Prophets tell us that the Messias shall come out of Nazareth: Galilee produceth not Prophets. Philip faith, come and see him, and then judge.

47. Jesus saw Nathanael coming to him, and faith of him, Behold an Israelite indeed, in whom is no guile.

47. A sincere true hearted man. Q. Were any unbelievers such? Ans. He was not an unbeliever, though yet he knew not Christ: For he had that Belief which men were saved by, before Christ’s coming.

48. Nathanael faith unto him, Whence knowest thou me? Jesus answered and said unto him, Before that Philip called thee when thou wast under the fig tree, I saw thee. 49. Nathanael answered and faith unto him, Rabbi, thou art the Son of God; thou art the king of Israel.

48. Note, He judged that none but God, or by God, could know what men said and did at such a distance. 2. It was well for Nathanael, that he came to see Christ; experience convinced him: And yet no doubt but God’s special Grace did it: For the Pharisees saw more, and yet believed not.

50. Jesus answered and faith unto him, Because I said unto thee, I saw thee under the fig-tree, believedst thou? thou shalt see greater things then these.

50. Both this much convince thee? I will do greater things than this to convince the world.

51. And he faith unto him, Verily, verily I say unto you, Hereafter you shall see heaven open, and the angels of God ascending and descending upon the Son of man.

51. You shall see Heaven open, and the Angels owning me and ministering unto me, especially at my Ascension.

CHAP. II.

1. And the third day there was a marriage in Cana of Galilee; and the mother of Jesus was there. 2. And both Jesus was called, and his disciples, to the marriage.

1. 2. Christ refused not that familiar converse, which Marriage feasts are used to.

3. And when they wanted wine, the mother of Jesus faith unto him, They have no wine. 4. Jesus faith unto her, Woman, what have I to do with thee? mine hour is not yet come.

3. 4. These words are not a breach of the fifth Commandment, but as much to say [1]
Christ turneth St. John's Water into Wine. Ch. 2.

I am not to do Miracles by the direction of a Mother's Authority, or by man, but in the time and manner as by the Divine Wisdom shall be determined. And by this and other passages, Christ seems to fore-see how Papists would overvalue his Mother.

5. His mother faith unto the servants, Whatsoever he faith unto you, do it.

6. And there were set there six water-pots of stone, after the manner of the purifying of the Jews, containing two or three firkins apiece. 7. Jesus faith unto them, Fill the water-pots with water. And they filled them up to the brim. 8. And he faith unto them, Draw out now, and bear unto the governor of the feast. And they bare it.

6. & 7. Note. It is conjectured to be about 1000-800 hundred pounds or pints of Wine that Christ made: which showed that the Guests were very many, or that he was at such Festivals for freer drinking of Wine than is fit among us; perhaps all their Wine was small, and not all of it then drunk: but this and the like occasioned the Pharisees enmity of him.

9. When the ruler of the feast had tasted the water that was made wine, and knew not whence it was, (but the servants which drew the water knew) the governor of the feast called the bridegroom, 10. And faith unto him, Every man at the beginning doth set forth good wine; and when men have well drunk, then that which is worse: but thou hast kept the good wine until now.

11. This beginning of miracles did Jesus in Cana of Galilee; and manifested forth his glory; and his disciples believed on him.

11. By this he shewed them his Divine Power, and convinced his Disciples that he was the Messiah.

12. After this, he went down to Capernaum, he, and his mother, and his brethren, and his disciples, and they continued there not many days. 13. And the Jews passover was at hand, and Jesus went up to Jerusalem. 14. And found in the temple those that sold oxen, and sheep, and doves, and the changers of money, sitting: 15. And when he had made a scourge of small cords, he drove them all out of the temple, and the sheep, and the oxen, and poured out the changers money, and overthrew the tables. 16. And said unto them that sold doves, Take these things hence; make not my Father's house an house of merchandise.

17. And his disciples remembered that it was written, The zeal of thine house hath eaten me up.

18. Then answered the Jews, and said unto him, What sign showeth thou unto us, seeing that thou doest these things?

18. These arbitrary actions require some extraordinary Commission to warrant their. By what sign doth thou prove that thou hast such authority?

19. Jesus answered and said unto them, Destroy this temple, and in three days I will raise it up.

20. Then
20. Then said the Jews, Forty and six years was this temple in building, and wilt thou rear it up in three days? 21. But he spake of the temple of his body.

19. A. He told them enigmatically what should be after plainly expounded. Many Prophecies written darkly, are not intended to be presently understood, but when they are fulfilled.

22. When therefore he was risen from the dead, his disciples remembered that he had said this unto them: and they believed the Scripture, and the word which Jesus had said.

23. When this was performed by his Resurrection, his Disciples believed the Prophecies of him, and his own words.

24. Now when he was in Jeruslaem at the passover, in the feast-day, many believed in his name, when they saw the miracles which he did.

25. His miracles made many believe that he was the Christ; that yet were no thorough Disciples.

26. But Jesus did not commit himself unto them, because he knew all men, 26. And needed not that any should testify of man: for he knew what was in man.

27. But Christ that knew the hearts of Men, and how many have but an unrooted, mutable, unethereal belief, would not trust himself into their hands by similarity.

C.H.A.P. III.

1. There was a man of the Pharisees, named Nicodemus, a ruler of the Jews: 2. The same came to Jesus by night, and said unto him, Rabbi, we know that thou art a teacher come from God: for no man can do these miracles that thou doest, except God be with him.

1, 2. Being a Ruler, he durst not be seen to come to Christ by day light, but came by night, and said, Rabbi, I am one of them of Israel, for I know that thou art a Teacher sent by God; for no Man can do these miracles at these days, but by God's Power; and God will not lend such Power to any one who doeth not approve and confess.

3. Jesus answered and said unto him, Verily verily I say unto thee, Except a man be born again, he cannot see the kingdom of God.

3. As I could not do the works of God by miracles and doctrine, unless God were with me, so neither can any Man become a Member of the Kingdom of God, and be saved, as a true Member of the Kingdom of God, unless by God's Spirit he be begotten again, and have a new qualitative nature given him.

4. Nicodemus saith unto him, How can a man be born when he is old? can he enter the second time into his mother's womb, and be born?

4. Nicodemus greatly misunderstanding Christ, faith, How can, &c.

5. Jesus answered, Verily verily I say unto thee, Except a man be born of water and of the Spirit, he cannot enter into the kingdom of God.

3. I tell thee most certainly, that unless a Man have as it were, a new nature, and the made a new Man, by being washed from his former sin and guilt, and sanctified by the renewing work of God's Spirit, he cannot enter into the Kingdom of God. N. This is all signified and celebrated by Baptism; but it is the washing, and sanctifying of the Soul only, that brings the promise of Salvation: But the Church on Earth being as the Porch, Womb or Seminary to Heaven, it is no other kind of Faith, but that same which in the Scripture is saying, which is required to be professed in Baptism, for admittance into the visible Church.

6. That which is born of the flesh, is flesh; and that which is born of the Spirit, is Spirit.

6. Men generate Men, but God makes Saints by a spiritual generation: Nature begats but nature, but God's Spirit gives a holy and heavenly Nature or Induction.
7. Marvel not that I said unto thee, Ye must be born again. 8. The wind bloweth where it listeth, and thou hearest the sound thereof, but canst not tell whence it cometh, and whither it goeth: so is every one that is born of the Spirit.

9. Nicodemus answered and said unto him, How can these things be?

10. Jesus answered and said unto him, Art thou a master of Israel, and knowest not these things? 11. Verily verily I say unto thee, We speak that we do know, and testify that we have seen; and ye have not borne us out.

12. If I have told you earthly things, and ye believe not, how shall ye believe if I tell you of heavenly things?

13. And no man hath ascended up to heaven, but he that came down from heaven, even the Son of man which is in heaven.

14. And as Moses lifted up the serpent in the wilderness, even so must the Son of man be lifted up: 15. That whosoever believeth in him should not perish, but have eternal life.

16. For God so loved the world, that he gave his only begotten Son, that whatsoever believeth in him should not perish, but have everlasting life.

17. For God sent not his Son into the world to condemn the world; but that the world through him might be saved.
that God sent him into the World, but to be the Saviour of the World, which his Doctrine, Life and Sufferings shew.

18. He that believeth on him, is not condemned: but he that believeth not, is condemned already, because he hath not believed in the name of the only begotten Son of God.

18. He that believeth on him, is thereupon by him delivered from the Condemnation that he was under, and shall be saved; but he that believeth not, is not delivered from his Guilt and Condemnation, but is under the Guilt of a severer punishment, the Law of Grace it self Condemning him, because he hath rejected the Son of God, sent from Heaven with his Doctrine, his Grace and offered Mercy; so that both the Law of Nature and of Grace condemn the Neglecters of so great Salvation.

19. And this is the condemnation, that light is come into the world, and men loved darkness rather then light,because their deeds were evil.

19. For the true cause of Mens Condemnation is (not that they have no Saviour or Ransom, being left as Devils to remallefice despair, but) that a Saviour as Light is come into the World, and Men love darkness rather than light, and so reject him and his truth and grace, because they love and live in that in which cannot endure the light.

20. For every one that doeth evil, hateth the light, neither cometh to the light, lest his deeds should be reproved:

20. For it is the part of Light to detect and shame Mens evil deeds: and therefore Malefactors hate and avoid the Light, lest it reproves them and condemn them.

21. But he that doeth truth, cometh to the light, that his deeds may be made manifest, that they are wrought in God.

21. But Light is the honour of well doing, which is not afraid to be known ; and therefore he that doeth what is truly good, loveth the Light, and cometh to it, that his deed may appear to be as they are, the work commanded and approved by God: And therefore they will receive that am the Light of the World.

22. After these things came Jesus and his disciples into the land of Judea, and there he tarried with them, and was baptized.

22. He by his Disciples baptized those that believed and repented.

23. And John also was baptizing in Enon, near to Salim, because there was much water there: and they came, and were baptized.

24. For John was not yet cast into prison.

23, 24. John ceased not baptizing, even when Christ baptized, nor till he was imprisoned.

25. Then there arose a question between some of John's disciples and the Jews, about purifying.

25. What the dispute was is uncertain.

26. And they came unto John, and said unto him, Rabbi, he that was with thee beyond Jordan, to whom thou barest witness, behold, the same baptizeth, and all men come to him.

26. On this occasion they told John how the People flocked to the Baptism of Christ.

27. John answered and said, A man can receive nothing, except it be given him from heaven. 28. Ye yourselves bear witness, that I said, I am not the Christ, but that I am sent before him.

27. This doth but confirm what I said of him: His Power is from Heaven: I pretend to none such as his.

29. He that hath the bride, is the bridegroom: but the friend of the bridegroom, which flanndeth and heareth him, rejoiceth greatly because of the bridegroom's voice: this my joy therefore is fulfilled.

29. It is he that is the King and Saviour of the Church: I am but his Friend that rejoices in his Kingdom and Success.
30. His Kingdom and Glory must increase to perfection, but my preparatory Ministry will soon end.

31. He that cometh from above, is above all: he that is of the earth, is earthly, and speaketh of the earth; he that cometh from heaven, is above all.

32. He came from Heaven, and therefore is above us all: We that are but Men, inhabitants of Earth, (though so far as God inspires us we speak his word) yet being of earthly mold, speak and do like our selves, in a human earthly manner: But he that cometh from Heaven doth excel us all.

33. And what he hath seen and heard, that he testifieth: and no man receiveth his testimony. He that hath received his testimony, hath set to his seal, that God is true.

34. We tell you what God teacheth us in several measures; but he setteth you that which he hath seen and heard in Heaven: And ye the most reject his Testimony; but they that truly receive it by Faith, do in believing him, believe God himself, that cannot lie.

35. For whom God hath sent, speaketh the words of God: for God giveth not the Spirit by measure unto him.

36. He that is thus sent from Heaven by God, speaketh God’s own Words fully and infallibly, as fully known to him, and is not like us and other Prophets, that have but our limited measures of the Spirit for some particular revelation and use.

37. The Father loveth the Son, and hath given all things into his hand.

38. The Love of the Father to the Son is transcendent; and he hath delivered hapless Man, and all this World into his hand or power, as Redeemer, Lord and Administrator of all.

39. He that believeth on the Son hath everlasting life: and he that believeth not the Son, shall not see life: but the wrath of God abideth on him.

40. He that believeth Christ to be the Son of God and Saviour of the World, and with Truth giveth up himself to be taught, ruled and saved by him, hath a right to everlasting Life by the Covenant of Grace, and the beginning of it, by the Holy Ghost in him, and shall shortly have the full perfection. But he that by Unbelief rejecteth Christ and his offered Grace, shall not see this blessed Life, but the wrath of God for his unpardoned Sin and aggravated Guilt, abideth on him.

C H A P. IV.

1. When therefore the Lord knew how the Pharisees had heard that Jesus made and baptized more disciples than John,

2. (Though Jesus himself baptized not, but his disciples) He left Judea, and departed again into Galilee.

3. They knowing that, which he knew would exasperate them, to avoid Persecution, he removed to Galilee, (till his time came.)

4. And he must needs go through Samaria. Then cometh he to a city of Samaria, which is called Sychar, near to the parcel of ground that Jacob gave to his son Joseph. Now Jacob’s well was there. Jesus therefore being weary with his journey, sat down on the well; and it was about the sixth hour.

4, 5, 6. N. Christ travelled all on foot, and had a body wearied with Travel; the sixth hour was noon.

7. There cometh a woman of Samaria to draw water: Jesus saith unto her, Give me to drink.

8. For his disciples were gone away unto the city to buy meat. Then saith the woman of Samaria unto him, How is it that thou being a Jew, askest drink of me, which am a woman of Samaria? for the Jews have no dealings with the Samaritans.

7. &c. N. Christ was not so much for separation, as the other Jews,
16. It was not dubiously equivocation 1 Chrirt calls [well saying] but meant of that Truth, not commonly known, I like. 19. The woman faith unto his Sir, I perceive that thou art a prophet. 20. Our fathers worship- ped in this mountain; and ye faith that in Jerusalem is the place where men ought to worship.

19, 20. I perceive by thy knowing course, that thou art a Prophet: Tell me the whether you Jews, or we that follow the eldest Fathers, be in the right about the Place of Worship. & This is the use of ignorant, carnal people, to start some Controversion about Circumstantials or Ceremonies in Religion, instead of great and noble things.

21. Jesus faith unto her, Woman, believe me, the hour cometh when ye shall neither in this mountain, nor yet at Jerusalem worship the Father. 21. Alas poor woman, haft thou a greater matter than Ceremony, even a Place of Worship to mind? Believe me that time is hard at hand, when Jerusalem shall be destroyed, and you scattered, and a better way of Worship settled, so that ye shall no more keep up your Ceremonial Worship, either at Shiloh or Jerusalem.

22. Ye worship ye know not what: we know what we worship for salvation is of the Jews.

22. You worship ignorantly and corruptly, you know not what, even since the Ca- tivity of the Ten Tribes; and you strive about the place and Ceremonies, when you have more need to learn who he is that you must worship. It is of the Tribe Judah, that the Saviour cometh, who teach you how to worship God; and this the Jews do rightly, to believe and own in Worship but the true God.

23. But the hour cometh, at now is, when the true worshippers shall worship the Father in spirit and in truth: for the Father seeketh such to worship him.

23. The time is now at hand. Yes com when true Worshippers fain take it with shadows, nor worship God by Mosaic Ceremonies.
Ceremonies or Samaritane Traditions, but with that Spiritual Worship which Types and Ceremonies did signify, even from the Spirit of God within them as their Principle, and according to the Spiritual Law or Word, as their Rule, and not with bodily Exercise that professed nothing.

24. God is a Spirit, and they that worship him, must worship him in spirit and in truth.

24. Acceptable Worship must be suited to the God you worship; and therefore they that worship him must worship him spiritually, and not by Jewish Ceremony, because he is a Spirit. N. Though [Spirit] signifies a Nature more excellent than [Body] yet that, and all human Words are too low to speak the Essence of God, any otherwise than Analogically or Metaphorically; for God is above all our formal Conceptions or Expressions; but created Spirit, being the highest created Beings known to us, and our Souls of that nature, they are the clearest Glads in which we can know God; and though the word [Spirit] first signifies created Spirit, it doth transcendently, eminently, signify the Infinite Father of Spirits; and we can by nothing higher of God's Essence, than that he is this Infinite, Perfect, Transcendent Spirit; what our best Conceptions of a Spirit are, I have opened in Methodo Theologica, &c.

25. The woman faith unto him, I know that Meffias cometh which is called Christ: when he is come, he will tell us all things.

25. N. Even the Samaritans expected the Meffiah: But with misconceptions of him.

26. Jefus faith unto her, I that speak unto thee, am he.

26. N. Why did Christ tell that to this woman, which he forbid others to tell abroad? Answ. He knew where and when it was reasonable, and would do more good than harm.

27. And upon this came his disciples, and marvelled that he talked with the woman: yet no man said, What seekest thou? or, Why talkest thou with her?

27. Tho they presumed not to ask him why, yet they thought it strange that he should talk so long with one woman.

28. The woman then left her water-pot, and went her way into the city, and faith to the men.

29. Come, see a man which told me all things that ever I did; is not this the Christ?

28. Telling her her secrets, persuaded her to believe him, saying, I am he.

30. Then they went out of the city, and came unto him.

31. In the mean while his disciples prayed him, saying, Master, eat. 32. But he said unto them, I have meat to eat that ye know not of. 33. Therefore said the disciples one to another, Hath any man brought him ought to eat? 34. Jesus faith unto them, My meat is to do the will of him that sent me, and to finish his work.

30. &c. N. The converting of one Soul was more pleasing to Christ than his natural food; and so must it be to us. He that loveth God and Christ, and the Holy Ghost and the Church, must rejoice when there is one more converted, to please and worship God, to honour Christ and his Spirit, to encrease the Church: He thatloveth his Country, must rejoice that one more is made a blessing to it, when the wicked are its Enemies: He that loveth Souls, will rejoice in that Grace which is better to them than all riches: He that loveth God's Word will rejoice in its success: He that loveth Heaven will be glad that there is one more to possess it: He that loveth himself aright, will be glad that there is one more made like him, to love him, and pray for him. And he that hateth Sin and Satan, will be glad that there is one less to serve him.

35. Say not ye, There are yet four months, and then cometh harvest? behold, I say unto you, Lift up your eyes, and look on the fields; for they are white already to harvest.

35. You rejoice that within four months it will be harvest: And shall not I rejoice to see the harvest of my husbandry even at hand, in the conversion of many Souls to God?

36. And he that reapeth, receiveth...
Ch. 4. Samaritans believe. St. John. The Ruler’s Son healed. Ch. 4.
veth wages, and gathereth fruit unto life eternal: that both he that soweth, and he that reapeth, may rejoice together.
36. And as I sowed the seed, so you that I shall send out as Apostles shall see and reap more plentiful fruit hereafter, and shall for your labour under me, be well rewarded: that I that have sowed and you that reap may rejoice together in the success.
37. And herein is that saying true, One soweth, and another reapeth. 38. I sent you to reap that whereon ye bestowed no labour: other men laboured, and ye are entred into their labours.
38. The Prophets and John and I after all, have sowed the seed and been at the costliest labour, and yet it is you that must see the success in gathering the universal Church, when I that laboured and suffered am gone.
39. And many of the Samaritans of that city believed on him, for the saying of the woman, which testified, He told me all that ever I did.
39. N. That to believe in Christ by the means of men credible testimony of his Words and Miracles, is not (as many falsely say) to resolve our Faith into the credit of man, and to make it a mere humane Faith. They that believe Apostles who said they saw Christ’s Miracles, Resurrection and Ascension, believe by a divine Faith, on the same evidence that the Apostles were convinced by, but not conveyed by the same means: what they received by their eyes and ears immediately, we receive mediate by their report, living at a distance: So that their Testimony is not believed instead of Christ’s, nor instead of the evidence of his truth, but as the conveyance of this evidence instead of our mediate sight and hearing: so is it as to the Tradition of the Bible, Baptism, Creed, &c. That Tradition doth but deliver to us the same word mediately which the first Churches received immediately from the Apostles. He that cannot read, may be saved by the believing the Gospel translated and read, or reported by the Preachers.
40. So when the Samaritans were come unto him, they besought him, that he would tarry with them: and he abode there two days.
41. And many mo believed, because of his own word: 42. And said unto the woman, Now we believe, not because of thy saying: for we have heard him ourselves, and know that this is indeed the Christ, the Saviour of the world.
42. Not so much because of thy saying. As yet this was the same sort of Faith, though by the evidence divers ways conveyed.
43. Now after two days he departed thence, and went into Galilee: 44. For Jesus himself testified, that a prophet hath no honour in his own country.
43. He went into Galilee, not to Nazareth where he had lived, but to Cana: For he had testified that a Prophet is despised in his own Country; where they have seen his common Parentage and Education, but see not God’s Spirit in him: and familiarity breeds contempt.
45. Then when he was come into Galilee, the Galileans received him, having seen all the things that he did at Jerusalem at the feast: for they also went unto the feast.
45. His former and later Miracles caused the Galileans to receive him.
46. So Jesus came again into Cana of Galilee, where he made the water wine. And there was a certain noble man, whose son was sick at Capernaum. 47. When he heard that Jesus was come out of Judea into Galilee, he went unto him, and besought him that he would come down and heal his son: for he was at the point of death. 48. Then said Jesus unto him, Except ye see signs and wonders, ye will not believe. 49. The noble man faith unto him, Sir, come down ether my child die. 50. Jesus faith unto him, Go thy way; thy son liveth.
Ch. 5. The impotent man cured. St. John.

liveth. And the man believed the word that Jesus had spoken unto him, and he went his way. 51. And as he was now going down, his servants met him, and told him, saying, Thy son liveth. 52. Then enquired he of them the hour when he began to amend; and they said unto him, Yea, saideth at the seventh hour the fever left him. 53. So the father knew that it was at the same hour, in which Jesus said unto him, Thy son liveth; and himself believed, and his whole house. 54. This is again the second miracle that Jesus did, when he was come out of Judea into Galilee.

46. N. 1. Outward necessities which are sensible of, drove many to seek to Christ. 2. Children speed the better for their Parents Faith: And if in the Body, why not in the Soul. 3. When the Rulers of Families believe, they must endeavour the Conversion of their whole Families. And God often blesteth such endeavours. 4. Bodily Mercies tend to the good of Souls, and should be so improved.

CHAP. V.

1. After this there was a feast of the Jews, and Jesus went up to Jerusalem. 2. Now there is at Jerusalem by the sheep-market a pool, which is called in the Hebrew tongue, Bethesda, having five porches. 3. In these lay a great multitude of impotent folk, of blind, halt, withered, waiting for the moving of the water. 4. For an angel went down at a certain season into the pool, and troubled the water: whatsoever then first after the troubling of the water stepped in, was made whole of whatsoever disease he had.

N. 1. Some few think that this was a Pond out of which the blood of the Sacrifices ran into, and was fired by a Messenger (not an Angel) at the time of the Passover, when the blood was newly run into it, and so healed, not miraculously, but by the ordinary virtue of the new shed Blood, and that it is not all diseases that are meant; and that it was not eight and thirty years that the man had waited in that Hospital; but that he had so long been ill: So Dr. Hammond; others think it was the Pond made by Hezekiah, and healed by unaccountable Miracle.

5. And a certain man was there, which had an infirmity thirty and eight years.

5. How great is it to live eight and thirty years under God's wholesome discipline? How unexcusable was this man if he had been proud, or worldly, or careless of his everlasting State? O my God, I thank thee for the like discipline of eight and fifty years, how safe a life is this in Comparison of full prosperity and pleasure?

6. When Jesus saw him lie, and knew that he had been now a long time in that case, he faith unto him, wilt thou be made whole? 7. The impotent man answered him, Sir, I have no man, when the water is troubled, to put me into the pool: but while I am coming, another steppeth down before me. 8. Jesus faith unto him, Rise, take up thy bed, and walk.

6. N. 1. When humane help faileth, Christ theeweth his love, and power, and commandeth health at a word.

9. And immediately the man was made whole, and took up his bed, and walked: and on the same day was the sabbath.

9. The man knew them all that he was cured: And Christ chose the Sabbath for this good work.

10. The Jews therefore said unto him that was cured, It is the sabbath-day; it is not lawful for thee to carry thy bed.

10. The Jews were stricter than Christ for Ceremony and Rites; but looser for Charity, and pleaded that it was a breach of Moses's Law to carry his Couch.

11. He answered them, He that made me whole, the same said unto me,
unto me. Take up thy bed and walk.

11. I know not whom I should obey; if not a man that can work so great a miracle.

12. Then asked they him, What man is that which said unto thee, Take up thy bed and walk?

13. Who is he that durst thus break the Law?

14. And he that was healed wist not who it was: for Jesus had conveyed himself away, a multitude being in that place.

15. Christ did it not for humane applause, and therefore was not known to be the man.

16. Afterward Jesus findeth him in the temple, and said unto him, Behold, thou art made whole: sin no more, lest a worse thing come unto thee.

17. It was for thy sin that thou wast corrected: beware of sin, lest the next be worse.

18. The man departed, and told the Jews that it was Jesus which had made him whole.

19. He told them in the praising of Jesus that it was he that healed him.

20. And therefore did the Jews persecute Jesus, and sought to slay him, because he had done these things on the sabbath-day.

21. O the blindness and madness of malignants, that will seek to kill men for doing good and healing men.

22. But Jesus answered them, My Father worketh hitherto, and I work.

23. To save the afflicted, is a work befitting my Father and Me, whom you oppose.

24. Therefore the Jews sought the more to kill him, because he not onely had broken the sabbath, but said also, that God was his Father, making himself equal with God.

25. Malignants zeal fatherseth even envy and persecution on God.

19. Then answered Jesus, and said unto them, Verily verily I say unto you, The Son can do nothing of himself, but what he receiveth from the Father do: for what things soever he doeth, thee also doeth the Son likewise.

20. I tell you by condemning my works you condemn my Father's also: for I do nothing but what I know he doth and approveth, and he doth them in and by me, and I do nothing without him.

21. For the Father loveth the Son, and sheweth him all things that himself doeth: and he will shew him greater works than these, that ye may marvel.

22. For the Father's infinite Love communiceth to the Son that Wisdom and Power by which he doth all that the Father doth: and by which you shall see greater things than these, and wonder.

23. For as the Father raiseth up the dead, and quickeneth him: even so the Son quickeneth whom he will.

24. As the Father is the Lord of Life, and giveth and restoreth life at his pleasure; so also doth the Son.

25. For the Father judgeth no man; but hath committed all judgment unto the Son:

26. For the Father as meet Creator according to the Law of Innocency judgeth no man; but hath given up the Government of this world to the Son as Redeemer, to judge them as ransomed, according to that Law and Measure of Grace Which they are under.

27. That all men should honour the Son, even as they honour the Father. He that honoureth not the Son, honoureth not the Father which hath sent him.

28. And so it is by honouring the Son, that the Father will be honoured, and by dishonouring him, the Father is dishonoured.

29. Verily, verily I say unto you, He that heareth my word, and believeth on him that sent me, hath everlasting life, and shall not come into
into condemnation; but is pasted from death unto life.

24. I tell you if you hear my word obediently, and shall believe on God the Father, as sending me on the Office of a Saviour, you shall have everlasting life by my Merits and Gift, and shall not be condemned.

25. Verily verily I say unto you, the hour is coming, and now is, when the dead shall hear the voice of the Son of God: and they that hear shall live.

26. For as the Father hath life in himself; so hath he given to the Son to have life in himself;

27. And as Redeemer, being the Son of God in his Divine Nature, and his humane Nature advanced into personal Union with the Divine, he hath Authority given him to Govern the World, and according to the Law of Grace to do justice for the faithful, and against the impenitent unbelievers.

28. Marvel not at this: for the hour is coming, in which all that are in the graves shall hear his voice, 29. And shall come forth, they that have done good unto the resurrection of life; and they that have done evil, unto the resurrection of damnation.

29. Let not this seem incredible to you: For the hour is coming in which the Bodies now turned to dust, shall by the Soul's return be revived, and hear his voice that calls them up: And there shall be a Resurrection of the just and unjust: They that have done good according to the tenor of that Law of Grace which they were under, shall come forth to a life of happiness, and they that have done evil, violating the conditions of life in that Law, to the Resurrection of damnation.

30. I can of mine own self do nothing: as I hear I judge: and my judgment is just; because I seek not mine own will, but the will of the Father which hath sent me.

31. If I hear witness of my self, my witness is not true. 32. There is another that beareth witness of me, and I know that the witness which he beareth of me, is true.

33. Ye sent unto John, and he bare witness unto the truth. 34. But I receive not testimony from man: but these things I say, that ye might be faved.

35. He was a burning and a shining light: and ye were willing for a season to rejoice in his light.

36. God set him up to be as a burning and shining light, to lead you out of darkness to the Kingdom of the Messiah, which you expected: And a while you gladly heard...
heard that news, and were baptized by him:
Till you were told that I am he, and then
you turned back.

36. But I have greater witness
than that of John: for the works
which the Father hath given me to
finish, the same works that I do,
have witnesse of me, that the Father
hath sent me.

36. N. For these works could not be done
but by God's power and will, who will
not be the world's deceiver.

37. And the Father himself which
hath sent me, hath born witness
of me. Ye have neither heard his
voice at any time, nor seen his
shape. 38. And ye have not his
word abiding in you: for whom
he hath sent, him ye believe not.

37, 38. By a voice from Heaven God tes-
Uished me to be his beloved Son: But in-
deed you were not the persons that heard
it: For you never heard his voice, nor saw
his appearance, nor understand or believe
his Word: Else you would believe on me
that am sent by him.

39. Search the scriptures, for
in them ye think ye have eternal
life, and they are they which testifie
of me.

39. You own the authority of Me-
sis and the Prophets, and look to have eternal
life by keeping their word: search their
Writings, and you will find that they tes-
tifie of me.

40. Ye will not come to me,
that ye might have life.

40. And though they tell you that it is
in, and by me, that this Life must be at-
tained, ye will not believe in me and come
to me that you may attain it.

41. I receive not honour from
men. 42. But I know you, that
ye have not the love of God in
you.

41, 42. It is not the applause of men that
I seek for, but your own Salvation: But I
know for all your boasting of being the
peculiar people of God, you are indeed no
true lovers and obeyers of God.

43. I am come in my Father's
name, and ye receive me not: if

another shall come in his own name,

him ye will receive.

43. I come with testimony from Heaven
of the mission and approbation of my Fa-
ter, and this prevaileth not against your
prejudice to believe me. But when a de-
counter shall come with contention without
any evidence from God, and shall promise
you a temporal Kingdom, you will take him
for the Messiah.

44. How can ye believe, which
receive honour one of another, and
seek not the honour that cometh
from God onely?

44. How can you receive the Messiah sent
from God, who do not seek and trust to
God's approbation: and his way of saving
you, but must have a worldly Kingdom,
and be fixed and advanced after the man-
er of worldly men, and look for a Saviour
suited to such ends.

45. Do not think that I shall
accuse you to the Father: there is one
that accuseth you, even Moses, in
whom ye trust. 46. For had ye
believed Moses, ye would have be-
lieved me: for he wrote of me.
47. But if ye believe not his writ-
ings, how shall ye believe my
words?

45. 46. 47. If say not all this as if I came
to be your accuser to my Father: Even Moses
in whom you trust will accuse you: had
you understood and believed the Prophets
and Types of Messiah, ye would have believed
me: For it is me that they all speak of and
point you to: But if you will not be con-
vinced by his Writings whom you glory in,
no wonder if you reject my words.

C H A P. VI.

1. A fter these things Jesus went
over the sea of Galilee,
which is the sea of Tiberias. 2. And
a great multitude followed him,
because they saw his miracles which
he did on them that were disea-
sed.

1, 2. N. The first motives that draw men
toward Christ, are usually such as nature it
self is somewhat capable to esteem and judge
of, such as Miracles are.
3. And Jesus went up into a mountain, and there he sat with his disciples. 4. And the passover, a feast of the Jews, was at night.

5. When Jesus then lifted up his eyes, and saw a great company come unto him, he saith unto Philip, Whence shall we buy bread that these may eat? 6. (And this he said to prove him: for he himself knew what he would do.)

7. Philip answered him, Two hundred penny-worth of bread is not sufficient for them, that every one of them may take a little.

8. N. Philip's sense of the difficulty, was a preparation to the value of the Miracle.

9. One of his disciples, Andrew, Simon Peter's brother, saith unto him. 9. There is a lad here, which hath five barley-loaves, and two small fishes: but what are they among so many?

10. And Jesus said, Make the men sit down. Now there was much grass in the place. So the men sat down, in number about five thousand. 11. And Jesus took the loaves, and when he had given thanks, he distributed to the disciples, and to the disciples to them that were set down; and likewise of the fishes, as much as they would.

12. N. If Christ would not distribute barley bread, and that miraculously, till he had given thanks; (not deterred by the suspicions of a riot or convencible) sure we should imitate him in our ordinary repast, and eat and drink to the glory of God; in a holy thankfulness for his liberality.

13. When they were filled, he said unto his disciples, Gather up the fragments that remain, that nothing be lost.

14. Therefore they gathered them together, and filled twelve baskets with the fragments of the five barley-loaves, which remained over and above unto them that had eaten.

15. To lose any of our useful food, is a sin against God: Where there is the greatest plenty, no fragments should be lost, while the poor do need it. How much more should we lose God's word or helps, or our time, or any such greater mercies?

16. Then those men, when they had seen the miracle that Jesus did, said, This is of a truth that prophet that should come into the world.

17. A Miracle done upon five thousand at once, made a common Conviction of them that Christ was the Messiah, or a great Prophet.

18. When Jesus therefore perceived that they would come and take him by force to make him a king, he departed again into a mountain himself alone.

19. When they would have made a Captain and visible Monarch of him, he thinned it and avoided them.

20. And when even was now come, his disciples went down unto the sea. 17. And entered into a ship, and went over the sea towards Capernaum: and it was now dark, and Jesus was not come to them. 18. And the sea arose, by reason of a great wind that blew. 19. So when they had rowed about five and twenty, or thirty furlongs, they see Jesus walking on the sea, and drawing nigh unto the ship: and they were afraid. 20. But the faith unto them. It is I, be not afraid.

21. This Miracle showed Christ to be above nature.

22. Then they willingly received him into the ship: and immediately the ship was at the land whither they went.
21. N. They might well be glad to receive him that could rule Sea and Land.

22. The day following, when the people which stood on the other side of the sea, saw that there was none other boat there, save that one whereinto his disciples were entered, and that Jesus went not with his disciples into the boat, but that his disciples were gone away alone: 23. (Howbeit there came other boats from Tiberias, nigh unto the place where they did eat bread, after that the Lord had given thanks), 24. When the people therefore saw that Jesus was not there, neither his disciples, they also took shipping, and came to Capernaum, seeking for Jesus.

22, 23, 24. How earnest did these persons seem in following Christ?

25. And when they had found him on the other side of the sea, they said unto him, Rabbi, when camest thou hither? 26. Jesus answered them, and said, Verily verily I say unto you, Ye seek me, not because ye saw the miracles, but because ye did eat of the loaves, and were filled.

25. N. It seems these were a very poor sort of people, that would follow Christ for Basley Bread.

27. Labour not for the meat which perisheth, but for that meat which endureth unto everlasting life, which the Son of man shall give unto you: for him hath God the Father sealed.

27. Labour first and chiefly for the food which endureth to everlasting Life; even the Spirit of Holiness renewing you by the Gospel, and an union with me who am the Bread of Life, which I will give unto all true Believers; to which use God hath sent and sealed me by fulness of the Spirit and Power: And trust God for bodily food while you labour for it, but in the second place. N. The words have a comparative signification: Labour not, is Labour less, or but subordinately.

28. Then said they unto him, What shall we do, that we may work the works of God?

29. What is that Labour for the everlasting Life which God requireth of us? What must we do for it?

29. Jesus answered and said unto them, This is the work of God, that ye believe on him whom he hath sent.

30. This is your first and great work which God requireth, that you believe on me whom God hath sent, and take me for your Teacher and Saviour, that I may guide and sanctify you, and teach you your further duty, in order to fit you for everlasting Life.

30. They said therefore unto him, What sign showest thou then, that we may see, and believe thee? what dost thou work? 31. Our fathers did eat manna in the desert; as it is written, He gave them bread from heaven to eat.

30. If thou wouldst have us believe in thee, convince us yet by further Miracles? Canst thou procure us Bread from Heaven as Moses did? N. 1. Strange! that they should call for more Miracles when they newly came from seeing one? 2. It was a feeding Miracle that these expected; which might gratify their flesh as well as their faith.

32. Then Jesus said unto them, Verily verily I say unto you, Moses gave you not that bread from heaven; but my Father giveth you the true bread from heaven. 33. For the bread of God is he which cometh down from heaven, and giveth life unto the world.

32. It was not Moses that gave you the true Bread from Heaven: Manna and other Types did but foreshew me, who am the true Bread which my father giveth you from Heaven, whence I came, called Bread, because I give life to the World.

34. Then said they unto him, Lord, ever more give us this bread.

34. N. Their carnal minds, had carnal desires, and understood Christ accordingly.

35. And
35. And Jesus said unto them, I am the bread of life: he that cometh to me, shall never hunger; and he that believeth on me, shall never thirst.

36. As your bodies live by food, so he that cometh to me by true Faith, and is united to me, shall have by me true spiritual exalting Life, and shall have all his necessities of hunger and thirst satisfied.

37. But I said unto you, that ye also have seen me, and believe not.

38. But I know your hearts, that many of you have seen my Miracles, and thus crowed after me, for the strangeness and novelty, yet are not true believers.

39. All that the Father giveth me, shall come to me; and him that cometh to me, I will in no wise cast out.

39. All that the Father hath given to me as fully resolved to save them, shall believe and take me for their Saviour: I come not into the World upon an uncertainty of faces: I have undertaken the effectual saving of those that are given me by the Father to be certainly saved: All those will come to me, and I will refuse none that by obedient trust doth come to me.

39. For I came down from heaven, not to do mine own will, but the will of him that sent me.

39. For I came not at random, or on any fleshly temporal design, but to fulfill my Father's will, who will give the Kingdom to his elected Flocks.

40. It is a troubling controversy, how Christ is said to come down from Heaven: His human Nature was never there, and his Divine, removed not thence, and is everywhere. To pass by their opinion, who say it is a middle, super-angelical, first created Nature, between the Divine and Humane that came down: I answer, that the Divine is said to come down, not by a substantial removal or change of place, but by a transcendent influx and operation, on the Humane Nature of Christ: Men may talk in the dark how they please, but it's certain that that Divine Nature is everywhere, without inequality or existence: and is no more in Christ's Humane Nature, than he is everywhere:

40. But as he is said to be in Heaven, because there he operateth by glorious refrangency and love to the glorified, so he is more eminently and peculiarly united to the Manhood of Christ, for and by a more eminent and peculiar operation on the Humane Nature: As the Sun is more in the Eye than in the Hand or Foot, more in the Plants that quickeneth than in the Stones, so is the Godhead in the Humane Nature of Christ. And, so the Godhead came down from Heaven, as the Sun doth when it shineth in at our Windows, or on a burning glass, rather than as it animateth Plants.

41. And this is the Father's will which hath sent me, that of all which he hath given me, I should lose nothing, but should raise it up again at the last day.

40. And it is the special Commission which I have from my Father, that I should effectually save all these his chosen, and raise them up to life everlasting.

40. And this is the will of him that sent me, that every one which seeth the Son, and believeth on him, may have everlasting Life; and I will raise him up at the last day.

41. The Jews then murmured at him, because he said, I am the bread which came down from heaven.

42. And they said, Is not this Jesus the son of Joseph, whose Father and mother we know? How is it then that he saith, I came down from heaven?

41. N. This difficulty stalled their Faith, not knowing the mystery of Christ's Person and Incarnation.

43. Jesus therefore answered and said unto them, Murmure not among your selves. No man can come to me, except the Father which hath sent me, draw him: and I will raise him up at the last day.
Ch. 6.  Christ is the bread of life.  Ch. 6.

43. The objections which you murmur against me, do indeed require Divine Grace to overcome them; and therefore none can sincerely believe and come to me as a Christian, except the Father who sent me to save men, convince and draw them to me to be saved, and all those I will raise to life everlasting.

45. It is written in the prophets, And they shall be all taught of God. Every man therefore that hath heard, and hath learned of the Father, cometh unto me.

46. Not that any man hath seen the Father, save he which is of God, he hath seen the Father.

47. Verily, verily I say unto you, He that believeth on me hath everlasting life. 48. I am that bread of life. 49. Your fathers did eat manna in the wilderness, and are dead. 50. This is the bread which cometh down from heaven, that a man may eat thereof, and not die. 51. I am the living bread, which came down from heaven: if any man eat of this bread, he shall live for ever: and the bread that I will give, is my flesh, which I will give for the life of the world.

47. I tell you, he that believeth on me, both that everlasting Life, which Manna gave not, for they are dead that did eat it: 47. I am the Bread that came indeed from Heaven and give Life, not temporary, but everlasting, not to a few, but to the World, or universal Church: My sacrificed flesh shall purchase this.

52. The Jews therefore strove amongst themselves, saying, How can this man give us his flesh to eat? 53. Then Jesus said unto them, Verily, verily I say unto you, Except ye eat the flesh of the Son of man, and drink his blood, ye have no life in you. 54. Whoso eateth my flesh, and drinketh my blood, hath eternal life, and I will raise him up at the last day. 55. For my flesh is meat indeed, and my blood is drink indeed.

52. This seemed to them a saying not to be digested, and Christ at that time would no further explain it to them, than by saying, I tell you, unless that you live by virtue of my Flesh and Blood received by Faith as food is by your mouth, ye have no spiritual saving life: It is all they, that thus by Faith partake of my Sacrificed Flesh and Blood, that have the Title and beginning of Eternal Life, and I will at last raise them up to the full fruition of it: For my sacrificed Flesh and Blood are truly enlivening and saving.

56. He that eateth my flesh, and drinketh my blood, dwelleth in me, and I in him.

56. He that by true Faith trueth in my sacrificed Flesh and Blood, professeth thereby to be united to me, as digested food is to the body, whereby I also dwell in him, and I will give him the Spirit of Life, and he shall live by influence from me.

57. As the living Father hath sent me, and I live by the Father: so he that eateth me, even he shall live by me.

57. As the Father is Essential Self-life, and I live by Communication from him; so he that is intimately united to me, and I to him, as food is to the body by digestion, by a covenanting lively Faith, shall live by me a life of Grace and Glory.

58. This is that bread which came down from heaven: not as your fathers did eat manna, and are dead, he that eateth of this bread, shall live for ever.

58. I am the true Bread from Heaven, who give everlasting Life, when your Fathers who did eat Manna died, and were not by that made immortal.

59. These things said he in the synagogue, as he taught in Capernaum.

59. N. Remember, it was not those only that had followed him that he spake this to, and
Ch. 6. A traitor among the apostles.

65. And he said, Therefore saith I unto you, that no man can come unto me, except it were given unto him of my Father.

66. And the word (Can) speaketh not of physical power, but partly moral indisposition, and partly an hypothetical impossibility of event. 2. That though God's grace be the cause of faith, no man is deprived of that grace but by his own wilful sin, which maketh him unexcusable.

67. From that time many of his disciples went back, and walked no more with him.

68. By forsaking him, they shewed that they were never found believers.

69. Then said Jesus unto the twelve, Will ye also go away?

70. Then Simon Peter answered him, Lord, to whom shall we go? thou hast the words of eternal life.

71. And we believe, and are sure that thou art that Christ the Son of the living God.

72. Christ puts none away, till they put away themselves. 2. He forsook none to stay. 3. It greatly fireth a Christian's resolution to flock to Christ, to know there is none else to go to: As it refoloveth us to look for happiness to God and Heaven, because we are sure there is no other. 4. Sound Faith may attain assurance that Christ is the Son of the living God: It hath always objective certainty, and a prevalent certainty, and a prevalent confidence, and may reach to a mental confirmed certainty.

73. Jesus answered them, Have not I chosen you twelve, and one of you is a devil? 71. He spake of Judas Iscariot, the son of Simon: for he it was that should betray him, being one of the twelve.

74. Even of you twelve whom I have chosen out of all the rest to be next me, one is a Devil; that is Judas.

N. Some men are so bad that they may be called Devils. Both as false Calumniators: whence is the name Diabolus; and as they are the very agents of the Devil, and minded like him, and ruled by him, and do what he moveth them to do, in his three great works. Lying, or (Deceit), Hatred or (Malice), and Hurtness and Murder. Such may
A After these things, Jesus walked in Galilee: for he would not walk in Jewry, because the Jews sought to kill him.

N. 1. Christ's own example tells us, That it is no sinful cowardize to avoid perfection, till our suffering or death be like to do more good than liberty, or life.

2. Now the Jews feast of tabernacles was at hand. 3. His brethren therefore said unto him, Depart hence, and go into Judea, that thy disciples also may see the works that thou doest. 4. For there is no man that doeth any thing in secret, and he himself seeketh to be known openly: If thou do these things, shew thyself to the world.

5. For neither did his brethren believe in him.

6. Then Jesus said unto them, My time is not yet come: but your time is always ready. 7. The world cannot hate you; but me it hateth, because I testify of that, which the works thereof are evil. 8. Go ye up unto this feast: I go not up yet unto this feast, for my time is not yet full come. 9. When he had said these words unto them, he abode still in Galilee. 10. But when his brethren were gone up, then went he also up unto the feast, not openly, but as it were in secret.

Ch. 7. St. John. Doctrine. Ch. 7.

11. Then the Jews sought him at the feast, and said, Where is he? 12. And there was much murmuring among the people concerning him: for some said, He is a good man: others said, Nay; but he deceiveth the people. 13. Howbeit, no man spake openly of him, for fear of the Jews.

14. Now about the midst of the feast, Jesus went up into the temple, and taught. 15. And the Jews marvelled, saying, How knoweth this man letters, having never learned? 16. Jesus answered them, and said, My doctrine is not mine, but his that sent me. 17. If any man will do his will, he shall know of the doctrine, whether it be of God, or whether I speak of myself.

18. He that is sent of God, may know more than he hath learned of man: God tells me what to speak. And those that truly obey so much of the will of God as they know, are prepared to know more, and to discern my Doctrine to be of God: but wilful sinners are not.

19. He that speaketh of himself, seeketh his own glory: but he that seeketh his glory that sent him, the same is true, and no unrighteousness is in him.

20. Did I speak vain-glory or any private ends of my own, you might suppose that I speak my own words: But if I only seek the Glory of God and good of men, though to my own suffering, you have no cause to suspect me of deceit or any ill design.

21. Did not Moses give you the law, and yet none of you keepeth the law? Why go ye about to kill me?

22. But how unfit are you to discern what doctrine is of God, who keep not the Law.
Law of Moses which you boast of: For that Law forbiddeth Murder, and yet you seek to murder me.

20. The people answered and said, Thou hast a devil: who goeth about to kill thee?

20. N. They supposed him distracted: And the distracted were usually taken for Demons.

21. Jesus answered and said unto them, I have done one work, and ye all marvel. 22. Moses therefore gave unto you circumcision, (not because it is of Moses, but of the fathers) and ye on the sabbath-day circumcise a man. 23. If a man on the sabbath-day receive circumcision, that the law of Moses should not be broken; are ye angry at me, because I have made a man every whit whole on the sabbath-day.

21. N. The History of his Cure, and their Fleeting his death for it, is here past over and supposed: But Christ knew their malicious design.

24. Judge not according to the appearance, but judge righteous judgment.

24. Judge not by outward shews and worldly mens opinions, but according to the evidence of truth.

25. Then said some of them of Jerusalem, Is not this he whom they seek to kill? 26. But lo, he speaketh boldly, and they say nothing unto him: do the rulers know indeed that this is the very Christ?

25. Do they suffer him because they believe him to be Christ.

27. Howbeit, we know this man whence he is: but when Christ cometh, no man knoweth whence he is.

27. N. They knew his visible Originals, but they knew not his heavenly nature and glory.

28. Then cried Jesus in the temple as he taught, saying, Ye both know me, and ye know whence I am: and I am not come of myself, but he that sent me is true, whom ye know not. 29. But I know him, for I am from him, and he hath sent me.

28. N. Ye know my visible Originals: But you know not my Heavenly Father who sent me: But I know him, for I.

30. Then they sought to take him: but no man laid hands on him, because his hour was not yet come. 31. And many of the people believed on him, and said, When Christ cometh, will he do more miracles than these which this man hath done?

30, 31. His Miracles convinced some against all prejudices and objections.

32. The Pharisees heard that the people murmured such things concerning him: and the Pharisees, and the chief priests sent officers to take him. 33. Then said Jesus unto them, Yet a little while am I with you, and then I go unto him that sent me. 34. Ye shall seek me, and shall not find me: and where I am, thither ye cannot come.

32. &c. The Pharisees and Priests, thought persecuting necessary to keep people from believing on him: And Christ told them, It's but a little while, till I shall be out of the reach of your malice.

35. Then said the Jews among themselves, Whither will he go, that we shall not find him? will he go unto the dispersed among the Gentiles, and teach the Gentiles?

35. Will he go to those Jews who are dispersed abroad the World, or what meaneth he?

37. In the last day, that great day of the feast, Jesus stood and cried,


cried, saying, If any man thirst, let him come unto me, and drink. 
38. He that believeth on me, as the scripture hath said, out of his belly shall flow rivers of living water. 39. But this spake he of the Spirit, which they that believe on him should receive: for the holy Ghost was not yet given, because that Jesus was not yet glorified. 

37. In the last and great day of that feast Christ proclaimed the promised gift of the Spirit, under the name of Rivers of living Waters, to all that should truly believe on him: That is, when he was glorified: For till then the Holy Ghost for the operation of these eminent gifts was not given. 

40. Many of the people therefore, when they heard this saying, said, Of a truth this is the prophet. 41. Others said, This is the Christ. But some said, Shall Christ come out of Galilee? 42. Hath not the scripture said, That Christ cometh of the seed of David, and out of the town of Bethlehem, where David was? 43. So there was a division among the people because of of him. 

40. His Words and Works inclined many to believe in him: but they could not answer Objections from his Originals. 

44. And some of them would have taken him; but no man laid hands on him. 

44. N. God hindereth bad men from doing what they would do, and they know not how he doth it. 

45. Then came the officers to the chief priests and Pharisees; and they said unto them, Why have ye not brought him? 46. The officers answered, Never man spake like this man. 

45,46. God made Christ's words effectual at the present to convince and restrain them from violence. 

47. Then answered them the Pharisees, Are ye also deceived? 

48. Have any of the rulers, or of the Pharisees, believed on him? 49. But this people who knoweth not the law are cursed. 

47,48. N. The vain respect to men of reputation and power, is a usual cause of unbelief and disobedience to God. 2. They rightly judged that ignorance is the cause of error and deceit, but they falsely thought their literal knowledge with prejudice and worldly minds, had been a safe state. 

50. Nicodemus faith unto them, (he that came to Jesus by night, being one of them), 51. Doth our law judge any man before he hear him, and know what he doeth? 

50,51. Nicodemus: hearing a good will to Christ, stpoe them by a common rile of Justice, that by the Law no man should be condemned till he be heard speake for himself, and the Case be well tried. 

52. They answered and said unto him, Art thou also of Galilee? Search and look: for out of Galilee arose no prophet. 53. And every man went unto his own house. 

52. N. 1. They give him a scorn instead of a good answer. 2. And then how poor a reason falsith them against all the Miracles and Doctrine of Christ: because Galilee was a contempt Country, where Christ dwelt, though he was born at Bethlehem, of David's line. 3. One man's words may sometimes divert a perfection.

C H A P. VIII. 

1. Jesus went unto the mount of Olives: 2. And early in the morning he came again into the temple, and all the people came unto him; and he sat down and taught them. 

1. N. 1. He left the City at Night, lest they should surprize him. 2. He chose the Temple as a place of God's Consecration, and of best opportunity for auditors. 3. The Jews used to let them teach, who professed themselves to be teachers. 4. His sitting in teaching, is not an obligatory example to us, but an indifferent circumstance. 

3. And
And the scribes and Pharisees brought unto him a woman taken in adultery; and when they had set her in the midst. 

4. They lay unto him, Master, this woman was taken in adultery, in the very act.

5. Now Moses in the law commanded us, that such should be stoned; but what sayest thou?

6. N. That the last verse of the foregoing chapter, and the eleven first verses of this chapter, were not in divers of the old books in the Greek, and divers of the most credible Fathers either have them not, or take them for Apocryphal, and do many Protestantbesides Beza: So that it is uncertain to us, whether it be any part of God's word: But we have enough besides of which we may be certain.

Suppose the Text curant, it seems they would have, drawn Christ into a snare, by getting him either to speak against the Law, or against Caesar, who had taken from them the power of putting offenders to death which the Law gave them.

5. This they laid, tempting him, that they might have to accuse him. But Jesus stooped down, and with his finger wrote on the ground, as though he heard them not.

6. Beza taketh this Writing on the ground to be improbable and part of the Apocryphal story! If it was otherwise, it signifies but a discerning of their snare, and a putting off the answer by a seeming neglect or disregard.

7. So when they contended asking him, he lift up himself, and laid unto them, He that is without sin among you, let him first cast a stone at her.

8. And again he stooped down, and wrote on the ground. 9. And they which heard it, being convicted by their own conscience, went out one by one, beginning at the eldest, even unto the last: and Jesus was left alone, and the woman standing in the midst.

8, 9. N. It is so improbable that Christ should be left alone in the Temple, that this increaseth Beza's suspicion that it is Apocryphal: But if it be true, it meaneth that those went away who came to accuse the woman, and left him with his auditors and the woman.

10. When Jesus had lift up himself, and laid unto her, Woman, where are those thine accusers? hath no man condemned thee? 11. She said, None, Lord. And Jesus said unto her, Neither do I condemn thee: go and sin no more.

10, 11. N. Those that hence take encouragement to connive at adultery, must note, 'Thy the text it self is of uncertain authority. 2. If it were certain, it signifies not that Christ would have adultery unpunished: but that he disclaimed the office of a Judge in matters of corporal punishment, as being no Magistrate.

12. Then spake Jesus again unto them, saying, I am the light of the world: he that followeth me, shall not walk in darkness, but shall have the light of life.

12. & Here begins the certain Text: q. d. I am that Teacher sent from God, who shew all my followers that light that quickeneth and leadeth to everlasting life, and others live and walk in darkness.

13. The Pharisees therefore said unto him, Thou bearest record of thyself; thy record is not true.

14. Jesus answered and said unto them, Though I bear record of my self, yet my record is true: for I know whence I came, and whither I go; but ye cannot tell, whence I come, and whither I go.

13, 14. Thy own testimony of thy self is not credible. Jesus said, Even my testimony of my self is true and credible, because I know what I say, and whence I come, &c. But your denial of it is not credible, because you know not whence I come, &c. but speak against what you know not.
15. Ye judge after the flesh; I judge no man. 16. And yet if I judge, my judgment is true: for I am not alone, but I and the Father that sent me;

15, 16. You see no farther than my fleshly part and originals; I do not so rashly judge of any: But yet my judgment is true and credible, for you have not my bare word, but therewith the works of the power of my Father that sent me, and his attestation.

17. It is also written in your law, that the testimony of two men is true. 18. I am one that bear witneses of my self, and the Father that sent me, beareth witness of me.

17, 18. Your Law alloweth two Witenesses to be credible. I am one, who may be allowed to witnesse about others mens interest, that I am sent by the Father to save lost sinners, and the Father is the other, whose Voice and Works bear witnesse of me.

19. Then said they unto him, Where is thy Father? Jesus answered, Ye neither know me, nor my Father: if ye had known me, ye should have known my Father also.

19. Where is thy Father: Is not Joseph thy father? He said, You know neither me nor my Father: Had you by my Doctrine and Works known Me and my Office, I should have taught you to know my Father.

20. These words spake Jesus in the treasury as he taught in the temple: and no man laid hands on him, for his hour was not yet come.

20. At Till God's appointed time of trial and suffering, among the fiercest enemies there is safety.

21. Then said Jesus again unto them, I go my way, and ye shall seek me, and shall die in your sins: whither I go, ye cannot come.

21. I came to you as a Saviour, and ye reject me, and I will accordingly depart from you, and your sin shall be destruction on you, and I will send the GoIce to the Gentiles, and will ascend to Heaven, where your sin will exclude you.

22. Then said the Jews, Will he kill himself, because he said, Whither I go, ye cannot come. 23. And he said unto them, Ye are from beneath, I am from above: ye are of this world, I am not of this world. 24. I laid therefore unto you, that ye shall die in your sins: for if ye believe not that I am he, ye shall die in your sins.

22. Ye are of this lower World: I am of above and thither I go. And if you believe not that I am the Christ, your Nation shall be destroyed for rejecting me, and ye shall die unpardoned in your sin.

25. Then said they unto him, Who art thou? And Jesus said unto them, Even the same that I laid unto you from the beginning. 26. I have many things to say, and to judge of you: but he that sent me is true; and I speak to the world those things which I have heard of him.

25. Even the Messiah as I have always told you. I have much to say against your infidelity, but I will now only appeal to my Father's testimony, whole words I speak.

27. They understood not that he spake to them of the Father.

28. N. Grof ignorance is the parent and nurse of unbelief.

28. Then said Jesus unto them, When ye have lifted up the Son of man, then shall ye know that I am he, and that I do nothing of myself; but as my Father hath taught me, I speak these things.

28. When ye have crucified me, then I shall convince many of you by fuller evidence that I am the Christ, and the rest shall feel it to their destruction; and theirs my words shall be confirmed.

29. And he that receiveth me receiveth me: the Father hath not left me alone
30. As he spake these words, many believed on him. 31. Then did Jesus to those Jews which believed on him, If ye continue in my word, then are ye my disciples indeed; 32. And ye shall know the truth, and the truth shall make you free.

33. They answered him, We be Abraham's seed, and were never in bondage to any man: how sayest thou, Ye shall be made free? 34. Jesus answered them, Verily, verily I say unto you, Whosoever committeth sin, is the servant of sin. 35. And the servant abideth not in the house for ever: but the Son abideth ever. 36. If the Son therefore shall make you free, ye shall be free indeed.

37. I know that ye are Abraham's seed; but ye seek to kill me, because my word hath no place in you. 38. I speak that which I have seen with my Father: and ye do that which ye have seen with your father.

39. They answered and said unto him, Abraham is our father. Jesus faith unto them, If ye were Abraham's children, ye would do the works of Abraham. 40. But now ye seek to kill me, a man that hath told you the truth, which I have heard of God: this did not Abraham.

41. Ye do the deeds of your father. Then said they to him, We be not born of fornication; we have one Father, even God. 42. Jesus said unto them, If God were your Father, ye would love me: for I proceeded forth, and came from God; neither came I of myself, but he sent me.

43. Why do ye not understand my speech? even because ye cannot hear my word. 44. Ye are of your father the devil, and the lusts of your father ye will do: he was a murderer from the beginning, and abode not in the truth, because there is no truth in him. When he speaketh a lie, he speaketh of his own; for he is a liar, and the father of it.
43, 44. Why is my doctrine rejected by you; but because your corrupt natures, and sin are contrary to it? To speak plainly to you, As the Child's nature is like the Father's from whom it is received, so yours is like the Devil's nature, that I may say you received it from him, and he is the father of it, and so far of you. For you love to do that which which he loveth and defireth: These are his great Characters. 1. He was from the beginning A MALICIOUS MURDERER. 2. He is A LIAR; a defi erer of the Truth, and an enemy to it: His business in the World is to Deceive by Lying; and when he thus lieth and deceiteth, he doth according to his corrupt nature: for he is a Liar and the Father of Lies.

N. 1. By these three Characters of LYING, MALIGNITY and MURDER or hurtfulness, the devilish nature and seed is known: And no boasting of Abraham or Christianity, is any disproof of it. 2. Devilish is the universal pravity of the malignant World: And it is no wrong or railing so to say, that the Devil is their Father.

45. And because I tell you the truth, ye believe me not.

46. If you know any falsehood or sin by me, prove it if you can: but if it be Truth that I say, why doth prejudice and malice hinder you from believing it.

47. He that is of God, heareth God's words: ye therefore hear them not, because ye are not of God.

48. The Children of God have a mind and nature like him: And therefore they favour and love his word: Therefore your rejecting God's word, doth prove that ye are not the Children of God.

49. Then answered the Jews, and said unto him, Say we not well, that thou art a Samaritane, and hast a devil?

50. They said, Do we not call thee as thou art, in saying, thou art a dastard Samaritan Heretic.

51. Jesus answered, I have not a devil; but I honour my Father, and ye do dishonour me. 50. And I seek not mine own glory: there is one that seeketh and judgeth.

51. I am not a dastard Demoniack, (but you calumniators): My Doctrine and Works honour my Father, and as for your dishonouring of me, though I can bear it, who seek not my own Glory, my Father will secure my honour, and judge you for your reproach.

52. Verily verily I say unto you, If a man keep my saying, he shall never see death.

51. I tell you that reject my word, that to believe and keep it, is the way to everlasting life, and to be saved from death spiritual, temporal (by resurrection), and eternal.

52. Then said the Jews unto him, Now we know that thou hast a devil. Abraham is dead, and the prophets; and thou sayest, If a man keep my saying, he shall never taste of death. 53. Art thou greater then our father Abraham, which is dead? and the prophets are dead: whom makest thou thyself?

53. Now we know that thou art a dastard demoniack: When thou talkest of men not dying, when Abraham and the Prophets are dead: Art thou so much greater than all they?

54. Jesus answered, If I honour my self, my honour is nothing: it is my Father that honoureth me, of whom ye say, that he is your God: 55. Yet ye have not known him; but I know him: and if I should say, I know him not, I shall be a liar like unto you: but I know him, and keep his saying.

54. It is not my own testimony that I plead with you, it is my Father that honoureth me, whom you should believe, because you call him your God. But indeed you know him not, and therefore understand not his testimony: But I know him, and
and should I deny his witness, and say, I know him not; I should be a liar like you: but I know him and his word, and keep it.

56. Your father Abraham rejoiced to see my day: and he saw it, and was glad.

57. Your father Abraham joyfully believed the promise of the Messiah, and so by faith foreknew my coming and was glad.

58. Then said the Jews unto him, Thou art not yet fifty years old, and hast thou seen Abraham?

59. They understanding all carnally, thought Christ spake like a distracted fanatic.

60. Jesus said unto them, Verily verily I say unto you, Before Abraham was, I am.

61. I tell you that before Abraham’s days, (as I was from Eternity, so) in time I was the promised Messiah in whom Abraham in his days believed: I am not so young as you imagine.

62. Then took they up stones to cast at him: but Jesus hid himself, and went out of the temple, going through the midst of them, and so passed by.

63. At these words they took him for a Blasphemer, and attempted to stone him to death: but he some way hid himself, and went out from among them.

6 That the last part of this Verse, is of uncertain authority, being not in some ancient Copies.

**CHAP. IX.**

1. And as Jesus passed by, he saw a man which was blind from his birth.

2. And his disciples asked him, saying, Master, who did sin, this man, or his parents, that he was born blind?

3. Was it for any foreseen fin that he would after commit, or for his original fin, or for any fin of his Parents? Or, It is commonly held that all punishment is for fin: How could that be in this man? Not for his own fin, for he had none besides his original fin: Not for his Parents: for God

puniteth not one for another’s fin: What then was it for?

4. It’s improbable that Christ’s disciples thought that his Soul, finned in another body, and the Christ not reproved them.

5. The Disciples knew that Adam’s fin, and our Original pravity, or our Parents fin, might be punished with as great a punishment as blindness. But they seemed to think that so miserable a punishment must be for some extraordinary fin, which Christ denied.

6. Jesus answered, Neither hath this man sinned, nor his parents: but that the works of God should be made manifest in him.

7. Christ meant not to deny, 1. That he had Original fin. 2. Or his Parents had actual fin. 3. Not that these were a cause of his punishment. 4. But it was none of these that was the differing cause why this man was punished rather than others. q.d. Though all punishment be for sin, and this man’s had such a common cause, yet no fin was the reason why he was singled out for this suffering: But God designed it for an advantage to glorify him in the man’s miraculous cure.

8. I must work the works of him that sent me, while it is day: the night cometh when no man can work.

9. God in this man giveth me an opportunity to do the work for which he hath sent me, for the sealing of the Gospel and convincing the World: And I will take the opportunity, for I shall shortly be gone hence: And hereby I give you warning to work while you have day: for the night is at hand, when you shall on earth have time to work no more; therefore take your present time.

10. As long as I am in the world, I am the light of the world.

11. God who made me the light of the World, will have me shine to it while I am here.

12. When he had thus spoken, he spat on the ground, and made clay of the spittle, and he anointed the eyes of the blind man with the clay. 7. And said unto him, Go wash in the pool of Siloam (which is by interpretation, Sent.) He went
his way therefore, and washed, and came seeing.

6, 7. N. This dirty means was no more than no means, as to to the sufficiency of Christ's commanding power, but he will have us use the unlikeliest means, that we may be his receivers.

8. The neighbours therefore, and they which before had seen him, that he was blind, said, Is not this he that sat and begged? 9. Some said, This is he: others said, He is like him: but he said, I am he.

8. They were struck with admiration, and had much ado to believe that he was the same man, till he himself told them that he was the man.

10. Therefore said they unto him, How were thine eyes opened? 11. He answered and said, A man that is called Jesus, made clay, and anointed mine eyes, and said unto me, Go to the pool of Siloam, and wash: and I went and washed, and I received sight. 12. Then said they unto him, Where is he? He said, I know not. 13. They brought to the Pharisees him that aforetime was blind. 14. And it was the sabbath day when Jesus made the clay, and opened his eyes. 15. Then again the Pharisees also asked him how he had received his sight. He said unto them, He put clay upon mine eyes, and I washed, and do see. 16. Therefore said some of the Pharisees, This man is not of God, because he keepeth not the sabbath-day. Others said, How can a man that is a sinner, do such miracles? And there was a division among them.

10. &c. N. 1. They first attempted to disprove the matter of fact, and when they could not do that, they pretended God's Law to prove him a bad man, and consequently that it was not by God that he did his miracles. 2. They that will try the Spirits and Miracles by the Scripture, must not misunderstand the Scripture.

17. They say unto the blind man again, What sayest thou of him, that he hath opened thine eyes? He said, He is a prophet.

17. N. The benefit prepared the man to judge better than they. It is a double sin if those should judge ill of Christ who have been delivered by him.

18. But the Jews did not believe concerning him, that he had been blind, and received his sight, until they called the parents of him that had received his sight. 19. And they asked them, saying, Is this your son, who ye say was born blind? how then doth he now see? 20. His parents answered them, and said, We know that this is our son, and that he was born blind: 21. But by what means he now seeth, we know not; or who hath opened his eyes, we know not: he is of age, ask him, he shall speak for himself. 22. These words take his parents, because they feared the Jews: for the Jews had agreed already, that if any man did confess that he was Christ, he should be put out of the synagogue. 23. Therefore said his parents, He is of age, ask him.

18, &c. N. 1. Unjust Judges resolve first what to do, and enquire after. 2. Though excommunication be God's Ordinance, the Devil uses it by wicked men, against the just that own Christ and the Truth.

24. Then again called they the man that was blind, and said unto him, Give God the praise: we know that this man is a sinner.

24. They said, A sinner, and to God think never the better of this man: for we know by his breaking the Sabbath that he is a bad man.

N. Wicked Persecutors that speak against God's servants, dare not directly speak against God, but pretend to give him praise, while they persecute his servants.

25. He answered and said, Whether he be a sinner or no, I know not.
not: one thing I know, that where- as I was blind, now I see.

25. Though you say you know him to be a Sinner, I know it not, nor am bound to believe you: But I well know he hath cured me of my blindness.

26. Then said they to him again, What did he do to thee? how opened he thine eyes? 27. He answered them, I have told you already, and ye did not hear: wherefore would ye hear it again? will ye also be his disciples? 28. Then they reviled him, and said, Thou art his disciple: but we are Moses's disciples. 29. We know that God spake unto Moses: as for this fellow, we know not from whence he is. 30. The man answered and said unto them, Why, herein is a marvellous thing, that ye know not from whence he is, and yet he hath opened mine eyes. 31. Now we know that God heareth not sinners: but if any man be a worshipper of God, and doeth his will, him he heareth.

27. Sure you do it not because you would be his disciples. 28. They took it for a reproach to be Christ's Disciples. 29. You are strangely ignorant that know not whence a man is, that doth such Miracles: Reason and common consent tell us, that God heard not the prayers of wicked men, so far as to signify his approbation of them; but heareth them: But it is Godly worshipers of him, and them that obey his will, that he heareth and approveth. (This none that owneth a God dare deny.)

32. Since the world began was it not heard that any man opened the eyes of one that was born blind. 33. If this man were not of God, he could do nothing.

32. Never man did this before (much less by human power). He could never do it by God's power and approbation.

34. They answered and said unto him, Thou wast altogether born in sins, and dost thou teach us: and they cast him out.

34. It's the way of proud wicked men, to scorn to learn, but to Lord it, and revile and turn to violence on presence of discipline, when they cannot answer with reason.

35. Jesus heard that they had cast him out; and when he had found him, he said unto him, Doest thou believe on the Son of God? 36. He answered and said, Who is he, Lord, that I might believe on him?

35. Christ receiveth those whom false Church-governours unjustly cast out. 2. Christ taketh advantage of men's injuries, to convert the persons injured. 3. The man was willing to believe; as soon as he could be instruct'd whom he should believe in.

37. And Jesus said unto him, Thou hast both seen him, and it is he that talketh with thee. 38. And he said, Lord, I believe. And he worshipped him.

37. 38. He believed and bowed, or fell down to him.

39. And Jesus said, For judgment I am come into this world; that they which see not, might see; and that they which see, might be made blind.

39. It is part of my judicial office in this World, to open the eyes of many that are now ignorant and blind in sin, and to give up many to their wilful blindness, who think themselves the wisest men, but reft the light of saving truth.

40. And some of the Pharisees which were with him, heard these words, and said unto him, Are we blind also?

40. N. Proud men (especially if Rulers or Teachers of others) can't endure to be told of their sin; especially of their ignorance and error.

41. Jesus said unto them, If ye were blind, ye should have no sin: but now ye say, We see; therefore your sin remaineth.

41. If your ignorance were, as blindness is a necessary natural disease, you would not be voluntary in your error and guilt of sin: Or, if you knew your selves to be ignorant...
and erroneous, you would learn and be cured: But your error being willful, and you conceited of your knowledge, you are guilty and unexcusable, and set in your fin.

CHAP. X.

Verily verily I say unto you, He that entereth not by the door into the sheepfold, but climbeth up some other way, the same is a thief and a robber. 2. But he that entereth in by the door, is the shepherd of the sheep.

1. I say to you who have cast out this man for believing in me, you take upon you to be the true guides of the people, and you look for the Messiah agreeable to your minds: But God's testimony and mission is the door to the Messiah, and the Messiah is the great shepherd and the door to the inferior pastors and the flocks: He that entereth any other way, climbeth in as a thief: But the true Shepherd (principal and ministerial) cometh in by the door.

3. To him the porter openeth; and the sheep hear his voice: and he calleth his own sheep by name, and leadeth them out.

3. To the Messiah God will open the door, and to sub-pastors, they that by office are door-keepers to the Church, must open it, as to men sent of God: And God's Spirit teacheth Christians to know the voice of Christ, and under him of those that speak his Word: And as shepherds there regarded every sheep distinctly, and called them by several names (as Plow-men now do their oxen), and did not drive them with clubs like swine, but go before them and call them to their pastures by name, so doth Christ and true pastors now know every member of their flocks, and lead them by name as willing followers to their own salvation, and not drive men into the Church or Heaven against their wills.

4. And when he putteth forth his own sheep, he goeth before them, and the sheep follow him: for they know his voice.

4. And as the sheep using to find that their shepherd hurrieth them not, but feedeth them and bringeth them to pasture, therefore follow him willingly: one that loveth them and is for their good, so do Christ's sheep believe that he loveth them and is their Saviour, and therefore follow him and know his voice.

5. And a stranger will they not follow, but will flee from him: for they know not the voice of strangers.

5. And, as sheep (like our dogs) have no such confidence in a stranger, but fly from him in fear, so will true Christians do from false Christ's and from false pastors, for their voice is strange to them, and contrary to the new nature that is in them, and to their good.

6. This parable spake Jesus unto them: but they understood not what things they were which he spake unto them. 7. Then said Jesus unto them again, Verily verily I say unto you, I am the door of the sheep. 8. All that ever came before me, are thieves and robbers: but the sheep did not hear them. 9. I am the door: by me if any man enter in, he shall be saved, and shall go in and out, and find pasture.

7. As my Father's mission and witness is the door by which I enter, so I being hereby made the Shepherd of the flock, am the door by which all others, pastors and flocks must enter. All that before me pretended to be Christ's, were but thieves and robbers, and the chosen flock of God did not believe in them nor follow them. I am the true Christ and Head of the Church: They that believe in me and follow me, shall as my sheep be safe and plentifully fed.

10. The thief cometh not, but for to steal, and to kill, and to destroy: I am come that they might have life, and that they might have it more abundantly.

19. False Christ's and false prophets have but sought themselves, and seduced the people to destruction of soul and body: I am come to give men spiritual and eternal life, and to raise them higher in light, life and love, than was vouchsafed to the Church before my incarnation.

11. I am the good shepherd: the good
good shepherd giveth his life for the sheep.

11. As he that keepeth the sheep, not as a hireling, but as his own, will venture himself to defend them from Thieves and Wolves; so will I lay down my life for my sheep.

12. But he that is an hireling, and not the shepherd, whose own the sheep are not, seeth the wolf coming, and leaveth the sheep, and fleeth: and the wolf catcheth them, and scattereth the sheep. 13. The hireling fleeth, because he is an hireling; and careth not for the sheep.

14. I am the good shepherd, and know my sheep, and am known of mine.

15. As my Father knoweth me, even so know I the Father: and I lay down my life for the sheep.

16. And other sheep I have, which are not of this fold: them also I must bring, and they shall hear my voice; and there shall be one fold, and one shepherd.

17. Therefore doth my Father love me, because I lay down my life, that I might take it again.

17. N. 1. It is not unfit to assign cause in man of God's Love. 2. Yet nothing real in God is caused by any Creature. 3. But as God's Love is taken for it's Effects, our qualifications are a receptive cause or disposition. 4. And so a cause extrinsic of the Relative denomination of God himself. So Christ's consent to do the full work of a Mediator, was the condition of his peculiar reward, which is called the Father's loving him for it.

18. No man taketh it from me; but I lay it down of my self: I have power to lay it down, and I have power to take it again. This commandment have I received of my Father.

18. N. 1. Christ foreknew his Death and Resurrection: 2. It was the Law of Mediation proper to him, that he should consent so to die, and then Rise and Reign as his reward.

19. There was a division therefore again among the Jews for these sayings. 20. And many of them said, He hath a devil, and is mad; why hear ye him? 21. Others said, These are not the words of him that hath a devil: Can a devil open the eyes of the blind?

20. When they understood not Christ, they said, The man is a distracted Demonic: Why stand you to hear him? But others were better convinced both by his Words and his Miracles.

21. And it was at Jerusalem the feast of the dedication, and it was winter.

22. N. Christ refused not to be present at this solemn Feast, though appointed but by Maccabees for a thankfu commemoration of the repairing of the Temple.

23. And Jesus walked in the temple in Solomon's porch. 24. Then came the Jews round about him, and said unto him, How long dost thou make us to doubt? If thou be the Christ, tell us plainly.

24. Put us out of doubt.

25. Jesus answered them, I told you, and ye believed not: the works
works that I do in my Father's name, they bear witness of me.

25. Why ask you me to tell you, who believe me not? My Miracles done in the Name and by the Power of God, are a more satisfying testimony than my words.

26. But ye believe not; because ye are not of my sheep, as I said unto you. 27. My sheep hear my voice, and I know them, and they follow me.

26, 27. But no wonder that you believe not me; for you are not my chosen flock, nor qualified to believe: Were you my sheep you would understand; believe, and obey my Word.

28. And I give unto them eternal life, and they shall never perish, neither shall any pluck them out of my hand.

28. To my true flock, I will give eternal Life, and they shall never be condemned, lost or fapaken: Nor shall any power prevail against me, who will save them.

29. My Father which gave them me, is greater then all: and none is able to pluck them out of my Father's hand. 30. I and my Father are one.

29, 30. God my Father who gave them me to be saved, is Almighty, and none can overcome him, and take them from his saving love. And He and I being one, they are safe with me.

31. Then the Jews took up stones again to stone him. 32. Jesus answered them, Many good works have I shewed you from my Father; for which of those works do ye stone me? 33. The Jews answered him, saying, For a good work we stone thee not; but for blasphemy, and because that thou, being a man, makest thyself God.

31. N. No good work could secure the Lord himself from the rage of ignorant men nor from their accusation.

34. Jesus answered them, Is it not written in your law, I said, Ye are gods? 35. If he called them gods, unto whom the word of God came, and the Scripture cannot be broken: 36. Say ye of him, whom the Father hath sanctified, and sent into the World, Thou blasphemedst; because I said, I am the Son of God?

34, 35, 36. If they may be called God's that are but Magistrates, and men in dignity and power, how can you say, It is blasphemy for me to say, I am the Son of God, who am by the Father sanctified to the office of Mediator, and sent into the World thereunto?

N. That Christ here by his pleading for his right to his Title, only from his office, doth not deny his Title as from eternal generation, but only tell them what they were then fit to hear.

37. If I do not the works of my Father, believe me not. 38. But if I do, though ye believe not me, believe the works; that ye may know and believe that the Father is in me, and I in him.

37. If I do not such works as certainly signify God's incarnation, believe me not: But if I do, believe what those works do signify, and then you will confess that God is in me and workseth them by me, and that I am in him and approved and acteth by him.

39. Therefore they sought again to take him: but he escaped out of their hand. 40. And went away again beyond Jordan, into the place where John at first baptized; and there he abode. 41. And many reported unto him, and said, John did no miracle: but all things that John spake of this man, were true.

42. And many believed on him there.

39. He avoided their persecution by flight: And in the Wilderness where John first baptized, many believed on him, seeing all fulfilled by him, which John had foretold of him.
Now a certain man was sick, named Lazarus, of Bethany, the town of Mary and her sister Martha.

2. It was that Mary which anointed the Lord with ointment, and wiped his feet with her hair, whose brother Lazarus was sick.

3. Therefore his sisters sent unto him, saying, Lord, behold, he dieth.

4. When Jesus heard that, he said, This sickness is not unto death, but for the glory of God, that the Son of God might be glorified thereby.

5. God's end in this sickness of Lazarus is not to remove him by death from this world, but to prepare an advantage for the glorifying of himself in me.


7. When he had heard therefore that he was sick, he abode two days still in the same place where he was.

8. Then after that, when he was much in the gospel, he sent his disciples, saying, Arise, and go to Bethany; and there wash his feet.

9. As a man that walketh in the twelve hours of day-light is kept from stumbling by the light; so while my day of work continueth I am safe.

10. These things said he, and after that, he sent to them, Our friend Lazarus sleepeth; but I go that I may awake him out of sleep.

11. Then said his disciples, Lord, if he sleep, he shall do well.

12. Howbeit Jesus spake of his death: but they thought that he had spoken of taking of rest in sleep.

13. Then said Jesus unto them plainly, Lazarus is dead.

14. And I am glad for your sakes, that I was not there (to the intent ye may believe) nevertheless, let us go unto him.

15. To raise him will more convince you, than it would have done merely to cure him.

16. Then said Thomas, which is called Didymus, unto his fellow-disciples, Let us also go, that we may die with him.

17. Whether Thomas spake this in more passion, (Let us die with grief,) or as expressing Christ's death and theirs by the perfecting of the Jews, is to us uncertain.

18. Then when Jesus came, he found that he had lain in the grave four days already.

19. (Now Bethany was nigh unto Jericho, about fifteen furlongs off.)

20. And many of the Jews came to Martha and Mary, to comfort them concerning their brother.

21. N. A furlong is six hundred feet.
21. N. She believed that Christ could have prevented his death, and could yet raise him. 2. And that it must be by prayer to God.

23. Jesus faith unto her, Thy brother shall rise again. 24. Martha faith unto him, I know that he shall rise again in the resurrection at the last day.

29. N. The Resurrection of the Body was then believed as an undoubted truth.

25. Jesus said unto her, I am the resurrection, and the life: he that believeth in me, though he were dead, yet shall he live; 26. And whosoever liveth and believeth in me, shall never die. Believest thou this?

25. I am the principle and cause of Life and Resurrection. The dead that believe in me shall be raised: And the living that believe in me shall live for ever, their Souls, first and their Bodies after, raised to blessedness.

27. She faith unto him, Yea, Lord: I believe that thou art the Christ, the Son of God, which should come into the world. 27. Yea, for I believe that thou art the Christ, and therefore hast power of life and death.

28. And when she had so said, she went her way, and called Mary her sister secretly, saying, The Master is come, and calleth for thee. 29. As soon as she heard that, she arose quickly, and came unto him. 30. Now Jesus was not yet come into the town, but was in that place where Martha met him.

31. The Jews then which were with her in the house, and comforted her, when they saw Mary that she rose up hastily, and went out, followed her, saying, She goeth unto the grave, to weep there.

32. Then when Mary was come where Jesus was, and saw him, she fell down at his feet; crying unto him, Lord, if thou hadst been here, my brother had not died. 33. When Jesus therefore saw her weeping, and the Jews also weeping which came with her, he groaned in the spirit, and was troubled. 34. And said, Where have ye laid him? They said unto him, Lord, come and see. 35. Jesus wept.

36. Then said the Jews, Behold how he loved him.

36. Love can express it felt by grief for the hurt of those whom we love.

37. And some of them said, Could not this man which opened the eyes of the blind, have caused that even this man should not have died? 38. Jesus therefore again groaning in himself, came to the grave. It was a cave, and a stone lay upon it. 39. Jesus said, Take ye away the stone. Martha, the sister of him that was dead, faith unto him, Lord, by this time he twineth: for he hath been dead four days.

39. N. How vile a thing will less than four days, shew the body of man to be? Is pride and vain encumbering fit for such a body?

40. Jesus faith unto her, Said I not unto thee, that if thou wouldst believe, thou shouldst see the glory of God?

40. N. The effect of God's power is his Glory; and unbelief hinders the effect in us.

41. Then they took away the stone from the place where the dead was laid. And Jesus lift up his eyes, and
and said, Father, I thank thee that thou hast heard me. 42. And I knew that thou hearest me always: but because of the people which stand by, I said it, that they may believe that thou hast sent me.

41. He looked up towards Heaven as the place of God's glory, the spring and end of earthly blessings: Now Christ knew before that God would do this Miracle by him: but begged it by prayer to convince the hearers that it was of God. 2. It's our comfort that Christ's intercession is always heard.

43. And when he thus had spoken, he cried with a loud voice, Lazarus, come forth. 44. And he that was dead came forth, bound hand and foot with grave-clothes: and his face was bound about with a napkin. Jesus faith unto them, Loose him, and let him go.

45. N. It was not the loud voice, but the invisible power that revived him: yet Christ would suit his voice thereto. 2. It's vain to ask how he could go when his feet were bound? As if all sort of binding disabled from rising, or Christ could not enable him, who revived him.

46. Then many of the Jews which came to Mary, and had seen the things which Jesus did, believed on him.

47. This Miracle convinced many, (and it's strange that it convinced not all.)

48. But some of them went their ways to the Pharisees, and told them what things Jesus had done.

49. Some hardened Spectators turn'd all this but to Information against him to the Pharisees.

50. Then gathered the chief priests and the Pharisees a counsel, and said, What do we? for this man doeth many miracles. 49. If we let him thus alone, all men will believe on him; and the Romans shall come and take away both our place and nation. 49. And one of them named Caiaphas, being the high priest that same year, said unto them, Ye know nothing at all.

50. Nor consider that it is expedient for us, that one man should die for the people, and that this whole nation perish not.

51. N. The greater Christ's Miracles were, the more they thought they ought to destroy him, because the people would the more follow him: And still the wiser and better any Minister of Christ is, the more worldly wicked men endeavour to destroy them, because the people follow them. 2. The fear of great Mens power more than God's, caueth wicked Polititians to destroy the best. 3. But thereby they bring on themselves that very destruction which they thought to avoid.

52. And this spake he not of himself: but being high priest that year, he prophesied that Jesus should die for that nation:

53. And not for that nation only, but that also he should gather together in one, the children of God that were scattered abroad.

54. And though he meant this of saving them from the Romans, though by injustice, yet he being Priest that year (though by unlawful entrance by the Romans) God honoured the office so far as to make him utter those words, which should be a just Prophecy as meant by God, though not by him: And should signifie that Christ's death should tend to the conversion also of the chosen people of God in all the Gentile world, who should thereby be made his Children, and one Church.

55. Then from that day forth, they took counsel together for to put him to death.

56. The greatest Miracle and good Work of Christ fixed their resolution to murder him.

57. Jesus therefore walked no more openly among the Jews; but went thence unto a country near to the wilderness, into a city called Ephraim, and there continued with his disciples.
Ch. 11. Counsel taken against Jesus, St. John. Mary's Ointment. Ch. 12.

Chap. XII.

1. Then Jesus, six days before the passover, came to Bethany, where Lazarus was which had been dead, whom he raised from the dead. Then there made him a supper and Martha served: but Lazarus was one of them that sat at the table with him.

2. N. 1. Christ was not against sensual entertainment. 2. This is the same History mentioned, Luke 10. Where you may see more of it.

3. Then took Mary a pound of ointment, of spikenard, very costly, and anointed the feet of Jesus, and wiped his feet with her hair: and the house was filled with the odour of the ointment.

4. N. 1. It is not unlike that such an action was once done, that is, by two women from Martha, and that this is not the same with that Luke 10. But yet it is very hard to judge where this was done, that it was thrice done is not probable. And that it was done in the house of Simon the Leper, other Evangelists notice: yet here it seems to have been done in Martha's own house, compared with Luke 10. It is most likely to me that Simon and Martha dwelling in the same Village at Bethany, joined their Purse and Labour, and invited him to Simon's house where this anointing was done: But that he was also entertained at Martha's and Mary's house, where that was done, which is recorded, Luke 10.

5. Then faith one of his disciples, Judas Iscariot, Simon's son, which should betray him. 5. Why was not this ointment sold for three hundred pence, and given to the poor?

6. Then the Pharisees had given him a commandment, that if any man knew where he were, he should shew it; that they might take him.

7. N. 1. Christ's Ministers use God's Ordinances to save men, and the Devil's Clergy use them for thievery, mischief and murder. 2. They will not for the people be more loving to God and the Devil, but force them to informing Persecutors.
6. This he said, not that he was to be cried for the poor; but because he was a thief, and had the bag, and bore what was put therein.

7. Jesus being lifted up, truly pretended a sight of the poor, for his saved covetousness.

8. Then said Jesus, Let her alone: against the day of my burying hath he kept this. 9. For the poor always ye have with you; but me ye have not always.

10. This which she gave, she did for my funeral embalming; that she may be held on such an extraordinary occasion, which ordinarily is not to be. You may always give to the poor.

11. Much people of the Jews therefore knew that he was there: and they came, not for Jesus sake only, but that they might see Lazarus also, whom he had raised from the dead. 12. But the chief priests conspired, that they might put Lazarus also to death. 13. Because that by reason of him many of the Jews went away, and believed on Jesus.

17. And the people therefore that was with him, when he called Lazarus out of his grave, and raised him from the dead, bare record. 18. For this cause the people also met him, for that they heard that he had done this miracle.

19. The Pharisees therefore said among themselves, Perceive ye how ye prevail nothing? behold, the world is gone after him.

20. They thought their danger imminent, that the people would proclaim him King, and then the Romans would destroy their Country as Rebels; for they could not trust God to save them from the Romans, though Miracles should have taught them.

21. And there were certain Greeks among them, that came up to worship, at the feast:

22. These Greeks were not the Jews of Alexandria that used the Greek tongue, (elsewhere called Greeks) but the Prophets of the Gates, who worshipped but as Captive did with Christians.
Ch. 11. Christ foretells his Death.  
and again said, Andrew and Philip told Jesus. 23. And Jesus answered them, saying, the hour is come, that the Son of man should be glorified. 24. Verily verily I say unto you, Except a corn of wheat fall into the ground and die, it abideth alone: but if it die, it bringeth forth much fruit.

21. When Greeks by the fame of Christ's Miracles desired to see him, he tells them, that indeed the time of his glory in the world by men believing on him, was at hand: But that he must die first, and then the Catholic Church should be gathered. A grain of wheat is said to die, because the dissolution and change maketh it no longer a grain of Wheat, but the feed of many new grains with the Straw.

25. He that loveth his life shall lose it; and he that hateth his life in this world, shall keep it unto life eternal.

25. And as it is with me it will be with you: He that loveth his life, as that he cannot for sake it for my sake and his Salvation, shall lose it by keeping of it: And he that casteth it away as men do a hated thing, rather than deny me and sin, shall live for ever.

26. If any man serve me, let him follow me; and where I am, there shall also my servant be: if any man serve me, him will my Father honour.

26. If any man will be a Christian, let him not stick to do and suffer as I do, but believe that he shall fare no worse than I, but if he die, he shall be with me where I am: For my Father will honour those that serve me.

2. To be a Christian, and so be one that loveth Christ, are all one. 2. Salvation is promised to all that serve Christ. 3. They that serve him, shall be with him where he is: Therefore the Spirits of the just made perfect are in Paradise, and Heaven; for Christ is there. This is our great comfort in life and at death: And we must then thus think of our godly departed friends, they are all with Christ.

27. Now is my soul troubled; and what shall I say? Father, save me from this hour: but for this cause came I unto this hour. 28. Father, glorifie thy name. Then came there a voice from heaven, saying, I have both glorified it, and will glorifie it again.

27, 28. I am a man, and my soul is troubled at the foresight of my death and sufferings, and nature inclineth me to say, Father, save me from it: But I must not take up with that natural desire, for I came on purpose thus to suffer: Therefore my choice and prayer is, Father, glorifie thy Name: Then came there a voice, &c.

29. The people therefore that stood by, and heard it, said that it thundred: others said, An angel spake to him.

29. They heard the sound, but understood not the words.

30. Jesus answered and said, This voice came not because of me, but for your sakes. 31. Now is the judgment of this world: now shall the prince of this world be cast out. 32. And I, if I be lifted up from the earth, will draw all men unto me. 33. (This he said, signifying what death he should die.)

30. This voice though spake to me, was for your conviction, and not for my sake only: For now the time is at hand when the wickedness of this world shall be detected and punished, and Satan the Prince of this world cast out of his possession by the gathering of my Church: And when I am lifted up from the earth by Crucifixion, I shall be lifted up to Heaven in glory, and will by my Word and Spirit draw many Nations to me their Saviour: By being lifted up, he meant his Crucifixion as in order to his Resurrection and Ascension.

34. The people answered him, We have heard out of the law, that Christ abideth for ever: and how sayest thou, The Son of man must be lifted up? who is this Son of man?

34. We have been taught that Christ dieth not, but shall have an everlasting Kingdom; who
35. Then Jesus said unto them, Yet a little while is the light with you: walk while ye have the light, lest darkness come upon you: for he that walketh in darkness knoweth not whither he goeth. 36. While ye have light, believe in the light, that ye may be the children of light. These things spake Jesus and departed, and did hide himself from them.

35, 36. Though Christ abide for ever; he will not for ever abide visible with you: It is but a little while that he who is the light will continue among you: Obey the Light while you have it, lest darkness surprise you: and he that walketh in darkness knoweth not whither he goeth, nor whether he do well or ill. Before I be taken from you, believe in me, that ye may be illuminated, adopted, and enjoy the light.

37. But though he had done so many miracles before them, yet they believed not on him: 38. That the saying of Esaias the prophet might be fulfilled, which he spake, Lord, who hath believed our report? and to whom hath the arm of the Lord been revealed?

37. All his Miracles caused them not to believe: And so Isaias's prophecy was fulfilled in them, &c.

39. Therefore they could not believe, because that Esaias said again, 40. He hath blinded their eyes, and hardened their heart; that they should not see their eyes, nor understand with their heart, and be converted, and I should heal them. 41. These things said Esaias, when he saw his glory, and spake of him.

39. And no wonder that they believed not, for it could not be; it being foretold by Esaias, that God would fool them: which, Esaias foreseeing Christ's day by inspiration, did mean in that prophecy.

42. Nevertheless, among the chief rulers also many believed on him; but because of the Pharisees they did not confess him, left they should be put out of the synagogue. 43. For they loved the praise of men more than the praise of God.

42. Many of the chief Rulers had a secret belief, but not enough to make them openly own and confess him, lest they should be excommunicate and reproach: For the love of their reputation with men, did prevail in them against their love of God's approbation.

44. Jesus cried, and said, He that believeth on me, believeth not on me, but on him that sent me. 45. And he that seeth me, seeth him that sent me.

44. To believe in me is not to take my own testimony, but God's that sent me, and so is ultimately to believe on him: And it is God's power that ye see, when ye see my works.

46. I am come a light into the world, that whosoever believeth on me, should not abide in darkness.

46. The world is in darkness, and I am sent to be their Light and Teacher to bring them out of it, even from the darkness of
Atheism, Monarchism, Inidelity and Unrighteousness.

47. And if any man hear my words, and believe not, I judge him not: for I came not to judge the world, but to save the world.

48. He that receiveth me, and receiveth not my words, hath one that judgeth him: the word that I have spoken, the same shall judge him in the last day.

47. It is not the work that I came for into the world, to accuse men as their enemy for rejecting my Word: The final rejecters of it will be condemned, but not so much by my accusation, as by the evidence of Truth and Divine Attestation in the word which they rejected.

N. It is usual in the Gospel, for a comparative negation to be expressed positively: as I judge him not that is, not chiefly; I care not: Labour not for the bread that perisheth that is, comparatively, let it be least and last. Many such there are.

49. For I have not spoken of myself; but the Father which sent me, he gave me a commandment, what I should say and what I should speak. 50. And I know that his commandment is life everlasting: whatsoever I speak therefore, even as the Father said unto me, so I speak.

49, 50. It is not the mere word of me as a man, but God's word spoken by me by his command, which I have preached: And his Word is the cause of; and guide to everlasting life.

N. Christ as man was under a peculiar Law of mediation, proper to himself.

CHAP. XIII.

1. Now before the feast of the passover, when Jesus knew that his hour was come, that he should depart out of this world unto the Father, having loved his own which were in the world, he loved them unto the end.

1. The foreknowledge of his approaching departure to the Father, caused him in this special manner to shew his love to his disciples.

2. And supper being ended (the devil having now put into the heart of Judas Iscariot, Simon's son, to betray him.)

2. N. Sin is the offspring of a wicked heart and the devil together.

3. Jesus knowing that the Father had given all things into his hands, and that he was come from God, and went to God, 4. He riseth from supper, and laid aside his garments, and took a towel and girded himself, 5. After that he poureth water into a basin, and began to wash the disciples' feet and to wipe them with the towel wherein he was girded.

3. Jesus knowing that he was presently to take possession of his universal dominion and return to God, from whom he came, did humble himself to this work of LOVE and SERVICE, for an example to them; He rose from supper, etc.

N. What is meant by Christ's coming from God, is before opened.

6. Then cometh he to Simon Peter and Peter faith unto him, Lord, doest thou wash my feet?

6, 7. N. 1. We must not refuse God's Mercies on pretence of humility or unworthiness. 2. We must obediently submit to those commands and dealings of God, the reason of which we cannot yet understand, because it is God's will, and we shall understand them hereafter.

7. Jesus answered and said unto him, What I do, thou knowest not now; but thou shalt know hereafter.

8. Peter faith unto him, Thou shalt never wash my feet. Jesus answered him, If I wash thee not, thou hast no part with me. 9. Simon Peter faith unto him, Lord, not my feet only, but also my hands and my head.

8, 9. N. 1. It was Peter's rashness to resolve against that which he understood not. 2. Christ washeth all that have part in him from
from the guilt and sin of sin. 3. It's lawful and a duty to change a purpose taken up upon mistakes, and to break that word which did but express such a purpose; there are three sorts of affirming words.

1. Affirming, saying, this or that is true, or is not true: to violate these willfully is lying, and in witness bearing, it is a heinous sin. We must affect nothing but truth.

2. Promises: which if made to God, are vows; if to man, it gives them right to what we promise. These bind us as far as we had power to make them. And if we had such power, and it be about lawful things, we may not break them: without our consent to whom the promise was made, or some one that hath full power over him in that concern.

3. There is a . This is or that I will do, or give, &c. This ever in all rational men supposes many conditions, as if God wills if I live and be able, I'll change the things faster not my case. If I find not my reason mistaken, &c. No Christian may be supposed to say I will do this whether God will or no: whether I live or die: whatever befall me, or though I find that my reason is an error. As in all such cases it is a duty to change a resolution, so it is a duty to go against that word by which we express our resolution: to change mind, word and work for the better, is a duty. So Peter doth here.

10. Jesus faith unto him, He that is washed, needeth not, have to wash his feet, but is clean every whit: and ye are clean, but not all. 11. For he knew who should betray him; therefore said he, Ye are not all clean.

10. 11. The washing of the feet only may be as sufficient a ceremony to signify your cleansing, as it I had waited you all over: I have done this according to the custom of this Country, where with going bare leg'd, the feet gather dust; to shew you that as you have need of daily cleansing from the pollution that you are liable to gather from this world, so I am he that condescend to cleanse you from it, &c.

12. So after he had washed their feet, and had taken his garments, and was set down again, he said unto them, Know ye what I have done to you? 13. Ye call me Maker, and Lord: and ye lay well; for so I am. 14. If I then your Maker and Master, have washed your feet, ye also ought to wash one another's feet. 15. For I have given you an example, that ye should do, as I have done to you.

12, 13, 14, 15. Knowing what pride and uncharitableness man's nature is capable of and what must be the spirit and life of my Ministers, I have given you this example to teach you to flock to the feet of the lowest, to the lowest offices of Love and Service. And now if you, or any of my Ministers shall either disdain this by pride, and instead of it domineer, and menace, or persecute the weak, or by sloth or uncharitableness neglect such Ministerial offices of Love, my example shall condemn all such.

16, 17. Verily verily I say unto you, The servant is not greater than his Lord, neither he that is sent greater than he that sent him. 17. If ye know these things, happy are ye if ye do them.

16, 17. Make not light of what I say to you; and pretend not your superiority or Episcopal Power to excite you from this Ministerial Service and condescension to the lowest: you are not greater than I that send you: you are but my servants, and this is your service. If you not only know this but do it, you shall be blessed in your reward. But if you pretend learning and knowledge, and neglect this work, your guilt and misery will be double.

18. I speak not of you all, I know whom I have chosen: but that the scripture may be fulfilled, He that eateth bread with me, shall lift up his heel against me.

18. I do not say you by this speech: I know you all whom I have chosen to follow me; and I know that in one of you that Scripture will be fulfilled, He that eateth bread, &c.

19. Now I tell you before it come

come, that when it is come to pass, ye may believe that I am he.

19. I tell you before, that when you see that I know what will come to pass, it may confirm your faith.

20. Verily verily I say unto you, He that receiveth whomsoever I send, receiveth me: and he that receiveth me, receiveth him that sent me.

20. But you that are my faithful Messengers, shall not fail of success, or of reward: I will take the receiving of you and your message as the receiving of my self, and as the receiving of God himself that sent me.

21. When Jesus had thus said, he was troubled in spirit, and testified and said, Verily verily I say unto you, that one of you shall betray me.

21. Then Jesus with a troubled mind, in a just sense of the Traitor's Sin and Misery, and his own approaching Suffering told them more plainly, that one of them would betray him to death.

22. Then the disciples looked one on another, doubting of whom he spake.

22. They were troubled, and were thinking who this should be.

23. Now there was leaning on Jesus bosom, one of his disciples whom Jesus loved. 24. Simon Peter therefore began to him, that he should ask who it should be of whom he spake. 25. He then lying on Jesus breast, faith unto him, Lord, who is it?

23. John at the desire of Peter asked him secretly, who it was.

26. Jesus answered, He it is to whom I shall give a sop, when I have dipped it. And when he had dipped the sop, he gave it to Judas Iscariot, the son of Simon.

26. Jesus told John secretly, it is he to whom I give the next piece of Bread dipped: Which he did to Judas.

27. And after the sop, Satan entered into him. Then said Jesus unto him, That thou dost, do quickly.

27. As his hypocrisy and thieving and covetousnesse gave Satan power over him before, so now upon his obdurate after all warnings, he had greater power to hurry him to the execution. And Christ by saying [What thou doest, do quickly] intimated to him that he knew his mind.

28. Now no man at the table knew for what intent he spake this unto him.

28. None of them (unless perhaps John) understood what he meant.

29. For some of them thought, because Judas had the bag, that Jesus had said unto him, Buy these things that we have need of against the feast: or that he should give something to the poor. 30. He then having received the sop, went immediately out: and it was night.

29. Judas had the Purse, and that occasioned their mistake. 30. *This immediately going out, maketh it uncertain whether he received the Sacramental part of the Supper.*

31. Therefore when he was gone out, Jesus said, Now is the Son of man glorified, and God is glorified in him. 32. If God be glorified in him, God shall also glorify him in himself, and shall straightway glorifie him.

31, 32. *Now is the time at hand that I shall be glorified by my Death and Resurrection; and God shall be glorified in me: And because God is glorified in me, he will glorifie me speedily in my self.*

33. Little children, yet a little while I am with you. Ye shall seek me: and as I said unto the Jews, Whither I go, ye cannot come; so now I say unto you.

33. Dear Children, the time is now at hand, when I must depart from you, and you cannot now follow me.

34. A new commandment I give unto you, That ye love one another;
1. Let not my departure trouble your hearts: trust God and trust me with your Souls and Bodies. In my Father’s house there are Rooms enough to receive all mine as well as me: If it were not so, I would not have drawn you to hope for it in vain, but have told you the truth: I go before you to prepare for your entertainment.

3. And if I go and prepare a place for you, I will come again, and receive you unto my self, that where I am, there ye may be also.

2. Fear not that I should leave you defoliate: I do not prepare a place for you in vain, but will come again and take you and all believers to myself as a glorified Society. 

3. Do not many other texts assure us of the Soul’s reception to Christ at or our death, this would be sad to us, and make us think he would not take us to himself till his return to judgment. But it being then that our felicity will be consummated, in the consummation of the whole Church in one body, therefore Christ putteth this promise of the fullest perfection for their comfort.

4. And whither I go, ye know, and the way ye know.

4. And you are not utter strangers to the God and Place that I go to, or in the way.

5. Thomas faith unto him, Lord, we know not whither thou goest, and how can we know the way?

6. Jesus faith unto him, I am the way, and the truth, and the life: no man cometh unto the Father but by me.

5. It is to the Father I am going: And think not carnally of the place or state or way: I am your Way and Guide, and I am the Truth signified by all ceremonial shadows; and I am your Life both efficiently, directly and finally: you must come to God as your end, by me as the only way, if ever you will be happy.

7. If ye had known me, ye should have known my Father also: and from henceforth ye know him, and have seen him.

8. Ye see me in my bodily presence: But if you had known me better in my spiritual Being, and in the works which I
11. If you will not believe my own testimony, believe me for my Works, that I am in the Father and act by him, and he is in me, and His Power acteth by me. And this Power shall be so manifested, that I will enable those that believe in me, to do greater Miracles than I have done, when I ascended to my Father and sent down my Spirit upon them, by which you shall see that I was act by the Power of the Father.

13. And whatsoever ye shall ask in my name, that will I do, that the Father may be glorified in the Son. 14. If ye shall ask anything in my name, I will do it.

15. If ye love me, keep my commandments. 16. And I will pray the Father, and he shall give you another Comforter, that he may abide with you for ever; 17. Even the Spirit of Truth, whom the world cannot receive, because it seeth him not, neither knoweth him: but ye know him, for he dwelleth with you, and shall be in you.

15, 16, 17. If you do but love me, and show it by sincere keeping my commandments, I will pray the Father, and he shall give you the Holy Ghost in an eminent peculiar manner, to be a Paraclete, or an Agent and Advocate, and intercessor between me and you, pleading my Cause with you and the World, and pleading your Cause in Prayer with me and my Father: To which end he shall as a vital Principle, abide with you for ever. Even God's Spirit of Truth, who shall teach you the Truth, and confute the lying Deceiver: The World cannot receive him as an Illuminator and Comforter, because not knowing him; and being prejudiced with contrary malignant inclinations,
wilt manifest thyself unto me, and not unto the world? 23. Jesus answered and said unto him, If a man love me, he will keep my words: and my Father will love him, and we will come unto him, and make our abode with him.

22, 23. The manifestation of my self is not to be by Monarchical outward pomp, which the World expecteth, but by Spiritual Gifts and Comforts, and Rewards: And none are prepared for thee but they that Love me and keep my words: These my Father will Love, and my Father and I will come to him by the Spirit, and make our abode with him for ever.

24. He that loveth me not; keepeth not my sayings: and the word which you hear, is not mine, but the Father's which sent me.

25. The Holy Ghost, which is the Holy Ghost, whom the Father will send in my name, he shall teach you all things, and bring all things to your remembrance, whatsoever I have said unto you.

26. But the Comforter, which is the Holy Ghost, whom the Father will send in my name, he shall teach you all things, and bring all things to your remembrance, whatsoever I have said unto you.

27. Peace I leave with you, my peace I give unto you: not as the world giveth, give I unto you. Let not your heart be troubled, neither let it be afraid.

21. This Holy Spirit which I promise you, is the Spirit of Love: And he that loveth and keepeth my Commandments, is he that truly loveth me: And (though with a Love of benevolence and benevolence I Love many Enemies, to their Conversions, yet) It is only they that thus Love me that shall be Loved of my Father with Complacency and Felicitation: And I will delight, bless and glorify them with my Love, and make myself fully known to them.

22. Judas Saith unto him, not Lazarus, Lord, how is it that thou
World giveth: But the beginning of everlasting Felicity. Therefore let not your hearts be troubled or afraid at my departure, as if ye were deserted.

28. Ye have heard how I said unto you, I go away, and come again unto you. If ye loved me, ye would rejoice, because I said, I go unto the Father: for my Father is greater than I.

28. Ye have heard with trouble my words, that I go away and come again to you. If ye understood this aight, your Love to me would make you rejoice, because as I told you, it is my Father that I go to, and he is greater than I, whom he hath made Mediator; And the presence of his Glory is better than this base wicked World.

29. And now I have told you before it come to pass, that when it come to pass, ye might believe.

29. I have foretold you of my departure, and my sending the Spirit, that when it's come to pass, your Faith may be helped by remembering my Predictions.

30. Hereafter I will not talk much with you: for the prince of this world cometh, and hath nothing in me.

30. I shall not speak much more to you before my death: For the Devil the Prince of the World, and the Rymbol and Jewish Powers, his Agents, are ready to Execute what I came to suffer, but shall find in me no guilt or defect of suffering.

31. But that the world may know that I love the Father; and as the Father gave me commandment, even so I do. Arie, let us go hence.

31. But that I may shew to Mankind, that my Love to my Father, and my perfect Obedience to his Commands, are more Powerful in me than the love of this Life, I shall willingly suffer for Man an undefeaved cursed death. Arie, and let us go to the place where I know Judas will come to apprehend me.

CHAP. XV.

1. I am the true vine, and my Father is the husbandman.

1. I am to you like the Vine that giveth forth her Vital juice for Man's Life and delight: And my Father is as the Husbandman that planteth, owneth and disposeth of the Vine and Fruit. Note, Whether Christ spake this before they rose from supper, or as they went by the way, is uncertain.

2. Every branch in me that beareth not fruit, he taketh away: and every branch that beareth fruit, he purgeth it, that it may bring forth more fruit.

2. All that manifest themselves Christians, and are Baptized and Grafted into my Church, are to me, as the Branches are to the Vine; as to Covenant-inheritance. And every such professing Christian that is not sincerely fruitful and obedient, shall be cut off as a superfluous branch: And the sincere and fruitful shall be pruned by Instruction, Discipline and Correction; that they may be yet more fruitful.

3. Now ye are clean through the word which I have spoken unto you. 4. Abide in me, and I in you. As the branch cannot bear fruit of it self, except it abide in the vine: no more can ye, except ye abide in me.

3. 4. You are now in some measure cleansed and sanctified by my Word and Grace: But do ye think that all your work is done, or all your danger over; it must be still your care to abide in me by continued Faith and Love, and that I may abide in you by my Spirit and Grace: For as the branch can bear no Fruit of it self, but by virtue communicated from the Stock, and therefore must abide in it: No more can you, except you abide in me.

5. I am the vine, ye are the branches: He that abideth in me and I in him, the same bringeth forth much fruit: for without me ye can do nothing.

5. Your infirmitie and continuance in me, must make you fruitful: For out of me and without my communicated Spirit of Grace,
Ch. 15. Christ commandeth St. John. to love one another. Ch. 15.

6. If a man abide not in me, he is cast forth as a branch, and is withered; and men gather them, and cast them into the fire, and they are burned.

6. He that is cast out of my Church and me, and Apostatizeth, shall be damned. Ques. Is this spoken of the sincere, or of the ungodly and Hypocrites? If of the sincere, do they fall away to Damnation? If of others, would they not be burned or damned if they should persevere in their Hypocritical, dead Profession? Ans. First, Christ tells us how we may judge of them. We know them not to be Hypocrites till they fall off, and then we may discern their misery. Secondly, The Sincere that fall never fall quite away, have need of Promises, and Threatnings, Hopes and Fears to be the means of their perseverance: For God fulfilleth his decrees by means. Thirdly, Whether there be not an initial unconfirmed degree of Grace (like Adam’s) which may be lost, which else would have (though confirmed Grace be never totally lost) is a Controversie so ancient and among the wisest and best of men, as that it requireth great modesty in the Deciders.

7. If ye abide in me, and my words abide in you, ye shall ask what ye will, and it shall be done unto you.

7. If ye abide in me, and my words abide in you, ye shall be accepted with God for your Union with me, and Interests in me, that for my sake all your just requests shall be granted: But this privilege your sin may interrupt.

8. Herein is my Father glorified, that ye bear much fruit, so shall ye be my disciples.

8. It is not your barren Profession, but your greater Fruitfulness in doing good, which is the honouring of God who is the Author of Religion, and must prove you to be my true Disciples.

9. As the Father hath loved me, so have I loved you: continue ye in my love.

9. As God the Father hath set his special Love on me, and sent me on his work, so have I set my special Love on you, and chosen you for my Service: See that you forfeit not my Love by forsaking me, or being unfaithful in my Service.

10. If ye keep my commandments, ye shall abide in my love; even as I have kept my Father’s commandments, and abide in his love.

10. The way to continue in my Love, is to keep my Commandments; for thus I abide in my Father’s Love, even his Complacency in me as his Servant, by keeping his Commandments.

11. These things have I spoken unto you that my joy might remain in you, and that your joy might be full.

11. My end in all this Counsel to you is that I may still have joy in your Fidelity and Fruitfulness, and you may have fulness of joy in me, and in the Reward of your Fidelity.

12. This is my commandment, That ye love one another, as I have loved you.

12. The sum of my Command and Doctrine is Love, even that in your entire Love to one another, and the Fruits and expiation of it, you imitate my Love to you.

13. Greater love hath no man then this, that a man lay down his life for his friends.

13. Man’s love of Friendship hath no higher Expiration, than laying down one’s life for his Friends.

14. Ye are my friends, if ye do whatsoever I command you.

14. I lay down my life for you, and that as for my beloved friends who shall enjoy my friendly Love for ever, if you prove my friends indeed: and that must be by doing whatsoever I command you, and not by bare words and boasts of friendship.

15. Henceforth I call you not servants; for the servant knoweth not what his lord doeth: but I have called you friends; for all things that I have heard of my Father, I have made known unto you.

15. Though you are my Servants, I have a higher name to call you by, even my Friends: For
Ch. 15. Christ commanded St. John. love one another. Ch. 15.

For your Service, signified not that endued immortality which I have used with you. Love and Friendship is higher than Meat Service and Obedience. I have made known to you the Mysteries of God, which signify my Love and friendship.

16. Ye have not chosen me, but I have chosen you, and ordained you, that you should go and bring forth fruit, and that your fruit should remain: that whatsoever ye shall ask of the Father in my name, he may give it you.

16. You did not first begin in Love to me, and choose me for your Saviour, but I began in Love of benevolence to you, and chose you to be my Friends, the Objects of my Compacency: And ordained you to be my Apostles to Convert the World, that you may see the Catholick Church gathered, as the fertil fruit of your Labour. And that whatever Power you ask of God, by Miracles or other Gifts to promote your Labour, he may give it you.

17. These things I command you, that ye love one another.

17. I mention all this to you to enforce my last and great Command, that ye love one another. Note, Alas how far are the Aecusing, Slandering, Reviling, Backbiting and Persecuting Teachers, Rulers and Sects, from the Nature and Practice of this Love, which Christ so vehemently urgeth.

18. If the world hate you, ye know that it hated me before it hated you.

18. When you meet with hatred from ungodly men, remember that I, that am the Son of God and never sinned, was hated by them before you, and you do but follow me, and suffer for and with me.

19. If ye were of the world, the world would love his own: but because ye are not of the world, but I have chosen you out of the world, therefore the world hateth you.

19. If you were mere ungodly Worldlings or Infidels, the World would not have hated you for Godliness or Faith, but love you for being like them. But they hate you for that Christian Excellency in which my chosen ones excel them: And would you not be better and happier than they, though you be hated for it?

20. Remember the word that I said unto you, The servant is not greater than the Lord. If they have persecuted me, they will also persecute you: if they have kept my saying, they will keep yours also.

20. If you take me for your Lord indeed, remember that I have told you that you are not greater than I, and look for no better usage of the World than I have found: if they have persecuted me, they will Persecute you: And if the unbelieving Part reject my Word, wonder not if they do so by yours, and if the chosen only do receive it.

21. But all these things will they do unto you for my name's sake, because they know not him that sent me.

21. It is for my sake that they will Persecute you, because they know not God, and his Testimony of me.

22. If I had not come, and spoken unto them, they had not hated sin: but now they have no cloak for their sin.

22. If I had not spoken to them and confirmed my Word by my Works their sin had not been so great, but had had excuse. (Note, Here (not had Sin) a Positive is put for a Comparative): Or if I had not come with sufficient evidence, it had not been their sin not to believe me to be the Christ; But now their Unbelief and Persecution hath no pretence.

23. He that hateth me, hateth my Father also.

23. The hatred that is against me, is consequent against God my Father, if being his Word, Works and Witnesses which they reject.

24. If I had not done among them the works which none other man did, they had not hated sin: but now have they both seen, and hated both me and my Father.

24. They had not been bound to believe me to be the Christ, if I had not showed God's Attestation, such works as no man else can do, or if any one had done the
Chapter XVI. These things have I spoken unto you, that ye should not be offended. 2. They shall put you out of the synagogues: yea, the time cometh, that whosoever killeth you, will think that he doth God service.

3. And ye shall be brought before synagogues, and kings, and rulers, for my name’s sake. 4. And when ye shall be brought before them, be not move about how or what ye shall speak: 5. For the Holy Ghost shall teach you in the same hour what ye ought to say. 6. And I say unto you, that all these things must come upon this generation. 7. But I will forewarn you whom ye shall love in prison; whom ye shall betray to the chief priests and scribes, and they shall deliver him to the Gentiles. 8. And they shall persecute him, and shall smite him on the head three times. 9. And when he shall have suffered, then will theoul glory. 10. And then shall many be offended, and they shall forsake me, and betray me; and they shall be hated of all men for my name’s sake. 11. And many shall come to me, saying, Lord, have we not followed thee? and I will promise to thee an crown of glory. 12. But he shall say, I assure you, I know you not wherein ye were so following me. 13. Therefore every one who shall confess me before men, him will I confess also before my Father which is in heaven. 14. But he that shall deny me before men, him will I also deny before my Father which is in heaven. 15. And now I have told you before it come to pass, that when it is come to pass, ye might believe. 16. After this I tell you, if a man shall say to this mountain, Be thou removed, and be thou cast into the sea; and if he shall not, have faith enough, who shall not move it? 17. And if ye shall say to your brother, Thou foolish man, let us go to such a city, and be doing some business; and lo, he shall not go with you. 18. Wherefore I say unto you, What things soever ye desire, when ye pray, believe that ye receive them, and ye shall have them. 19. And whatsoever ye shall ask in prayer, believing, ye shall receive. 20. And when ye stand praying, forgive ye one another your trespasses, that your Father in heaven may also forgive you. 21. But when ye pray, go into your chamber, and when ye have shut the door, pray to your Father which is in secret; and your Father which seeth in secret will reward you openly. 22. And whatever ye shall ask when ye pray, believe that ye receive, and ye shall have. 23. And when ye stand praying, say, Father, hallowed be thy name; thy kingdom come. 24. And forgive us our trespasses, as we forgive them that trespass against us. 25. And lead us not into temptation, but deliver us from evil. For thine is the kingdom, and the power, and the glory, for ever. Amen.

Bible Reference: Matthew 6:9-13, 17-21
3, 9, 10, 11. And it will be his work,  
effectually to plead my cause. And first to  
convinced the World, of their sin in accusing,  
rejecting and murdering me, in whom they  
should have believed, which he will do by  
his Gifts, Miracles, and inward Operations:  
And, Secondly, to convince them of the  
Truth and Righteousness of my Person and  
Doctrines, and my Right to be the Head of  
the Church, and the Righteousness of my  
Government of it; Because I go into Heaven  
to take fuller Possession of my Henipotency  
and Administration, and by my Spirit in you  
and on the Hearers, shall more effectually  
convince Men and gather my Church, than I  
did while I was with you: And Thirdly, He  
shall convince them, that God hath  
Excited me to the Power of Conquering Satan and  
his Kingdom, and punishing Rebellious  
Adversaries, when they shall see that by my  
Spirit the Kingdom of Satan falleth, and the  
Powers that served him are partly Converted,  
and partly confounded and destroyed.

12. I have yet many things to  
fay unto you, but ye cannot bear  
them now.

12. I have many things more to make  
known to you, which you are not yet  
paid to receive.

13. Howbeit, when he the Spirit of truth is come, he will guide  
you into all truth: for he shall not  
speak of himself; but whatsoever he  
shall hear, that shall he speak;  
and he will shew you things  
to come.

13. But when the Holy Spirit of Truth is  
come upon you, he will make you capable,  
and will guide you into all Truth (which  
you must Preach and Record for the Propa-  
gating and ordering my Church, Preaching  
to the Gentiles, laying by the Mosaic Law, &c.)  
For he shall speak but that which  
is of God, and things to come, and which  
you are not yet fit to receive.

14. He shall glorifie me: for he  
shall receive of mine, and shall shew  
it unto you.

14. It is this Extraordinary gift of the  
Holy Ghost, which shall be my great convincing  
Witness in the World that shall prove me to  
be the Saviour: For it is from me that he is  
fell, and my Word that he shall Teach you,  
whether it be Remembering or Expounding  
what I have already spoken, or Teaching you  
more by Inspiration. What he faith you  
doeth in and by you my chosen Apostles that  
I do by him and you.

15. All things that the Father  
bath, are mine: therefore said I,  
that he shall take of mine, and shall  
shew it unto you.

15. I say he shall take of mine: For the  
Wisdom, Grace and Gifts that come from the  
Father, come from me: that which is his is  
mine, and the Spirit is sent by the Father and  
by me.

16. A little while and ye shall  
not see me: and again, a little  
while and ye shall see me, because  
I go to the Father.

16. As it is now: a little while till I that am  
now with you shall depart from your sight,  
so it will be but a short time: I shall re-  
turn from Heaven to which I am Ascending,  
or (as force Expound it) I shall be a little  
while dead, and a little while with you after  
my Resurrection.

17. Then said some of his disciples  
among themselves, Whist is this that he faith unto us, A little  
while and ye shall not see me: and  
again, a little while and ye shall see  
me: and, Because I go to the Fa-  	her? 18. They said therefore,  
What is this that he faith, A lit-  
tle while? we cannot tell what he  
faith. 19. Now Jesus knew that they  
were defirous to ask him, and  
said unto them, Do ye enquire a-  
orgn your selves of that I said, A  
little while and ye shall not see me: and  
again, a little while and ye shall  
see me?

17, 18, 19. Jesus perceived that they  
understood him not.

20. Verily verily I say unto you,  
That ye shall weep and lament, but  
the world shall rejoice: and ye  
shall be sorrowful, but your sorrow  
shall be turned into joy. 21. A  
woman when she is in travail, hath  
sorrow, because her hour is come:  
but as soon as she is delivered of  
the child, she remembereth no more  
the
the anguish, for joy that a man is
born into the world. 22. And ye
now therefore have sorrow: but I
will see you again, and your heart
shall rejoice, and your joy no man
taketh from you.

20. You shall have a time of suffering
Sorrow, while bad Men are triumphing o
ver you and rejoicing; but your Sorrow
shall be turned into Joy, in the Sence of my
Redemption and the Comforts of the Holy
Ghost, and the success of your labours, and
your own Salvation: As a Woman deliv
ered hath joy in her Birth, instead of the
forrows of her Travail. I myself will a
gain see you, when I am Risen, and finally
glorify you: And then you shall have a
Joy which none can deceive you of, or di
minish.

23. And in that day ye shall ask
me nothing: Verily verily I say
unto you, Whatsoever ye shall ask
the Father in my Name, he will give
it you. 24. Hitherto have ye asked
nothing in my Name: ask, and ye
shall receive, that your joy may be
full.

23, 24. You shall not then learn by ask
ing the questions, as now: But you shall Peti
tion the Father in my Name, and he will
give you what you need, both for your own
Instruction and for your Ministry. You have
not hitherto understood and used my Inter
cession so fully as you must do hereafter, and
have not used to ask in my Name so explicit
ly as you must do. But hereafter you must
ask in my Name to be heard for my
Merits and sake as your Intercesfor, as
thus by fervent Prayer; and fuller anwors
and gifts shall cause your fuller Joy.

25. These things have I spoken
unto you in proverbs: but the time
cometh when I shall no more speak
unto you in proverbs, but I shall
shew you plainly of the Father.

25. I have hitherto spoken to you in Pa
tables, letting in the light by such degrees
as you were fit to bear. But when I send
you the Holy Ghost, you shall know more
plainly the Mysteries of God.

26. At that day ye shall ask in
my Name: and I say not unto you,
that I will pray the Father for

you: 27. For the Father himself
loveth you, because ye have loved
me, and have believed that I came
out from God.

26, 27. You shall then put up all your
Prayers in my Name, which I would not
have you so to understand, as if the Father
himself did not Love you, but must be
moved to it by me: I say more than that
I will Pray for you; Even that the Father
himself loveth you, because ye have loved
me, and believed in me, &c. Note, First, I
say not that I will Pray, is but Christ's or
dinary use of a Positive Phrase for a Compa
rative: it is, I say, not this only, but more.
Secondly, Our Love to Christ as well as our
Faith is called the cause why God loveth us.
Thirdly, But this Because signifies no effi
cient cause of any thing in God, but a
Moral Qualification of the receiver, called
a Material dispositive receptive Cause.

28. I came forth from the Fa
er, and am come into the world:
again, I leave the world, and go
to the Father.

28. Note, I have before shewed that this
coming from the Father, signifies not any
local removal of the Deity, but its Conjun
ctive Operation on the humane Nature, and
its miraculous Conception or Production.

29. His disciples said unto him,
Lo, now speakest thou plainly, and
speakest no proverb. 30. Now are
we sure that thou knowest all
things, and needest not that any
man should ask thee; by this we
believe that thou camest forth
from God.

29, 30. We now perceive that thou
knowest the secrets of our hearts, and what
thoughts, and doubts they were that troubl
ed us; which thou hast now plainly re
solved: Therefore we believe thou camest
from God.

31. Jesus answered them, Do ye
now believe? 32. Behold, the
hour cometh, yea, is now come,
that ye shall be scattered every
man to his own, and shall leave
me alone: and yet I am not alone,
because the Father is with me.

31, 32. As confidently as you speak, I
tell you the hour is now at hand, in which
you
33. These things I have spoken unto you, that in me ye might have peace. In the world ye shall have tribulation: but of good cheer, I have overcome the world.

34. I have told you that I am going away, and leaving you, but I will come again to you. If you love me, you will follow me; if you do not, I will not do anything more for you.

35. The world will hate you because you are following me. 

CHAP. XVIII.

1. These words Jesus spoke to his disciples, and he lifted up his eyes to heaven, and said, Father, the hour is come; glorify thy Son, that thy Son also may glorify thee.

2. This prayer Jesus made to his Father, lifting up his eyes to heaven, that this might be accomplished: that the world might know that you sent me, and I had authority over all things, and that I came to do your will.

3. And this is eternal life, that they might know you the only true God, and Jesus Christ whom thou hast sent.

4. And what is Life Eternal, but that perfect knowledge of thee, which fills the soul with love and joy, and the knowledge of thy glory, shining forth in thy Son Jesus Christ with his Body the Heavenly Society. And the beginning of this knowledge is the beginning and way to perfection.

5. I have glorified thee on the earth: I have finished the work which thou gavest me to do.

6. My doctrine, example and miracles have here shewed forth thy glory; I am near the end, and have almost finished that work on earth for man's redemption, which I undertook.

5. And now, O Father, glorify me with thine own self, with the glory which I had with thee before the world was.

6. As I have almost performed my part, perform thou thy part of the covenant of my mediation, and give me, the Son of Man a due participation of that glory, which my Divine Nature had with thee from eternity. Now, This Text is by divers diversely Expounded. First, Some say that Christ's human Soul was Glorified before the World was. Secondly, The Arians say that he had a Superangelical Nature only before the World was, which united itself to a human Soul (say some) or only animated a human Body, (say others) Thirdly, Others of late say, he hath these Natures uniting it half to the Prime Created Superangelical Nature, and this uniting it half to a human Soul and Body (say some) or to a human Body alone (say others): Fourthly, But the plain Paraphrase which I have given, is the Doctrine of the Orthodox Universal Church.

6. I have manifested thy name unto the men which thou gavest me out of the world: thine they were, and thou gavest them me; and they have kept thy word.

6. I have made known thee and thy Will, to them whom thou gavest me out of the world, to be my peculiar Disciples: They were thine as their Creator, and thou gavest
Ch. 17. Christ prays to St. John for his Disciples. Ch. 17.

And now I am leaving the world, but must leave them in it to Trials and Persecutions, while I am with thee. And keeping their Union by one Faith and Love, is the Character, strength and Safety, without which they will fall into Scandal and Distraction. O keep them by Concerning in thee and thy Will (and not distracted by humane Devices and Interests) that they may be one in Faith, Hope and Practice, as we are one.

While I was with them in the world, I kept them in thy name: those that thou gavest me I have kept, and none of them is lost, but the Son of Perdition: that the scripture might be fulfilled.

All that thou gavest to be my adherent followers, I have kept in thy Name, save the Son of Perdition, in whom Revolt and Treachery the Scripture is fulfilled.

And now I come to thee, and these things I speak in the world, that they might have my joy fulfilled in themselves.

I come to thee, but I leave them my Word, to fortify them with that joy which they will need in their Afflictions.

I have given them thy word, and the world hath hated them, because they are not of the world, even as I am not of the world.

It is not all the World that will be saved by me, but a select People to whom I effectually give thy Word, and the World hate them, because their Doctrine, Mind and Life do differ from the World, and they are of another Spirit and Society, of which I am the Head.

Pray not that thou shouldst take them out of the world, but that thou shouldst keep them from the evil. They are not of the world; even as I am not of the world.

They have work to do in the world, from which I do not pray, they shouldst take them, but that thou keep them pure from the Sins, Temptations and Mans of the
the World, as those that are separated from it to obey thee, as I their Leader am.

17. Sanctifie them through thy truth: thy word is truth.

17. Qualifie and separate them by thy Truth, to propagate thy Truth, even thy Word which is Truth.

18. As thou hast sent me into the world, even so have I also sent them into the world.

18. As thou sentest me for the work of a Redeemer into this sinful World, so have I sent them, for the work of Apostleship.

19. And for their sakes I sanctifie myself, that they also might be sanctified through the truth.

19. For their sakes I become a sacrifice offered to thee, that they may by my Doctrine, Example, and Spirit, be also totally devoted to serve thee.

20. Neither pray I for these alone, but for them also which shall believe on me through their word:

20. But it is not for them only that I pray, but for all that by their Ministry shall become true Christians.

21. That they all may be one, as thou Father art in me, and I in thee; that they also may be one in us: that the world may believe that thou hast sent me.

21. And the sum of my Prayer for them is, That as I am so united to thee, that what thou speakest I speak, and what thou Lovest I Love, and thy Works are my Works, wrought by thee, so they may be one in us (and not in any uncapable Center of humane Invention and Utorrention) and may all speak the same thing which they have heard from thee by me, and may Love what we Love, and do our work and not their own: That by their concord in Faith, Love and Practice the world may be won to Christianity, and not scandalized by their Discord and Fracions, or by forfaking the true Unity, and combining for worldly Interest on worldly terms.

22. And the glory which thou gavest me, I have given them: that they may be one, even as we are one.

22. And as thou hast glorified me in the World by the Power of working Miracles, and gathering Sinners home to thee, I have glorified them by giving them the same Power to work Miracles, and to call and Convert the World: that they may be one Body, of one Mind, and do one work, as I have done thy work alone.

23. I in them, and thou in me, that they may be made perfect in one, and that the world may know that thou hast sent me, and hast loved them, as thou hast loved me.

23. That while I work in them, by my Word and Spirit, as thou workest in me, they may be perfected into one concordant harmonious Body, united in Faith and Love, that this Lustr of their Excellency and Concord may convince the World, that thou hast sent me to restore them that are so much restored, and that thou Lovest them as thy Redeemed Sanctified ones, as thou Lovest me their Redeemer.

24. Father, I will that they also whom thou hast given me, be with me where I am; that they may behold my glory which thou hast given me: for thou Lovest me before the foundation of the world.

24. Father, as it was thy Covenant with me as my Reward for Redemption, it is now my Will and Desire, that all that thou gavest me by Conversion as true Christians, to be saved, may be after death with me where I am, that they may see the glory which thou gavest me, the sight of which is part of their glorification: For thou Lovest me before the Foundation of the World, and wilt communicate Glory to them by me.

25. O righteous Father, the world hath not known thee; but I have known thee, and these have known that thou hast sent me.

25. O Righteous Father, that world of Men whom thou hast Created, have not known thee, but I that have known thee have declared thee to them, and these my Disciples having known that thou hast sent me, have believed my word concerning thee.

26. And
CHAP. XVIII.

1. When Jesus had spoken these words, he went forth with his disciples over the brook Cedron, where was a garden, into the which he entered, and his disciples. And Judas also which betrayed him, knew the place: for Jesus oft-times resorted thither with his disciples.

2. This Sermon and Prayer being spoken after the Sacrament, Jesus went to the Garden where he knew he should be apprehended: Judas knew the place, because Christ oft went thither, &c.

3. Judas then having received a band of men, and officers from the chief priests and Pharisees, came thither with lanterns, and torches, and weapons.

4. Jesus therefore knowing all things that should come upon him, went forth, and said unto them, Whom seek ye? They answered him, Jesus of Nazareth. Jesus saith unto them, I am he. And Judas also which betrayed him, stood with them.

5. Note, Christ fled not when his hour was come. 2. What a flinty heart had Judas all this while.
15. And Simon Peter followed Jesus, and so did another disciple. That disciple was known unto the high priest, and went in with Jesus into the palace of the high priest. 16. But Peter stood at the door without. Then went out that other disciple which was known unto the high priest, and spake unto her that kept the door, and brought in Peter.

15. _Note_, It seems acquaintance made them bear with John, and yet pretended they knew him not to be a disciple.

17. Then the damsel that kept the door, unto Peter, Art not thou also one of this man's disciples? He saith, I am not. 18. And the servants and officers stood there, who had made a fire of coals; (for it was cold) and they warmed themselves; and Peter stood with them, and warmed himself.

17, 18. _Note_, When ever we have business in bad company, we should foresee what temptations we may there expect, and be forewarned.

19. The high priest then asked Jesus of his disciples, and of his doctrine.

19. _Note_, The perversion and confusion of this blinded world, man examining and judging God: An ignorant high-priest who pretendeth to no honour, but to be an officer of God, judgeth his master.

20. Jesus answered him, I spake openly to the world; I ever taught in the synagogue, and in the temple, whither the Jews always resort, and in secret have I said nothing. 21. Why askest thou me? ask them which heard me, what I said unto them: behold, they know what I said.

20, 21. _Note_, Christ that came to die for our sins, yet would not accuse himself, but referred the enquiring prelate to his auditors, and bid him produce his witness if he had any thing to accuse him of: Giving us an example how to answer such malicious high priests. Secondly, By [in secret have I said nothing] he meanteth, I have not fraudulently concealed my doctrine. Thirdly, Christ did not separate from the temple or Synagogue, and yet they could not bear him while he put them but to prove their accusations; they expected that his obedience to their demands should have furnished their Malice with matter against him, while they were breaking God's commands.

22. And when he had thus spoken, one of the officers which stood by stoned Jesus with the palm of his hand, saying, Art thou the high priest then?

22. _Note_, It is no wonder if wicked high priests have wicked officers, ready to say and do as they. Rebels against God charge God himself for not obeying them in iniquity; and expect more than due submission from God's servants, while they war against God himself.

23. Jesus answered him, If I have spoken evil, bear witness of the evil: but if well, why smitest thou me?

23. If I have by my answer broken the Law, prove it: If not, why art thou executioner without trial or defense.

24. (Now Annas had sent him bound unto Caiaphas, the high priest). 25. And Simon Peter stood and warmed himself; they said therefore unto him, Art not thou also one of his disciples? He denied it, and said, I am not. 26. One of the servants of the high priest, (being his kinsman whose ear Peter cut off) faith, Did not I see thee in the garden with him? 27. Peter then denied again, and immediately the cock crew.

24, 25, &c. All this was done in Caiaphas's house, whither Annas had sent Christ bound. There Peter then denied Christ: Though one denial be here omitted.

28. Then led they Jesus from Caiaphas unto the hall of judgment; and it was early, and they themselves went not into the judgment
ment-hall, left they should be de-
filed: but that they might eat the
passover.
28. Note, Thus those Hypocrite Priests
make Conscience of a Ceremony, while
they are shedding holy Blood.
29. Pilate then went out unto
them, and said, What accusation
bring you against this man? They answered and said unto him,
If he were not a malefactor, we
would not have delivered him up
unto thee.
29,30. Note, The wicked Priests expected
that Pilate should have taken their bare word
against Christ to Condemn him.
31. Then said Pilate unto them,
Take ye him and judge him accor-
ding to your law. The Jews there-
fore said unto him, It is not lawful
for us to put any man to death :
32. That the safing of Jesus might
be fulfilled, which he spake, signi-
fying what death he should die.
31,32. If he must be Condemned upon
your bare word, be you the Judges of him
by your own Law: For the Romans use not
to Condemn men so unjustly.
Note, The Romans having Conquered the
Jews, allowed them the use of their own
Law for lesser Punishments but not for
Death (though some think otherwise:) Cru-
difying was the Roman punishment.
33. Then Pilate entred into the
judgment-hall again, and called Je-
sus, and said unto him, Art thou
the king of the Jews? Jesus
answered him, Sayest thou this
thing of thy self, or did others tell
it thee of me?
34. I perceive thy question implieth Ac-
cusation: Who is the Accuser? Is it thy
self or any other?
35. Pilate answered, Am I a
Jew? Thine own nation, and the
chief priests have delivered thee
unto me: What hast thou done?
36. I am no Jew, nor Judge of your Pro-
phesies, Pretences and Quarrels; It is thy
own Nation, and those that should best un-
derstand the Matters of it, even the High
Priests that have delivered thee to me: How
haft thou offended them.
36. Jesus answered, My kingdom
is not of this world: if my king-
dom were of this world, then would
my servants fight, that I should not
be delivered to the Jews: but now
is my kingdom not from hence.
36. I know it is as the Emperor of the
Crown against Caesar that they intend to
accuse me: But of that they have no just
cause: For it is no earthly Kingdom that I
claim; nor do I raise Men to fight for me,
as I should do if I claimed an earthly King-
dom.
37. Pilate therefore said unto
him, Art thou a king then? Jesus
answered, Thou sayest that I am a
king. To this end was I born, and
for this cause came I into the world,
that I should bear witness unto the
truth. Every one that is of the
truth, heareth my voice. 38. Pi-
late saith unto him, What is truth?
37. And art thou a King indeed? Jesus
answered, I am a King, (though I claim no
man’s Crown) it was to this end that I was
born and came into the World, that the
Truth might Reign, and that I might Reign
in the Minds of Men by the Light of Truth:
And every one that is thus enlightened to
obey the Truth, obeyeth me: Pilate said,
in disdain, What is that Truth which thou
pretendest to be thy Reign?
And when he had said this, he went
out again unto the Jews, and said
unto them, I find in him no fault
at all.
38. I find not that he breaketh any of our
Laws, by any capital Crime.
39. But ye have a custom, that
I should release unto you one at
the passover: will ye therefore
that I release unto you the king
of the Jews? 40. Then cried they
all again, saying, Not this man, but
Barabbas. Now Barabbas was a
robber.
39. Note, Pilate derided Christ, but was
loth to murder him, judging him inno-
cent.

T 2
Christ accused

Ch. 19. Christ accused

St. John. before Pilate. Ch. 19.

More afraid; 9. And went again into the judgment-hall, and faith unto Jesus, Whence art thou? But Jesus gave him no answer.

7, 8, 9. Note, The Name of the Son of God, was used by the Priests against Christ to accuse and murder him, and yet to a Heathen Judge caused fear and further enquiry: And to this day it is matter of Sorn to such, that the Faithful are called the Children of God.

10. Then faith Pilate unto him, Speakest thou not unto me? knowest thou not that I have power to crucifie thee, and have power to release thee? 11. Jesus answered, Thou couldst have no power at all against me, except it were given thee from above: therefore he that delivered me unto thee hath the greater sin.

10. Note, 1. Christ would not tell him whence he was by Words, that would not know it by his Works. 2. Pilate thought that the power of Life and Death, should have forced Jesus to answer him. And Christ faith (Whatever Proud men may claim or pretend to, no man can have more Governing Right or Authority than God the absolute Sovereign giveth him (who giveth none against himself) Therefore the Arch-Priest that deliver me to thee to be Crucified, are to much the greater Sinners that would turn God’s Ordinances of Magistracy against himself.

12. And from thenceforth Pilate sought to release him: but the Jews cried out, saying, If thou let this man go, thou art not Cesar's friend: whosoever maketh himself a king, speaketh against Cesar.

12. Then the Priests used that Argument with Pilate which he had not strength to overcome; as if they would question his Life or Office, as a Traitor to Cesar, if he would not Condemn Christ as such. Though Christ had told him that he pretended not to a Kingdom of this World; yet for the Name of a King either Christ must die as an Enemy to Cesar, or Pilate go for such. Thus though all Royal Authority be of God, yet it is oft the strength and most prevailing Argument, that Wicked men
When Pilate therefore heard that saying, he brought Jesus forth, and sat down in the judgment-seat, in a place that is called the Pavement, but in the Hebrew, Gabbatha. And it was the preparation of the passover, and about the sixth hour: and he saith unto the Jews, Behold your king! But they cried out, Away with him, away with him, crucify him. Pilate saith unto them, Shall I crucify your king? The chief priests answered, We have no king but Caesar.

When Pilate saw that there was no hope, he desired to release Jesus; but they cried out, saying, Away with him, crucify him! "Pilate therefore took Jesus, and scourged him. And Pilate would fain have released Jesus. But the Jews cried out, saying, If thou let this man go, thou art not Caesar's friend: for whosoever maketh himself a king, speaketh against Caesar. Then said Pilate, What shall I do then with Jesus who is called Christ? The Jews answered him, Crucify him, crucify him! Pilate saith unto them, What shall I give you? They said unto him, Give us Barabbas. And Pilate said unto them, What shall I do to Jesus who is called Christ? The chief priests and officers answered, He doth good among all men: for his reign is not of this world. But now let this fellow be crucified. When Pilate therefore heard these words of the chief priests and officers, he condemned Jesus to be crucified. When Jesus therefore had received the vinegar, he took it, and put it on his lips. And the vinegar was mingled with gall; and they set a sponge upon a reed, and gave him to drink. The multitudes stood beholding. And the officers also mocked him, coming to him, and said, Aha, thou that destroyest the temple, and buildest it in three days! And they all cast about him stones. And Jesus answered and said unto them, It is written, stones shall be thrown upon the builders, and they shall stand every one upon one another: and all shall be built upon me. Then said they, Which of the two shall die? Jesus said unto them, ye know not what ye do. He that is not an enemy to the temple, and to me, is the friend of the temple. Then said Jesus, When thou hast lifted me up, thou shalt know that I am. God. Then Judas Iscariot, who betrayed him, seeing that he was condemned, repented himself, and brought back the thirty pieces of silver to the chief priests and officers, saying, I have sinned in betraying innocent blood. They said, What is that to us? See thou to it. Then Judas cast down the pieces of silver in the temple, and departed, and hanged himself. The chief priests therefore took the silver pieces, and said, It is not lawful to put money into the treasury, except it be to offer unto God. Then they counselled a plot, to buy the Potter's field, for a sepulchre for Jesus. Which that they had taken in subversion of the money, the temple, reviled. Then said one of them, Behold, an heifer of three years old, and shefled. Let us buy it with the money, and let it be used to bury him. But he agreed to the counsel of them. From then therefore they bought the field with the seventy pieces of silver. And that field was called Bunias, that is to say, The field of blood, because in there he was buried.
Ch. 19. Christ's death  

St. John. and burial. Ch. 19.

27. Then saith he to the disciple, Behold thy mother. And from that hour that disciple took her unto his own house.

25, 26, 27. Note, Christ on the Cross had a care of his Mother's future comfort: in the World, which consisted in her Entertainment and Conversation with his beloved Disciple.

28. After this, Jesus knowing that all things were now accomplished, that the Scripture might be fulfilled, saith, I thirst. 29. Now there was set a vessel full of vinegar: and they filled a sponge with vinegar, and put it upon hyssop, and put it to his mouth. 30. When Jesus therefore had received the vinegar, he said, It is finished: and he bowed his head, and gave up the ghost.

28. As other Scriptures of him were fulfilled, so he would have that Psa. 69. 21. And having drunk the Vinegar, he said, my Sacrifice on the Cross is performed, and the Prophecies of it fulfilled, and he bowed his Head and resigned his Soul.

Many passages are omitted by John, because written by others.

31. The Jews therefore, because it was the preparation, that the bodies should not remain upon the cross on the Sabbath-day, (for that Sabbath-day was an high day) besought Pilate that their legs might be broken, and that they might be taken away. 32. Then came the soldiers, and brake the legs of the first, and of the other which was crucified with him.

31, 32. Note, What day it was, whether the Seventh day Sabbath, or another so called by the Jews: Superstition, Expositors varying, I have before said; I will not trouble the Vulgar Reader, with the Controversie.

33. But when they came to Jesus, and said that he was dead already, they brake not his legs. 34. But one of the soldiers with a spear pierced his side, and forthwith came there out blood and water.

33, 34. They made sure, since that he was dead.

35. And he that saw it bare record, and his record is true: and he knoweth that he saith true, that ye might believe. 36. For these things were done, that the Scripture should be fulfilled, A bone of him shall not be broken.

35, 36. John that saw it, is a true Witness. And that Mal. 34. 20. which speaketh God's care of all his People, was specially meant of Christ, whether David understood it or not.

37. And again another Scripture faith, They shall look on him whom they pierced.

37. Thus also that of Zach. 12. 10. was fulfilled.

38. And after this, Joseph of Arimathæa (being a disciple of Jesus, but secretly for fear of the Jews) besought Pilate that he might take away the body of Jesus: and Pilate gave him leave: He came therefore and took the body of Jesus.

38. Joseph that durst not own Christ openly alive, begs and obtaineth his body for burial.

39. And there came also Nicodemus, (which at the first came to Jesus by night) and brought a mixture of myrrh and aloes, about an hundred pound weight. 40. Then took they the body of Jesus, and wound it in linen clothes with the spices, as the manner of the Jews is to bury.

39. The Myrrh and Aloes were to keep the Body from Putrefaction: but it seems they did for hate (being late) but rude lay them to the Body with the Cloaths, deferring the full Embalming till the first day of the week, when the Women came with Spices to have done it.

41. Now in the place where he was crucified, there was a garden: and
Ch. 20. The Resurrection St. John. of Christ. Ch. 20.

and in the garden a new sepulchre, wherein was never man yet laid.

42. There laid they Jesus therefore, because of the Jews preparation-day, for the sepulchre was nigh at hand.

41, 42. It was Joseph's Sepulchre which he had prepared for himself, cleanness and searcness made it convenient.

CHAP. XX.

1. The first day of the week cometh Mary Magdalene early, when it was yet dark, unto the sepulchre, and seeth the stone taken away from the sepulchre.

2. Mary and other Women first see it.

3. Then runneth, and cometh to Simon Peter, and to the other disciple whom Jesus loved, and faith unto them, They have taken away the Lord out of the sepulchre and we know not where they have laid him.

4. Peter therefore went forth, and that other disciple, and came to the sepulchre.

5. So they ran both together: and the other disciple did outrun Peter, and came first to the sepulchre.

6. And he stooping down, and looking in, saw the linen clothes lying; yet went he not in.

7. Then cometh Simon Peter following him, and went into the sepulchre, and seeth the linen clothes lie; and the napkin that was about his head, not lying with the linen clothes, but wrapped together in a place by itself.

8. Then went in also that other disciple which came first to the sepulchre, and he saw, and believed.

9. For as yet they knew not the scripture, that he must rise again from the dead.

9. Though the Scripture (and Christ himself often) foretold them his Resurrection, they yet believed it not.

10. Then the disciples went away again unto their own home.

11. But Mary stood without at the sepulchre weeping: and as she wept, she stooped down, and looked into the sepulchre.

12. And seeth two angels in white, sitting, the one at the head, and the other at the feet, where the body of Jesus had layen.

13. And they say unto her, Woman, why weepest thou? She faith unto them, Because they have taken away my Lord, and I know not where they have laid him.

10, 11. Though some Evangelists mentioned but one Angel, that denieth not that there were two, which is here affirmed.

14. And when he had thus said, she turned her self back, and saw Jesus standing, and knew not that it was Jesus.

15. Jesus faith unto her, Woman, why weepest thou? whom seekest thou? he supposing him to be the gardener, faith unto him, Sir, if thou have born him hence, tell me where thou hast laid him, and I will take him away.

16. Jesus faith unto her, Mary. She turned her self, and faith unto him, Rabboni, which is to say, Master.

17. Jesus faith unto her, Touch me not: for I am not yet ascended to my Father: but go to my brethren, and say unto them, I ascend unto my Father and your Father, and to my God and your God.
17. I am not risen for such familiar Conduct and Converse as I had with you before my Resurrection, but must Ascend to my Father where my Body shall be a Glorified spiritual body. And though I will allow you as much familiarity as shall convince you of my Resurrection, yet no more, nor such as formerly. But go to my Disciples, and tell them, I take them as my Brethren, and am shortly to Ascend where I shall be better to them than on Earth, even to him, that is my Father, (by Nature and Merit) and their Father, (by adopting Grace and Union with me through my Merit) to my God (as I am Mediator and Man) and their God (through my Mediation).

Note, All true believers should labour to get this most Comfortable Text deeply impressed on their Minds, and never think of God or come to him but as here described; My Father and your Father, My God and your God. And thus only to think of Heaven, and our change at Death, we are Ascending to our ascended Saviour called our Brother, and to his Father and our Father, to his God and our God.

Note, That there feemeth a great difference between the Evangelists in describing these passages and appearances to the Women and Apostles: But it is but because one leaveth out what another mentioneth, but not that they contradict each other. And if you take them altogether as one History, the order feemeth to be this, First, Mary Magdalen, Johanna, Mary of James, and Salome, having brought Spices, and going to Embalm the Body; said, Who will roll away the Stone for us. Secondly, When they came they found that the Stone was rolled away; for an Angel had done it, and with his appearing and Earthquake affrighted away the Soldiers. Thirdly, That Angel with another faith to the Women Fear not, I know you seek Jesus that was Crucified: why seek ye the living among the dead? he is not here, he is Risen, Come, see the place, &c. 4. Then the Women run and tell the Disciples, They have taken away the Lord we know not where they have laid him. 5. Then Peter and John run to see; 6. Mary being come back stood weeping at the Entrance, and looked back and saw two Angels, as John reciteth it. 7. Then Mary looked back and saw Christ, and at first knew him not, and he spake to her as here. 8. Then she runs and tells the Disciples, that she had seen the Lord: 9. Either then or when she was gone, Jesus met the rest of the Women, and laid to them, All hall, and they laid hold on his Feet and worshipped him; and he said, Fear not, Go tell my brethren, &c.

Or perhaps we may make it shorter: As, 1. The Stone rolled away, and the keeper affrighted away. 2. Mary and the other women come and find it so. 3. They go in and miss the body. 4. Mary runs and tells Peter and John. 5. They run to see. 6. The Women staying see first one Angel on the Stone on the right side, and then two, one at the head and one at the feet of the place. 7. These Angels say all that is mentioned, to Mary and the rest. 8. Mary seeth Jesus and do the rest, who holding him by the feet, he restrains further corporal contact, and speaketh to Mary and the rest all that is mentioned. 9. Then she and they tell the Disciples that they had seen him, and what he said. This feemeth the order of all together.

18. Mary Magdalene came and told the Disciples, that she had seen the Lord, and that he had spoken these things unto her. 19. Then the same day at evening, being the first day of the week, when the doors were shut, where the Disciples were assembled for fear of the Jews, came Jesus and stood in the midst, and said unto them, Peace be unto you.

18, 19. Note, Christ rose and first appeared on the first day of the week, if any should question it by cavilling at the Text as doubtful; the practice of the Universal Church, ever since observing that day without any Contradicting Party, proveth it past doubt to all that use sober reason in the cause. 2. Christ owned their private meeting, not reproving the Cautelous fears of Persecutors. 3. The first word that he spake to them together (or after his words to Mary) was [Peace be unto you] (Little underfooted by many Churchmen.)

20. And when he had so said, he shewed unto them his hands and his side. Then were the Disciples glad when they saw the Lord.

20. Several appearances are past by because mentioned by others.

21. Then said Jesus to them again, Peace be unto you: as my Father

thethathsentme, evensendyou. 22. Andwhenhehadsaid
this, he breathed onthem, and faith
unto them. Receive ye the holy
Ghost. 23. Whosesovereignsye
remit, they are remitted untothem;
andwhosesovereignsyeretain, they
areretained.

21, 22, &c. Peace is the summittomyGift
and Benediction to you, and the summ
of your dutytotothers; as my Father sent me
into the World to Gather, Guide and Save
his Church as their Head and Mediator, so
I send you to Gather, Guide and Save the
Church as my Apostles: And breathing on
them, he said, As my Father sent me not
with a bare Title unfurnished for his work,
but filled with the Spirit of Life and Power,
of Light and Wisdom, of Love and Good-
ness, so I will give you the same Holy Spi-
rit, and send you furnished with Power,
Knowledge and Love, (and not with mere
Names and Titles, as Images): I give you
Power to Preach the Gospel so effectually,
as shall open men's Eyes, and turn them from
Darkness to Light, and from the power of
Satan unto God, that they may receive really
from God, and by Sacramental investiture
in Baptism, and from your Remission of
Sins, a right to the inheritance among the
Sanctified by Faith in me: To be the Guides
of my Church entrusted with Witnessing
and Recording my Doctrine, Laws and Pro-
mises for their Government to the end of
the World; And with the Keys of Church
order, as authorized Judges in your several
charges, who is capable of Church Com-
munion to be received by Baptism, restored
by Repentance, or as incapable Apostates
cast out: Together with an extraordinary
Power, to inflict or to ordain bodily Punish-
ment by my rules, not at your pleasure, but
as it shall please the Holy Ghost, which he
shall give you. And I do breath on you, to
communicate now some beginnings of that
Spirit which I will send down on you after
my Ascension; And so signify to you that
it is a real Qualification and Spiritual that
I will give, (as God when he made Man,
breathed into him a living Soul) that you
deceive not your selves and the Church by
dead Imaginary and Powerless names: The
witness of Jesus is the Spirit of Prophecy,
and of Sanctioned. And if any man have
not the Spirit of Christ, he is none of his,
by what Name or Title soever he be digni-
ified.

24. But Thomas, one of the
twelve, called Didymus, was not
with them when Jesus came. 25:
The other disciples therefore said
unto him, We have seen the Lord.
But he said unto them, Except I
shall see in his hands the print of
the nails, and put my finger into
the print of the nails, and thrust
my hand into his side, I will not be-
lieve.

24. Note, All Christ's Disciples were not
equally inclined to believe. 2. This obsti-
nate Resolution deferred a decision, yet
Christ in mercy overcame it, and forsook
him not.

26. And after eight days, again-
his disciples were within, and Tho-
mas with them: then came Jesus,
the doors being shut, and flood in
the midst, and said, Peace be unto
you.

26. The next first day of that week,
they being assembled, &c. Note, Coming in
when the doors were fast shut whether he
opened them (as some groundlessly think)
or not, was a Miracle, he whole Body was
quickly to be a Glorious Spiritual Body;
when it came to that Glorious Spiritual Re-
region, no doubt had after his Resurrection
a change preparatory thereto, by which he
could appear and disappear and vanish from
their sight, and come in when the door
was shut, and at last ascend to heaven: And
the carnal objections against this are all
vain.

27. Then faith he to Thomas,
Reach hither thy finger, and behold
my hands; and reach hither thy
hand, and thrust it into my side:
and be not faithless, but believ-
ing.

27. Note, Wonderful is the Condescension
of Christ to those that he will save.

28. And Thomas answered and
said unto him, My Lord and my
God.

28. Note. The convincing condescension
of Christ turns unbelief into a Rapture of
adoration: Now Thomas cryeth, My Lord
and my God.

29. Jesus
29. Jesus faith unto him, Thomas, because thou hast seen me, thou hast believed: blessed are they that have not seen, and yet have believed.

29. I have condescended to thy fight and feeling: But this shall not be the common way to blessedness, but they that have not seen shall believe and be happy.

30. And many other signs truly did Jesus in the presence of his disciples, which are not written in this book. 31. But these are written, that ye might believe that Jesus is the Christ, the Son of God, and that believing ye might have life through his name.

30, 31. These and many more not recited he did: And it being by believing that Christ is the Son of God, and Saviour, that you must come to life, and by the evidence of those Miracles that you must believe that he is the Christ, therefore those Miracles are Recorded to convince you, that you may believe.

CHAP. XXI.

1. After these things, Jesus showed himself again to the disciples at the sea of Tiberias; and on this wise showed he himself: 2. There were together Simon Peter, and Thomas called Didymus, and Nathanael of Cana in Galilee, and the sons of Zebedee, and two other of his disciples. 3. Simon Peter faith unto them, I go a fishing. They say unto him, We also go with thee. They went forth, and entered into a ship immediately; and that night they caught nothing.

1, 2, 3. Note, The Disciples went home to their Travels when Jesus was Crucified: 2. Their unsuccessfulness was to prepare for the Miracle.

4. But when the morning was now come, Jesus stood on the shore: but the disciples knew not that it was Jesus.

4. His appearance after his Resurrection was with some change from what he appeared before.

5. Then Jesus faith unto them, Children, have ye any meat? They answered him, No. 6. And he said unto them, Cast the net on the right side of the ship, and ye shall find. They cast therefore, and now they were not able to draw it for the multitude of fishes.

5, 6. Christ took occasion of their frustration to shew his Power and help their Faith.

7. Therefore that disciple whom Jesus loved, faith unto Peter, It is the Lord. Now when Simon Peter heard that it was the Lord, he girt his fisher’s coat about him, (for he was naked) and did cast himself into the sea.

7. When the Miracle convinced him upon John’s words that it was the Lord, he put on his Fisher’s Coat, and leapt into the Sea, to shew that he trusted Christ with his Life.

8. And the other disciples came in a little ship (for they were not far from land, but as it were two hundred cubits) dragging the net with fishes. 9. As soon then as they were come to land, they saw a fire of coals there, and fishes laid thereon, and bread. 10. Jesus faith unto them, Bring of the fish which ye have now caught. 11. Simon Peter went up, and drew the net to land full of great fishes, an hundred and fifty and three: and for all there were so many, yet was not the net broken.

8. Here are two Miracles conjoin’d: The Fifth catch, and the Fish and Bread and Fire prepared for them.

12. Jesus faith unto them, Come and dine. And none of the disciples durst ask him, Who art thou? knowing that it was the Lord.

13. Jesus then cometh, and taketh bread,
bread, and gave them, and sitteth there with them.

12, 13. They knew him not, but as they saw him, he was not eating or drinking with them; he is not improbable though uncertain.

14. This is now the third time that Jesus showed himself to his disciples, after that he was risen from the dead.

14. This was the third time that he appeared to all of them gathered together, or the third that John Recordeth, and the third day of his appearing, though the sixth appearance were said: And whether that on a Mountain in Galilee, mentioned by others was not at this time, is doubted.

15. So when they had dined, Jesus said to Simon Peter, Simon son of Jonah, Lovest thou me more than these? He faith unto him, Yea, Lord; thou knowest that I love thee. He faith unto him, Feed my lambs.

15. Thou didst lately profess that if all men forsook me, yet thou wouldst not, as thou hast loved me more than all the rest: And yet didst three times deny me: Art thou now of the same resolution more confirmed? — If thou be, what love thou hast to me, shew it by thy Ministerial Love and Labour, for the Soul's even of the lowest.

16. He faith to him again the second time, Simon son of Jonas, Lovest thou me? He faith unto him, Yea, Lord; thou knowest that I love thee. He faith unto him, Feed my sheep.

16. Thou knowest the heart, and therefore knowest that I love thee.

17. He faith unto him the third time, Simon son of Jonas, Lovest thou me? Peter was grieved, because he had denied him the third time. Lovest thou me? And he said unto him, Lord, thou knowest all things; thou knowest that I love thee. Jesus faith unto him, Feed my sheep.

17. No Peter's three-fold denial required a three-fold Confession, and engagement to future fidelity and obedience; and this he told him what Discipline he was to use by the power of Church Government towards others that so offend. 2. Ministers that are to require Confession and Promises of obedience to Christ from offenders in order to their Restoration, must lead the way in the same themselves, if they scandalously sin. 3. The great evidence of our Love to Christ must be in serving the Church and Souls.

18. Verily verily I say unto thee, When thou wast young, thou girdedst thyself, and waldkest whither thou wouldst: but when thou shalt be old, thou shalt stretch forth thy hands, and another shall gird thee, and carry thee whither thou wouldst not.

18. Thou wast at thy free disposal, &c. But hereafter shall bind thee, and carry thee to Prison against thy will, and also unto death. By these words he signified that he should be Martyred.

19. This spake he, signifying by what death he should glorifie God. And when he had spoken this, he faith unto him, Follow me.

19. Follow me in labour and sufferings unto Glory.

20. Then Peter turning about, seeth the disciple whom Jesus loved, following; which also leaned on his breast at supper, and said, Lord, which is he that betrayeth thee?

21. Peter seeing him, faith to Jesus, Lord, and what shall this man do?

20. What shall become of John?

22. Jesus faith unto him, If I will that he tarry till I come, what is that to thee? Follow thou me.

22. What is that to thee how long he shall live, if it were till my coming, or if he live till he see my Catholic Church settled under my proper Government, when the Jews Law and Policy are fully disdained at the destruction of their Temple and Nation?
23. Then went this saying abroad among the brethren, that that disciple should not die: yet Jesus said not unto him, He shall not die: but, If I will that he tarry till I come, what is that to thee?

23. Note, A false Tradition may pass amongst Christ's own Disciples by misunderstanding in some things.

24. This is the disciple which testified of these things, and wrote these things: and we know that his testimony is true.

24. This is John the Disciple who was an Eye and Ear witness of all this, and who wrote this History of Christ; And whose testimony the Church doth justly receive as true.

Note, Though some take these words to be the Bishop's of Asia that published John's Gospel, (at whose request they say he wrote it about thirty two years after Christ's Resurrection,) yet it is no less probable that the words are his own, and that [we know] signifies only [it's well known to the Churches]

25. And there are also many other things which Jesus did, the which if they should be written every one, I suppose that even the world it self could not contain the books that should be written. Amen.

25. Though this History be written to Record divers things which others have omitted, yet all together are far from containing all the Miracles that Christ did: which were so many, that should they all be written, the many and great Volumes would as it were overload the World.

Note, 1. That therefore it is not to be matter of offence, if any one Evangelist pass by divers particulars.

2. That though multitudes of Christ's Words and Miracles may be unknown to us, as much is Recorded as he would have taken as needful to the notice of the Church through all Generations: And none of his Laws or Promises the objects of our Obedience and Faith are omitted: yea all that is essential to Christianity is contained in Baptism or a very narrow room.

3. It is in vain to pretend Oral Tradition for any needful thing omitted in the Scripture Records, though the Essentails and greatest practical Matters of Religion are most certainly delivered us both ways, even by the Scriptures, and by the Universal publick practice of the Churches.
The ACTS of the HOLY APOSTLES.

Note, That this History written by Saint Luke, is not to be supposed to contain all the Miracles, Preaching and Success of all the Apostles; but only the History of Peter and Paul, and some few others their Companions, and that but for a short space of time: not mentioning what the other ten Apostles and their helpers did in other parts of the World; nor what Peter and Paul did to the end of their lives (supposed to be ten years after the ending of this History): yea Peter's History is here Recorded but for a far shorter time than Paul's, with whom Luke Travelled. And though this History of Luke have more infallibility than other Histories of Church affairs since written, yet all other credible notice of matter of Faith and Church Practice from the beginning, is of great use to us, and not to be despised.

CHAP. I.

1. The former treatise have I made, O Theophilus, of all that Jesus began both to do and teach, 2. Until the day in which he was taken up, after that he through the holy Ghost had given commandments unto the apostles whom he had chosen.

1. I wrote the Gospel History as a Record of Christ's Birth, Miracles and Doctrine, reaching to the day of his Ascension, after he had by breathing on his Disciples given them the Holy Ghost, and their Commissions.

3. To whom also he shewed himself alive after his passion, by many infallible proofs, being seen of them forty days, and speaking of the things pertaining to the kingdom of God:

3. That their Faith should not waver but have full assurance, he shewed himself to them by unquestionable manifestation, at several times in the forty days' space, in which he abode on Earth before his Ascension, Instructing them in the matters of his Kingdom.

4. And being assembled together with them, commanded them that they should not depart from Jerusalem, but wait for the promise of the Father, which faith ye have heard of me. 5. For John truly baptized with water; but ye shall be baptized with the Holy Ghost, not many days hence.

4 s. And when he was among them, he bid them wait at Jerusalem for the great Gift of the Father even the Holy Ghost, the
the Promis· of· which ye have heard of me: which shall be your full solemn initiation into your Apostolical and extraordinary Ministry, and a few days hence you shall receive.

Note, The Holy Ghost given by Christ’s breathing on them, was not a mere Title, Name or Relation, but yet it was not that full effusion which they were to have after his Ascension: but a previous earnest of it, to show them from whom the fuller Communication was to come, differing from this latter, as his own Resurrection Victory differed from his Ascension, Majesty and Kingdom. They were not to set upon the Publick Ministry without this necessary previous qualification: nor should any now take up the ordinary Ministry, without holy suitable qualifications by Christ’s Spirit.

6. When they therefore were come together, they asked of him, saying, Lord, wilt thou at this time restore again the kingdom to Israel?

6. They were now in hope of Earthly Dominion, and said, Wilt thou now deliver Israel from Captivity and reign in visible Glory over them, as the Messiah?

7. And he said unto them, It is not for you to know the times or the seasons, which the Father hath put in his own power. 8. But ye shall receive power after that the Holy Ghost is come upon you: and ye shall be witnesses unto me both in Jerusalem, and in all Judea, and in Samaria, and unto the uttermost part of the earth.

7. Presume not to enquire into God’s secrets, of which this is one; at what time God will advance you and his Israel to visible Reign and Glory. But such Power as is fitted for you at present, ye shall receive by the coming of the Holy Ghost upon you: by which ye shall be enabled to declare your Testimony of what you have seen and heard of me, throughout the Earth.

Note, It may seem strange that Christ confuteth not their conceit of an Israelitish Kingdom restored, but only their demands about the season. But they were so far in the Right, as that Christ would advance believing Israelites with the rest of the Catholick Church, though not restore the

Mosaic Policy, nor set the Israelites over others in a local Monarchy at Jerusalem. Therefore Christ intimateth that they shall have better than they expected, which the Spirit should teach them better to understand.

9. And when he had spoken these things, while they beheld, he was taken up, and a cloud received him out of their sight.

9. Note, No doubt but Christ’s body at its entrance in the Glorious Region of Spirits, became glorious and spiritual eminently, such as Paul saith ours shall be. 1 Cor. 15.

2. The sight of Christ’s Ascension must needs be as full an ascertaining of the Apostles Faith as his Resurrection; And it must be no wonder that four Evangelists mention it not, it being enough that any mention it, God’s Spirit making their several Histories indired by him to be as one Book.

10. And while they looked steadfastly toward heaven, as he went up, behold, two men stood by them in white apparel; 11. Which also said, Ye men of Galilee, why stand ye gazing up into heaven? this same Jesus which is taken up from you into heaven, shall so come in like manner as ye have seen him go into heaven.

10. 11. While they looked up after him, two Angels in the likeness of men, in white stood by them, saying, Ye Men of Galilee, gaze no more after the body of Jesus ascended into heaven: Know ye not that he must there Reign in Glory, and hence find you down the Grace and Blessings purchased by his life on Earth? and yet he shall come again at the day of Judgment, attended with his glorious Angels, and does not forsake you by his remove.

12. Then returned they unto Jerusalem, from the mount called Olivet, which is from Jerusalem a sabbath day’s journey.

12. Note, Mount Olivet at the nearest part is but five Furlongs from Jerusalem, (a Furlong is six hundred feet, and five Furlongs a thousand Yards.) And Christ is said Luke 24, to lead them out as far as Bethany, which is said to be fifteen furlongs from Jerusalem, John 11.18. To understand this, some say,
1. That Bethany was the name of a large space of ground (as Hackney where some Houses are far nearer London than other.) 2. And that Christ attended not from the nearest part of Mount Olives, but from the top: And it is possible that Christ might lead them as far as Bethany, and in the house of Lazarus infract them, and go forth again with them to the top of the Mount, and thence ascend.

13. And when they were come in, where abode both Peter, and James, and John, and Andrew, Philip, and Thomas, Bartholomew, and Matthew, James the son of Alphaeus, and Simon Zelotes, and Judas the brother of James. 14. These all continued with one accord in prayer and supplication with the women, and Mary the mother of Jesus, and with his brethren.


15. And in those days Peter stood up in the midst of the disciples, and said, (the number of the names together were about an hundred and twenty)

15. An hundred and twenty being assembled for Prayer and mutual encouragement in Faith.

16. Men and brethren, this Scripture must needs have been fulfilled, which the holy Ghost by the mouth of David spake before concerning Judas, which was guide to them that took Jesus. 17. For he was numbered with us, and had obtained part of this ministry.

16. Note. This must needs signify no necessity or constraint put on Judas, but a necessity Hypothetical, and of consequence, that is, it cannot but be true which God foretelleth or foreseeth. 2. Judas, though a Thief and a Devil, had by Christ’s own choice a part or office in the Apostolick Order: But not after Christ’s breathing on them and giving them the Holy Ghost for the proper work of his universal Kingdom, as it began after his Resurrection, but only as one sent to offer Grace to the twelve Tribes of Israel that mostly refus’d it, such may be Ministers to the condemnation of themselves and others; and God may blest their doctrine to his Elect.

18. Now this man purchased a field with the reward of iniquity; and falling headlong, he burst asunder in the midst, and all his bowels gushed out.

18. Note. The wrath of God was upon his own head: Some Expositors suppose strangling was not by hanging himself, but the rage of his Conscience and Passion did suffocate or strangle him, and that he fell down and burst: or rather that he cast himself headlong from some high-place and burst. Others think that the Rope or Bough broke where he was hanged: And its possible without hanging he might at once strangle himself with a Cord on the brow of some Precipice, and fall, or cast himself down it.

19. And it was known unto all the dwellers at Jerusalem; insomuch as that field is called in their proper tongue, Aceldama, that is to say, The field of blood.

19. This is commonly known, and the field to this day is as a Record of it.

20. For it is written in the book of Psalms, Let his habitation be desolate, and let no man dwell therein: and, His bishoprick let another take.

20. What is said in Psal. 69. 25. and 109. 8. is ultimately to be verified of him: his Office another must take.

21. Wherefore, of these men which have companied with us, all the time that the Lord Jesus went in and out among us, 22. Beginning from the baptism of John, unto that same day that he was taken up from us, must one be ordained to be a witness with us of his resurrection.

21, 22. Note. Many besides the twelve did constantly accompany Christ. Note. Why must the number of the twelve Apostles be yet kept up, were not others good

1. And when the day of Pentecost was fully come, they were all with one accord in one place.

2. And suddenly there came a sound from heaven, as of a rushing mighty wind, and it filled all the house where they were sitting. 3. And there appeared unto them cloven tongues, like as of fire, and it sat upon each of them:

4. And they were all filled with the Holy Ghost, and began to speak with other tongues, as the Spirit gave them utterance.

5. And there were dwelling at Jerusalem, Jews, devout men, out of every nation under heaven.

6. Now when this was noised abroad, the multitude came together, and were confounded, because that every man heard them speak in his own language.

7. And they were all amazed, and marvelled, saying one to another, Behold, are not all these which speak Galileans?

8. And how hear we every man in our own tongue, wherein we were born?

9. Parthians, and Medes, and Elamites, and dwellers in Mesopotamia, and in Judea, and Cappadocia, in Pontus, and Asia, Phrygia, and Pamphylia, in Egypt and in the parts of...
of Libya about Cyrene, and strangers of Rome, Jews and proselytes. 11. Cretes and Arabians, we do hear them speak in our tongues the wonderful works of God.

6, 7, &c. The word of Christ and of his Gospel, was that which they spake in the Tongues of all these Countries.

12. They were all amazed, and were in doubt, saying one to another, What meaneth this? 13. Others mocking, said, These men are full of new wine.

12, 13. Some derided them as Drunken.

14. But Peter standing up with the eleven, lift up his voice, and laid unto them, Ye men of Judea, and all ye that dwell at Jerusalem, be this known unto you, and hearken to my words: 15. For these are not drunken, as ye suppose, seeing it is but the third hour of the day.

14, &c. It is but nine a Clock at which time Men use to pray fasting, (and Drunkenness will not enable a Man to speak various Languages.)

16. But this is that which was spoken by the prophet Joel, 17. And it shall come to pass in the last days, (faith God) I will pour out of my Spirit upon all flesh: and your sons and your daughters shall prophesy, and your young men shall see visions, and your old men shall dream dreams: 18. And on my servants, and on my handmaidens I will pour out in those days of my Spirit, and they shall prophesy:

16, &c. This is the fulfilling of what Joel prophesied of the times of the Messiah.

19. And I will shew wonders in heaven above, and signs in the earth beneath; blood, and fire, and vapour of smoke. 20. The sun shall be turned into darkness, and the moon into blood, before that great and notable day of the Lord come.

21. And it shall come to pass, that whatsoever shall call on the name of the Lord, shall be saved.

19, 20, 21. Many Prodigies in Heaven and Earth, as if the frame of Nature did shake or were altered, shall go before the destruction of the Temple and Nation of the Jews, But faithful, praying Christians shall be saved.

22. Ye men of Israel, hear these words, Jesus of Nazareth, a man approved of God among you, by miracles and wonders and signs, which God did by him in the midst of you, as ye your selves also know: 23. Him being delivered by the determinate counsel and foreknowledge of God, ye have taken, and by wicked hands have crucified and slain: 24. Whom God hath raised up, having loosed the pains of death: because it was not possible that he should be holden of it.

22, 23, 24. You deny not the fact of those miracles done by Jesus, which are the infallible works of God's atonement: God's determinate Counsel having appointed him to die as a Sacrifice for the Sins of the World, and he foreknowing all that your wicked hearts do in it hereunto, accordingly with wicked hands you have murdered him, (not at all excusable by the said decree of foreknowledge of God.) But God raised him from the dead having loosed the bonds of Death, it being impossible he should be held and conquered by it.

Note. The word translated Pains of death, may be also translated bonds: But if it must be read [Pains] Death as a separation of Soul and Body is by privation a Penal state, though not dolorous by positive evil; yet some think that the Article of Defect into Hell signifies some positive penalty on Christ's soul, called here The Pains of Death; But most think otherwise.

25. For David speaketh concerning him, I foresaw the Lord always before my face, for he is on my right hand, that I should not be moved. 26. Therefore did my heart rejoice, and my tongue was glad: moreover also, my flesh shall live.
rest in hope. 27. Because thou wilt not leave my soul in hell, neither wilt thou suffer thine holy One to see corruption.

Note, Though David spake this, partly of himself, the Holy Ghost spake it by him of Christ, That God would not leave him in the state of Death, nor suffer his body to be corrupted.

28. Thou hast made known to me the ways of life; thou shalt make me full of joy with thy countenance. 29. Men and brethren, let me freely speak unto you of the patriarch David, that he is both dead and buried, and his sepulchre is with us unto this day: 30. Therefore being a prophet, and knowing that God had sworn with an oath to him, that of the fruit of his loins, according to the flesh, he would raise up Christ to sit on his throne: 31. He seeing this before, spake of the resurrection of Christ, that his soul was not left in hell, neither his flesh did see corruption.

32. Quoth. How is Christ said to sit on David's Throne, which was of a visible Earthly Kingdom? Answer. It is that which was principally meant in the promise to David: And the eminent and the highest Reign containeth the lower under its power.

2. The Article of Christ's descent into Hell, is so largely handled by many, that I will not here interpose any more of it, than to say that I take it to be best expounded by A. Bishop Usher, in his Answer to the Jesuits challenge. And this Text speaking first of David, and ultimately of Christ, seems to mean no other Hell for Christ, but what David meant of himself; which is Hades, the State of Separated Souls, as such.

32. This Jesus hath God raised up, whereof we all are witnesses. 33. Therefore being by the right hand of God exalted, and having received of the Father the promise of the holy Ghost, he hath shed forth this which ye now see and hear.

32. We being all Witnesses of his Resurrection, and Ascension, he being in Glory in the fulness of his Power, and having promised thiat to send down the Holy Ghost, hath performed his promise, as ye see and hear: 1. To prove by this Miracle, the truth of his Power to convince Unbelievers, 2. And to enable us to Teach the Gospel to the People of divers Languages in the World.

Note, The Apostles were credible Witnesses of fact: 2. The Holy Ghost is the infallible evidence that Christ's mission and power is of God.

34. For David is not ascended into the heavens; but he faith himself, The LORD said unto my Lord, Sit thou on my right hand, 35. Until I make thy foes thy footstool.

34. David went not up to Heaven bodily as Jesus did, (but only his Soul); but he prophesied of Christ's Ascension and Glory.

36. Therefore let all the house of Israel know assuredly, that God hath made that same Jesus whom ye have crucified, both Lord and Christ.

36. All of you therefore, believe these Divine attestations, and know assuredly that this Jesus whom you crucified is in Glory, exalted by God to be the Lord, King and Saviour.

37. Now when they heard this, they were pricked in their heart, and said unto Peter, and to the rest of the apostles, Men and brethren, what shall we do?

37. These words accompanied with so great Evidence, and the work of the Spirit now poured out, they could not rest, but their hearts convinced were pricked or wounded with grief and fear, to find that they had crucified the Messiah whom they expected; And they cried out, Is there yet no hope or remedy? If there be, what shall we do?

38. Then Peter said unto them, Repent, and be baptized every one of you in the name of Jesus Christ, for the remission of sins, and
Ch. 2. A great number The A. Q. S. Converted. Ch. 2.

38. There is yet hope and remedy. Repent of this and all your sins, and give up your selves by Faith to Christ in the Baptifinal Covenant, and your sins shall be remitted, and this Holy Ghost which you now admire shall also be given unto you.

39. For the promise is unto you, and to your children, and to all that are afar off, even as many as the Lord our God shall call.

40. For the Messiah with his Grace of Remission, and the Spirit, is promised and is offered to you that are Jews, and your whole Nation and Childred in the first place, and shall be yours yet, if you accept the offer: And not to you only, but to as many as God shall call of the Gentiles in the remotest part of the World: For Christ is now to be the Universal King and Saviour of all Nation and Persons that accept him.

41. And with many other words did he testify and exhort, laying, Save your selves from this ungodly generation.

42. And with many more Exhortations be persuaded them to believe and repent, and not to imitate the unbelieving, persecuting, hardened part of the Jews, lest they perish with them.

43. Then they that gladly received his word, were baptized: and the same day were added unto them about three thousand souls.

44. Then they that believed and gladly consented to be Christians, were baptized: And that day about three thousand were converted to Christianity.

1. These Jews were before instructed in much of the Law and Prophets, and therefore their Baptism was not delayed so long as the following Churches delayed the baptizing of the Gentile Catechumens. 2. Yet though all were Converted that day, it is not certain that all were Baptized that day.

3. None were Baptized that did not profess to believe the Essentials of the Baptifinal Covenant (That Jesus is the Christ sent of God to reconcile us to him, and give us remission of sin, and His Spirit and everlasting Salvation), and profess not willing consent to the Covenant.

42. And they continued steadfastly in the apostles doctrine and fellowship, and in breaking of bread, and in prayers.

43. And being thus Convinced, Converted and Sacramentally bound and devoted to Christ, they continued united in Communion with the Apostles, in learning their Doctrine, and in brotherly Communication and Love; and in Celebration of the Lord's Supper, and in conjunct Prayer: The Apostles conducting the Society in all this.

44. And fear came upon every soul: and many wonders and signs were done by the apostles.

45. The wonder amazed all men, and the Miracles wrought by the Apostles increased mens conviction.

46. And all that believed were together, and had all things common.

47. And sold their possessions and goods, and parted them to all men, as every man had need.

48. The greatness of the thing raised them above the World, and the Holy Ghost filled them with such Love as made every one to be another as himself, and so made all common, nor by destroying Propriety, but Selfishness, and causing Charity: And God that moved them to it, knew that they were quickly to be driven from their Possessions in Judæa.

49. And they continuing daily with one accord in the temple, and breaking bread from house to house, did eat their meat with gladness and singleness of heart.

50. In the Temple was the meeting of the multitude, and from house to house they had their lesser Meetings where they did eat together and Sacramentally Communicate, and all with great joy and singleness of heart.

Note, Breaking Bread sometime signifieth common eating together, and sometimes Sacramental Communicating. And it is likest here to signify both conjunct, because there the Church used the Sacrament at the end of a Meal, and not alone as now.

51. Praising God, and having favour with all the people. And
the Lord added to the church daily such as should be saved.

47. Praising God and applauded by all, (or in Charity to all) God daily added to the Church new Converts, saved from unbelief and sin, and to be saved by further Grace and Glory.

CHAP. III.

1. Now Peter and John went up together into the temple at the hour of prayer, being the ninth hour.

2. And a certain man lame from his mother's womb was carried, whom they laid daily at the gate of the temple which is called Beautiful, to ask alms of them that entred into the temple. 3. Who seeing Peter and John about to go into the temple, asked an alms. 4. And Peter fastening his eyes upon him, with John said, Look on us. 5. And he gave heed unto them, expecting to receive something of them. 6. Then Peter said, Silver and gold have I none; but such as I have give I thee: In the name of Jesus Christ of Nazareth, rise up and walk.

7. And he took him by the right hand, and lifted him up; and immediately his feet and ankle bones received strength. 8. And he leaping up, stood, and walked, and entered with them into the temple, walking, and leaping, and praising God.

9. And all the people saw him walking and praising God. 10. And they knew that it was he which sat for alms at the Beautiful gate of the temple: and they were filled with wonder and amazement at that which had happened unto him.

11. He had so long used to be there begging, that they well knew him, and wondered at the change.

12. And as the lame man which was healed, held Peter and John, all the people ran together unto them in the porch that is called Solomon's, greatly wondering.

13. The Miracle made the People crowd to gaze at them.

14. And when Peter saw it, he answered unto the people, Ye men of Israel, why marvel ye at this? or why look ye so earnestly on us, as though by our own power or holiness we had made this man to walk?

15. After all the Miracles that Christ himself did, why make you so strange a matter of this: or why gaze you with wonder on us, as if you thought we did it by our own Power or Holiness?

16. The God of Abraham, and of Isaac, and of Jacob, the God of our fathers hath glorified his Son Jesus; whom ye delivered up, and denied him in the presence of Pilate, when he was determined to let him go. 17. But ye denied the holy One, and the just, and desired a murderer to be granted unto you. 18. And killed the prince of life, whom God hath raised from the dead; whereof we are witnesses.

19. This is the work of Jesus glorified, whom ye Murdered, though he was the Holy One and Just, and the Lord of Life, now raised to Glory.
16. And his name, through faith in his name hath made this man strong, whom ye see and know: yea, the faith which is by him, hath given him this perfect soundness in the presence of you all.

16. See Ephesians. Whole Faith was it? The same man shewed no belief in Christ before he was healed. Acts 1. It was by the Apostles Faith. 2. And for the generating of Faith in others.

17. And now brethren, I wot that through ignorance ye did it, as did also your rulers.

17. Note, Ignorance is the common cause of error and all sin: But some men ignorance is more wilful than others and against more light, and hath less excuse: And so was the Rulers worse than the Peoples.

18. But those things which God before had shewed by the mouth of all his prophets, that Christ should suffer, he hath so fulfilled.

18. God who decreed Christ's sufferings for man, foretold it and permitted your sin that did it, and his Prophesies and Promises of our Redemption are thus fulfilled.

19. Repent ye therefore, and be converted, that your sins may be blotted out, when the times of refreshing shall come from the presence of the Lord. 20. And he shall send Jesus Christ, which before was preached unto you:

19,20. Repent therefore of your rejecting Jesus Christ, and be Converted to true Christianity and Godliness, that your sins may be forgiven, and so found to your comfort, when the time of Christ's glorious return, shall rejoice all true believers, and God shall send Jesus visibly to justify and glorify them, whom we now Preach to you, and who was designed to be our Saviour.

21. Whom the heaven must receive, until the times of restitution of all things, which God hath spoken by the mouth of all his holy prophets, since the world began.

21. Who must be in the Heavens in Glory (not visible here) till the great and blessed change shall come which God hath Promised by all his Prophets, and in and curse shall be taken away, and the Creation shall be delivered from the bondage of Corruption, into the glorious liberty of the Sons of God, and there shall be a new Heaven and a new Earth in which shall dwell Righteousness: Even the time of our actual, full Redemption and Salvation.

22. For Moses truly said unto the fathers, A prophet shall the Lord your God raise up unto you of your brethren, like unto me; him shall ye hear in all things whatsoever he shall say unto you. 23. And it shall come to pass, that every soul which will not hear that prophet, shall be destroyed from among the people.

22,23. Note, Though Moses immediately spake of the species of the Jewish Government, by a Prophetical Theocracy, that God would not Rule them by Elective or Hereditary Kings, but by Prophets or Men Prophetically called (till they cast off this Theocracy); yet the Holy Ghost here tells us that Moses eminently Prophesied this of Christ, who must be Universally obeyed as our Sovereign, and not to obey him will be sure Condemnation, of which the Jews destruction was a fore-taste.

24. Yea, and all the prophets from Samuel, and those that followed after, as many as have spoken, have likewise foretold of these days.

24. The sum of all the Prophets was to foretell the sufferings and the Kingdom of Christ now begun.

25. Ye are the children of the prophets, and of the covenant which God made with our fathers, saying unto Abraham, And in thy seed shall all the kindreds of the earth be blessed.

25. According to the Flesh ye are the Posterity of the Prophetical Nation, and first in that Covenant which God made with Abraham, pronouncing all Nations blessed in his Seed, as thence deriving their blessedness.

26. Unto you first, God having raised up his Son Jesus, sent him to bless you, in turning away every one of you from his iniquities.
Chap. IV.

And as they spake unto the people, the priests, and the captain of the temple, and the Sadducees came upon them; being grieved that they taught the people, and preached through Jesus the resurrection from the dead. And they laid hands on them, and put them in hold unto the next day: for it was now-evident.

Note, The great Persecutors and Slicers were the Priests (who should have been the holiest) and the Sadducees that believed no life but this, and next the Soldiers that were mercenary. One would wonder what should make such Brutes as the Sadducees to be such furious Sinners and Persecutors: If there were no life to come, what harm can other Men hopes of it do them? But in depraved Souls all Faculties are vitiated. A blind mind hath a malignent heart and a cruel hand, to this day: Who Persecute Men more for Preaching and seeking the heavenly Glory, than Atheists and Brutes who believe there is none such?

Howbeit, many of them which heard the word, believed; and the number of the men was about five thousand.

The Assembly that owned Christianity was increased to above five thousand, and that success grieved the Malcontents.

And it came to pass on the morrow, that their rulers, and elders, and scribes, And Anias the high priest, and Caiaphas, and John, and Alexander, and as many as were of the kindred of the high priest, were gathered together at Jerusalem.

Their rulers, the High Priests and their Comforts met in Council.

And when they had set them in the midst, they asked, By what power, or by what name have ye done this?

Who gave you Power and Authority to set up as Miracle workers and Preachers to the People?

Then Peter filled with the holy Ghost, said unto them, Ye rulers of the people, and elders of Israel. If we this day be examined of the good deed done to the impotent man, by what means he is made whole; Be it known unto you all, and to all the people of Israel, that by the name of Jesus Christ of Nazareth, whom ye crucified, whom God raised from the dead, even by him doth this man stand here before you whole.

It is Christ's Power that did the Cure, and to his Glory they proclaim it.

This is the stone which was set at no light of you builders, which is become the head of the corner.

Neither is there salvation in any other: for there is none other name under heaven given among men whereby we must be saved.

He whom you rejected, is made the Leader and Head over all: And it is only by trusting and obeying him that man can be saved.

Now when they saw the boldness of Peter and John, and perceived that they were unlearned and ignorant men, they marvelled, and they took knowledge of them, that they had been with Jesus.

When they perceived their freedom of speech, and that they had not been bred up to Learning, but were vulgar persons untaught, they marvelled, and took notice that they had seen them with Jesus.

And beholding the man which was healed standing with them,
them, they could say nothing against it.

14. The Evidence of the fact silenced them at present, but did not cure their hardened hearts.

15. But when they had commanded them to go aside out of the council, they conferred among themselves. 16. Saying, What shall we do to these men ? for that indeed a notable miracle hath been done by them, is manifest to all them that dwell in Jerusalem, and we cannot deny it. 17. But that it spread no further among the people, let us straitly threaten them, that they speak henceforth to no man in this name.

15. Note: O the Blindness and Devilish malignity of these slanders of Christ's Ministers! While they confess the miracle, and should confess how to repent of their former wickedness, they go on to confute how to silence the Preachers, and think the Apostles so cowardly, that their threatening would serve to hinder them from preaching.

18. And they called them, and commanded them not to speak at all, nor teach in the name of Jesus. 19. But Peter and John answered and said unto them, Whether it be right in the sight of God, to hearken unto you more than unto God, judge ye.

18, 19. The hardened Wretches called them, and silenced them by their pretended Authority, commanding them not to speak at all, nor teach in the name of Jesus: But Peter and John answered, The miracle proved God's attestation, and we know it by his spirit, and dare you say that you are greater than God, and that we should obey you against his command? None but an Atheist dare affirm it.

20. But may not Christian Rulers and Prelates silence Ministers, though the Jewish might not ? As: Either of them may silence Blasphemy and Wickedness: But sure Christian Rulers have no more power to fight against Christ and his Gospel, and silence his Ministers than Heathens, but much more obligation to encourage them.

21. The common People were not so blinded, hardened, & malignant, as the Chief Priests and Rulers, but glorified God for that which did but stir up the Rulers' malice. 2. God made the People a restraint to the Priests and Rulers' rage.

22. For the man was above forty years old, on whom this miracle of healing was shewed.

23. And being let go, they went to their own company, and reported all that the chief priests and elders had said unto them. 24. And
when they heard that, they lift up their voice to God with one accord, and said,

23. Note, Not that all are supposed with conjunct voice to say just the same words, but either some of them one part and some another; or some said the words with others' acclamations and consent: or they all spake by turns to the same sense.

Lord, thou art God which hast made heaven and earth, and the sea, and all that in them is: 25. Who by the mouth of thy servant David hast said, Why did the heathen rage, and the people imagine vain things? 26. The kings of the earth stood up, and the rulers were gathered together against the Lord, and against his Christ.

24. God prophesied by David, that the Rulers of the Nations, Gentiles and Jews, should in vain join their Counsels and Powers against Christ, his Gospel and his Kingdom.

27. For of a truth against thy holy child Jesus, whom thou hast anointed, both Herod and Pontius Pilate, with the Gentiles, and the people of Israel were gathered together. 28. For to do whatsoever thy hand and thy counsel determined before to be done.

27. All combined by their own wickedness to do that which God hath fore-determined: God foreordained that Christ should be a Sacrifice for sin; but the wicked determinations of their Wills that did it, God only foreknew and permitted, but did not cause.

29. And now, Lord, behold their threatenings; and grant unto thy servants, that with all boldness they may speak thy word. 30. By Stretching forth thine hand to heal: and that signs and wonders may be done by the name of thy holy child Jesus.

29, 30. Note, 1. That the threatenings of malignant People are a fit opportunity for God's Grace to his Servants. 2. Boldness to Preach when unjustly forbidden, is a great effect of God's grace to his Servants.

31. And when they had prayed, the place was shaken where they were assembled together; and they were all filled with the Holy Ghost, and they spake the word of God with boldness.

31. The Spirit caused them thus to pray, and more of the Spirit was poured on them, in answer to those Prayers: giving the boldness which they asked, and that with a signal shaking of the place.

32. And the multitude of them that believed, were of one heart, and of one soul; neither said any of them, so that of the things which he possessed, was his own, but they had all things common.

32. They were all of one mind, and will, and practice, united in fervent Love, which made all common to them.

Note. It was not a commonness by leveling Titles, but by voluntary fervent Love.

2. And the Spirit did this in the beginning to give the world an example what true Christianity and the Spirit's Operation is, even such fervent love to each other for Christ's sake, as destroyeth all sinful selfishness, and maketh others interest to be to us as our own, and to unite us in one Body.

33. And with great power gave the apostles witness of the resurrection of the Lord Jesus: and great grace was upon them all.

33. And with evident Miracles and wonderful Gifts of the Spirit, did the Apostles perform their Testimony of Christ's Resurrection: And the favour of God and Man was upon them, or great charity prevailed among them.

34. Neither was there any among them that lacked: for as many as were possessed of lands, or houses, sold them, and brought the prices of the things that were sold, 35. And laid them down at the apostles' feet; and distribution was made unto every man according as he had need.
Ch. 5. Ananias and Sapphira.

34. This was neither to be the constant practice, nor yet was it an unwise excess of zeal. But it was a present effect of the Spirit, to show what a degree of Love all Christians should desire, and what self-denial and contempt of Riches it should cause.

36. And Joses, who by the apostles was surnamed Barnabas (which is, being interpreted, The son of consolation) a Levite, and of the country of Cyprus. 37. Having land, sold it, and brought the money, and laid it at the apostles feet.

36, 37. To signify his renouncing the World and selfishnes in Love to Christ and his Church, he himself being after to go abroad the World to preach the Gospel.

CHAP. V.

1. But a certain man named Ananias, with Sapphira his wife, sold a possession, 2. And kept back part of the price, his wife also being privy to it, and brought a certain part, and laid it at the apostles feet. 3. But Peter said, Ananias, why hast Satan filled thine heart to lie to the Holy Ghost, and to keep back part of the price of the land?

1. They pretended to give the whole price, but brought a part and laid it was all, Why hast thou let Satan put so great a sin into thy heart, as to think to deceive the Holy Ghost in us Apostles, as if he knew not when thou liest.

2. In Hypocrite, pretending to give more than he did. 2. In the remnant of a worldly distrustfull mind, that could not trust God with all. 3. In blasphemy against the Holy Ghost implied, as if he knew not the heart. 4. In referring what he pretended to devote, which was a kind of Sacrilege.

4. While it was sold, was it not thine own? and after it was sold, was it not in thine own power? why hast thou conceived this thing in thine heart? thou hast not lied unto men, but unto God.

4. While it was sold, it was thy own and in thy power, and so was the money when thou hadst sold it, why did thy heart conceive so great a sin, as to play the Hypocrite and Lie? Didst thou not know that it was to God who knew thy heart?

5. And Ananias hearing these words, fell down and gave up the ghost; and great fear came on all them that heard these things.

5. Note, This was by part of the Apothecary, Power, to [retain sin] or punish it, in the time and manner that the Spirit in them did choose: which made Believers see that Christ hath punishments and is to be feared, when mercy and holy things are abused.

6. And the young men arose, wound him up, and carried him out, and buried him. 7. And it was about the space of three hours after, when his wife, not knowing what was done, came in. 8. And Peter answered unto her, Tell me whether ye sold the land for so much. And she said, Yea, for so much.

9. Then Peter laid unto her, How is it that ye have agreed together to tempt the Spirit of the Lord? behold, the feet of them which have buried thy husband are at the door, and shall carry thee out.

10. Then fell she down straightway at his feet, and yielded up the ghost: and the young men came in and found her dead, and carrying her forth, buried her by her husband.

6. Note, This was to confirm the honour of the Holy Ghost in the Apostles, and the certainty of their Testimony Sealed by him, and to do that which Magistrates, by the Sword, afterwards were to do. As the Prophetic Theocracy under Moses and Jethro, differed from the Monarchy of Saul; so more did the Apostles, punishing Men by the power of the Holy Ghost, from Christian Magistrates who came after.

11. And great fear came upon all the church, and upon as many as heard these things.
Ch. 5. Miracles wrought

11. Note, Under the most joyful tidings of Love, Mercy and Salvation, God saith that some fear is needful.

12. And by the hands of the apostles were many signs and wonders wrought among the people; (and they were all with one accord in Solomon's porch.

12. A large Porch into the Temple, was the place of their unanimous assembling.

13. And of the rest durst no man join him self to them; but the people magnified them.

13. Note, Though the Gospel invince all, it fattereth none; but will tell Hypocrites and Liars of their danger, to drive them from entering deceitfully into the Church. As there is more hope in the Church to the sincere, there is more danger there to Hypocrites, than to those without.

14. And believers were the more added to the Lord, multitudes both of men and women.

14. Yet these judgments frightening away Hypocrites, hindered not the increase of the Church; but the powerful works of the Holy Ghost, external and internal, converted multitudes of both Sexes.

15. Infomuch that they brought forth the sick into the streets, and laid them on beds and couches, that at the least, the shadow of Peter passing by, might overshadow some of them.

15. As Nature taught them to desire the healing of their bodies, experience taught them to expect miracles from the Apostles, and that the very shadow of Peter should tend to heal them.

16. There came also a multitude out of the cities round about unto Jerusalem, bringing sick folks, and them which were vexed with unclean spirits; and they were healed every one.

16. Note, Reader, That all this was done as well for us at this day, as for them then: All our hopes, comforts and holiness dependeth on our belief of the promises of the life to come by Christ: The things are unseen and much above us: Had we not God's own Testimony from Heaven, by many un-
Ch. 5. The Apostles seized. The

that with all safety, and the keepers standing without before the doors: but when we had opened, we found no man within.

22. It was not long of the Keepers that they got out.

24. Now when the high priest, and the captain of the temple, and the chief priests heard these things, they doubted of them whereunto this would grow.

24. Note. They saw that God overcame their malice, and that the Gospel would not be so easily suppress as they imagined.

25. Then came one and told them, saying, Behold, the men whom ye put in prison, are standing in the temple, and teaching the people. 26. Then went the captain with the officers, and brought them without violence: (for they feared the people, lest they should have been stoned).

26. Note. It's strange that they accused not the People of Sedition, or Rebellion, or a Riot, and the Apostles of heading it.

27. And when they had brought them, they set them before the council: and the high priest asked them, 28. Saying, Did not we straitly command you, that ye should not teach in this name? and behold, ye have filled Jerusalem with your doctrine, and intend to bring this man's blood upon us.

27. Note. O the blindness and madness of proud Worms! What are your commands against God? Did not God command you not to murder, and them to Preach his word? Did not you bring his blood upon your selves?

29. Then Peter and the other apostles answered and said, We ought to obey God rather than men.

29. Note. This none of them durst deny: but it is conscience and obedience to God that Diabolists fight against.

30. The God of our fathers raised up Jesus, whom ye slew and hanged on a tree. 31. Him hath God exalted with his right hand, to be a Prince and a Saviour, for to give repentance to Israel, and forgiveness of sins.

30. That God of our Fathers, whom you profest to obey, hath raised up Jesus, whom ye crucified, from death, and hath exalted him by and at his right hand, to be the Lord of all, and the Saviour of his People, to give them converting grace, and repentance, and forgiveness of sins.

32. And we are his witnesses of these things; and so is also the holy Ghost, whom God hath given to them that obey him. 33. When they heard that, they were cut to the heart, and took counsel to slay them.

32. And of his Resurrection and Ascension we are entreated Witnesses, and must not silence our Testimony, and of his present Power and Glory, this gift of the Spirit is a full proof, whose effects you see your selves, and which God giveth to them that obey his Gospel.

34. Then stood there up one in the council, a Pharisee, named Gamaliel, a doctor of law, had in reputation among all the people, and commanded to put the apostles forth a little space, 35. And said unto them, Ye men of Israel, take heed to your selves, what ye intend to do as touching these men. 36. For before these days rose up theudas, boasting himself to be some body, to whom a number of men, about four hundred, joined themselves: who was slain, and all as many as obeyed him, were scattered and brought to nought.

34. Note. This Pharisee is not so mad as the Beatitude Sadducees: Who this Theudas was, we have no other notice, but by the words of Gamaliel.

37. After this man rose up Judas of Galilee, in the days of the taxing, and drew away much people after
after him: he also perished, and all, even as many as obeyed him, were dispersed.

37. This Judas pretended to be a Captain of the People against submitting to the Roman taxing; which he called servitude andufferable.

38. And now I say unto you, Refrain from these men, and let them alone: for if this counsel, or this work be of men, it will come to nought:

38. By God's Providence without your violence.

39. But if it be of God, yecannot overthrow it; left haply ye be found even to fight against God.

39. You will overthrow yourselves and sin it, if it be of God: 'tis madness to fight against him.

Note, O that the Malignant World would but examine which cause God is for.

40. And to him they agreed: and when they had called the apostles, and beaten them, they commanded that they should not speak in the name of Jesus, and let them go. 41. And they departed from the presence of the council, rejoicing that they were counted worthy to suffer shame for his name.

Note, Caecile's stripes were the Mercy of these Men. The Holy Ghost did not work Miracles to revenge these injuries to the Apostles: But taught them to rejoice in this reproach for Preaching Christ, as their great honour.

42. And daily in the temple, and in every house, they ceased not to teach and preach Jesus Christ.

42. And no commands, threats or cruelties made them cease Preaching Christ publicly, and from house to house.

CHAP. VI.

1. And in those days, when the number of the disciples was multiplied, there arose a murmuring of the Grecians against the Hebrews, because their widows were neglected in the daily ministration.

1. Note, Those Jews that understood the Greek Tongue, and used the Greek Translation of the Scripture, were called Grecians: who were come at Jerusalem, most at Alexandria, and some scattered abroad the World. 2. Even in the greatest Exemplification of Christian Love, Concord and Self-denial, the interest of the body, and its provisions, began a murmuring among this chosen Flock that had all things common. And can we now expect to live without murmuring at each other upon cross interest and bodily wants. The Suffering Party will think themselves injured, and will complain.

2. Then the twelve called the multitude of the disciples unto them, and said, It is not reason that we should leave the word of God, and serve tables.

2. We must prefer the greater before the less, the Preaching of God's word before the charge of distributing to Love Feasts and to the Poor; and we are not sufficient for both.

3. Wherefore brethren, look ye out among you seven men of honest report, full of the holy Ghost and wisdom, whom we may appoint over this business.

3. Note, 1. This is the first call of Officers mediately by Men: yet the Holy Ghost in the Apostles instituted the office; but yet they give a reason for it. A Divine Institution, and reason from necessity and convenience, well agree. 2. The Apostles fix the number. 3. The Congregation must choose the Perasons. 4. God, by his Spirit in the Apostles, limited them to certain qualifications: 1. Good Report: 2. Full of the Holy Ghost: 3. And of Wisdom. The Chosen Perasons must be appointed or authorized and directed by the Apostles, Incapable Matter make both Election and Mens Ordination void. But yet the Electors shall be Trusted whom to Elect, and the Ordainers whom to Ordain; And every Error is not a nullity, where there are the essential qualifications.

4. But we will give ourselves con-
continually to prayer, and to the ministry of the word.

4. Where ever God will bless his Church with Bishops indeed, this will be their life and their description.

5. And the saying pleased the whole multitude: and they chose Stephen, a man full of faith, and of the holy Ghost, and Philip, and Prochorus, and Nicanor, and Timon, and Parthenas, and Nicolas, a proselyte of Antioch.

6. The Reason of the motion, the Authority of the Apostles, and the Spirit of God, made them all unanimously content.

7. Whom they set before the apostles: and when they had prayed, they laid their hands on them.

6. Prayer to God to accept and bless them, and the Authorizing them by the sign of Imposition of hands, was the Apostles way of Ordination (supposing them instructed for their Office.)

7. And the word of God increased; and the number of the disciples multiplied in Jerusalem greatly; and a great company of the priests were obedient to the faith.

7. And the success of the Word increased, and the number of the Disciples in Jerusalem grew very great, and a great Company of the Priests (or a great Company, and of the Priests some,) were obedient to the Doctrine of Christ by believing.

8. And Stephen full of faith and power, did great wonders and miracles among the people.

9. Stephen having a great measure of the Spirit, was full of Faith and Power, and wrought great Miracles.

8. Then there arose certain of the synagogue, which is called the Synagogue of the Libertines, and Cyrenians, and Alexandrians, and of them of Cilicia, and of Asia, disputing with Stephen.

9. Jerusalem being the place where the scattered Jews of all Nations used at certain times to worship, no wonder if several Countries had their several Synagogues. Libertines are by most supposed to be Jews made free: Though some derive the Name from

a Country, thinking one Letter is changed.

10. And they were not able to reft the wildom and the spirit by which he spake. 11. Then they suborned men which said, We have heard him speak blasphemous words against Moses, and against God.

10. Note, On such terms we dispute with Malignant men. When they cannot reft the Truth they turn Diabolists, and suborn Men to swear to false Accusations: Malignity, Blood-thirsty Cruelty, and Lying are the three Essentals of a Diabolist. 2. It is next to a Miracle of Providence, that no greater numbers of Religious Persons have been murdered in the World by the way of Perjury, and presence of Law, when so many thousands hate them, who make no Conscience of false Oaths.

12. And they stirred up the people, and the elders, and the scribes, and came upon him, and caught him, and brought him to the council.

11. Note, When Informers and Perjured Witnesses and Council or Judges were all of a Mind, false Malignants, blood thirsty men, it was safe to foreknow the Sentence.

13. And set up false witnesses, which said, This man ceaseth not to speak blasphemous words against this holy place, and the law. 14. For we have heard him say, that this Jesus of Nazareth shall destroy this place, and shall change the customs which Moses delivered us.

13, 14. Note, It is very likely that they heard Stephen say some words of Christ's Abrogation of the Law, from which the Perjured gathered their Testimony, and putting their own feme on his words made Blasphemy of them, and did not think they were Perjured: And what Man is there that Judges, Jury and Witnesses may not Condemn, if they will but put their own feme on their words: Christ so suffered, before Stephen: And it is no wonder or dishonour to be condemned as the greatest Malefactors by such Men: Therefore judge of History accordingly, where wicked Men are the Accusers and Judges.

15. And
15. And all that sat in the council, looking steadfastly on him, saw his face as if it had been the face of an angel.

16. With a splendor which might amaze them, but did not change them. So much was Divus in Hell deceived that one from the Dead would convert his sensual brethren, when it is like that if Lazarus had come to them as he prayed, they would have put him to death again: For so they conspired to do by another Lazarus whom Christ raised. But where are these Judges and Gentlemen now?

Ch. VII.

1. Then said the high priest, Are these things so?

2. The Arch-Priest is the Arch-malignant, and, with seeming Gravity doth but enquire after Sin.

3. And he said, Men, brethren, and fathers, hearken, The God of glory appeared unto our father Abraham, when he was in Mesopotamia, before he dwelt in Charran. And said unto him, Get thee out of thy country, and from thy kindred, and come into the land which I shall shew thee.

4. Obey me in forsaking thy Idolatrous Country and go to another, which I will direct thee to.

5. Then came he out of the land of the Chaldeans, and dwelt in Charran: and from thence, when his father was dead, he removed him into this land wherein ye now dwell. And he gave him none inheritance in it, no not so much as to let his foot on: yet he promised that he would give it to him for a possession and to his seed after him, when as yet he had no child. And God spake on this wife, that his feed should sojourn in a strange land, and that they should bring them into bondage, and intreat them evil four hundred years. And the nation to whom they shall be in bondage, will I judge, said God: and after that shall they come forth, and serve me in this place.

8. And he gave him the covenant of circumcision; and so Abram begat Isaac, and circumcised him the eighth day: and Isaac begat Jacob, and Jacob begat the twelve patriarchs. And the patriarchs moved with envy, sold Joseph into Egypt: but God was with him. And delivered him out of all his afflictions, and gave him favour and wisdom in the sight of Pharaoh king of Egypt: and he made him governor over Egypt, and all his house.

11. Now there came a death over all the land of Egypt and Canaan, and great affliction; and our fathers found no suflenance. But when Jacob heard that there was corn in Egypt, he sent out our fathers first. And at the second time Joseph was made known to his brethren; and Joseph's kindred was made known unto Pharaoh. Then sent Joseph, and called his father Jacob, and all his kindred, three-score and fifteen souls. So Jacob went down into Egypt, and dwelt, he and our fathers.

16. And were carried over into Sychem,
The History of Israel

Ch. 7.

Sycam, and laid in the sepulchre that Abraham bought for a sum of money of the sons of Emorr the father of Sycarn.

16. Some difference from the Hebrew History here raises difficulty: The truth seems to be: Jacob was carried and buried in the Field of Machpeelah bought by Abraham of Ephron the son of Zorah, or of the Sons of壶s, Gen. 23, 8, and 49, 32. But Joseph's bones were carried from Egypt to Sycam, Josh. 24, 31, 32, and buried in the Field bought by Jacob of the Sons of Hamor, and in which place his brethren were buried is uncertain.

17. But when the time of the promise drew nigh, which God had sworn to Abraham, the people grew and multiplied in Egypt, 18. Till another king arose, which knew not Joseph. 19. The same dealt subtly with our kindred, and evil intended our fathers, so that they cast out their young children, to the end they might not live.

20. In which time Moses was born, and was exceeding fair, and nourished up in his father's house three months: 21. And when he was cast out, Pharaoh's daughter took him up, and nourished him for her own son.

22. And Moses was learned in all the wisdom of the Egyptians, and was mighty in words and deeds.

23. And when he was full forty years old, it came into his heart to visit his brethren the children of Israel. 24. And seeing one of them suffer wrong, he defended him, and avenged him: that was oppressed, and smote the Egyptian:

25. For he supposed his brethren would have understood, how that God by his hand would deliver them; but they understood not.

26. And the next day he showed himself unto them as they were journeying, and would have set them at one again, saying, Sirs, ye are brethren; why do ye wrong one to another?

27. But he that did his neighbour wrong, thrust him away, saying, Who made thee a ruler and a judge over us? 28. Wilt thou kill me as thou didst the Egyptian yesterday?

29. Then fled Moses at this saying, and was a stranger in the land of Madian, where he begat two sons.

30. And when forty years were expired, there appeared to him in the wilderness of Mount Sinai, an angel of the Lord in a flame of fire in a bush.
36. God wrought many Miracles by him for their deliverance, who had rejected him, (As he hath done by Jesus for your deliverance.)

37. This is that Moses which said unto the children of Israel, A prophet shall the Lord your God raise up unto you of your brethren, like unto me; him shall ye hear.

37. This Moses of whom you boast, thus prophesied of Christ, a Prophet, &c.

38. This is he that was in the church in the wilderness, with the angel which spake to him in the mount Sinai, and with our fathers; who received the lively oracles to give unto us. 39. To whom our fathers would not obey, but thrust him from them, and in their hearts turned back again into Egypt, 40. Saying unto Aaron, Make us gods to go before us: for as for this Moses, which brought us out of the land of Egypt, we wot not what it become of him.

38. This is he whose name you honour, who was in the Congregation in the Wilder-ness, who received the Oracles of God by voice, which he gave you, and is the way of life (in subordination to Faith in his promises,) whom ye yet your Ancestors would not obey, but rebelled against him, and refused him, and unthankfully would have returned to that Egyptian Bondage, from which by so many Miracles they were delivered; ye rebelled against God and turned Idolators, and made Aaron make them feigned God's to go before them.

41. And they made a calf in those days, and offered sacrifice unto the idol, and rejoiced in the works of their own hands.

41. So foolish were they as to honour that as God which they had made themsevess.

42. Then God turned, and gave them up to worship the host of heaven; as it is written in the book of the prophets, O ye house of Israel, have ye offered to mo-
Ch. 7. Moses's witness


Phase of forty years in the wilderness? 43. Yea, ye took up the tabernacle of Moloch, and the star of your god Remphan, figures which ye made to worship them: and I will carry you away beyond Babylon.

42. That the Text Amos 5. meaneth by Moloch and Remphan, a Deified Egyptian King, and Saturn, See Dr. Hammond's Answer, and other conjectures in Beza, &c. whether this last Idolatry was included in the Golden Calf, or the Text only meant they fell to it after Japhna's days, is uncertain: Though the Hebrews say beyond Damascus, and Luke's Greek Beyond Babylon, the sense is the same. And Luke writing in the Greek, it's like used not the same Word as Stephen in Chaldee.

44. Our fathers had the tabernacle of witness in the wilderness, as he had appointed, speaking unto Moses, that he should make it according to the fashion that he had seen.

43. Our Ancestors had the Tabernacle of the Testimony, where was the Ark of God that had the Tables of the Law, and where God spake by signs to dignify his presence, and give his Oracles: This Moses was to make according to the pattern which God shewed him.

45. Which also our fathers that came after, brought in with Jesus into the possession of the Gentiles, whom God drave out before the face of our fathers, unto the days of David.

44. This Tabernacle, our Fathers after brought into Canaan with Japhna, and it continued till David's time.

46. Who found favour before God, and desired to find a tabernacle for the God of Jacob. 47. But Solomon built him an house.

46. Who being beloved of God, desired to have built him a Temple. But God chose Solomon to build it.

48. Howbeit the most High dwelleth not in temples made with hands; as faith the prophet, 49.

Heaven is my throne, and earth is my footstool: what house will ye build me? faith the Lord: or what is the place of my rest? 50. Hath not my hand made all these things?

48, 49, 50. Temples are for God's Worship, and not for God's confinement or necessity abode: Heaven is the place of his glory, and Earth of his lower blessings, and all the world of his presence: He made all things, and needed not your Temple, but may for sake it for your Sin.

51. Ye stiff-necked, and uncircumcised in heart and ears, ye do always resist the Holy Ghost: as your fathers did, so do ye.

51. Ye are an unrighteous people, whose hearts are unreformed and uncircumcised, and your ears stopped against the Truth, whilst you glory in your Circumcision: you have in all ages resisted the Spirit and Word of God, and while you disown your forefathers actions, you are like them and do the same.

52. Which of the prophets have not your fathers persecuted? and they have slain them which shewed before of the coming of the just one, of whom ye have been now the betrayers and murderers: 53. Who have received the law by the disposition of angels, and have not kept it.

52, 53. You boast of the Law and the Prophets, and the expected Messiah: But which of the Prophets did not your Fathers persecute? And those that Prophecied of the Messiah, they murdered: And so have you done now by the Messiah himself, and outdone all your Ancestors in wickedness; and the Law which you boast of delivered by Angels, you have neither understood nor kept.

54. When they heard these things, they were cut to the heart, and they gnashed on him with their teeth.

54. At these words their very hearts were enraged against him, &c. Reproof, which convinced and humbled them whom God converteth, enrageth proud,
proud, obdurate sinners, and turneth them to persecute the Reprovers: which presageth their destruction.

55. But he being full of the holy Ghost, looked up steadfastly into heaven, and saw the glory of God, and Jesus standing on the right hand of God, 56. And said, Behold, I see the heavens opened, and the Son of man standing on the right hand of God.

55, 56. God gave him so extraordinary a measure of the Spirit, as when he looked steadfastly toward Heaven he had an appearance of the Glory of God and Christ standing at his right hand, which in this Rapture he declared to them all.

Note. Christ saw it meet by such a glorious Miraculous fight to encourage and honour his first dying Martyr. O who would fear suffering for Christ! Martyrs may expect the Spirit's greatest help, and afterward the most glorious Crown.

57. Then they cried out with a loud voice, and stopped their ears, and ran upon him with one accord, 58. And cast him out of the city, and stoned him: and the witnesses laid down their clothes at a young man's feet, whose name was Saul.

57, 58. Note. Holiness and Miracles do but increase their rage: They will run when malignity and the Devil infuriates: Sinners are never so mad as against Christ and Mercy and their own Salvation. They that were the Accusers for Blasphemy, were by the Law to cast the first stone to the Executioners.

59. And they stoned Stephen, calling upon God, and saying, Lord Jesus, receive my spirit.

59. Note. He that gave up himself to Christ in life and death, might comfortably expect to be received. 2. The Spirit liveth after the body's death: And Christ receiveth it to himself. This is part of Christ's Office now in Heaven. See my Printed Sermon on this Text.

60. And he kneeled down, and cried with a loud voice, Lord, lay not this sin to their charge. And when he had said this, he fell asleep.

60. He died praying, and that for his Persecutors, as Christ did: And its like the Convection of Saul was an Answer to this Prayer. Que?. How far may we pray in Faith for wicked men, or others, and expect the thing prayed for? Answ. For that which is absolomely promised, we may pray accordingly in assurance: For that which supposeth a qualifying condition in the receiver, we must believe that they shall have it if they are so qualified: For that which hath no promise to it, but is merely at God's unrevealed Will, we must pray with submission to that Will, and accordingly take the event for uncertain.

CHAP. VIII.

1. And Saul was consenting unto his death. And at that time there was a great persecution against the church which was at Jerusalem; and they were all scattered abroad throughout the regions of Judea and Samaria, except the apostles.

1. Note. Saul's Persecution must be recorded before his Conversion. 2. The pure Church was not free from the malice of wicked men. 3. God used Malignant Persecutions for the spreading abroad his word.

2. And devout men carried Stephen to his burial, and made great lamentation over him.

2. They made a Funeral for Stephen with solemn mourning.

3. As for Saul, he made havoc of the church, entering into every house, and haling men and women, committed them to prison.

3. But haling people to Prison out of their houses, Saul visited the gathered Church.

4. Therefore they that were scattered abroad, went everywhere preaching the word.

4. Note. It was a tolerable hurt to their bodies, which brought good to others: Souls, and so enlarged the Church by scattering it, as seed is scattered that is sown. 2. All Christians may and must publish the Gospel where they come, if there be need, though only
5. Then Philip went down to the city of Samaria, and preached Christ unto them.
6. And the people with one accord gave heed unto those things which Philip spake, hearing and seeing the miracles which he did. 7. For unclean spirits, crying with loud voice, came out of many that were possessed with them: and many taken with palsy, and that were lame, were healed. 8. And there was great joy in that city.

6. The Samaritans received the Gospel with great joy, convinced by Miracles, and pleased by many Cures.

Note. The Gospel where ever it cometh be saule of great joy.

9. But there was a certain man called Simon, which before time in the same city used sorcery, and bewitch the people of Samaria, giving out that himself was some great one.
10. To whom they all gave heed, from the least to the greatest, saying, This man is the great power of God. 11. And to him they had regard, because that of long time he had bewitched them with sorceries.

9. One Simon had long been reputed a thing some great man, even the great power of God, as he boasted of himself, because by Sorcery he had long bewitched, and done some strange things among them; and they all admired and regarded him.

Note. Deceivers have usually many Followers.

12. But when they believed Philip, preaching the things concerning the kingdom of God, and the name of Jesus Christ, they were baptized both men and women.

13. Then Simon himself believed also: and when he was baptized, he continued with Philip, and wondered, beholding the miracles and signs which were done.

13. Simon saw the reality of Philip's Miracles, being conscious of the fallacy of his own, and he believed that Jesus was the Christ, and was baptized into his Name, and stayed with Philip admiring his works.

Note. 1. Simon had a Superficial opinionative belief, that was not clear and founded, nor effectual to renew his Soul. 2. The Ministers of Christ baptized not as Hearers, as knowing Men's sincerity, but as taking their Profession for their Title to Baptism.

14. Now when the apostles which were at Jerusalem, heard that Samaria had received the word of God, they sent unto them Peter and John.

14. Note. As Peter or John were no Rulers of the rest of the Apostles, so the rest sent not them as Rulers of them by Vote, but by brotherly request and consent.

15. Who when they were come down, prayed for them that they might receive the holy Ghost.
16. (For as yet he was fallen upon none of them: only they were baptized in the name of the Lord Jesus). 17. Then laid they their hands on them, and they received the holy Ghost.

15. Note. 1. It was at first the eminent Privilege of the Apostles, that the Holy Ghost should be given by their Ministry. 2. Imposition of hands being an usual act of Authoritative benediction, was used as the sign herein. 3. Yet Prayer to God must first prevail for his grant thereof, before the Sign was used. 4. This gift of the Holy Ghost was not that which is Regenerating and necessary to Pardon and Salvation (for all these Baptized Persons must be baptized till to long after unpardoned,) but it was that extraordinary gift which was for their first healing and propagating of the Gospel, of which others could be discerning Judges, (such as Languages, Prophecy, Healing, Miracles, &c.)
which they were not, of sincere inward holiness.

18. And when Simon saw that through laying on of the apostles hands, the holy Ghost was given, he offered them money, 19. Saying, Give me also this power, that on whomsoever I lay hands, he may receive the holy Ghost.

18. Note 1. It was such a thing as Simon could see in the present effects: 2. He desired this power in pride for his own advancement, and not for Christ and souls. 3. He overvalued money, and blasphemyfully viliited God, as if he set his gifts to fade.

20. But Peter said unto him, Thy money perish with thee, because thou hast thought that the gift of God may be purchased with money.

20. Unless thou repent thou shalt perish with thy money, for this blasphemous thought of God.

21. Thou hast neither part nor lot in this matter: for thy heart is not right in the sight of God.

21. Though thou art baptized, thou art no true Christian, nor hast any part in the grace and spirit of Christ: for thy heart is unsound and false in the sight of God.

22. But repent therefore of this thy wickedness, and pray God, if perhaps the thought of thine heart may be forgiven thee. 23. For I perceive that thou art in the gall of bitterness, and in the bond of iniquity.

22. Prefently repent therefore of that wicked heart and blasphemous thought, and pray to God for mercy and forgiveness, while it is possible to be obtained.

22. Quot. Is not the prayer of the Wicked abominable? Ans. Yes, the wicked prayer of the Wicked, which is to serve his wickedness: And his best prayers are not qualified for any certain grant: But if he truly repent, he is no longer wicked: And the prayer's a common repentance (like AbcMt the Ninevites) may tend towards better, and is better than none. Quot. Dost Peter mean that Simon's heart was false at his baptism, or that he received Grace and Pardon then, and lost it after by Apostasy? Ans. Simon's Sin made Peter newly perceive that his heart was false before, though his body was washed; but not that it was begun to be false by a sudden Apostasy. 1 Pet. 3. 21. 22. He was in the gall of bitterness and bond of iniquity, through the wickedness of his unsanctified heart, even when he was baptized. Yet all this Hypocritical and Wickedness was pardonable upon Repentance.

24. Then answered Simon, and said, Pray ye to the Lord for me, that none of these things which ye have spoken come upon me.

24. Note. His fight of their Miracles and fear of destruction humbled him so far as to beg their Prayers that the threatened judgments might not befall him. But whether the report of some old Writers be true, that after all this he pretended to be God the Father, and had a conflict with Peter, and flying in the air fell down and was destroyed by his Prayers, and had a statue at Rome inscribed, Simonis Deo Sancto, &c. of this many doubts, though others believe it. And if it was he that Paul, 2 Thes. 2. and John in the Revelation speak of, as the Man of Sin, &c. and the head of Heresies, so much desired by Paul, (as Doctor Hammond thinks) it is strange that neither Luke, nor Paul, nor Peter, nor Jude, nor James, nor John, who all inveigh against Heresies would never name him, when Nicolaitanes, Diotrephes, Thyatira, Philippi, &c. are named.

25. And they, when they had testified and preached the word of the Lord, returned to Jerusalem and preached the gospel in many villages of the Samaritans. 26. And the angel of the Lord spake unto Philip, saying, Arise, and go unto the South, unto the way that goeth down from Jerusalem unto Gaza, which is deserts. 27. And he arose and went: and behold, a man of Ethiopia, an eunuch of great authority under Candace queen of the Ethiopians, who had the charge of all her treasure, and was come to Jerusalem for to worship, 28. Wi
Ch. 8.  The Eunuch's Conversion.  Ch. 8.

Was returning, and sitting in his chariot read Elisha the prophet.

24, 26, &c. Note, God shewed a notable proof in this of his free Electing Grace.

2. Angels Minister towards the Conversion of God's Elect.

3. He that was a Proselyte before and came so far to worship, was better prepared for the Gospel than Heathens.

4. He that would lose no time, but was reading God's word on his journey in his Chariot, was in God's way for further Mercy, which was sent after him.

29. Then the Spirit said unto Philip, Go near, and join thy self to this chariot.

29. By inspiration. I Note, The Chariot was driven slowly that he might read and to Philip on foot could accompany it. God's Spirit directed his word to the Elect.

30. And Philip ran thither to him, and heard him read the prophet Elisha, and said, Understandest thou what thou readest? 31. And he said, How can I, except some man should guide me? and he desired Philip that he would come up, and fit with him.

30. Note, God directed him to the text: And God gave him the sense of his own ignorance and insufficiency to understand, and of his need of a Teacher. And God gave him an humble mind, to condense his ask a stranger on foot, to come set with him in his Chariot and teach him. All these were happy preparatives to Christianity, and further Grace.

32. The place of the scripture which he read, was this, He was led as a sheep to the slaughter, and like a lamb dumb before his hearer, so opened he not his mouth: 33. In his humiliation his judgment was taken away: and who shall declare his generation? for his life is taken from the earth.

32. He suffered innocently and patiently by unrighteous Cruel men; He humbled himself to undergo their unjust judgment: They wickedly triumph over him, as cutting off his life from the Earth.

34. And the eunuch answered Philip, and said, I pray thee, of whom speakest the prophet this of himself, or of some other man? 35. Then Philip opened his mouth, and began at the same scripture, and preached unto him Jesus. 36. And as they went on their way, they came unto a certain water: and the eunuch said, See, here is water; what doth hinder me to be baptized?

34, 35. Note, 1. He first craveth instruction and then Baptism, and is not forced to be baptized against his will.

37. And Philip said, If thou believest with all thine heart, thou mayest. And he answered and said, I believe that Jesus Christ is the Son of God.

37. If thou believe with a serious, well grounded, resolved Faith, thou mayst be baptized, and have the present remission of sin, as a Christian.

Note, The belief that Jesus is the Son of God induceth all the rest that is necessary to Salvation, that is, That there is a God whom we offended, to whom he reconciled us, and who gave him to us in love, and that his word is true, and that by the Word and by the Holy Ghost he sanctih and prepare us for Heaven.

38. And he commanded the chariot to stand still: and they went down both into the water, both Philip and the eunuch; and he baptized him. 39. And when they were come up out of the water, the Spirit of the Lord caught away Philip, that the eunuch saw him no more: and he went on his way rejoicing.

38, 39. The Angel or Power of God caught away Philip.

Note, A Converted man hath great cause of rejoicing. The Gospel proclaimed, much more heartily received, is matter of great joy.

2. The Tradition of Aqabaja (where is a great Empire of Christians) is that they received the Christian Faith by this man who was the Queen's Lord Treasurer. And some Learned men conjecture that it was rather
Ch. 9. Paul's


by Fremenitus and Ed:ius, and that it was
Aba:stsa that was by Historians micalled In-
dia: But if these first brought in Church Go-
vernment by a Bishop, the Eunuch might
bring Lay Christianity before.

40. But Philip was found at A-
zotus: and passing through, he
preached in all the cities, till he
came to Cælarca.

CHAP. IX.

1. And Saul yet breathing out
threatenings and slaughter
against the disciples of the Lord,
got unto the high priest. 2. And
delivered him letters to Damascu
to the synagogues, that if he found
any of this way, whether they were
men or women, he might bring
them bound unto Jerusalem.

2. Ignorant zeal made Saul let himself to
destroy the Christians, and he sough to the
High Priest for Power, and travelled towards
Damasus to do it, that he might find them
out and bring them in Bonds.

3. And as he journeyed, he came
near Damascus: and suddenly there
shined round about him a light from
heaven.

3. God the Father of Light; useth to
show himself to man by Light, external
and internal, and to do his Angels, when
the Devil is the Prince of Darkness.

4. And he fell to the earth,
and heard a voice saying unto him,
Saul, Saul, why persecutest thou
me?

4. The Power of God went forth with
that Light, and cast him to the ground, &c.

Note 1. Love and Mercy in Christ expotu-
late with a blinded furious Sinners, in order
to his Conversion. 2. But till Power had
cast him down, the Expotulation came not:
God can soon lay proud Persecutors on the
Earth, and tame them, and make them fear
and hear. 3. Whatever is done against Chi
nians for any thing that Christ command-
eth them, he taketh as done against him-
sel. If we are bound by the Law of Chi
nt to Preach, to Pray, to edict each other, to
live a Holy Life; and we be reviled, feasted,
called all manner of evil names, imprisoned,
fined, banished, or murdered, for this Christ
will judge the doers of it as doing it against
him.

5. And he said, Who art thou,
Lord? And the Lord said, I am
Jesus whom thou persecutest: it
is hard for thee to kick against the
pricks.

5. Note, Did wicked Persecutors know
Christ, it would restrain them from Per-
secution. (But the frubl Devil hath taught
Hypocrite Christians to prosecute him as by
his own Authority and Commission, and in
his own name, and for his Church, that is,
themselves.) 2. Christ's Servants should no
more doubt of their reasonable vindication
when persecuted for their duty, than if
Christ were personally persecuted in their
stead. 3. O how terrible will it at last prove
to Persecutors, that they have kick'd with
their bare Feet against the Pricks or Thorns
of God's displeasure? Who hath hardened
himself against him and hath professed?
Or who hath conquered the Almighty?

6. And he trembling and af-
niished, said, Lord, what wilt thou
have me to do? And the Lord said
unto him, Arise, and go into the
city, and it shall be told thee what
thou must do.

6. Note, God can make the fiercest Perfe
cower tremble: And then, O how they are
changed, ready to do any thing that God
will bid them, which before they Persecu-
ted! And if the change be true, this will
hold and come to practice. 2. O then who
need have proud Persecutors to be cast
down, and how great a mercy to them!
may prove!

7. And the men which journeyed
with him, fell speechless, hearing
a voice, but seeing no man.

7. Note, In Acts 22-9. it is said, (They the
were with him law the Light and were
fraid, but heard not the voice of him that
spake.) The sense of both is, they saw
the Light and heard the sound, which is like
was a Thunder or like it; but heard no
the voice or words of Christ, which in the
sound were uttered to him, nor saw any mir-
litude of Christ. Though we have only
Paul's witness of this, his after life of b:}

hour, suffering, and miracles prove it to be true.

8. And Saul arose from the earth; and when his eyes were opened, he saw no man; but they led him by the hand, and brought him into Damascus.

8. This stroke of blindness was to convince him of the blindness of his persecuting fury.

9. And he was three days without sight, and neither did eat nor drink.

9. Note, This was a some conformity to Christ's being three Days and Nights in the darksome Grave.

10. And there was a certain disciple at Damascus, named Ananias, and to him said the Lord in a vision, Ananias. And he said, Behold, I am here, Lord. 11. And the Lord said unto him, Arise, and go into the street which is called Straight, and enquire in the house of Judas, for one called Saul of Tarsus: for behold, he prayeth. 12. And how seen in a vision a man named Ananias, coming in, and putting his hand on him, that he might receive his sight.

10. Ananias was a Christian appointed by God to this work on Saul. 2. Praying was (next to resolved obedience and submission) the first fruit of Saul's conversion.

13. Then Ananias answered, Lord, I have heard by many of this man, how much evil he hath done to thy saints at Jerusalem: 14. And how he hath authority from the chief priests, to bind all that call on thy name.

13. Note, Ananias objecteth what he had heard of Saul, as rendering his conversion improbable.

15. But the Lord said unto him, Go thy way: for he is a chosen vessel unto me, to bear my name before the Gentiles, and kings, and the children of Israel. 16. For I

will shew him how great things he must suffer for my name's sake.

15. Obey me who know man, and my own decrees, and object not former things against me, I have chosen him, &c.

17. And Ananias went his way, and entred into the house; and putting his hands on him, said, Brother Saul, the Lord, (even Jesus that appeared unto thee in the way as thou camest) hath sent me, that thou mightest receive thy sight, and be filled with the Holy Ghost.

17. God hath made known to me, what he did to thee by the way, and hath sent me that thou mightest be restored to thy sight, and filled with the Holy Ghost, for gifts necessary to the Ministry.

18. And immediately there fell from his eyes as it had been scales; and he received sight forthwith, and arose, and was baptized.

18. He was Miraculously struck blind, and Miraculously cured, and then Baptized.

19. And when he had received meat, he was strengthened. Then was Saul certain days with the disciples which were at Damascus. 20. And straightway he preached Christ in the Synagogues, that he is the Son of God.

19, 20. Being strengthened with food, he conversed certain days with the Christians at Damascus whom he purposed to have per-secuted, and forthwith Preached Christ in the Synagogue to the Jews, that he is the Son of God, and consequently all his Gospel true. (And then going into Arabia returned to Damascus again before he went to Jerusalem.)

21. But all that heard him were amazed, and said, Is not this he that destroyed them which called on this name in Jerusalem, and came hither for that intent, that he might bring them bound unto the chief priests?

21. The sudden change from being a persecutor to a believer is striking.

brought him down to Cesarea, and sent him forth to Tarsum.

29, 30. He preached Christ boldly and
confuted the unbelieving Jews that used
the Greek Tongue. But they sought to kill
him, &c.

31. Then had the churches rest
throughout all Judea, and Galilee,
and Samaria, and were edified, and
walking in the fear of the Lord,
and in the comfort of the holy
Ghost, were multiplied.

31. Saul being Converted who was a
chief Persecutor, and being removed whom
they afterward most maligned, the Christian
Churches were quiet a while from Persecution,
and were edified in Knowledge, and
Holiness of Heart and Life, living in obe-
dience to God, and in the Comfort of the
Inward Grace, and outward Gifts and Miracles
of the Holy Ghost, by which they were
multiplied.

32. And it came to pass, as Peter
passed throughout all quarters,
he came down also to the saints
which dwelt at Lydda.

32. Note. He was no Christian who was
not a Saint, by Dedication to God and by
profession.

33. And there he found a certain
man named Eneas, which had kept his bed eight years, and was
sick of the palsy. 34. And Peter
said unto him, Eneas, Jesus Christ
maketh thee whole: arise, and
make thy bed. And he arose im-
mediately.

33. Note. The length and nature of the
Disease made the Miracle the more notable
and convincing.

35. And all that dwelt at Lydda,
and Saron, saw him, and turned to
the Lord.

35. The undeniable Miracle caused a gen-
eral Conviction and Conversion of them.

36. Now there was at Joppa a
certain disciple named Tabitha,
which by interpretation is called
Dorcas: this woman was full of
good works and alms-deeds which
she did. 37. And it came to pas:
Ch. 10. Tabitha raised to life. The Acts, Cornelius his Vision. Ch. 10.
in those days, that she was sick and died; whom when they had
washed, they laid her in an upper chamber. 38. And forasmuch as
Lydda was nigh to Joppa, and the disciples had heard that Peter was
there, they sent unto him two men, desiring him that he would not de-
lay to come to them.
36. A laborious charitable woman, being
dead, the Christians had faith to believe
that by Peter's Ministry she might be raised
to life, &c.
39. Then Peter arose, and went
with them. When he was come,
they brought him into the upper
chamber; and all the widows stood
by him weeping, and shewing the
clothes and garments which Dorcas
made while she was with them.
39. Note, It's like they were poor Wi-
downs, that shewed the fruit of her Labour
and Charity to them and others.
40. But Peter put them all forth,
and kneeld down and prayed, and
turning him to the body, said, Ta-
bitha, arise. And she opened her
eyes: and when she saw Peter, she
sat up. 41. And he gave her his
hand, and lifted her up; and when
he had called the saints and widows,
presented her alive.
40. Note, This was not a Miracle to
de without fervent Prayer: And it is like
Peter had assurance of raising her as an an-
swer to his Prayer, before he said, Arise.
42. And it was known through-
out all Joppa; and many believed
in the Lord.
42. Thus Miracles made Christians, and
fully sealed the Testimony of the Apo-
stles.
43. And it came to pass, that he
tarryed many days in Joppa with
one Simon a tanner.

C H A P. X.

1. Here was a certain man in
Cæsarea, called Cornelius,
a centurion of the band called the
Italian band.
7. And when the angel which spake unto Cornelius was departed, he called two of his household-servants, and a devout soudier of them that waited on him continually: and when he had declared all these things unto them, he sent them to Joppa.

8. **Note.** O what a Blessing to a Family is a good Master, that will keep such about him as he can trust, and also deserve his special Love! And what happy Society are such Families! This Man had even Godly Soldiers, who use to be the worst of Men.

9. **Note.** God doth no great things usually, but by Men of Prayer, at least accepteth no other.

10. And he became very hungry, and would have eaten: but while they made ready, he fell into a trance, and saw heaven opened, and a certain vessel descending unto him, as it had been a great sheet knit at the four corners, and let down to the earth: where-in were all manner of four-footed beasts of the earth, and wild beasts, and creeping things, and fowls of the air. And there came a voice to him, RISE, Peter; kill, and eat.

11. The clean and the unclean, noted the Jews and Gentiles, and also the abrogation of the Ceremonial Laws of Moses.

12. **But Peter said, Not so, Lord;** for I have never eaten any thing that is common or unclean. And the voice spake unto him again the second time, What God hath cleansed, that call not thou common.

13. This was done thrice: and the vessel was received up again into heaven.

14. **What means** or what Persons God hath cleansed, do not thou call polluted and unclean, to be rejected.

15. **Now while Peter doubted in himself what this vision which he had seen, should mean;** behold, the men which were sent from Cornelius, had made enquiry for Simon's house, and stood before the gate.

16. **And called, and asked whether Simon which was surnamed Peter, were lodged there.**

17. The fame God directed both the vision, and the Messages of Cornelius to concur.

18. **While Peter thought on the vision, the spirit said unto him, Behold, three men seek thee.** Arise therefore, and get thee down, and go with them, doubting nothing: for I have sent them.

19. **Note.** How this speaking of the Spirit was done and known, they only that have it can fully conceive.

20. **Then Peter went down to the men which were sent unto him from Cornelius; and said, Behold, I am he whom ye seek: what is the cause wherefore ye are come?**

21. **And they said, Cornelius the centurion, a just man, and one that feareth God, and of good report among all the nation of the Jews, was warned from God by an holy angel, to send for thee into his house, and to hear words of thee.**

22. **God commanded Cornelius to send for thee to hear thee.**

23. **Then called he them in, and lodged them.** And on the morrow Peter went away with them, and certain brethren from Joppa accompanied him.

24. **And the morrow after they entered into Cesarea:** and Cornelius waited for them, and had called together his kinsmen and near friends.

25. **And**
25. And as Peter was coming in, Cornelius met him, and fell down at his feet, and worshipped him.
26. But Peter took him up, saying, Stand up; I myself also am a man.
27. Note, It was not a Divine Worship that Cornelius gave him; but yet Peter would not accept of any that was so extraordinary, as was unmeet for an humble man to own.
28. And as he talked with him, he went in, and found many that were come together.
29. Note, As evil as those times were, such Conventicles were then allowed.
30. And Cornelius said, Four days ago I was fasting until this hour; and at the ninth hour I prayed in my house, and behold, a man stood before me in bright clothing.
31. And said, Cornelius, thy prayer is heard, and thine alms are had in remembrance in the sight of God.
32. Send therefore to Joppa, and call hither Simon whose surname is Peter; he is lodged in the house of one Simon a tanner, by the sea-side; who when he cometh, thou shalt speak unto thee.
33. Immediately therefore I sent to thee; and thou hast well done that thou art come. Now therefore are we all here present before God, to hear all things that are commanded thee of God.
34. Then Peter opened his mouth, and said, Of a truth I perceive that God is no respecter of persons:
35. But in every nation, he that feareth him, and worketh righteousness, is accepted with him.
36. The word which God sent unto the children of Israel, preaching peace by Jesus Christ (he is Lord of all),
37. That word (I say) ye know, which was published throughout all Judea, and began from Galilee, after the baptism which John preached;
38. How God anointed Jesus of Nazareth with the holy Ghost, and with power; who went about doing good, and healing all that were oppressed of the devil: for God was with him.
39. And we are witnesses of all things which he did both in the land of the Jews, and in Jerusalem;
Ch. 10. The Holy Ghost given. The Acts. Peter accused. Ch. 11.

whom they slew and hanged on a tree: 40. Him God raised up the third day, and shewed him openly,
41. Not to all the people, but unto witnesses, chosen before of God, even to us, who did eat and drink with him after he rose from the dead.

39. We are Witnesses of his Doctrine and Miracles, and of his Resurrection, and did eat and drink with him, being chosen to this Office.

42. And he commanded us to preach unto the people, and to terrify that it is he which was ordained of God to be the judge of quick and dead.

42. Judge of all that are alive at his coming, and that were dead before and are then raised.

43. To him give all the prophets witness, that through his name, whosoever believeth in him, shall receive remission of sins.

43. All the Prophets foretold, that through the Merits of this the Messiah, God by his Covenant of Grace would give Remission of sins to all that truly believe in him.

44. While Peter yet spake these words, the holy Ghost fell on all them which heard the word.

44. Even while Peter was thus speaking, the great miraculous gift of the Holy Ghost, came down on all that heard, which broke out in the effects before them all.

45. And they of the circumcision which believed, were astonished, as many as came with Peter, because that on the Gentiles also was poured out the gift of the holy Ghost. 46. For they heard them speak with tongues, and magnifie God. Then answered Peter,

45. This was astonishing News to the Jewish Christians, to hear Gentiles speak Tongues not learned, and to be rapt up in the praise of God.

47. Can any man forbid water, that these should not be baptized,

which have received the holy Ghost, as well as we?

47. Can any reason be given, why these, though Gentiles, should not be Baptized, when God hath thus signally owned them by his miraculous gift of the Spirit, as he hath done us?

48. And he commanded them to be baptized in the name of the Lord. Then prayed they him to tarry certain days.

48. He caused them to be entered by Baptism into the Christian Covenant and Church. And they prayed him to stay a while with them, to confirm and comfort them.

CHAP. XI.

1. And the apostles and brethren that were in Judea, heard that the Gentiles had also received the word of God. 2. And when Peter was come up to Jerusalem, they that were of the circumcision contended with him, 3. Saying, Thou wentest in to men uncircumcised, and didst eat with them.

1, 2. Note, 1. Even in the pure Apostolical first Church there were wrangling concerning Christians. 2. Even that which should have been their rejoicing was their matter of censorious contention. 3. These weak ones charged sin on the Apostle as if they had been wiser and holier than he. 4. It was the separating and self-honouring vice which caused this censorious contention.

4. But Peter rehearsed the matter from the beginning and expounded it by order unto them, saying, 5. I was in the city of Joppa, praying; and in a trance I saw a vision, A certain vessel descend, as it had been a great sheen, let down from heaven by four corners; and it came even to me. 6. Upon the which when I had fastned mine eyes, I considered, and saw four-footed beasts of the earth, and wild
wild beasts, and creeping things, and fowls of the air. 7. And I heard a voice saying unto me, Arise, Peter; slay, and eat. 8. But I said, Not so, Lord: for nothing common or unclean hath at any time entered into my mouth. 9. But the voice answered me again from heaven, What God hath cleansed, that call not thou common. 10. And this was done three times: and all were drawn up again into heaven. 11. And behold, immediately there were three men already come unto the house where I was, sent from Cæsarea unto me. 12. And the Spirit bade me go with them, nothing doubting. Moreover, these fix brethren accompanied me, and we entered into the man's house: 13. And he showed us how he had seen an angel in his house, which stood, and said unto him, Send men to Joppa, and call for Simon, whose surname is Peter. 14. Who shall tell thee words, whereby thou and all thy house shall be saved.

4. Of all this we have spoken on the former Chapter.

Note. 1. God who hath ordained the Ministry of Men, will use it for Men's Salvation. 2. How greatly should the Gospel and Men's Preaching be valued, when it is God's means of saving Men. 3. God used them to Covenant and save whole households together. And it seems Cornelius's house was prepared for it.

15. And as I began to speak, the holy Ghost fell on them, as on us at the beginning. 16. Then remembered I the word of the Lord, how that he said, John indeed baptized with water; but ye shall be baptized with the holy Ghost. 15, 16. I remembered Christ's promise of the Spirit, and saw that he owned them by fulfilling it.

17. Forasmuch then as God gave them the like gift as he did unto us, who believed on the Lord Jesus Christ, what was it that I could withhold God? 17. Seeing God so evidently owned them as he had done us, I was neither able nor willing to oppose God in his way of mercy to the Gentiles, which should rather be our joy.

18. When they heard these things, they held their peace, and glorified God, saying, Then hath God also to the Gentiles granted repentance unto life.

18. Note. 1. God's miraculous gift of the Spirit was an undeniable evidence of his approbation. 2. Censurous separating Contention came from hasty rash judging of things unknown, and before they heard what could be said. 3. When contentious censurous Christians come to hear and know what may be said, they may yield and change their minds.

19. Now they which were scattered abroad upon the persecution that arose about Stephen, travelled as far as Phenice, and Cyprus, and Antioch, preaching the word to none but unto the Jews only.

19. Note. The calling of the Gentiles was not yet well understood by them.

20. And some of them were men of Cyprus, and Cyrene, which when they were come to Antioch, spake unto the Grecians, preaching the Lord Jesus.

20. Note. Whether by the Grecians be meant the Jews that speak Greek, or Gentile Proselytes, is doubtful.

21. And the hand of the Lord was with them; and a great number believed, and turned unto the Lord.

21. God blessed their Ministry to the Conversion of a great number to Christianity.

22. Then tidings of these things came unto the ears of the church which was in Jerusalem: and they sent forth Barnabas, that he should go as far as Antioch.

72. To confirm them and carry on the work.

23. Who when he came, and had seen the grace of God, was glad, and exhorted them all, that with purpose of heart they would cleave unto the Lord. 24. For he was a good man, and full of the holy Ghost, and of faith: and much people was added unto the Lord.

25. He rejoiced to see what God's Grace had done.

26. Every Good man will be glad at the Conversion of Souls, and the increase of the Church, (as Diabolists are grieved at it, and fight against it.)

27. Young Converts need Counsel and Exhortation to be confirmed and persevere.

28. Confirmation consisteth in a habitual fixed Resolution, or full purpose to cleave to the Lord.

29. Then departed Barnabas to Tarsus, for to seek Saul. 26. And when he had found him, he brought him unto Antioch. And it came to pass, that a whole year they assembled themselves with the church, and taught much people; and the disciples were called Christians' first in Antioch.

25. Barnabas having found Saul, and drawn him to Antioch for more publick service, they two did, for a whole year, teach much People in the Church-Assembly (which it seems was then but one:) And the Disciples were then first called Christians, who before were called by Reprochers but Galileans and Nazarenes; (and since by Heretics, and by heretical reproaches, are called by a multitude of dividing and disgraceful names.)

27. And in these days came prophets from Jerusalem unto Antioch. 28. And there stood up one of them named Agabus, and signified by the Spirit, that there should be great dearth throughout all the world: which came to pass in the days of Claudius Cesar.

28. In divers Countries, especially in Judea, should be a dearth.

29. Then the disciples, every man according to his ability, determined to send relief unto the brethren which dwelt in Judea.

30. Which also they did, and sent it to the elders by the hands of Barnabas and Saul.

29. 30. The famine being most in Judea (the Country being dry and poor) and having frequent Famines, and many Converts, to show the power of Love, having sold their Possessions heretofore for common use, the Christians of other Countries, sent them relief, by Saul and Barnabas, to the Elders of the Church to be justly distributed, as there was need.

Note. Whether by Elders here be meant the unordained Senators of the People, or the Presbyters ordained, as such, or, as Dr. Hammond thought, Diacres Bishops, who yet had never Presbyter under them; and therefore were the single Pastors of Single Congregations; is sufficiently elsewhere considered.

C H A P. XII.

1. Now about that time Herod the king stretched forth his hands to vex certain of the church. 2. And he killed James the brother of John with the sword. 3. And because he saw it displeased the Jews, he proceeded further to take Peter also: (Then were the days of unleavened bread.)

1. Note. 1. Kings bear the Image of God's Dominion, and have their power from him, and not against him, and above all men are bound to love him to the utmost. Therefore such Persecutors as Herod being the greatest Tyrants against God, no doubt have answerable punishment in Hell.

2. James that was one who sought to be Chief, was the Chief or first of all the Apostles in Martyrdom, and drank of Christ's Cup, and was Baptized with his Baptism.

3. To please wicked Men, this King murdered Saints, and displease God.

4. The Holy days of unleavened Bread or Easter, are celebrated with the Murder of Christ first, and of James after. This is the Hypocrites' foolishness.

4. And
4. And when he had apprehended him, he put him in prison, and delivered him to four quaternions of soldiers, to keep him, intending after Easter to bring him forth to the people.

5. Peter therefore was kept in prison; but prayer was made without ceasing of the church unto God for him.

6. And when Herod would have brought him forth, the same night Peter was sleeping between two soldiers, bound with two chains; and the keepers before the door kept the prison.

7. And behold, the angel of the Lord came upon him, and a light shined in the prison; and he smote Peter on the side, and raised him up, saying, Arise up quickly. And his chains fell off from his hands.

8. And the angel said unto him, Gird thyself, and bind on thy sandals: And so he did. And he faith unto him, Cast thy garments about thee, and follow me. And he went out and followed him, and wist not that it was true which was done by the angel; but thought he saw a vision.

9. And when they were past the first and the second ward, they came unto the iron gate that leadeth unto the city, which opened to them of his own accord: and they went out, and passed on through one street, and forthwith the angel departed from him.

10. Note. I. Nothing can hold those that God will deliver. 2. Angels are mindless spirits for our good.

11. And when Peter was come to himself, he said, Now I know of a surety, that the Lord hath sent his angel, and hath delivered me out of the hand of Herod, and from all the expectation of the people of the Jews.

12. Note. We seldom understand what God is doing for us in the beginning of our deliverances, as we do at last.

13. And when he had considered the thing, he came to the house of Mary the mother of John, whose surname was, Mark, where many were gathered together, praying.

14. And when he had considered what God had done for him, he went to the house of Mark's mother, and there in the night was a godly conventicle of many Christians met to pray (no doubt in a special manner for his deliverance.) God sent him to them as an answer to their Prayers.

15. And as Peter knocked at the door of the gate, a damsel came to hearken, named Rhoda.

16. And when she knew Peter's voice, she opened not the gate for gladness, but ran in, and told how Peter stood before the gate.

17. This poor maid that showed so much love to Peter by her joy, hath her name recorded in the Scripture.

18. And they said unto her, Thou art mad. But she constantly affirmed that it was even so. Then said they, It is his angel.

19. Note. The word (Mad) doth but express that they thought her grossly mistaken, as Mad-folk is to be; only speaking it in such coarse phrase as men use to speak to servants.

Servants. 2. Whether by his Angel they meant an Angel of God representing him, or only a humane Messenger sent by him, is uncertain.

16. But Peter continued knocking: and when they had opened the door, and saw him, they were astonished. 17. But he beckoning unto them with the hand to hold their peace, declared unto them how the Lord had brought him out of the prison. And he said, Go shew these things unto James, and to the brethren. And he departed, and went into another place.

16. God having first sent him to them that were praying for him in Antioch to their prayers, he first tells them God’s glory how he was delivered, and then sends the notice of it to James (Christ’s kinsman) and to the brethren for their encouragement. Our mercies are not given us only for our selves.

18. Now as soon as it was day, there was no small stir among the soldiery, what was become of Peter. 19. And when Herod had sought for him, and found him not, he examined the keepers, and commanded that they should be put to death. And he went down from Judea to Cæarea, and there abode.

18. Whether it was death or imprisonment that the soldiers were put to, is doubtful in the Greek Text: But it tells us that the Innocent may be a prey to Tyrants Cruelty and Injustice.

20. And Herod was highly displeased with them of Tyre and Sidon: but they came with one accord to him, and having made Blastus the king’s chamberlain their friend, desired peace; because their country was nourished by the king’s country.

21. And upon a set day, Herod arrayed in royal apparel, sat upon his throne, and made an oration unto them. 22. And the people gave a shout, saying, It is the voice of a god, and not of a man.

23. And immediately the angel of the Lord smote him, because he gave not God the glory: and he was eaten of worms, and gave up the ghost.

20, 21. Note, A lively instance of the case of worldly Tyrants. To day Countries are crouching to them, and Flatterers applauding them, and the perfecuted fearing them; and to morrow they are the thinking food of worms: As Gods to day, and as dung to to morrow.

24. But the word of God grew and multiplied. 25. And Barnabas and Saul returned from Jerusalem, when they had fulfilled their ministry, and took with them John whose surname was Mark.

24. Note, Both the deliverance of Peter, and the death of Herod furthered the success of the Gospel.

CHAP. XII.

1. Now there were in the church that was at Antioch, certain prophets and teachers; as Barnabas, and Simeon that was called Niger, and Lucius of Cyrene, and Manaen, which had been brought up with Herod the tetrarch, and Saul.

1. The Church Assembled at Antioch, had then in it many Men of eminent Gifts for Prophecy and Teaching.

2. And as they ministered to the Lord, and fasted, the holy Ghost said, Separate me Barnabas and Saul, for the work whereunto I have called them.

2. Note, To whom the Holy Ghost manifested this, whether to many or to few, is uncertain.

3. And when they had fasted and prayed, and laid their hands on them, they sent them away. 4. So they being sent forth by the holy Ghost, departed unto Seleucia; and from thence they failed to Cyprus.

5. And
And when they were at Salamin, they preached the word of God in the synagogues of the Jews, and they had also John to their minister.

Note. This was not the first authorization of them to be Ministers by Office, for they were called and Preach'd before. But it was their Call or Mission to this particular work, to go abroad Preaching to many Nations. To be separated to the Ministry is to be done but once: But to be appointed to this or that place, charge or flock, may be oft done, and that by Failing, Prayer, and Imposition of hands. They begin their Preaching usually in the Jews Synagogues in all Countries, where there were such where they came, they being Expectants of the Messiah.

And when they had gone through the isle unto Paphos, they found a certain sorcerer, a false prophet, a Jew, whose name was Barjesus: 7. Which was with the deputy of the country, Sergius Paulus, a prudent man; who called for Barnabas and Saul, and desired to hear the word of God.

Note. His prudence made him willing to be instructed, and to hear men that said they were sent by God.

But Elymas the sorcerer (for so is his name by interpretation) withstood them, seeking to turn away the deputy from the faith.

Elymas (which signifies a Magician) opposed them to hinder the Deputy's Conversion.

Then Saul (who also is called Paul) filled with the holy Ghost, set his eyes on him, 10. And said, O full of all subtlety and all mischief, thou child of the devil, thou enemy of all righteousness; wilt thou not cease to pervert the right ways of the Lord? 11. And now behold, the hand of the Lord is upon thee, and thou shalt be blind, not seeing the sun for a season. And immediately there fell on him a mist and a darkness; and he went about seeking some to lead him by the hand.

The Holy Ghost inspired Paul to say this sentence when he was resolved to execute it: it came not by the will of man primarily.

Then the deputy when he saw what was done, believed, being astonished at the doctrine of the Lord.

Whether the Deputy was baptized is uncertain, but being converted to the Faith, we may say to his honour that Sergius Paulus was the first Christian Magistrate (unless you will call the Jewish converted Priests, Magistrates) (Confessors was not the first.) But he had no power to use Magistracy for Christianity, save obliquely.

The judgment of God on Elymas was for the Deputy's Conversion: what he did himself is unknown.

Now when Paul and his company loosed from Paphos, they came to Perga in Pamphylia: and John departing from them, returned to Jerusalem. 14. But when they departed from Perga, they came to Antioch in Pisidia, and went into the synagogue on the Sabbath-day, and sat down.

Note. They began with the described Jews full, as understanding each others languages, and as the most prepared to hear the news of the Messiah: Miraculous Language was like Miraculous works: not constant and at the Speakers will, as if they spake by Miracles.

And after the hearing of the law and the prophets, the rulers of the synagogue sent unto them, saying, Ye men and brethren, if ye have any word of exhortation for the people, say on.

Note. Thus were their Rulers like Church-Judges, that disposed of Order, that were no Teachers themselves. 1. It was among the Jews allowed any man, that professed to be a wise man and a Teacher, though not in Office, to Teach the People by the consent of the Ruler of the Synagogue. 2. The reading of the Law and Prophets was the chief part of their Liturgy.

16. Then Paul stood up, and beckoning with his hand, said, Men of Israel, and ye that fear God, give audience. 17. The God of this people of Israel chose our fathers, and exalted the people when they dwelt as strangers in the land of Egypt, and with an high arm brought he them out of it. 18. And about the time of forty years suffered he their manners in the wilderness. 19. And when he had destroyed seven nations in the land of Canaan, he divided their land to them by lot. 20. And after that, he gave unto them judges about the space of four hundred and fifty years, until Samuel the prophet. 21. And afterward they desired a king: and God gave unto them Saul the son of Kish, a man of the tribe of Benjamin, by the space of forty years. 22. And when he had removed him, he raised up unto them David to be their king; to whom also he gave testimony, and said, I have found David the son of Jesse, a man after mine own heart, which shall fulfill all my will.

16, &c. Note. The recital of the History of the Jews, was by Peter and Stephen and Paul judged the meetest way to introduce the tidings of Christ as come, it being that which the Jews believed and understood, and on which they grounded their privileges and expectations.

23. Of this man's seed hath God according to his promise raised unto Israel a Saviour Jesus: 24. When John had first preached before his coming, the baptism of repentance to all the people of Israel.

23. This Jesus is the Son of David whom you expect, and John by Preaching and Baptizing forechewed you.

25. And as John fulfilled his course, he said, Whom think ye that I am? I am not he. But be-
work which you shall in no wise believe, though a man declare it unto you.

40. Take heed left your obstinate unbelieving cause God to call you off, and take in the Gentiles in your stead.

42. And when the Jews were gone out of the synagogue, the Gentiles besought that these words might be preached to them the next sabbath.

43. Now when the congregation was broken up, many of the Jews, and religious proselytes followed Paul and Barnabas; who speaking to them, persuaded them to continue in the grace of God.

44. And the next sabbath day came almost the whole city together to hear the word of God.

45. But when the Jews saw the multitudes, they were filled with envy, and spake against those things which were spoken by Paul, contradicting and blaspheming.

44, 45. Note. 1. The Apostles did use to meet on the Jews' sabbath in their synagogues, and to observe the outward form of it while they were among the Jews, both to get an opportunity of preaching to them, and to avoid their opposition; till the dissolution of their state had in fact cast down their law and policy, which Christ had before abrogated.

2. The crowds of hearers and multitude of converts being benevolent to Satan, doth usually set up rage in his servants, and raise greater opposition.

46. Then Paul and Barnabas waxed bold, and said. It was necessary that the word of God should first have been spoken to you; but seeing ye put it from you, and reject it;
Ch. 13. The Jews obstinacy. The judge your selves unworthy of everlasting life, &c. we turn to the Gentiles. 47. For so hath the Lord commanded us, saying, I have set thee to be a light of the Gentiles, that thou shouldst be for salvation unto the ends of the earth.

46. 47. God did appoint us to offer Christ first to you Jews, and he, or we rejected not you first: But seeing by your obstinate rejecting of Christ and his Gospel, you make and shew your selves unworthy and incapable of so great Mercy, we go to the Gentiles; for so is our Commission.

And when the Gentiles heard this, they were glad, and glorified the word of the Lord: and as many as were ordained to eternal life, believed.

48. Note, It is a Controversie what is here meant by (Ordained to Eternal Life, ) whether it be (Ordained by God's decree) or (ordained by preparing Grace.) But there is no doctrinal Controversie arising from either Exposition, those being Prophets or otherwise in the nearest disposition to believe, it's probable at the least were the Persons here meant: But that God also doth fore-ordain whom he will effectually Convert and Save, should be past doubt with all sober Christians, the Perfection of God, and the words of Scripture making it plain: And not only Apostles and Prophets, but almost all the Popes, Doctors and Schoolmen proving it. And Dr. Hume confesseth that this preparing Grace is God's Gift; which therefore he before purposed to give. But when he opposeth (The absolute decree of destinating them, whatsoever they do, to Salvation,) it is very ill done so to intimate that this is the opinion of those that differ from him: who are so far from it, that they hold that to destinate to Holiness and Salvation, is one, and the same decree of God: Of this see my Catholick Theologie fully hindering it: Also for this sad Dilemma in Churchy Doctors!

49. And the word of the Lord was published throughout all the region. 50. But the Jews stirred up the devout and honourable women, and the chief men of the city, Acts. The Apostles persecuted Ch. 14. and raised persecution against Paul and Barnabas, and expelled them out of their coasts.

50. Note, Devout Women and Men in ignorance may be Adversaries to Christiannity and Truth, and Instruments of Persecution: And the chief and honourable are oft the chief herein. 2. Powerful Successful Preaching, useful to stir up violent Persecuting, which oft driveth the Preachers to some other place where God hath some to call.

51. But they shook off the dust of their feet against them, and came unto Iconium.

51. Note, As Excommunication was dismal to them that were cut off, so shaking off the dust of their feet against them was a dismal signification of a forsaken People.

52. And the disciples were filled with joy, and with the holy Ghost.

52. Note, God's Grace and the Church's joy may increase under Persecution, and Expulsion by men.

C H A P. XIV.

1. A N. it came to pass in Iconium, that they went both together into the synagogue of the Jews, and spake, that a great multitude both of the Jews, and also of the Greeks, believed. 2. But the unbelieving Jews stirred up the Gentiles, and made their minds evil-affected against the brethren.

1. 2. Still the great success of the Ministry is attended with the greatest Envy and opposition of bad Men.

3. Long time therefore abode they speaking boldly in the Lord, which gave testimony unto the word of his grace, and granted signs and wonders to be done by their hands.

3. Note, Long Preaching is needful to root that word which one or two Sermons oft leaveth loo. 2. Miracles were the convincing cause of the Credibility of the Apostles testimony.

4. But the multitude of the city was divided, and part held with

with the Jews, and part with the apostles.


5. And when there was an assault made both of the Gentiles, and also of the Jews, with their rulers, to use them spitefully, and to stone them. They were aware of it, and fled unto Lystra & Derbe, cities of Lycaonia, and unto the region that lieth round about:

7. And there they preached the gospel.

5. Note, Still Persecution disperseth the Gospel.

8. And there sat a certain man at Lystra, impotent in his feet, being a cripple from his mother's womb, who never had walked.

9. The same heard Paul speak, who read fmtly beholding him, and perceiving that he had faith to be healed, said with a loud voice, Stand up right on thy feet. And he leaped and walked.

8. The Holy Ghost, when he would do the Miracle, made Paul discern the Man's Faith, and excite him to bid him stand up.

11. And when the people saw what Paul had done, they lift up their voices, laying in the speech of Lycaonia, The gods are come down to us in the likeness of men.

12. And they called Barnabas, Jupiter; and Paul, Mercurius, because he was the chief speaker.

11. They knew that such a Miracle must be a supernatural work, and done by God; and they called them by the usual names of their Gods.

13. Then the priest of Jupiter, which was before their city, brought oxen and garlands unto the gates, and would have done sacrifice with the people.

13. The Priest of Jupiter, whose Temple or Statue was without the City, brought Oxen to sacrifice to them.

14. Note, Such Men are readyer for Idolatries, than to receive God's word.

14. Which when the apostles, Barnabas and Paul heard of, they rent their clothes, and ran in among the people, crying out, 15. And saying, Sirs, why do ye these things? we also are men of like passions with you, and preach unto you, that ye should turn from these vanities unto the living God, which made heaven and earth, and the sea, and all things that are there in.

14. Note, The number of the twelve Apostles was fitted to the Jews. Twelve Tribes, to whom the Gospel was first to be Preached: But when Christ would gather the Gentile Church, he increased the number, and Paul was commissioned by a voice from Heaven, and he and Barnabas, by a special mission of Christ, by the Holy Ghost.

2. The significant ceremony of renting the clothes, is used by these two Apostles, All good Men hate Idolatry, and would not be Idoliz'd themselves. 4. The Devil would honour the Ministers of Christ overmuch, when it is to contradict their Doctrine.

16. Who in times past suffered all nations to walk in their own ways. 17. Nevertheless, he left not himself without witness, in that he did good, and gave us rain from heaven, and fruitful seasons, filling our hearts with food and gladness.

16. He hath long connived by patient permissions, at the manifold Idolatries and Vices of the World, not punishing them as they deserved: Yet his common mercies to Mens bodies, did both signify, that he is the merciful Ruler and Benefactor to Mankind, and that he useth not sinful Man as he deserved, but in mercy obligeth all to gratitude and repentance.

18. And with these sayings scarce restrained they the people, that they had not done sacrifice unto them.

18. Note, So forward are Men to forbidden worship, who are backward to spiritual and true.
19. And there came thither certain Jews from Antioch and Iconium, who persuaded the people, and having stoned Paul, drew him out of the city, supposing he had been dead.

19. Note, This is the levity of the vulgar, that one day will sacrifice as to Gods, to those, whom after they would kill as malefactors: So little trust is to be placed in them. And though we know not whether most of the same Persons were the Persecutors, it's like that many were.

20. Howbeit, as the disciples stood round about him, he rose up, and came into the city: and the next day he departed with Barnabas to Derbe.

20. Note, It's like his recovery was a miracle; else stoning would have disabled him to travel.

21. And when they had preached the gospel to that city, and had taught many, they returned again to Lystra, and to Iconium, and to Antioch.

21. Note, Persecution made them not forsake the Plantations which they had newly made.

22. Confirming the souls of the disciples, and exhorting them to continue in the faith, and laying that we must through much tribulation enter into the kingdom of God.

22. Confirming them against the Temptation of Persecution, which must be suffered by those that will be saved.

23. And when they had ordained them elders in every church, and had prayed with fasting, they commended them to the Lord, on whom they believed.

23. They settled the Christians that were converted in these several Cities, in Church order, ordaining Elders in every Church, to be the Guides and Teachers of the rest, and that with Fasting and Prayer, because of the great importance of the work.

Note, 1. It is made a controversy, whether *ἐκβολή* signifies [by sufferings] or [by laying on of hands.], But it is of small importance: For it is certain, that the Apostles forced no Elders on the People, but ordained them by the Peoples choice or consent: And it is certain, that ordination was the Apostles Act.

2. And it's a Controversie what is here meant by Elders, whether Diocesan Bishops, or mere Presbyters, or Lay-Elders, or Deacons also. The Scripture calls all Church-guides and Teachers, Elders, and here maketh no distinction. It's certain, that each Church here was but one small Assembly, and therefore, if they will call the Pastor of one Assembly a Diocesan, it's a nominal strife: If they say, it is because they had Power to govern a Diocesan of a multitude of Churches when they were gathered, 1. They must prove that power given; 2. Then they were no Bishops of those Churches, till they were indeed Churches: 3. And its probable, that about those near Cities, that was not in their life time.

Though it be not certain, that by [Elders in every City] is meant more than one in each City, yet by the Phrase, it is most probable; especially, considering what evidence there is of many at Corinth, Antioch and Jerusalem.

24. And after they had puffed throughout Pisidia, they came to Pamphylia.

25. And when they had preached the word in Perga, they went down into Attalia.

26. And thence failed to Antioch, from whence they had been recommended to the grace of God, for the work which they fulfilled.

24. They returned to Antioch in Syria (not Antioch in Pisidia) to give the Church an account of their success.

27. And when they were come and gathered the church together, they rehearsed all that God had done with them, and how he had opened the door of faith unto the Gentiles. 28. And there they abode long time with the disciples.

Note, 1. It was a Congregation, and no a Diocesan of a multitude of Congregations, that is called the Church, which they Congregated. 2. They brought them the glad Tidings, that the Gentiles had received the Faith.
Ch. 15. About The Acts. Circumcision. Ch. 15.

Faith: Though it was in the Jews Synagogues that they preach’d, at least for the most part.

C H A P. XV.

1. And certain men which came down from Judea, taught the brethren, and said, Except ye be circumcised after the manner of Moses, ye cannot be saved.

1. Some Christian Jews thought and taught, that Circumcision and keeping the Law of Moses is necessary to Salvation, both to Jews and Gentile Christians.

Note 1. The found Doctrine of Christinity was quickly corrupted by erring Teachers. The threatening of damnation, and making error seem necessary to salvation, was used to affright timorous Christians into false ways.

2. When therefore Paul and Barnabas had no small dissention and disputation with them, they determined that Paul and Barnabas, and certain other of them, should go up to Jerusalem unto the apostles and elders about this question.

2. Note. To be Dissenter and Dissuaders against errors and tyrannical impositions upon conscience, is no fault but a great duty.

2. It’s but a groundless fiction of some that tell us that this was an appeal to Jerusalem, because it was the Metropolis of Syria and Antioch: As if Metropolitan Church Power had been then settled: When long after, when it was devised indeed, Antioch was above Jerusalem: And it’s as vain a fiction that this was an appeal to a general Council, as if the Apostles and Elders at Jerusalem had been a general Council, when none of the Bishops of the Gentile Churches were there, or called thither. It is notorious that it was an appeal to the Apostles (taking in the Elders) as those that had the certainest notice of Christ’s mind, having conversed with him, and being entrusted to teach all Nations whereas he commanded them, and had the greatest measure of the Spirit; and also being Jews themselves, were such as the Judaizing Christians had no reason to suspect or reject.

3. And being brought on their way by the church, they passed through Phenice, and Samaria, declaring the conversion of the Gentiles: and they caused great joy unto all the brethren.

3. Note. By the Church that brought them on, is neither meant a Diocese of Churches, nor the mere Clergy, but the chief Men of the Congregation of Antioch.

2. The Gentiles’ conversion was joyful news.

4. And when they were come to Jerusalem, they were received of the church, and of the apostles and elders, and they declared all things that God had done with them. But there rose up certain of the sect of the Pharisees which believed, saying, That it was needful to circumcise them, and to command them to keep the Law of Moses.

4. They first told them of their success on the Gentiles, and then of the Doctrine of these Christian Pharisees.

Note. The error, as to the Jews, had a full religious pretence, for Moses’s Law was God’s own Law, and delivered by Angels, and confirmed by miracles; and Christ had said that he came not to destroy it, &c. Therefore had not Apostolick Testimony, and the Authority of the Holy Ghost by miracles, proved the abrogation, it would more hardly have been believed by good men, than the substitute Canons of Bishops that have no such pretence. But the Gentiles were never under Moses’s Law, as such.

6. And the Apostles and elders came together for to consider of this matter.

6. Note. God’s inspiration made not consultation needless to themselves, or to convince Gain-sayers.

7. And when there had been much disputing, Peter rose up, and said unto them, Men and brethren; ye know how that a good while ago, God made choice among us that the Gentiles by my mouth should hear the word of the Gospel, and believe. And God which knoweth the hearts, bare them witness;

Y 4 giving
giving them the holy Ghost, even as he did unto us: 9. And put no difference between us and them, purifying their hearts by faith.

7. Tho' of the Pharisees way that came with Paul and Barnabas, were heard disputing for their cause, and then Peter said, &c.

10. Now therefore why tempt ye God, to put a yoke upon the neck of the disciples, which neither our fathers nor we were able to bear?

19. God n'er put this yoke on the Gentiles, and we Jews have found it a heavy burden.

11. But we believe that through the grace of the Lord Jesus Christ, we shall be saved, even as they.

12. And it is not by the works of Men's Law, that we Jews are justified and saved, but in the same way that is common to the Gentiles with us, even by the Grace of Jesus Christ.

17. Then all the multitude kept silence, and gave audience to Barnabas and Paul, declaring what miracles and wonders God had wrought among the Gentiles by them.

18. The Miracles and Conversion of the Gentiles, was God's approving Testimony in the case.

13. And after they had held their peace, James answered, saying,

14. Note, They were not like the proude Magisterial Talkers, so full of themselves, that they have no patience to restrain their lift of speaking till another hath done, but stop and silence him by rude uncivil interruption, on pretence that he is too long.

15. Men and brethren, hearken unto me. 14. Simon hath declared how God at the first did visit the Gentiles, to take out of them a people for his name. 15. And to this agree the words of the prophets; as it is written, 16. After this I will return, and will build again the tabernacle of David which is fallen down: and I will build again the ruins thereof, and I will set it up: 17. That the residue of men might seek after the Lord, and all the Gentiles upon whom my name is called, faith the Lord, who doeth all these things.

13, 14. Note, Some think James meant the Prophecies of Simeon, Luke 2, 32. A Light to lighten the Gentiles, but it's like, (though not certain) that it's Peter here that he meant.

18. Known unto God are all his works from the beginning of the world.

19. God that hath prophesied of this calling of the Gentiles, decreed and foreknew it. They are his works as well as we, and he is merciful to all.

19. Wherefore my sentence is, that we trouble not them, which from among the Gentiles are turned to God. 20. But that we write unto them, that they abstain from pollutions of idols, and from fornication, and from things strangled, and from blood.

19. Note, It is not agreed by Expositors what these words mean, whether it be only things indifferent that are here determined (as Beza and some other think, and that only to avoid offence for a time: Or whether it be the Precepts of Noah imposed on the Professors of the Gate, as such, (as Doctor Hammond thought). They that go the first way, think, that by [Fornication] here, is meant Idolatry, that is, the countenancing of it by the use of things in themselves indifferent: But most think, that by [Fornication] is meant some controverted forts of it, (as marrying within some prohibited degrees, or using Concupines, or second Wives, which the Jews scrupled not. And others think that the ignorance of Jews and Gentiles of the evil of Fornication, and some Heretics pleading for it, made it, though not indifferent, joyned with the rest.

10. Tho' that go the second way, say, that to the Professors of the Gate, the seven Precepts of Noah were necessary, and therefore when they turned Christians, not to be cast off: And by [Blood] they think is meant [Bloodshed or Murder:] So the two first precept
Ch. 15. The Apostle S The Acts. determinations. Ch. 15.

greeting unto the brethren which are of the Gentiles in Antioch, and
Syria, and Cilicia. 24. Forasmuch as we have heard, that certain
which went out from us have troubled you with words, subverting
your souls, saying, Ye must be circumcised, and keep the law; to whom
we gave no such commandment:

23, 24. Note, 1. If False Teachers pretended Apostolick Authority or Mission
when they were near them, no wonder if they do it now when they are not so easily
confused. 2. Tyrannical impositions on Conscience, do but trouble the Church
and subvert Souls, by pious pretences.

25. It seemed good unto us, being assembled with one accord,
to send chosen men unto you, with
our beloved Barnabas and Paul:
26. Men that have hazarded their lives for the name of our Lord
Jesus Christ. 27. We have sent therefore, Judas and Silas who shall
also tell you the same things by mouth.

25. Thus far their Letters are Credential, to tell them that they may believe the
Messengers.

28. For it seemeth good to the holy Ghost and to us, to lay upon
you no greater burden than these necessary things;
28. Note, 1. It is prophaneless for any Bishops or Councils to use these words, who
neither have assurance, nor can give any
proof that the Holy Ghost guided them.
2. The Holy Ghost is against imposing unnecesary things as necessary. These things
here imposed, were necessary, (at least all to those Persons, and at that time, and most
(if not all) continually.

29. That ye abstain from meats offered to Idols, and from blood,
and from things strangled, and from
fornication: from which if ye keep your selves, ye shall do well. Fare
ye well.

29. It is not Moses' Law that ye are bound to keep, but these commoner preceps. Do nothing that scandalously fa-
Ch. 15. The brethren exhorted. The Acts. Timothy circumcised.

Ch. 16.

voureth Idolatry, or favoureth of cruelty and bloodines, not eating strangled Creatures in the gore blood, avoid dehlement, by any sort of forbidden fleshly lust and filthines.

30. So when they were dismissed, they came to Antioch: and when they had gathered the multitude together, they delivered the epistle.

30. Note, The Multitude was one Assembly, not a Diocese, nor only the Clergy.

31. Whose when they had read, they rejoiced for the consolation.

31. Note, Liberty from toy'some Ceremonies (though God first instituted them) was matter of joy to the Churches; but alas! few Churches are allowed that joy, by their Lordly Pastors!

32. And Judas and Silas being prophets also themselves, exhorted the brethren with many words, and confirmed them.

32. Note, By [Prophets] Is meant such as were inspired by the Holy Ghost, either by Revelation of any new thing, or by ability to explain and apply known truth.

33. And after they had tarried there a space, they were let go in peace from the brethren unto the apostles. 34. Notwithstanding it pleased Silas to abide there still. 35. Paul also and Barnabas continued in Antioch, teaching and preaching the word of the Lord, with many others also.

33. Note, The Church of Antioch had many excellent Teachers, and it is not intimated, that any one was Bishop over the rest, or that Paul, Barnabas, Silas, Simeon, Lucius, Manaen, &c. were subjects to any one.

36. And some days after, Paul said unto Barnabas, Let us go again, and visit our brethren, in every city where we have preached the word of the Lord, and see how they do.

36. Note, Converted Souls and Planted Churches, must be further visited, observed and watered.

37. And Barnabas determined to take with them John whose surname was Mark. 38. But Paul thought not good to take him with them, who departed from them from Pamphylia, and went not with them to the work. 39. And the contention was so sharp between them, that they departed another one from the other: and so Barnabas took Mark, and sailed unto Cyprus; 40. And Paul chose Silas, and departed, being recommended by the brethren unto the grace of God. 41. And he went through Syria and Cilicia, confirming the churches.

37. Note, Apostles were not infallible in all things, even about the fitness of their Helpers. 2. Small differences even to happen contention, may stand with Christian Love and Unity. 3. There was then no Judge of such controversies, either Bishop or Synod to avoid and end them. 4. But God turned this to good, for the better spreading of the Gospel.

CHAP. XVI.

1. Then came he to Derbe and Lystra: and behold, a certain disciple was there, named Timotheus, the son of a certain woman which was a Jewess, and believed; but his father was a Greek: 2. Which was well reported of by the brethren that were at Lystra and Iconium. 3. Him would Paul have to go forth with him; and took and circumcised him, because of the Jews which were in those quarters: for they knew all that his father was a Greek.

1. Timothy's Mother being a Jew, he might be circumcised, though his Father was a Greek: And because uncircumcised, he might not be admitted to converse with the
11. Therefore leaving from Troas, we came with a straight course to Samothracia, and the next day to Neapolis; 12. And from thence to Philippi, which is the chief city of that part of Macedonia, and a colony: and we were in that city abiding certain days. 13. Now when they had gone throughout Phrygia and the region of Galatia, and were forbidden of the holy Ghost to preach the word in Asia, 14. After they were come to Mytilene, they resolved to go into Bithynia: but the Spirit suffered them not. 15. And passing by Mysia, they came down to Troas. 16. And a vision appeared to Paul in the night: There stood a man of Macedonia, and prayed him, saying, Come over into Macedonia, and help us. 17. And after he had seen the vision, immediately we endeavoured to go into Macedonia, assuredly gathering that the Lord had called us for to preach the gospel unto them.
Ch. 16. Paul and Silas  The Acts. imprisoned.  Ch. 16.

to do their best to persuade them to a true
course, and to rid their house of all
necellary Persons that refused: And God
used to bless their endeavours, and their
interest and power might do much.
2. Converted Persons have so much love
to Christ’s Ministers who converted them,
that they greatly desire their Company and
their further help.

16. And it came to pass as we
went to prayer, a certain damsel
possessed with a spirit of divina-
tion, met us, which brought her
masters much gain by soothsay-
ing.
16. One possessed with a deluding fore-
seeing Devil, who thereby brought him
gain for Divination.

17. The fame followed Paul and
us, and cried, saying, These men
are the servants of the most high
God, which shew unto us the way
of salvation.
17. Note, God constrained the Devil to
confess Christ against his will.

18. And this did they many days.
But Paul being grieved, turned, and
said to the spirit, I command thee
in the name of Jesus Christ to come
out of her. And he came out the
same hour.
18. Note, Satan must be dispossessed of
Body, Soul or Nation, whenever Christ
commandeth it.

19. And when her masters saw
that the hope of their gains was
gone, they caught Paul and Silas,
and drew them into the marketplace,
unto the rulers.
19. Note, It’s like her Masters being more
than one, were some Heathen Priests, how-
ever we see, the love of Money is the root
of Persecution and all evil.

20. And brought them to the
magistrates, saying, These men
being Jews, do exceedingly trou-
ble our city. 21. And teach cu-
tsoms which are not lawful for us to
receive, neither to observe, being
Romans.

20, 21. They brought them to the
Roman Officers, under whose Government
they were, and accused them as being Jews, of
a contrary Religion, and by their unlawful
Doctrines, causing Sedition and disturbing
the publick peace. Note, Covetous emi-
nants use the accusation of Sedition to hide
their malice.

22. And the multitude rose up
together against them: and the
magistrates rent off their clothes,
and commanded to beat them. 23.
And when they had laid many
stripes upon them, they cast them
into prison, charging the jailer to
keep them safely. 24. Who hav-
ning received such a charge, thrust
them into the inner prison, and
made their feet fast in the stocks.
22, &c. Note, Rulers and Rabble, and
most, were for the Devil against Christ and
their own Salvation: And the innocent Ser-
vants of Christ are imprisoned and used as
Rogues, merely for seeking Men’s welfare.

25. And at midnight Paul and
Silas prayed, and sang praises un-
to God: and the prisoners heard
them.
25. Note, Persecution doth not disoblige
us from joyful praise to God, nor destroy
Believers comfort.

26. And suddenly there was a
great earthquake, so that the foun-
dations of the prison were shaken:
and immediately all the doors were
opened, and every one’s bands were
loosed.
26. Note, Luke that wrote this, was one
of their Company in the City, when this
was done: God’s Power is invincible.

27. And the keeper of the pri-
son awaking out of his sleep, and
seeing the prison-doors open, he
drew out his sword, and would
have killed himself, supposing that
the prisoners had been fled. 28. But
Paul cried with a loud voice, saying,
Do thy self no harm; for we are
all here.

27. He would have killed himself to pre-
vent punishment, in the rage of his passion.
29. Then
Then he called for a light, and sprang in, and came trembling, and fell down before Paul and Silas; and said, Sirs, what must I do to be saved?  

29. Note, When God's dreadful judgments and his Grace join together, no heart can resist them.  

And they said, Believe on the Lord Jesus Christ, and thou shalt be saved, and thy house.  

31. Note, 1. He was resolved to do whatever they required, knowing by this miracle, that they were sent by God. 2. Believing in Christ, includeth all the essentials of Christianity. 3. His House would not be saved for his Faith, without any of their own. But it is supposed, that God would bless his endeavours to convert them.  

32. And they spake unto him the word of the Lord, and to all that were in his house.  

33. They instructed him and his Household, that they might indeed believe and be saved.  

34. And he took them the same hour of the night, and washed their stripes; and was baptized, he and all his, straightway.  

35. He privately showed his Repentance and Faith: For he that had scourged them, washed their sores to heal them; and he and all his Household were privately Baptized, as having professed their resolved Faith in Christ.  

Note, The Apostles delayed not Baptism, when serious profession gave them rights: but in doubtful cases of ignorant or unresolved Men, it ought to be longer delayed.  

36. And when he had brought them into his house, he set meat before them, and rejoiced, believing in God, with all his house.  

37. And when it was day, the magistrates sent the sergeants, saying, Let those men go.  

29. Then the keeper of the prison told this saying to Paul, The magistrates have sent to let you go: now therefore depart, and go in peace.  

37. But Paul said unto them, They have beaten us openly uncondemned, being Romans, and have cast us into prison; and now do they thrust us out privily? Nay verily; but let them come themselves and fetch us out.

Note, It is lawful to plead our right by Law against unjust Magistrates. Paul was a Roman by enfranchisement (though a Jew).  

38. And the sergeants told these words unto the magistrates: and they feared when they heard that they were Romans.  

Note, The Roman Laws forbade all such base usage of any that was of Roman freedom.  

39. And they came and besought them, and brought them out, and desired them to depart out of the city.  

40. And they went out of the prison, and entered into the house of Lydia: and when they had fed the brethren, they comforted them, and departed.  

Now they had passed through Amphipolis, and Apollonia, they came to Thessalonica, where was a synagogue of the Jews.  

1. Now when they had passed through Amphipolis, and Apollonia, they came to Thessalonica, where was a synagogue of the Jews. 2. And Paul, as his manner was, went in unto them; and three sabbath-days reasoned with them out of the scriptures. 3. Opening and alleging that Christ must needs have suffered, and risen again from the dead: and that this Jesus whom I preach unto you, is Christ.
Ch. 17. Paul withdraws The Acts from Thessalonica. Ch. 17.

2, 3. Note, Paul began his preaching usually in the Jews Synagogue, because they were most prepared by expectation of the Messiah, and understood his language: for it is not certain, that the miraculous gift of unlearned tongues, was it which he used in his ordinary preaching, and not only upon extraordinary inspirations.

4. And some of them believed, and comforted with Paul and Silas: and of the devout Greeks a great multitude, and of the chief women not a few.

4. And being convinced by proof out of the old Testament, that Christ must suffer and rise again, many believed; some Jews, but more of the Proslytes and chief Women.

5. But the Jews which believed not, moved with envy, took unto them certain lewd fellows of the bawdy sort, and gathered a company, and set all the city on an uproar, and assaulted the house of Jason, and sought to bring them out to the people.

5. Note, The rabbles are fit instruments for persecution, for they have sufficient ignorance and malignity, and will rage against reason; but it's Legalists that incite them.

6. And when they found them not, they drew Jason, and certain brethren, unto the rulers of the city, crying. These that have turned the world upside down, are come hither also;

6, 7. Note, 1. Were it not for the false pretence of Sedition against Rulers, to engage their safety, and honour, in jealousy against Christ and Religion, the Devil would be pedled in his Accusation of the Faithful. 2. The name of King Jesus falsely Expounded, is it that is used to engage Princes against Christ.

7. Whom Jason hath received: and these all do contrary to the decrees of Cesar, saying, That there is another king, one Jesus.

8. And they troubled the people, and the rulers of the city, when they heard these things. 9. And when they had taken security of

9. Note, Not because Paul was more fearful than the rest, but that he was more useful and more marked.

10. And the brethren immediately sent away Paul and Silas by night unto Berea: who coming thither, went into the Synagogue of the Jews.

10. Note, 1. It is good to reserve Persecuted Ministers for further work, when Satan would destroy them. 2. Again the Apostles make the Jews Synagogue their Preaching place.

11. These were more noble than those in Thessalonica, in that they received the word with all readiness of mind, and searched the scriptures daily, whether those things were so.

11. These were more ingenious, rational, sober Jews, and did not meet the Gospel with rage, but thought it worthy their serious enquiry, whether the Scriptures did foretell of the Death and Resurrection of Christ, and whether Paul's proofs of Christianity were valid.

12. Therefore many of them believed: also of honourable women which were Greeks, and of men not a few.

12. This preparation of a sober enquiry after truth, is a reason rendered, why many of them believed. As did many Men and Women of note.

13. But when the Jews of Thessalonica had knowledge that the word of God was preached of Paul at Berea, they came thither also, and stirred up the people.

13. Note, Satan sends about his Messenger as Christ did his: To fit up the People.

14. And then immediately the brethren sent away Paul, to go as it were to the sea: but Silas and Timotheus abode there still.

14. Note, Not because Paul was more fearful than the rest, but that he was more useful and more marked.

15. And they that conducted Paul, brought him unto Athens: and receiving a commandment unto Silas and Timotheus, for to come to him with all speed, they departed.

16. Paul passing by many Countries between, was conducted to Athens, the great Seat or University of Philosophy, to Greece and all the Learned World.

16. Now while Paul waited for them at Athens, his Spirit was stirred in him, when he saw the city wholly given to idolatry.

16. He was much moved, to see such abundance of Statues, Images and Altars in the City.

16. Therefore disputed he in the synagogue with the Jews, and with the devout persons, and in the market daily with them that met with him.

17. Therefore he did not only dispute for Christianity in the Synagogue with the Jews, and devout Worshipers (who when converted, were usually the first Members of the Churches) but also with the Heathens where he met them, against their Idolatry.

17. Then certain philosophers of the Epicureans, and of the Stoicks encountred him: and some said, What will this babler say? other some, He seemeth to be a greater forth of strange gods: because he preached unto them Jesus, and the resurrection.

18. The Epicureans a loose sensual Sect, and the Stoicks a stricter Sect encountred him; and some of them deplied him as an unlearned Babler: Others thought that he Preach'd some God (by the Name of Jesus and the Resurrection) not known to them before. Note. The Athenians were not only for liberty for every one to worship what God he would, but thought it the height of Religion to take in and worship the Gods of all Nations: And to please them all, and build them Altars.

19. And they took him, and brought him unto Areopagus, saying, May we know what this new doctrine, whereof thou speakest, is? 20. For thou bringest certain strange things to our ears: we would know therefore what these things mean:

19. They brought him to the Court of Judicature, who were to be Judges, before any new God was to be received, that they might hear what God it was that he Preach'd.

21. (For all the Athenians and strangers which were there, spent their time in nothing else, but either to tell, or to hear some new thing.)

21. The very learning and daily business of the Athenian Philosophers, Students and Sojourners, was but to know News, and tell it, whether Speculative or Historical: (And what else is all learning, that serveth not to Holiness and Heaven).

22. Then Paul stood in the mids of Mars-hill, and said, Ye men of Athens, I perceive that in all things ye are too superstitious.

22. Ye are on pretence of being very Religious, addicted to worship multitudes of Gods.

23. For as I passed by, and beheld your devotions, I found an altar with this Inscription, To The Unknown God. Whom therefore ye ignorantly worship, him declare I unto you.

23. Whatever was the occasion of that Inscription, you confesse you worship an unknown God, I would therefore make known to you that only God, whom you must worship.

24. God that made the world, and all things therein, seeing that he is Lord of heaven and earth, dwelleth not in temples made with hands: 25. Neither is worshipped with mens hands, as though he needed any thing, seeing he giveth to all life, and breath, and all things;
Ch. 17.  Paul Preacheth  The Acts: at Athens.  Ch. 17

24, 25. Being not asaw that God that made and owneth all the World, imaginarily to your Temples and Images, or think that he needeth, or you can give him any thing, which giveth us all things.

26. And hath made of one blood, all nations of men, for to dwell on all the face of the earth, and hath determined the times before appointed, and the bounds of their habitation:

26. And hath made all Men of one human nature (propagated from one root) and ordered them into their several Countries, and bounded habitations determined by him.

27. That they should seek the Lord, if haply they might feel after him, and find him.

27. Making it their duty to seek to know him as their Maker by his works, and as their Benefactor by his Mercies, which palpably declare him, that they might serve, love and worship him, as their God.

27. Though he be not far from every one of us: 28. For in him we live, and move, and have our being; as certain also of your own poets have said, For we are all his offspring.

28. He is as near us as our Souls are to our Bodies; Being indeed more than a Soul to all the World: For it is in him that we live and move and have our Being: As your Poet Amos faith, For we are his off-spring; for of him, and through him, and to him are all things, and no Parent so much caueth us as God doth, nor doth the Soul so much to our life, motion and being, as God doth.

29. Forasmuch then as we are the offspring of God, we ought not to think that the Godhead is like unto gold, or silver, or stone graven by art and man’s device.

29. Our Souls being the best Image of God our Maker, we must not so much debase him as to make Images of him of Gold, Silver or Stone, as if he were like such shapes.

30. And the times of this ignorance God winked at; but now commandeth all men every where to repent:

30. And as man sinned by forbearance a while to connine at faults, so God hath not in the time of this ignorance, either punished the World as they deserved, nor sent them from Heaven that notice of his displeasure, and that call to Repent and amend, as now he doth, but left them mostly to the Light of Nature and the discoveries of his Works and Providence: But now in hatred of Sin and Mercy to Sinners, he hath sent a special Meffenger to the World, to call all to Repentance, and offer them pardon thereupon.

31. Because he hath appointed a day in which he will judge the world in righteousness, by that Man whom he hath ordained; whereas he hath given assurance unto all men, in that he hath raised him from the dead.

31. For he hath certainly determined to judge the World with Righteousness, by that Man whom he hath ordained to be the Saviour of the Faithful and the Judge of all; which (though it seem incredible to most, that a man should be so advanced to be King and Judge of all the World, yet) God hath given certain proof of it, by evidence sufficient to evince it to true reason, is that he hath raised him from death to life, (and taken him up to Heaven.)

32. And when they heard of the resurrection of the dead, some mocked: and others said, We will hear thee again of this matter.

33. So Paul departed from among them.

12, 13. Note, The Resurrection seemed so incredible that some (Epicurus its like) scoff’st at it.

Note, Paul did wisely in Preaching the true God to them first, and reproving their Idolatry, and only concluding with the notice of Christ. And yet no sort of men more condemned his Doctrine than the Learned Athenians. Self-conceit and the prepossession of their vain thought exalted Learning, most powerfully kept out the Truth: And it did not please God there to work Miracles to convince them.

34. Howbeit certain men clave unto him, and believed: among
Ch. i. 8. Paul goeth The Acts. to Corinth. Ch. i. 8.

6. And when they opposed themselves, and blasphemed, he shook his raiment, and said unto them, Your blood be upon your own heads; I am clean: from henceforth I will go unto the Gentiles.

6. And when they gained and railed and blasphemed Christ, he denounced and deserted them by the Ceremony of making off the dust, as a witness that their destruction was of themselves and not by his neglect to convince them. And henceforth he resolved to leave their Synagogue and teach the Gentiles.

7. And he departed thence, and entred into a certain man's house, named Justus, one that worshipped God, whose house joyned hard to the synagogue.

7. Nor, It's like this Justus was a Proselyte: if not, he was one that had learnt at least to worship the true God.

8. And Crispus the chief rulcr of the synagogue, believed on the Lord with all his house: and many of the Corinthians hearing, believed and were baptized.

8. Note, 1. Still we see housefolds are converted and Baptized together; the Ruler's power and God's blessing prevailing with them. 2. Though the Synagogue drove away Paul, the Ruler followed him.

9. Then spake the Lord to Paul in the night by a vision, Be not afraid, but speak, and hold not thy peace: 10. For I am with thee, and no man shall set on thee to hurt thee: for I have much people in this city.

9. Note, 1. It is an ungrounded Exposition of them that say that these were God's People, as pious men before, (though some Proselytes might be such;) or that God only foreknew their Conversion, and did not decree to cause it. God had many there whom he decreed to Convert; and therefore will have Paul to Preach to them, and will secure him from Persecutions.

11. And he continued there a year and six months, teaching the word of God among them.
18. And when Gallio was the deputy of Achaia, the Jews made insurrection with one accord against Paul, and brought him to the judgment-seat,

12. They carried him by force before the Roman Proconsul to be judged.

13. Saying, This fellow persuadeth men to worship God contrary to the law.

14. And when Paul was now about to open his mouth, Gallio said unto the Jews, If it were a matter of wrong or wicked wickedness, O ye Jews, reason would that I should bear with you: 15. But if it be a question of words and names, and of your law, look ye to it; for I will be no judge of such matters.

15. The Roman Law enabled not Gallio to decide the Jewish Controversies, but to punish men that wronged one another, or committed any Wicked wickedness.

16. And he drave them from the judgment-seat. 17. Then all the Greeks took Sophrones, the chief ruler of the synagogue, and beat him before the judgment-seat: and Gallio cared for none of those things.

18. And Paul after this tarried there yet a good while, and then took his leave of the brethren, and sailed thence into Syria, and with him Priscilla and Aquila: having shorn his head in Cenchrea: for he had a vow.

19. And he came to Ephesus, and left them there: but he himself entred into the synagogue, and reasoned with the Jews.

20. When they desired him to carry longer time with them, he consented not: 21. But bade them farewell, saying, I must by all means keep this feast that cometh, in Jerusalem: but I will return again unto you, if God will. And he sailed from Ephesus. 22. And when he had landed at Caesarea, and gone up, and saluted the church, he went down to Antioch.

23. And after he had spent some time there, he departed, and went over all the country of Galatia and Phrygia in order, strengthening all the disciples.

24. And a certain Jew named Apollos, born at Alexandria, an eloquent man, and mighty in the scriptures, came to Ephesus. This man was instructed in the way of the Lord; and being fervent Christian Converts: They did ill in exercising revenge.
vent in the Spirit, he spake and taught diligently the things of the Lord, knowing none but the baptism of John.

24, 25. He was well acquainted with the Scriptures, and believed so much of Christ as John had preached, and was baptized with his Baptism, but wanted yet much of the further knowledge of Christ, and of the Christian Baptism.

26. And he began to speak boldly in the Synagogue. Whom, when Aquila and Priscilla had heard, they took him unto them, and expounded unto him the way of God more perfectly.

27. Note, An Eloquent Teacher, mighty in the Scriptures, yet didst not think it to be beneath him to be instructed by a Tent-maker and his Wife.

28. And when he was disposed to pass into Achaia, the brethren wrote, exhorting the disciples to receive him; who, when he was come, helped them much which had believed through grace.

29. They wrote to them to entertain and encourage him; who, when he was come, proved a great helper to them, that already by the Grace of God were made Believers.

30. For he mightily convinced the Jews, and that publicly, shewing by the Scriptures, that Jesus was Christ.

31. For by the advantage of great acquaintance with the Scriptures, and his Eloquence, he was too hard for the contradicting Jews, and clearly proved to them from the Scriptures which they own, that Jesus is the true Messiah or Christ.

And they said unto him, We have not so much as heard whether there be any holy Ghost. 3. And he said unto them, Unto what then were ye baptized? And they said, unto John’s baptism.

1. He found some that owned the Christian Profession. 2. Note, John’s Preaching was, That the Messiah is now come, and those that Repented and Believed this, he Baptized, though they knew not that Jesus was he: But to many he also pointed to Jesus and said, This is he. And these Disciples it’s like were such: and had learned no more.

4. Then said Paul, John verily baptized with the baptism of repentance, saying unto the people, That they should believe on him which should come after him, that is, on Christ Jesus. 5. When they heard this, they were baptized in the name of the Lord Jesus.

4. Paul said, John Baptized those who professed Repentance and Faith in the Messiah as just now at hand, who indeed was Jesus Christ. When these Disciples heard this, they were expressly Baptized (again) into the name of the Lord Jesus.

6. And when Paul had laid his hands upon them, the holy Ghost came on them; and they spake with tongues, and prophesied.

7. And all the men were about twelve.

6, 7. And the miraculous signal gift came on these men, when Paul had laid his hands on them.

Note. The opinion of Marthinius and Bza, that vers. 5. was the Speech of Paul concerning John’s Conversions, that they were Baptized in the name of the Lord Jesus, 1. Is forced, and therefore to be suspected: 2. It is contrary to the Context: For (They in vers. 3, and They in vers. 5. and Them in vers. 6. all plainly speak of the same Persons. 3. It is contrary to the History of John’s Baptism, who Baptized multitudes of the common People, Soldiers, Publicans and Pharisees, upon a mere profession of Repentance, and belief of the Messiah at hand, and is never said to have Baptized any into the Name of the Lord Jesus. 4. Their
reason for it is contrary to the Doctrine of
Christianity, as if John's Baptism were so
much the same with Christ's, that it is not
to be perfected by the latter. If any one
then or now were Baptized only by John's
Baptism, he ought to be Baptized again. It
is essential to Christian Baptism, to be Baptized
into the Name of the Father, and of the
Son (as buried and risen with him) and
of the Holy Ghost. But John's Baptism had
not all this; therefore it is not the (now)
Christian Baptism.

8. And he went into the syna-
gogue, and spake boldly for the
space of three months, disputing
and persuading the things concern-
ing the kingdom of God.

8. Note, The Gospel is the Doctrine of
God's Reign by the Messiah.

9. But when divers were har-
dened, and believed not, but spake
evil of that way before the multi-
tude, he departed from them, and
separated the disciples, disputing
daily in the school of one Ty-
nannus.

9. The Ears of Christians being unfit
to bear their reproaching and blaspheming of
Christ, he separated the Disciples from the
publick Synagogue of the Jews to a private
School.

10. And this continued by the
space of two years; so that all
they which dwelt in Asia, heard
the word of the Lord Jesus, both
Jews and Greeks.

10. By two years Teaching and Dispu-
ting, the Gospel was spread through all Asia
proconfusar.

11. And God wrought special
miracles by the hands of Paul:
12. So that from his body were
brought unto the sick, handker-
chiefs or aprons, and the diseases
departed from them, and the evil
spirits went out of them.

11. So many-and great were the Mi-
racles and Cures done by Paul's means, that
his corporal presence could not serve all,
but by Cloaths sent from his Body they at
a distance were cured.

13. Then certain of the vag-
bond Jews, exorcists, took upon
them to call over them which had
evil spirits, the name of the Lord
Jesu, saying, We adjure you by
Jesu whom Paul preacheth. 14 And
there were seven sons of one Sceva
a Jew, and chief of the priests,
which did so.

13. Seven Sons of one of the Jews Chief
Priests, being Vagabonds, Exorcists that pre-
tended to Conjure out Devils, seeing Paul's
Miracles had (like Simon Magus) a desire to
do the like, and thought that saying the
same words would serve without the same
Faith and Grace (as Hypocrites do in the
matters of Salvation).

15. And the evil spirit answered
and said, Jesus I know, and Paul I
know; but who are ye? 16 And
the man in whom the evil spirit
was, leapt on them, and overcame
them, and prevailed against them,
so that they fled out of that house
naked and wounded.

15. Words without Faith would not work
to cast out Devils, and Christ would not
give power to his Name used as a Charm:
but Satan strengthened the Man to wound
and shame them.

17. And this was known to all
the Jews and Greeks also dwelling
at Ephesus; and fear fell on them
all, and the name of the Lord Jesus
was magnified.

17. This being commonly known, the
name of Christ was more reverenced and
honoured.

18. And many that believed
came, and confessed, and shewed
their deeds.

18. Many Converts openly confessed their
former evil deeds.

19. Many also of them which
used curious arts, brought their
books together, and burned them
before all men: and they counted
the price of them, and found it
fifty thousand pieces of silver. 20.
So mightily grew the word of God,
and prevailed.
Acts 19:19-31

19. To shew the truth of their Repentance by the Renunciation of their former delusions, and that no man else might be hurt by their ill books, or make an ill use of them, they would not sell but burn their books of Magick and Charms and Idolatrous Rites and Divination; though the price amounted to a very great summa (not pretend ing as Judas that this Money might have been given to the poor). This showed the power of God's Word and Grace, which so prevailed against delusions and the love of Money.

21. After these things were ended, Paul purposed in the Spirit, when he had passed through Macedonia, and Achaia, to go to Jerusalem, saying, After I have been there, I must also see Rome. 22. So he went into Macedonia two of them that ministered unto him, Timotheus, and Erastus; but he himself stayed in Asia for a season.

21. Intending to go to Jerusalem, he sent two that were as Servants to him in attending and helping him in his Ministry.

23. And the same time there arose no small stir about that way.

24. For a certain man named Demetrius, a silversmith, which made silver shrines for Diana, brought no small gain unto thecraftmen.

25. Whom he called together with the workmen of like occupation, and said,

23.4. One whole Trade was to make either Medals, that had the Image of the Temple of Diana, to sell, or else little Boxes in which the Image of Diana in her Temple was carried about in Procession by them.

Note, It is worldly interest and commodity, and love of Money, that causeth Enmity and Persecution against the Servants of Christ, who must Preach the Gospel contrary to this interest.

25. Sirs, ye know that by this craft we have our wealth; moreover, ye see and hear, that not alone at Ephesus, but almost throughout all Asia, this Paul hath persuaded and turned away much people, saying, that they be no gods which are made with hands: 27. So that not onely this our craft is in danger to be fet at nought; but also that the temple of the great goddess Diana should be despoiled, and her magnificence should be destroyed, whom all Asia, and the world worshippeth. 28. And when they heard these sayings, they were full of wrath, and cried out, saying, Great is Diana of the Ephesians.

25, 26, 27. Note, Arguments from Wealth and Interest are unanswerable with blinded Worldlings, and raise the rage of the Rabble against Reformation. Here we may see what refineth Reformation in the Church of Rome? Can it be hoped that any Truth or Reason should prevail the Pope and Cardinals, and all their worldly Pretexts to give up their Wealth, Grandeur, Power and Dominion, and all their Lay Chancellors to surrender with repentance their gainful Usurpation of the Power of the Keys? And all their Courts (called) Ecclesiastick, Officials, Committaries, Surrogates, Archdeacons, and all the multitude of their sub-officers, to become poor by giving over their Trade of Money-catching, and all their Inquiritors to vomit up their blood and gain? And all the Crowds of Jesuits and Fryers to lose their Revenues and Life of Ease? And their worldly Clergy, who live in lazy Ignorance, and fleshly ease and pleasure, and railing at truth and serious Godliness, to become poor and base by renouncing their Usurpation, and their maintenances and domination, which they get by pretending to watch and rule for the saving of the People's Souls. What power but God's can overcome all this?

29. And the whole city was filled with confusion; and having caught Gaius and Aristarchus, men of Macedonia, Paul's companions in travel, they rushed with one accord into the theatre. 30. And when Paul would have entered in unto the people, the disciples suffered him not.

29. Interest causeth rage and confusion.
Ch. 19. The People appeared. The

31. And certain of the chief of 
Aph, which were his friends, sent 
unto him, desiring him that he 
would not adventure himself into 
the Theatre.

31. The Theatre was the place where 
they met to judge Offenders and call them 
to Wild beasts: And some of the Priests 
or Heathen Masters of those Executions fa-
voured Paul, and dissuaded him from com-
ing.

32. Some therefore cried one 
thing, and some another: for the 
assembly was confus'd, and the more 
part knew not wherefore they were 
come together.

32. Note, What Reason or Justice is to be 
expected where the ignorant Rabble are 
up and rage?

33. And they drew Alexander 
out of the multitude, the Jews 
putting him forward. And Alex-
ander beckened with the hand, 
and would have made his de-
fence unto the people. 34. But 
when they knew that he was a 
Jew, all with one voice about the 
space of two hours cried out, Great 
is Diana of the Ephesians.

33. Note, It's like, but not certain that 
this Alexander was he that Paul tells 
Timothy did him much evil: Whether he were 
a Jew or a Christian by Religion is uncer-
tain.

35. And when the town-clerk 
had appeased the people, he said, 
Ye men of Ephesus, what man is 
there that knoweth not how that 
the city of the Ephesians is a wor-
shipper of the great goddess Diana, 
and of the image which fell down 
from Jupiter? 36. Seeing then 
that these things cannot be spoken 
against, ye ought to be quiet, and 
to do nothing rashly. 37. For ye 
have brought hither these men, 
which are neither robbers of chur-
ches, nor yet blasphemers of your 
goddes.

35. Note, It is the Office of Rulers to ap-
pease the Rabble's rage by Reason and Au-
thority. 2. It seems the Christians in wis-
dom had averted Christianity without say-
ing much against Diana, which would have 
enraged the People against them.

38. Wherefore if Demetrius, and 
the craftiness which are with him, 
have a matter against any man, the 
law is open, and there are deputi-
ties; let them implead one an-
other.

38. If they have any Action, let it be 
tried fairly at the Judicature by Law, and 
not thus by Tumult.

39. But if ye enquire any thing 
concerning other matters, it shall 
be determined in a lawful assem-
ibly.

39. If beside matters of wrong you have 
any Accusation of more publick concern, 
it must be tried in a greater Assembly and 
higher Judicature. Note, The higher Judi-
catures consist of Fuller Assemblies than the 
lower.

40. For we are in danger to be 
called in question for this day's up-

to: there being no cause whereby we may give an account of this concourse. 41. And when he had thus spoken, he dismissed the 
assembly.

40. Our Superiors are justly jealous of 
Tumults, and we are in danger to be ques-
tioned for this, and can give no just reason to excuse it.

CHA. XX.

1. And after the uprore was 
ceased, Paul called unto 
him the disciples, and embraced 
them, and departed for to go into 
Macedonia. 2. And when he had 
gone over those parts, and had 
given them much exhortation, he 
came into Greece. 3. And there 
abode three mouths: 1. Note, He spared no labour to save 
Souls and gather Churches.

3. And when the Jews laid wait 
for him, as he was about to sail 
into

11. When he therefore was come up again, and had broken bread, and eaten, and talked a long while, even till break of day, so he departed.


12. And they brought the young man alive, and were not a little comforted.

12. Note, Had he died, some would have said, This is the effect of Christianity: Others, this is the fruit of Conventicles, and night Meetings: Others, this is the fruit of long and unseasonable Preaching: and they would have been hardened by the Suidal.

13. And we went before to ship, and failed unto Assos, there intending to take in Paul: for so had he appointed, minding himself to go afoot.

13. Note, It was these poor labouring feet Preachers that Planted the Catholick Church, and not Mitred Pompous Princes and Lords, or the worldly crew.

14. And when he met with us at Assos, we took him in, and came to Mitylene. 15. And we failed thence, and came the next day over against Chios; and the next day we arrived at Samos, and tarried at Trogyllium; and the next day we came to Miletus.

16. For Paul had determined to fail by Ephesus, because he would not spend the time in Asia: for he hafted, if it were possible for him, to be at Jerusalem the day of Pentecost. 17. And from Miletus he sent to Ephesus, and called the elders of the church.

17. Note, They that tell us that by the Elders of the Church is meant all the Diocesan Bishops of Asia, should tell us, 1. Why Luke would not tell us so? 2. Why all Asia is called a Church in the singular number, when we never find the Churches of Judea, Galatia, or any other Country so called.

ing, that bonds and afflictions abide me.

22. And now I am going to Jerusalem, by the millions of God's spirit who directeth my way, in expectation of bonds, not knowing just what and how I shall suffer, but that where ever I come, the Holy Ghost in others that are Prophets tells me, that bonds and afflictions must befall me.

24. But none of these things move me, neither count I my life dear unto my self, so that I might finish my course with joy, and the ministry which I have received of the Lord Jesus, to testify the gospel of the grace of God.

24. But the expectation of suffering, keketh not my Faith or Resolution: For it can but amount to their taking away my life: And I account not my life dear, if I may lay it down in so good a cause, and for so great a benefit, as is the finishing of the race or course of Life, which God hath assigned me to, with joy, as one that is past danger and ready to receive the Crown, and the full performance of the Commission which I have received of the Lord, to proclaim and testify the Gospel of Grace for the gathering of the Church and saving of souls.

Acts. 1. Suffering must not shake the faith or resolution of a Christian, especially a Minister of Christ. 2. We should not only endeavour to finish our course of Christian and Ministry with Fidelity, but also with joy. 3. Good beginnings are not enough without well finishing our Course. 4. Life must not be thought too dear to lay down for so desirable an end. 5. Martyrs may end their course with joy.

Quest. How should we finish our course with joy? Ans. 1. Take God and Heavenly Glory for your all or only happiness, and believe it firmly. 2. Give up your selves wholly to his Love and Service without reserve. 3. Live on the Mediation of Christ by Faith.

25. And now behold, I know that ye all, among whom I have gone preaching the kingdom of God, shall see my face no more.

25. Note, O hear ye Teachers, as though that shortly shall see their Facies on Earth no more.

26. Where-
26. Wherefore I take you to record this day, that I am pure from the blood of all men. 27. For I have not shunned to declare unto you all the counsel of God.

26. You are my Witnesses, that if any perish, it is not long of me, for want of Teaching; for I have not concealed from you any Truth necessary to your Salvation committed to my trust.

28. Take heed therefore unto your selves, and to all the flock, over which the holy Ghost hath made you overseers, to feed the church of God, which he hath purchased with his own blood.

29. Use your greatest care and watchfulness and labour, first about your selves (that your judgments may be found, your hearts holy, and your lives exemplary), and then for all the flock (that one flock at Ephesus over which the Holy Ghost, by his inward qualifying and exciting you, and by his outward call, by the flock and the Ordainers, hath made you so many Bishops or Overseers: spare for no diligence to feed and guide this Church of God, which Christ the Son of God hath so much loved, as to purchase it with his own Blood.

Note 1. The work of the Ministry is not Impeccuniest and Idleness, but a great care and labour for our own Souls and all the flock, whose greatest danger and necessities require it. O, wo, wo, wo, to idle, worldly, ungodly Treacherous Bishops and Ministers!

2. He is no true Minister as to his own Concern and Salvation, who is not made such by the Holy Ghost, though his atis may be valid to the guilty People. 3. Christ's Blood hath purchased the Church in a fuller sense than he is said to die for all. 4. The blood of Christ may be called the blood of God. 5. The reasons before mentioned make me think that it is the one Church of Ephesus, and not all in Asia that had all these Bishops. It's called here the [flock and the Church] in the singular number; and I remember not that any Church under the Gospel is so called, save only a single Church, and the Universal Church, and not a Collection of many Churches.

29. For I know this, that after my departing shall grievous wolves enter in among you, not sparing the flock.

29. I foreknew that dangerous Heretics and Tyrannical Domineers will enter, who as Wolves, may be known by the mischief which they do to the Flock.

30. All of your own selves shall men arise, speaking perverse things, to draw away disciples after them.

30. Even out of your own Church (if not of you Bishops that hear me) shall some arise, that shall vend unsound and novel Doctrines, purposely to draw Disciples to admire and follow them: O then, what Church can be secure from such hurtful Ministers and corruptions!

31. Therefore watch, and remember that by the space of three years, I ceased not to warn every one night and day with tears.

31. Remember my example and imitate it, left it condemn you, &c. Note, Did Paul warn every one night and day with Tears, in a Diocese of many hundred Faria Churches?

32. And now, brethren, I commend you to God, and to the word of his grace, which is able to build you up, and to give you an inheritance among all them which are sanctified.

32. And now Brethren, I have no greater Benediction for you, nor Counsel to you, but that God may be your God, your All, your Guide, Protector and Reward, and the word of his Grace may be your Rule, your Employment, and your Truth, which is sufficient in its kind, by the help of the Spirit to build you yet higher in Faith, Love and Comfort, and to secure you of the Inheritance among the Sanctified which it promises.

33. I have coveted no man's silver, or gold, or apparel.

33. Note, The worldly self seekers that cannot say this, are not such as Christ will own or bless.

34. Yea, you your selves know, that these hands have ministred unto my necessities, and to them that were with me.

34. Note, Worldly Labour for worldly Love is forbid in a Minister, but in necessity it is laudable.
35. I have shewed you all things, how that to labouring ye ought to support the weak; and to remember the words of the Lord Jesus, how he said, It is more blessed to give them to receive.

35. Note, This labouring of Paul is exemplary to Ministers when necessary. 2. If Ministers must labour to have to give to the relief of others, how much more others that have not such occasion as the Minister work? They live wickedly like Sodomites that live idly without any labour profitable to others, mostly because they are rich and in no need themselves.

3. It is uncertain whether Paul cite this saying of Christ as verbally told him, though not written, or whether he spoke it only as the sense and not the words which are recorded. 4. To be a Giver is more honourable than to be a Receiver.

36. And when he had thus spoken, he kneeled down, and prayed with them all.

36. Note, Prayer is a meet way of parting with our Friends, and shewing our love to them, commending them to God. All things are sanctioned by it.

37. And they all wept sore, and fell on Paul's neck, and kissed him.

37. Note, This love causeth sorrow here, and thus we part at last with our Friends with tears and grief, with whom we lived with joy. But we shall meet again with greater joy, and never part.

CHAP. XXI.

And it came to pass, that after we were gotten from them, and had lanced, we came with a straight course unto Coos, and the day following unto Rhodes, and from thence unto Patara. And finding a ship sailing over unto Phenicia, we went aboard, and set forth. 3. Now when we had discovered Cyprus, we left it on the left hand, and sailed into Syria, and landed at Tyre: for there the ship was to unhale her burden. 4. And finding disciples, we tarried there seven days: who said to Paul through the Spirit, that he should not go up to Jerusalem.

4. Note, Was the Spirit in Paul and in them contrary? No, but the Spirit in them told them in what danger he would be at Jerusalem, and then they in kindness, as Men, diffused him, but not that the Spirit forbid him, but carried him on to it, and therefore he went on.

5. And when we had accomplished those days, we departed, and went our way, and they all brought us on our way, with wives and children, till we were out of the city: and we kneeled down on the shore, and prayed.

5. Note, The loving Communion of Saints and Prayer, are the mark of true Disciples. Beza conjectures that they are called Disciples as mere Christians, not ordered into a particular Church State: And that they are called the Brethren, when associated in Church order.

6. And when we had taken our leave one of another, we took ship; and they returned home again. 7. And when we had finished our course from Tyre, we came to Ptolemias, and saluted the brethren, and abode with them one day. 8. And the next day we that were of Paul's company departed, and came unto Cæsarea; and we entered into the house of Philip the evangelist, (which was one of the seven) and abode with him.

6. Note, Luke who was one of Paul's ordinary Company makes no mention of himself and his own actions and labours, as if he were no body.

9. And the same man had four daughters, virgins, which did prophesie.

9. Note, Though Women were not to speak as Teachers in the Assemblies, they might have the extraordinary gifts of the Spirit,
10. And as wee tarried there many days, there came down from Judea a certain prophet named Agabus. 11. And when he was come unto us, he took Paul's girdle, and bound his own hands and feet, and said, Thus faith the holy Ghost, So shall the Jews at Jerusalem bind the man that oweth this girdle, and shall deliver him into the hands of the Gentiles.

11. Note, God foresaweth his Servants sufferings, nor as bidding them avoid them, but as warning them to prepare.

12. And when we heard these things, both wee and they of that place, besought him not to go up to Jerusalem.

12. Note, As Men, they persuaded him to avoid the danger.

13. Then Paul answered, What mean ye to vveep, and to break mine heart? for I am ready not to be bound onely, but also to die at Jerusalem for the name of Jesus.

13. You do but become your selves the Authors of my sufferings; What are Bonds, and what is Life, that I should not cheerfully entertain them for the name of Jesus my Lord?

Note, The condolence and temptations of compassionate Friends, are oft more grievous than persecution.

14. And when he would not be persuaded, we seacked, saying, The will of the Lord be done.

14. We saw by his resolution and unsurpassableenes of that it was God's will, and we submitted to it.

15. And after those days we took up our carriages, and went up to Jerusalem. 16. There went with us also certain of the disciples of Cæsarea, and brought with them one Mnason of Cyprus, an old disciple, with whom we should lodge. 17. And when we were come to Jerusalem, the brethren received us gladly.

15. Mnason lodged us, and the Church gladly owned us.

18. And the day following Paul went in with us unto James; and all the elders were present.

18. Note, They that say, all the Elders were all the Bishops of Judea, do without proof, feign Paul to have sent word before of his coming, and desired a Council to be gathered to entertain him; or else they take, all the Bishops of Judea to be very gross Nonresidentes, that were all found the first day, so far from their Flocks.

19. And when he had saluted them, he declared particularly what things God had wrought among the Gentiles by his ministry. 20. And when they heard it, they glorified the Lord.


20. And said unto him, Thou seekest, brother, how many thousands of Jews there are which believe, and they are all zealous of the law.

21. And they are informed of thee that thou teachest all the Jews which are among the Gentiles, to forsake Moses, saying, that they ought not to circumcise their children, neither to walk after the customs.

20, 21. They are told, that thou teachest not only the Gentiles, but the Jews to forsake Circumcision, and Mosaic Law and the Customs.

22. What is it therefore? the multitude must needs come together, for they will hear that thou art come. 23. Do therefore this that we say to thee: we have four men which have a vow on them; 24. Them take, and purifie thyself with them, and be at charges with them, that they may have their heads: and all may know, that those things whereof they were informed concerning thee, are nothing, but that thou thyself art walkest orderly, and keepest the law.

22. The
22. The Multitude of Christian Jews will hear of thy coming, deliver them thus from this offence; we have four Men that made the Nazarites vow to abstain from some things a certain time, which is now expired, and they are to have themselves ceremoniously in the Temple: Go thou with them, and perform there the legal Ceremonies of Purification, and be at the cost of this solemnity on them, that the People may know that the report of thee is not true, but that thou being a Jew dost thy self keep the Law.

Note, The Law was by Christ abrogated as to the use of the Types and Ceremonies, as signifying him that was to come. The political part ceased when their policy was disdained by their ruin: And the moral natural part Christ continued as his Law. And the Abrogation of the rite was not fully made known at first, but by degrees; and the exercise of it long tolerated to the Jews.

25. As touching the Gentiles which believe, we have written and concluded, that they observe no such thing, save only that they keep themselves from things offered to idols, and from blood, and from strangled, and from fornication.

25. We intend not this for the Gentiles, nor would bring them under the yoke of Moses’s Law, &c.

26. Then Paul took the men, and the next day purifying himself with them, entred into the temple, to signifie the accomplishment of the days of purification, until that an offering should be offered for every one of them.

26. Paul did as they advised him, and performed all the Ceremonies required, and came to the Temple to make it known, that the days of Purification were accomplished, till they were to offer.

27. And when the seven days were almost ended, the Jews which were of Asia, when they saw him in the temple, stirred up all the people, and laid hands on him,

28. Crying out, Men of Israel, help: this is the man that teacheth all men every where against the people, and the law, and this place: and farther, brought Greeks also into the temple, and hath polluted this holy place. 29. (For they had seen before with him in the city, Trophimus an Ephesian, whom they supposed that Paul had brought into the temple).

27. Note, Some think that God let out this affliction on Paul, for complying to fee the People; as if it had been canonic Counsel which he followed. But that is not to be supposed, that both the Apostles and Elders, and he himself, who was guided by the Spirit, should herein err and be misled: This would leave us uncertain of the truth of their writings. But it was the way of fulfilling God’s decree; and tells us what a task it is to have to do with such Men: Whether they be pleas’d or not, we must suffer by them.

30. And all the city was moved, and the people ran together: and they took Paul, and drew him out of the temple: and forthwith the doors were shut.

30. In blind rage they drag’d him out of the Temple as a Profaner of it.

31. And as they went about to kill him, tidings came unto the chief captain of the band, that all Jerusalem was in an uprore.

31. This sort of zeal maketh Men think it no sin but a serving of God, to murder the best of Saints, as a Sacrifice to their holy Temple and Ceremonies.

32. Who immediately took soldiery, and centurions, and ran down unto them: and when they saw the chief captain and the soldiery, they left beating of Paul.

32. Note, Even a Heathen Government is better than the Popular rage of blind ceremonious superstitious Zealots. 2. Heathens are oft the Protectors of Christians, against the blind rage of those that professed devotion to the same God.

33. Then the chief captain came near, and took him, and commanded him to be bound with two chains:
chain; and demanded who he was, and what he had done. 34. And some cried one thing, some another among the multitude: and when he could not know the certainty for the tumult, he commanded him to be carried into the cattle.

33, 34. A Heathen would hear the cause before he judgeth it, when superstitious Zealots execute before they try or hear.

35. And when he came upon the stairs, so it was, that he was born of the fouldiers, for the violence of the people. 36. For the multitude of the people followed after, crying, Away with him.

35. The Heathen Soldiers were fain by force, to carry and guard him from these Hypocrites.

37. And as Paul was to be led into the cattle, he said unto the chief captain, May I speak unto thee? Who said, Canst thou speak Greek? 38. Art not thou that Egyptian which before these days madest an uprore, and leddest out into the wilderness four thousand men that were murderers?

37, 38. The tumult about him made him suspect him to be an Incendiary that had lately raised sedition.

39. But Paul said, I am a man which am a Jew of Tarsus, a city in Cilicia, a citizen of no mean city: and I beseech thee, suffer me to speak unto the people. 40. And when he had given him licence, Paul stood on the stairs, and beckened with the hand unto the people: and when there was made a great silence, he spake unto them in the Hebrew tongue, saying,

39, 40. When he had given him leave to speak, and procured silence and audience by his Authority, which else the Multitude of Legal Zealots would not have granted him, he spake to them in the Chaldee Tongue then called the Hebrew, because it was understood by a greater number than the Greek. This sheweth that Greek was not then most common.

CHAP. XXII.

1. Men, brethren, and fathers, hear ye my defence which I make now unto you. 2. (And when they heard that he spake in the Hebrew tongue to them, they kept the more silence: and he said,) 3. I am verily a man which am a Jew, born in Tarsus, a city in Cilicia, yet brought up in this city, at the feet of Gamaliel, and taught according to the perfect manner of the law of the fathers, and was zealous towards God, as ye all are this day.

3. I am a Jew brought up a Disciple of Gamaliel, under the same laws and customs, and as zealous for God in your way, as you now are.

4. And I persecuted this way unto the death, binding and delivering into prisons both men and women.

4. And as you are affected with zealous cruelty now against Christians, so was I then, and persecuted them even to death, binding and delivering them into prison, both men and women.

5. As also the high priest doth bear me witness, and all the estate of the elders: from whom also I received letters unto the brethren, and went to Damascus, to bring them which were there, bound unto Jerusalem, for to be punished.

5. The High Priest and all the Council of Elders (called the Sanhedrim) know this, from whom I had Letters authorizing me to bring them Prisoners to Jerusalem to be punished.

6. And it came to pass, that as I made my journey, and was come nigh unto Damascus about noon, suddenly there shone from heaven a great light round about me.

7. And I fell unto the ground, and heard,
Ch. 22. How Paul was converted. Ch. 22.

heard a voice saying unto me, Saul, Saul, why persecutest thou me?
6, 7. I saw a Light, and heard a Voice, &c.

Now, When Christ will speak in Power and Terror, he will call down the proudest Persecutor. 2. Christ taketh the persecuting of his Servants, and striving against his Gospel, as persecuting himself, it being against his Friends and for his Cause.

8. And I answered, Who art thou, Lord? And he said unto me, I am Jesus of Nazareth whom thou persecutest.

8. Note, Did Persecutors know Christ aright, and know that it is him in his Servants whom they persecute, they durst not, they would not do it.

9. And they that were with me, saw indeed the light, and were afraid; but they heard not the voice of him that spake to me.

9. They saw the Light, and heard the sound (like Thunder) but saw no man, nor heard the voice and words that were spoken to me, and which I heard.

10. And I said, What shall I do, Lord? And the Lord said unto me, Arise, and go into Damascus, and there it shall be told thee of all things which are appointed for thee to do.

10. I will not this way by voice from heaven, tell thee thy duty, I have established the way of notifying it by my Ministers and Spirit: Go to Damascus, and I will send thee a Teacher.

Note, Souls duly humbled are ready to do any thing that God would have them do.

11. And when I could not see for the glory of that light, being led by the hand of them that were with me, I came into Damascus.

11. Note, God made the Light it self to blind him, as an Emblem of his persecuting blindness.

12. And one Ananias, a devout man according to the law, having a good report of all the Jews which dwelt there, 13. Came unto me, and stood, and said unto me, Brother Saul, receive thy sight. And the same hour I looked up upon him.

12. Ananias a zealos Jew, though a Christian, well spoken of by the Jews themselves, was sent to restore my sight, &c.

14. And he said, The God of our fathers hath chosen thee, that thou shouldst know his will, and see that just one, and shouldst hear the voice of his mouth. 15. For thou shalt be his witness unto all men, of what thou hast seen and heard.

14, 15. It is the free grace and will of God that hath chosen thee to see Christ, (whom thou persecustruct) and to hear his voice from Heaven, and to be his witness of what thou hast seen and heard.

Note, Paul is a full instance of God's special electing grace.

16. And now why tarriest thou, arise, and be baptized, and wash away thy sins, calling on the name of the Lord.

16. Delay not, but presently repent and believe in Christ, and give up thy self to him in his baptismal Covenant, and as the Water washeth this body, his pardoning grace through the merits of his blood and righteousness, shall wash away the guilt of thy sins: and call on the Lord for Mercy and for his Spirit.

17. And it came to pass that when I was come again to Jerusalem, even while I prayed in the temple, I was in a trance; 18. And saw him saying unto me, Make haste, and get thee quickly out of Jerusalem: for they will not receive thy testimony concerning me.

17. Note, God that foreknew that the Jews would obstinately reject Paul, directed his Ministry from them elsewhere.

19. And I said, Lord, they know that I am imprisoned, and kept in every synagogue that believeth on thee. 20. And when the blood of thy martyr Stephen was shed, I also was standing by, and consenting unto

came, and laid unto him, Tell me, art thou a Roman? He said, Yea.
25. And the chief captain answered, With a great summ obtained I this freedom. And Paul said, But I was free-born.
26. Art thou a Roman Denizon? Tarsus was a City that was enfranchised with the Roman privileges.
27. Then straightway they departed from him which should have examined him: and the chief captain also was afraid after he knew that he was a Roman, and because he had bound him.
28. Note, The fear of Man's Laws hath more power with worldly Men, than the fear of God.
29. On the morrow, because he would have known the certainty wherefore he was accused of the Jews, he loosed him from his bands, and commanded the chief priests and all their council to appear, and brought Paul down, and set him before them.
30. He would hear him and them together.

CHAP. XXIII.

1. And Paul earnestly beholding the council, said, Men and brethren, I have lived in all good conscience before God, until this day.
2. What if Paul persecrue with a good Conscience? Answ. He went according to his Conscience, though in sinful ignorance.
3. And the high priest Ananias commanded them that stood by him, to smite him on the mouth. Answ. The usual Justice of proud Arch-priests, whose will is instead of reason and equity.
4. Then said Paul unto him, God shall smite thee, thou whited wall: for fittest thou to judge me after the law, and commandest me to be smitten contrary to the law?
Ch. 23. Diffusion among The Acts. Paul's Accusers. Ch. 23:

they that stood by, said, Revilest thou God's high priest?

3. Note, The gross injustice of the Arch-priest is not blamed by them, but Paul taken as criminal for reproofing it.

5. Then said Paul, I wist not, brethren, that he was the high priest: For it is written, Thou shalt not speak evil of the ruler of thy people.

5. Note, Some think that Paul confessed himself guilty of rashness or passion: But others rather think that he spake but ironically, Amaias being indeed no High Priest but an Usurper: but yet it was not prudence for P. w. openly to say so: q.d. [I knew not that he was the true High Priest [for he was not: and I confess it's Sin to revile Rulers, for it is forbidden:] But it's no sin to vindicate innocence, and declare the un-righteousness of Oppressors, and Prophetically to foretell God's judgments against them. Christ said more who never sinned, and was made under the Law, Rulers are not unreprouvable.

6. But when Paul perceived that the one part were Sadducees, and the other Pharisees, he cried out in the council, Men and brethren, I am a Pharisee, the son of a Pharisee: of the hope and resurrection of the dead, I am called in question.

6. He took the advantage of their own differences, to draw the Pharisees to favour him, and to turn their opposition against each other. He spake nothing but the Truth, but he left out one half of the truth, and so it was a sort of Equivocation; which is a speaking part of the truth and concealing another part, knowing that the hearer will thence misunderstand it: This is a fault when we are obliged to declare the whole, or when it's injurious to the Hearsers or to the Truth, but by concealment to occasion other Mens error or deceit, is not always a sin.

7. And when he had so said, there arose a division between the Pharisees and the Sadducees: and the multitude was divided. 8. For the Sadducees say that there is no resurrection, neither angel nor spirit; but the Pharisees confess both.

8. How bad a State was the Jewish Church in, when Men that believed no life but this, had equal power with the left in Priesthood and Government? 2. What Hypocrites were these Pharisees that could thus embody with damnable Hereticks, and yet could not endure Christians, but silenced and murdered them like the Papist Prelates, who can endure Jews and Atheists, while they burn or silence Protestants.

9. And there arose a great cry: and the scribes that were of the Pharisees part arose, and strove, saying, We find no evil in this man: but if a spirit or an angel hath spoken to him, let us not fight against God.

9. Note, See how partiality will drive Mens judgment according to the interest of a party or faction.

10. And when there arose a great diffusion, the chief captain fearing lest Paul should have been pulled in pieces of them, commanded the soldiers to go down, and to take him by force from among them, and to bring him into the castle. 11. And the night following, the Lord stood by him, and said, Be of good cheer, Paul: for as thou hast testified of me in Jerusalem, so must thou bear witness also at Rome.

11. Note, God's encouragements accompany his commands and faithful service.

12. And when it was day, certain of the Jews banded together, and bound themselves under a curse, saying, that they would neither eat nor drink till they had killed Paul.

12. Note, Seeing the Pharisees now spake for him, it seems all or most of these furious then were Sadducees, who were then the strongest Party. And even to this day, those that believe no life to come, are the most cruel Enemies of Believers: And what should death from bloody Vows, Conspiracies and Perjuries, when yet only Devilish malice doth provoke thetis?
13. And they were more then fourty which had made this conspiracy. 14. And they came to the chief priesstes and elders, and said, We have bound our selves under a great curse, that we will eat nothing until we have slaine Paul. 15. Now therefore ye with the council, signifie to the chief captain, that he bring him down unto you to morrow, as though ye would enquire something more perfectly concerning him; and we, or ever he come near, are ready to kill him.

16. O what a Clergy was this, that must head a confederacy of murdering Saddukses.

17. And when Paul's sisters saw heard of their lying in wait, they went and entred into the castle, and told Paul. 18. Then Paul called one of the centurions unto him, and said, Bring this young man unto the chief captain: for he hath a certain thing to tell him. 19. So he took him, and brought him to the chief captain, and said, Paul the prisoner called me unto him, and prayed me to bring this young man unto thee, who hath something to say unto thee. 20. Then the chief captain took him by the hand, and went with him aside privately, and asked him, What is that thou hast to tell me? 20. And he said, The Jews have agreed to desire thee, that thou wouldst bring down Paul to morrow into the council, as though they would enquire somewhat of him more perfectly. 21. But do not thou yield unto them: for there lie in wait for him of them more then fourty men, which have bound themselves with an oath, that they will neither eat nor drink till they have killed him: and now are they ready, looking for a promise from thee.

16. Note, 1. No Conspiracies are kept secret from God, who can detect and frustrate them. 2. No doubt but these Men that could Vote to Satisfie rage; did break it rather than famish.

22. So the chief captain then let the young man depart, and charged him, See thou tell no man that thou hast shewed these things to me.

23. And he called unto him two centurions, saying, Make ready two hundred soldiers to go to Cesarea, and horsemen threescore and ten, and spearmen two hundred, at the third hour of the night. 24. And provide them beasts, that they may set Paul on, and bring him Safe unto Felix the governor.

Note, Thus God raised forces of Heathens to defend his Servant.

25. And he wrote a letter after this manner: 26. Claudius Lysias, unto the most excellent governor Felix, sendeth greeting. 27. This I an was taken of the Jews, and should have been killed of them: then came I with an army, and rescued him, having understood that he was a Roman. 28. And when I would have known the cause wherefore they accused him, I brought him forth into their council: 29. Whom I perceived to be accused of questions of their law, but to have nothing laid to his charge worthy of death or of bonds. 30. And when it was told me, how that the Jews laid wait for the man, I sent him straightway to thee, and gave commandment to his accusers also, to say before thee what they had against him. Farewell.

Note, This Coloneel, that by a band of Soldiers rescued him; judgeth him guiltles as to the Roman Law.

31. Then the soldiers, as it was commanded them, took Paul, and brought him by night to Antonius, and brought him.
tippatris. 32. On the morrow they left the horsemen to go with him, and returned to the castle. 33. Who when they came to Cæsarea, and delivered the epistle to the governor, presented Paul also before him. 34. And when the governor had read the letter, he asked of what province he was. And when he understood that he was of Cilicia; 35. I will hear thee, said he, when thine accusers are also come. And he commanded him to be kept in Herod's judgment-hall.

35. Note, A place called Herod's Hall: Not that he was there. Thus God carried on Paul toward Rome to fulfill his Will and Work.

CHAP. XXIV.

1. And after five days, Ananias the high priest descended with the elders, and with a certain orator named Tertullus, who informed the governor against Paul.

4. Note, Tertullus was the malignant Lawyer or Orator, who was to plead their charge against Paul, if not of mere malice, at least for his Fee. The Accusation is given in, and hostile prosecuted by the High Priest and Elders: Dr. Hammond thought that the word [Elders] in the Christian Church never signified any but Bishops (such as we now call Diocesan.) And it is undoubtedly that the Church borrowed that Title from the Jews Elders, and therefore meant some similitude of Offices (allowing the difference of materials and Law.) And then it would follow that the Jews Elders that made their Council were the Jewish Bishops of several distant Cities gathered together at Jerusalem: And so, that it was the Jewish Archbishop and all the Bishops under him, that were these malignant Diabolical Accusers and Persecutors: But the Jewish Elders were not such City Bishops, but a Conjunction of Laymen and Priests in a supreme Council at Jerusalem, and inferior Councils in Cities, where were Synagogues.

2. And when he was called forth, Tertullus began to accuse him, saying, Seeing that by thee we enjoy great quietness, and that very worthy deeds are done unto this nation by thy providence. 3. We accept it always, and in all places, most noble Felix, with all thankfulness.

2. 3. To win the judge by flattery, hath ever, by false Accusers, been taken for the surest way for success.

4. Notwithstanding, that I be not further tedious unto thee, I pray thee, that thou wouldst hear us of thy clemency a few words.

5. For we have found this man a pestilent fellow, and a mover of sedition among all the Jews throughout the world, and a ring-leader of the feet of the Nazarenes:

5. We have found this Man a very plague, &c.

Note. This part of the Accusation is, in general, that he was a very walking Perversity: O what Diabolism is it to judge thus of the Preachers of Love, and Mercy, and Salvation! 2. Particularly. 1. A mover of sedition among all the Jews through the Roman Empire: So Christian Reformation must be called Sedition, to stir up Rulers against it, as Defenders of the common Peace: And this to Felix was a potent argument, for he had been put to conquer and destroy one Eliezar, that came out of Egypt as a pretended Prophet, and gathered an Army of Seditionous Cut-throats that endangered the Peace. 2. The second accusation was, that he was a Leader of a Sect or Schism, calling the Christians Nazarenes in scorn, from Nazareth where Christ dwelt.

6. Who also hath gone about to profane the temple: whom we took, and would have judged according to our law.

6. The third part of the Accusation was prophaneing the Temple: Note. Would not these Infidels be thought Holy Men: They were zealous for Temple, Law and Ceremonies, against Christianness, Holiness, Innocency, and the lives of the best of Men.

7. But

14. But this I confess unto thee, that after the way which they call here, to worship the God of my fathers, believing all things which are written in the law and the prophets.

15. I am not ashamed to own it, that I worship God as a Christian, in the way they call a Heretic or Sect; for I believe the Law and the Prophets who teach it me.

16. And have hope towards God, which they themselves allow, that there shall be a resurrection of the dead, both of the just and unjust.

17. The Resurrection of Christ confirmeth my belief of the Resurrection of the dead, &c.

Note. 1. The Doctrine of a Resurrection of the just only, was not then owned by the Jews. 2. It seems by this time the Pharisees joyous in his Persecution, thought before they excused him in contention with the Sadducees.

18. And herein do I exercise my self, to have always a conscience void of offence toward God, and toward men.

19. And in this hope of a Resurrection and the Christian Faith, my daily care and exercise is, to keep my self from offending God or man by any sin, that my conscience may not be my Accusation.

20. Now after many years, I came to bring alms to my nation, and offerings.

21. To bring Alms and Offerings is no prophaneactice or sedition, &c.

22. Whereupon certain Jews from Achaia found me purified in the temple, neither with multitude, nor with tumult. 19. Who ought to have been here before thee, and object, if they had ought against me.

23. Thee. After Jews falsely thought that I had brought Trophimus into the Temple; And it being there that are the first Accusers and Witnesses, they should have been here.

24. Or else let these same here say, if they have found any evil doing.

doing in me, while I stood before the council. 21. Except it be for this one voice, that I cried standing among them, Touching the resurrection of the dead, I am called in question by you this day.

20. As to any thing that I did in the Council let them witness what they can against me: They have nothing to charge me with, but that I said, touching the resurrection of the dead, I am accused: I meant Christ's resurrection as the cause and pledge of ours.

Note. Some think that Paul here confesseth it a fault, that he equivocated to get them together by the ears, as being an a& of Carnal Wisdom, and an obturer of his confession of Christ. But most expounders rather think that he speaketh this ironically, as if he had said, unless they will make it a fault, that I said, I am called in question about the resurrection, they can charge me with none there.

22. And when Felix heard these things, having more perfect knowledge of that way, he deferred them, and said, When Lyfias the chief captain shall come down, I will know the uttermost of your matter.

23. He said, when I have got a more perfect knowledge of this way of Christianity, and how far it is against your law, and when I have spake with Colonel Lyfias of the tumults, I will judge the cause, which yet I cannot do.

24. And he commanded a centurion to keep Paul, and to let him have liberty, and that he should forbid none of his acquaintance to minister or come unto him.

25. To secure him as a prisoner at large.

24. And after certain days, when Felix came with his wife Drusilla, which was a Jewess, he sent for Paul, and heard him concerning the faith in Christ. 25. And as he reasoned of righteousness, temperance, and judgment to come, Felix trembled, and answered, Go thy way for this time; when I have a convenient season, I will call for thee.

24, 25. Note, Felix is noted by the historians of those times to be specially guilty of two crimes; injustice through covetousness, and incontinence, taking another man's wife: (This Drusilla, the niece of Antony and Cleopatra.) And so the subject moved his conscience to make him tremble.

Note. O the strength of sin that will live, even when men tremble for fear of judgment!

26. He hoped also that money should have been given him of Paul, that he might loose him; wherefore he sent for him the officer, and commended with him.

26. Note, All his trembling did not come over the love of money. Money is the world's great mediator.

27. But after two years, Porcius Festus came into Felix room; and Felix willing to shew the Jews a pleasure, left Paul bound.

27. His carnal respects to man and fame, and to please the malicious Jews, prevailed against his conscience, and he leaves Paul, a prisoner to be judged by Festus his successor, when Paul had been two years kept a prisoner.

CHAP. XXV.

Now when Festus was come into the province, after three days he ascended from Cæarea to Jerusalem. 2. Then the high priest, and the chief of the Jews informed him against Paul, and besought him, 3. And desired favour against him, that he would send for him to Jerusalem, laying wait in the way to kill him.

1, 2, 3. The malicious priests and rulers continue their murderous design, and cannot get a heathen ruler to be so bad as they.

4. But Festus answered, that Paul should be kept at Cæarea, and that he himself would depart shortly thither. 5. Let them therefore, said he, which among you are able,
able, go down with me, and accuse this man, if there be any wickedness in him. 6. And when he had tarried among them more than ten days, he went down unto Cæsarea, and the next day sitting in the judgment-seat, commanded Paul to be brought.

4. After ten days he went down and they with him.

7. And when he was come, the Jews which came down from Jerusalem, stood round about, and laid many and grievous complaints against Paul, which they could not prove; 8. While he answered for himself, Neither against the law of the Jews, neither against the temple, nor yet against Cæsar, have I offended any thing at all.

7. The Diabolists did pretend that he broke their Law, profaned their Holy Temple, and disturbed the peace, as a diabolic breaker of Cæsar’s Law: All which he denied and they could not prove.

Note. It’s strange that the Devil had not attained to what he hath done in this Age, to enable them to prove any thing by perjured Witness.

9. But Festus willing to do the Jews a pleasure, answered Paul, and said, Wilt thou go up to Jerusalem, and there be judged of these things before me?

9. The pleasing of the Priests and Multitude being more to the Ruler’s carnal Interest, than doing Justice for one poor Man, he would thus have sacrificed him to them.

10. Then said Paul, I stand at Cæsar’s judgment-seat, where I ought to be judged: to the Jews have I done no wrong, as thou very well knowest. 11. For if I be an offender, or have committed any thing worthy of death, I refuse not to die: but if there be none of these things whereof these accuse me, no man may deliver me unto them. I appeal unto Cæsar.

10. Note. Having the Roman privileges, he might appeal to the Roman Laws, which then had not condemned Christianity. But doubtless the Jews would call this Heathenism, for him to choose rather to be saved by Heathens, than to be murdered by Jews. As at this day he that had rather be saved from murder by a Maimen than Murdered or Tormented by a Papist, shall be said to be for Maimen. And here let them that grudge at Christ, for requiring us to deny our lives for him and for the Heavenly reward, consider that even Church-Tyants require as much, and that for nothing, without any such reward: If under their Inquisitions, or other Persecutions, Men do but, as every living Creature will do, strive to escape their malice and to live, and do not die without any reluctance, they call them Rebels; yea, if they do but groan and complain, it goeth for Seditious to feel when they are hurt; when it is the holy Church that doth it: Christ doth not thus condemn and Natural Love of Life, in his hardest laws of self-denial.

12. Then Festus when he had conferred with the council, answered, Hast thou appealed unto Cæsar? unto Cæsar shalt thou go.

12. Note. They might have constrained him to be judged there: but God overruled it, to spread abroad the Gospel.

13. And after certain days, king Agrippa and Bernice came unto Cæsarea to salute Festus. 14. And when they had been there many days, Festus declared Paul’s cause unto the king, saying, There is a certain man left in bonds by Felix:

15. About whom, when I was at Jerusalem, the chief priests and the elders of the Jews informed me, desiring to have judgment against him.

13. Note. This Agrippa was the Son of that Herod that was eaten to death by Worms, and Bernice was his Sister, the Wife of Pelamon, King of Oliva, who left her Husband and lived with this Brother.

16. To whom I answered, It is not the manner of the Romans to deliver any man to die before that he which is accused, have the accu-

24. Note, The lives of God's best servants are a grief to the malignant.

25. But when I found that he had committed nothing worthy of death, and that he himself hath appealed to Augustus, I have determined to send him.

26. Note, What an odious scandal did these priests call on God's law, to make it seem worse than Heathens laws!

26. Of whom I have no certain thing to write unto my lord. Wherefore I have brought him forth before you, and specially before thee, O king Agrippa, that after examination had, I might have somewhat to write. For it seemeth to me unreasonable to send a prisoner, and not withall to signifie the crimes laid against him.

26. Note, Justice is a part of the law of nature known to all.

CHAP. XXVI.

Then Agrippa said unto Paul, Thou art permitted to speak for thyself. Then Paul stretched forth the hand, and answered for himself.

1. Note, It was the custom by the motion of the hands to give notice when one was beginning to speak, to procure silent audience.

2. I think myself happy, king Agrippa, because I shall answer for myself this day before thee, touching all the things whereof I am accused of the Jews: 3. Especially, because I know thee to be expert in all customs and questions which are among the Jews: wherefore I beseech thee to hear me patiently.

2. It's a great favour for Great men to much as to hear an innocent good man speak for himself.

4. My manner of life from my youth, which was at the first among mine
mine own nation at Jerusalem, know all the Jews, Which knew me from the beginning, (if they would testify) that after the most straitest feft of our religion, I lived a Pharisee. And now I stand and am judged for the hope of the promise made of God unto our fathers: Unto which promise our twelve tribes instantly looking God day and night, hope to come: for which hopes I sake, King Agrippa, I am accused of the Jews.

9. I once was of your mind, and did not only set light by the Name of Jesus, but thought I ought to set my self against it, and oppose them that Preached and Professed it.

10. Which thing I also did in Jerusalem: and many of the saints did I shut up in prison, having received authority from the chief priests; and when they were put to death, I gave my voice against them.

11. In this blindness, I was a Persecutor of the Saints.

11. And I punished them oft in every synagogue, and compelled them to blaspheme; and being exceedingly mad against them, I persecuted them even unto strange cities.

12. Whereupon as I went to Damascus, with authority and commission from the chief priests, At mid-day, O king. I saw in the vway a light from heaven, above the brightness of the sun, shining round about me, and them which journeyed with me. And when I vvere all fallen to the earth, I heard a voice speaking unto me, and laying in the Hebrew tongue, Saul, Saul, why persecutest thou me? It is hard for thee to kick against the pricks.

12. I was Convinced by this Miracle and voice from Heaven—Ignorant man? Dost thou know whom thou persecutest and why? It will prove to thee but like spurring at Thorns with thy bare feet.

Note. Here we find that all Paul's Company fell to the ground with him. Which is not mentioned, Chap. p. or 22.

15. And I said, Who art thou, Lord?

Lord? And he said, I am Jesus whom thou persecutest.

15. It is me in my cause and servants that thou Persecutest.

16. But rise, and stand upon thy feet: for I have appeared unto thee for this purpose, to make thee a minister and a witness both of these things which thou hast seen, and of these things in the which I will appear unto thee;

16. My appearing to thee is to make thee a preacher of that thou hast been; to witness what thou now hast seen, and what I shall further tell thee by my Spirit and Works.

17. Delivering thee from the people, and from the Gentiles, unto whom now I send thee, 18. To open their eyes, and to turn them from darkness to light, and from the power of Satan unto God, that they may receive forgiveness of sins, and inheritance among them which are sanctified by faith that is in me.

17. Delivering thee both from the Jews and Gentiles, to whom now I command thee to Preach; to open the Eyes that are blinded in gross Ignorance and Idolatry, and to turn them from that darkness to the light of the saving knowledge of God and their Redeemer, from the Power of Satan whom they serve by sin, to the Belief, Love and Obedience of God, that they may hereupon receive the forgiveness of all their past sin, and right to the inheritance among the Sanctified: Which is here begun in Holiness and Communion with God and his Saints, and hereafter perfected in Glory; and all this by believing, trusting and obeying me, and my Gospel, (or by being Christians).

Note. These words were omitted by Luke, in Chap. 9. and 22. Here is a Promise to be trusted, and a Command to be obeyed.

19. Whereupon, O king Agrippa, I was not disobedient unto the heavenly vision:

19. I did not, I dare not Rebel against such a Vision, and a Command from Heaven.

20. But shewed first unto them of Damascus, and at Jerusalem, and throughout all the coasts of Judea, and then to the Gentiles, that they should repent and turn to God, and do works meet for repentance.

20. And the Gospel which I preached at Damascus, &c. is, That men should repent and turn to God, and shew the sincerity of their repentance by a Holy, Righteous, Charitable and Sober Life, (and all this in hope of Glory, purchased and promised by Christ who thus sent me.)

21. For these causes the Jews caught me in the temple, and went about to kill me.

21. This is the true cause why the Jews would have killed me, as crossing their unbelief.

22. Having therefore obtained help of God, I continue unto this day, witnessing both to small and great, saying none other things then those which the prophets and Moses did say should come: 23. That Christ should suffer, and that he should be the first that should rise from the dead, and should shew light unto the people, and to the Gentiles.

22. God hath kept me through many dangers to this day, while I testify this Gospel to all, which is but what was prophesied that Christ should dye for our sins, and rise first from death and Convert the Gentiles.

24. And as he thus spake for himself; Feustus said with a loud voice, Paul, thou art beside thy self: much learning doth make thee mad.

24. Thou art a madman, Fanatick: much Learning or Book-learning hath distracted thee.

25. But he said, I am not mad, most noble Feustus; but speak forth the words of truth and soberness.

25. For the king knoweth of these things, before whom also I speak freely: for I am persuaded that none
tain other prisoners, unto one named Julius, a centurion of Au-
gustus’ band. 2. And entring into a ship of Adramyttium, we lan-
ched, meaning to sail by the coasts of Asia, one Aristarchus a Mac-
edonian of Thessalonica, being with us. 3. And the next day we to-
ched at Sidon. And Julius courte-
ously entreated Paul, and gave
him liberty to go unto his friends
to refresh himself.
3. Heathen Soldiers are less cruel than
Jewish superstitious Priests, and Hypo-
icrites.
4. And when we had lanched from thence, we failed under Cy-
prus, because the winds were con-
trary. 5. And when we had failed
over the sea of Cilicia and Pam-
phylia, we came to Myra a city of
Lycia. 6. And there the centu-
rition found a ship of Alexandria
failing into Italy; and he put us
therein. 7. And when we had
failed slowly many days, and scarce
were come over against Cnidus,
the wind not sufferings us, we failed
under Crete, over against Samo;
8. And hardly passing it, came
unto a place which is called, The
fair havens, nigh whereunto was
the city of Laeae.
Note, God caused these difficulties to ma-
ifest his merciful Providence.
9. Now when much time was
spent, and when failing was now
dangerous, because the sea was now
already past, Paul admonished
them. 10. And said unto them,
Sirs, I perceive that this voyage
will be with hurt & much damage,
not onely of the lading and ship,
but also of our lives.
9. At the time of the Jews yearly Fast
of Expiation, which was in part of our O.S-
beth, failing used to be very dangerous on
those Seas.

CHAP. XXVII.

1. And when it was deter-
mined that we should sail into
Italy, they delivered Paul and cer-
11. Nevertheless, the centurion believed the master and the owner of the ship, more than those things which were spoken by Paul. 12. And because the haven was not commodious to winter in, the more part advised to depart thence also, if by any means they might attain to Phenice, and there to winter; which is an haven of Crete, and lieth toward the south-west, and north-west.

12. Note, Phenice a Haven-Town is described, to distinguish it from the Country called Phenice.

13. And when the south-wind blew softly, supposing that they had obtained their purpose, loosing thence they sailed close by Crete. 14. But not long after there arose against it a tempestuous wind, called Euroclydon. 15. And when the ship was caught, and could not bear up into the wind, we let her drive. 16. And running under a certain island which is called Claudia, we had much work to come by the boat: 17. Which when they had taken up, they used helps, undergirding the ship; and fearing lest they should fall into the quicksands, strake sail, and so were driven. 18. And we being exceedingly tossed with a tempest, the next day they lightened the ship: 19. And the third day we cast out with our own hands the tackling of the ship.

Note, They cast away all to save themselves: All that a man hath will he give for his life. And yet the ungodly fell their souls for nothing.

20. And when neither sun nor stars in many days appeared, and no small tempest lay on us, all hope that we should be saved, was then taken away.

21. But after long abstinence, Paul stood forth in the midst of them, and said, Sirs, ye should have hearkened unto me, and not have loosed from Crete, and to have gained this harm and los.

21. To have escaped this los.

22. And now I exhort you to be of good cheer: for there shall be no los of any man's life among you, but of the ship. 23. For there stood by me this night the angel of God, whose I am, and whom I serve, 24. Saying, Fear not, Paul; thou must be brought before Caesar: and lo, God hath given thee all them that fail with thee.

23. Note, 1. God useth his Angel for the safety and comfort of his Servants. 2. Paul mentioneth God in his Relations to us; 1. He is our Owner, whose we are: 2. Our Ruler, whom we serve; and it's implied, our Father, and Protector, In whom we trust.

25. Wherefore, 1st, be of good cheer: for I believe God, that it shall be even as it was told me. 26. Howbeit we must be cast upon a certain island.

25. I trust my God and would have you trust him.

27. But when the fourteenth night was come, as we were driven up and down in Adria about midnight, the shipmen deemed that they drew near to some country: 28. And found, and found it twenty fathoms: and when they had gone a little further, they founded again, and found it fifteen fathoms. 29. Then fearing lest they should have fallen upon rocks, they cast four anchors out of the stern, and wished for the day.

29. They hopped the Ship and durst go no further.

30. And as the shipmen were about to flee out of the ship, when
Acts. get safe to land. Ch. 27.

38. And when they had eaten enough, they lightened the ship, and cast out the wheat into the sea.

38. Note. Even future provision is cast away to save life at present. That is a duty in such a case of necessity, which in other cases would have been a great sin.

39. And when it was day, they knew not the land: but they discovered a certain creek with a shore, into which they were minded if it were possible to thrust in the ship.

40. And when they had taken up the anchors, they committed themselves unto the sea, and loosed the rudder-bands, and hoisted up the main sail to the wind, and made toward shore.

41. And falling into a place where two seas met, they ran the ship aground; and the forepart stuck fast, and remained unmoveable, but the hinder part was broken with the violence of the waves.

42. This was a shallow near a neck of land called an 8thmon where the sea is on both sides of it. The Mathhylahus call it to this day St. Paul's Landing place.

42. And the soldiers counsel was to kill the prisoners, lest any of them should swim out and escape.

42. Note. Left they should have been punished for letting them escape, they would have killed them.

43. But the centurion willing to save Paul, kept them from their purpose, and commanded that they which could swim, should cast themselves first into the sea, and get to land: and so it came to pass, that they escaped all safe to land.

4. Note. God gave them their lives for a prey.

CHAP.
And when they were escaped, then they knew that the island was called Melita. And the barbarous people shewed us no little kindness: for they kindled a fire, and received us every one, because of the present rain, and because of the cold.

1. Note. There are two Islands of this Name: And it is a Controversie which is meant: But Beza and others shew great probability that it is that called Malta, now possessed by Christians, as a Fort against the Turk.

3. And when Paul had gathered a bundle of fitches, and laid them on the fire, there came a viper out of the heat, and fastened on his hand.

3. Note. Not that Paul carried the Adder or Viper among the fitches into a Chimney; but they made the fire in some open place where the Adder lay, and was forced out by the heat.

4. And when the barbarians saw the venomous beast hang on his hand, theysaid among themselves, No doubt this man is a murderer, whom though he hath escaped the sea, yet vengeance suffereth not to live.

4. Note. Even these Barbarians believed God to be the Revenger of Murder: And yet the Priests took the Murder of Christ, and his Disciples for a Meritorious work, and zealously pursued it.

5. And he shook off the beast into the fire, and felt no harm. 6. Howbeit they looked when he should have swollen, or fallen down dead suddenly: but after they had looked a great while, and saw no harm come to him, they changed their minds, and said that he was a God.

5. Note. So mutable is vulgar Judgment.

7. In the same quarters were possessions of the chief man of the island, whose name was Publius, who received us and lodged us three days courteously. 8. And it came to pass that the father of Publius lay sick of a fever, and of a bloody flux: to whom Paul entred in, and prayed, and laid his hands on him, and healed him. 9. So when this was done, others also which had diseases in the island, came, and were healed: 10. Who also honoured us with many honours, and when we departed, they laden us with such things as were necessary.

7. Note. If we could pray as Paul did, and heal all the Sick by it. Swift. Whether men would imprison us for it? Anfw. The sick or the healed would not, but it's not unlike that Jews Priests would do it, for so they did.

11. And after three months we departed in a Ship of Alexandria, which had wintered in the isle, whose sign was Caftor and Pollux.

12. And landing at Syracuse, we tarried there three days. 13. And from thence we set a compass, and came to Rhegium: and after one day the South wind blew, and we came the next day to Putocili: 14. Where we found brethren, and were desired to tarry with them seven days: and so we went toward Rome.

14. Note. It appeareth by this that the Gospel had been received before Paul's coming thither, in the Italian Country about Rome. Whether these Brethren entertained all the Soldiers and Prisoners seven days, or Paul and his Company only, as trusted by the Centurion to come after him, is uncertain.

15. And from thence, when the brethren heard of us, they came to meet us as far as Appilorum, and the Three taverns: whom when Paul saw, he thanked God, and took courage.

15. Note,
15. *Note*, By this it appeareth also that Paul found a Church in Rome. No doubt these Brethren lived not without Assembling to worship God, being then not forbidden. But who first brought Christianity thither, or Planted a Church, or was their first Pastor, no History tells us; but it's most probable that it was neither Peter nor Paul. Circumstances have persuaded me, that Christianity came first into England by Christian Soldiers that were in the Roman Army, (such as built the Church called St. Martins near Canterbury, which Beda mentioned,) and it is more probable that such as Cornelius being Converted in Judea, and having their dependance on Rome, and business there, were like to be the first introducers of Christianity there. (As such were in Hvelvia.)

16. And when we came to Rome, the centurion delivered the prisoners to the captain of the guard: but Paul was suffered to dwell by himself, with a souldier that kept him.

16. One Soldier was his Guard.

17. And it came to pass, that after three days, Paul called the chief of the Jews together. And when they were come together, he said unto them, Men and brethren, though I have committed nothing against the people, or customs of our fathers, yet was I delivered prisoner from Jerusalem into the hands of the Romans. 18. Who when they had examined me, would have let me go, because there was no cause of death in me. 19. But when the Jews spake against it, I was constrained to appeal unto Ceasar; not that I had ought to accuse my nation of.

*Note*, Though Paul Preached against the Gentiles' Subjection to Moses' Law, yet to the Jews he only spake against the imposing it as necessary on others; and against its justifying Power without Christ. 20. I appealed in my own necessary Defence; and not as an Accuser of the Jews.

20. For this cause therefore have I called for you, to see you, and to speak with you: because that for the hope of Israel I am bound with this chain.

20. It is for Preaching that Messiah who hath long been expected and prayed for, as the Hope of Israel, that I am come hither a Prisoner in this Chain.

21. And they said unto him, We neither received letters out of Judea concerning thee, neither any of the brethren that came, shewed or spake any harm of thee. 22. But we desire to hear of thee what thou thinkest: for as concerning this sect, we know that every where it is spoken against.

21. We have had no Accusation of thee: but that we may be able to judge of thee, we would hear thee our selves, what it is that thou holdest and teachest. For Christians are every where spoken against, as an evil sect.

*Note*, He that would know how far to regard common fame against any man or party, must know what sort of people they be that report it, whether Men of truth, sobriety and conscience, or debauched, ungodly, malignant souldiers; and by what motives they are set on work, whether by God's word and will, or by Carnal intereests, and flattery of Great and ungodly Worldlings, or enmity to Holy Doctrine and Practice: And what Evidence they give to prove their Accusations.

23. And when they had appointed him a day, there came many to him into his lodging; to whom he expounded and testified the kingdom of God, periwianding them concerning Jesus, both out of the law of Moses, and out of the prophets, from morning till evening.

23. He proved to them out of the Law and Prophets, that Christ was the Messiah, whose Kingdom is spiritual, and is now begun, as foretold, upon his Resurrection and Ascension, and gathering an Universal Church by the Miracles, Gifts and Grace of the Holy Ghost.

24. And some believed the things which were spoken, and some believed not. 25. And when they agreed not among themselves, they departed,
departed, after that Paul had spoken one word, Well spake the holy Ghost by Elias the prophet, unto our fathers, 26. Saying, Go unto this people, and say, Hearing ye shall hear, and shall not understand; and seeing ye shall see, and not perceive. 27. For the heart of this people is waxed gross, and their ears are dull of hearing, and their eyes have they closed; lest they should see with their eyes, and hear with their ears, understand with their heart, and should be converted, and I should heal them.

26. You verify the words of the Prophets, being like your fore-fathers, of whom faith, that though they have their natural faculties of seeing, hearing and understanding, yet they have wilfully so indifferently and corrupted them, that is to say, the knowledge and obedience of God, they are as if they had neither eyes, ears or understanding, from whence it is that my refulgent and rejected Grace doth not convert and heal them.

28. Be it known therefore unto you, that the salvation of God is sent unto the Gentiles, and that they will hear it.

28. Be it known to you that the Christ whom you reject shall be preached to the Gentiles, and they will believe in him, and receive him for their Saviour: And Christ will set up among them the Catholic Church, and Kingdom of God, which you reject, and which shall therefore be none of yours; that boasted in your expectations of it.

29. And when he had said these words, the Jews departed, and had great reasoning among themselves.

29. Note, But so many of them believed at Rome, Jerusalem, and many Countries, as were a considerable part of the Christian Church at that time. And within four hundred years, Christianity was the professed National Religion in Judea.

30. And Paul dwelt two whole years in his own hired house, and received all that came in unto him, 31. Preaching the kingdom of God, and teaching those things which concern the Lord Jesus Christ, with all confidence, no man forbidding him.

30. And Paul was so free a Prisoner, that he was allowed to live in his own hired house, and there for two years received all, how many soever, great or small, who came to him, Preaching even in Impious Rome the Kingdom of God, as ruling Souls to Salvation by the Redeemer, Teaching all the Doctrines and Practices of Christianity, (the History of Christ, his Person, Once, Acts, Grace and Glory;) and this with all boldness and freedom, NO MAN FORBIDDING HIM, silencing him, or condemning them for Conventicles, or any way hindering him, even in Proud, Powerful, Heathen Rome: When the Religious Jews Priests and Rulers, hunted Christ's Ministers as Blood-hounds, forbidding them to Preach to the Gentiles that they might be saved, and to wrath is come upon them to the uttermost, as it will in due time on all that imitate them.

Note, 1. What Paul Preached: not vain jangling, or envious railing, but the Kingdom of God; and the things concerning Jesus Christ and Salvation.

2. Where: In Rome, and in his own hired house.

3. To whom: To all that come to him.

4. How long: Two years, at that time.

5. How: with all confidence, openness and boldness.

6. How tolerated: No man, Emperor or Senate or inferior Officer, Soldiers or Magistrates, Priests or People hindering or forbidding him, in the Capital Heathen City of the World, which yet was devoted to idolatry, and captivated the Church of God, both Jews and Gentiles. But had Paul Preached immorality, Rebellion, abusive injury to others, no doubt they would have punished him: And very many Preachers whose Doctrine is tolerable, are so abusive in naked, reviling Application, that we may say, some Orthodox Churches have need of Church Justices to keep the peace.
The Epistle of **PAUL** the Apostle, to the **ROMANS**.

The **INTRODUCTION**.

**FOR** the understanding of Paul's Epistle to the Romans, it is necessary, I. To understand his main Design and Subject. II. To that end, to know what Parties he had to do with. III. And what their several Errors were, or their Temptations to Error. IV. And by what Arguments he opposeth them, and what he grangeth them.

I. Paul's great Design is to establish the Roman Christians in the Faith of the Gospel, and in Holiness of Life, and in mutual Love and Concord against all the Temptations which then assaulted them.

II. The Adversaries of their Stability, and his Design, whom he noted, are, 1. The Roman Heathens, especially the Learned. 2. Especially the Jews, and the Judaizing Christians. 3. Some Erroneous Heretical Christians, who were inclined both to Libertinism, and to Divisions.

III. The Errors opposed by him were, I. The Heathens, who while they scorned the Faith of a Crucified Christ, shewed how little they were to be regarded by their Sins against the Light of Nature.

II. The Jews had all these following Errors: 1. Because God had made them a peculiar People, by special Privileges and Promises, they were over-pride of it, as if they had been the only Servants that God had in the World, and that none but Jews and their Proselytes were saved. 2. And to, that their Law was to be received by all the World. 3. That this Law, given to, and by Moses, for their Government as a peculiar Republick, was so excellent, because thus Divine, that the keeping of it was the sufficient and only way of Salvation. 4. Herein they overlook'd the Promise which was before the Law, and presupposed in the Law, as its Foundation, and its very Life; both the Common Promise made to lapsed Mankind in Adam and Noah, and the spiritual part of the Special Promise made to Abraham. 2. And they overlook'd the signification of their Types and Ceremonies; and looked at the Law merely as a Law of Works, rewarding or punishing for the doing or not doing it.

3. Therefore they mistook the promised Messiah to be a King of David's Line, who was to restore their Commonwealth, and subdue the Nations
The Introduction to the Epistle to the Romans.

Nations to it, and rule them in earthly Glory by that Law; and so made him subervient to Moses's Law, as to be restored by him.

6. And so they thought that this Law must endure for ever, and that to talk of its abrogation was Blasphemy against God.

III. The Judaizing Christians conjoyned Christianity and the Law, and thought, that though Christ's Miracles, Resurrection, and Spirit proved him to be the Messiah, who died for their Sins, yet he came not to change their Law, but to establish it: And first, they were long before they could be convinced, that it was not necessary to the Gentiles to be Professors to it: And when they were forced to grant that, they still held, that it was necessary to all the Jews. And therefore they kept up their Ceremonies, and separated too far from the Gentile Christians: And the Gentile Christians too much despised thse.

IV. Besides these, there were some that Heretically took it to be a part of their extraordinary Knowledge, to hold, That Christianity delivered Men not only from the Jews Law, but from Subjection to Men, and from necessary strictness in outward Actions: And they made a Party for these Opinions.

V. The Apostle, I. dealeth but briefly with the Heathens, and argues against them from their own Errors and Crimes; 1. Telling them of the Light of Nature, and then of their odious Sins against it; that the Christians might not be moved by the scorns and opposition of such a blinded uncappable sort of Adversaries.

VI. But the chief Work of his Epistle is to confute the Jews and Judaizers, and to establish the Gentile Christians against their Errors and Opposition. To which end, he proveth all these things;

1. That the Gentiles are not bound to receive the Law of Moses, and become Jews.

2. That they may be justified and saved by the Faith of Christ, as well as the Jews.

3. That God foretold their Calling by the Prophets, and the Promise to Abraham extended to them, as the Spiritual Believing Seed or Children.

4. That if this were not true, none could be justified or saved; because by the Deeds of the Law, as such, no man can be justified. The Jews themselves must be justified by Faith, or not at all.

5. That the Law of Moses, as such, came long after the Promise, and the Justification of Abraham by Faith, and therefore could not null that Promise, or way of Life.

6. That the Law required such a degree of Works, or strict Obedience, as no man kept; and therefore none could be justified by it.

7. That the Law was given but to the Jews, and God is not only the God and Governor of the Jews, but of the Gentiles also.

8. That the Law forbidden Sin, and curseth the Sinner, and condemneth him, and therefore doth not justify him.

9. That the Law, as such, giveth not Grace and Strength to keep it, but supposeth Ability; But the Grace and Spirit of Christ enableth.

10. That the Law by accident irritateth Lust, and increaseth it, and doth not mortifie and overcome it.

11. That the Law was given to another end, than to justify the Sinner by its bare Works; even to convince Men of Sin, and the need of Grace, and as a Schoolmaster to lead them.
The Introduction to the Epistle to the Romans.

12. That Pardon, Justification, and Salvation must needs be God's free Gift to the Guilty and Condemned, and not the Reward of Meritorious Works of the Law; nor can any pretend the Title of Innocency or Debt. 13. That Christ is designed to gather a more large and excellent Church than the Jewish Nation, even a Catholic Church through all the World, and that more spiritual and holy; into which the Jews, if they will believe, shall be all grafted, which will be to them a higher Privilege than to live under the Mosaic Politie. 14. That the Jewish Law was to operose, shadowy, burdensome, and terrible, that it is part of the Office of a Saviour to deliver men from it, and to bring them under a far better Law and Covenant of Grace.

By many such Arguments he confuteth the Jews, and Judaizing Christians.

III. How he confuteth the Censorious Dividers, who agreed in the Essentials of Christiannity, but differed about some Jewish Rites; and also the Erroneous, that inclineth to Licentiousness, and unjust Separation from the Orthodox, will be sufficiently shewn in the particular Expositions.

IV. But the Apostle denieth none of these following Truths, but implieth some, and expressly asserteth others of them, as Concessions:

1. According to the Promise made to Abraham, the Israelites were a holy Nation, and a peculiar People, separated to God out of all the World.

2. God's Government first settled over them was eminently a Theocracy, the Supremacy being exercised by extraordinary Revelation, by Angelical or Signal Notices, and by Prophecy.

3. Their Law was eminently Divine, the Law of God; their Princes being but Executioners, and not having Power of Legislation, to add, abrogate, or diminish.

4. This Law was wholly Political; that is, The Rule of the Subjects Obedience, and the Rewards and Punishments, to be exercised by God as Supreme, and by Magistrates as his Officers, in the Government of that People, as a Holy Commonwealth. Even the Decalogue and Ceremonies were such Laws of Politie.

5. But this Law supposeth the Law of Nature, and the antecedent Law of Mercy made to all Mankind in Adam and Noah, and the special Promise made to Abraham, and all the Nations of the Earth in his Seed; And the Jews ought not to have separated any part of their Law from thee, which were as its very Life and Soul, and principally respected things spiritual, and heavenly, and everlasting.

6. The Law presupposing thee, and being given to men that had Immortal Souls, and bound to know so much, doth not much mention such matters of the Life to come, as being presupposed; and Moses adding specially the distinguishing Laws of Jewish Government.

7. The breach even of a Political Law, where God was the Legislator, deserved future everlasting Punishment, though as Men were
The Introduction to the Epistle to the Romans.

the official Executioners, it was but corporal Punishment that it inflicted.

8. The Sacrifices were Obligations of that Law of Grace which was older than Moses, and so they should have been understood.

9. The sincere keeping of that Law, while it was in force, was the Material part of the Jews Obedience as they were under the Law of Grace.

10. Even the Decalogue itself, as Mosaic and Political, delivered in Stone to the Jews only, is done away with all the rest by Christ, their peculiar Commonwealth being ended: But as it is, 1. the Law of Nature, 2. and the Law of Christ, it still continueth.

There are three Controversies that I will here briefly speak to, rather than by inverted Annotations afterwards. 1. Whom Paul describeth in the first and second Chapters. II. What Law it is that he speaketh of. III. How he meaneth, that Faith is imputed to Righteousness and Justification.

1. A late Writer hath laboured hard to persuade us, that Rom. 1. and a great part of the Epistles speak of the Gnosticks, which have usually been otherwise expounded. Of this Chapter I think otherwise, (and of many other Texts) because, 1. The Philosophers, and other Heathens, were so much more potent, numerous, and famous Adversaries to Christianity, that we have great reason to suspect, that Paul doth not so much pass them by, to pelt at a few Hereticks, as this Writer imagined.

2. The Text agreeth more to the Heathens. It was to them that the Gospel was a matter of shame, and counted foolishness. It was not by the Works of Creation chiefly, that the Gnosticks pretended to know God, or should have known him; but this was the only Book to the Heathens. The Gnosticks were unexcusable, as Professors of Faith; but it was the Heathens that were left without excuse by the meer Works of God's Creation. The Heathen Philosophers were they that professed the greatest Wisdom, deriding all Christians, as Fool. It was the Heathens that were the Authors of all that Imagery and Idolatry, named ver. 23. The Gnosticks were but for involuntary Compliance in case of danger: They renounced worshipping the Creature more than the Creator. The Sodomy, and all the other Sins by which they are described, belong far more to the Heathens than to the Gnosticks. Chap. 2. Paul distributeth them that he speaks of, into [Jeus and Gentiles], and doth the whole scope of his Discourse, 1 Cor. 1. & 2. It is the same sort that he there speaketh of, as the Wise, and Great, and Noble of the World, who counted the Wisdom of the Gospel Foolishness, and whose Wisdom was Foolishness, which God would confound and bring to nought, &c. which is the plain Description of the Philosophical Heathens. A great deal more such Evidence is at hand.

3. The Writers of Church-History and Heresies, tell us of many sorts of Hereticks in the beginning, that went before those called Gnosticks; yet
The Introduction to the Epistle to the Romans.

yet none of these are named in Scripture, but the Nicolaitans, and the Woman Jezebel, Rev. 2. & 3. And why should we think then that the Gnosticks are meant, more than they?

4. Those that Paul oft singletly out, seem to be them mentioned 1:15, against whom he reasoneth to the Galatians, &c. Had he meant others, as their Crimes were greater, he would have as plainly notified them. Indeed, 2 Pet. 2. and Jude, seem to mean the Nicolaitans as much like the Gnosticks; but Paul had much more to do with the Hea-
then Opposition.

II. Some have thought that it is the Law of Innocency made first to Adam, which Paul meaneth, when he speaks against Justification by the Works of the Law. Their chief Reasons are, 1. Because ‘tis faith, Cursed is he that doth not all things written, &c. And hence they gather, That the Jews Law was of the same tenor. 2. But others give this Reason. Because the Jews Law was a Covenant of Grace, and therefore could not be that here described.

But it is evident all along, that it was Moses’s Law that Paul here meaneth. It would be tedious to cite the Proofs all along visible. And as to the Reasons for the contrary, 1. It is certain, that the Law of Innocency was not then in being and force, but ceased with Man’s Innocency, upon Adam’s Fall; not by mutability in God, but in Man. God’s Law is the present Obligation of his Will to Duty or Punishment. Shall we imagine God to say to the sinful World, 1. I command thee, that art a guilty Sinner, to be sinless? (contrary to the hypothetical necessity of Ex-
istence.) 2. And, thou shalt be rewarded, if thou be innocent, (when he is guilty already?) 3. And, if thou be a sinner, thou shalt die, (when he is a Sinner already, and the Conditional is become Absolute, and past into a Sentence of Judgment?)

2. The Law of Moses granteth Sacrifice and Pardon for many Sins; but the Law of Innocency pardoneth none.

3. The meaning of [Curset be he that doth not all things] is not, Curset be he that hath any Sin; but, he that keepeth not all this Law: (And only the Jews were under that Law, and its Curse.) And this Law of Moses was so operose and strict, that no man did perfectly fulfil it: And if they had, it would not procure their Pardon for the common Sin of Nature, nor merit any thing of God, by the benefit he received by their Works.

2. And as to the other Objectors, It’s true, that Moses’s Law was given to them as a material peculiar part of the Law of Grace: But those, that Paul disputed against, had in conceit separated the Law, as such, from the Promise or Covenant of Free Grace, and thought to be justified by the Merit of their Obedience to it.

III. Perverse Engagement against one another’s Opinions. as danger-
ous, hath made Paul’s Doctrine of Faith and Justification seem much more difficult than it is. 1. It is certain, That by [Faith] he meaneth
The Introduction to the Epistle to the Romans.

no one single Act only, as is [The believing that Christ's Righteousness is imputed to us], as if we were not justified by believing in God the Father, or the Holy Ghost, or trusting the Promise of Glory, or believing that Christ died for our Sins, rose, ascended, interceded, reigneth, and will judge us, and glorify us, or by confenting to his Covenant of Grace, accepting offered Mercy, &c. Faith is a Moral act, containing many Physical acts of Understanding and Will; like a Covenant-content to a King, a Husband, a Phylician, &c. It is all that is essentially required in Baptism, to the Collation of the Grace there given. It is Christianity in content.

2. This Faith is commanded by God, and Grace and Glory promised to them that by believing obey this Command; which maketh it the Condition, or Moral receptive Qualification for this Gift. And though God's Grace cause Men to believe, yet the Command and Conditional Promise are the Means by which God worketh this Effect. And that the Promise be Conditional, joined with threatening to Disobedience, is no more needlesst than the Command or Preaching is.

3. Hence Men may claim Pardon upon believing; but none can claim Faith by vertue of any absolute Promise of God, before he have it.

4. Though no Creature can merit of God in Commutative Justice, as giving him a Benefit, yet they may merit of him as in Governing Justice, or Distributive: But this is various, as the Governing Law is.

According to the Law of Innocency no man meriteth; nor Justification according to the Law of Moses; save Christ alone. Christ's Merit was in the fulfilling the undertaken Mediatorship, which was fulfilling the Law of Innocency, (which he only was capable of), and Moses's Law, and the peculiar Acts of a Mediator: This Merit of Christ is the valuable, procuring, meritorious Cause of all our Deliverance, (Pardon, Justification, Adoption, &c.) of which our own Habits or Acts are no Parts, nor are at all to be judged to be instead of any part of the Office of Christ.

5. But we are not Lawless, but under a Pardoning and Justifying Law, or Covenant of Grace, which giveth Grace and Glory (as is said) to them that believe and repent; that is, pardoneth them, and giveth them the in-dwelling Spirit of Love, and right to Life, if they sincerely truft Christ's Mediation and Promise for it, and give up themselves for that end to God their reconciled Father, to Christ as their Saviour, and his Spirit as their Sanctifier.

And because God will not give us the free gift of Christ, and Life with him, but as first qualified by this Condition of Faith, therefore Faith is said to be imputed to us for Righteousness: that is, This Acceptance of his free Gift in Christ, is all that the Law of Grace, by which we shall be judged, requireth of us that we may be accounted Righteous, without Innocency, or the Works of Moses's Law, or any that make not the gift of Pardon and Life to be of free Grace. To have Righteousness imputed is to be accounted Righteous.

6. To
The Introduction to the Epistle, &c.

6. To call Faith a Justifying Instrument, is an unapt Speech of Man's vain invention; but may be tolerated, if they mean but [A Moral receptive Disposition], unfitly called, A receptive Instrument: But not in proper sense.

7. But though Christ is our Surety, and Vicarius panæ in some sense, and properly a Sacrifice for our Sin, and merited all that we have, by his Righteousness; yet it subverteth the Gospel and Christianitie, to teach, as some do, That Christ did so properly perforate every one of the Elect, that in the sense of God and the Law (though not Physically) they all perfectly fulfilled the Law of Innocency in and by him, and so are justified by that Law, as imputatively being trespassers: As if that Law had said, [Thou or thy Surety shall die, if thou sin] and we are justified by the same Law that condemned us; and no Death, or Suffering, or permitted Sin were any Penalties on us: And as if we were at once reputed trespassers from Birth to Death, and yet must have a Christ to die for our Sin, and must daily beg forgiveness of it.

CHAP. 1.

1. Paul a Servant of Jesus Christ, called to be an Apostle, separated unto the Gospel of God, 1. By an immediate appearance of Christ from Heaven, by Voice and Inspiration, sent to publish the glad tidings of Redemption and Salvation by Christ. 2. (Which he had promised afore by his prophets in the holy scriptures) 3. Concerning his Son Jesus Christ our Lord, which was made of the seed of David according to the flesh. 4. And declared to be the Son of God with power, according to the spirit of holiness, by the resurrection from the dead:

3. Having his Humane Nature from his Mother of David's Line.

4. But the Power of God which owned him, by the Spirit of Holiness, and his Resurrection from the dead, did demonstrate that he was not a mere Man, but God's own Son, sent from Heaven, and miraculously incarnate.

5. By whom we have received grace and apostleship, for obedience to the faith among all nations for his name:

5. By whose own Heavenly mission I received this favour and honour, to be his special Messenger, sent to call all Nations to believe and obey the Gospel, and proclaim the Glory of his Name.

6. Among whom are ye also the called of Jesus Christ.

6. Of whom God hath vouchsafed you to be a part, being the called followers of Jesus Christ.

7. To all that be in Rome, beloved of God, called to be Saints: Grace to you, and peace from God our Father, and the Lord Jesus Christ.

7. To all in Rome that are the beloved of God, called out of the World, into the Holy Christian state, I salute you by this Benediction and Prayer, That the Grace of God, our Father, and the Lord Jesus Christ, and that true Peace and welfare which is its special Fruit, may be yet more upon you.

8. First, I thank my God through Jesus Christ for you all, that your faith is spoken of throughout the whole world.

8. And first, I thank my God through Jesus Christ, that (as you dwell in that City which is most eminent in the World, which is an advantage to the lustre and communication of your Faith, in) your profession of that Faith is so illustrious, as to be famous throughout the World.

9. For God is my witness, whom I serve with my Spirit in the gospel of his Son, that without ceasing I make mention of you always in my prayers.

9. For God is my witness, whom I serve with my Spirit in the gospel of his Son, that without ceasing I make mention of you always in my prayers.

10. Making request,
request (if by any means now at length I might have a prosperous journey by the will of God) to come unto you.

9. For God, whom I serve with a devoted soul, doth know, that this your honourable profession of the Christian Faith, doth make me the more constantly remember you in my prayers.

10. And request of God, if it seem good to him, that I may come to you, for the furtherance of my joy, and your edification.

11. For I long to see you, that I may impart unto you some spiritual gift, to the end you may be established; 12. That is, that I may be comforted together with you, by the mutual faith both of you and me.

11,12. For I long to see you, that by communicating to you what God hath given to me, you may be further established, and you and I may be comforted in the mutual manifestation of our Concordant Faith.

13. Now I would not have you ignorant, brethren, that oftentimes I purposed to come unto you (but was let hitherto) that I might have some fruit among you also, even as among other Gentiles.

13. I would have you know, that as God hath called me to be an Apostle to the Gentiles, I oft purposed to come to you, (though hitherto hindered) that I might reap some fruit of that my Office among you, as well as among other Gentiles.

14. I am debtor both to the Greeks, and to the barbarians, both to the wife, and to the unwife.

14. By this my Mission and Office, it is my duty to Preach the Gospel, both to the learned Greeks and Romans, and to unlearned Barbarous Nations.

15. So, as much as in me is, I am ready to preach the gospel to you that are at Rome also.

15. Therefore, if it be the Will of God, that I shall come unto you, I am ready, as the Apostle to the Gentiles, to exercise mine Office, by Preaching to you, as I have done to others.

16. For I am not ashamed of the gospel of Christ: for it is the power of God unto salvation, to every one that believeth, to the Jew first, and also to the Greek.

16. For though a Crucified Christ be to the Jews a stumbling block, and to the Gentiles foolishness, I am not ashamed thereof openly to own and Preach this Gospel: For the Power of God, by this called weakness and foolishness by men, is manifested in it, and by it, in the Conversion, Comfort and Salvation of every true Believer, whether Jews, with whom it began, or Greeks, to whom it is now Preached.

17. For therein is the righteousness of God revealed from faith to faith: as it is written, The just shall live by faith.

17. For that sort of Righteousness which God hath made the necessary and acceptable way to Salvation, is therein revealed to the World; even Righteousness by Faith, is revealed to beget Faith in men; by which it is that men must be justified and saved, as was foretold.

18. For the wrath of God is revealed from heaven against all ungodliness, and unrighteousness of men, who hold the truth in unrighteousness.

18. For that Gospel which pardoneth Penitent Believers, doth reveal God's wrath against the Impenitent and Unbelievers, who by the love of Sin, resist and reject the Truth, and continue in ungodliness and unrighteousness.

19. Because that which may be known of God is manifest in them: for God hath shewed it unto them.

19. For they may know much of the nature and attributes of God, as manifested by the light of Nature in them, and by the Providence of God among them; by which God sheweth it unto them.

20. For the invisible things of him from the creation of the world are clearly seen, being understood by the things that are made, even his eternal power and Godhead; so that they are without excuse:
20. For though God and Heavenly things be invisible, even his Eternal Power, and his God-head, yet are they clearly to be seen in the Glance of his Works; so that their sin against God, thus revealed, lewdeth them without all just excuse.

21. Because that when they knew God, they glorified him not as God, neither were thankful, but became vain in their imaginations, and their foolish heart was darkened. 22. Professing themselves to be wise, they became fools: 23. And changed the glory of the uncorruptible God, into an image made like to corruptible man, and to birds, and four-footed beasts, and creeping things.

24. Because, when by his Works, and the light of Nature, they were forced to confess the Divine Perfections, they yet lived, not to his Glory, or in holy thankfulness to the God whom they acknowledged, but disdained him, and corrupted their Minds by vain imaginings, and their foolish Hearts were darkened by gross errors. 22. And professing themselves to be the Learned Philosophers, and Wise Men of the World, and condemning others as Ignorant and Barbarous, they showed by their practice that they were Fools. 23. For when their Tongues acknowledged the glory of the incorruptible God, they worshipped him as in and by the Images of Corruptible Men, and of Birds, Beasts, and creeping things; as if God had been like these.

24. Wherefore God also gave them up to uncleanness, through the lusts of their own hearts, to obey their own bodies between themselves: 25. Who changed the truth of God into a lie, and worshipped and served the creature more than the Creator, who is blessed for ever. Amen.

24. Wherefore, as a just punishment for their wilful sins, God left them to the lusts of the Flesh, to base unnatural uncleanness.

25. Seeing they confessing the Perfections of the True God, yet represented him in the Image of vain Shadows and Creatures, and offered their worship to such Creatures, and to the Stars, rather than to the True and Blessed Creator whom they acknowledged.

26. For this cause God gave them up unto vile affections: for even their women did change the natural use into that which is against nature: 27. And likewise the men, leaving the natural use of the woman, burned in their lust one toward another, men with men working that which is unseemly, and receiving in themselves that recompence of their error which was meet.

26, 27. For this Sin, God gave them to bate lusts against Nature, who in their Religion finned against the light of Nature; both Women and Men burning in worse than beastly unnatural lusts towards those of their own Sex, and by being left to that unnatural filthiness, were justly punished for their unnatural Idolatry.

28. And even as they did not like to retain God in their knowledge, God gave them over to a reprobate mind, to do those things which are not convenient:

28. And as their wicked Hearts refused to obey and honour God practically, though they did in words acknowledge him, God gave them over to a reprobate Mind, to do those things which the light of Nature and common Reason do condemn.


29. So far is their Learning and Arts from making them just and happy, that they abound with all manner of odious shameful Sin (here named.)

32. Who knowing the judgment of God, that they which commit such things are worthy of death,
not only do the same, but have pleasure in them that do them.

32. And all their knowledge (of Good and Evil) is so far fromjustifying or sanctifying them, that they live in the practice of that which they know God doth condemn, and in their societies and conversation make it their delight.

CHAP. II.

1. Therefore thou art inexcusable. O man, whatsoever thou art that judgest: for wherein thou judgest another, thou condemnest thyself; for thou that judgest dost the same things.

1. Therefore thou that thinkest highly of thyself, for thy knowledge, and basely of others, as ignorant or barbarous, art so far from being justified by this, that it aggraveth thy Sin, and leaveth thee without excuse: For thou livest in as great Sin, as those whom thou condemnest as ignorant.

2. But we are sure that the judgment of God is according to truth, against them which commit such things.

2. But we know that God will judge all Men in Truth and Righteousness, according to their works, and will condemn evil doers, whatever their knowledge and profession be.

3. And thinkest thou this, O man, that judgest them which do such things, and dost the same, that thou shalt escape the judgment of God?

3. Is it not then thy manifest error, to think that thy knowledge, and condemning Sin in others will justify and save thee, that livest in Sin?

4. Or despisest thou the riches of his goodness, and forbearance, and long suffering, not knowing that the goodness of God leadeth thee to repentance? 5. But after thy hardness and impenitent heart, treasurest up unto thyself wrath against the day of wrath, and revelation of the righteous judgment of God; 6. Who will render to every man according to his deeds.

4, 5, 6. While thou boastest of Wisdom, and livest in Wickedness, thou shewest the more contempt of God, even of the Riches of his goodness, and forbearance, and long suffering, not knowing Practically, that the goodness of God which thou dost acknowledge in Words, should lead thee to Repentance, and forsaking of Sin. 5. But thy Heart being hardened in impenitency, by Sin against Knowledge, thou doest but treasure up certain punishment against the Day when God will shew his Righteousness by his Judgment: 6. And will judge and use Men according to their Deeds.

7. To them, who by patient continuance in well-doing, seek for glory, and honour, and immortality; eternal life:

7. To them, who by a life of true obedience, and patient waiting for his Reward, do seek first for future Glory and Honour, and Immortal Happiness, he will give Eternal Life.

8. But to them that are contentious, and do not obey the truth, but obey unrighteousness, indignation, and wrath; 9. Tribulation and anguish upon every soul of man that doeth evil, of the Jew first, and also of the Gentile.

8, 9. But to them that refuseth the Light, and contend against the revealed Truth, and obey it not, but live in the Practice of Unrighteousness, while they boast of Knowledge, God will pour forth his Indignation and Wrath, Tribulation and Anguish, even on every one that liveth in Sin and Wickedness, first on the Jews, who sin under their boastings of their Pecuniarity, Law, and Judaic Knowledge; and the Greeks and Romans, who sin under their boastings of Learning and Philosophy, and conceited Wisdom.

10. But glory, honour, and peace to every man that worketh good, to the Jew first, and also to the Gentile. 11. For there is no respect of persons with God.

10, 11. But Glory, Honour and Peace, to every Man that liveth a life of true Obedience and well-doing; to the Jew first, according to their Covenant-Prerogative,
and also to the Gentiles, as being in the same Covenant of Grace, for God f恢eth not Men partially, for their outward Privileges, or their barren Knowledge and Proficiency.

12. For as many as have sinned without law, shall also perish without law: and as many as have sinned in the law, shall be judged by the law.

12. For all Men shall be judged according to the Obligations which they were under. They that sinned against the Law of Nature and common Mercies, and were never under the Mosaical Law, or Supernatural Revelation, shall be condemned by the Law which they sinned against, and not by that which was never given them. But the Jews that sinned under Mosei's Law, shall be judged by it.

13. (For not the hearers of the law are just before God, but the doers of the law shall be justified.

13. For no Law of God, doth justify Men merely for having it, and hearing it, but for doing it, so far as they do it.

14. For when the Gentiles which have not the law, do by nature the things contained in the law, these having not the law, are a law unto themselves: 15. Which shew the work of the law written in their hearts, their conscience also bearing witness, and their thoughts the mean while accusing, or else excusing one another)

14,15. For when the Gentiles, which have not the Jewish, or any written Law of God, do by Nature that which that Law commandeth, these having not that supernatural written Law, have God's Law of Nature in themselves; and shew the effects of this Natural Revelation written in their Hearts, their Conscience, naturally having some Conviction of God's Sovereign Government and Man's duty, tells them, as a Witness, whether they do well or ill; and their Reason accusing or defending them accordingly.

16. In the day when God shall judge the secrets of men by Jesus Christ, according to my gospel.

16. I mean not by any mistaken self-judging in this World; but even at the Bar of Christ, when God shall open all men's secret Acts, and retitle all mistaken judgings, as I have preached in foretelling that judgment of Christ.

17. Behold, thou art called a Jew, and restest in the law, and makest thy boast of God; 18. And knowest his will, and approvest the things that are more excellent, being instructed out of the law. 19. And art confident that thou thyself art a guide of the blind, a light of them which are in darkness, 20. An instrufter of the foolish, a teacher of babes, which hast the form of knowledge, and of the truth in the law.

17, 18, 19, 20. And that you may know that the Law will justify no man for having or knowing it, but for doing it, consider that it is but self-deceit to think that thou shalt be justified for being called a Jew, and resting in the Divineness and Perfection of your Law, and boasting that you are God's peculiar People, and that his Will and excellent things are known by you, which the world knoweth not; and that it is you that by that Law, must be the Lights and Guides of the Dark and Ignorant, to whom all others as Children should come to School, because you have the only True Knowledge by the means of your Law.

21. Thou therefore which teachest another, teachest thou not thy self? thou that teachest a man should not steal, dost thou steal? 22. Thou that sayest a man should not commit adultery, dost thou commit adultery? thou that abhorrest idols, dost thou commit sacrilege? 23. Thou that makest thy boast of the law, through breaking the law dishonoureth thou God?

21, 22, 23. Will the Law justify thee, that condemnest thy self by breaking it, while thou boastest of it? Will teaching others justify thee, who teachest not thy self? Will it justify a Thief to Preach against stealing, or an Adulterer to Preach against?
24. For the name of God is blasphemed among the Gentiles through you, as it is written.

25. For circumcision verily profiteth, if thou keep the law: but if thou be a breaker of the law, thy circumcision is made uncircumcision.

26. Therefore, if the uncircumcision keep the righteousness of the law, shall not his uncircumcision be counted for circumcision? 27. And shall not uncircumcision which is by nature, if it fulfill the law, judge them, who by the letter and circumcision do transgress the law?

28. For he is not a Jew, which is one outwardly; neither is that circumcision, which is outward in the flesh: 29. But he is a Jew, which is one inwardly; and circumcision is that of the heart, in the spirit, and not in the letter, whose praise is not of men but of God.

Ch. 3. What advantage then hath the Jew? or what profit is there of circumcision? 2. Much every way: chiefly, because that unto them were committed the oracles of God.

3. You will say, If this be so, what advantage hath the Jew above the Gentile, or what profit doth Circumcision afford them? Answer, Much every way: As that God committed his Oracles of Supernatural Revelation principally to them; and from them it is that others have received them.

3. For what if some did not believe? shall their unbelief make the faith of God without effect?

4. It's true, that the most of the present Jews do not believe in Christ, nor yield to the persuasions of the Gospel. But still God's Word is sure and true, and his fidelity will perform all his Promises.

4. God forbid: yea, let God be true, but every man a liar; as it is written, That thou mightest be justified in thy sayings, and mightest overcome when thou art judged.

5. But if our unrighteousness com-
Ch. 3. Jews and Gentiles Romans. all are sinners. Ch. 3.

command the righteousnes of God, what shall we say? Is God unrighteous who taketh vengeance? (I speak as a man)

5. But if all our sin do but occasion the manifestation of God's Righteousnes, and to his Honour and End is secured, is it not unjust for God to punish and destroy Men for unbeliefe and sin? I object as a man.

6. God forbid: for them how shall God judge the world?

6. For he is from us to think: For sure the Judge of all the World is Righteous, and will righteousely judge.

7. For if the truth of God hath more abounded through my lie unto his glory, why yet am I also judged as a sinner? 8. And not rather, as we be flanderously reported, and as some affirm that we say, Let us do evil, that good may come? whose damnation is just.

7, 8. But, say they, If my filthiness and sin do occasion the glorifying of God and his Truth, why should I be judged a Sinner against God, who is glorified by all that I do; and not rather conclude (as some falsely say we do) that we should never fear sinning, seeing the effect is always good? But just is the damnation of such, that pretend God's Glory to embolden them in sin.

9. What then? are we better when they? No in no wise: for we have before proved both Jews and Gentiles, that they are all under sin;

9. What shall we then conclude from this unbeliefe and punishment of the Jews? Is it, that we who are Christians, Jews and Gentiles, were so much better antecedently than the unbelieving part, that God therefore gave us his Grace for our better defferts? No, in no wise: For we have before proved, that Jews and Gentiles are all under the guilt and reign of Sin, till Grace recover them.

10. As it is written, There is none righteous, no not one: 11. There is none that understandeth, there is none that seeketh after God. 12. They are all gone out of the way, they are together become unprofitable, there is none that doeth good, no not one. 13. Their throat is an open sepulchre; with their tongues they have used deceit; the poison of alps is under their lips: 14. Whole mouth is full of cursing and bitterness. 15. Their feet are swift to shed blood. 16. Deftuction and misery are in their ways: 17. And the way of peace have they not known. 18. There is no fear of God before their eyes.

10, 11, 12, 13, 14, 15, 16, 17, 18. David truly describeth the state of Corrupted Nature, and of all Men till Grace restrain or change them, in Psal. 14. and 53, &c. that there is not one of them that are Righteous Men: They understand not practically the matters of True Wisdom, and chief concerns, but are a blind and forth Generation; and therefore they seek not seriously to know God, or to please him, and enjoy his love. They are turned from the way of truth and obedience and happiness: They are all but hurtful, or unprofitable in the World, and none of them that set themselves to a Life that may do good to themselves or others, or to please God. They are to like Satan, who seeketh whom he may devour, that their Throat is like an open Sepulchre, greedily gaping to devour the Juft and Godly; their Tongues serve the Father of lies, in flandering God's Truth, and Servants; and their Words are like Adders Poyson, that tends to do mischief, and destroy the good and innocent. Cursing and false deceitful words, are the fruit of their Lips. They are ready to shed the Blood of the Godly and Innocent: The way of their Life is Deftuction and Misery to the Faithful, and to the Societies where they live, and finally to themselves. Nature and Custom may teach them to talk for Peace, and Unity, and Love: But they do not, and will not know the true Nature of them, or the way by which they must be attained. For they are not governed by the Law and Fear of God, but by their Carnal deceived Wit, and Worldly Interest, which God condemmeth.

19. Now
19. Now we know that what things soever the law saith, it saith to them who are under the law: that every mouth may be stopped, and all the world may become guilty before God.

20. All this is written in the Jews’ Law, and therefore is spoken to and of the Jews as well as others; for the Law speaketh to none but those that are Subjects, and obliged by it: So that neither Jews nor Gentiles can be justified as innocent: but all such self-justifiers will be confuted, and all the world proved guilty of Sin and Punishment before God when he shall judge them.

21. But now the righteousness of God without the Law is manifested, being witnessed by the Law and the prophets: 22. Even the righteousness of God which is by faith of Jesus Christ unto all, and upon all them that believe; for there is no difference:

23. For all have sinned, and come short of the glory of God; 24. Being justified freely by his grace, through the redemption that is in Jesus Christ:

25. Whom God hath set forth to be a propitiation, through faith in his blood, to declare his righteousness for the remission of sins that are past, through the forbearance of God; 26. To declare, I say, at this time his righteousness: that he might be just, and the justifier of him which believeth in Jesus.

27. Where- is boasting then? It is excluded. By what law? of works? Nay: but by the law of faith.

28. Therefore we conclude, that
a man is justified by faith without the deeds of the law.

28. Therefore against the Jews and all self-justiciaries, we conclude, that the Law of Moses, (much less the first Law of pure Innocency) is so far from being necessary to the Gentiles for Justification and Salvation, that no Man, Jew or Gentile, is otherwise justified by God, but by his free Grace given through Jesus Christ, to all true Believers, who accept it as a free gift.

29. Is the God of the Jews only? Is he not also of the Gentiles? Yes, of the Gentiles also:

29. And how absurd is it to think that God is a God, that is, a merciful Governor, to no more in the World, than that little sorry People of the Jews? Doth not his actual Mercies, and his Government, oblige all the World to the use of some means for Recovery, Pardon and Salvation, confute this, and shew that he is the God and Merciful Governor also of the Gentiles?

30. Seeing it is one God, which shall justify the circumcision by faith, and uncircumcision through faith.

30. It is the same God who will justify Circumcised Believers, and Uncircumcised Believers, by one and the same way: Even by the way of Grace and Faith.

31. Do we then make void the law through faith? God forbid: yea, we establish the law.

31. Can the Jews then say that we dishonour, and make void their Law, as if God had given it in vain, and they had not been bound to keep it: Far be this from us; yea, by the Doctrine of Christianny, we fet the Law in its proper place, as consequent and subordinate to the Promise and law of Grace that went before it, and as preparatory to the fuller edition of the Law of Grace which cometh after it. And so we assign it its due Office and Honour, and End, that God may have the Glory of making it; though the Jews misunderstand it.

CHAP. IV.

1. What shall we say then, that Abraham our father, as pertaining to the flesh, hath found?

1. Let it consider Abraham's case, the Father of the Fiselles, according to the Flesh: For sure his Prerogative must be great at theirs that claim it as his fleshly Seed.

2. For if Abraham were justified by works, he hath whereof to glory, but not before God.

2. If Abraham was justified by the merit of his Righteousness, as having never deferred death by Sin, then he may boast that Life and Impunity was his due on that account, though yet even that did not merit by any benefit to God: (Or, But towards God, he could have no matter to boast of, as his own.)

3. For what faith the Scripture? Abraham believed God, and it was counted unto him for Righteousness.

3. For what account doth the Scripture give us of his Righteousness? Abraham believed God, (viz. That he would perform his free Promise of Grace and Peculiarity made to him and his Seed, and all Nations of the Earth in him,) and it was counted to him for Righteousness. And though God made his Promises to him also for his obedience, because he spared not his only Son; yet this was not because he never deferred death by any Sin, but as it was a work of Faith, and so a consequent part of the Righteousness of a Believer, accepted, though imperfect, through the Merits and Righteousness of Christ, forgiving his Sin, and freely adopting him an Heir of Life.

4. Now to him that worketh, is the reward not reckoned of grace, but of debt.

4. Now to him that meriteh by the perfection of his Obedience, or that never deferred death by Sin, (much more to him that benefiteth another by his Work) the Reward is not reckoned to be the free gift of a Benefactor, but the just giving a Man that which is his deferred due (in the first cafe by governing Justice; and in the second by Commutative Justice.)

5. But to him that worketh not, but believeth on him that justifieth the ungodly, his faith is counted for Righteousness.

5. But to him that hath no such meritorious work for the value of which his Reward should be his due, but truetheth wholly to his free Grace, who first maketh, and then
Jus temporalibus Romas.

Ch. 4. Justification

Then judge them just, that were before ungodly and unjust, (or, who justified them that by sin have deserved death, and never merited life by the worth of their good works) his faith is counted for righteousness, by the covenant of grace; that is, God accepteth it as the quia tio or condition, which must be found in him, without such meritorious works to make him paraker of that pardon, adoption, and salvation freely given by grace, upon the consideration of the meritorious righteousness of Christ. (Indeed faith, repentance, prayer, confession, love, &c. are acts that may be called works in another sense: But it is works deserving life for their perfection, or not deserving punishment by the law, which are here spoken of).

6. Even as David also describeth the blessedness of the man unto whom God imputeth righteousness without works, saying, Blessed are they whose iniquities are forgiven, and whose sins are covered. Blessed is the man to whom the Lord will not impute sin.

7, 8. So David also describeth the qualification of a blessed man (which is a man justified) Not that he hath no sin, which deserved death, but that God doth not impute his sin to him for his condemnation, but forgiveth and covereth it, and imputeth righteousness to him; that is, judgeth and useth him as one that is not obliged to punishment, but hath right to salvation: and this, not because his works deserved not death but life; but because he forgiveth him, and freely saithed him for the righteousness and intercession of Christ; and useth him not as he deserved.

9. Cometh this blessedness then upon the circumcision only, or upon the uncircumcision also? For we say that faith was reckoned to Abraham for righteousness.

9. And are none pardoned and saved but the Circumcised? Are not the Circumcised pardoned and blessed also? If faith was imputed for righteousness to Abraham, will it not be so to all that have it?

10. How was it then reckoned? when he was in circumcision, or in un circumcision? not in circumcision, but in un circumcision.

10. And the time when this was said of Abraham will clear up all this, for it was not after he was Circumcised, but before he was Circumcised, as the Genes. Christians be.

11. And he received the sign of circumcision, a seal of the righteousness of the faith, which he had yet being uncircumcised: that he might be the father of all them that believe, though they be not circumcised; that righteousness might be imputed unto them also:

11. And he after received the sign of circumcision, not as a legally justifying sign, but as a seal of that righteousness which God, before he imputed to him as a believer, that so he might be, by promise and example, the father, not only of his carnal and Circumcised seed, but of all them that believe, throughout the world, that so righteousness might be imputed to them as believers, as it was to him.

12. And the father of circumcision to them who are not of the circumcision only, but also walk in the steps of that faith of our father Abraham, which he had, being yet uncircumcised.

12. And might be the Father of the Ends, and Spiritual benefits of Circumcision, conveyed to them who are not of the Circumcision only, but also to them that walk in the steps of that faith of our Father Abraham, which he had, being yet Uncircumcised, as they are.

13. For the promise that he should be the heir of the world, was not to Abraham or to his seed through the law, but through the righteousness of faith.

13. For the promise to Abraham and his Seed, That he should be Heir of the World, was not made to him by the law, which was long after, nor for the keeping of it; but upon his believing God's merciful promise, and trusting him, for which he was accounted and pronounced righteous.

14. For if they which are of the law be heirs, faith is made void, and
18. Who against hope believed in hope, that he might become the father of many nations; according to that which was spoken, So shall thy seed be.

19. And being not weak in faith, he considered not his own body now dead, when he was about an hundred year old, neither yet the deadness of Sarah's womb.

20. He staggered not at the promise of God through unbelief; but was strong in faith, giving glory to God: 21. And being fully persuaded, that what he had promised, he was able also to perform.

22. And therefore it was imputed to him for righteousness.
Ch. 5. Reconciliation Romans. 

lieve on him that raised up Jesus our Lord from the dead.

23. And certainly, God did not leave this on Record for Abraham's sake only; as if there had been a Righteousness and Right to Life, which he only must have, and belonged to no other, and he must be justified by some odd way proper to himself.

24. But this is written also for all of us, to tell us what Righteousness God requireth and accepteth to our Salvation; and that if we believe with trust on His Power, Truth, and Mercy, who raised up our Lord from the dead, this Faith shall be imputed to us for Righteousness, and we shall besaved by the Sacrifice, Merits, and Mediation of Christ, though our Sins were deferved death, and neither the Law of Innocency, nor the Law of Justice is justifieth us.

25. Who was delivered for our offences, and was raised again for our justification.

26. Even our Faith in God by Christ and in him, who for our Sins was made a Propitiatory Sacrifice, to procure us free Forgiveness of them, and was raised again to cause our Justification, by uniting us to himself, and pardoning our Sin, and giving us his Spirit and right to Impunity and Salvation, and justifying this right and as our Advocate, and by his Sentence as our Judge.

CHAP. V.

Therefor being justified by faith, we have peace with God, through our Lord Jesus Christ.

1. Therefore I may conclude, that being constituted, accepted of God, and judged Righteous by Faith, we have Peace with and towards God, as Reconciled and Adopted through our Lord Jesus Christ, (notwithstanding we are not justifiable as fullfillers of the Law.)

2. By whom also we have access by faith into this grace wherein we stand, and rejoice in hope of the glory of God.

3. And not only so, but we glory in tribulations also, knowing that tribulation worketh patience;

4. And patience, experience; and experience, hope: 5. And hope maketh not ashamed, because the love of God is shed abroad in our hearts, by the holy Ghost which is given unto us.

3, 4, 5. Yea, more than so, but also in all our tribulations which we undergo in the World for Christ and Righteousness, we exult with glorying and joy; knowing that this tribulation doth by exercise increaseth our Patience, and being tried, our patient and constant suffering maketh us the more certain by experience that our Faith is found, and giveth us experience of God's supporting Grace. And this experience much confirmeth our hope of God's acceptance, and our Salvation, which we should be apt to doubt of, if our Faith and God's Grace had not been thus tried; it being easie by self-flattery to think untryed Faith is better than it is. And this confirmed hope will never leave us to shame by disappointment, for it is accompanied and sealed by that special gift of the Holy Ghost, which sheddeth abroad on our Hearts the effects and sense of the Love of God through Christ, and do replenisheth us with Reflecting-love to God, (even as the Summer Rains and Sunshine moisiten and warm the Earth, and replenish it with pleasant Fruits.)

6. For when we were yet without strength, in due time Christ died for the ungodly.

6. For when we were worthles, helpless, lost and miserable, in the worst season Christ died even for the ungodly guilty Sinners; to recover them to God, and save them.

7. For scarcely for a righteous man will one die: yet peradventure for a good man some would even dare to die.

7. For among Men, few (or scarce any) would die for an Innocent Man; though perhaps some few of rare Charity and self-denial, would venture on death for a Man of eminent worth and goodness.

8. But God commendeth his love towards
Ch. 5.  
Reconciliation. Romans.  
by Christ.  
Ch. 5.

1. But the love of God to us was so transcendently declared and magnified, that while we were yet Sinners against his Law and him, Christ died to reconcile and save us.

2. Much more then being now justified by his blood, we shall be saved from wrath through him.

3. And if he loved us so far, as to give his Son to die for us when we were mere guilty Sinners, we may be sure that now he hath made and accepted us as Righteous, pardoning all our Sin for the Sacrifice of the Blood of Christ, he will certainly save us from Damnation.

4. For if when we were enemies, we were reconciled to God by the death of his Son: much more being reconciled, we shall be saved by his life.

5. For if God reconciled us to himself by his Son’s death, when we were his Enemies, doubting he will save ’em that are now reconciled, and pardoned Believers, by the Intercession of him that liveth in Glory, and is now our Head, the Lord of Life, by giving us his Spirit, and justifying us as last, and receiving us to himself in Glory. He that loved his Enemies, will not damn his beloved Children.

6. And not only so, but we also joy in God, through our Lord Jesus Christ, by whom we have now received the atonement.

7. And now moreover, through this reconciliation by Christ, which we have received upon believing, God is so far from being our terrifying, avenging Judge, that he is become our greatest glorying and joy, he being our God and we his People, and he being our Father, and sufficiency Portion and Felicity.

8. Wherefore as by one man sin entered into the world, and death by him; and so death pilled upon all men, for that all have sinned.

9. In all this we have notice of this great Mystery, that as Adam was the Root of first caff of Malt’s Sin and Death, and by that one Man sin entered into the World,

10. And death by Sin, and so all being Sinners, death pilled upon all, even Temporal death actually, and Eternal death by the Sentence of the Violated Law; as being our due.

11. For until the law fin was in the world: but fin is not imputed when there is no law. 14. Nevertheless, death reigned from Adam to Moses, even over them that had not sinned after the similitude of Adam’s transgression, who is the figure of him that was to come:

12. 14. For it is certain that Sin was in the World before Moses’s Law, even from Adam’s fall: And whereas that is no Sin, nor imputed to Guilt and Punishment, which is against no Law; yet death reigned from Adam’s fall till Moses; and therefore all were under some Law, Sin being so far imputed to them; though they sinned not themselves as Adam did, against an express particular command and penal threatening by supernatural Revelation from Heaven, nor all that died (e.g. Infants) did actually and personally transgress: Therefore it was from him, as his vitiated guilty Seed, that they derived Original Sin, and by this vitious nature they at age sinned actually; against that Law which they were under, and by both were the Children of Death; so that, we may compare Adam as the root of Sin and Death to all, with Christ, who is to all true Christians the root of Holiness and Life.

13. But not as the offence, so also is the free gift. For if through the offence of one many be dead; much more the grace of God, and the gift by grace, which is by one man, Jesus Christ, hath abounded unto many.

14. But the disparity must be noted: For if the sin of one Man had such malignant power and pernicious efficacy as to procure the guilt and death of many, we may be sure that the Grace and Mercy of God, and the gift of that Living Grace which is from the Merits, Intercession and Spirit of Christ, shall be more especial to the Life of many.

15. And not as it was by one that sinned, for the judgment was by one to condemnation;
the peculiar Law of Mediation, being obedient to the Death on the Cross shall the many that by Faith receive him, be constituted Righteous, and so accounted and judged of God, even reconciled, pardoned, adopted, and made the Heirs of Life.

20. Moreover, the law entred, that the offence might abound: But where sin abounded, grace did much more abound:

20. And Moses’s Law, which came in afterward, was made to increase Men’s obligation against Sin, and more expressly and terribly forbid it, that if the Jews would sin, their Guilt and Punishment should be the greater (as alas, they did even to abundance;) But when guilt was increased (and Sin by Men’s abufe of the Law) Grace did superabound, being victorious against Sin and Guilt, and the curse, in all true Believers, and extending to many more than Moses’s Law did, even to all the called Nations of the World.

21. That as Sin hath reigned unto death, even so might grace reign through righteousness unto eternal life, by Jesus Christ our Lord.

21. That as Sin hath had its reign and sad effects in the Death and Miseries of the Sons of Adam, even so shall Grace have its more victorious Dominion, and Reign by the Meritorious Righteousness of Christ, in making all his Members or Spiritual Offspring Righteous, by his Pardon, Adopting, Sanctifying Mercy, and bringing them to Eternal Life, by the Power and Efficacy of Jesus his Redeemer.

CHAP. VI.

1. What shall we say then? Shall we continue in sin, that grace may abound?
1. Perhaps some may gather from all this that we preach a Doctrine of Licentiousness; and seeing Grace abounded, where Sin abounded, that we infer that Men may continue in Sin that Grace may abound.

2. God forbid: how shall we that are dead to sin, live any longer therein?
2. Far be it from us so to think: For though Christ came to save Sinners, it was
Ch. 6. Newness

Romans. of life.

Ch. 6.

not to favour Sin, but to destroy it, and save Mankind from it. And therefore as he died for Sin, he causeth us to die to Sin, and how then shall we live in it that are dead to it?

3. Know ye not that so many of us as were baptized into Jesus Christ, were baptized into his death?

4. Know ye not, that when Men are Baptized, they are by Vow, Covenant, and Profession lifted into the belief of a Crucified Saviour, who died for Sin to save us from it, and do profess that Repentance by which we renounce it, as dead to it for the time to come?

5. Therefore we are buried with him by baptism into death: that like as Christ was raised up from the dead by the glory of the Father, even so we also should walk in newness of life.

6. Therefore in our Baptism we are dipped under the Water, as signifying our Covenant-profession, that as he was buried for Sin, we are dead and buried to Sin, that as the glorious power of God raised him from the dead, so we should rise up to live to him in newness and holiness of Life.

7. For if we have been planted together in the likeness of his death: we shall be also in the likeness of his resurrection.

8. For as we have Covenanted and Professed our belief in him and conformity to him as Dead, so we have Covenanted and Professed, and must practice our Conformity to his Resurrection, or else it is not true Baptism, and Christianity, and Conformity to Christ.

9. Knowing this, that our old man is crucified with him, that the body of sin might be destroyed, that henceforth we should not serve Sin, but be as dead to it.

10. For he that is dead, is freed from sin.

11. For as a Dead Man is absolved from all servile Obligations to his Master, so he that is by the Death of Sin conformed to the death of Christ, is freed from the dominion of Sin.

12. Now if we be dead with Christ, we believe that we shall also live with him:

13. And if we be indeed what we are by Baptismal Profession, conformed thus to Christ's Death, we have cause to believe that we must and shall be conformed to his Resurrection and Life.

14. Knowing that Christ being raised from the dead, dieth no more; death hath no more dominion over him. For in that he died, he died unto sin once: but in that he liveth, he liveth unto God. Likewise reckon ye also your selves to be dead indeed unto sin; but alive unto God through Jesus Christ our Lord.

15. For as we know that Christ being raised from the Dead, dieth no more: His Death for Sin was but once, but he being risen, liveth to God for ever, so must you reckon that you are by Conversion from Sin to God, once dead to Sin by Covenant, Covenant, and Profession, that you may ever after live to God, by the Mediation, Spirit, and Grace of Christ.

16. Let not Sin therefore reign in your mortal body, that ye should obey it in the lusts thereof.

17. Therefore, unless you will renounce your Baptism and Christianity, you must not let Sin reign in those bodies, which as they die for sin, so are professedly dead to sin: Its lusts may tempt and trouble you, but must not be obeyed.

18. Neither yield ye your members as instruments of unrighteousness unto Sin: but yield your selves unto God, as those that are alive from the dead; and your members as instruments of righteousness unto God.
13. Nor must you yield the Members of your Bodies, as instruments of unrighteousness unto sin, tho you should pretend that you keep your Hearts clean to God; but give up yourselves to the Government and Will of God, as those that are riven and alive from your dead state of sin, that you may live to him, and so give up the Members of your Bodies as the Soul's Instruments of Righteousness in serving God.

14. For sin shall not have dominion over you: for ye are not under the law, but under grace.

15. What then? Shall we sin, because we are not under the law, but under grace? God forbid.

16. Know ye not, that to whom ye yield your selves servants to obey, his servants ye are to whom ye obey; whether of sin unto death, or of obedience unto righteousness?

17. But God be thanked, that ye were the servants of sin; but ye have obeyed from the heart that form of doctrine which was delivered you.

18. Being then made free from sin, ye became the servants of righteousness.

19. In your Conversion and Baptism you being delivered from the servitude and guilt of sin, you then by consent and Covenant became Christ's Servants for the way and works of Righteousness.

20. I speak after the manner of men, because of the infirmity of your flesh: for as ye have yielded your members servants to uncleanness, and to iniquity, unto iniquity; even so now yield your members servants to righteousness, unto holiness.

21. What fruit had ye then in those things whereof ye are now ashamed? for the end of those things is death.

22. But now being made free from sin, and become servants to God, ye have your fruit unto holiness, and the end everlasting life.
Ch. 7. We are dead to the law. Romans. The law is not sin. Ch. 7.

23. For the wages of sin is death: but the gift of God is eternal life, through Jesus Christ our Lord.

24. For the service of sin is rewarded with death, and this the Law obligeth the sinner to: But the free gift of God through the Mediation of Christ is Eternal Life: And this is it which in the Gospel Covenant is proclaimed and bestowed: And do you not now see both how necessary it is to have a Saviour, and a better Covenant and way of life than Moses's meer Law, or Man's own meritorious Works; and that our Gospel is so far from favouring sin, that it declareth the only way to be delivered, both from the guilt and power of it, and to be made holy here and happy for ever.

CHAP. VII.

1. Now ye not, brethren, (for I speak to them that know the law) how that the law hath dominion over a man as long as he liveth?

1. I have used the similitude of a dead Man, and one raied from death, and of a Servant, and one set free and under another Master; I will now add the similitude of a married Woman and a dead Husband. You know (who know the Law) that the Law of Superiory, which giveth one power over another, obligeth only until death.

2. For the woman which hath an husband, is bound by the law to her husband so long as he liveth: but if the husband be dead, she is loosed from the law of her husband.

2. The Law bindeth a Wife to be a Subject to her Husband till he die, but then she is thereby no longer bound to him.

3. So then if while her husband liveth, she be married to another man, she is called an adulteress: but if her husband be dead, she is free from that law; so that she is no adulteress, though she be married to another man.

3. So that, though she be an Adulteress who marrieth another, while her Husband liveth, yet when her Husband is dead, she is free from that obligation, and is no Adulteress for marrying with another.

4. Wherefore, my brethren, ye also are become dead to the law by the body of Christ; that ye should be married to another, even to him who is raised from the dead, that we should bring forth fruit unto God.

4. So death hath separated the Law and the believing Jew. The Law being abrogated by the coming, and Death, and Grace of Christ, is dead to you, as you by Faith and Baptism are dead to it; so you should be married to him that caused this by his death, and is raised from the dead, and hath raised you from the death of sin and guilt, and legal Condensation to anew and holy life, that regeneration may cause you to generate the holy fruit of Love and good Works, and live hereafter unto God.

5. For when we were in the flesh, the motions of sin which were by the law, did work in our members to bring forth fruit unto death.

5. For when we were in our meer corrupted Nature, and only under a forbidding and condemning Law, without the Gospel and its Grace, the Law did but iritate and skew our Carnal Lusts, and cause our Guile and Condensation, and did not either heal or pardon us.

6. But now we are delivered from the Law, that being dead wherein we were held; that we should serve in newness of Spirit, and not in the oldness of the letter.

6. But now we are delivered from that Law, and so from its manifold difficulties, all which we could not fulfill, and also from its curse of those that fulfill it not: For it is abolished, and bindeth us no more: That now we may serve God with New Hearts, and Lives, by the Spirit of Christ, according to the Law of Grace, and not Carnally in the bondage and terror of the old Law.

7. What shall we say then? Is the law sin? God forbid. Nay, I had not known sin, but by the law: for I had not known lust, ex-

Cc 3 cept
Ch. 7. The law is holy, Romans. just, and good. Ch. 7.

cept the law had said, Thou shalt not covet.

7. But think not by this that we infer, that the Law is bad or culpable, or the cause of sin: Far be it from us; so far am I from such a thought, that I refute that the Law is the forbinder, and discoverer and condemning of sin: For I had not known my heart’s inordinate desires or lusts to be so bad, if the Law had not said, Thou shalt not covet: For corrupt Nature hardly discerneth the evil of its own inclination, so be it break not out into Act, but is ready to think it is blameless because its Natural.

8. But sin taking occasion by the commandment, wrought in me all manner of concupiscence. For without the law sin was dead.

8. But my own soul hath sinful inclinations and imperfections, by original corruption and the evil habits increased by actual sin: And by these I am so backward to good and prone to evil, that a Law of such multitude of difficult, positive Precepts and Prohibitions, making me so much work, and so hard, is become morally impossible for me perfectly to fulfill: Had I been only under the Law made to fallen Adam and Noah, and all Mankind, a great number of Legal Positives and Ceremonials had never obliged me; but this Law being made, and all these things laid upon me which my corrupt Nature could not fulfill, presently my badness and disability appeared in a great number of Acts, which now became forbidden sin, and in the omission of things commanded: even as if you command ignorant, weak, and ill-disposed men, a multitude of such particulars as none but the wise and well disposed will keep, it will occasion them to be guilty of a multitude of sins, which without those Canons or Laws would have been no sin; so my sinful Nature made this Law of Works, an occasion of my guilt of a multitude of actual sins; which without the Law would have been no sin, or not so culpable. Besides that the prohibition fired up my ill inclination, and also that I sinned against more knowledge.

9. For I was alive without the law once: but when the commandment came, sin revived, and I died.

9. For you suppose me only under the Common Law made to Noah and all Mankind, and the Promise made to him and to Abraham, before the Law of Moses was made, I had not then been under either that Sentence of a Temporal or an Eternal death, which by Moses’s Law are the wages of many sins, not before forbidden: But when I am under all those Laws which curze or cut off all that do not the numerous Tasks and Ceremonies there imposed, I am then become a dead Man in Law, and the Law and sin rise up in power against me, and condemn me.

10. And the commandment which was ordained to life, I found to be unto death.

10. And the Commandment which promised life to them that keep it, proved the occasion of death to me.

11. For sin taking occasion by the commandment, deceived me, and by it slew me.

11. For my sinful nature called out to so much duty, and forbidden so many things, being unable to do the duties, and prone to the things forbidden, by occasion of this Law, became the guilty cause of many actual sins of omission and commission, and as ill humour fired by a purge oft rage the more, so did the pravity of my nature, and so I was made guilty of death.

12. Therefore the law is holy; and the commandment holy, and just, and good.

12. Wherefore I testify that the Law is pure and holy, and just, and good: God justly made it: His Wisdom and Holiness shone forth in it: If Men be bad and ill disposed, God may justly give them such Laws as their badness is avert to keep. And he had good and gracious ends in giving it: He made it indeed very operose, somewhat like the Law of Innocency to Adam, though not that same, but yet conjunct and subordinate to the Law and Promise of Grace; which the Jews should have noted, and used is accordingly.

13. Was then that which is good, made death unto me? God forbid. But sin that it might appear sin, working death in me by that which is good; that sin by the commandment...
Ch. 7. The Corruption Romans. of Man's Nature. Ch. 7.

14. For we know that the law is spiritual: but I am carnal, sold under sin.

15. For that which I do, I allow not: what I do, that I do not; and what I hate, that I do. 16. If then I do that which I would not, I consent unto the law, that it is good.

17. And because the understanding and will are the highest faculties, and a man is in God's account what he truly would be, therefore I may say, that (though it be my sin to have so inordinate a sensitive inclination, and so imperfect a mind and will which should better rule it,) yet it is not such a sin as the worth the predominant disposition of my soul, and denominates the man, but is contrary to the resolved bent of my heart and life; and therefore the Lord of grace will not judge me according to that which is but my imperfection, and which I more hate than love, and would unfeignedly be rid of, for it is no reigning sin that I confess.

18. For I know that in me (that is, in my flesh) dwelleth no good thing: for to will is present with me, but how to perform that which is good, I find not.

19. For the good that I would, I do not; but the evil which I would not, that I do.

20. Now if I do that I would not, it is no more I that do it, but sin that dwelleth in me.
Ch. 7. The Law in our Members Romans, against that of our Mind. Ch. 7.

22. For I delight in the law of God, after the inward man. 23. But I see another law in my members, warring against the law of my mind, and bringing me into captivity to the law of sin, which is in my members.

22, 23. For I delight in the Law of God, after the inward man, which is the bent of my Mind and Will. But my corrupt sensual inclination is like a Contrary Law, which warreth against my Judgment and Will, and like a Captive, I am brought by it under a necessity of sinning, so far as that my obedience is imperfect, and so unjustifiable by the Law of Works, (as in the unregenerate sin doth reign).

24. O wretched man that I am, who shall deliver me from the body of this death!

24. So far am I then from being justified by this Law, that while it calleth for more perfect obedience to its hard and numerous precepts than my sinful Soul can perform, and so condemneth me, it doth but shew me how bad and miserable I am, and make me cry out, O wretched Man, who shall deliver me from this sinning deathly flesh?

25. I thank God, through Jesus Christ our Lord. So then with the mind I my self serve the Law of God; but with the flesh the law of sin.

25. But as I have told you of my misery by nature, under the Law, I will tell you of my remedy: I rejoice in thankfulnesse to God that hath bestowed the Law, and justified my nature by Jesus Christ: And so I conclude, that my renewed Mind and Will doth perfect perfection, that I would be free, and keep all the Law which God shall impose and continue: but my fleshly inclination maketh this free perfection too hard for my attainment, and therefore I cannot be justified by so hard and rigorous a Law.

ANNOTATIONS.

Though Expositors are much differed whether St. Paul here describe a Man Unregenerate under the mere Law, or an Imperfect Man, how sincere soever; yet no less Doctrinal Controversie dependeth on this Difference, as the Ignorant and Contentious do imagine. For they that think that he describeth the Caele of a carnal Legalist, or Jew, suppose that he speaketh of their committing against knowledge, and uneffectual wishes, the reigning Sins called Mortal, and live an unholy Life; and that [It is not I, but sin] signifieth only [My superior Faculties have some uneffectual redundancy, and are convinced that the Law is good]: And that by [Captivity to the Law of sin] is meant, a slavish Life of predominant Sensuality. And doubtlesse such there are, of whom all this is true.

And those that think that he speaketh of himself even in his Regenerate state, and so of all Men, do think that it is not a Life of Wickedness, or Mortal Sin, that he describeth, nor a Captivity to it, but unavoidable Imperfection, called Venial Sin; to the same sense as St. John saith, If we say that we have no sin, there is truth in us. And that [It is not I, but sin] signifieth but that a Man shall be accounted and judged by God according to what is predominant in his Mind, Will and Life.

And I most incline to this Explication. 1. Because the other sense forced, which must not be received without necessity. 2. Because the Apostle is not only proving that the Law will not justify an unregenerate legal Jew, but that it will justify no Man, how good soever. 3. And I do not believe that the unregenerate can truly say as he, [I delight in the Law of God], and [so will I be present with me], and I my self in Mind serve the law of God. 4. Many Passages are plainly applicable to Paul in his Christian state.

CHAP. VIII.

1. Here is therefore now no condemnation to them which are in Christ Jesus, who walk not after the flesh, but after the Spirit.

1. It is not then the Law that justified us, but Faith in Christ; and all that are in him are acquitted from the curse and condemnation.
Ch. 8: The works of the flesh Romans. and the spirit.

1. The fruit of the law, and sin of the law of nature, for their sin is pardoned, and they are regenerate, and live not now after the fleshly inclination or law, but under the spiritual law of grace, by a spiritual inclination wrought on them by the Holy Ghost, which is given them by Christ.

2. For the law of the Spirit of life in Christ Jesus, hath made me free from the law of sin and death.

3. For the condition of grace which gives the spirit, and the spirit which gives me by Christ's being not a killing, but a quickening law, giving me internal and spiritual life, and Telle to eternal life, hath made me free from the power and rule of my carnal inclination, and from the obligation and condemnation of Moses' law.

4. For what the law could not do, in that it was weak through the flesh, God sending his own Son in the likeness of sinful flesh, and for sin condemned sin in the flesh.

5. For when the law could neither justify nor regenerate us, because our fleshly pravity was uncapable hereof, God sending his own Son in flesh like ours which is sinful, though without sin, as a sacrifice for sin, and example of perfect holiness, thereby availed his enmity to sin, and began the holy enmity of its destruction.

6. That the righteousness of the law might be fulfilled in us, who walk not after the flesh, but after the Spirit.

7. That the true righteousness which the law was made to lead men to, might be found in us, and the true ends of the law obtained by us, who live now by the spiritual principle and rule, and not by the carnal principle and letters.

8. For they that are after the flesh, do mind the things of the flesh; but they that are after the Spirit, the things of the Spirit.

9. For the unregenerate who are under the dominion of a carnal disposition, as they may be under the terror of a threatening law, do still favour, love, and mind nothing so much as fleshly interest and pleasure, but they whose souls are renewed by the Holy Spirit, and live by faith on spiritual promises, do mind, love, and seek most spiritual welfare and felicity.

10. For to be carnally minded, is death; but to be spiritually minded, is life and peace:

11. For the true state of misery called death in the soul, which is the way to everlasting misery, consists in its being turned from the love of God and holiness, to the love of carnal interest and pleasure and the true state of spiritual life and felicity, consists in the love of God and holiness, and the soul's perfection.

12. Because the carnal mind is enmity against God; for it is not subject to the law of God, neither indeed can be.

13. Because the carnal unregenerate mind, having a predominant inclination to sinful sensual interests and delights, and privation, yea and enmity to things spiritual and holy, hath thereby an enmity to the holy law and ways of God, and consequently to God as holy. For it is not subject to the law of God, which is quite against their sinful life and inclination, nor indeed can be, while it is continued, there being a contrariety between their inclinations and the law of God.

14. So then they that are in the flesh, cannot please God.

15. So that they that are unregenerate and carnal, cannot please God while they are such; because they cannot, through the perverseness of their own wills, do the things that please him, what legal restraint ever they be under.

16. But ye are not in the flesh, but in the Spirit, if so be that the Spirit of God dwell in you. Now if any man have not the Spirit of Christ, he is none of his.

17. But you are not in this carnal state, and under the dominion of the flesh, if the Spirit of God do not only provoke you towards good works, but also dwell in you and possess you. For it is a powerful spirit, and will overcome the flesh: But if any man have not this indwelling, illuminating, quickening, sanctifying spirit, he is not a true Christian, and saved by Christ. He may be baptized, and deceived the church, and pass for a visible member of it, and so for a Christian among men, but Christ will
Ch. 8. The works of the flesh Romans. and the spirit. Ch. 8.

will not own him as a living Member to
justification and salvation.

10. And if Christ be in you, the
body is dead because of sin; but
the Spirit is life, because of righteous-
nesses.

10. And if Christ by his Spirit and Go-

germent be and rule in you, the body
which hath still some inordinate sinful in-
cinations, and backwardness to good, shall
die for sin; but your spirits being quicken-

ed by the Spirit of God, unto holiness and
justification, are in a state of life begun, and
shall not die as the body doth, but live with
Christ, by whom they live.

11. But if the Spirit of him that
raised up Jesus from the dead, dwell
in you; he that raised up Christ
from the dead, shall also quicken
your mortal bodies, by his Spirit
that dwelleth in you.

11. But if the Spirit of him that raised
up Jesus from the dead dwell in you, he
that by this same Spirit of life and power
raised up Christ from the dead, as he hath
began to raise you from spiritual death in
sin, and sanctifie both soul and body to
himself, will not only glorifie your souls,
but also raise and save your mortal bodies,
by that same Almighty Spirit which raised
Christ, and sanctified you.

12. Therefore brethren, we are
debtors not to the flesh, to live af-

after the flesh.

12. For if ye live after the flesh,
ye shall die: but if ye through the
Spirit do mortifie the deeds of the body,
ye shall live.

13. By all which you may see that
it is not to the flesh that we owe our chief
respect, care and obedience, nor after the
lusts of which we should live: For it is this
sinful fleshly life that causeth death, and
tendereth unto future misery: But if by the
Spirit you mortifie those fleshly lusts and
deads, which Carnal Men obey and pra-
dice, this beginning of spiritual life will
end in future life and happiness.

14. For as many as are led by
the Spirit of God, they are the
fons of God.

14. For as many as are principled and
ruled by God's Spirit and spiritual law
of grace, are God's children: and God
will not forsake, lose, or destroy his spiri-
tual children.

15. For ye have not received
the spirit of bondage again to fear;
but ye have received the spirit of
adoption, whereby we cry, Abba,
father.

15. For the Spirit which you have now
received is not that of a slave, which doth
no good but for fear of punishment; and
the meer law without grace could give
no better) but you have received the Spirit
of adoption, which giveth you an inclina-
tion of dependance, love and trust in God,
much like that which a child hath by na-
ture to his father, to the collation of which
child-like love, trust and nature, the wond-
rous revelation of God's love in Christ,
and the free gifts of his grace, were spiri-
tually fitted.

16. The Spirit it self beareth
witness with our spirit, that we
are the children of God.

16. And to have this spirit of God dwell-
ing in us, and sanctifying us, is a certain
evidence or testimony in and with our own
spirits and consciences, that God doth spe-
cially love us, and take us for his chi-
dren, having set his special mark upon us:
For we could not love him as a father, and
he not love us as his children. And this
Spirit also helpeth our consciences to differ
and exercise this sealing grace, and to re-
joyce therein.

17. And if children, then heirs;
heirs of God, and joint-heirs with
Christ: if so be that we suffer with
him, that we may be also glorified
together.

17. And if this seal of the spirit prove
us sons, it proveth us heirs of the purchased
kingdom, or heavenly inheritance, for such
are all the sons of God; heirs of God; and
co-heirs with Christ; but, so that there is
a further condition of our possession, even
that we take up the cross and follow him,
submitting to be conformed to him in his
sufferings, if God call us to it, that so by
the same way we may come to be glorified
together with him.

18. For I reckon, that the suf-
f erings of this present time, are
not worthy to be compared with the
Ch. 8. The work of the flesh Romans. and the spirit. Ch. 8.

the glory which shall be revealed in us.

18. For though we must suffer in this life, with Christ, and for his sake, and by God’s correction for our sins, having in my reckoning compared them with the promised effects and end, I fully resolve the case, that they are not worthy to be compared with the glory which in the Saints shall be shortly manifested; nor should they stop any man from entertaining the doctrine of the Cross, and pursuing his celestial hopes.

19. For the earnest expectation of the creature waiteth for the manifestation of the sons of God.

19. For all the frame of nature strongly tending to its own perfection, (and God annihilareth not the natural or sensitive creatures, though he disolve the composition) they do as it were wait for their better state and deliverance from the curse caused by man’s sins, till the manifestation of the glory of the sons of God; with whom, and for whom they shall have their restoration, as with man they fell under the curse.

20. For the creature was made subject to vanity, not willingly, but by reason of him who hath subjected the same in hope:

20. For so much of the world as was made for man, and man’s or cursed for man’s sake, so was made subject to this curse and mutation, not for its own sin, nor by its own choice, but by the sin of man, even by that God who subjected its condition to the free will and state of man, and so to suffer with and for him, but with a purpose to restore it with him unto its integrity.

21. Because the creature itself shall be delivered from the bondage of corruption, into the glorious liberty of the children of God.

21. Because the natural and sensitive parts of the world that were subjected to the use of man, and fell under a curse by man, shall be delivered with man from that curse and bondage, and corruption, into a state of liberty and useful perfection suitable to the glory of the children of God, for whom they were made.

22. For we know that the whole creation groaneth and travaileth in pain together until now:

22. For it is evident, that the whole natural and subjective world which was thus subjected to man and cursed for him, is like a woman in the pangs or expectation of child-birth, and groaneth till it be delivered with us at that time of restoration.

23. And not only they, but our selves also, which have the first fruits of the Spirit, even we ourselves groan within within our selves, waiting for the adoption, to wit, the redemption of our body.

23. And if this be their case, much more do we who have the spirit of God, which is the pledge, earnest, and first fruit of glory, feeling our selves burdened with sins, temptations and sufferings in the world, and yet smart of our expected glory, feel our selves as a woman in Travel, groaning for deliverance, and longing for the blessed inheritance, yea, even the resurrection of the body it self, to which we were adopted.

24. For we are saved by hope: but hope that is seen, is not hope: for what a man seeth, why doth he yet hope for?

24. For our present state of salvation is not in sight and full possession, but in the hope of unseen things that are promised; and this hope will bring us to possession. But if we had sight and possession of it, we could not be said to live by the hopes of it, for why should we be said to hope for that which we see and possess.

25. But if we hope for that which we see not, then do we with patience wait for it.

25. But hoping for that which we never saw or possesscd, we do with patience under all delays and sufferings, wait for the desired attainment and possession.

26. Likewise the spirit also helpeth our infirmities: for we know not what we should pray for as we ought: but the spirit itself maketh intercession for us with groanings which cannot be uttered.

26. And the spirit which God hath given us, helpeth us against our infirmities of hope.
and Prayer; and under our sufferings and difficulties; for we are unmeet judges of our own necessities and condition, and the flesh is too prone to desire its own ease and safety: But the Spirit of Christ in us, teacheth and inclineth us to go to God as to a merciful, almighty Father; and to pour out our souls complaints before him, at least with groans, when we cannot utter them with words; and to cry, Abba Father, and to refer our selves unto his Wisdom, and call our case in truth on him.

27. And he that searcheth the heart, knoweth what is the mind of the Spirit, because he maketh intercession for the faints, according to the will of God.

27. And God that searcheth the Heart, knoweth the meaning of these very groans, excited by his Spirit, which we want words to express: For he knoweth what his own Spirit moveth us to ask, and what desires come from himself; for as Christ is in Heaven our Intercessor with the Father, so the Holy Spirit sent down into our hearts, is our Intercessor with the Father and the Son; for as he is Christ's Agent and Witness in us, to communicate Spiritual Life, Light and Love to us, so he is a Spirit of Supplication and Adoption in us, and the spring of all our holy desires and motions Godward, and that only which is of him is accepted of God; for he moveth us to ask what pleaseth God, and to submit to his Will, and returneth us the answer of our Prayers in inward Strength and consolation.

28. And we know that all things work together for good, to them that love God, to them who are the called according to his purpose.

28. For we know that all the course of God's providence, and particularly all our sufferings for him, do by God's over-ruuling ordination work together for our good, even to carry on them that love him to Salvation, who are called hereto according to the gracious benevolent purpose of his own Will.

29. For whom he did foreknow, he also did predestination to be conformed to the image of his Son, that he might be the first-born among many brethren.

29. For those whom he fore-knew and purposed to glorifie, he also predestinated as the way to their Glory, to be conformed to the Image of his Son, in holiness and patient suffering, that his Church at Bethsaida might be like their Head and eldest Brother.

30. Moreover, whom he did predestinate, them he also called: and whom he called, them he also justified: and whom he justified, them he also glorified.

30. And those whom God thus predestineth to be conformed to Christ, them in time he effectually called to repent and believe in Christ; and those whom he thus called, and made true Christians, he justified, both making them just by pardoning their sin, and giving them his inward Spirit of Love and Holines, and accompanying them just, for the merits of Christ; and those whom he thus justified, he will glorifie with Christ.

31. What shall we then say to these things? If God be for us, who can be against us?

31. What then shall we say, when we consider all this, but with joyful thankfulness conclude, that God is for his Saints, their Father and Protector, and therefore they have no cause to fear any that are against them, how great, or many, or strong for ever, that is, not fear their power, so be we take heed that they draw us not in sin.

32. He that spared not his own Son, but delivered him up for us all, how shall he not with him also freely give us all things?

32. He that spared not his own Son, not thinking him too precious a gift, but delivered him up to suffer as a Sacrifice to procure the pardon of sin and salvation, to be given to all by a Conditional Covenant of faith and acceptance, and actually to pardon and save all true Believers, that accept him, how can it be that he should think any thing else, which we need, too good for us, and not freely give all other things with Christ to us that believingly accept him? See 1 Pet. 1. 11, 12.

33. Who shall lay any thing to the charge of God's elect? It is God that justifieth;
33. Of how little moment is it, when erroneous and malignant Men lay to the charge of God's Elect (accusing them as breakers of their Laws) whilst God himself doth justify them?

34. Who is he that condemneth? It is Christ that died, yea rather that was risen again, who is even at the right hand of God, who also maketh intercession for us.

35. What, or who is he that condemneth those whom Almighty God doth justify? What is the Sentence of a Worm, a Sinner, and a blinded Enemy to be set against God's Sentence? It is Christ that died for our sins, to deliver us from the Law and Curse, that justifieth Believers here on Earth; yea, I say more to our consolation, It is Christ that is risen again, and advanced in Glory, Head over all things to his Church, who effectually intercedeth for us, and will finally justify us as our judge.

36. (As it is written, For thy sake we are killed all the day long; we are accounted as sheep for the slaughter).

37. Nay in all these things we are more than conquerors, through him that loved us.

38. For I am persuaded, that neither death, nor life, nor angels, nor principalities, nor powers, nor things present, nor things to come, nor height, nor depth, nor any other creature, shall be able to separate us from the love of God which is in Christ Jesus our Lord.

39. For I am persuaded that the bond of love between God and all true Confirmed Christians, made in and by our Mediator Christ, is so strong and sure, that it will never be dissolved by the terrors of Death, or the love of this Life, nor by malignant Spirits, by Principalities or Powers, Satan or his instruments of strength and violence, by what now doth, or what hereafter shall befall us, or afflicts us; by any things above us, or beneath us, excitation or dejection, nor by the power of any Creature: Nothing hath power to cause God to cease loving us, or us to cease loving God.

ANNOTATIONS.

I. The Controversies raised about the first fourteen Verses, of the fulfilling of the Righteousness of the Law, of the Carnal and Spiritual state of Mind, &c. are sufficiently decided in the Paraphrase.

II. So is that of the Spirit of Bondage and Adoption, and that of the Witness of the Spirit with our Spirits, &c. in the Paraphrase on the 15 and 16 Verses.

III. His Exposition of the 19, 20, 21, and 22 Verses, which signifies them to speak of the Heavenly World, Isaiah so many and palpable Violences, that I think it is not worth the labour to give a particular Conrastation of them. But if many things about the Creatures Restoration be yet unknown and unrevealed to us, it followeth not, that therefore it is unknown whether a Restoration there shall be. The Heavens must contain Christ till the time of this Restoration. And his Violence is as gross about the Words of St. Peter, That we look for a new Heaven and a new Earth, in which dwelleth Righteousness. What God doth
Annotations on Chap. 8.

doth with the Souls of Brutes when they die hence, may be unknown to us, and yet their Restoration known. It is not hard, by the most probable Principles of Philosophy, to frame their Opinion who confidently say, that their Souls are no Spiritual Substances, but even Accident Qualities, or Motions. And as they may easily be proved Substances, that have an Essential Power of Vital Action, Perception, and Appetite; so it is most improbable that God annihilareth them, or changeth their essential Form or Nature. But whether they are continued Individual, or only in one or more universal Form; or if Individual, whether to what use God disposeth of them, and what alteration there will be in the State of Restoration, Mortals know not.

IV. Thofe that say, That by the Spirit that helpeth our infirmities, ver. 26. is meant Christ by his Spirit praying for us in Heaven, can neither make it agree with the Context, nor prove that the Spirit groaneth in Heaven, or is called our Intercessour there, but within us.

V. They that feign the 28 Verse to say, That all the Sins of Believers shall work for their good, dangerously pervert the Text: It's contrary to the Context, and to the tenor of all the Scripture, and the Wisdom and holiness of God, and the Safety of Believers, to feign God to promise them, that how much sooner they sin, they shall be Gainers by it; when he still useth the clean contrary means to save them from it, even by his Threatenings. And it's contrary to the very Terms of the Text, [To them that love God, &c.] which implieth, that the defects or decay of their Love to God is not for their good. And it's contrary to common Experience, which tells us, that many Christians by Sin lose some degrees of Love to God, and other Grace, and die worse than once they were, (and to have a less degree of Glory.) And is this for their good? Yes, all Men die in some Sin of Omission, as in a culpable defect of some due Act or Degree of Faith, Hope, Love, Joy, Patience, of which they have no more time to repent. And what good doth that do them? Indeed some Sin to some Men God maketh an Occasion of good, and an Object of Repentance, &c. But as an Occasion is not a Cause, and to be an Object of Repentance is to be a Duty, and not a Sin; so even this much is none of the meaning of this Promise, which speaketh but of Sufferings, or at most of God's Providential Works, of which Sin is none.

VI. The Controversies about Predestination, raised from the 28 and 29 Verses, might be ended by the Text itself, if we could be content to know no more than God doth teach us, and to be no wiser than St. Paul was.

1. He teacheth us, That there are some called according to God's purpose, and foreknown by him, that is, to be such as he will use as is after mentioned: He knoweth them to be those whom he purposeth to call and save. But St. Paul was not so pietemous and profane, as to dispute, How God foreknew them, or why he purposeth to call them rather than others.

2. And whereas profane Men do foolishly say, if God decree and foreknow my Salvation, I shall be saved whatever I do; and if I do not I shall not: St. Paul tells us, That those whom God purposed or decreed to save, he predestineth to be conformed to the Image of his Son, even to the Means, as well as to the End. So that, to say, That God doth predestinate Men to Salvation, and not to Holiness of Heart and Life, is to contradict God's Doctrine of Predestination. As God doth decree how long we shall live, and withal that we shall live by Meat and Drink, so he decreeth that we shall be saved, and that by Faith and sincere Obedience. And sure they know not what they say, who call this Doctrine of Election, Licentious. Doth it encourage Men to Impenitency or Disobedience, to tell them, that God doth predestinate Men to repent, and obey, and be saved? Will it tempt Men to live after the Flesh, in Worldliness, or Sensuality, to believe that God hath decreed to make them to live after the Spirit, and to mortifie the Deeds of the Flesh, and to avoid such Sins?

3. And St. Paul tells us, That this Chain of Causes is all decreed of God, from the first to the last; and therefore that it is God's Purpose which secures the Event of our Glorification. And it's strange that any should think, that God should undertake to give a Work as Man's Redemption, and not effectually secur such the Success by his Will and Wisdom, but leave all to the lubricious Will of Man.

4. But the Apostle tells us of no such Decrees of the Causes of Men's Damnation. God causeth and giveth Grace, and foreknoweth that which he will give; But he doeth not cause
Annotations on Chap. 8.

VI. The sense of the Terms of the 30 Verse, Expositors much differ about; but there is no great Doctrinal Controversy depending on it. 1. It is doubted, whether by [Calling] here he meant only Effecual Calling and Conversion, or only General Calling antecedent to its Efficacy. But it's confessed, that both these are affixed in the Scripture. 2. It is doubted, why Sanction is omitted, or where it is included; but it's agreed, that it is one Link of the Chain of the Causes of Salvation. 3. And so it's doubted, what the Word [Justified] doth mean: But the thing is agreed on. 4. And the greatest doubt is, whether every one of these Causes will infer the rest, or only the connexion of all the foregoing will infer that which followed.

1. There is small reason to doubt, but that by [Calling] is meant [Effecual Calling]: Else it would neither prove Predestination, nor infer Justification.

2. Sanction is a Word which signifieth many Acts. As it signifieth the Gift of our first Faith and Repentance, and our Covenant-devotedness to God in Baptism, it is the same with Effecual Vocation, Regeneration, and Conversion. But as it signifieth the after-gift of the In-dwelling Spirit, to habituate the Soul with fixed Holiness and Love, and the Practice of these, it followeth Vocation, at least in order of Nature.

3. Justification sometime signifieth Making us righteous; sometime, accounting us righteous; sometime, by Apology, maintaining us to be righteous, sometime, by Judicial Sentence, pronouncing us righteous, sometime, executively, using us as righteous; usually, many of these together, all the rest being implied. It is certain, that God maketh Men righteous, before he account or judge them righteous. Now to make a Man righteous (and justifiable in Judgment) all these concur. 1. The Merit of Christ's Righteousness, as the deserving Matter and Cause. 2. The Act of the New Covenant, giving him a part in Christ, and with him Pardon of Sin, and Right to the Spirit of Grace, and unto Glory. 3. The Gift of Faith and Repentance, that Christ and his further Grace may be ours; and for continuance, the Holy Habits and Acts of Sanification. And seeing all found Expositors confess (with Beauty) that at least three Texts by Justification mean or include Sanification, we have reason to judge, that part of Sanification is here included in Vocation, and part in Justification, and, some think, the Triumphant part in Glorification. And certainly this inferreth no unfound Doctrine.

4. Augustine thought, that the Links of this are inseparable, unless you include the first as the Qualification of all the rest, by way of distinction; and that the meaning is, That [God will call all the Predestinate or Elect, and will justify all the Predestinate that are called, and will glorify all the justified that are predestinate and called], but that there are some justifieth and sealed, that were not predestinate, nor shall be glorified, but fall away. What the sense of the Ancient Fathers was about Perseverance, Ebr. V. I. hath truly opened in his Thees, that I may therewith refer the Inquisitive. My own sense of it I have opened in my Catholic Theologie; and it's too long a Cafe to be handled here. But I think no confirmed Christian doth totally and finally fall away, and that the rest of the Doubt should not be thought enough to break the Love and Peace of Christians.

VIII. As to the Doubt, Whether the 38 and 39 Verces speak [of God's Love to us, or ours to him,] as they are in themselves inseparable, so I think that the Context giveth us Reason to think that it is both, even the Bond of mutual Love which is here spoken of. All the doubt is, Whether it be spoken of every true Christian, or only of the Elect and Confirmed, of which before.

C H A P. IX.

1. I Say the truth in Christ, I lie not, my conscience also bearing me witness in the holy Ghost.

2. That I have great heaviness and continual sorrow in my heart.

3. For I could wish that my self were accursed from Christ for my brethren, my kinmen according to the flesh:

1, 2, 3. I am so far from saying all that I have said in contempt of the Jews, or triumph over them in their misery, that I protest...
all children: bat in Iasal shall thy feed be callid.

6. 7. But what, doth it follow, that all God's promises to the Jesus of a Saviour had taken no effect, because the most of them believe not? for many thousands of them are converted, besides the Gentiles: And it is not all that were the Off-spring of Jacob, that God ever promised to save: but as he made the Promises to Abraham and Isaac, and yet took not Ishmael out of the state of Peculiarity, so he may distinguish of the Seed of their posterity, as well he did of theirs, without breaking his Promises to them. They are not all the Children of the Promise of Life, that are Abraham's natural Seed: Isaac's Seed had the Peculiarity: and to have now the Believing part.

8. That is, They which are the children of the flesh, these are not the children of God: but the children of the promise are counted for the seed.

8. That is, They which are the Children of the Flesh, are not as such, the Children of God, but only those to whom be made the special promise of Grace and Glory: these are the seed of Promise indeed.

9. For this is the word of promise, As this time will I come, and Sara shall have a son. 10. And not only this, but when Rebecca also had conceived by one, even by our father Isaac, 10. For the Promise was to the Female, to be born of the Natural Seed, and is made to Sara's Son, and not to Hagar's: to Isaac, and not to Ishmael: and therefore, it is not to the Natural Seed as flesh, but to them all.

11. For the children being not yet born, neither having done any good or evil, that the purpose of God according to election might stand, not of works, but of him that calleth. 12. It was said unto her, The elder shall serve the younger.
God hath mercy on whom he will. Ch. 9: 13. As it is written, Jacob have I loved, but Esau have I hated.


15. I speak as to Moses, for as he saith by the mouth of Pharaoh, I will have mercy on whom I will have mercy, and will have compassion on whom I will have compassion.

16. So that the reason why the sinful Gentiles, (or any unworthy fitter) is called, while the Jews and other sinners are left in their chosen unbelief and sin, it is not because that these sinful Gentiles (or such others) were first more willing, or more worthy by their previous seeking of grace, but from God's free differencing grace and mercy.

17. For the scripture saith unto Pharaoh, Even for this same purpose have I raised thee up, that I might shew my power in thee, and that my name might be declared throughout all the earth.

18. Therefore hath he mercy on whom he will have mercy, and whom he will, he hardeneth.
21. Hath not the potter power over the clay, of the same lump to make one vessel unto honour, and another unto dishonour?  
22. What if God willing to shew his wrath, and to make his power known, endured with much long-suffering the vessels of wrath fitted to destruction?  
23. And that he might make known the riches of his glory, on the vessels of mercy, which he had afore prepared unto glory?  
24. Even us whom he hath called, not of the Jews only, but also of the Gentiles.  
25. As he faith also in Osee, I will call them my people, which were not my people; and her, beloved, which was not beloved.

26. And it shall come to pass, that in the place where it was said unto them, Ye are not my people; there shall they be called, the children of the living God.

27. Elias also crieth concerning Israel, though the number of the children of Israel be as the sand of the sea, a remnant shall be saved.

28. For he will finish the work, and cut it short in righteousness; because a short work will the Lord make upon the earth.

29. And as Elias said before, Except the Lord of Sabaoth had left us a seed, we had been as Sodom, and been made like unto Gomorrha.

30. What shall we say then? That the Gentiles, which followed not after righteousness, have attained to righteousness, even the righteousness which is of faith.
33. As it is written, Isa. 28. 16. Behold I lay in Zion a Stone which many will stumble and fall upon, though it be the precious Foundation-stone, and a Rock that many shall be split upon, though that on which my Church is built; and whosoever believe on him, shall not be disappointed nor ashamed of his hopes.

So that the cause why Israel is cast off, is not because God sent not his Son and Gospel to them, nor invited them to believe, nor gave them evidence of the Truth of Christ, which was sufficient to convince a well-disposed mind; much less, because he hindered them from believing, or because he showed mercy to the Gentiles; but because by error they hardened themselves against Christ, as not answering their Carnal erroneous expectations. For though God would glorify the riches of his Grace by Jesus Christ, yet was it not his Will to reveal him in such visible Majesty and Glory, as should of it self necessitate and force Men to believe in him: For, then Faith would have been no work of Tryal, nor fit for a Reward, but such as the wicked and froward might perform. But God would so reveal his Son, as that Faith might have sufficient encouragement and help, and yet such difficulties as might make it proper to honest Souls, and fit for a reward; so that those that will be blessed by prejudice and worldly Interest, will stumble and fall on the Rock which they should be built on; yet to them that sincerely trust and obey him, he might be the author of Eternal Salvation, and be the Power and Wisdom of God.
Annotations on Chap. 9.

I. It is evident, that St. Paul is but proving and justifying God's free Mercy in calling the Gentiles, while he permitted the obstinate part of the Jews to cut off themselves by Unbelief, and wilfully rejecting Christ.

II. And that he spake as not at all of any arbitrary Inequality in his Rewards and Punishments, but only in his free Gifts; all Men should understand, that God is to Man, 1. Our Owner. 2. Our Benefactor. 3. Our Reفترor. 1. As an Owner, he may do with his own as he will. 2. As our Benefactor, he giveth many things antecedently to his Laws, and many things beside what he there promiseth. And as a Lord and Benefactor, he giveth his Gifts with incomprehensible arbitrary variety; and none have cause to accuse him for giving another more than them. He wrongs not the Stars, by not making them Suns; nor the Clouds, by not making them Stars; nor Men, by not making them Angels; nor Beasts, in not making them Men; nor Worms, or Toads, by making them no better. And scarce two things in the World are like, without any dissimilitude or inequality.

But when he hath made a Law of Precepts, Prohibitions, Rewards and Punishments, it is his Justice equally to perform them to all, according to their Qualifications and Titles. He pardonneth all Puebloers and none else: He glorifieth all that are justified and sanctified, and none else: and giveth the Reason of the different Sentences, from their Qualifications and Works, Mat. 25. &c. which he doth not in his Gifts, as mere Benefactor. So that he doth not do, that the Reason why some are pardoned and saved, is not in him that willeth, and him that runneth; but the reason why, of two ill-deserving Persons or Nations, one is overcome by decreed effiicial Grace, and the other hath not that Grace that is overcome by its wilful Refiinence.

III. And when Paul spake of Esau being hated, the Text alluded more meaning to more than the Esauites were exposed to God's overflowing Punishments on Earth, and that Esau was let blessed than Jacob, and he and his Seed rejected from the Covenant of Peculiarity: But as it is certain that they were under the Law of Mercy made to Mankind in the men Adam and Noah, so it is not laid in Scripture, that Esau was damned, or void of Saving Grace.

II. As to the Hardening of Pharaoh and others, it being agreed by all sober Christians, that God causteth not Sin, we need to debate it no further. Whether the Senec be, That he denieth them Effiicing converting Grace when they have forfeited it by wilful Refiinence, and to permit them to be hardened; or, Whether it be, that he doth those good and righteous Acts which he knows they will be wilfully hardened by, as Occasions and Objects: or both thefe.

Here is not the least hint, that God damneth any, or decreed so to do, merely because he will do it, without any Reason taken from their own Deserts: Or, that he maketh some Men Sinners, or damneth them, merely as the Potter differenceth his Vessels of Clay: But only, that when all have deserved to be forsworn and condemned, and he giveth Common Grace for their Recovery to all, why freely given more, which shall be infallibly effectual to some, rather than to others, when those some were no better than the rest.

It's said by some School-men, That Mens Damnation is caused by Sin, but God's Decree to damn them is not, nor hath any Cause. But this must be more distinctly answered. By God's Decree to damn Men, is meant, 1. Either the Effects of his Will; 2. Or his Will itself; 3. Or his Will as extrinsically denominated from the Object connected to it.

1. No doubt but Punishment, which is the Effect of his Will, hath a Meritorious Cause, in Man's Sin.

2. The Will of God, or his Decree, considered as in God, is nothing but his Essence, which hath no Cause; and is not in itself called a Decree to damn Men.

3. The Denomination of God's Will from its relation to the extrinsec Object, hath objective Cause, the Object qualified.

Whoever truly Repenteth and Believeth, may be sure of his Justification; and it's foolish to doubt of it on pretense that God may condemn whom he will, when he hath told them of whom he will not condemn; And whoever is unregenerate and ungod-
Ch. 10. Believers shall Romans. be saved. Ch. 10.
ly, may be sure, he is unjustified, and unpardoned, and in a damnable state; for God hath assured us of this in his Word.

C H A P. X.

1. Brethren, my hearts desire and prayer to God for Israel is, that they might be saved. 2. For I hear them record, that they have a zeal of God, but not according to knowledge.

1, 2. My great desire and prayer to God for Israel, is, that they may be converted and saved: And it is laudable in them that they have a Zeal of God, and his Law and Worship; but it is frustrate, because misguided by error.

3. For they being ignorant of God's righteousness, and going about to establish their own righteousness, have not submitted themselves unto the righteousness of God.

3. For they being ignorant of God's way of Justification and Righteousness, intended as the end of the Law, and freely given by Grace, and fully now revealed in the Gospel by Jesus Christ, and trusting to their own Works of the Law as a sufficient Righteousness to justify them, have by their error rejected God's free Gift of Justification by Faith in Christ.

4. For Christ is the end of the law for righteousness to every one that believeth.

4. For they should have understood, that the sense and use of the Law is to lead them for Righteousness to Christ, who is its end, and prefigured in its Sacrifices and other Types.

5. For Moses describeth the righteousness which is of the law. That the man which dieth those things, shall live by them.

5. For though the Law do point Men to a better Righteousness, yet in it self as a Law, it owneth nothing as a Righteousness sufficient to Justification, but that which Moses thus describeth, Lev. 19. 5. The Man that doth these things, and breaketh not this Law, shall live by them.

6. But the righteousness which is of faith, speaketh on this wise, Say not in thine heart, Who shall ascend into heaven? (that is to bring Christ down from above); 7. Or, Who shall descend into the deep? (that is to bring up Christ again from the dead); 8. But what faith it? The word is nigh thee, even in thy mouth, and in thy heart: that is the word of faith which we preach,

6, 7, 8. But I may describe the Righteousness which is of Faith in the Words of Moses, Deut. 30. Say not in thy Heart, Who shall ascend into Heaven, (or how can we know God's Will, that never were in Heaven? Or who shall bring us thence a certain Messenger of it?) Or, Who shall descend into the deep? (or it is hid from us like the depths of the Sea, and who shall fetch it to our Knowledge?) But as it is faith, The word is nigh thee; God hath not concealed it, but sent it from Heaven: Christ is come down to make known God and his Word, and he is risen, and gone to intercede for us in Heaven: And he hath brought his Gospel both to our Eyes, Mouth, and Ear, and written it by his Spirit in our Hearts. And Moses there seetheth to intend such a way of Righteousness by free Grace to the Repenting Israel e. And this is it which our Preaching fully revealeth to you.

9. That if thou shalt confess with thy mouth the Lord Jesus, and shalt believe in thine heart, that God hath raised him from the dead, thou shalt be saved.

D D 3
Ch. 10. Believers shall Romans. be saved. Ch. 10.

9. That if thou confess Christ before Men, notwithstanding persection, and, own him as Christ before the World, and believe truly and heartily that God rais'd him from the dead, and thereby witnessed that he owned him, and justified the truth of his Gospel, thou shalt be saved (as well as justified. For to justify a Man, is partly to justify his Right to Salvation.)

10. For with the heart man believeth unto righteousness, and with the mouth confession is made unto salvation.

11. For these two make up the Gospel terms of life: To give up Soul and Body to Christ; if thou believe sincerely in him with thy Heart, thou wilt be accepted for his Merits by God as Righteous; and if thou constantly confess and own him, whatever thou suffer by it from Men, by Word and Deed, in obedience and patience, thou shalt possess the Salvation to which thy Justification initially gave thee right.

11. For the scripture faith, whoever believeth on him, shall not be ashamed.

12. For there is no difference between the Jew and the Greek: for the same Lord over all, is rich unto all that call upon him.

13. For God is no respecter of persons, and giveth not Men, or rejecteth Men, because they are Jews or Greeks. The Law of Grace doth equally pardon and justify Jew and Gentile: that truly repent and believe, and no other: He is the same Lord over all, and is Rich in Mercy to all that call on him in Faith, (for when he proclaimed his Name to Moses, Exod. 34. [as gracious and merciful, forgiving iniquity tran[gression and sin, &c.] it was his very Nature and Decree by which he would be known to all the World, and not only by the Jews.)

14. For whatsoever shall call up on the name of the Lord shall be saved.

15. And how shall they preach, except they be sent? as it is written, How beautiful are the feet of them that preach the gospel of peace, and bring glad tidings of good things!

16. But they have not all obeyed the gospel. For Elias faith, Lord, who hath believed our report?
16. But you may say, Why then doth not this preaching convart more of the Jews? For this excellence of the Gospel, and the preaching of it, doth not suppose that all who have it will be converted by it: For the Jews, Isaiah faith, Lord who hath believed our Reporter? Few did hearken to the Prophet, Isa. 53. 1.

17. So then faith cometh by hearing, and hearing by the word of God.

18. It is evident, that they must hear, that they may believe, and God's Word must be preached to them, or made known, that they may hear it.

19. But I say, Did not Israel know? First Moses faith, I will provoke you to jealousy by them that are no people; and by a foolish nation I will anger you.

20. But have not the Jews had notice of the Gospel, when it was first preached to them, and rejected by them? The very conversion of the Gentiles, proving that Christ whom they rejected, which is manifesto of envy to them, shall leave them without excuse; as Moses faith, Deut. 32. 28. I will provoke you to jealousy by, &c.

21. But so I say, I was found of them that sought me not; I was made manifest unto them that asked not after me. All day long I have stretched forth my hands unto a disobedient and gainsaying people.

22. Isaiah boldly and plainly foretells God's calling the Gentiles by free Grace, and seeking them that first sought not him, and his rejecting the Jews as a People that after his long suffering did continue obstinately to reject his Word and Grace, saying, I was found of them that sought me not, &c. and, All day long I stretched forth, &c.

ANNOTATIONS.

The 12, 13, 14, and 15 Veres are controverted by Expositors, as to the Question, Whether they affect or deny the Salvation of any that hear not of Christ, because (on one side) it is said, That whoever doth call on the Name of the Lord shall be saved, and the 19th Psalm is cited, which tells us how God's Works do preach him to all the World, &c. And on the other side, How shall they hear without a Preacher? &c.

First, We must not confound the doubt of the sense of this Text, with the doubt of the Matter, which is the Salvation of Men that hear not the Gospel: As to the former, I bare, vid. what I thought needful in the Paraphrase, and leave it to the judgment of the Reader.

As to the Matter, I think thus mouch following may satisfy the sober. 1. We must first know what Law of God such Men are under, and then how far it justifieth them. It is certain, that the World (once guilty of sin and death) is not under the Law of Innocency, which maketh Innocency the only Condition of Life (now it is left to all.) And it is certain, that they are neither Lawless, or shut up as Devils in despair; but that they have Duties and means of Repentance, Recovery, Mercy, and Salvation imposed on them, which they are bound to use; for else ends in hope; and they have much forfeited Mercy given to them all, which proveth that God left them not according to the Law of Innocency. And it is certain, that God made all Mankind in fallen Adam and Noah, a Law of Mercy and Grace, and that when he proclaimed his Name to Moses, Exp. 34. De. Lord gracious and merciful, forgiving; &c. it was his Nature, and his way of Governing of
Annotations on Chap. 10.

of Mankind, which he proclaimed. And so that all the world is under a Law which offers Pardon and Life on other terms than sinless Innocency.

2. It is certain, that the superadded Covenant of Peculiarity to the Jews, or the Preaching of the Gospel of Christ Incarnate to part of the World only, repealed not any of the merciful Law, or Terms before given to all the World: Christ added more Mercy, but took away none; much less so much from most of the World: He came not to condemn the World, but to save.

3. It is certain, that all Men shall be judged according to the Law that they were under, and obliged by, and no other.

4. It's certain that the Apostles themselves, though in a state of Grace, believed not till Christ was risen, that he must die a Sacrifice for sin, rise from the dead, ascend and intercede in Heaven, send down the eminent gift of the Holy Ghost, call the Gentiles, gather a Catholic Church, &c. Therefore it was not all our Articles of Faith that were necessary before Christ's coming, but the belief of so much as was then revealed.

But, 2. What others do, that hear not of Christ, in fact, who repenteth, believeth, and is saved; God is only fit to judge; it belongeth not to us. But we may say that the case of Melchizedek, Job and his Friends, and many others, prove, that Grace and Salvation were not confined to the Jews. And that Abraham thought that even Sodom had fifty Righteous Persons, when it was worse than other places of the World. And he that will well read Psal. 19. Prov. 1. Acts 14. and 17. Rom. 1, and 2. may yet receive full satisfaction from God.

II. About Ministers Mission, verse 15. It's doubted whether we may hear any, till we know that God sent them: And it is the device of the Roman Clergy, to puzzle the ignorant, by objecting against the Mission and Ordination of Protestant Ministers, to draw Men from hearing them as Ministers of Christ, claiming to themselves the Peculiarity of Divine Commission and Authority, as the only Church that have uninterrupted Succession of Canonical Ordination. But as the Interruption of theirs is easily proved, so it's most certain, that God hath not made it an antecedent necessary thing to the belief of his Gospel, for all Men and Women to be first so well acquainted with History, as to know what continuance or interruption there hath been in all Countries of Canonical Ordination.

In short, 1. A Lay-man is to be heard that brings the Gospel. 2. He that wanteth some Circumstances of Order, necessary ordinarily to the right ordering of the Church, may yet have all that is essential to the Ministry. 3. He that hath just abilities, and mutual consent of him and a Christian Flock that need him, hath all that is essentially necessary. 4. He that is ordained by Concordant Senior Pastors of that Church, hath all that is necessary essentially to Ordination.

5. He that succeth to have such Qualifications or Ordination, but hath not, but is in profession upon deceiving probability, is a Pastor to that Church, so far that his Ministrations shall be valid to the People, though not to justify himself from the guilt of profane usurpation.

6. The People that love their Souls, must be more careful what Doctrine a Minister preacheth, than what Ordination he hath.

7. In divers cases the Magistrates Authority may serve without Ordination, and in some the Peoples choice alone, though, where it may lawfully be had, just and regular Ordination should not be neglected, seeing none may be himself the sole Judge of his own call and mission.

CHAP. XI.

I. Say then, Hath God cast away his people? God forbid: for I also am an Israelite, of the seed of Abraham, of the tribe of Benjamin.

1. But what? do I by all this conclude, that God hath broken his Covenant with Abraham, and utterly cast off the People of
of Israel? Not at all. For I, and all believing Jews, are the Seed of Abraham, not cast off.

2. God hath not cast away his people which he foreknew. Wot ye not what the scripture faith of Elias? how he maketh intercession to God against Israel, saying, 3. Lord, they have killed thy prophets, and digged down thine altars; and I am left alone, and they seek my life.

4. But what faith the answer of God unto him? I have referred to myself seven thousand men, who have not bowed the knee to the image of Baal.

4. But God knew of more than Elias did: He had seven thousand that were no Idolaters.

5. Even so then at this present time also there is a remnant according to the election of grace.

5. So now also God hath his chosen Remnant. whom his Grace hath brought to Faith in Christ.

6. And if by grace, then is it no more of works: other wise grace is no more grace. But if it be of works, then is it no more grace: other wise work is no more work.

6. And if they are chosen and made his Justified People by Grace and Free Gift for the Merits of Christ, then it cannot be by the Merit of our own Performance of the Law. And if it be by the Merit of such Performance, deferring not Death but Life, then it is not of meer Grace or free Gift. For what need a man Pardon, who deserves not Punishment? or, to have life freely given him, which is the due for the Merit of his Works? (For I here give you notice, that it is no Works that I speak of and exclude, but that which includeth Free Gift and Grace, and not that which subordinately obeyeth Grace, and doth suppose it).

7. What then? Israel hath not obtained that which he seeketh for; but the election hath obtained it, and the rest were blinded:

7. The whole Nation of the Jews have not obtained deliverance by the Messiah, though they fought, and hoped, and waited for him: But God’s Elect ones have obtained it, and the rest miss of it, because their Sin and Prejudice blinded them.

8. According as it is written, God hath given them the spirit of slumber, eyes that they should not see, and ears that they should not hear, unto this day.

8. As it is written, Isa. 29. 10. Because they would not obey the Spirit of God, that would have awakened and enlightened them, God hath justly given them up to the seduction of the Spirit of Slumber, Squalor, and Blindness, from whence it is no wonder that they see not and hear not to this day, being deprived of his Spirit’s Illumination.

9. And David faith, Let their table be made a snare, and a trap, and a stumbling-block, and a recompence unto them. 10. Let their eyes be darkened, that they may not see, and bowe down their back alway.

9. And David Prophetically prayed for such Judgments on the obstinate Enemies of the Just, that for a Recompence of their Malice God would turn their Comforts into Punishments, and forsoke them, saying, &c.

11. I say then, Have they stumbled that they should fall? God forbid: but rather through their fall salvation is come unto the Gentiles, for to provoke them to jealou sic.

11. But what? Are they utterly forsaken and cast off? And had God no better End herein than their Destruc tion? No such thing. But the greater part were permitted justly
Ch. 11. The Gentiles graffed Romans. into the Church. Ch. 11. And as he accepted Abraham and their believing Ancestors, he will also accept them. And if those Apostles be honoured of God as Holy, whth from them are sent with the Gospel into the World, so shall the broken branches be when they are restored.

17. And if some of the branches be broken off, and thou being a wild olive-tree, were grafted in amongst them, and with them partake of the root and fatness of the olive-tree; 18. Boast not against the branches: but if thou boast, thou bearest not the root, but the root beareth thee.

17, 18. The Catholic Church I compare to an Olive-tree: The Covenant of Peculiarity is their Constituting Charter: It was made first with Abraham the Father of the Jews, and next, of all the Faithful: It was sent to all the World by Apostles from Judaea: These two are the Root: The Jews and Gentiles are Branches: The Jews are the first Branches, and the Gentiles the branches of a wild Olive here grafted in. If the Jews be cut off, boast not against them; for the Covenant and Gospel was not first given to you (that now receive its Benefits) but to them, and from them to you.

19. Thou wilt say then, The branches were broken off, that I might be grafted in. 20. Well; because of unbelief they were broken off, and thou standest by faith. Be not high-minded, but fear.

19, 20. If you say, That God more esteemed me than them, because he broke them off, that I might be grafted in. Be not deceived. It was for their own Unbelief, and by it, and not undeservedly, that they were broken off: And it is by Faith, and not for any Worldly Preeminence, that thou art grafted in. Therefore be not puffed up, but fear that Sin that cut them off.

21. For if God spared not the natural branches, take heed lest he also spare not thee.

21. For if God cast them off with whom he first made the Covenant of Peculiarity, take heed of sinning as they did by Pride and
and Unbelief against his Gospel, left heal-
to cut off thee.

22. Behold therefore the good-
ness, and severity of God: on
them which fell, severity; but to-
wards thee, goodness, if thou con-
tinue in his goodness: otherwise
thou shalt be cut off.

23. Rather here reverently admire God's
Goodness and Severity. On the sinful re-
jected Jews, Severity of Justice: but Mer-
cy to thee; which shall continue, if thou
continue in the Faith, and Obedience and:
Gratitude to him: Otherwise thou also shalt
be cut off. (As, alas! most of the Eastern
Churches are.)

24. For if thou were cut out of
the olive-tree which is wild by
nature, and were grafted contra-
ry to nature into a good olive-
tree; how much more shall these
which are the natural branches,
be grafted into their own olive-
tree?

25. For I would not, brethren,
that ye should be ignorant of this
mystery (lest ye should be wise in
your own conceits) that blindness
in part is happened to Israel, un-
til the fulness of the Gentiles be
come in. 26. And to all Israel shall
be saved.
by Mercy into the Church, by the Preaching that shall be sent from the Gentile-Churches, and by the Power and Glory of the Church under Christian Emperours and Governours, and by your good Example.

32. For God hath concluded them all in unbelief, that he might have mercy upon all.

32. For God in Justice and Wisdom hath for a time left the main Body of the Jews in Unbelief, as formerly he did the Gentiles; that in his time he might in mercy call in the main Body of them into the Catholick Church, as he hath done you.

33. O the depth of the riches both of the wisdom and knowledge of God! how unsearchable are his judgments, and his ways past finding out!

33. When we think of these mysterious Providences of God (freely shewing Mercy to the Unworthy, and permitting presuming Men to sin, and yet making use of their Sin for good) we should be so far from questioning God's Mercy or Justice herein, that we should admire the depth of the Riches of his Wisdom, whole Judgments are unsearchable, and his Counsels and Ways not to be traced, and fitly judged of by the Wit of Man.

34. For who hath known the mind of the Lord, or who hath been his counsellor? 35. Or who hath first given to him, and it shall be recompened unto him again?

34, 35. How little know Men of the Mind of God? Nothing but what he freely tells them. He is not guided by the Counsell of Man, nor is Man acquainted with his secret Counsels. Who can oblige him to recompense by his Gifts, or hath any thing but what God giveth him?

36. For of him, and through him, are all things: to whom be glory for ever. Amen.

36. For as all Creatures have three sorts of extrinick Causes, viz. the Efficient, Directive, and Final, God is all these: the Chief Efficient, Chief Directive, and Chief Final Cause of all things: All is Of him, by him, and To him, and he of None: He is All in All things: And as he made and doth all things for his Glory, his Glory shall for ever shine forth in all, which Angels and Saints shall intelligently see, and praise for ever, Amen.

ANNOTATIONS.

The great Doubt about this Chapter is, what it prophesies of the full Conversion of the Jews. Concerning which, I shall only speak so much as is certain, and leave the rest to the Judgment of others.

1. It is certain, that God never meant to restore the Jewish Politic under Mose's Law; for that Law is abrogated by Christ, and o'th't Politic. It's Jewish Contradiction of Christianity to expect such a Restoration.

2. Much less will God ever confine the Church and Covenant of Peculiarity to the Jewish Nation, and take it from the Gentiles, and cease Catholicism.

3. Nor will God restore and confine the Jews to their ancient Country in Palestine; which being such a Country as Wales, now barren, and about half as big as England, would be far from making them a People of eminent Glory in the World, but rather contemptible in that respect.

4. Nor hath God promised to make the Jews Lords and Rulers over the rest of the Nations of the Earth, as the Carnal sort of them did expect.

5. Therefore no other Calling of the Jews can be expected, but that they become Parts of the Catholick Church.

6. It seems to me by History, that this is performed long ago, the main Body of their Nation being turned to Christianity. To which purpose, consider these things,

1. Myriads were converted in Judea by the Apostles.
Annotations on Chap. xi.

2. In all other Countries of the Roman Empire, the scattered Jews had Synagogues, to which the Apostles first Preached, and where they first gathered the Rudiments of the Christian Churches.

3. A vast Number of the unbelieving Jews were destroyed by Vespasian and Titus, when Jerusalem was besieged and destroyed.

4. Many more Jews were then converted, when they saw God's Judgments executed on them, and the Christians spared.

5. Vast Numbers of the remainder of the Unbelievers were destroyed by Adrian, and the Christians spared, and many turned Christians then.

6. Since then many have been converted by Solemn Disputes, and many Jews become eminent Doctors in the Church.

7. They were ever fond of their own Country, and therefore we may suppose, that as many as could, lived there. And it's known, that all Conquerors use to transplant only the Rich and Ruling Men, and leave the Multitude of the poor Labourers to manure the Ground, that it may yield them Tribute. So did Nebuchadnezzar: And so in England did the Romans, Saxons, Danes, and Normans: They left the Vulgar to possess the Land under them, or else the Land would have been unprofitable to them. It was the Rich and the Soldiers that they drove into Wales; so that we are mostly of a British Offspring. Now it is known, that in the Days of Constantine, and the following Christian Emperors, (though no Country wholly turned Christian of a long time) Judea turned as other Provinces did; and had their Bishops, and their Patriarch in Councils: and proportionally rather more than in other Countries, were Christians there. So that Judea was Christian, as other Provinces were.

CHAP. XII.

1. I beseech you therefore, brethren, by the mercies of God, that ye present your bodies a living sacrifice, holy, acceptable unto God, which is your reasonable service.

2. Now to make Application of all this Doctrine afore-written, I beseech you, as you have a due Tene of Christ's offering himself a Sacrifice for our Sins, and of the great Mercy of the Gentiles Salvation by Grace, and of our deliverance from the Burdens of the Jewish Law, those costly Sacrifices of Beasts being abrogated by Christ, that you will resign and dedicate your selves to God, and as a living holy Sacrifice, give up your own Bodies wholly to him, even to the Obedience of his Commands, and to offer what he calls you to, even to death, which will be better than a Sacrifice of Beasts, even a reasonable, holy, acceptable Service of God.

3. And be not conformed to this world: but be ye transformed by the renewing of your mind, that ye may prove what is that good, and acceptable and perfect will of God.

4. And now you are called out of the World, and made a Peculiar People to God, conform not your selves to the sinful Practices of the World; but be transform'd from your former Errors and Sins, by the renewing of your Minds by Truth and Holiness; that you may know by experience the Goodness of God's Ways, to which you are called, and the Greatness of his Love.

5. For I say, through the grace given unto me, to every man that is among you, not to think of himself more highly then he ought to think; but to think soberly according as God hath dealt to every man the measure of faith.

6. And specially because that the proud over-valuing of Mens own Understandings, and thinking that they know more than they do, is the common Cause of Errors and Sins, of Confusion, Divisions, and Heresies in the Churches, I do, as an Apostle sent and taught of God, admonish and charge you all, every one to think humbly of himself, and not to think your selves wiser.
Ch. 12. Love and other Romans. Duties required. Ch. 12.

4. For as we have many members in one body, and all members have not the same office: 5. So we being many are one body in Christ, and every one members one of another.

4, 5. For as the Members of the same Body have great diversity in Number and Office; so we, though many individual Persons, make up one Body or Church, in Christ the Head, in whom we are united, and are related to each other as Members of the same Body.

6. Having then gifts, differing according to the grace that is given to us, whether prophecy, let us prophesy according to the proportion of faith: 7. Or ministry, let us wait on our ministering; or he that teacheth, on teaching;

6, 7. Seeing it pleaseth God to give various degrees of Gifts, according to the dispensation of his Free Grace, and not to make all equal in Gifts or Office, let all confine themselves to their Measure and Office, and that let them faithfully execute. Let those that are inspired to speak as from God, by Prediction or Inspiration, speak what God hath revealed to them, according to the proportion of their Revelation and Knowledge, and no more; and not pretend Special Revelation against the sealed Word of Faith. Let those that are called to any Special Service for the Church, perform their own Office faithfully therein: And let those that are called to teach be faithful Teachers. Neglect not your own part, and invade not others.

8. Or he that exhorteth, on exhortation: he that giveth, let him do it with simplicity; he that ruleth with diligence; he that speaketh with cheerfulness.

8. He that is to exhort Men to practice what is taught, let him do it diligently, for Mens corrupt Wills and Affections have need of excitation and Persuasion, as well as their Understandings of Information. He that giveth, (his own, or the Churches) let him do it sincerely and impartially. He that is intrusted to govern Church or Family, let him do it carefully, and diligently. He that speaketh Mercy to any in distress, let him do it cheerfully.

9. Let love be without dissimulation. Abhor that which is evil, cleave to that which is good.

9. Let Christian-Love, which is the Great Duty of the Gospel, be hearty and sincere, appearing in its Fruits, and not in barren Words alone. Be not indifferent and cold towards Evil or Good: but avoid Evil with abhorrence, and resolutely stick to that which is good.

10. Be kindly affectioned one to another; with brotherly love, in honour preferring one another;

10. Love each other as Brethren, and live in the kind affectionate expression of it, (and not as faith, uncharitable, peevish, quarrelsome, censorious, or perverting Men): Be forwarder to prefer others in esteem, praise, or practice, (according to their Worth and Rank) than to set up your selves, or seek esteem, applause, or preferment. Strive not to be thought wiser or best, or to be highest; nor envy others.

11. Not slothful in business; fervent in spirit; serving the Lord:

11. Do not your Duties slothfully, unwillingly, and heavily; but diligently: and serve God in all the Duties of your Places and Times, with a fervent, zealous Mind.

12. Rejoycing in hope; patient in tribulation; continuing in prayer:

12. In all your present Tribulation, rejoice in hope of promised Deliverance and Felicity hereafter; and patiently endure it: And continue infinitely to pray.

13. Distributing to the necessity of Saints; giving to hospitality.

13. Freely distributing to the necessity, especially of Holy Persons; and not living in superfluity, and shutting up your Compassion from those that are in want: Delight to give the Needy Entertainment in your Houses, and seek them to the end.
14. Bless them which persecute you: bless, and curse not.

15. And though the Sin of Persecution be heinous, it is God that is the Avenger of it. Avenges not your selves in word or deed: Pray for them, and curse them not.

16. Rejoice with them that do rejoice, and weep with them that weep.

17. Be not like those selfish Persons, that are little affected with the Cause of any but themselves; Not like the Dividers, that affect to go crost to others, by proud Singularity: But, rejoice with Rejoicers, and weep with Weepers, as being of the same Body, and as regarding their Cause as if it were your own.

18. Be of the same mind one towards another. Mind not high things, but condescend to men of low estate.

19. Affect not to be odd and singular from other Christians; but to be of one Mind and Way with them. (So it be not in Sin) and mind their Cause as if it were your own: Mind not Preferments, nor Riches and Vain-glory, nor put your selves for these into the Company and Favour of those above you. But, be content with a low Condition in the World, and go along in Society with the Lower sort.

16. Be not wife in your own conceits.

17. Have humble thoughts of your own Knowledge, and think it not greater than it is: but be conscious of your Ignorance, and Uncertainties, and Weakness, and rather as Doubters stay and learn, than too hastily judge and conclude.

18. Recompense to no man evil for evil.

19. If others do ill to you, do not you do ill to them, nor require them with Revenge.

20. Provide things honest in the sight of all men.

21. Be diligent in your outward Labours, that you may avoid base Dependence as much as may be, and may provide for a decent Living for your selves, and help to others.

22. If it be possible, as much as lieth in you, live peaceably with all men.

23. Sorrow not, though it is not in your power to make the Malignant Persecutors, Contumacious, and Proud, to be peaceable towards you, nor must you purchase Peace, by binding against God; yet see that you be peaceable towards all Men; to the utmost of your Power, that the Distance may not be your fault, but theirs, who make Peace impossible.
yield, by Passion, or Revenge, or any Sin; but not, if they do but hurt your Bodies. Therefore keep your Charity and Innocency, and you are the Conquerors: And by your Love and Good Works overcome their Evil, as it would draw you to sin, and as it is the Malady of their Souls, which you would overcome for them, that they may be saved.

CHAP. XIII.

Let every soul be subject unto the higher powers. For there is no power but of God: the powers that be, are ordained of God.

1. And one of the Duties that are necessary to your Peace, and required of God, is your due Subjection to Government: Take heed therefore of their Opinion who think, that Christ hath set us free from Humane Government: For God is the God of Order: And as in Natural Effects he useth Natural Means, so in Politick Government he useth Officers. I speak not of mere Strength, but of Authority, or Right to Govern: And as subordinate Magistrates have no such Power, but what is given them by the Supreme; so it is impossible that Supreme Rulers on Earth can have true Authority, but what is given them by God, the Universal Sovereign; even as impossible, as for any Creature to be what it is, without a Creator: For of him, and through him, and to him are all things. Even where you must not obey a sinful Command, yet you must be subject still. None are exempted from this Duty; for Government is the Ordinance of God.

2. Whosoever therefore refuseth the power, refuseth the ordinance of God: and they that refuse, shall receive to themselves damnation.

3. Whoever therefore will not be subject to Humane Government, but refuseth true Authority, refuseth a needful Ordinance of God, and describeth Punishment from God and Man.

4. For he is the minister of God to thee for good. But if thou do that which is evil, he will judge thee with the sword in vain: for he is the minister of God, a revenger to execute wrath upon him that doeth evil.

5. Wherefore ye must needs be subject, not only for wrath, but also for conscience sake.

6. Wherefore you ought to be subject (even when you may not obey) not only for fear of Punishment from Man, but in Conscience of your Duty, to God who ordained them.

7. For, for this cause pay you tribute also: for they are God's ministers.
Love works no ill to his neighbour: therefore love is the fulfilling of the law.

As we are not apt to hurt our selves, so true Love would not hurt others, in their Lives, Liberties, Estates, or Good Names, (much less study to destroy them.) Therefore Love is the virtual fulfilling of all our Duty to them.

And that, knowing the time, that now it is high time to awake out of sleep; for now is our Salvation nearer than when we believed.

And we should increase in this careful discharge of our Duty of Love and Justice, though in the State of Infidelity we lived in such sins: For by this time we should be better acquainted with our Duties, and awakend to all considerable performance of them, we being nearer our Reward and Salvation than when we were first converted to the Faith; and God expects now more from us.

The night is far spent, the day is at hand: let us therefore cast off the works of darkness, and let us put on the armour of light.

We are now got further from our former State of Darkness: We are now come to the Day-light of Illuminating Grace, and under the Increase thereof. The Church is growing to a more Honourable State by its Increase. Let us therefore more resolutely cast off all the Works of Heathenish Darkness, and, as Christ’s Soldiers, put on our Sacred Armour, and use it as in the Day-light of Grace.

Let us walk honestly as in the day; not in rioting and drunkenness, not in chambering and wantonness, not in strife and envying.

Seing we are in the Light, let us walk modestly and decently, as becometh our Condition; not as the Heathens, in rioting and drunkenness; not in lasciviousness, and uncleanness, and filthy luks; nor in proud, lustful, or covetous spirit and envy.
14. But put ye on the Lord Jesus Christ, and make not provision for the flesh, to fulfill the lusts thereof.

14. But let Christ, his Spirit and Love, his Doctrine and Example, his Interest and Kingdom, take you up; and be to you as the Clothing which you daily wear: And do not as Carnal Men, (whose fleshly Pleasure and Prosperity is their choice and bet) that live to the said fleshly Pleasure, and make provision to satisfy the Carnal Will and Lust, instead of preferring the Heavenly Treasure.

ANNOTATIONS.

Qu. I. What is meant here by Powers? Answ. Not meer Strength, but Authority or Right to Govern. It is not Numus, but Restrict: An Unrider's Strength may be resifled, but Rightful Power or Authority may not.

Qu. II. Both St. Paul determines here either of the Species, or Individually, who is that hath the Highest Power? Answ. Not at all. In those Ages, and long after, sometime the Senate claimed the Supremacy wholly, and sometime a part of it; sometime they pretended to make Emperors, and some Emperors yielded them more than others: but whether the Senate or the Emperor were the Highest Power, or the Supremacy in both conjunct, or which of the Species was most just, Paul medleth not.

Qu. How then would he have the Christians know whom to obey? Answ. He leaveth that to be known by its proper Evidence, and not by Divine Revelation by him.

Qu. III. Is no Power to do wrong ordained of God? Or is all such ordained by him? Answ. Power here being Right to Govern, no Man hath Right to do Wrong, that's a Contradiction: But God hath ordained that Right which may be abused to do Wrong, and yet not refuted.


Qu. V. Hath the Universal [every Soul] no Exception? Answ. The Higher Powers themselves are excepted: And neither foreigners, nor those that have no Governments, are bound to be subject to other Princes: It is only their own Subjects that are meant. And the Pope could have no pretence to except his Clergy, if he did not seign himself to be the Highest Power over them, and above their Kings and States.

Qu. VI. Is Obedience to go as far as Subjection? Answ. No: We must not obey any by disobeying God: But yet we must continue Subjection and due Honour to them, and not deny them their due, because we must not give them more by Sin.

Qu. What then are the limits of our Obedience to Men? Answ. 1. Matically, we must not obey any by Sin, nor yet against the Common Good, to do more hurt than good, when they command without due Power or Right. 2. As to formal Obedience, (which is to act by the Obligation of their Authority) the Limits of their Power are the Limits of that Obligation and Obedience.

Qu. What are the Limits of their Power? Answ. In general, they have no more from God than he giveth them. 1. They have no Power against any of his Laws, of Nature or Scripture, nor against his Kingdom, or himself. 2. They have no Right or Power to overthrow Personal, or Family, or Church-Government, nor to deprive any of any thing which God hath given them, without forfiture or Consent, explicit or implicit, nor to destroy the Common Good.

2. Therefore that Property which God hath given Man as Man, (in Life, and limbs, and the use of his Faculties for his Welfare and his Duty to God, and his Wife and Children) are such objective Limitations of this Power, that no Man hath Right to takethem from any, but on Forfeit, or valid Consent.

Qu. VII. How far is all Power of God, and how far of Men? Answ. 1. It is of God's Ordination in Nature, That there be Government and Subjection in general. 2. And the Specification is so far of God, that he hath made them his Officers: 1. To promote Obes...
Annotations on Chap. 13.

dience to his own Law: 2. For his Glory; and the Common Good. So that no People can make a Power that shall not have Right to promote God's Law; 2. Or that shall destroy the Common Good. 3. God's Providence doth to manage the Affairs of the World, as shall point out the Man or Families that the People should accept of first while free, as qualified by Wisdom, and Strength, and Goodness, for Authority. 4. Monarchy and Arithocracy in specie are both of Divine Allowance.

2. But it is of Men, 1. Which of these sorts (Monarchy, or Arithocracy, or Mixture) shall by a Free People be chosen. 2. And who (by such a Free People) shall be chosen for the Persons or Families. 3. And what degree of Power they shall have over their Proprieties (which are antecedent to Regiment) in undetermined Cases. So that Government is partly from God, and partly from Man.

Qu. VIII. By what Right doth one Person or Family claim it before all others? Ans. The foregoing Words decide this. 1. Not by merit, but Virtue. For these may be without such Authority. 2. Not by merit of Strength or Conquest: For then every Rebel, or Foreign Prince, that can conquer Kings, will have the Right, which would tempt them to attempt such Conquest. 3. Not every Conquest made but by some Injury: For that gives Right but to Repulsals or Damages, and over the Injurors: And all Wars usually are on Pretense of Right. 4. Nor a Succession of Primogeniture from Noah, nor from the first founding of the Commonwealth: This is not necessary: Nor may any rebel against all the Kings on Earth, if they can but disprove such an uninterrupted Succession of Primogeniture: Else Kings were dangerously exposed. 5. Nor is Revelation from Heaven necessary to notice the Person: For who but Fanatics now pretend to that? I know therefore no remaining Title, but Mutual Consent (free or forced) of Persons made subservient by the Providence of God, as the forming of the Government.

Qu. IX. Are not [the Powers that be] all that have present Possession? Ans. r. Yes, all that possess the Right of Government; but not all that usurp it, or poise their Strength.

Qu. How then? Shall all the Vulgar be made Judges of the Prince's Right? Ans. They are bound to judge as far as they can know; else they could not tell whom to obey or defend: But misjudging will not excuse them from Guilt. And in difficult Cases, Appearance and Probability must serve them that can have no more. And Submission and Patience under Usurpers, is not Subjection and Consent.

Qu. X. What is meant by Resistance? Ans. Not only Fighting against them, but all that is contrary to Subjection and due Obedience: But most eminently Libertinism, which pretends that God hath freed Christians from Subjection.

Qu. XI. How doth the Description of a good Man agree with Heaths and Persueters? Are they none of God's Ministers who are a Terror to Good Works? Ans. If they are not in the general Course of their Government for Virtue and against Vice, and for the Common Good, they want the Essence of the Office. But they that are a Terror to some particular Good Works, not essential to the End of the Office, and that through Error, may yet be against Vice, and for Goodness, in the main. And a Heathen may execute the Law of Nature, and be so far for the Common Good. But Perfecting the Just is no exercise of Divine Ministry or Power.

Qu. XII. Verse 5. How is Conscience bound by Man's Laws? Ans. All Men must be conscious of God's Obligations on them, to obey the Just Laws of Men.

Qu. XIII. Verses 6, 7. May we give none more Tributes, Customs, Tax, or Honour, than their due? And are all Judges of the Prince's due? Ans. All is not due that may be claimed: Materially Men may, for their own Safety and just Ends, give Rulers or others more than their due, or which they have right to; But as to formal Obedience or Justice, we are not bound to give any one more than his due. And of this we are Discreeters, though not deciding Publick Judges. But misjudging will excuse no Injury.

Qu. XIV. What sort of Debt is just? Verse 8. Ans. It is Injustice not to give every Man his due, if we are able. And to promise or borrow what we know we cannot pay, or when we acquire not the Lender with the weakness and doubting of our Estate, that the hazard may be by his own consent, is to defraud him, and is a Stealing of one of the worst sorts.
Him that is weak in the faith receive you: but not to doubtful disputations.

1. And as your subjection to Government is necessary to a life of Christian Love and Concord, so also is the mutual forbearance and reception of such brethren, as are weak in the Faith, and differ in disputable tolerable points. Therefore see that you receive such to your Love and Communion, without searching their Opinions, and racking them by doubtful disputations, about the points wherein they differ.

2. For one believeth that he may eat all things: another who is weak eateth herbs.

3. For instance, one truly believeth that all meats are now lawful; another either thinks that he should not live on the life and flesh of his fellow Creatures, or that he should at least abstain from that which by the Law of Moses was forbidden: This is his weakness.

4. Let not him that eateth despise him that eateth not: and let not him which eateth not judge him that eateth: for God hath received him.

5. Let not him that underhandeth, that eating all things is lawful, set at nought or vilifie him (as a humongous, scrupulous fool) who is of another opinion, and thinks it unlawful to eat flesh, (as many are too apt to do) and let not him that dare not eat such Flesh or Meat forbidden by Moses’s Law, take him for an ungodly sinner that doth otherwise, nor separate from him as a prophane: For God that is most holy, and hateth all sin, yet receiveth both these forts; and therefore so must you, if you will Please God.

6. Who art thou that judgest another man’s servant? To his own matter he standeth or falleth:

7. Yea, he shall be holden up, for God is able to make him stand.

8. Doest thou know thyself while thou judgest others? Who art thou, a sinful man, that thou presumest to judge and condemn God’s Servants? It is his Sentence and not thine to which they shall stand or fall, as justified or condemned: and these differences shall not hinder God’s acceptance of him and his Salvation: for God that is just and merciful can justify, confirm, and save him.

9. One man eateth one day above another: another eateth every day alike: Let every man be fully persuaded in his own mind.

10. So one Man makes Conscience to keep the Jewish Feasts and Fasts: Another knoweth that Christ hath abrogated them. Let every one labour as well as he can to know God’s Will, and then be true to his upright Conscience; as knowing that he may not in these things follow the judgment of others against his own, which he thinks is according to the mind of God, whom he intendeth herein to obey.

11. He that regardeth the day, regardeth it unto the Lord, and he that regardeth not the day, to the Lord he doth not regard is. He that eateth, eateth to the Lord, for he giveth God thanks; and he that eateth not, to the Lord, he eateth not, and giveth God thanks.

12. He that maketh Conscience to keep such Days: and not to eat, he intendeth it as an Act of Obedience to God; and so doth he that is contrary minded; and both of them pray for God’s acceptance, and give him thanks: And dare you for such things discourse or reject Men, that be they are able studly to please God; Is pleasing God folight in your esteem.

7. For
ch. 14. **Days and Meals** Romans.

7. For none of us liveth to himself, and no man dieth to himself.

8. For we are all convinced that we are not our own, and therefore we do what we live for the sake of the world, but to the praise of God, not all men die at his will and into his hands, but of their own.

8. For whether we live, we live unto the Lord; and whether we die, we die unto the Lord: Whether we live therefore or die, we are the Lord's.

9. For our lives are of God, and must be for him to do his will, and when we die, his will therein is done, in which we must be convertedly acquainted; for living and dying we are his.

10. For this end Christ both died, and rose, and revived, that he might be Lord both of the dead and living.

11. For this being the very end of Christ's dying, rising, and reviving, that we might be Lord of all both dead and living, who shall presume to take the governing or judging power out of his hands, and take souls and consciences from submission to him, and expect to be obeyed or pleased before him?

12. But why dost thou judge thy brother? Or, why dost thou set at nought thy brother? For we shall all stand before the judgment seat of Christ.

13. Why then doth one party call their brethren sinners, or prophets, for not being against such lawful things as they call unlawful? And why do the other party view their brethren for conscientious scrupling, and avoiding such a lawful thing? Do you not all know, our common imperfection of knowledge, and that we have no authority for such judgment or contempt? And are you not afraid thus to umpire the judgment which belongs to Christ, and fear lest he will judge you for your uncharitable notions to his servants?

14. For it is written, As I live, with the Lord, every knee shall bow to me, and every tongue shall confess to God. 12. So then every one of us shall give account of himself to God.

15. But if thy brother be grieved with thy meat, now walkest thou not charitably. Destroy not the bee 3

him with thy meat, for whom Christ died. 16. Let not then your good be evil spoken of.

19. Let us therefore follow after the things which make for peace, and things wherewith one may edifi another.

19. Instead therefore of Excommunicating, Abusing or Despising one another for such Ceremonies, or small differences as these, if we are Christians, let us lay by these matters of Contention, and earnestly pursue the things that make for the Common Peace of all Christians, though thus differing, and the things by which we may further each others Edification and Salvation, and not obtrude our own Opinions, or things unnecessary, to the hurt of others, and divilion of the Church.

20. For meat destroy not the work of God. All things indeed are pure; but it is evil for that man who eateth with offence.

20. Obtrude not your scrupled Meat, or Ceremonies, or small things, to the destroying of Men's Souls, by driving or drawing them to sin. All such indifferent things are pure to the pure; but it is your sin if you use them (much more if you impose them) to the scandal, offence, or hurt of others.

21. It is good neither to eat flesh, nor to drink wine, nor any thing whereby thy brother stumbleth, or is offended, or is made weak.

21. It is thy duty to forbear even flesh and wine when they are not necessary, if the use of them will occasion sin or more hurt to thy Brother than good to thee; much more to avoid obtruding thy indifferent things on him who takes them to be sins.

22. Haft thou faith? have it to thy self before God. Happy is he that condemneth not himself in that thing which he alloweth.

22. Haft thou more Knowledge than he, to believe those things to be lawful, which he judgeth sin? Keep thy knowledge and belief to thy self, to justify thy judgment to God, but use it not to the hurt of others. Happy is he that useth not his Knowledge of good and evil to his own condemnation. It's a bad kind of 

18. For he that in these things serveth Christ, is acceptable to God, and approved of men.

18. For notwithstanding such difference in lesser things, he that is such a one, and in these things sincerely serveth Christ, is acceptable to God, whoever cenotre him, despise him, or excommunicate him; and he is approved of Wise and Charitable Men, and is one whose Life, even the Natural Conscience of Men, will secretly be forced to approve, and condemn them that condemn and vilifie him.
Ch. 15. The strong are Romans to bear with the weak. Ch. 15.

Knowledge which is used to destroy others, and condemn thee self.

23. And he that doubteth, is damned if he eat, because he eateth not of faith: for whatsoever is not of faith, is sin.

23. I may well call it destroying thy Brother: For if he do the indifferent thing, who rather thinketh it to be unlawful, it tendeth to his damnation, because it is sin in his Opinion and Interpretation, while he believeth it to be so, or not to be lawful. For whatsoever a Man doth, believing it to be sin, and not believing that God alloweth it, is certainly a sin in him.

CHAP. XV.

1. WE then that are strong, ought to bear the infirmities of the weak, and not to please our selves.

1. We then (even Church Governors as well as others) that are more knowing, (instead of driving Men of weaker understanding to go against their Consciences in unnecessary things) ought to bear their weaknesses with compassion, and in Love and Patience, and not to practice what we think lawful, on pretence that we are in the right, when it tendeth to their hurt, (much less to force them to our way.)

2. Let every one of us please his neighbour for his good to edification. 3. For even Christ pleased not himself, but as it is written, The reproaches of them that reproached thee, fell on me.

2. Let every one of us (not excepting my self that am an Apostle) lay by his own humour and self-will, and choose the way by which he may edifie his Brother, by bearing with his weaknesses. For even Christ so condescended and accommodated himself to the good of others, as it is written, The reproaches, &c. He suffered for Men's sin against God.

3. For whatsoever things were written aforetime, were written for our learning; that we through patience and comfort of the Scriptures might have hope:

4. Which saying was primarily David's indeed, but all such are written in Scripture to teach us also Patience, and imitation of such examples of Charity, and so to confirm our hope.

5. Now the God of patience and consolation, grant you to be like-minded one towards another, according to Christ Jesus:

5. I know the danger of this selfish uncharitable humour of imposing Men's own Opinions on all others as terms of their Communion with them, and therefore - I have used this long and plain exhortation against it, I shall also pray for you, that the God who is patient with the weak, and is their Comforter and yours, will grant you so much Grace and Charity, as to make you imitators of him, and of the Love and Condescension of Christ, and to bear with others, and do by them, as you would be born with and used your selves.

6. That ye may with one mind and one mouth glorifie God, even the Father of our Lord Jesus Christ.

6. That you may with Unity and Concord hold your holy Communion for worshipping God, without uncharitable Excommunications or Separations, vilifying or censuring each other; which can never be expected by driving each one to agree in small unnecessary things, or without bearing with the mistakes and differences of one another, when all are guilty of many mistakes, and such mistakes must still be expected.

7. Wherefore receive ye one another, as Christ also received us, to the glory of God.

7. I conclude therefore by beseeching you, to receive one another with Love, to your Communion, and Kindness, as you would be Christian imitators of Christ, and as you are sensible of his needful Mercy to your selves, in receiving us that once were Enemies, and still have manifold sins and errors, to the glorifying of God's Love and Mercy: And pretend not your Knowledge, or Authority, or Piety against so commanding a Morive and Example.
ANNOTATIONS on the former Chapter, and this.

The subject of the former Chapter is handled on this far, and here that Chapter should have ended. He that understands the former and present State of the Christian Churches, and the Pride and Ignorance to which Man is liable, will easily perceive, that it was not in vain that the Spirit of God did by the Apostle handle and decide the Case, of receiving Diffusers in tolerable Cases, into Love and Communion. The Jews were so tied up from Legislation in God's Matters, by the knowledge of God's Prerogative in their Theocracy, that they had less room for the Canons and Engines of Man's making to exercise their Pride and Uncharitableness by, than the Romans have since done. And yet the Princes plait their part, and by their Traditions made void the Law of God, and preferred their Ceremonies before the weighty Matters of the Law, and would not understand what that meant, I will have mercy, and not sacrifice, and thereby did condemn the guiltless. And Christ found the Samaritans and Jews at the Debate, Whether this Mountain, or at Jerusalem, men ought to worship? Overlooking their Envy, which is in Spirit and in Truth. And, alas! what work have Dominion, unnecessary Censures and Controversies made in the Christian Churches these 1500 years? And it is an Instance how power Blinthees, and Prejudice, and Worldly Interest have, to frustrate the plain Decisions of God's Word, that so full and express a Decision as these two Chapters make, (with 5 Er. 12. and Eph. 4. and James 3.) hath signified as little with the Dividers and Proud, almost as if there had been no such written. And yet such Men call for a Judge of Controversies, because of the pretended Obscurity of the Scriptures, which nothing can be plainer than this, which they despise. They mean, that such as they must be Judges, and God shall make the Words, if they may make the Sect.

How great is the number that go on the two sides of Uncharitableness here preserved, especially on that which is largely left unconfessed? One side faith, All God's Truths are precious, and none must be sold for Peace; and we must not partake of other Metastasis: As if our great Duty of Love, Forbearance, and Communion, were our Sin, or a partaking of the Faults of all that we join with. The other Side pretend, 1. That Paul only required Forbearance in things indifferent, undetermined by Governors; and nor after such a Command or Determination. 2. Or, that he given only a Temporary Rule for the present Concord of Jews and Gentiles, till the sealed Church should take a common Course.

I will not here answer these at large, having done it in my Book called, The only Way of the Church's Concord: But I say, That I despair of reducing that Man to the Truth here-in, who shall continue of either of these Opinions, after he hath formerly perused the Text, and hath considered, 1. That St. Paul here uses, I think, above twenty Arguments, from Morality and common Christian Duty, which he would not do for an Inanimate Stone, which Bishops may change when they will. 2. That Roms was then a Risen Church, and therefore had Pastors, or one at least; and that he writeth to the whole Church, and therefore to the Pastors: And sure Be never return, (The Glory shall redound such Diffusion to Communion, and neither by Canon or Practice teach them, not they think: nor do all over-ride, and till they have made such Canons.) Pastoral must not play with Governors, in so long and grave a Reprehension. 3. That St. Paul could not have himself in, as another the same Obligation with the rest: And if an Apostle called from Heaven may not do what's here forbidden, what Bishops can pretend a Right to do it by greater Authority or Wisdom? But they that have not known the Way of Peace, may say something against the fault and plainest Description of it, and the simplest Reproofs of God himself. But he will expound their Chapters to their Consciences, if ever he maketh known of his Church.
8. Now I say, that Jesus Christ was a minister of the circumcision for the truth of God, to confirm the promises made unto the fathers:

9. And that the Gentiles might glorify God, for his mercy.

8, 9. And that ye may understand the argument from the Example of Christ, I say, that it was his Office to reconcile both Jews and Gentiles to God, who will receive them both; And therefore they should live as reconciled to each other. Christ was a Minister of God's unearn'd merit, being a Jew, and personally exercised his Ministry among them, to perform God's true Promises to the Fathers: And yet his Gospel extendeth to the Gentiles also, that they may glorify God with the Jews.

9. As it is written, For this cause will I confess him among the Gentiles, and sing unto his name. And again he saith, Rejoice ye Gentiles with his people. And again, Praise the Lord, all ye Gentiles; and let him be your God. And again, Praise the Lord. There shall be a root of Jesse, and he that shall rise to reign over the Gentiles; in him shall the Gentiles trust.

10, 11, 12. This is also prophesied, That Christ shall call and save the Gentiles: It is written, "

13. Now the God of hope filleth you with all joy and peace in believing, that ye may abound in hope through the power of the Holy Ghost.

14. And I say also, that ye are full of goodness, filled with all knowledge, able also to admonish one another.

15. Nevertheless, brethren; I have written the more boldly unto you, in some sort, as putting you in mind, because of the grace that is given to me of God. 16. That I should be the minister of Jesus Christ to the Gentiles, ministering the gospel of God, that the offering up of the Gentiles might be acceptable being sanctified by the holy Ghost.

17. Yet have I written the more boldly to you, of what I found most suitable, to put you in mind of that which I hope you know already, because God hath vouchsafed me freely the favour and honour, to be Christ's Minister to the Gentiles, to minister to them the Gospel of God. And therefore I do perform my Office, that I may prefer to them the Converted and Edified Gentiles, as an acceptable Offering, sanctified (not ceremonially only) but by the Holy Ghost, by whom I preach and which is poured out on them that believe.

18. And in the Honour and Succes of this my Office I have but little of glorying and joy; but as it is a Worldly Dignity, but Spiritual in the great things that pertain to God.
18. For I will not dare to speak of any of those things which Christ hath not wrought by me, to make the Gentiles obedient, by word and deed.

18. For I will not feign that God hath done more by me than he hath, but speak the Truth of the Words and Deeds which were wrought by me, to bring the Gentiles to believe in Christ, and obey him, and my Success herein.

19. Through mighty signs and wonders, by the power of the Spirit of God; so that from Jerusalem and round about unto Illyricum, I have fully preached the gospel of Christ.

19. Not by mere Words, but by such Signs and Wonders by the Power of the Spirit, as bear the proof of God’s Approbation, and were convincing Evidences to the Hearers. So that from Jerusalem round to Illyricum I have fully preached the Gospel of Christ.

20. Yea, so have I striven to preach the gospel not where Christ was named, lest I should build upon another man’s foundation:

20. And I specially chose to preach the Gospel, where Christ was not known, that I might not, only come after others, to finish the Work which they had begun.

21. But as it is written, To whom he was not spoken of, they shall see: and they that have not heard, shall understand.

21. Which God foretold, saying, &c.

22. For which cause also I have been much hindred from coming to you. 23. But now having no more place in these parts, and having a great desire these many years to come unto you; 24. Whence I take my journey into Spain, I will come to you: for I trust to see you in my journey, and to be brought on my way thitherward by you, if first I be somewhat filled with your company.

22, 23, 24. And by such Work I have been hindered from coming to Rome, but now being noe vacant from it here, I hope to see you as I go to Spain, and to be brought on my way, when I have had first the comfort of your Company there.

(Note, That Paul knew not how God would send him to Rome, and stop him from going to Spain.)

25. But now I go unto Jerusalem, to minister unto the saints.

25. Now I am going to Jerusalem, to serve Christ, in bringing his poor Saints, which were under a Famine, such Relief as I have collected for them.

26. For it hath pleased them of Macedonia and Achaia, to make a certain contribution for the poor saints which are at Jerusalem. 27. It hath pleased them verily, and their debtors they are.

26, 27. For the Christians of Macedonia and Achaia have cheerfully made a Contribution for them, &c.

27. For if the Gentiles have been made partakers of their spiritual things, their duty is also to minister unto them in carnal things.

27. And though they have obliged them hereby, it was but what they owed them: For if from Jerusalem the Gospel of Salvation have been sent abroad to the Gentiles, it is meet that they should communicate to their Wants, in the small Matters of Bodily Relief.

28. When therefore I have performed this, and have sealed to them this fruit, I will come by you into Spain.

28. When I have done this, and have delivered this Fruit of the Gentiles Love and Communion, I purpose to take you in my way to Spain.

(Note, Which God dispointed.)

29. And I am sure that when I come unto you, I shall come in the fulness of the blessing of the gospel of Christ.

29. And I am sure that when I come to you, I shall come with such great assistance and evidence of God’s Spirit as will have great and comfortable success among you.
30. Now I beseech you, brethren, for the Lord Jesus Christ's sake, and for the love of the Spirit, that ye strive together with me in your prayers to God for me: 31. That I may be delivered from them that do not believe in Judea; and that my service which I have for Jerusalem, may be accepted of the saints:

32. I beseech you for his sake whom we all serve and trust, and as the Spirit of love hath taught you to love all Saints, that you will be very earnest as well as I, in Prayer to God for me, that I may be preserved from the unbelievers in Judea, and my work of relief may be so accepted as may help to reconcile the Jews, and Gentiles Christians.

(Note 1. That earnest conjunct prayer is God's appointed means for his servants safety and success: 2. And that the strongest believers must so much fee and regard their dangers, as to move them earnestly to pray for deliverance.)

32. That I may come unto you with joy by the will of God, and may with you be refreshed.

33. That I may not be hindered from my desired coming to you, and comfort among you.

Note, That when we would fain serve God in Peace, God oft chooseth otherwise, that we shall serve him (as Paul there did) in Prison: (And his will is best.)

33. Now the God of peace be with you all. Amen.

34. And it is my Prayer for you, that God, who is the lover and giver of Peace, may dwell among you with the great blessing of Love, Peace and Concord. Amen.

CHAP. XVI.

1. I commend unto you Phebe our sister, which is a servant of the church which is at Cenchrea: 2. That ye receive her in the Lord, as becometh saints, and that ye assist her in whatsoever buiness she hath need of you: for she hath been a succourer of many, and of my self also.

1. 2. I pray you kindly receive and assist Phebe, &c. For she hath been a great help and reliever of many Saints, and me.

3. Greet Priscailla and Aquila my helpers in Christ Jesus: 4. (Who have for my life laid down their own necks: unto whom not only I give thanks, but also all the churches of the Gentiles).

3. 4. Salute in my name Priscailla and her Husband Aquila, eminent in helpfulness, and willing hazards, by which all the Gentiles take themselves beholden to them, as means of my deliverance.

Note, The preferring and helping an eminent Minister, may oblige many Churches.

5. Likewise giue the church that is in their house.

5. Salute all their Christian Family, and the Saints that use there to assemble in Communion.

5. 6. Note, That God would have the good works and service of his Saints to be valued and praised.

6. Salute Andronicus and Junia my kinsmen and my fellow-prisoners, who are of note among the apostles, who also were in Christ before me.

6. 7. Noted for their sufferings and service among the Apostles.

8. Greet Amplias my beloved in the Lord. 9. Salute Urban our helper in Christ, and Stachys my beloved. 13. Salute Apelles approved in Christ. Salute them which are of Aristobulus household. 11. Salute Herodion my kinsman. Greet them that be of the household of Narcissus, which are
Ch. 16. Sunday. Romans. Salutations.

are in the Lord. 12. Salute Tryphena, and Tryphosa, who labour in the Lord. Salute the beloved Peris, which laboured much in the Lord. 13. Salute Rufus, chosen in the Lord, and his mother and mine. 14. Salute Apphia, Phlegon, Hermas, Patrobas, Hermes, and the brethren which are with them. 15. Salute Philologus, and Julia, Nereus, and his sister, and Olympas, and all the saints which are with them.

8, 9, 10, 11, 12, 13, 14, 15. That you may see that I mind them in particular, specially those whom I have notice of.

16. Salute one another with a holy kiss. The churches of Christ salute you.

16. And exult in such love one to another, expressed by (not an immoral and licentious, but) an holy kiss (the usual expression of friendship in those times). The Churches which have notice of my writing salute you.

17. Now I beseech you, brethren, mark them which cause divisions and offences, contrary to the doctrine which ye have learned; and avoid them.

17. And though I seem to have ended, I will redouble my exhortation for Love and Concord, for which I have said so much in this Epistle, Beseeching you to mark those Men, that bring false and new Doctrines which the Apostles never taught you, and to oppose them, and for other sinful ends, draw parties, and make Divisions and Scandals among you, avoid these, and turn from them.

18. For they that are such, serve not our Lord Jesus Christ, but their own belly; and by good words and fair speeches deceive the hearts of the simple.

18. For to this sort of Men pretend to be the chiefest servants of Christ, and professors of Truth and Holiness, and Happiness; yet it will be found, that it is not Christ, and his Gospel, Kingdom, and Interest, which indeed they serve: (For they

19. For your obedience is come abroad unto all men. I am glad therefore on your behalf: but yet I would have you wise unto that which is good, and simple concerning evil.

19. Think not that I accuse you, but warn you: I rejoice that you are ambitious for your Obedience to the Apostolical Doctrine of Faith, Love, Peace, and Concord: But yet I know so much of the way of Dividing Seducers, and of the Weaknesses and Injudiciousness of many zealous Christians, that I see cause to warn you and all others, and to tell you, that there is need of much Wisdom to escape this Snare, and to discern Good from Evil; and to warn that you may be wise, as well as zealous, till that is good; and simple to be acquainted with Sinning and Heresies.

20. And the God of peace shall bruise Satan under your feet shortly. The grace of our Lord Jesus Christ be with you, Amen.

20. And to encourage you, I foretell you, that God, who would be known to us as the God of Peace, and hath promised that the Holy Seed shall break the Serpent's Head, will e'er long bruise Satan under your feet, overcoming his Temptations, and subduing the Tyranical and Persecuting Instruments that serve him against the Church. That the great Riches of all Christ's Grace may be with you, is the best Benediction and With that I can have for you. Amen.

21. Timothy my work fellow, and Lucius, and Jason, and Sosipater, my kindmen salute you.

21. I Tertius, who wrote this Epistle, salute you in the Lord.

22. Gaius mine host, and of the
Annotations on Chap. 16.

the whole church, saluteth you. Eratus the chamberlain of the city saluteth you, and Quartus a brother.

21, 22, 23. The brethren here with me salute you, &c.

24. The grace of our Lord Jesus Christ be with you all. Amen.

24. From the abundance of my affection to you, I again repeat my great benediction and desire, The grace of our Lord Jesus Christ be with you all. Amen.

25. Now to him that is of power to establish you according to my gospel, and the preaching of Jesus Christ, (according to the revelation of the mystery which was kept secret since the world began,) but now is made manifest, and by the scriptures of the prophets according to the commandment of the everlasting God, made known to all nations for the obedience of faith. 27. To God only wise, be glory through Jesus Christ for ever. Amen.

25, 26, 27. I conclude (as Christ taught us in his prayer) with that which is the end of all religions and of our lives, and salvation it is, the glorifying of God. To him that can make all our expectations effectual, and is of power to establish you according to that gospel which we preach, as it is now a mystery openly revealed, which was more darkly delivered from the beginning, and not clearly understood by Jews or Gentiles; but now is openly made manifest by Christ the light of the world, and his spirit in his servants, and by the scriptures of the prophets now opened, and agreeing with our gospel, which by God’s command we make known to all nations, to bring them to this faith, which now is the necessary obedience to the command and covenant of grace: I say, To God only wise, glory, (as the end of all our grace and glory) through Jesus Christ, (whom he hath ordained to be the chief means and Gladness in whom his glory shall shine forth to men) for ever. Amen.

ANNOTATIONS.

Why do we read so much in the scriptures [of the obedience of faith]? Some would not have faith called obedience, lest that signify the same word. And God hath not made believers or unbelievers lawyers, or under no command. No act of man pleases God which is not obedience to his will. When God sends abroad the gospel or word of grace, he commandeth men to hear it, believe it, and obey it; but bare commanding is not all, but which is the giving convincing evidence of its truth, and persuading reasons and motives to obey it. Therefore we understand the same word sometimes (believing, and sometimes (unbelieving), and sometimes (unpersuaded) and (obedient). And Christ is called, the author of eternal salvation to all them that obey him. To say, that faith is obedience, is the condition of qualification for salvation, but [not for pardon or justification], is a pernicious invention of men’s brains. But how may distinction between obeying the law of innocency or of physic, and obeying the law of faith and grace? Yes, and between obeying this gospel initially by believing, repenting, and entering into the baptismal covenant, (which enthrone into a state of justification and right to life) and the progressive obedience of performing that covenant to the end, (which is necessary to survivors for actual glory)? Christ knew what he said to the Jews, This is the work of God, that ye believe on him whom the Father hath sent; and Paul was sent to the Gentile world to preach the obedience of faith; that is, that obedience which consists in actual faith performed to the doctrine and command of faith; and which hath the benefits of pardon, grace, and glory, freely given for the merits of Christ.
The First Epistle of Paul the Apostle, to the Corinthians.

The Introduction.

When it was that Paul wrote this Epistle, and when these Corinthians were converted to Christianity, and what Wealth and Reputation Corinth (a chief City of Achaia) was then of, I pass by, as things presupposed. The Occasion of writing this, is of nearer concern to be known, for the understanding of it. It was not unusual with him (as to visit the Churches which he had planted, so) to write to them for their Establishment, when he could not be present with them. But as to the Matter and Manner of his Writing, the Case of the Corinthians was the Occasion. 1. There were several Cases which it seems they proposed to him, which he resolves; (as about Church-Order, and Prophecy, and Prayer; about Eating things offered to Idols; about Marriage and Separation, &c.)

2. There were many Scandals among them, which he endeavoureth to heal by convincing Reproof; as, 1. Factions and Schisms, by setting up Teachers in envious Competition. 2. Conceitedness of more Wisdom than they had. 3. Hearkning to envious Teachers, that vilified him, and defamed his Person and Ministry. 4. The favouring of Incest and Scandal, and neglect of Discipline. 5. Going to Law against one another, and that before Heathen Judges, when they should have decided their Differences by amicable Arbitration. 6. Defrauding and wronging one another. 7. Too easie Thoughts of Fornication. 8. Scandalous eating things offered to Idols. 9. Too much backwardness to maintain the Ministers, and the Charges of their Work. 10. Prophane Disorder at their Love-Feasts and Sacrament, even to partiality, and Excess of Drink, and scandalous Unreverence, for which God punished some in the Flesh. 11. Overvaluing Gifts, and undervaluing lower Christians that wanted them; as not enough sensible of the Necessity and Extent of Christian Unity. 12. Disorder in their Sacred Assemblies in the Exercise of their Gifts. 13. Some erring about and against the Resurrection, and others too much hearkning to them.

These things Paul reproveth, and blameth them for not reforming; but persuadeth none to separate from that Church for all these Corruptions. But by this we may know what must be expected from young unskilful
The Introduction to the First Epistle to the Corinthians.

skilful Christians; and what faults will be in such Churches as ours; though the pastors were the best, when the Churches were so faulty in the Apostles' time and presence; and how far they are from the Apostolick Spirit, Skill, Love, and Lenity, who would Excommunicate all as intolerable Schismatics, who Conform not to all their devised unnecessary Additions, and dare not subscribe their justification or approbation of all their forms. And they also that quartel with their Teachers, and forsake them, when Men of new opinions and zealous confidence tempt them. And they that instead of doing their own part to reform the corruptions of such a Church, and in love and tenderness to draw sinners to repentance, do take the dividing lazie course, to separate from such Churches with a few counted the best, who will put them to least labour and trouble in discipline. Paul himself held communion with this and other such Churches, notwithstanding all these faults: and we find not that he Excommunicated any one, though he require them to do it, and decreed to do it but on one, 1 Cor. 5. and reverst that purpose. I find not in all the new testament that there was ever two Christian Churches in any one town or city, upon any difference among them, unless you will call the condemned Nets of heretics such.

CHAP. I.

Paul called to be an apostle of Jesus Christ, through the will of God, and Sophronis our brother, 2. Unto the church of God which is at Corinith, to them that are sanctified in Christ Jesus, called to be saints, with all that in every place call upon the name of Jesus Christ our Lord, both theirs and ours.

1. 2. Paul called Apostle by the special electing will and favour of God, and Brother Sophronis; To the Church of God at Corinith, being sanctified to God in Christ, and so are called Saints; with all such as faithfully call on the Name of Christ, our common Lord.

3. Grace be unto you, and peace from God our Father, and from the Lord Jesus Christ.

4. Who shall also confirm you unto the end, that ye may be blameless in the day of our Lord Jesus Christ.
Ch. i. Paul reproves I. Corinthians. Difficult. Ch. i.

6. Who will not deny you his Confirming Grace, that you may be found holy and justifiable at that day.

9. God is faithful, by whom ye were called unto the fellowship of his Son Jesus Christ our Lord.

12. Now this I say, that every one of you faith, I am of Paul, and of Apollos, and of Cephas, and of Christ.

13. Is Christ divided? was Paul crucified for you? or were ye baptized in the name of Paul?

15. If any man should say that I had baptized none of you, but Crispus and Gaius,

16. For I find cause to beseech you, even by the Authority and precious Name of Christ, that you will take heed of Divisions, Sides, and Contentions, and be as one in Mind and Judgment. For I have been credibly told of your Contentions, &c.

20. And as Churches and Persons of eminent Gifts may be liable to sinful Divisions and Strife.

21. And Unity and Concord must improve all our Gifts, if we would have them prove our selves and others.

22. Therefore it must be the necessary things that we must unite, and be of the same Mind and Judgment, and not in things Doubtful and Unnecessary: else it would be as vain, as to beseech them to be all Men of Learning or high- est Understanding.

23. For Christ sent me not to baptize, but to preach the gospel: not with wisdom of words, lest the Cross of Christ should be made of none effect.

28. For the preaching of the Cross is to them that perish, foolishness;
The Wisdom of God.

18. For to them that thus pass for Wise Men in the World, but are unaved and perishing in their Wisdom, it seemeth great Folly to trust in a Crucified Christ for Salvation, and suffer for him: But the Power and Wisdom of God are this way eminently manifested to us, who have felt its saving Efficacy on our selves, and shall be saved by it.

19. For it is written, I will destroy the wisdom of the wise, and will bring to nothing the understanding of the prudent.

20. Where is the wise? where is the scribe? where is the disputers of this world? hath not God made foolish the wisdom of this world?

21. For after that, in the wisdom of God, the world by wisdom knew not God, it pleased God by the foolishness of preaching to save them that believe.

22. For when as the World, by God's wife Permissión, lived in such Ignorance, that they had not the Practical Knowledge of the True God, but disobeyed him, and worshipped Idols, it pleased God by that Preaching of Christ which they count Foolishness, to convert and save Believers, and do that which all their Learning could not do.

23. But the Jews require a sign, and the Greeks seek after Wisdom: 24. But unto them which are called, both Jews and Greeks, Christ, the power of God, and the wisdom of God.

25. Because the foolishness of God is wiser than men; and the weaknes of God is stronger than men.

26. For ye see your calling, brethren, how that not many wise men after the flesh, not many mighty, not many noble are called.

27. But God hath chosen the foolish things of the world, to confound the wise; and God hath chosen the weak things of the world, to confound the things which are mighty; 28. And base things of the world, and things which are despised, hath God chosen, yea, and things which are not, to bring to nought things that are: 29. That no flesh should glory in his presence.

30. For it pleased God to show that which the World counts Foolish, and Folly...
Weak, and Base, to confound, shame, and overcome that which is accounted by them Wife, and Mighty, and Honourable; and the things which they despise, God will use and honour: ye, by that which seemeth nothing to them, or which yet is not in being, to vanquish those which seem great and real to them; that so the Pride of Man may be shamed, and the Impotency of Man manifested, and all Flesh may be humbled, and driven from their Self-confidence, and none may glory of any thing of his own, against his Glory.

30. But of him are ye in Christ Jesus, who of God is made unto us wisdom, and righteousness, and sanctification, and redemption:

31. That, according as it is writ-
ten, He that glorieth, let him glo-
ry in the Lord.

30, 31. But it is by his Power and Work that you are made Christians, united to Christ, who of God is made to us the Object and Teacher of the true Wisdom; (To know him, and to be taught by him the Great things of Salvation, excellently all the Heathen Philosophy.) He is made of God our Righteousness, the Merits of his perfect Righteousness procuring our free Pardon and Adoption, which our Works could not do. He is made our Satisfication, being purified by virtue of his Sacrifice, and by his Spirit, and by him separated as a Peculiar People to God. And by him it is that we have Redemption and Deliverance from Sin, and Satan, and the Law, and Death, and Hell: That, as it is written, God and not Man may be all our Glorifying and Trust.

Annotations.

This Chapter doth so plainly describe the same sort of Wise Men that are describedRom. 1. and several other such Places, and yet is confoundedly meant of the Heathen Philosophers, and Learned and Great Men, including the Jewish Scribes; and therefore confuteth the misapplication of many such Texts to the Chrifticks only.

Chap. II.

1. And I, brethren, when I came to you, came not with excellency of speech, or of wisdom, declaring unto you the testimony of God.

1. Accordingly, I my self being sent by Christ to preach to the World, did not come to you with the admired Philosophy and Oratory of the World, in declaring the Gospel-Mystery, and God’s Attestation of it.

2. For I determined not to know any thing among you, save Jesus Christ, and him crucified.

2. For I resolved to make no Ostenta-
tion of any other Learning, and to teach you no other, than the Knowledge of a Crucified Christ, in an humble manner preached.

3. And I was with you in weak-
ness, and in fear, and in much trem-
bling.

3. And accordingly I was humbled among you, by Persecutions, and Abuse, and continual Dangers and Sufferings, in conformity to the Cross of Christ, which I preached.

4. And my speech, and my preaching was not with enticing words of man’s wisdom, but in demonstration of the Spirit, and of power:

4. And my manner of preaching was, not by the way of thePhilosophers of Artificial Learning, Oratory or 1. (oh,) but so, as did demonstrate the first, natural Gift of the Spirit of God, and the Power thereof, manifested by Miracles and Success.

5. That
That your Faith should not stand in the wisdom of men, but in the power of God.

That your Faith, the Effect, which will be like its Cause and Motives, might not be merely Humane, founded on and resolved into the Art of the Speaker, but Divine, grounded on and resolved into the Evidence of Divine Revelation and Authority.

In howbeit we speak wisdom among them that are perfect: yet not the wisdom of this world, nor of the princes of this world that come to nought.

Yet we are not without useful Learning and sublimity and accurateness of Speech, but use such with those that are knowing and capable of it: But not the vain and frothy Learning which is now most applauded in the World by Men of Name and Power, which perisheth as a Bubble, and favelleth not them that have it.

But we speak the wisdom of God in a mystery, even the hidden wisdom which God ordained before the world was.

Now we have received, not the Spirit of the world, but the Spirit which is of God; that we might know the things that are freely given to us of God.

But as it is written, Eye hath not seen, nor ear heard, neither have entered into the heart of man, the things which God hath prepared for them that love him.

For the great Gifts of God's Grace, decreed and prepared for all that love him, are such as Man believeth not, and hardly believeth, and cannot compute.

But God hath revealed them unto us by his Spirit: for the Spirit searcheth all things, yea, the deep things of God.

But God by his Spirit hath revealed them to us his Apostles (and to others that have his Spirit in the measure that they have it): For the Spirit of God is given us (in our several measures) to teach us all things for us to know, even the Depths of God.

For what man knoweth the things of a man, save the Spirit of man which is in him? even so the things of God knoweth no man, but the Spirit of God.

As a Man's Spirit is conscious of its own Secret Things and Thoughts, which no man else can know; so the Spirit of God knoweth the Secret things of God, and maketh us know them in our measures, which they that have not the Spirit cannot by all their Learning know.

12. Which things also we speak, not in the words which man's wisdom teacheth, but which the holy Ghost teacheth; comparing spiritual things with spiritual.

And these are the things which we preach to you, not in the Words and Manner now counted by the Heathens to be Learned and Wise, nor after their vain Arts; but in the very Words and Manner which God's Spirit teacheth us, who teacheth us the Matter; fitting Spiritual Words to Spiritual Things, that all may be of God.

E 2
Annotations on Chap. 2.

14. But the natural man receiveth not the things of the Spirit of God: for they are foolishness unto him; neither can he know them, because they are spiritually discerned.

15. But ye that are spiritual, discern all things, yet are ye wholly instructed by the Spirit of God, and your understanding is according to the Word of God.

16. For who hath known the mind of the Lord, that he may instruct him? But we have the mind of Christ.

ANNOTATIONS.

1. It is none of Paul's meaning here, to vilifie true Philosophy, Logick, or Oratory, or any useful Knowledge or Art: And all Knowledge is useful to one that referreth it to right Ends, which is knowledge indeed: For God hath made nothing knowable in vain.

2. True Logick is the Knowledge of the knowable Works of God, and God in them, that we may admire, love, serve, and trust him. True Logick is but the Skill of using our Reason truly and orderly. True Grammar and Oratory are but fitting Words to Things, and to the Hearers Minds, as most tendeth to their Edification. God is against none of these, which are his precious Gifts. But carnal Men have carnal Ends, and fit all these abusively to their Ends, to wrangle against Truth, and divert their Minds from Things to Words, and from great and everlasting Things to Trifles, and to feed their Pride, and Ambition, and Covetousness, and to make their Malignity more keen and hurtful. And such was the Learning of these Hearthens, which then past for Wisdom in the World.

3. Nor doth Paul here favor false Pretences of the Spirit, or true Fanaticism: when Men take the Delusions of Satan, or every strong Imagination, or the boiling of their Pride and erroneous Passions, fed by Prejudice, for the Work of God's Spirit. These sin more dangerously than many others, by charging their Sin and Error upon God, and tempting Men to deride the Spirit. Even as false Prophets are sharplyest reprov'd, and the counterfeit use of Christ's Name by the Sons of Seba, did but strengthen the Devil against them. Therefore we are bid to try the Spirits.

CHAP. III.

1. And I, brethren, could not speak unto you as unto spiritual, but as unto carnal, even as unto babes in Christ.

2. But this Spiritual Wisdom, of which I have said such great things, is not in all Christians alike. Though the Apostles had the Spirit to lead them into all needful Truth, and record it for the Church, yet some weak Christians are still so much carnal, that their Spiritual Wisdom is but such as Babes in Christ have, who have still need to be fed and taught by others: And as to such, I am constrained to speak to you.
Ch. 3. Christ the I. Corinthians. only Foundation. Ch. 3.

2. I have fed you with milk, and not with meat: for hitherto ye were not able to bear it, neither yet now are ye able.

3. For ye are yet carnal: for whereas there is among you envying, and strife, and divisions, are ye not carnal, and walk as men?

3. For ye are yet in a great measure Carnal: Do not your Envy, and Strife, and Divisions, prove that you are so far Carnal, and live according to the corrupt Nature of Man, and not by the Spirit of God?

4. For while one faith, I am of Paul, and another, I am of Apollo; are ye not carnal?

4. For while you divide into Factions for your several Teachers, are ye not so far Carnal?

5. Who then is Paul, and who is Apollo, but ministers by whom ye believed, even as the Lord gave to every man?

5. What are any of us but Christ's Ministers, by whose Ministry you were brought to believe in Christ, even as God gave us various Degrees of Success.

6. I have planted, Apollos watered: but God gave the increase.

6. I first preached to your Conversion, and Apollos to your further Edification: but the Success and Fruit of all was not from our Power, but from the free Grace of God.

7. So then, neither is he that planteth any thing, neither he that watereth: but God that giveth the increase.

7. If then you would know to whom to ascribe your Conversion and Salvation, we poor Ministers that plant and water are but as God's Tools, and to be accounted as nothing in comparison of him, who (as he sent us, and enabled us, so) caused freely all the Success, which is our Joy, and your Welfare.

8. Now he that planteth, and he that watereth, are one: and every man shall receive his own reward, according to his own labour.

8. Now it is by the same Ministerial Grace and Office that one of us planteth, and another watereth: and it is the same Spirit that moveth us, and the same Gospel which we preach: But we also have our different Measure of Gifts, Grace, and Labour; and so we shall have of our Reward.

9. For we are labourers together with God: ye are God's husbandry, ye are God's building.

9. For we are all but God's Ministers, Fellow-labourers each with other, having our several Parts to do: ye are not our Husbandry, and Building, and Church, but God's.

10. According to the grace of God which is given unto me, as a wise master-builder I have laid the foundation, and another buildeth thereon. But let every man take heed how he buildeth thereupon.

10. As God gave me an extraordinary Call and Grace, my Work hath been that of an Architect or Chief Builder; and accordingly I have laid the Foundation of many Churches, preaching Christ where none before believed; and another hath come after me to build them up: But let every Man take heed that he teach nothing but what is true and found.

11. For other foundation can no man lay, then that is L.I.1, which is Jesus Christ.

11. Let him not alter the Foundation which I have laid: For there is no other but Christ, or the Essentials of Christianness.

12. Now if any man build upon this foundation, gold, silver, precious stones, wood, hay.

12. Now if any man build upon this foundation, gold, silver, precious stones, wood, hay,
18. Let no man deceive himself; If any man among you esteem to be wise in this world, let him become a fool, that he may be wise.

18. Let none of you deceive himself by pretended Wisdom, which is not Spiritual, and doth not purify Heart and Life: like those that boast of Wisdom, and live in the fitch of Sin. If any man among you be puffed up with the Conceit of this Philosophical worldly Wisdom, let him know, that it is but Folly, and be convinced of his Ignorance, that he may humbly learn of Christ, and be made truly wise.

19. For the wisdom of this world is foolishness with God: for it is written, He taketh the wise in their own craftiness. 20. And again, The Lord knoweth the thoughts of the wise, that they are vain.

19, 20. For all that Men call Learning and Wisdom, which doth but serve a worldly Interest, and saveth not the Soul from Sin and Hell, is meer Foolishness in God's account: For it proveth but a Snare to themselves, and vomoureth away as Idleness and Vanity: As it is written, &c.

21. Therefore let no man glory in men: for all things are yours: 22. Whether Paul, or Apollos, or Cephas, or the world, or life, or death, or things present, or things to come, all are yours; 23. And ye are Christ's; and Christ is God's.

21. Therefore think not over-highly of any Man; especially for his worldly Wisdom and Learning, or boasting that he knoweth more than others: For all Teachers and their Wisdom are but God's Gifts for your good; Apollos, Providence, Life, or Death, all are for your Salvation; and that is belon to you, that maketh you belon: The End must direct you to judge of the Means, and so of Teachers: They are for you, and your Salvation; and you are Christ's, and for his Glory; and Christ, as Man and Mediator, is God's, and for his Glory.
Annotations on Chap. 3.

Annotations.

We see here, that Sects, Factions, and Divisions are the Works of the Flesh, and signify a Mind that is so far carnal; and that this cometh usually by preferring and setting Teacher against Teacher; not but that the great difference of Worth and Grace must be acknowledged and valued, but not made an occasion of Division, but of Concord, all being God's Ministers for the Churches Common Good, in the various Measure of their Gifts. The Carnal are Headed by Man, and the Spiritual by Christ only, though Men be their Helpers. And Cephas is here named, as if it were on foresight that the Roman Bishop would make himself such an Head, on pretence of being his Successour.

CHAP. IV.

1. Let a man so account of us, as of the ministers of Christ, and stewards of the mysteries of God.

1. I speak not all this to draw you from the due honour of faithful Ministers: Account us neither more nor less, but as the Ministers of Christ for your Salvation, and Stewards called and trusted with the just ministration of the mysteries of God; that is, the sound preaching of his word, and due application of it, and administration of his Sacraments, and power of the Keys to judge who shall be baptized, and live, as fit, in holy Communion with his visible Churches.

2. Moreover it is required in stewards, that a man be found faithful.

2. And it is required of Stewards, especially that have so great a trust, that they be faithful and answer that trust, in matter, and manner, and application; and that they falsify not God's Word, nor corrupt his Worship, nor Church, nor betray or neglect Souls, nor turn over their proper trust and work to others.

3. But with me it is a very small thing that I should be judged of you, or of man's judgment: Yea, I judge not mine own self.

3. And if any among you confound me, I account it a very small matter; tho' I despise no man's just admonition, Man's Judgment signifies little as to my self, further than it may be hurtful to others: For my case will not be finally determined by any Man's Judgment, nor by my own.

4. For I know nothing by myself; yet am I not hereby justified: but he that judgeth me is the Lord.

4. For my Conscience is witness of my sincerity, and I know no unfaithfulness in my Stewardship, though I am yet imperfect; but this is not my deciding Justification, nor is my Conscience any publick or final Judge, but only the difference of my Case. It is Christ only whose Judgment must publicly and finally pass my doom.

5. Therefore judge nothing before the time, until the Lord come, who both will bring to light the hidden things of darkness, and will make manifest the counsels of the hearts: and then shall every man have praise of God.

5. Therefore usurp not God's part in uncall'd, bold, and peremptory judging: Stay till God's day come; he will bring works of darkness into light, and open the secrets of Mens Hearts; and then those that indeed are excellent persons shall have God's approbation and praise, which is better than the applause of factions and partial followers.

Ff 4

6. And
Fools for Christ.

6. And these things, brethren, I have in a figure transferred to myself, and to Apollos for your sakes; that ye might learn in us, not to think of men above that which is written, that no one of you be puffed up for one against another.

7. For who maketh thee to differ from another? and what hast thou that thou didst not receive? now if thou didst receive it, why dost thou glory, as if thou hadst not received it?

8. Now ye are full, now ye are rich, ye have reigned as kings without us: and I would to God ye did reign, that we also might reign with you.

9. For I think that God hath set forth us the apostles last, as it were appointed to death. For we are made a spectacle unto the world, and to angels, and to men.

10. For God seeth to have called us Apostles to be exposed on the Theatre of the world, as last, and appointed to greater sufferings than the Prophets were, who suffered before us, in our Martyrdom to be made publick spectacles to the world, both Angels and Men.

11. We are fools for Christ's sake, but ye are wise in Christ: we are weak, but ye are strong: we are dishonourable, but we are despised.

12. While you are conceited of your selves as wise in the things of Christ, and as strong and honourable, we are despised by the boasters of the world, as fools and weak.

13. Even unto this present hour we both hunger, and thirst, and are naked, and are buffeted, and have no certain dwelling place;

14. And labour working with our own hands:

15. 12. Your prosperous state, and our suffering state much differ: Formerly, and to this day, we are taken for contemptible vagabonds, and live in hunger and thirst, and poor clothing, abused and buffeted without Justice or Relief, having no fixed habitations of our own, and put to get our Bread by our handy labour, while we preach to others.
Ch. 4. Timo.

14. And though we suffer all this for you, and such others, and some of you have added to my afflictions, which you should have eated, I write it to warn you, and not to reproach you with it, even as to my Sons, and not mine Enemies.

15. For though you have ten thousand instructors in Christ, yet she are not many fathers: for in Christ Jesus I have begotten you through the gospel.

16. Wherefore I beseech you, be ye followers of me.

17. And till I can come my self, I have sent Timothy, who is my beloved Son, and faithful in the Lord, who shall bring you into remembrance of my ways which be in Christ, as I teach every where in every church.

18. Some envious teachers vaunt as if I should not come to you, and stand before them.

19. But I will come to you shortly, if the Lord will, and will know, not the speech of them which are puffed up, but the power.

20. For the kingdom of God is not in word, but in power.

21. What will ye? shall I come unto you with a rod, or in love, and in the spirit of meekness?

22. And had you not rather that I come in love and meekness, than with punishing power, to deliver any offenders to Satan as God's Executioner on their bodies?

Ch. 5. 20. For the Kingdom of Christ is not raised, nor distinguished from the World, or carried on by smooth Words, but by Works of Divine Efficacy and Power.

21. And is it reported commonly that there is fornication among you, and such fornication as is not so much as named amongst the Gentiles, that one should have his father's wife.

22. It is not a doubtful Name, but a credible Report, that there is such Fornication among you, as Civil Heathens do abhor; that one should have his Father's Wife.

23. And ye are puffed up, and have not rather mourned, that he that hath done this deed, might be taken away from among you.

24. And you have made light of it, and not as sensible of the Sin and Shame, bewailed it, that he that is impenitent in this Sin may be cut off from your Society.

25. For I verily as absent in body, but present in spirit, have judged already, as though I were present, concerning him that hath so done this deed; 4. In the name of our Lord Jesus Christ, when ye are gathered together, and my spirit, with the power of our Lord Jesus Christ, 5. To deliver such an one unto Satan for the destruction of the flesh, that the spirit may be saved in the day of the Lord Jesus.

34. 5. For
8. Therefore let us keep the feast, not with old leaven, neither with the leaven of malice and wickedness; but with the unleavened bread of sincerity and truth.

9. I wrote unto you in an epistle, not to company with fornicators.

10. Yet not altogether with the fornicators of this world, or with the covetous, or extortioners, or with idolaters; for then must ye needs go out of the world.

11. But now I have written unto you, not to keep company, if any man that is called a brother be a fornicator, or covetous, or an idolater, or a reviler, or a drunkard, or an extortioner; with such an one no not to eat.

12. For
1. Are any of you, having a matter against another, go to law before the unjust, and not before the saints?

2. Another Scandal I hear of among you, is, That you go to Law against one another before Heathen Judges, when you might decide your Differences among yourselves. How dare you do this, when Heathens are unjust, and will deride you?

3. Do ye not know that the saints shall judge the world? and if the world shall be judged by you, are ye unworthy to judge the meaner matters?

4. Know ye not that Christ will commit that Honour to his Saints, with him to judge the World of the Ungodly? And should ye be all Saints your selves? And if the World shall be judged by you, are ye not meet to decide your own little Differences?

5. Know ye not that we shall judge angels? how much more things that pertain to this life?

6. And as Christ is the Judge of the Ceil Angels, we shall be honoured to joy with him in that Judgment also, when all his Enemies shall be put under his Feet and ours. How much more are we meet to decide these Worldly Suits?

7. If then ye have judgments of things pertaining to this life, let them to judge who are least esteemed in the church.

8. If then it be a thing belonging to you, though you are no Magistrates, to arbitrate your own Differences, if you have no Wise Men and Elders among you whom you will trust, choose the weakest; for the least of you should be fitter than unjust Heathens.

9. I speak to your shame. Is it so, that there is not a wise man among you? no not one that shall be able to judge between his brethren?

10. I speak ironically, to your shame. Are you the Men that boast of Wisdom? and is there not one Man among you wise enough to judge of the Differences of Christians?

11. But brother goeth to law with brother, and that before the unbelievers.

12. But you must take the contentious and chargeable way of Publick Judicatures, and that before Inhildels, that are unjust, and will deride you?

13. Now therefore there is utterly a fault among you, because ye go to law one with another: why do ye not rather take wrong? why do ye not rather suffer your selves to be defrauded?

14. Why have you not learnt of Christ to put up Injuries, and let go your Right, rather than violate the Laws of Love and Peace? Is it your Sin to be uncharitable, and contentious seekers of your own Right? Is patience, and Forbearing, and Forgiving a strange thing to you? Is it not your certain Duty?

15. Nay, you do wrong and defraud, and your brethren.

16. Nay, you that are bound to forgive Wrong.
Ch. 6. Several Vices I. Corinthians. to be found. Ch. 6.

Wrongs, do wrong others, even your Christian Brethren.

9. Know ye not that the unrighteous shall not inherit the kingdom of God? Be not deceived: neither fornicators, nor idolaters, nor adulterers, nor effeminate, nor abusers of themselves with mankind, 10. Nor thieves, nor covetous, nor drunkards, nor revilers, nor extortioners, shall inherit the kingdom of God.

9, 10. Think not you can be saved either by the Righteousness of Christ, or by a dead Belief, or Profession of Christianity, without a Personal Righteousness, consisting in sincere Obedience to God: and you are not such, if you live in such Sins as these here named. Let no Deceivers persuade you otherwise: You may, by neglect of Discipline, be in the Church Visible; but you are, while such, uncapable of Salvation.

11. And such were some of you: but ye are washed, but ye are sanctified, but ye are justified in the name of the Lord Jesus, and by the Spirit of our God.

11. Though some of you were such in your Heathen State, you have since been baptized unto Christ and the Holy Spirit, and renouncing these Sins, have been Sacramentally washed from them, and dedicated as holy to God, and numbered with the Just; and if you are sincere Believers, you are such indeed, as well as Sacramentally, by the Merits of Christ, and the Spirit’s Sanction.

12. All things are lawful unto me, but all things are not expedient: all things are lawful for me, but I will not be brought under the power of any.

12. As to them that say, That there is no Law against the pleasing of our Appetites; or simple Fornication, they take notice only of Political Laws, with Humane Executions. I confess, that Mæsi’s Law, as such, being Political, left some Excesses and Fornications, as Polygamy, &c. unpunished, or but lightly punished; and the Roman Laws neglect them; and Mæsi’s Law, as such, is abrogated, and so I am under no Political Law which puniseth thee: But I am a Servant of Christ, whose Law of Grace forbiddeth all things that are inexpedient, and contrary to the Purity and Hope of Christianity, or to the Law of Love. And if you plead Christian Liberty, I answer. 1. As to Meats, and other things indifferent, though they are in themselves lawful, yet it is not indifferent how we use them, whether we do hurt or not, when they are inexpedient and hurtful.

13. Meats for the belly, and the belly for meats: but God shall destroy both it and them. Now the body is not for fornication, but for the Lord; and the Lord for the body.

13. 2. And I further answer, That you do ill to joyn Fornication with things Indifferent: Meats indeed are to feed Flesh and Appetite, and the belly and Appetite are for them; but both must be used as perishing things; but our Bodies are not made for Fornication, but to serve the Lord, who also will take care of them as his Redeemed.

14. And God hath both raised up the Lord, and will also raise us by his own power.

14. And accordingly, God that raised up the Body of Christ, will also raise us by his Power.

15. Know ye not, that your bodies are the members of Christ? and if I then take the members of Christ, and make them the members of an harlot? God forbid.

15. It is so far from being lawful, that it hath this odious aggravation, to make those Bodies the united Members of an Harlot, which are united and related to Christ as his Members, that is, of the holy Society of which he is the Head.

16. What, know ye not that he which is joined to an harlot, is one body? for two (faith he) shall be one flesh.

16. Fornication is a sort of Union with a

17. But he that is joined unto the Lord is one spirit.

17. But those that by a true Faith are joined to Christ, are quickened and acted in holiness by the very Spirit of Christ, and so are one Spirit with him, by a Union which destroyeth not their personal individuality, nor maketh them Christ, but maketh them more blestly one with him than we can now comprehend: (Even Plants live by the Sun-beams, and yet are not the Sun).

18. Flee fornication. Every sin that a man doeth, is without the body: but he that committeth fornication, sinneth against his own body.

18. Hate and avoid Fornication also on this account: Most other sins in their outward acts, are but the abuse of things without you (as your Money, Lands, Houses, Enemies, Power, &c.) But Fornication is the abusive polluting and debasing your own Bodies.

19. What, know ye not that your body is the temple of the holy Ghost which is in you, which ye have of God,

19. When God giveth his Spirit to Believers to sanctifie them to himself, he thereby maketh them as Temples, Holy, for his holy Spirit to dwell in and sanctify.

19. And ye are not your own? 20. For ye are bought with a price: therefore glorifie God in your body, and in your spirit, which are God’s.

19. 20. And seeing you are not at all your own, you may not do with your bodies what you will: God is your absolute Owner, (not only by the right of Creation and Preservation, but) by that of Redemption, by the price of the Blood and Merits of Christ: Therefore you rob and wrong him (though you cannot hurt him) if you alienate his own, and glorifie not that God whom you wholly are, by the faithful Love and Service of Soul and Body which are his. (And to be thus his, is your Honour, Safety, and Felicity.)

C H A P. VII.

1. Now concerning the things whereof ye wrote unto me: It is good for a man not to touch a woman.

1. As to the Question about Marriage, of which you wrote, I say, That if a Man have no kind of intrinsick or extrinsick Reason to make it best for him, it is for a Man’s own ease and quietnes in the World to live single, and first, to avoid Temptations, to keep at sufficient distance from Women, especially to avoid all tempting and improper Touches, or Familiarity.

2. Nevertheless, to avoid fornication, let every man have his own wife, and let every woman have her own husband.

2. But the State of Man on Earth is such, that Men cannot always do that which is most for their own quietness and ease. Some have so strong Lust, that Marriage is necessary to them, to avoid Fornication: And to those that need it, it is God’s Ordinance for the Propagation of Mankind on Earth.

3. Let the husband render unto the wife due benevolence: and likewise also the wife unto the husband.

3. And let Husband and Wife perform to each other all the Duties of Marriage which they promised.

4. The wife hath not power of her own body, but the husband: and likewise also the husband hath not power of his own body, but the wife.

4. By the Marriage-Covenant, you have given each other power of your Bodies, for regular Congresses.

5. Deafand you not one the other, except it be with consent for a time, that ye may give your selves to fasting and prayer; and come together again, that Satan tempt you not for your incontinency.

5. To deny this to each other, is Injury and Fraud: except when you are called to Humbling, Fasting, and Prayer; and then you
you should content to that sort of Abstinence: but after we do Matrimonial Conversation, let your forbearance give Satan advantage to tempe you.

6. But I speak this by permission, and not of commandment.

6. But mistake me not, as if I hereby imposed Marriage on all Men as their Duty, though allowed when necessary, or gave this my Counsel as a Law.

7. For I would that all men were even as I myself: but every man hath his proper gift of God, one after this manner, and another after that.

7. For I would that all Men, for their own advantage, had the Gift of Conti nence as well as I have: But God, who will have the World yet continued, hath not given it to all; but some have one measure and sort of Gift, and some another.

8. I say therefore to the unmarried and widows, It is good for them if they abide even as I.

8. It is most for their own ease, and liberty, and quiet, if they can, to abide single as I do.

9. But if they cannot contain, let them marry: for it is better to marry then to burn.

9. But if they cannot, let them use Marriage, as God's appointed Remedy for such; which is better than sinful Lust.

10. And unto the married I command, yet not I, but the Lord, Let not the wife depart from her husband:

10. But though it be no Sin to marry, it is a Sin to depart when married: Herein I lay God's Command upon you, and offer it not so your Choice, as a thing indifferent.

11. But and if the depart, let her remain unmarried, or be reconciled to her husband: and let not the husband put away his wife.

11. But to marry upon departure, is a double Sin. If any insolent Abuse, or Passion provoke her to depart, let her remain unmarried, and be reconciled to her

12. But to the rest speak I, not the Lord, If any brother hath a wife that believeth not, and she be pleased to dwell with him, let him not put her away.

12. But as to the Case of Separation from an Infidel (which some may think necessary by the Second Case in Ezra, &c.) I bring you not this as a flat Command of Christ, but as my best Advice: Though you may let an Infidel go, and may live without him that will not stay with you, be it the Defector, in enmity to your Religion; yet I think it best for you to do your best, that to make such willing to continue, and, though it be so your great trouble, to live with such: yet if they be willing to stay, be not you the Defectors, no not for a time, nor must it be means to make them willing; though some such will be systematical and malicious Adversaries.

13. And the woman which hath an husband that believeth not, and if he be pleased to dwell with her, let her not leave him.

13. For the unbelieving husband is sanctified by the wife, and the unbelieving wife is sanctified by the husband: else were your children unclean; but now are they holy.

14. For though the Case in Ezra may make you doubt how it was with the Hebrews: yet to Christians, under the Law of Grace, your abode with an Infidel doth not make your Conjugal State, or Contract, or Family to be unholy. The State and Interest of a Believer maketh your Relation and Cohabitation holy, as separated to God for holy use, which the Believer can improve, as all things for are sanctified to him, for the Service of God. Else your Children would be like those of the Infidels, unclean, as not in the Covenant and Church of God: but now they are holy, and numbered with his Peculiar People. For the Christian devoted to God himself, and all that is in his power and dispose, which is accepted according to the Capacity and Use of that which is devoted; and this he doth by God's Command, and therefore with his Acceptance,
Ch. 7. Of Marriage. 1. Corinthians.

19. To be one that was of that was not circumcised, is no part of the Christian Religion; but to keep those Commandments which God hath given us, either in the Law of Nature, or by Jesus Christ. No God's Work, and make is not more than it is.

20. Let every man abide in the same calling wherein he was called.

21. Art thou called being a servant? care not for it; but if thou mayest be made free, use it rather.

22. If thou wait a Servant when thou wait converted, be contented with thy Condition; for it's not contrary to thy Deliverance by Christ. But if thou mayest be free from a Servile Life, an unlawful Service, it's rather to be chosen: (For it is not an change of Relation, or outward State, that I forbid).

23. For he that is called in the Lord, being a servant, is the Lord's free-man; likewise also he that is called being free, is Christ's servant.

24. Brethren, let every man wherein he is called, therein abide with God.

25. Now concerning virgins, I have no commandment of the Lord; yet I give my judgment as one that hath obtained mercy of the Lord to be faithful.
26. I suppose therefore, that this is good for the present distress, that it is good for a man so to be.

26. Christians being now under Persecution and Distress, no doubt but it is much more for their ease and quiet to be single, than to have a Wife or Husband, and Children to care for, in Poverty or in Flight.

27. Art thou bound unto a wife? Seek not to be loosed. Art thou loosed from a wife? Seek not a wife.

27. If thou be bound, seek to be loosed is a Sin: But if thou art loosed, that thou seek not to be bound without necessity, is my Advice.

28. But and if thou marry, thou hast not sinned; and if a virgin marry, she hath not sinned; nevertheless, such shall have trouble in the flesh; but I spare you.

28. But to marry, as such, is no Sin: (Though it be a Sin to do it when there is clear Reason against it). But such must reckon upon Trouble in the Flesh. But though I forewarn you to prevent your Trouble, I would not by urgency, be your Share.

29. But this I say, brethren, the time is short. It remaineth, that both they that have wives, be as though they had none; 30. And they that weep, as though they wept not; and they that rejoice, as though they rejoiced not; and they that buy, as though they possessed not; 31. And they that use this world, as not abusing it: for the fashion of this world passeth away.

29, 30, 31. But this none should forget, that this Life is so short, and the End of all so near and sure, that there is little difference between having a Wife or no Wife, weeping or not weeping, rejoicing or not rejoicing, possessing and not possessing: And therefore you should have Wives, and weep, and rejoice, and possess, and use this World as if you did it not, with such an Indifference through the sense of greater things, as that you may not be overmuch affected with the getting, or enjoying, or loss of any transient thing: For all these things are in continual change, and the Fashion of them passeth away.

32. But I would have you without carefulness. He that is unmarried, careth for the things that belong to the Lord, how he may please the Lord.

32. Carefulness about the World is so bad a thing, that I would have you escape it if you can. The unmarried hath left Worldly Care to divert him from caring how to please God, and to do good to others, and secure his Soul.

33. But he that is married, careth for the things that are of the world, how he may please his wife.

33. But he that is married hath made himself so much more Duty, Temptation, and Trouble, as must needs increase those Care which will much divers his Thoughts and Cares from the pleasing of God: Particularly, the Care of pleasing his Wife will take him up, because there is in all Persons much unfinitableness, and difference of judgment, Temper, and Inclinations; and in the weaker Sex usually much Passion and Impatience, and difficulty in bearing that which croseth their Will: so that the wiselest Man can hardly please none, with all his Skill, and Kindness, and Diligence, without violating his Duty to God.

34. There is difference also between a wife and a virgin: The unmarried woman careth for the things of the Lord, that she may be holy, both in body and in spirit: but she that is married, careth for the things of the world, how she may please her husband.
Ch. 7: Of Marriage. I. Corinthians. Of Marriage. Ch. 7.

34. And the difference is great also on the Women's part, (whose Weakness usually can least bear Difficulties, Troubles, and Temptations.) The unmarried is free from abundance of Troubles and Temptations, which would turn away her Care from the things of God, and so she is more free to keep close to God, and to keep both (spiritual and corporal) Sanity: But the that is married must needs care for worldly things, for Children, and Family, and specially to please her Husband, (who possibly may be unuitable, and tyrannical, and hardly pleased without displeasing God.) And to live in mutual displeasure, how sad and tempting a Condition will that be? (Christ told Martha how bad a choice it was to be cumbered about many things, though lawful, in comparison of chusing a free Attendance on the Better part.)

35. And this I speak for your own profit, not that I may cast a snare upon you, but for that which is comely, and that you may attend upon the Lord without distraction.

35. If any of you think that I wrong you, by debarring you from the Comforts of Marriage, let such know, that I speak but comparatively, and for your profit tell you, that many ignorantly rush upon it, without consideration, and so miscarry by unexpected Troubles. I forbid not Marriage, nor make a Law for you, to entice you; but I would have you prudently to prefer the Condition which is best for your selves, in which you may serve God without distracting Care.

36. But if any man think that he behaveth himself uncomely toward his virgin, if the pass the flower of her age, and need so require, let him do what he will, he finneth not: let them marry.

36. But in these things about which there is no Common Law, Men should themselves best judge what is suitable, convenient, and best for themselves. If therefore you find that your Daughters have need, and that it will be inconvenient to them to pass the Flower of their Age, let them marry; it is no sin in it itself, nor to such as so need it.

37. Nevertheless, he that standeth fast in his heart, having no necessity, but hath power over his own will, and hath so decreed in his heart, that he will keep his virgin, doeth well. 38. So then, he that giveth his in Marriage, doeth well; but he that giveth his not in Marriage, doeth better.

37, 38. But yet he that being urged by no necessity of his own or of his Daughter, hath fixed his Resolution to preserve the Freedom of a Single Life, (not by Vows, which bind those whose Condition God may alter, and so make Laws and Snares to themselves, but) by well-grounded Reason submitting to God, that can change their State; this Man taketh the way to his Daughter's greatest Peace and Advantage. So then, he that giveth her in Marriage, doth that which is in it self good, and no sin: But he that giveth her not in Marriage, doth that which is better for her, if she have no necessity.

39. The wife is bound by the law as long as her husband liveth; but if her husband be dead, she is at liberty to be married to whom she will; only in the Lord.

39. God's Law and Man's bind the Wife to her Husband during his Life: But if her Husband be dead, she may marry another, if nothing in her Condition forbid it; but it must be to a Believer, that is fit for her.

40. But she is happier if she abide, after my judgment; and I think also that I have the spirit of God.

40. But as I am giving you no Common Law against Marriage, or for it, but directing you how every one may discern what is best for themselves, my Judgment is, That ordinarily, where there is no necessity, a Single Life is more for the Persons peace and quietness, and freedom from Hindrances in serving God, and therefore better for them.
Annotations.

Divers Errors have arisen from the misunderstanding of some Passages in this Chapter.

1. Of them that make Paul to speak at uncertainty, without the Spirit of God, when they read, (by permission, and not by commandment), and, and not the Lord: When he only deliberate the giving them a Law instead of particular Direction.

II. The Error of them that hence gather, That God hath given us in Scripture his Counsels, which are no Commands, and make not Duty, nor is it Sin to violate, but a Work of Supererogation to do them. Whereas the Apostle only distinguishes of a proper Universal Law, and a consequential Obligation from other General Laws. A Common Law is the Rule of Societies: If such a Law had commanded or forbidden Marriage, it would be a Duty or a Sin to all: But yet God's Law bindeth all to chuse that which most tendeth to their own Good, and the escape of Evil; and to break this Law is Sin; to him that doth it, though the same thing be lawful to another. E.g. To marry against Parents Consent, to an unmeet Person, without Necessity, and oblige ones self to instruct and maintain a Family, when one is unable for it, and many such Cases, may make it a great Sin to marry. A Common Law, and a Personal Obligation resulting from another General Law, much differ.

III. The Error of them that say, By Holiness of Children, ver. 14, is meant either Legitimation only, or meet Baptism, and not an Interest according to their Capacity, in the Covenant of Peculiarity. I have so far confused in my Treatise of Infant Baptism, that here I pass it by.

IV. One excellent Divine hath hence taken occasion to speak so much against changing any Trade or Calling, as affirmeth some from Lawful Changes, which do more good than hurt.

V. From ver. 37. many unjustly commend absolute Vows of Calibates, which is to make a Law to God, that he shall not bring them into Necessity by any Change, and to make Shares and self-binding Laws for themselves, as if they were their own Rulers, when God hath made them Work enough, and, for ought they know, may bring them under a necessity to marry.

VI. On the other side, by a blind opposition to this Extreme, thousands rashly run into Marriage, without considering the Difficulties, Cares, Sufferings, Troubles, and Temptations that attend it: And being surprized unprepared, live accordingly in worldly Cares, Impatience, and Discontent.

CHAP. VIII.

1. Now as touching things offered unto idols, we know that we all have knowledge. Knowledge puffeth up, but charity edifieth.

1. As to your Case about things offered to idols, they that, to defend their licentious Practice, herein, pretend to know more of their Liberty than we do, must understand, that we have Knowledge as well as they; and Knowledge without Charity is not an Excellency to be boasted of; it doth but puff Men up with Pride and Self-conceitedness: but Charity is necessary to true Edification.

2. And if any man think that he knoweth any thing, he knoweth nothing yet as he ought to know.

2. And this Conceitedness of their great Knowledge and Wisdom, proveth that they know nothing at all as they ought. If they knew themselves, or Man, they would know the weakness of Man's Understanding, and how little they know. If they knew God, or any of his Works, they would know their Incomprehensibleness. Indeed
Indeed though we know somewhat of God, and his Works, and Word, we have no adequate knowledge of any thing in the World; we know but the whole of any thing; but some part of it. And to be ignorant of our Ignorance, is a double Ignorance. It is this false Conceit, That Men know more than indeed they know, which is the grand cause of all the pernicious Evils of the World; And constant Error is far more dangerous and hurtful than mere Nescience.

3. But if any man love God, the same is known of him.

4. But he that hath such Knowledge as hath received his Soul to the true Love of God and Holiness, is one that God owneth and knoweth as his own, and attaineth the true End of Knowledge: For our Happiness is better secured by God’s loving beneficent Knowledge of us, and all our Concerns, than by our own Wisdom.

5. For though there be that are called gods, whether in heaven or in earth, (as there be gods many, and lords many) 6. But to us there is but one God, the Father, of whom are all things, and we in him, and one Lord Jesus Christ, by whom are all things, and we by him.

6. For though the World hath feigned many Deities, Supreme and Subordinate ones, as, Mediators; yet we know that there is but One God the Father, of whom all Creatures have all their Being, and for and to whom we and all things are; and One Lord Jesus Christ, by whom all things were at first created, and are ordered, and by whom we are redeemed, and who only is our Mediator with this One God.

(Not, That this Text, which the Arians greatly boast of, and mistake, as if it expressly confined the Deity to the Father, as distinct from Christ, is variously expounded against them by two sorts of Expositors. 1. The ordinary Exposition is, 1. That though there be but One God the Father, the same God is also the Son. 2. But (more probably) that in Scripture God the Father, (as Simulans Similes Trinitatis, as the Schoolmen speak,) is oft put for the Deity, as such, comprehending the Three Persons. II. Theirs that hold three Natures in Christ, viz. 1. The Second Person in the Divine Nature. 2. Unanimously producing the first of Creatures, a Superangelical Being, by whom he made all other Creatures, and who appeared to the Fathers of old. And, 3. The Humane Nature assimilating the Personal Unity by the Superangelical and Divine. Those say, that Christ is called [One Lord, by whom are all things] as in his first created Superangelical Nature, distinct from one God the Father, but not divided from him. But besides Peter, and some such of late, few have entertained this.)

7. Howbeit there is not in every man that knowledge: for some with conscience of the idol unto this hour, eat it as a thing offered unto an idol; and their conscience being weak, is defiled.

8. But when every Man knoweth not this, that an Idol is nothing, but Custom hath lived in Men the conceit of many Super-cherie Deity-gods, to whom they think they owe some Worship, some Novities and corrupted Prayers of Christianity are not yet cured of these dangerous Opinions, and really intend some Honour to the Idol; and their Difflated Souls will be more defiled, when they are herein encouraged by your Example, and se you do the same outward Act, though you do it not with the same Opinion and Intention.

(Not, Some Expositors rather think that this is the Sense; Some know not that an Idol is nothing, but think them real Demons, that are worshiped, and that eating things offered to them is real Worship, and are tempted to it by fear to save themselves, and will be hardened and defiled by the encouragement of your Example. 1 But this seemeth not so agreeable to the Plur.)
8. But meat commendeth us not to God: for neither if we eat are we the better; neither if we eat not, are we the worse.

8. It is not the meer eating or not eating the Meat, that is any great matter, nor maketh one better and more acceptable to God, and another worse.

9. But take heed left by any means this liberty of yours become a stumbling-block to them that are weak.

9. But take heed, though the eating of that Meat, as such, be lawful, left by outward Symbolizing with Idolaters, you seem to worship the Idol, and to tempt others both to the mutual Errour and corporal Sin, (against Charity and Piety, viz. the Second Commandment:) For weak unsettled Persons are too easily seduced.

10. For if any man see thee which hast knowledge, sit at meat in the idol's temple, shall not the conscience of him which is weak be emboldened to eat those things which are offered to idols?

10. For though thou say, that thou doest not offer it to an Idol, but eat it in that Temple, to avoid danger, as a common Meal; yet thy Action will persuade the weak, that that is lawful, which so knowing a Man doth seem by his own Practice to approve.

11. And through thy knowledge shall the weak brother perish, for whom Christ died?

11. And whereas Christ died, rose, and revived, that he might be Lord of the Dead and Living, and hath a Right of Propriety unto all, having purchased for them a Conditional Gift of Salvation, thou wilt now rob Christ of his Right, and them of their Salvation, by the abuse of thy pretended Knowledge.

12. But when ye sin so against the brethren, and wound their weak conscience, ye sin against Christ.

12. Know therefore, that thus entailing the Consciences of the weak by Temptation, is not only uncharitable, wrong to them, but Sin and Injury against the very Blood and Right of Christ.

13. Wherefore if meat make my brother to offend, I will eat no flesh while the world standeth, lest I make my brother to offend.

13. I conclude then, That I do not make so light of another's Sin, nor set so light by the Soul of a weak Brother, or by the Blood and Right of Christ, as for Flesh, or by any unnecessary thing, to abuse my Liberty, when it will prove to them a dangerous Temptation to Sin. Though it be their culpable weakenss that maketh them in such danger, I will forbear Flesh as long as I live, if that conduceth to save them from Sin, (unless God lay on me a necessity to do otherwise, and leave it no longer to my liberty as indifferent.) To prefer my Liberty or Commodity in the use of things otherwise lawful, before the saving of the Soul, even of the Erroneous, from Sin, is to despise both Christ and Souls.

Note, O then what have those Papal Church-Tyrants to answer for, that by their numerous, vain, yea, noxious Canons, to new their usurped Dominion over Souls, will rather tempt Men, and excommunicate Christians, and burn them, and keep the Christian World in scandalous pernicious Strife, than they will give Men leave to deny Obedience to their Utterpation in such things? And how unlike Paul are they that say, They will not deny their own Liberty or Conveniency in an unnecessary Humour or Pleasure, for any Man, whose Error or Weakness is the cause of his Offence or Stumbling?

And many good Christians mistake this and such Texts, thinking that by offending the weak, is meant displeasing them, and doing that which others take for Sin: When as by offending, is meant laying a Stumbling-block, or causing occasioning or tempting Men to Sin and Ruine.

CHAP. IX.

1. Am I not an apostle? am I not free? have I not seen Jesus Christ our Lord? are not you my work in the Lord?

1. It seems some among you object against me, 1. That I am no Apostle. 2. That I get my Living by Tent-making. 3. That I am none of those that knew Christ. 4. That
Moses, Thou shalt not muzzle the mouth of the ox that treadeth out the corn. Doth God take care for oxen? 10. Or faith he it altogether for our sakes? for our sakes, no doubt, this is written: that he that ploweth should plow in hope; and that he that reapeth should be partaker of his hope.

8, 9, 10. Do I speak this as a Man pleading his own Interest? Dost not God say it in his Law, &c. And doth God make Laws chiefly for the good of Oxen, or for Men? For Men, do doubt, to encourage them by just Expectations of the Fruit of their own just Labours.

11. If we have sown unto you spiritual things, is it a great thing if we shall reap your carnal things? 11. The Spiritual things which we sowed with you, are far greater than the Carnal things which we may reap: And if you maintain others, you owe more to us.

12. If others be partakers of this power over you, are we not rather? Nevertheless, we have not used this power; but suffer all things, lest we should hinder the gospel of Christ.

12. Yet have I not claimed or taken that which is my due, lest it should hinder the Success of my Ministry.

13. Do ye not know that they which minister about holy things, live of the things of the temple? and they which wait at the altar, are partakers with the altar?

13. You know that the Levites and Priests live on the Things that are offered in the Temple and at the Altar.

14. Even so hath the Lord ordained, that they which preach the gospel, should live of the gospel.

14. So is it the Lord's own Appointment (who said, The laborer is worthy of his hire) that they who are called to preach the Gospel as a stated Office, (and not only occasionally) should be maintained in and
Ch. 9. That Ministers ought 1 Corinthians: to live by the Gospel. Ch. 9.
for that Labour, and not be taken off by Care and worldly Labour.

15. But I have used none of these things. Neither have I written these things, that it should be done unto me; for it were better for me to die, than that any man should make my glorying void.

15. But as I have not made use of this my Dye, so I write not as expecting it: For I value my Advantages for the Gospel as my Glory, above my Right, and above my Life.

16. For though I preach the gospel, I have nothing to glory of: for necessity is laid upon me; yea, wo is unto me, if I preach not the gospel.

16. For my bare Preaching would have nothing singular, to vindicate me from Calumny, or extraordinarily further the Success of my Labours: Even bad Men preach, and I am under a Command or Law of Christ, which will punish me if I do not.

17. For if I do this thing willingly, I have a reward: but if against my will, a dispensation of the gospel is committed unto me.

17. For if my Preaching, and that without Maintenance from you, be done willingly, God will reward me (who accepteth no unwilling Service): But if I preach but for fear of Punishment, and take not Maintenance because Men will not give it, I do but a Task imposed on me, and forfeit my Reward so far as I am unwilling.

18. What is my reward then? verily that when I preach the gospel, I may make the gospel of Christ without charge, that I abuse not my power in the gospel.

18. What then is that Qualification of my Service which God will specially reward? Not the mean Task of Preaching; but that I do it, as to devote all my own Rights and Interest to the Great Ends of the Gospel; and whatsoever I lose or suffer by it,

19. For though I be free from all men, yet have I made my self servant unto all, that I might gain the more.

19. I am no man's Slave or Bond-man, to serve him against my will: but I am a voluntary servant to all Men, in charity to save them, and in obedience to Christ.

20. And unto the Jews, I became as a Jew, that I might gain the Jews; to them that are under the law, as under the law; that I might gain them that are under the law; 21. To them that are without law, as without Law, (being not without Law to God, but under the Law to Christ) that I might gain them that are without law. 22. To the weak became I as weak, that I might gain the weak: I am made all things to all men, that I might by all means save some.

20, 21, 22. To the Jews, and those whose Education and Managements keep them under Moses' Law, I behavred my self by all Lawful Compliance and Conformity to that Law, that I might win them, (preferring the Truth of the Gospel, and my own and the Gentiles' Liberty.) When I converse with the Gentiles that are not under the Law of Moses, and have not written Law of God, as the Jews have, but only the Law of Nature, and Men's Laws, I put my self and Doe Divine to their State and Capacity, to win them, not pleading the written Law with them, as I do with the Jews: (Though I am far from thinking or living as lawless, for I am under Christ's own Government and Law.) To the scrupulous ignorant sort of Christians, and those that are yet unsettled, and liable to temptation, I behavred my self with all winning Compliance and Piousness; knowing that stiff singularity, and affected or unnecessary Crochets to others, is not the way to gain, but to alienate them. And though I know that it will not be won by such Compliance, yet I am made all things lawful towards all Men, that by this my duty I may save some.

23. And this I do for the gospel's
Annotations on Chap. 9.

26. I therefore go run, not as uncertainly; so fight I, not as one that beateth the air:

26. I therefore do not run in vain, nor knowing for what, or as by sloth to lose the prize; nor fight I as a fencer, for mere show and ostentation.

27. But I keep under my body, and bring it into subjection; lest that by any means when I have preached to others, I may myself be cast away.

27. But my first work is about my self to mortifie and subdue all my fleshly desires, which stand against my duty, and to keep my body in constant subjection, lest when I preach I have won others, I should as a carnal man be lost and cast away my self.

(And if you be true to the Gospel and to your own souls, and would not prove self-deceiving hypocrites, take you the same course, and devote all your interests to the ends of your profession, and the saving of souls, instead of pleasing for and abasing your real or pretended liberties to the tempting of others, and hindering their salvation, and boasting of this pernicious folly, as the knowledge wherein you excel others.)

ANNOTATIONS.

I. The Darkness of this Chapter comes from the Uncertainty in Matter of Fact, what was the Accusation that was made by the envious proud Teachers against Paul: 1. Whether it were that he laboured like a secular man, and lived not on the Church. 2. Or, That he was a poor Mechanick Fellow, that at last must be cast on their charge of Charity. 3. Or, That he solicited them for contributions to the poor at Jerusalem, or for others; and they suggested, that he partly received himself: It was easier to expound many Verses, did we sincerely know the Case objected.

II. They that from ver. 16, 17, 18, gather a sort of counsels which make no duty or sin, and a State of perfection which is no duty, utterly abuse the Text, which intimateth no such thing; and are sufficiently before confounded, on Chap. 7, about the Case of marriage.

III. Though Paul's becoming all things to all men, condemn their humour that in conversa, congregations, opinions, practices, do proudly affect unnecessary odness; that they may seem wiser and better than the rest, and justify Asia's resolution, to do as the Church doth wherever he cometh, in all lawful things, to win Men by approach, and not to alienate them by coarseness; yet it is no way commensurate them, who as temporizers, manifesters, or for worldly ends, or an indifference in religion, for want of judgment, or tender consciences and true obedience to God, will conform themselves to any sin which blind laws or customs shall make needful to their carnal interest. And yet in things appropriate
Ch. 10. Divers things I. Corinthians. to be avoided. Ch. 10.

Secedently Indifferent; Law and Custom may weigh down lighter Motives that are on the other side, but not weigher Motives. True Prudence here must hold the Scales, and determine what is Dury, and what is Sin.

C H A P. X.

1. Moreover, brethren, I would not that ye should be ignorant, how that all our fathers were under the cloud, and all passed through the sea; 2. And were all baptized unto Moses in the cloud, and in the sea; 3. And did eat the same spiritual meat; 4. And did all drink the same spiritual drink: (For they drank of that spiritual Rock that followed them, and that Rock was Christ.)

5. And because your boast of Knowledge, and your scandalous uncharitable abuse of your Liberty, and inflicting therein, give me cause to be jealous of many among you, let me further remember you. That it is not your being Baptized, and being Partakers of outward Privileges, and being eminent in the Church, that will save you, if you live in Sin: For all the Israelites passed through the Sea, and were under the Cloud, and so were typically baptized by Covenant to Moses's Law; and they did all eat the Passover, which was Sacramentally Spiritual Meat, and typically as our Eucharist; and they all drank of the miraculous Rock-water oft in the Wilderness, which Rock and Water were typically or spiritually Christ and his Sacramental Blood.

6. But with many of them God was not well pleased: for they were overthrown in the wilderness.

7. And yet with many, yea most of them, God was so offended by their Sin, that he overthrew them in the Wilderness.

6. Now these things were our examples to the intent we should not lust after evil things, as they also lusted.

7. Neither be ye idolaters, as were some of them; as it is written, The people sat down to eat and drink, and rose up to play.

8. Neither let us commit fornication, as some of them committed, and fell in one day three and twenty thousand.

9. And take warning by their Destruction, Num. 25:1, 2, 3. to avoid Fornication, which some of you make light of.

9. Neither let us tempt Christ, as some of them also tempted, and were destroyed by serpents.

10. And be warned by their Plagues, that you make not your Fleshly Lusts, and your impatience of Sufferings, to be the Law and Measure of your Expectations from God, as if he must needs do what your Flesh would have him, and allow you to do what you desire.

10. Neither murmur ye, as some of them also murmured, and were destroyed of the destroyer.

10. And lest not the Life of Self-denial, and Sufferings in the Flesh, which Christ calls you to, provoke you to murmur and be impatient under the Cross, or weary of Christianity, lest you be destroyed by the Executors.
of the blood of Christ? The bread which we break, is it not the communion of the body of Christ?

16. Is not our Communion in the Lord's Supper, in Wine and Bread blessed, a common Reception Sacramentally of the Blood and the Body of Christ? Do we not join in a professed Reception of these, communicated to us by Christ?

17. For we being many are one bread, and one body: for we are all partakers of that one bread.

17. For we that are many Persons, are one Church or Body of Christ, by Covenant-union with him the Bread of Life, of whom we all Sacramentally and professedly partake; As many Grains of Corn make one Loaf, and many Members one Body.

18. Behold Israel after the flesh: are not they which eat of the sacrifices partakers of the altar?

18. Do not they that eat of the Sacrifices of the Jews, thereby profess Worship to the God they sacrifice to?

19. What say I then? that the idol is any thing, or that which is offered in sacrifice to idols is any thing? 20. But I say, that the things which the Gentiles sacrifice, they sacrifice to devils, and not to God: and I would not that ye should have fellowship with devils.

19, 20. And now do not we know as well as others, that an Idol or Image is nothing, (but Wood, Stone, Gold, &c.) and that the Meat that is offered them is not in itself at all changed from what it was? But I say, that it is Devils that seduce the Heathens to this Idolatry, and Devils whom they thereby obey, and Devils whom they worship, as supposed Demi-gods, there represented; and consequentially, Devils with whom they have this Federal Communion. And I would not have you Christians to be Subjects and Communicants with Devils.

21. Ye cannot drink the cup of the Lord, and the cup of devils: ye cannot be partakers of the Lord's
Lord's table, and of the table of devils.

22. Think not that you may do both: You cannot lawfully, acceptably, or effectually, Sacramentally and Federally, communicate in the Blood and Body of Christ, or receive that Sacred Cup and Bread, and be made Members of him and his Church, and also communicate in the Federal Sacrifices to Devils; no, not with your Bodies, though you never so much despise them in your Hearts.

22. Do we provoke the Lord to jealousy? are we stronger than he?

22. Shall we provoke God by that which is in the Second Commandment, and often, he hath told us, he will be a jealous Agressor of? Are we strong enough to overcome him, or to bear the Wrath of the Almighty?

23. All things are lawful for me, but all things are not expedient: all things are lawful for me, but all things edifie not.

23. As I am from under Moses's Law, and not bound by it, as such; so also I know that all Meats are in themselves now clean, and lawful to me: But lawful things may be used contrary to the Will of God, the Ends of Christianity, and the Edification of others; and the Law of Christ forbiddeth us so to use them.

24. Let no man seek his own: but every man another's wealth.

24. We are bound by Christ to love others as our selves, and therefore not to prefer our own small and bodily Interest or Safety, before the spiritual, greater Good of others; nor to do only what we think best for our selves, but also what is best for others, (especially for the Church of Christ).

25. Whosoever is fold in the Shambles, that eat, asking no question for conscience sake. 26. For the earth is the Lord's, and the fulness thereof.

25. If it be fold in the Shambles, it is common Food to you; your Consciences need not ask whether it be unclean, or whether it was ever offered to any Idol,

26. God that is the Lord of all the Earth hath allowed us all that is fit for Food.

27. If any of them that believe, not, bid you to a feast, and ye be disposed to go; whatsoever is set before you, eat, asking no question for conscience sake.

27. As it is not unlawful when invited, to go to a Feast to Unbelievers; so, when you see cause to go, eat what is set before you, and question not the Lawfulness of it your selves.

28. But if any man say unto you, This is offered in sacrifice unto idols, eat not, for his sake that saved it, and for conscience sake. For the earth is the Lord's; and the fulness thereof.

28. But if any Man say, This, which the Meat that was an Idol-Sacrifice, eat not of it, for his sake that sold thee it, left thou tempt him to venire on Idol-Sacrifices, and for Conscience-sake, that thou uncharitably seduce not his Conscience. God hath allowed thee lawful Meats enough; thou needest not eat to others hurt.

29. Conscience I say, not thing own, but of the others: for why is my liberty judged of another man's conscience?

29. When I say Conscience, I mean, that you wrong not another's Conscience. I mean not that this Meat is unlawful to you, had you not been told it was offered to Idols, or had eaten it privately, where no one was hurt by it: For another Man's Conscience is not my Guide, nor makes Lawful Food Unlawful to me. But Uncharitableness, and Hurtfulness to others, (as well as Corporal Idolatry) I must make Conscience to avoid my self, as against the great Commands of Christ.

30. For, if I by grace be a partaker, why am I evil spoken of for that for which I give thanks?

30. For if I neither seem to worship the Idol my self, nor hurt another, but with Thanksgiving eat what's set before me at a Common Feast, though another expect that I should enquire whether it was not an Idol's Sacrifice, I am not, nor ought he to speak evil of me as a Sinner.
CHAP. XI.

1. Be ye followers of me, even as I also am of Christ.

1. In all things that I have used, I follow Christ, who denied his very Life for us: Therefore follow me, as I follow Christ.

2. Now I praise you, brethren, that you remember me in all things, and keep the ordinances, as I delivered them to you.

2. It is your praise (as well as your Duty and Safety) that you remember what Doctrine and Orders we Apologists of Christ at first delivered to you, and keep that which then we taught you.

3. But I would have you know, that the head of every man is Christ; and the head of the woman, is the man; and the head of Christ, is God.

3. And how to your Cafe about Church-Order, I first remember you, that the due Subordination of Persons must be kept: Christ is the Head of all Men, high and low; and the Man is the Head of the Woman, who therefore must shew Subjection and God is the Head of Christ, as Man and Mediator.

4. Every man praying or prophesying, having his head covered, dishonoureth his head.

4. It being the Custom then to cover the Heads of those that were put to any great shame, a Man that shall wash his Head and Face, doth thereby take Reproach unto himself.

5. But every woman that prayeth, or prophesieth with her head uncovered, dishonoureth her head: for that is even all one as if she were shaven.

5. But for a Woman to be uncovered in the Assembly at Publick Worship, Prayer, or Prophecying, is a dishonour to her, as contrary to the sign of Subjection which is her Duty.

(Ona: That the Woman is said to Pray or Prophecy, that joyneith with the Church therein.)
Ch. I. Women's Heads covered. I. Corinthians. Men uncovered. Ch. II.

11. Yet Men have no Being but by Women, nor without Men do Women exist or propagate; and this is by the Ordination of the Lord.

12. For as the woman is of the man, even so is the man also by the woman: but all things of God.

13. Judge in your selves: is it comely that a woman pray unto God uncovered?

14. Doth not even nature itself teach you, that if a man have long hair, it is a shame unto him?

15. But if a woman have long hair, it is a glory to her; for her hair is given her for a covering.

16. For if any man seem to be contentious, we have no such custom, neither the churches of God.

17. But if any will contentiously dispute against what I say, though I would make no greater a matter of such things than the nature of them requireth, let this Answr suffice to resolve sober Minds: The Custom of all the Churches is against Women being uncovered, as an unseemly thing; and you should not easily be different from all the Churches, in a Matter which depends on

11. Nevertheless, neither is the man without the woman, neither the woman without the man in the Lord.
the Signification of an Action, which Use and common Opinion must interpret. We, that must be as concordant as we can, must not affect dissimilitude.

17. Now in this that I declare unto you, I praise you not, that you come together, not for the better, but for the worse.

17. But about your Church-Assemblies I have a greater matter, of which I must blame you; that you come together for holy Communion, not as you ought, but in sinful form.

18. For first of all, when ye come together in the church, I hear that there be divisions among you; and I partly believe it.

18. For first, when you come together in one Church, to profess Union and Communion, as Members of one Body in holy Love, I hear credibly, that you even there shew your Divisions, and are of dissenting Minds, and Parties, and Practices.

19. For there must be also here-"ies among you, that they which are approved, may be made manifest among you.

19. For God will permit Heresies, or Sects and Divisions, to arise among you, to try you, that it may be seen who are found, well settled, approved Christians, (when the Chaff flitch away.)

20. When ye come together therefore into one place, this is not to eat the Lord's Supper. 21. For in eating every one taketh before other, his own Supper: and one is hungry, and another is drunken.

20, 21. When you meet in one place, as a Church, to profess Unity in Christ, it is nor like the Supper of the Lord, which is a holy Feast of Sacramental Unity, where all had the same Food, and the same Sacramental Body and Blood of Christ: For you first bring to the Church every one his own Supper for himself, instead of a Common Feast of Love, and the Rich eat and drink to the full, and the Poor are hungry.

22. What have ye not houses to eat and to drink in? or despise ye the church of God, and shame them that have not? What shall I say to you? shall I praise you in this? I praise you not.

22. If you must differ according to your Riches, do it in your own Houses, and pretend not a holy Love-Feast in such Disparities; and abuse not Church-Assemblies and Feasts, by your Fulness, and uncharitable Propriety, and shame not the Poor, that should be Feasted with you. This is a Practice worthy to be blamed in you.

23. For I have received of the Lord, that which also I delivered unto you, That the Lord Jesus, the same night in which he was betrayed, took bread: 24. And when he had given thanks, he brake it, and said, Take, eat; this is my body, which is broken for you: this do in remembrance of me.

23, 24. For I have not taught you of my own invention the Doctrine of the Sacrament, but I received it from Christ (partly by them that were present, and partly by his inspiration,) to wit, that the same night in which he was, &c.

Note. 1. It was Bread that he took; it was Bread which he brake, after Thanksgiving or Benediction, it was Bread which he gave them.

2. Yet it was his Body which he gave them, Sacramentally and Relatively: As the same thing which is materially Gold and Silver, may formally be the King's Coyn, and Currant Money, or a badge of Honour, or the King's Image, &c.

3. That Christ gave it them together practically, and bid them take it as personalappers, each to himself.

4. That it is his Will and Institution that this use should be continued to the Church, in commemoration of his sacrificed Body and Blood.

25. After the same manner also he took the cup, when he had supped, saying, This cup is the new Testament in my blood: this do ye, as oft as ye drink it, in remembrance of me.

25. So
Ch. 11. Of prophaning. I. Corinthians: the Lord's Supper. Ch. 11.

25. So also he took the Cup after Supper, saying, The Wine in this Cup is by sacramental signification, my Blood, as it purchase (as a Sacrifice) and seal the New Covenant or Statute: Use it with frequent in your holy Communion, in remembrance of my Bloodshed.

26. For as often as ye eat this bread, and drink this cup, ye do shew the Lord's death till he come.

26. For by the frequent use of this Bread and Cup, ye are to represent and declare the Sacrifice of Christ for our Sins, till he come in Glory.

27. Wherefore, whosoever shall eat this bread, and drink this cup of the Lord unworthily, shall be guilty of the body and blood of the Lord.

27. And it being so Sacred an Institution, for so high a Use, whosoever shall profane it, and use it but as common Food, or contrary to the holy Ends of it, which is the signification of God's Love to us by the Sacrifice of Christ for our Sins, and our Signification and Covenant of Love and Union with him, and another, he partaketh in Guilt with them that despise and crucifie him.

28. But let a man examine himself, and let him eat of that bread, and drink of that cup.

28. But let Men try and examine themselves, whether their Hearts and Practice do answer the necessary Ends of this holy Institution, coming to it as reverent Partakers of the Sacramental or Representative Sacrificed Body and Blood of Christ, in the pensive and believing sense of their Sin, and need of a Saviour, and of his pardoning and healing Grace: trusting the Hopes of their Salvation on him, and sincerely renewing their Self-dedication to him, and Covenant of New Obedience to him, in Love and Unity with his Church, even all sincere Believers; and so let them comfortably herein communicate.

29. For he that eateth and drinketh unworthily, eateth and drinketh damnation to himself, not discerning the Lord's body.

29. For he that eateth and drinketh otherwise than thus, that is, profanely, and not to the Ends of the Institution, doth but draw Judgment on himself, instead of Grace.

30. For this cause, many are weak and sickly among you, and many sleep.

30. For this very Sin of Profaning the holy Ordinance, God hath inflicted on many of you Weakness and Sicknes, and Death on some. (See God with Paternal Consolation, Justice, and Punishments even on his Family).

31. For if we would judge our selves, we should not be judged.

31. And if we would examine and judge our selves, and so come to this Feat even of not so urgent a Believers, with a right Intent, and holy Reverence, we should escape such magisterial Penalties, and the Judgment of God.

32. But when we are judged, we are chastened of the Lord, that we should not be condemned with the world.

32. But these Judgments of God on his Family are not by destructive Revenge, but Fatherly Chastisements, to bring us to Repentance, that we may not be condemned with the unholy World.

33. Wherefore my brethren, when ye come together to eat, tarry one for another.

33. Wherefore, as Brethren, do all in that imperial Unity and Love, as answereth your Profession and Christ's Institution, and not in Selfishness, Division, or Prophaneness.

34. And if any man hunger, let him eat at home; that ye come not together unto condemnation. And the rest will I set in order when I come.

34. Let the hungry eat at home, and not disorder the sacred Communion, and use it carnally, or as a common Feast, and that with uncharitable inequality; let your prophanation of so holy a thing bring down God's Judgments on you. As for the Points of Church-Order, I will determine them when I come.

ANNO
Annotations on Chap. xt.

ANNOTATIONS.

1. As to the Custom of Men and Women's Covering and Hair, mentioned ver. 19, 14, &c.

1. It is certain, that the Signification is the thing that must decide the Case; and that as Words, so this Action is an arbitrary Sign, and depends on the Custom and Opinion of the Country as the Expositor: And that with us, where Men being uncovered signifies Reverence and Submission to a Superior, the Case quite different from that of the Greeks.

2. And yet the Custom is so common in most Nations for Women to wear their Hair at full length, and Men to cut it, that it seems there is somewhat in Nature that tends to this difference, as there is in Kneeling and Prostration, to shew Humiliation and Submission.) And to confound the Difference of Sexes in Habits, is a great Sin; tending to Debauchery, and to hide unclean and Beasty Conversation. And therefore though a Man may in such things, of themselves indifferent, do as the worst do in an undecent Fashion, to avoid some greater Evil, (as among Thieves or Perfidios to escape unknown; as one may wear Women's Clothes to escape from unjust Imprisonment, or Death;) yet sober godly Persons should not without such necessity imitate the Fashions, which are the Signs of Pride, Debauchery, or any sinful self-distinguishing fort of Men or Women. Apply this to our Case of Men wearing great Periwigs, and that of Women's Hair, who sold it for that use, and to the Fashion of Women's naked Breasts, and Gowns with long superfluous Trains, while the Poor want necessary Clothing, &c. What would Paul have said, if any of these had been then the Case?

II. It is a most doleful Case, that Satan hath prevailed to turn this sacred Institution of Christ's Supper into the matter of bloody Contention with some, and of uncomfortable distractive Scruples and Fears with others, when as Christ ordained it to be the firm Bond of constant Love and Unity, and the great Comfort of the Souls of penitent Believers.

1. On one side, by over-doing in the Dogmatical and Ceremonious part, it is turned into the Monsters of Transubstantiation, the Priest's Communion alone while the People look on, a half Sacrament without the Cup, a Latin Mass not understood, a Real Sacrifice offered for the Dead, instead of a Representative Commemorative Sacrifice; the Adoration of Bread as God, supposed to be no Bread, but the Body of God indeed, &c. And it's made an Engine to rack Men's Consciences, and tear the Church, by communicating all that are not Conform to all the Drestes which usurping Dominations hath painted this Sacrament withal: And the Blood of Christ's faithful Servants is shed, for not following all these Opinions and antick Ceremonies that the Sacrifice of Christ's Body and Blood is abused by: So that, alas! how many Churches are torn, and perfecute one another, for not using this Sacrament of Love and Communion according to those Devices of Men, which Peter or Paul never used or approved?

2. On the other side, many godly Persons, quite misunderstanding the Words of Paul, about [unsanctifying receiving], come with such an excess of Reverence and Fear, left they eat and drink their own Damnation, that either they seldom venture to Communicate, (which the old Christians did oftner than every Lord's Day) or else they are more terrified, than comforted: And looking that God should suddenly comfort them in the very Act of Receiving, while they fight against their own Comforts by Mistakes and unbelieving Fears, when they feel not their Expectation answered, they are ready to despair, as having received unworthily. And should they do so by Prayer and Hearing, what Torment and Slavery would they make of Religion, by their Error?

3. And yet the Ignorant and Ungodly, who truly receive unworthily, can from the bare doing of the outward Act, steal to themselves that deceitful Comfort by which they are emboldened to go on in Sin, supposing that now God pardoneth all. Thus Satan hath turned Christ's Sacred Ordinance against himself, and the Peace of the Church, and the Comfort of some, and the Reformation of others; and carrieth on these most horrid Depravations with such odious Success, that without Wonders of gracious Providence, there appeareth no probability of Deliverance from these heavy Effects of Sacramentalisation.

CHAP.
CHAP. XII.

Now concerning spiritual gifts, brethren, I would not have you ignorant. Ye know that ye were Gentiles, carried away unto these dumb idols, even as ye were led.

1, 2. As to your case of discerning Spirits and Spiritual Gifts, it is of great importance that you should not be ignorant, lest you should take evil Spirits for the Spirit of God, or not distinguish the various gifts of God's own Spirit in believers: in your heathen state you were carried away with idol oracles and worship.

3. Wherefore I give you to understand, that no man (speaking by the Spirit of God, calleth Jesus accursed: and that no man can say that Jesus is the Lord, but by the holy Ghost.

3. First, in general you may be sure, that none of those idol oracles or blasphemers that speak against Christ, and anathematize him, as infidels do, do speak by the Spirit of God. For God's Spirit bore uncontrolable witness to Christ, by prophecy, resurrection, miracles, and holiness. And on the contrary side, he that believeth and confesseth that Jesus is the Lord, the true Son of God and our Mediator, hath surely learnt this of the holy Ghost, our outward testimony in the foresaid evidence, and his inward teaching. (For do but truly believe the truth of Christ himself, and the truth of all his doctrine will undeniably follow).

4. Now there are diversities of gifts, but the same Spirit. And there are differences of administrations, but the same Lord. And there are diversities of operations, but it is the same God, which worketh all in all.

4, 5, 6. And as gifts are ascribed to the Holy Ghost, and administration to the Son, and operations to the Father Almighty; so in all these there is great diversities, both of kinds and of degrees.

7. But the manifestation of the Spirit is given to every man to profit withall.

7. But all the gifts of the Spirit are given for the Churches edification, or to do good with. (Though some of them are found in unholy Men, who perish in their sin).

8. For to one is given by the Spirit, the word of wisdom; to another the word of knowledge by the same Spirit.

8. The same Spirit maketh one eminently wise and prudent in applying sacred truth to the case of the hearers; and it giveth another an eminent knowledge of sacred mysteries.

9. To another faith by the same Spirit; to another the gifts of healing by the same Spirit.

9. Another he maketh eminently strong in faith, for extraordinary effects; and another hath the gift of miraculous healing of the sick, (when the Spirit will have it done).

10. To another the working of miracles; to another prophecy; to another discerning of spirits; to another divers kinds of tongues: to another the interpretation of tongues.

10. To another, other sorts of powerful miracles; to another, to speak by immediate inspiration, either predictions, or powerful explications and applications of God's word; to another, a quick and sure discerning whether men pretending to the Spirit speak from God, or not; to another, the speaking of divers languages; to another, the interpretation of those languages to them that understand them not.

11. But all these worketh that one and the self same Spirit, dividing to every man severally as he will.

11. And though these are very various, and greatly difference Man from Man, yet it is the same Spirit that worketh them all, diversifying as he freely and wisely pleaseth.
12. For as the body is one, and hath many members, and all the members of that one body, being many, are one body: so also is Christ.

13. For here One and Many well confit: As the Natural Body is but One Body, but made of Many Members, differing in number, excellency, and office, so is Christ and his Church.

14. For by one Spirit are we all baptized into one body, whether we be Jews or Gentiles, whether we be bond or free; and have been all made to drink into one Spirit.

15. For as Sacramentally all visible Members are baptized into one Universal Church of professed Christians, and drink the Cup of holy Union and Communion in the Lord’s Supper: so all true, living, favored Members are baptized by one Spirit into one Universal Church of true Spiritual Christians, and drink the true uniting Spirit of Communion.

16. For the body is not one member, but many. If the foot shall say, Because I am not the hand, I am not of the body; is it therefore not of the body? And if the ear shall say, Because I am not the eye, I am not of the body; is it therefore not of the body? If the whole body were an eye, where were the hearing? If the whole body were hearing, where were the smelling?

17. The Body is not one Member as to Number, Kind, or Office; but many united: And so in Christ’s Body the Church: If a mistaken Christian himself should say, Because I am low in place, Grace or Gifts, I am none of the Church; this will not prove or make him none: Much less, if others, by false Censure or Church-tyranny, say he is none, or communicate him for differing from their vain Appendages or Opinions. If all were of one Office, Stature, Complexion, or degree of Grace or Knowledge, who would be Rulers, and who Subjects? who Teachers, and who Learners? How many Offices of Piety and Charity would be unperformed? God hath not a Church on Earth where all Members are to wife, as besides the Effentals of Christianity, to know all the Intregals: much less, to know the numerous little Accidents of Forms and Ceremonies, and all that is really or pretendedly Indifferent and Lawful (which Domineers can invent) to be so indeed, and so to be all united in such things indifferent.

18. But now hath God set the members, every one of them in the body, as it hath pleased him. And if they were all one member, where were the body? But now are they many members, yet but one body.

19. But as the Wife Creator in Nature, so as our Redeemer, Governor, and Regenerator by Grace, God hath chosen a great variety of Members, as to Office and Gifts: and he himself, as it pleased him, hath set them in his Church. (And who are they that presume against him, to censure or cast out the meanest of such?) Were they all numerically, or in Office, or degree of Knowledge and Grace, but one, or equal, the Church would not be such a thing as God hath made it. But now God, that freely delighteth in the variety of his Works, hath made it one Body of Christ, composed of variety of Members.

20. And the eye cannot say unto the hand, I have no need of thee: nor again, the head to the feet, I have no need of thee.

21. As the principal Members of the Body need the less principal; so the Rulers, Pastors, and least Members of the Church need even those weak and inferiour Christians, whom surely Censurers, and proud or contentious Usurpers, will cast out.

22. Nay, much more those members of the body which seem to be more feeble, are necessary.

23. Yea, the Parts which are least honoured, and feeble, have a peculiar necessity Office, which none of the rest is able to perform or supply.
23. And those members of the body, which we think to be less honourable, upon these we bestow more abundant honour, and our uncomely parts have more abundant comeliness.

24. For our comely parts have no need: but God hath tempered the body together, having given more abundant honour to that part which lacked: 25. That there should be no schism in the body; but that the members should have the same care one for another.

26. And whether one member suffer, all the members suffer with it: or one member be honoured, all the members rejoice with it.

27. Now ye are the body of Christ, and members in particular.

28. And God hath set some in the church, first apostles, secondarily prophets, thirdly teachers, after that miracles, then gifts of healing, helps, governments, diversities of tongues.

29. Are all apostles? are all prophets? are all teachers? are all workers of miracles? 30. Have all the gifts of healing? do all speak with tongues? do all interpret? 31. But covet earnestly the best gifts:

Note: None of all these Gifts or Offices are common to all. But desire most that which is best and most edifying.

Note: That even Apostles are but chief Members, and Peter himself not the Head, but one of them.

31. And yet shew I unto you a more excellent way.
CHAP. XIII.

1. Though I speak with the tongues of men and of angels, and have not charity, I am become as sounding brass, or a tinkling cymbal.

1. Left you should too much trust to any of these forementioned Gifts, which Christ giveth to some that perish, you must know, that the true Divine Nature, proper to Saints, consisteth in Charity, (which is the predominant Love of God, and of Saints as Saints, and Men as Men, as God is in them, and served by them.) And if I be without this, could I preach, discourse, and pray in better Language and Oratory than any Mortal Man, even as well as Angels, what were this Voice to God, that is a Spirit, and looketh to the Heart, but even as the tinkling of a Musical Instrument?

2. And though I have the gift of prophecy, and understand all mysteries, and all knowledge; and though I have all faith, so that I could remove mountains, and have no charity, I am nothing.

2. And though I could speak by Inspiration (as Balaam did) of things present or things to come, and could understand all the deep and difficult Points in God's Word and Works, and were the most excellent Philosopher, and could truly open all the Principles and Compositions in Nature; and though I could believe even to the Production of the most miraculous Effects, and yet have not this predominant Love of God, and of Saints, and of Men, as to God's Acceptance, and my own Salvation, I am as a mere Nothing: None of these Shadows will do my Work.

3. And though I bestow all my goods to feed the poor, and though I give my body to be burned, and have not charity, it profiteth me nothing.

3. And though I give all that I have to the Poor, either to be well spoken of, or through fear of Hell, or a conceit of obliging God by Merit, or out of mere natural Pity, or any other Cause, which in

cladeth not Love, it will not profit me to Salvation. Yea, if for these lower ends I should for sake Life itself, without the predominant Love of God and Man, it would be as nothing to me.

4. Charity sufficeth long, and is kind; charity envieth not; charity vaunteth not it self, is not puffed up.

4. Love is kind, inclining to do good, and is patient, and can bear much wrong from others, (as Self-love maketh us bear much more from our selves.) Love envieth not the Reputation, Applause, Precedency, or Profit of others. Love doth not vaunt and lift up a Man's self in his own esteem, or desire to be lifted up by others, above our Worth and Place, but in Honour prefereth others.

5. Doth not behave it self unseemly, seeketh not her own, is not easily provoked, thinketh no evil,

5. Love doth not break out into injurious Reflections, or Passions, or uncomely Department towards others: It is not selfish, and seeketh not our own inordinate, to the injury, neglect, or greater hurt of others: Is not provoked to any uncharitable thought, word or deed, by small Injuries or Occasions, but beareth, forbeareth, and forgiveth; and doth not think evil of any groundlessly, or till constrained, nor design evil or hurt against any unnecessarily or unjustly.

6. Rejoiceth not in iniquity, but rejoiceth in the truth:

6. It doth not rejoice in the Sins that others commit, nor in the Wrongs they undergo, nor themselves to do unjustly against any, or to be prosperous therein against them.

7. Beareth all things, believeth all things, hopeth all things, endureth all things.

7. It doth by others as we feel we do by our selves; that is, it beareth with the Faults of Men so far as is not against their own or others good: It is inclined to believe the best of all Men, till Evidence constrain us to know the worst, (not neglecting such cautious suspicion, as may save us from rash and foolish trust.) It still hopeth well
Annotatons on Chap. 13.

Well of others, as far as there is any ground of hope: It endureth hurt and wrong from others, when it is for their own or others greater good.

8. Charity neuer failleth: but whether there be prophesies, they shall fail; whether there be tongues, they shall cease; whether there be knowledge, it shall vanish away.

8. Holy Love is an everlasting Quality and Employment, and shall not cease, but be perfected at Death, and in Heaven: But Prophecying, Languages, Sciences, and all the artificial and imperfect sort of Knowledge which now we have, shall cease, as useless there.

9. For we know in part, and we prophesie in part. 10. But when that which is perfect is come, then that which is in part shall be done away.

9, 10. For here the manner of our knowing in the Body is imperfect, and the measure is all inadequate: we know nothing wholly, but some part of things: and so we speak, even in Prophecying and Preaching: But Perfection will end all this Imperfection.

11. When I was a child, I spake as a child, I understood as a child, I thought as a child: but when I became a man, I put away childish things.

11. As Manhood, and increase of Wit and Experience, change the Childlike Speech, Understanding, and Thoughts, into that which is true and more perfect; so much more will the Life to come do.

12. For now we see through a glass darkly; but then face to face: now I know in part; but then shall I know even as also I am known.

12. For our Knowledge now in this Body and World, is by imperfect Media, as we see things in a Glas, and know by Riddles, Parables, or Similitudes, a superficial Glimpse: But then we shall know as Men that see each other's Faces, by intuition. Now we know but little Parts, and Our-eyes, and Accidents of things, and nothing adequately: but then we shall know in the World of Spirits, as those Spirits now know us; which is better than we know our selves.

13. And now abideth faith, hope, charity; these three; but the greatest of these is charity.

13. I conclude therefore, That though now our State of Grace consist of Faith, Hope and Love, the Greatest of these is Love: (For it is the Divine Nature, the Everlasting Work, the Soul's Felicity, even its Complacency in God, and in all his Saints, and all his Works: and it is the End to which Faith and Hope are but the Means.)

ANNOTATIONS.

Yet Faith and Hope have their peculiar Offices, which Love alone cannot perform: As the Heart cannot do the Work of the Hand or Eye.

2. By Faith is meant, Believing and Trusting in God through Christ for Grace and Glory. And by Hope is meant, a definite comforting expectation of the Good promised and believed.

3. It followeth, That he hath the most excellent Knowledge, who hath most holy Love: And all the Learning that kindleth not this Love, is but dreaming, dozing, diverting and deceiving Vanity.

4. The English abuse of the Word [Charity] deceiveth many, as they were nothing but Giving to the Poor: But it is the Love of God and Holiness, and holy Virtues, and of our Neighbours as our selves; and specially of the holy Consumma, Christ, Angels and Saints.
Annotations on Chap. 13.

5. By this we see, that those Church-Rulers, Preachers, Writers, Disputers, and all other Malignants, who zealously labour to destroy Love, and to pervert Christians to hate, and persecute, and destroy one another, for their selfish Interests, Opinions or Factions, whatever they think of themselves, are Diabolists and Cainites, the Devil's Slaves, and in his Image do his Work.

6. It's made a doubt by some, Whether Faith and Hope continue not in Heaven; because, say they, How shall we know things past, (as the Creation, Flood, &c.) but by Believing? And shall we not Believe and Hope for the Perpetuity of Glory? But, 1. We know not now in what manner God will make known things to us there: Whether in seeing him, we shall see all things? or how? 2. However, it will not be the same things that are called Faith and Hope, which are exercised on Promises, and are but Means to that Perfection which is their End: So that if you call them by the same Names, they will be but equivocal.

7. Thus much tells us what Measure of Faith and Hope are necessary to Salvation, viz. so much as shall cause us sincere Love to God and Holiness, and Heaven, and to one another.

8. This tells us what those Texts do mean, which promise the Spirit of Sanctification to penitent Believers: viz. The Holy Ghost doth but prepare us, and open the Door by Faith and Hope, that by them, as means, he may excite holy Love, and as a Spirit of Love dwell in us, and possess us.

9. This teacbeth Ministers how to Preach, and People what and how to hear, meditate, and confer, and live; and what true Religion is, viz. To do all as may melt kindle holy Love, as we use the Bellows to kindle the Fire. Pure Religion, and undefiled, is to visit the Fatherless and Widows in adversity, and keep our selves unspotted of the World.

10. This teacbeth us what Fear of God to use: None that breedeth hard thoughts of God, or quencheth holy Love, but a Reverence of him, and a Fear left by Sin we make our selves unlively to him, and fall under that Justice which is holy and good, even when it destroys the wicked. Other Fear of God is sinful Superstition.

CHAP. XIV.

1. Follow after charity, and desire spiritual gifts, but rather that ye may prophesie.

1. The sum of my Advice is, That above all you value and purifie Charity, (or holy Love;) But desire all Spiritual Gifts, in subordination to it, and for the profitable exercise of it; and therefore prefer Prophesie, (which is speaking by immediate Inspiration, to the Instruction and Education of others) as most profitable.

2. For he that speaketh in an unknown tongue, speaketh not unto men, but unto God: for no man understandeth him; howbeit in the spirit he speaketh mysteries.

2. For he that speaketh in an unknown Language, speaketh not to the Understanding of Man, though God understand him: For though he speak never so high and excellent Mysteries, no Man that knoweth not that Language understandeth him.

3. But he that prophesie eth; speaketh unto men to edification, and exhortation, and comfort.

3. But he that intelligibly applyeth God's Word to the Hearers, speaks to as conduceth to their Education, and Exhortation, and Comfort, which are the Ends of your Assemblies.

4. He that speaketh in an unknown tongue, edifieth himself: but he that prophesie eth, edifieth the church.

4. It is supposed, that he that speaketh in a Language unknown to the People, 

H h 3 under-

You may learn this of Soldiers, how vain the unintelligible Sound of the Trumpet is.

9. So likewise you, except ye utter by the tongue words easy to be understood, how shall it be known what is spoken? For ye shall speak into the air.

9. So if you speak not intelligibly to the Hearers, what the better are they? You do but speak into the Air.

10. There are, it may be, so many kinds of voices in the world, and none of them is without signification.

10. Even the Voices of Birds and Beasts have their useful signification to Man, and to one another: much more of Men.

11. Therefore if I know not the meaning of the voice, I shall be unto him that speaketh, a barbarian; and he that speaketh shall be a barbarian unto me.

11. Therefore what I understand not, is of no more use to me, than to a Barbarian of another Language.

12. Even so ye, for as much as ye are zealous of spiritual gifts; seek that ye may excel to the edifying of the church.

12. Therefore as you much desire Spiritual Gifts, prefer those that most edify, and seek them not for vain glory.

13. Wherefore let him that speaketh in an unknown tongue, pray that he may interpret.

13. Let him that hath the Gifts of Languages, pray for the Gift of edifying Interpretation.

14. For if I pray in an unknown tongue, my spirit prayeth, but my understanding is unfruitful.

14. If I pray in an unknown Tongue, my Spirit prayeth, but others understand me not, and cannot profitably join with me.

15. What is it then? I will pray with the Spirit, and I will pray with the understanding also: I will sing with
with the spirit, and I will sing with the understanding also.

15. Therefore when I pray or sing by the Gift of unknown Tongues, I will also pray and sing intelligibly, for edification.

16. Else when thou shalt bless with the spirit, how shall he that occupieth the room of the unlearned, say Amen at thy giving of thanks, seeing he understandeth not what thou layest?  

16. If others join not with thee, it is but a private Exercise, and not a Church-exercise: And how shall the Vulgar join by content, and say, Amen, to what they do not understand?

17. For thou verily givest thanks well, but the other is not edified.

17. Thy Thanksgiving is a good Work, but what is another, or the Church the wiser for it?

18. I thank my God, I speak with tongues more then you all:

18. I thank God he hath given the Gift of more Languages to me, than to any of you.

19. Yet in the church I had rather speak five words with my understanding, that by my voice I might teach others also, then ten thousand words in an unknown tongue.

19. Yet in the Worshipping Assembly, (which is the Church) I prefer a few intelligible Words, which may teach others, before all that can be said for ostentation, and are unintelligible.

20. Brethren, be not children in understanding: howbeit, in malice be ye children, but in understanding be men.

20. Be not like Children, that love ensnaring Glyceres; but imitate them in simplicity; but as Men, value and use that which increaseth Wisdom and Understanding.

21. In the law it is written, With men of other tongues and other lips, will I speak unto this people: and yet for all that will they not hear me, saith the Lord.

21. It is spoken in Isaiah 14. 11. by God, That with Men of, &c. to shew their hard-heartedness, that would neither hear their own Prophets, nor Strangers sent to them by the Providence of God.

22. Wherefore tongues are for a sign, not to them that believe: but to them that believe not, but prophesying serveth not for them that believe not, but for them which believe.

22. So that the miraculous Gift of Languages is to convince Unbelievers, of that which the Church believeth already: But, Prophetical opening the Doctrine of Christ, for further edification, is appointed for them that are already Believers.

23. If therefore the whole church be come together into one place, and all speak with tongues, & there come in those that are unlearned, or unbelievers, will they not say that ye are mad?

23. Surely you should not meet or worship God scandalously, like mad Men: But if the whole Church do meet in one place, (as Churches then did) and all speak in unknown Tongues, the Unlearned and Unbelievers will take you all for mad Phanatics.

24. But if all prophesie, and there come in one that believeth not, or one unlearned, he is convinced of all, he is judged of all:

24. But if all that speak, do by God's Spirit use convincing Evidence in Explanation and Application, they all convince him, and shew him his Condition.

25. And thus are the secrets of his heart made manifest; and so falling down on his face, he will worship God, and report that God is in you of a truth.

Hh 4

35. And

25. And this searching convincing Light will make them join with you in the reverent Worship of God, and make them report that God is in your Church, as a holy Assembly.

26. How is it then, brethren? when ye come together, every one of you hath a psalm, hath a doctrine, hath a tongue, hath a revelation, hath an interpretation. Let all things be done to edifying.

26. Therefore let all your Gifts, whether of Psalmody, or Doctrine, or Languages, or Revelation, or Interpretation, be used to Edification, which is the true End of Church-Affembly: And the End is your Directory, in the use of all undetermined Accidents of the Means.

27. If any man speak in an unknown tongue, let it be by two, or at the most by three, and that by course: and let one interpreter.

27. If you will use your Gift of Languages, let it be done by no more than two or three, one after another; and let some interpret it to the Unlearned in the Church.

28. But if there be no interpreter, let him keep silence in the church; and let him speak to himself: If, and to God.

28. That which only God and your selves understand, let none but God and your selves hear; and speak not that in the Church which they cannot understand.

29. Let the prophets speak two or three, and let the other judge.

29. And the Prophets also must do all to Edification, and therefore must speak no more than may edifie the Church, which is but two or three at an Assembly, the rest judging.

30. If anything be revealed to another that fitteth by, let the first hold his peace.

30. If God immediately inspire another then to speak, let the first give way to him by silence.

31. For ye may all prophesie one by one, that all may learn, and all may be comforted.

31. For all that are Prophets, or are then prophetically inspired, may prophesie in order, that all in the Church may learn, and be exhorted, and comforted.

32. And the spirits of the prophets are subject to the prophets.

32. And whereas Men may pretend to be inspired of God, and that to speak just at that time, when it is not so (as their own Understanding must judge of the edifying Seafon and Order, so) the Prophets that are Heaens, having the Spirit of God, are fit Judges whether it be that Spirit, or a Delusion and Passion of their own, that Order may be kept in the Assemblies, at least as to the time.

33. For God is not the author of confusion, but of peace, as in all churches of the saints.

33. For pretended Inspirations and Manda
tes are not to be believed against God's common Law to all the Churches, which have a firer notification than a single Man can give us: But God's common Law is against Confusion, and for Peace and Order; and therefore it is certain, that Confusion is not of Divine Inspiration.

34. Let your women keep silence in the churches: for it is not permitted unto them to speak; but they are commanded to be under obedience, as also faith the law.

34. And it is one of the Rules of Order, That Women be no Publick Teachers or Speakers in the Church: God permitted it not, who hath commanded them Subjection by the Law.

35. And if they will learn any thing, let them ask their husbands at home: for it is a shame for women to speak in the church.

35. Not but that they should learn; but it must be with Modesty, asking their Husbands, if they have such as are able to teach them (as they ought) else they have other private Helps. It's a shame to the Church...
Annotations on Church and her, for a Woman there to speak (except in common singing Psalms, or other Common Acts.)

36. What came the word of God out from you? or came it unto you only?

36. I ask them that contradict this; Did God's Word come out from you, or from trusted Apostles? Or did it come to you only, that you contradict the Churches?

37. If any man think himself to be a prophet, or spiritual, let him acknowledge that the things that I write unto you, are the commandments of the Lord. 38. But if any man be ignorant, let him be ignorant.

37, 38. If any be indeed a Prophet, or Inspired, and not pretended only, he will confess, that these Canons or Decisions are God's own Commandments, and not my Device. But if Men will be obstinate in their Ignorance, let them look to it.

39. Wherefore, brethren, covet to prophesie, and forbid not to speak with tongues.

39. Prophezie for the Churches Edifying is to be covered, and Languages there not forbidden.

40. Let all things be done decently, and in order.

40. That Sacred things be all done decently, and not with uncomely negligence; and orderly, and not in confusion, or as every Man's Fancy leads him; this is a General Law of God, according to which, undetermined Modes and Circumstances must be regulated and done.

ANNOTATIONS.

It's a Doubt oft put, How it could be that God's Spirit should inspire Men with Tongues or Prophezie, and yet not tell them when and how to use them? But it's not to be thought, that he that was before without the Habit, had the actual Use of them, then suddenly inspired; but that, as the Learned, so the Inspired had the habitual Knowledge of Tongues before they assembled, and so for the actual Use and Time, were to exercise their own Discretion.

II. The Description of the Church here, oft named as meeting in one Place with their Officers and Guides, tells us, that then a Church of this Rank was not a Diocese of many hundred Assemblies, which had all but one Bishop, their Constitutive Head; but that it was a Company associated for Personal Communion, that usually met in one Place, though Necessity might make them meet in many, and the some General Guides might take care of many such Churches.

III. The greater number of Prophets, and Teachers, &c. that were here in one Assembly, whose Exercises the Apostle was put to restrain, doth fully confute Dr. Hammond's oft-repeated Opinion, That in Scripture-times there is no Proof that there were any more Presbyters to one Church, than one, who was a Bishop, and had Deacons under him; and that for want of capable Persons. But his Opinion inferreth, That then a Church was no greater than could meet in one Place: For one Bishop could not be at once in many. And if no Subject-Presbyters were made in Scripture-times, it must be proved by what just Power they were after made, even a sort of Pastors never made by the Apostles.

IV. The Arguments of the Apostle against the uninterrupted Use of Tongues not understood in the Church, are so many; cogent, plain, and vehement, that I will not lose time to answer the Papists Cavils against them, when they defend their Latin Masses and Prayers; but only note, That nothing can be so plainly spoken by God's own Spirit, which Carnal prejudiced Men cannot perceive; and that it is no wonder if they will not be judged and ruled by God's Word, unless they themselves may be Judges of the Sense
Annotations on Chap. 14.

Some of it; and how little God's Word signifieth to the People, where it must have such Expositors and Judges.

One that knew no more against the Papal Kingdom, called the Church of Rome, than 1. Their Latin Service, and cherishing of Ignorance: 2. And that as Leeches they live on Blood, and keep up their Religion by violent Cruelty; if he have but read this 1 Cor. 14. and Christ's Commands for loving each other; yes, if he have not lost much of Humanity in Self, I think, can hardly be a Papist.

V. The Pretence that some fetch hence, for any Man that will to speak in the Church, if he think he is inspired, is utterly vain: For that leave is here restrained to Inspired Prophets, and those to be regulated by the Laws of Order, Decency, and Edification. And God hath made it the Office of the Pastors, to be Rulers in the Assemblies.

VI. The abuse of the General Rules by Papist Usurping Church-Lords and Canonists, is notorious; who, because God's own Ordinances must, as to Mores and Circumstances, be managed Decently, Orderly, and to Edification, thenre plead for a Dominion to add many Symbolical Rites and Ordinances of their own, which Peter and Paul never knew, to make God's Ordinances seem Decent, Orderly, and to Edification, even things that in Sacii & genere are needles at the belt; and then they silence, excommunicate, and draw all that refuse such corrupting inventions: Like Zedekiah Ahab's Prophet, who (with his Brethren) spake by a Lying Spirit; and then made it Decent, Orderly and Edifying, by wearing a pair of Horns, to tell Ahab how he should push down his Enemies, and then swore Michaiah, for pretending to have more of the Spirit and Truth than he had; that Michaiah might be fed in Prison with the Bread and Water of Affliction, till experience shewed who had the Truth: How these Men would have used the Apostles of Christ if they now lived, and worshipped God but as then they did, their Canons teach us to conjecture.

CHAP. XV.

1. Moreover, brethren, I declare unto you the Gospel which I preached unto you, which also you have received, and wherein ye stand; 2. By which also ye are saved, if ye keep in memory what I preached unto you, unlesse ye have believed in vain.

1, 2. And because some endeavour to subvert your Faith, I will recite the Sum of that Gospel which I preached to you, and in which you have since continued, and which is the sure and sufficient Doctrine of Salvation, (though the Articles be few) without all the corrupt Additions invented by proud erroneous Men, unless your Belief of them have been unformed and superficial, and so in vain. See that your unformed Belief deceive you no, and this Gospel will not deceive you.

3. For I delivered unto you first of all, that which I also received, how that Christ died for our sins according to the Scriptures:

3. For I told you, that Christ died as a voluntary Sacrifice for our Sins, therein fulfilling what was promised of him. This I received from God by Inspiration, and from the certain Witness by just Report and Evidence.

4. And that he was buried, and that he rose again the third day according to the Scriptures:

5. And that he was seen of Cephas, then of the twelve. 6. After that, he was seen of above five hundred brethren at once; of whom the greater part remain unto this present, but some are fallen asleep.

4, 5, 6. And
Ch. 15. Christ I. Corinthians. is risen. Ch. 15.

4, 5, 6. And as the Scripture foretold, he was buried, and rose again the third day, and appeared to Peter, and after to the special Disciples, who were Twelve before Judas's Defection, and after. And after that it's like, in Galilee he was seen of Five hundred, &c.

7. After that, he was seen of James; then of all the apostles.

7. Note, That it's not to be wondered at, that this Appearance to James, and to the Five hundred, are not before distinctly mentioned in the Gospel, when St. John tells us how small a part of what Christ did, is written. And as one Evangelist hath some things which the other omitteth; so if Paul have some which all four omit, the same Spirit recordeth them all.

8. And last of all he was seen of me also, as of one born out of due time.

8. And after all these he appeared to me from Heaven, as to one that was too late converted.

9. For I am the least of the apostles, that am not meet to be called an apostle, because I persecuted the church of God.

9. For my persecuting God's Church maketh me so unworthy to be numbered with the Apostles, that though God called me to be one, I must esteem myself as the least, so the least of them, or below the Twelve.

10. But by the grace of God I am what I am: and his grace which was bestowed upon me, was not in vain; but I laboured more abundantly than they all: yet not I, but the grace of God which was with me.

10. But God's free Grace hath called me to this Honour and Work: and his Grace given hath not been in vain: for (though I came late in, and was a Persecutor) I have since been more laborious than any of them all: which I attribute not to my self, but to God's free Grace, which chose, called, instructed, excited, and strengthened me.

11. Therefore, whether it were I or they, so we preach, and so ye believed.

11. But whether the Conversion of so many of several Nations was by me or by them, it is not material to the thing in question. These same Articles of Faith were they that we all unanimously preached, and into the Belief of which, as the Christian Varsity, you were Baptized.

12. Now if Christ be preached that he rose from the dead, how say some among you, that there is no resurrection of the dead?

12. And how then can the same that say they believe the Resurrection of Christ, deny the Resurrection of the Dead, and the Life hereafter?

13. But if there be no resurrection of the dead, then is Christ not risen. 14. And if Christ be not risen, then is our preaching vain; and your faith also vain.

13, 14. If none rise, Christ is not risen: And if Christ be not risen, then it is Falsity and Deceit which we preach, and which you have believed, and not the glad Tidings of Salvation.

15. Yea, and we are found false witnesses of God; because we have testified of God that he raised up Christ: whom he raised not up, if so be that the dead rise not.

15. And then it will follow, not only that we deceive the World, but that we belie God himself, when we witness that he hath raised Christ; which would be a most heinous crime.

16. For if the dead rise not, then is not Christ raised: 17. And if Christ be not raised, your faith is vain; ye are yet in your sins.

16, 17. If the dead rise not, and Christ rose not, what hope have you of Salvation from sin and death?

18. Then they also which are fallen asleep in Christ, are perished.

18. Then
Ch. 15. Paul declareth I. Corinthians. the Resurrection. Ch. 15.

18. Then dead Christians are perished: that is, if their Souls live not when the Body is disolved, their Souls perish; and if the body rise not, that perisheth for ever; and the Martyrs would be great losers, and martyrdom folly.

19. If in this life only we have hope in Christ, we are of all men most miserable.

20. And if there be no Resurrection or life after this, but our hope of benefit by Christ were only in the things and time of this present life, none were so miserable as Christians, who must for take all, even life it self for Christ.

Note, That the thing denied by the Hereticks, was not only the resurrection of the Body, but also all life after this for Soul or Body: And so the Apostle joineth the corruption of both, under the name of Resurrection.

21. But now is Christ risen from the dead, and become the first-fruits of them that slept.

22. But we have full proof even from sense, that Christ is risen; and therefore as the first-fruits consecrate the whole, so Christ's Resurrection being to purchase ours, doth prove to our comfort, that the dead shall rise.

23. For since by man came death, by man came also the resurrection of the dead. 22. For as in Adam all die, even so in Christ shall all be made alive.

21, 22. For as by Man came death Corporal, as well as Spiritual and Eternal, by Man also we deliverance by a Resurrection. For as by Adam's sin the sentence of death came on all his posterity, as such; so all that are in Christ shall by him be delivered to an everlasting happy life.

Note, That the Resurrection of all Men, good and bad, is an effect of Christ's Death and Resurrection, antecedently to differencing Grace, as appeareth John 5.24, 25, &c. But that it proves a Resurrection to condemnation, is consequently caused by Mens sin: and the Apostle here speaketh of the Elea's Resurrection to felicity.

23. But every man in his own order: Christ the first fruits, after-ward they that are Christ's, at his coming.

24. Then cometh the end, when he shall have delivered up the kingdom to God, even the Father; when he shall have put down all rule, and all authority, and power.

25. For he must reign till he hath put all enemies under his feet.

26. The last enemy that shall be destroyed, is death.

27. For he hath put all things under his feet. But when he faileth all things are put under him, it is manifest that he is excepted which did put all things under him.

28. And when all things shall be subdued unto him, then shall the Son also himself be subjected under him, that put all things under him, that God may be all in all.

28. When
28. When Christ hath subdued all that oppose his saving mediatorial work, Christ as a Creature shall be for ever himself subject to the Deity, and shall give up his recovering work (tho' still it will be our Glory to see his Glory:) So that the pure, blessed Deity will be the felicity of Saints, and be all in all.

29. Else: what shall they do which are baptized for the dead. If the dead rise not at all? why are they then baptized for the dead?

30. And if the dead rise not, to what purpose do we in Baptism profess our belief of the Resurrection, and resign our Bodies a living Sacrifice to die when Christ requireth it, and this in hope of a Resurrection signified by our rising from under the Water.

32. If after the manner of men I have fought with Beasts at Ephesus, what advantage it me, if the dead rise not? let us eat and drink, for to morrow we die.

33. Let not such evil Principles, and Proverbs, and talk deceive you. Ill words deceive many, and draw to ill Deeds and Conversations.

34. Awake to righteousness, and sin not; for some have not the knowledge of God: I speak this to your shame.

35. Such lewd opinions shew that men Reasons and Consciences are in a sleep and stupidity; awake them, and they will lead you from sin to righteousness. By this it appeareth that some among you that call themselves Christians, have not yet the true knowledge of God and his Will; which I say, to humble you by shame.

36. Thou fool, that which thou sowest is not quickened except it die.

37. And that which thou sowest, thou sowest not that body that shall be, but bare grain, it may chance of wheat, or of some other grain.

38. But God giveth it a body as it hath pleased him, and to every one his own body.
40. There are also celestial bodies, and bodies terrestrial: but the glory of the celestial is one, and the glory of the terrestrial is another. 41. There is one glory of the sun, and another glory of the moon, and another glory of the stars: for one star differeth from another star in glory. 42. So also is the resurrection of the dead. It is in fomn in corruption, it is raised in incorruption:

49, 41, 42. The celestial bodies greatly differ from the earthly bodies, and so do even the celestial among themselves; as the Sun from the Moon, and one Star from another, &c. And so shall our bodies at the resurrection greatly differ from these that we have now; particularly, by being incorruptible.

43. It is fomn in dishonour, it is raised in glory: it is fomn in weakness, it is raised in power:

44. It is fomn a natural body, it is raised a spiritual body. There is a natural body, and there is a spiritual body.

43, 44. It is now so vile a body, that it must rot and corrupt in darkness in the earth; but it shall rise in Glory. It is buried in utter impotency, like the common earth; but God’s power shall raise it a powerful body. It is buried like the body of a beast, that was passive, and only acted by the living soul; but it shall rise a spiritual body, more suited to the nature of the soul, and having also an active nature (like as fire hath) in it self. There are natural bodies, of passive matter, in daily flux, required by food, and acted only by other natures, or souls; and there are spiritual bodies, (either such as the sun and light hath, or higher) which are incorruptible, and of themselves not inclined to death, dissolution, or change, and besides the soul are so like it, that they are themselves active natures.

45. And so it is written, The first man Adam was made a living soul, the last Adam was made a quickening spirit.

45. That is, the first Adam was made by God a living soul, put into a corruptible body, not having an unchangeable state in himself; nor power to make his posterity such: But the second Adam had in himself unchangeable life, suited to a spiritual, glorious state, and was the root of such to his believing posterity, enabled, as the Lord of Life, to rise himself, ascend to heaven, and to raise them to life, and take them to himself, and to make them a spiritual, holy people, capable thereof.

46. Howbeit, that was not first which is spiritual, but that which is natural; and afterward that which is spiritual.

46. But the animal person, from whom by generation we have but mere nature, was so as us in causality, before him that conveyed to us spiritual and everlasting life. Our nature derived from Adam was before the repauration, spiritual holiness, resurrection, or glory given by Christ; even as Adam was before Christ’s own incarnation and resurrection. Perfection is the last and ripe state of God’s work in our salvation.

47. The first man is of the earth, earthy: the second man is the Lord from heaven.

47. Adam was made out of the dust of the passive elements; though God breathed into him a living soul, yet earth was his first abode: But Christ is the Lord from heaven, his divine nature being there from everlasting, attuned the human by the overshadowing of the holy ghost.

48. As is the earthy, such are they also that are earthy: and as is the heavenly, such are they also that are heavenly.

48. And as Adam was a natural man, and the root of such; so it is but nature which
which we have from him: And as Christ is Heavenly and Spiritual, so will he make all the holy Seed to be like him, Spiritual and Heavenly.

49. And as we have born the image of the earthy, we shall also bear the image of the heavenly.

49. And as we are born of Adam, Men as he was; so we shall be made by Christ Spiritual and Heavenly, as he is.

50. Now this I say, brethren, that flesh and blood cannot inherit the kingdom of God; neither doth corruption inherit incorruption.

50. And this I tell you, That these Bodies must not come to Heaven in the proper Form of Flesh and Blood, nor can as such, possesse; for, as such, they are corruptible, and cannot so inherit Heaven, which is incorruptible.

51. Behold, I shew you a mystery: We shall not all sleep, but we shall all be changed,

51. And I will tell you that which is commonly unknown: Though the just shall not die that are alive at Christ's coming, they shall all be changed, as well as those that rise from the Dead, from being proper Flesh and Blood, to have Spiritual Bodies.

52. In a moment, in the twinkling of an eye, at the last trump (for the trumpet shall sound) and the dead shall be raised incorruptible, and we shall be changed.

52. In a moment Christ's potent Call will be like a Trumpet, calling Men together; and the Dead shall be raised, and living Saints changed into an incorruptible state.

53. For this corruptible must put on incorruption, and this mortal must put on immortality.

53. For this mortal Body and Composition, which is now corruptible by Diffusion, must be changed into an incorruptible and immortal state of Being and Habitation.

54. So when this corruptible shall have put on incorruption, and this mortal shall have put on immortality, then shall be brought to pass the saying that is written, Death is swallowed up in victory.

54. And Death being conquered by Christ, (being a Fruit of Sin, from which he saveth us) we shall die no more.

55. O death, where is thy sting? O grave, where is thy victory?

55. The sting of death is Sin; and the Strength of Sin is the law.

55. Though now Death seem to conquer us, we triumph over it by Faith in Christ, foreseeing our Resurrection: being saved from Sin, which is the Sting, and the Penal Law or Curse, which is Sin's condemning Strength.

57. But thanks be to God, which giveth us the victory, through our Lord Jesus Christ.

57. But by Faith, which feeth things to come, we give God thanks, that will raise us from the Dead, and give us final Victory over Death through Christ.

58. Therefore my beloved brethren, be ye stedfast, unmoveable, always abounding in the work of the Lord, forasmuch as ye know that your labour is not in vain in the Lord.

58. And now, Brethren, make this necessary use of all. Seeing our Faith and Hope of a Resurrection and future Life assured us, that none of our Christian Labour or Suffering shall be in vain, or to our loss, or without a glorious Reward; what remaineth, but that against all Temptations you be stedfast and unmoveable, and do God's Work with all your Power, abounding in Labour and Patience to the end?
ANNOTATIONS.

As this Chapter is of great Use for our Instruction, so it is not without many Difficulties to our Understanding.

I. It's needful to be observed, into how narrow a Room Paul reduceth the Gospel, or Articles of Faith concerning Christ; and how greatly herein they differ from him, that condemn, excommunicate, or persecute those who believe these, and all the Bible besides, if they subscribe not to the Truth of all their Articles and Forms superadded, and the justness of their numerous Canons.

II. The Appoimation of Christ to the Five-hundred, and to James, seemeth part of that which St. John, saith was not by him written: So that part of the Evidence of Christ's Resurrection should be enough to cause us to believe it.

III. Though it was but 'me at Corinth that denied the Resurrection the Church was faulty in bearing with them: yet Separation from that Church for their sake, is not required, nor allowed by the Apostle.

IV. The Secondis from the 19th. Verse, and divers others, gather, That Paul denieth the Felicity of our Souls before the Resurrection, because he intimateth, That if there were no Resurrection, (but only an Immortality of the Soul) Christians were the most miserable Men, and their Faith and Sufferings vain, and they were yet in their Sins, &c. The Matter is weighty, and the Solution hath its Difficulty. Some say, That because the Heretical denied the Immortality of the Soul, as well as the Resurrection of the Body, Paul suppoeth this, and anteposeth them as to both: And they say, That the Apostles signify[ing] but to stand up, that is, to live again, includeth the Life of the Separated Soul, as well as the Resurrection of the Body. Others say, That Paul speakes only of the Men, and not of the Soul alone, which is but part of the Man. Soul and Body are essential to a Man; and as a Man, he may be miserable, because part is so (as a Tooth-aeth is to the whole Body) though the Soul be happy. Others say, That the Felicity of perfect Man at the Resurrection will be so much greater than that of the Separated Soul before, and also that this Separate State is so darkly revealed to us, that the Apostle maketh light of it in comparison of the latter. The draft of these Opinions is not inconsiderable; but the chief Answer is by a stricter Exposition of the particular Texts. And, 1. Verse 19. argueth thus: (If we believe in, and suffer for a Christ as riven, who is not riven, then he cannot save us as to Soul or Body; and then we are the most miserable of Men. For our Hopes in him, for the Time and Things of this Life only, affords us less than others have, his Kingdom being not of this World.) This Argument is not again't, but for the Immortality of the Soul.

So Verse 2: 1. (What advantaqesth it me if the dead rive not?) i.e. Neither Soul nor Body is advataged by suffering for a Christ as riven, who is not riven.

V. The Comparision of Adam and Christ is as hard, seeming to mean, that Adam's Soul, and his P ocherites, as such, are not Immortal. But indeed it implieth no more than this: 1. That it's called, Gn. 2. a Living Soul, but Chr. the Lord of Life. 2. That Adam had but a Soul breathed into him by Creation on Earth; but Christ was in Heaven from Ever-lasting, the Living God. 3. That Adam propagated only Humanity; but Christ also Sanctity and Felicity. 4. That Adam by Nature had but a lisible Capacity of Bodily Life continued, and Heavenly Felicity; and by Sin came short of both: But Christ hath Life in himself, as the Root of Holiness and Happiness in Heaven, which he will give believers, both to their Souls and Bodies, and will give a Bodily Resurrection to all Men.

VI. Verse 24: The Kingdom delivered up to the Father, is but that Government which Christ useth to recover and save Sinners, and is no addition to the Father, nor diminution to Christ: But as a Prince undertaking to reduce Rebels, layeth down his Commission and Arms when he hath done his Work, and yet increaseth his own Honour, or as a Physician giveth up his Hospital, when he hath healed all the Sick. And it is like, yea, certain, that when Christ's acquisitive Mediation is finished, he will still be some sort of Mediator at our Fruition: For we shall still behold his Glory.

VII Ver
Annotations on Chap. 15.

VII. Ver. 57. 38. seem to intimate, That the Body that shall rise is not the same that was sown, but such a Body as God pleaseth anew to give. Doubtless it is the same in some respects, and not the same in all respects. And to be able to know just how far it is or is not the same, is too hard for us, and may be quietly left to the Will of God. The Seminal part of the Grain (Matter and Form) liveth in the new Fruit, in which it springeth up, (as the Seminal part of Men begins his Being in the Womb) but, the added Matter which makes up the Roy; the Stalk, and Ear; and new Grains, are all drawn from without, from the Water, Earth, and Air, by God, and by the Seminal Spirit. We see that Men oft grow Fleesy, Fat, and Lean again, and at last die with little but a skinned Skeleton; I think few believe, that either Men dying Fat shall rise Fat, or Men dying Lean shall rise Lean; or yet that every Man shall rise with all the Flesh which he ever lived or suffered in, and which daily passed away, or consumed in Sickness. To know how much, and what to do to identify the Body, we must leave to God, if we will not pretend to the knowledge we have not. Nor is it necessary to believe, that all Fowl, Beasts, and Fishes shall again, and go to Heaven, which are ever digested, and made Humane Flesh.

The Apostle likening our Bodies to Seed, makes some to doubt whether the dead Body have a Resurrection by any Seminal Vesture, as a Natural Garve, or only rise by Miracle. The latter is most commonly held. And yet it is certain, that the Soul taketh with it a Love and Inclination to its Body, which is a sort of Seminal Disposition. And no mortal Man knoweth whether the Soul, take not with it some of the Igneous Spirits by which it here operated as such a Body, as Seminal Vesture in Inferior things is lodged in them; and whether at the Resurrection God use that Composition of Igneous Matter, or Ethereal and Spiritual Form, for the aggregation of so much more such Matter as shall be needful to make up the Glorious, Spiritual, Incorruptible Body. But all this, and how much of the Flesh we lived in God will raise, is to us unknown.

VIII. Ver. 56. That Flesh and Blood cannot enter into the Kingdom of God, is greatly perverted by them that say, That it's only Sinful Flesh that is meant, or them that say, That Flesh and Blood shall enter, but incorruptible. It is proper formal Flesh and Blood that the Apostle mentioneth. Flesh is the Blood, and other nutritive Juice, coagulated into that Fibrous Substance so called, and is the Matter of Food digested and assimilated unto this. It is made of Earth, Water, and Air; and so is Blood. Define them, and nothing that is in Heaven will agree with that Definition. If such Earth shall be placed in Heaven, it will cease by transmutation to be Earth. To call a Spiritual, Incorruptible, Glorious Body, Earth and Water, or Flesh and Blood, and place the with the Blest Spirits, is but to equivocate, and not to use the Words univocally. The two General Councils (Nice second, and Constance before it) differing in other things, agree, That Christ's true Body is in Heaven, but that there it is not Flesh and Blood: (And yet the Papists feign, that he hath still real Flesh and Blood in the Sacrament.) Doubtless by a Spiritual Body is meant one that is so near the Nature of a Spirit, as it fitteth for spiritual and glorious Work, which made many of the Fathers say, That it will be an Ethereal, or Igneous, or Luminous Body. But God's Knowledge must be implicitly rested in, when we have no explicit knowledge.

CHAP. XVI.

1. Now concerning the collection for the Saints, as I have given order to the churches of Galatia, even so do ye.

1. I come next to your Order for Collections for the poor Christians in the present Family at Jerusalem: In which I would have you, as most convenient, to observe this Order, which I gave to the Churches of Galatia.

2. Upon the first day of the week, let every one of you lay by him in store, as God hath prospered him, that there be no gatherings when I come.
2. The Lord's Day being appointed for Sacred Works, of which holy Charity is a great part, let every one willingly lay by, as devoted to God for this Service, according to the proportion of his Worce, that I may find it ready, and not stay when I come for your Collections.

3. And when I come, whomsoever you shall approve by your letters, them will I send to bring your liberality unto Jerusalem.

4. And then, that you may be satisfied of the faithful deliver, you shall chuse the Messenger your selves.

5. And if it be meet that I go also, they shall go with me.

6. And if I find cause to go my self, your own Trustees shall go with me.

7. Now I will come unto you, when I shall pass through Macedonia: (for I do pass through Macedonia). And it may be that I will abide, yea, and winter with you, that ye may bring me on my journey, whitherfore I go.

8. For I will not see you now by the way, but I trust to tarry a while with you, if the Lord permit.

9. That a wise fore-concinnance of our own Course of Labour is lawful, but only with submission to God's Will.

10. But I will tarry at Ephesus until Pentecost. For a great door and effectual is opened unto me, and there are many adversaries.

11. Hope of great Success, and the opposition of many Adversaries, persuaded me to stay at Ephesus.

12. That great Success of the Gospel oft consisteth with many Adversaries.

13. Now if Timotheus come, see that he may be with you without fear for he worketh the work of the Lord, as I also do.

14. See that Timothy, when he cometh, be not discouraged by distrust, or abuse, for he is my faithful Helper in the same Work of the Lord, in which I serve him.

15. Let no man therefore despise him; but conduct him forth in peace, that he may come unto me; for I look for him with the brethren.

16. As touching our brother Apollos, I greatly desired him to come unto you with the brethren: but his will was not at all to come at this time; but he will come when he shall have convenient time.

17. That Paul ere Christ was crucified, and did not suspend or silence him for disobeying an Apostle.

18. Watch ye; stand fast in the faith, quit you like men, be strong.

19. Finally, your Catech is so weighty, and Trial so great, as require your constant watch, your resolute steadfastness in the Faith. Manlike Strength, Endeavour, and Defence.

20. Let all your things be done with charity.

21. The sum of this Rule that I give you, is, Do all that you do in Love, or Endemesthesia to another; and this will call out Selfishness, Pride, Envy, and Division, and keep you from such contending, separating, despising, or abusing one another.

22. I beseech you, brethren, (ye know the House of Stephanas, that it is the first-fruits of Achaia, and that they have addicted themselves to the ministration of the Saints) that ye submit your selves unto such, and to every one that helpeth with us and laboureth.

23. The House of Stephanas being the first converted in Achaia, and addicted to further Christians with their labours and Labour, and being now my fellow-labourer,
17. I am glad of the coming of Stephanas, and Fortunatus, and Achaicus: for that which was lacking on your part, they have supplied.
18. For they have refreshed my spirit and yours: therefore acknowledge ye them that are such.
19. For they have performed such respectful Offices as you were wanting in. Therefore let such be respected by you.
20. The churches of Asia salute you. Aquila and Pricilla salute you much in the Lord, with the church that is in their house. 21. All the brethren greet you. Grace be unto one another with an holy kiss.
22. The salutation of me Paul with mine own hand.

The Second Epistle of PAUL the Apostle, to the CORINTHIANS.

CHAP. I.

3. Blessed be God, even the Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, the Father of mercies, and the God of all comfort; 4. Who comforteth us in all our tribulation, that we may be able to comfort them which are in any trouble, by the comfort wherewith we ourselves are comforted of God.

5. For as the sufferings of CHRIST abound.
Ch. 1. Encouragements, II. Corinthians, Against Troubles. Ch. 1.

abound in us, so our consolation also aboundeth by Christ.

5. As I suffer more than others for Christ, so I have proportionable comfort by Christ.

6. And whether we be afflicted, it is for your consolation and salvation, which is effectual in the enduring of the same sufferings which we also suffer: or whether we be comforted, it is for your consolation and salvation.

6. So great is the love of God to you, that both our afflictions and our comforts are intended as means to your comfort; that you may the easieter suffer as we do, and hope for that comfort that we enjoy, and that all may further your Salvation.

7. And our hope of you is steadfast, knowing that as you are partakers of the sufferings, so shall ye be also of the consolation.

7. Therefore I hope that suffering will not overthrow your Faith, while you look for the same consolation.

8. For we would not, brethren, have you ignorant of our trouble which came to us in Asia, that we were pressed out of measure, above strength, insomuch that we despaired even of life.

8. I would have you know how great our sufferings were in Asia, even beyond our own strength to bear them, and such as put me in expectation of death.

9. But we had the sentence of death in our selves, that we should not trust in our selves, but in God which raiseth the dead.

9. But God brought me to this expectation of death, that I might not trust to my present life, but unto God alone, and that as one that can raise the dead, and give them a better life hereafter, than that which they lay down for Christ.

10. Who delivered us from so great a death, and doth deliver: in whom we trust that he will yet deliver us.

10. You also helping together by prayer for us, that for the gift bestowed upon us by the means of many persons, thanks may be given by many on our behalf.

10. What hath delivered us from so terrible a kind of Death, and still doth deliver us, and we hope will do till our Work be done: But your Prayers must concur as the Means, that God also may have all your Thanks.

12. For our rejoicing is this, the testimony of our conscience, that in simplicity and godly sincerity, not with fleshly wisdom, but by the grace of God we have had our conversation in the world, and more abundantly to yourselves.

12. Note. 1. That a Christian must have rejoicing not only in Christ's Mercy, but in the Conscience of his own Sincerity. 2. Sincerity is much in Simplicity, and contrary to Self-seeking fleshly Wisdom. 3. It is God's Grace that giveth this Sincerity.

12. Where it is used in eminent Self-denial it may lawfully be glorified in against Detractors.

13. For we write none other things unto you, then what you read or acknowledge, and I trust you shall acknowledge even to the end.

13. For I willingly expose my self and Doctrine to your Trial, I write but the same things which you have received and own, and I hope will own even to the end.

14. As also you have acknowledged us in part, that we are your rejoicing, even as ye also are ours in the day of the Lord Jesus.

14. As I my self have been owned by you as your Comfort, though I have some Accusers, even as you are my Comfort when I render an Account of my Ministry to Christ.

15. And in this confidence I was minded to come unto you before, that you might have a second benefit.

15. And in confidence of this our mutual
Ch. 1. Paul excuses his not coming. Ch. 2.

16. And to pass you into Macedonia, and to come again out of Macedonia unto you, and of you to be brought on my way toward Judea.

16. When I carry the Contribution to Judea.

17. When therefore I was thus minded, did I use lightness? or the things that I purpose, do I purpose according to the flesh, that with me there should be yea, yea, and nay, nay. 18. But as God is true, our word toward you, was not yea and nay.

17, 18. What I purposed was with submission to God's Providence and Will. Had any cause then to accuse me of Levity and Falshood in my Promises, as if my Word were not to be credited? I take God to witness, that I spake my real Purpose in truth, though I was hindered from Performance.

19. For the Son of God, Jesus Christ, who was preached among you by us, even by me, and Silvanus, and Timotheus, was not yea and nay; but in him was yea. 20. For all the promises of God in him are yea, and in him amen, unto the glory of God by us.

19, 20. And more abusive is it hence to gather my Incredibility in preaching, and the uncertainty of my Doctrine: For Christ whom we preached is a certain Saviour, and his Promises all sure, and are sealed, confirmed, and proved to God's Glory, in the Power of our Ministry.

21. Now he which establisheth us with you in Christ, and hath anointed us, is God: 22. Who hath also sealed us, and given the earnest of his Spirit, which is his Pledge, and our Security.

23. Moreover, I call God for a record upon my soul, that to spare you I came not as yet unto Corinth.

23. I do by Oath call God himself to witness, that my not coming yet to you, was not out of any such Falshood, Levity, or Self-respect as my Accusers intimated, but I delayed, as foreseeing how unpleasing it would be to have exercised the Severity among you, which your Sin, before Repentance, required.

24. Not for that we have dominion over your faith, but are helpers of your joy: for by faith ye stand.

24. Not that we are Lord's over your Faith, or have any power to change it, but our Preaching and Discipline is to help your Joy by casting out Sin, and by establishing you in Faith, in and by which you must stand and live.

CHAP. II.

1. But I determined this with myself, that I would not come again to you in heaviness.

2. For if I make you sorry, who is he then that maketh me glad, but the same which is made sorry by me?

1, 2. But the true cause of my delay to come to you, was, that having reproved you for many Sins, which required sharper Censure if you had not disowned them, I was not forward to grieve you by such displeasing Work, and saith to hear of your Repentance. For your Grief is my own; and none can take it from me, but your selves, by your Repentance.

3. And I wrote this same unto you, left when I came, I should have sorrow from them of whom I ought to rejoice, having confidence in you all, that my joy is the joy of you all.

3. And I gave you my Reproof by a Letter, that it might cause that Reformation which might prevent my Sorrow when
Ch. 2. The Success of Paul’s Preaching. Ch. 2.

I came my self for I ought to have joy in you, as I hope also my joy is yours.

4. For out of much affliction and anguish of heart, I wrote unto you with many tears; not that ye should be grieved, but that ye might know the love which I have more abundantly unto you.

5. For I was far from insulting over you, or defacing your hurt, that I performed that necessary part of my Office with great grief and anguish, and wrote to you with many tears; not delighting to grieve you, but to shew my Love for your Reformation and Salvation.

5. But if any have caused grief, he hath not grieved me, but in part: that I may not overcharge you all.

6. But the Grief which I had by the Sin of some particular Persons, I am far from charging on all the Church.

6. Sufficient to such a man is this punishment, which was inflicted of many.

7. The Churches Confiscation and Rejection of such a Sinner, is as much Punishment as I judged meet.

7. So that contrariwise, ye ought rather to forgive him, and comfort him, lest perhaps such a one should be swallowed up with overmuch sorrow.

8. But now he is penitent, ye ought to forgive, and comfort him with the notice of Pardoning Mercy from God, lest too much sorrow overweigh him.

8. Wherefore I beseech you, that ye would confirm your love towards him.

9. For to this end also did I write, that I might know the proof of you, whether ye be obedient in all things.

9. I wrote to you to cast him out, to exercise your Obedience: and so now do I take him in.

10. To whom ye forgive any thing, I forgive also: for if I forgave any thing, to whom I forgave it, for your sakes forgave it, in the person of Christ.

11. Left Satan should get an advantage of us; for we are not ignorant of his devices.

11. For we know that Satan hath his Strategems, and would turn our Justice and Discipline to our hurt, either by much dejecting the Sinner, or by expatriating and dividing the Church; and we would not be over-reached by him.

12. Furthermore, when I came to Troas to preach Christ’s gospel, and a door was opened unto me of the Lord. 13. I had no rest in my spirit, because I found not Timotheus my brother: but taking my leave of them, I went from thence into Macedonia.

12. At Troas I had great Encouragement in my Ministry; but not hearing of you by Timotheus, disquieted me, &c.

13. Now thanks be unto God, which always causeth us to triumph in Christ, and maketh manifest the favour of his knowledge by us in every place.

14. To God I give thanks, who causeth me to rejoice in the Success of my Ministry for Christ; and wheresoever I come communicateth to me the Knowledge of his Gospel.

15. For we are unto God a sweet favour of Christ, in them that are layed, and in them that perish.

16. To
Ch. 3. Spirit II. Corinthians. and Letter. Ch. 3.

16. To the one we are the favour of death unto death; and to the other the favour of life unto life:

15, 16. For our Service to God is an acceptable Sacrifice, for the sake of Christ, both about them that are saved, and them that perish; to them that accept and reject the Gospel to their own destruction, and them that are converted and saved by it: For God will be glorified in both, and accepteth our Ministry to both, notwithstanding the various success.

16. And who is sufficient for these things?

17. For we are not as many, which corrupt the word of God: but as of sincerity, but as of God, in the sight of God we speak in Christ.

16, 17. So great is this Work, that neither I nor any is sufficient for it, in our own strength, without God's suitable Help and Grace. But I have the Conscience of my Sincerity, that I do not as do the Corinthians of the Word of God; but I speak the things of Christ in truth, as God inspired me, and as in his sight.

CHAP. III.

1. Do we begin again to commend ourselves? or need we, as some others, epistles of commendation to you, or letters of commendation from you?

1. And seeing the Reputation of our Persons is so needful to the Ends of our Ministry, let me expostulate with you, why you should hearken to them who make it needful to vindicate our selves? Am I a Stranger to you? Do I need, as some others, to be recommended to you by other Mens Letters? Or by your Letters to be recommended to other Churches? Do I not bring with me the Proof of mine Apostleship?

2. Ye are our epistle written in our hearts, known and read of all men:

2. Your own Conversion by my Ministry, which is the rejoicing of my Heart, is more than a Commendatory Epistle; and this may be read of all that know you.

3. For as much as ye are manifestly declared to be the epistle of Christ, ministrated by us, written not with ink, but with the Spirit of the living God; not in tables of Stone, but in fleshly tables of the hearts.

3. For your Conversion openly proved, that you are as it were Christ's own Epistle by our Ministry, written by the quickening Spirit of the Living God, and not with ink; nor as Moses's Law, on Tables of Stone; but on your very Hearts. And therefore, as you are the Epistle or Testimony of the Work of Christ, so of me, as his Minister.

4. And such trust have we through Christ to God-ward: 5. Not that we are sufficient of our selves to think any thing as of our selves; but our sufficiency is of God.

4. 5. It is of God that I have this Confidence and Glorifying: For be it from me to think that I have any such Sufficiently of myself, to convert Souls; but my Sufficiency and the Success is all of God.

6. Who also hath made us able ministers of the new testament, not of the letter, but of the spirit: for the letter killeth, but the spirit giveth life.

6. It is he that hath made me an able Minister of the New Covenant, not a Preacher of the Law of Moses written in Stone, but of the Gospel of Christ, who dispenseth us forth by his Spirit, and giveth his Spirit by our Ministry: For the Law of Moses curseth Sinners, and sheweth them Sin, and condemneth them: But the Spirit of Christ doth quicken them, and kill their Sin, and lead them in the way of Life.

7. But if the ministration of death written and ingraven in Stones was glorious, so that the children of Israel could not steadfastly behold the face of Moses, for the glory of his countenance, which glory was to be done away;

7. But if that Ministry of Moses, which by consequence was of Death, (or of a Law that condemned, but gave not the Spirit of Life;) written and engraven by God in Stones, was accompanied with so great
great Glory, that the Israelites could not endure to look upon the Face, for the Glory of his Condescension, which yet is now done away.

8. How shall not the Ministration of the Spirit be rather glorious?

8. Must not the more excellent Ministry of a durable Gospel, by which God giveth Men his Spirit, be more glorious? (though we the Ministers seem contemptible.)

9. For if the Ministration of a condemning Law be glory, much more doth the Ministration of righteousness exceed in glory.

9. The difference between the different Glory of the Ministry: For if Moses' Ministration of a condemning Law was Glory, our Ministration of a justifying, saving, Gospel-Covenant must needs exceed his Ministry in true Glory.

10. For even that which was made glorious, had no glory in this respect, by reason of the glory that excelleth.

10. For as a greater Light maketh a lesser seem as none, so the Mosaic Ministry of the Law had as it were, no Glory, being clouded by the Glory of the Gospel.

11. For if that which is done away was glorious, much more that which remaineth is glorious.

11. For if the Law of Moses (considered formally as such, and given to the Jews to rule their Commonwealth, and lead them to Christ) which was to cease when the Gospel came, to which it was a Schoolmaster, was yet given in Glory; much more is the Gospel, which is to continue, and its Ministration glorious.

12. Seeing then that we have such hope, we use great plainness of speech.

12. Wonder not then that we speak boldly to you, when we can shew such Authority.

13. And not as Moses, which put a vail over his face, that the children of Israel could not steadfastly look to the end of that which is abolished.

13. We do not as Moses veil our Faces, signifying that the Israelites could not well look to the true End and Meaning of their own Law, which is Christ, to whom by Types is pointed them; nor see that it was to be abolished by his better Covenant, as it now is. We speak freely to you with open Face.

14. But their minds were blinded: for until this day remaineth the same vail untaken away, in the reading of the old Testament; which vail is done away in Christ.

14. But the Minds of the unbelieving Jews were blinded, and to this day the Veil remaineth by this their Blindness, so that they understand not the End and Design of the Old Testament when they read it. But it's taken away by Christ to true Believers.

15. But even unto this day, when Moses is read, the vail is upon their heart.

15. Their Unbelief sheweth us, that the Veil and Blindness is on them to this day.

16. Nevertheless when it shall turn to the Lord, the vail shall be taken away.

16. But when they shall be converted to Christianity, the Veil shall be taken away, and they shall understand the Meaning and Tendency of the Law.

17. Now the Lord is that Spirit: and where the Spirit of the Lord is, there is liberty.

17. And as the Letter doeth but point unto the Spirit, without which it doth but kill, so it is Christ who is that Spirit which is the Summ and End of the Letter and Types: And where the Spirit of the Lord is, there is Freedom and Power of Speech, as well as Deliverance: And therefore we use that Freedom with you.

18. But we all with open face, beholding as in a glass the glory of the Lord, are changed into the same image, from glory to glory, even as by the Spirit of the Lord.

19. And
Annotations on Chap. 3.

And to all true Christians, not veiled as the Jews, but with open Face, in the open Light, though yet but as in a Glass, beheld the Glory of the Lord; and by our Spiritual Renovation are changed into the Image of Christ, from one Degree of Glory to another, by the Spirit of the Lord, who will perfect his Work.

ANNOTATIONS.

The fear of favouring Antinomianism hath tempted some to pervert this Chapter, about the abolishing of Mose's Law. I know of no Man that hath written so much against the Antinomians as I have done, nor with so much suceed, in cutting down their Libertine Errors in this Land. And yet I abhor running into the contrary Extreme. And therefore I say, that it is evident to any unprejudiced considering Reason, that Paul here affirneth, That the very Law written in Stone is abolished and done away. To say, It is only the Glory of the Burning Mount, or of Mose's Face, that is done away, is plainly contrary to Ver. 7, 9, 10, 11, 13. I will not tire the Reader with Arguments from so plain Words. The Truth is this:

1. The Law of Nature is not done away by Christ, but made part of his own Law, into whose Hands that and all things are given.

2. The Ten Commandments, except the Preface, and a Word or two in the Second Commandment, and the Determination of the Seventh Day in the Fourth Commandment, are the Common Law of Nature.

3. Christ also hath expressly made them his Law, by reciting them preceptively: And so the bless all Christians now, as the Law of Nature, and the Law of Christ.

4. By God giving the Jews their Laws, gave us Directions to know in the like Cases what is right or wrong to us.

5. But formally, as it was God's Law delivered by Mose to the Jews, it binds us, and it's done away.

For, 1. It never, as such, bound any but the Jews; and the few Prophets among them. For it was never promulgated to the World: And even the Decalogue was political, and made for that Common-wealth. And all the World was not bound to turn Jews, nor to dwell or come into a remote Country, no bigger than half England.

2. The Jews own Commonwealth is dissolved, and so are their peculiar Laws.

3. The Apostle expressly faith, That the Law written in Stone, that was glorious, is done away, ver. 7, and 11, 13, compared.

4. Mose was no Ruler or Mediator to the whole World.

5. If one part of Mose's Law, as such, bind, then all of it bindeth, a quaterni ad unum; and so we must turn Jews.

6. Paul expressly nameth Sabbaths as abolished; that is, A Day of Ceremonial Rest, which the Fourth Commandment ordaineth as a Type of Spiritual Rest by Christ. The Summ is, That we are bound to the Law commonly called Moral, as it is the Law of Nature, and of Christ, but not formally, as the Law given the Jews by Mose, or as written in Stone.

CHAP. IV.

1. Therefore seeing we have this ministry, as we have received mercy, we faint not.

2. Therefore having received a more honourable Ministry than that of Mose, God's Mercy encourageth us, and keepeth us from fainting in our Labours and Sufferings.

3. But have renounced the hidden things of dishonesty, not walking in craftiness, nor handling the word of God deceitfully, but, by manifestation of the truth, commending
mending our selves to every man's conscience in the light of God.

2. But have renounced those things which cannot endure the Light, left they should be ashamed, but are craftily carried on in the dark; nor do we use deceiving Arts in handling the Word of God, but in the open Light, by Evidence of Truth, we expose our selves to trial, and expect Success.

3. But if our gospel be hid, it is hid to them that are lost:

4. So that if our Preaching be not yet understood and believed, it is not for want of our clear Delivery, but from the miserable Case of lost Uncapable Hearers.

4. In whom the god of this world hath blinded the minds of them which believe not, left the light of the glorious gospel of Christ, who is the Image of God, should shine unto them.

5. Because the Devil, by the love of worldly things, ruling the hearts of worldly Men, hath blinded them, that they may not believe the Gospel, and see that Glory which shineth in Christ, who is the Image of God.

6. For we preach not our selves, but Christ Jesus the Lord; and our selves your servants for Jesus' sake.

7. But we have this treasure in earthen vessels, that the excellency of the power may be of God, and not of us.

8. We are troubled on every side, yet not distressed; we are perplexed, but not in despair;

9. Persecuted, but not forsaken; cast down, but not destroyed;

9. We are many ways troubled, but not brought to any extreme distress in straits, but not in despair; persecuted by Men, but not forsaken of God; cast down low, and yet upheld, and not destroyed.

10. Always bearing about in the body, the dying of the Lord Jesus, that the life also of Jesus might be made manifest in our body.

10. We still bear in our Bodies a mortifying Conformity to our Suffering dying Lord, that our delivered Bodies also might have some Conformity to his Life, by whom we live, and whom we preach.

11. For we which live, are always delivered unto death for Jesus' sake, that the life also of Jesus might be made manifest in our mortal flesh.

11. For we that yet live are in continual danger of death by Persecutors, for Jesus' sake: that we might be Emblems of Christ's Refutation and Life, and a Proof that he liveth, who preferreth us, while we preach that blessed Life which he possesseth, and hath purchased and promised.

12. So then death worketh in us, but life in you.

12. So that in our Sufferings Christ's Death is resembled; but his Life in your Conversion and Preservation.

13. We having the same spirit of faith, according as it is written, I believed, and therefore have I spoken:
4. The Saints in Heaven believe, and therefore speak.

5. But we have the same Spirit of Faith you have, and therefore say with David, that we speak because we believe.

14. Knowing that he which raised up the Lord Jesus shall raise up also by Jesus, and shall present us with you.

15. For all things are for your joy, that the abundant grace might through the thanksgiving of many, redound to the glory of God.

16. For which cause we faint not, but though our outward man perish, yet the inward man is renewed day by day.

17. For our light affliction, which is but for a moment, worketh for us a far more exceeding and eternal weight of glory.

18. While we look not at the things which are seen, but at the things which are not seen: for the things which are seen are temporal, but the things which are not seen are eternal.

19. But we intend no worldly End, nor by our Eyes and Mind on these transient things, which now are here seen; but on the Glory and Kingdom which is unseen: For the things which are seen are temporal, unstable, and fly away; and therefore are not to be much regarded, but the things which are now so in vision, are unchangeable and everlasting.

CHAP. V.

1. For we know, that if our earthly house of this tabernacle were dissolved, we have a building of God, an house not made with hands, eternal in the heavens.

2. For by Faith we know, that if our Bodies, which are as a Tent or Tabernacle to the Soul, were dissolved, we have in the Heavens a building of God's providing for the Blessed, not like our Houses here made by Man, but Celestial and Everlasting.

Note 1. That Faith is a sort of Knowledge: We know what God Faith is true and we know this to be his Word.

2. That our Happiness will not be only in the New Earth, and at the Resurrection, but it is a Dwelling in Heaven, now existent, and such as shall be everlasting; And therefore no hope of Christ's Reign on Earth, should take down our Hopes and Desires of Heaven.

3. For in this we groan earnestly, desiring to be clothed upon with our House which is from Heaven; 3. If so be that being clothed, we shall not be found naked.

4. For in this Body we are under a constant uneasiness, which maketh us groan with earnest desire to be better clothed, even with the Incorruptible Celestial Glory: For when Death doth clothe us, we shall not be found naked and destitute, (or, as some expound it, So be it we be not found as Adam, naked in our Guilt, when we enter into the future State.)

5. For we that are in this tabernacle, do groan, being burdened: not for that we would be unclothed, but clothed upon, that mortality
mortality might be swallowed up of life.

4. For our Bursars in this Body are so great, as make us groan: not that we desire Death, as Death; or to be unhoused, or without Clothing to the Soul: but we would be better clothed with a Heavenly Glory, than that which is Mortal may be swallowed up by Immortal Glory.

5. Now he that hath wrought us for the self-same thing, is God, who also hath given unto us the earnest of the Spirit.

5. And we have good Evidence for the certainty of this Hope: for God himself, who doth nothing in vain, hath made and formed us hereunto: It is he that gave us Immortal Souls, and Faculties to prepare for a better Life: And it is he that hath redeemed us to it, and hath promised it, and provided and commanded us the Means that lead to it, and hath given us by his Spirit those holy Affections, Desires, and Endeavours which are the Earnest of it, and which he will not frustrate.

6. Therefore we are always confident, knowing that whilst we are at home in the body, we are absent from the Lord: 7. (For we walk by faith, not by sight)

6, 7. Therefore we go on in the Confidence and Boldness which becometh Believers, being above the Fear of Death; knowing, that while we dwell here in these Bodies, we are absent from the Glory where God is fully manifested to the Blest: For it is not things seen which are the Motives, Hopes, and Comfort of our Lives, but it's things believed and unseen.

8. We are confident, I say, and willing rather to be absent from the body, and to be present with the Lord.

8. I say, we are bold and comfortably confident in all our Labours and danger of Death, and rather willing to go from the Body, and to be at home or present with the Lord.

9. Therefore we labour, that whether present or absent we may be accepted of him.

9. Whether we shall yet live or die, we leave to God: but it's our earnest desire, care, and labour, that whether we live here or die, or whatever we are, we may please God, and be accepted by him.

10. For we must all appear before the judgment-seat of Christ, that every one may receive the things done in his body, according to that he hath done, whether is be good or bad.

10. For, we must all appear at the judgment-seat of Christ, where all that have done will be brought to light, and every Man shall be sentenced and rewarded according as he hath lived and done in the Body, whether is it be good or evil, according to that Law which pardoneth penitent Believers.

11. Knowing therefore the terror of the Lord, we persuade men; but we are made manifest unto God, and I trust also are made manifest in your consciences.

11. It is the knowledge of the terror of the Lord, and how woful it will be, if we be found there unjustified under guilt, and sentenced to Damnation, which causeth us to make so much ado in the World, to persuade Men to believe and repent, that they may be saved: And God, that knoweth our Hearts and Ways, will justify us herein, and I hope so do your convinced Consciences.

12. For we commend not our selves again unto you, but give you occasion to glory on our behalf, that you may have somewhat to answer them which glory in appearance, and not in heart.

12. I say not all this to get your Praise by my self-commendation, but to give you the Matter of an Answer to them that would draw you from the Truth, by drawing you into a deceit of us that were your first Teachers, and by boasting of themselves by outward appearances, without an answerable inward Worth.

13. For whether we be beside our selves, it is to God; or whether we be sober, it is for your cause.

13. And
18. And all things are of God, who hath reconciled us to himself by Jesus Christ, and hath given to us the ministry of reconciliation.

18. The Divine Revelation and the Divine Nature in us, now causeth us to mind and use all things as they belong to God, and as they are all Of Him, and By Him, and To Him, and to overlook comparatively Carnal Interest: and as reconciled, and brought home to God by Jesus Christ, and placing all our Interest and Hopes in him, who also hath committed to us this Ministry, to draw home the World into this reconciled State.

19. To wit, that God was in Christ, reconciling the world unto himself, not imputing their trespasses unto them; and hath committed unto us the word of reconciliation.

19. To tell them, that it was God himself that sent Christ to redeem us, and was in Christ, reconciling the lapsed World to himself, by the Doctrine, Merits, and Sacrifice of Christ, which was performed by his gracious Will for that end; purchasing their Pardon, and not using them as their Sin deserved, but giving them an Act of Oblivion, on condition of Believing Acceptance, and hath committed to us the Ministry, to preach this Reconciliation to the World.

20. Now then, we are ambassadors for Christ, as though God did beseech you by us: we pray you in Christ's stead, be ye reconciled to God.

20. By all this they that are in Christ are ambassadors, even as though God did beseech you by Christ, as his Ambassadors, to persuade them to believe in Christ. As though God himself did beseech you by us his Messengers, we pray you in Christ's stead, who is the Prince and Great Apostle from the Father, to be reconciled to God, even thankfully to accept...
Annotations on Chap. 5.

1. The Socinians strive hard to distort the first part of this Chapter, as if it spoke of no Heavenly House till the Resurrection: Their first notion is, because domicile is opposed to the Body here, and therefore it must mean the future Body. But 1, by [the Tabernacle of our Earthly House] Paul quickened in us, to obtain both the Body and Earth together, our present worldly state in the Field. 2. Were it otherwise, yet their conclusion would not follow: For the Heavenly State of Glory without a Body may be called our House as contradistinct to this Body. 3. For is this objection any thing to the Old Fathers, and some pretexts Divines (as Dr. Scott, &c.) who think that departed Souls have a pure sort of Bodies above, to us invisible, either taking with them some terribleness, ignesius Spiritus signis, or passing into some spirit vehicle there; as even Mithraic thought, and others, who yet assert that Souls themselves are immaterial.

2. Their second reason is from v. 2. because it is called the House which is from Heaven, and not which is in Heaven: But, if the Substance, Matter, or thing of which another thing is made, as we say, both things are made from it, or of Earth, Stone, Iron, Silver, &c. So here the House doth necessarily signify no more, but that our House or Building after Death shall be Heavenly, that is, of Heavenly Substance, Quality, and State.

3. And the context doth confute the Perverters: For 1. The first verse intimates that we shall have the Eternal Building in Heaven, when the Tabernacle is dissolved; for the conditional is intimateth the time.

2. Verse 3. signifies, that we shall not be found naked, which none could suspect after the Resurrection that believed it, but the putting off the Body might make Men fear.

3. What else can be meant v. 6, 8. by being absent from the Lord while we are in the Body, and being absent from the Body, and present with the Lord? And v. 9. by being accepted of him as the height of our Ambition when we die?

II. Verse 19. is mistaken by many, as if by [the world] were meant only [the East] because Reconciliation and not imputing Transgressions are mentioned: But the Text most plainly tells us of a General Reconciliation and non-imputation to Mammon and a particular to Believers. God did so far reconcile and forgive the World, as not to deal with them severly on the terms of the Violated Law of Innocency, but to give them a Redeemer and a Law of Grace, and a Stated Pardon of all Sin, and free gift of Salvation by Christ on condition of Believing Acceptance; and that is commonly said to be grace, which if freely by a deed of Gift conferred, though Acceptance be implied of every in the Condition of repentance, and a Man may yet wilfully refuse it be negled so; yet, such Conditions are so naturally necessary, that they use not to be expressed. Yet his being in actual (but only conditionally) possessed of Pardon and Reconciliation, till that Condition be performed: Yet God was forgiving them off his part, and was not imputing Sin and unworthiness of Rejection to them, when he gave them a Saviour. And yet the work of the Ministry remaineth, even to instruct Men to believe and accept this Pardon and Reconciliation as offered, and it is then actually theirs, when they thus accept it. To say, that then their Faith both was and Christ's did, of God's Grace, is a plain Cavil. Their Faith or Acceptance is no efficient cause, at all of their Pardon of justification: It is but a necessary Required Subjection; He that trusts the Window cannot darkness: But it's for him to say, that he, that opens it, is shut more than the Sun to cause light; which
CHAP. VI.

1. Where we worketh together with him, believe you also, that ye receive not the graces of God in vain.

2. We then whose office it is, to believe Christ for your salvation, believe you that ye take care that all the mercy which he hath shewed you in the Gospel, and you profess to have received, be not in vain, and frustrate by any deceit.

3. Giving no offence in any thing, that the ministry be not blamed:

4. But in all things approving our selves as the ministers of God, in much patience, in afflictions, in necessities, in distresses.

5. In stripes, in imprisonments, in tumults, in labours, in watchings, in fasting.

6. By pureness, by knowledge, by long-suffering, by kindness, by the holy Ghost, by love unfeigned.

7. By the word of truth, by the power of God, by the armour of righteousness on the right hand and on the left.

8. By honour and dishonour, by evil report and good report:

9. As deceivers, and yet true;

10. As unknown, and yet well known; as dying, and behold, we live; as chastened, and not killed; as sorrowful, yet alway rejoicing; as poor, yet making many rich; as having nothing, and yet possessing all things.

11. Our life is made up of seeming but not real Contradictions. As Deceivers use Craft to hurt Men, we use our Wit and Skill (or Wiles) to save Men: and yet we deliver nothing: but the truth: Our Spirit and Spiritual Condition is unknown; and yet, our Out-side known to many. We daily are exposed to the danger of Death, and die daily; and yet you see we are alive. We are both chastened, and yet not killed, we are under many Sorrows in the Flesh; and yet we continually rejoice in God, we are poor, and yet God with us to make many rich in Grace; we have nothing, and yet by Faith all the World is ours, as ordered by God and used by us for our Spiritual Good. Love maketh all other Mens Efforts comfortable to us as our own, and God useth all things for our good.

12. O ye Corinthians, our mouth is open unto you, our heart is enlarged. Ye are not straitened in us, but ye are straitened in your own bowels.
14. And Justice requireth, that (as Children to a Father) your Love and Kindness be large towards us, and that the Fruits of our Ministry in you be not narrow and defective.

15. And what concord hath Christ with Belial? or what part hath he that believeth, with an infidel?

16. And what agreement hath the temple of God with idols? for ye are the temple of the living God; as God hath said, I will dwell in them, and walk in them; and I will be their God, and they shall be my people.

17. Wherefore come out from among them, and be ye separated, faith the Lord, and touch not the unclean thing; and I will receive you. 18. And will be a Father unto you, and ye shall be my sons and daughters, faith the Lord Almighty.

19. Wherefore go not unto the idols Temples, and symbolize not with them in Religion to avoid Persecution; but come out from among them, as a holy People segregated to the Lord, and, despite not your fellow with their unclean things, and then God will own you as his Sons and Daughters, while you are pure, and cleave to him.

I. Note, That this Command for the Church to avoid Communion with Idolaters and Infidels, is permitted by them that reign to forbid Communion with Christians and their Churches, if they do but differ in some tolerable Opinion or Practice from them, which their confounded Ignorance will falsely call Idolatry. They call such Differences or Defects False Worship, and then say we must not join in False Worship; Whereas every faultless Member of Worship may be called False, because it is so far disagreeable to the Rule; And, no, Many offers any Worship to God, that is not False, if all Faultiness be Falsehood. But it's no False Worship that will allow us to separate from Churches or Christians, rather than they separate from Christ and Christ disown them for them that Faultiness, or that they make any Sin to be necessary to any part of their Communion. They were very foul Sins, even in Worship, that the Corinthians were guilty of; and yet none was commanded to come out from them.

And much more are those Passions displeasing to God, who cast out and violently persecute good Christians, that do not avoid, as sinful, some Circumstances or Forms which their Canons impose as things Indifferent, or made Necessary merely by themselves.

Yet is it not the Name of a Christian Church that will make it lawful for us to Communicate in Idolatry, or to commit any Sin for their Communion, or to own such Worship as we know God reprobeth: But as he pardonth the faulty Imperfections of other Men and Churches Worship, and
of our way, so must we bear with our own, and the Churches tolerable Failings, so far as we cannot cure them.

II. They are mistaken that think it is unjust marrying with Infidels, which the Apostle here only or chiefly meaneth. The Word translated [wed] signifies here rather inclined towards them, as the Balance is by Weight: And that which Paul chiefly pleads against all along, is that Rev. 2 & 3, called the Doctrine of Jezebel and the Nicolaitians, which God hates, which taught the Lawfulness of Fornication, and eating things offered to Idols; and this on presence of greater Wisdom and Revelation than Paul had.

CHAP. VII.

1. Having therefore these promises (dearly beloved) let us cleanse our selves from all filthines of the flesh and spirit, perfecting holiness in the fear of God.

2. Having these Promises, That God will be your God, and own you, and dwell in you, on this Condition, that you keep your selves pure to him, from Fleshy Vice and Idol-Communion; let us avoid all Defilement of the Flesh, by Fornication, or outward symbolizing with Idolaters; and of the Spirit, by entertaining the Doctrines of Seducers, or suffering our Hearts to depart from God.

3. Receive us: we have wronged no man, we have corrupted no man, we have defrauded no man.

4. And let not seducing Teachers turn you from receiving the Ministry of us by whom you were converted: We have not done by you as they do; we have wronged none, corrupted none, nor covetously over-reached or defrauded any.

5. I speak not this to condemn you: for I have said before, that you are in our hearts to die and live with you.

6. It is not cenobiously, or for your reproach, that I say this; for you are dear unto me.

4. Great is my boldness of speech toward you: great is my glorying of you: I am filled with comfort, I am exceeding joyful in all our tribulation.

5. It is my Love that makes me use so much freedom of Speech to you, and make my boast of you. I am full of Comfort and Joy, to think of your continuance in the Faith.

5. For when we were come into Macedonia, our flesh had no rest, but we were troubled on every side; without were fightings, within were fears.

6. And our Condition needed such Consolation: for in Macedonia our flesh had no rest from Labour and Trouble, we had Persecution and Opposiion without, and Fears within.

6. Nevertheless, God that comforteth those that are cast down, comforted us by the coming of Titus:

7. But God who comforteth them that are humbled, made the coming of Titus a Comfort to me.

7. And not by his coming onely, but by the consolatiion wherewith he was comforted in you, when he told us your earnest desire, your mourning, your fervent mind toward me; so that I rejoiced the more.

7. Not so much for his Company and Wealth, as for the glad Tidings which he brought of you, even of your earnest desire of me, your sorrow for the Sin which I reproved, and your Zeal in my just Vindication against Accusers, which were joy for you.

8. For though I made you sorry with a letter, I do not repent, though I did repent: for I perceive that the same epistle made (K k) you
you sorry, though it were but for a season.

8. For though, till I heard of the success, I was troubled my self that I must trouble you; yet now I repent not of it: for I perceive, that the Sorrow which it caused in you was but short, till the reproved Sinner did repent.

9. Now I rejoice, not that ye were made sorry, but that ye sorrowed to repentance: for ye were made sorry after a godly manner, that ye might receive damage by us in nothing.

9. And now I rejoice, not in your Grief, as though (for Sorrow is but to prepare for Joy by Reformation) but that your Sorrow was godly, and wrought Repentance; which is so necessary to Forgiveness and Salvation, that I am satisfied my plain dealing with you was not to your damage, but to your gain.

10. For godly sorrow worketh repentance to salvation not to be repented of: but the sorrow of the world worketh death.

10. For godly Sorrow, as it is commanded of God for your own good, so it worketh Repentance and recovery from Sin, and so the living of the Sinner: But the Sorrow for Lollies and Croffles, which proceeded from the overmuch love of the World, is sinful; and as it doth but hurt the Soul, so doth it the Body, and hasting Death.

11. For behold, this selfsame thing that ye sorrowed after a godly sort, what carefulness it wrought in you, yea, what clearing of your selves. yea, what indignation, yea, what fear, yea, what vehement desire, yea, what zeal, yea what revenge, in all things ye have approved your selves to be clear in this matter.

11. Of this you have now experience in your selves; for your godly Sorrow for the Scandal that rose among you, hath wrought great carefulness to search out the Cause, and to reform it; great care to clear your selves from partaking in the guilt; great indignation against the Sin; great fear of God; lest he should avenge it; great desire after a Reformation; great Zeal against any Church-pollution in the things of God; yea, and just Revenge on the Offenders by way of Penitence, and on your selves for any degree of guilt: so that you have by all means shewed, that you are clear from the guilt.

12. Wherefore though I wrote unto you, I did it not for his cause that had done the wrong, nor for his cause that suffered wrong, but that our care for you in the sight of God might appear unto you.

12. And my sharp writing to you was not meerly to right one Man against the Injuries of another, as an Act of Justice between Man and Man; but it was in love to you, and care of your Souls, that you might not be found guilty before God.

13. Therefore, we were comforted in your comfort: yea, and exceedingly the more joyed we for the joy of Titus, because his spirit was refreshed by you all.

13. Therefore in these fruits which tend to your own comfort, I also am comforted; to which much is added by the Comfort that Titus had among you.

14. For if I have boasted any thing to him of you, I am not ashamed; but as we spake all things to you in truth, even so our boasting which I made before Titus is found a truth.

14. For you have confirmed to him all the good which I Boastingly spake of you, so that I have no cause to be ashamed of it. But as I spake truly to you, so I did of you.

15. And his inward affection is more abundant toward you, whilst he remembereth the obedience of you all, how with fear and trembling you received him.

15. And he is greatly affected towards you, by finding you so obedient, and how you received him and his Message with a careful fear of God's displeasure, and the guilt of Sin.
16. I rejoice therefore that I have confidence in you in all things.
16. My expectation therefore of your Obedience, dispersing my fear of you, and increasing my confidence of your stability, doth increase my joy.

CHAP. VIII.

1. Moreover brethren, we do you to wit of the grace of God bestowed on the churches of Macedonia:

1. And I think it meet here to give you notice of the Grace of God on the Churches of Macedonia, which appeared in their willing Liberality in our Collections for Judea.

2. How that in a great trial of affliction, the abundance of their joy, and their deep poverty, abounded unto the riches of their Liberality.

2. How, that while they were themselves under a great Trial of Affliction, and in deep Poverty, yet they joyfully abounded in Liberality.

3. For to their power (I bear record) yea, and beyond their power, they were willing of themselves,

3. For they were voluntarily ready, even beyond their Power, which they extended to the unitioS.

4. Praying us with much intreaty, that we would receive the gift, and take upon us the fellowship of the ministering to the saints.

4. Praying us with much intreaty, that we would receive the gift, and take upon us the fellowship of the ministering to the saints.

5. Earnestly entreating us to receive their Contribution, and undertake the administering of it to the Saints at Jerusalem, as an Expression of their Communicating Love.

5. And thus they did, not as we hoped, but first gave their own selves to the Lord, and unto us by the will of God.

5. And in this they exceeded our hope, first giving themselves to God, and to us as his Ministers, as ready to help us with their Persons, as well as with their Purse.

6. Inasmuch that we desired Titus, that as he had begun, so he would also finish in you the same grace also.

6. And so we desired Titus, that as he had begun the motion of this Charity to you, he would be at the labour to travel to you, and bring it to perfection.

7. Therefore as ye abound in every thing, in faith, in utterance, and knowledge, and in all diligence, and in your love to us; see that ye abound in this grace also.

7. Therefore as you are a Church eminent for Gifts of Faith, Knowledge, Speech, Diligence, and Love to us, see that your charitable Contribution abound inanswerableness to your Gifts.

8. I speak not by commandment, but by occasion of the forwardness of others, and to prove the sincerity of your love.

8. I do not this as the Master of your Purses, by way of command; but I set before you the good Example of others, and I invite you to give this proof of the sincerity of your Love to me, and to the Brethren; (For Hypocrites will afford us a cheap sort of Love, but not a costly one).

9. For ye know the grace of our Lord Jesus Christ, that though he was rich, yet for your sakes he became poor, that ye through his poverty might be rich.

9. And what can be a stronger Motive to you, than the Example of Christ? who, though he was Lord of all the World, for our sakes lived in the Body, in the Condition of the Poor; and this was to procure us the Heavenly Riches: So that you receive him repestively, in relieving his Members; and you invite him, when you for sake your own Abundance for the good of others.

10. And herein I give my advice: for this is expedient for you who have begun before, not only...
Ch. 8. Paul commendeth II Corinthians, the willingness of Titus. Ch. 8.

to do, but also to be forward a year ago.

10. And I am the bolder herein to advise you, because you your selves have herein begun, and resolved to go on, a year ago; and therefore it is but agreeable to your own resolves.

11. Now therefore perform the doing of it; that as there was a readiness to will, so there may be a performance also out of that which you have.

11. Therefore now perform what then you readily resolved on, according to your ability.

12. For if there be first a willing mind, it is accepted according to that a man hath, and not according to that he hath not.

12. For if there be a true willingness, it will be performed according to a Man's ability, and God requireth no more, but accepteth the Will for that which we are unable for.

13. For I mean not that other men be eased, and you burdened:

14. But by an equality, that now at this time your abundance may be a supply for their want, that their abundance also may be a supply for your want, that there may be equality.

13, 14. Not that I would lay more on you than your proportion, to ease others: but that now you abound, you may supply their want; and that when you are in want, the abundance of others may supply your wants.

15. As it is written, He that had gathered much, had nothing over; and he that had gathered little, had no lack.

15. In which I may allude to what is said of the Israelites gathering Manna; [He that, & c. I Obey God, and you shall not want; and if you abound, what enjoy you of it more than they that have but Food and Raiment? God will reduce all his Servants to an Equality suitable to them severally, in the Use and End.

16. But thanks be to God, which put the same earnest care into the heart of Titus for you. 17. For indeed he accepted the exhortation, but being more forward, of his own accord he went unto you.

16, 17. I thank God that Titus was as forward to move you to this Work as I was, for he did not only yield to it at my request, but of his own accord was forward to go to you about it.

18. And we have sent with him the brother, whose praise is in the gospel, throughout all the churches:

18. And with him we sent Luke, whose Service for the Gospel hath made him honoured in all the Churches.

19. (And not that only, but who was also chosen of the Churches to travel with us with this grace which is administered by us to the glory of the same Lord, and declaration of your ready mind).

19. And who was chosen by the Churches to go with us in this Ministration of your Charity to the Jews, that God may have the Glory of this noticed Concord of Jews and Gentile Christians, and of your ready Minds to do good a Work.

20. Avoiding this, that no man should blame us in this abundance, which is administered by us:

21. Providing for honest things, not only in the fight of the Lord, but also in the fight of men.

20, 21. For I took care to avoid all occasion of suspicion, that I should detain any of this large Contribution to my self, or unfaithfully distribute it: Providing that all be done decently and blamelessly in the fight of Men, as well as Faithfully in the fight of God.

22. And we have sent with them our brother, whom we have oftentimes proved diligent in many things, but now much more diligent,
gent, upon the great confidence which I have in you.

22. And with them I have sent another Brother, whose Diligence I have oft tried, but now find him much more willing, being encouraged by my confidence of your forwardness.

23. Whether any do enquire of Titus, he is my partner, and fellow-helper concerning you: or our brethren be enquired of, they are the messengers of the churches, and the glory of Christ.

24. Wherefore shew ye to them, and before the churches, the proof of your love, and of our boasting on your behalf.

So far therefore regard them, as to let them see, and the Churches, that sent them, hear the Proof of your Love to me, and to all Saints, by your Liberality; and that I have not boasted of you in vain.

Note. 1. The Paul's Importance for this Collection sheweth that the Case was much altered, Space in Acts &c.; they sold all and laid at the Apostles' Feet, and had all things common. And as Men were quickly grown more cold, so that was not intended for a constant and universal Practice, but to shew with the Gift of Tongues, the marvellous degree of holy Love and Unity which the Holy Ghost was given to effect: For to continue it every where, would have disabled them all to do much future good with Riches, when all was gone. And perhaps the Christians at Jerusalem were then in greater want by that.

2. We see, that even among Christians costly Duties come hardly off, (thee Paul had not needed all this ado) even where Gifts and Parts are eminent.

3. And yet it is costly Duties of Charity that must prove the truth of our Faith and Love, which are dead if barren.

4. We see, that a Minister who seeth and obstinately to avoid being chargeable to any of his Hearers himself, left they condemne or suspect him as a Self-seeker, may yet put on confidence, and be bold and importunate in urging them to Charity for others, and Collections for the Service of the Church and Gospel.

**CHAP. IX.**

1. For as touching the mini-

2. fring to the Saints, it is

3. superfluous for me to write to you.

4. For I know the forwardness of your mind, for which I boaste of you to them of Macedonia, that Achaia was ready a year ago; and your zeal hath provoked very many.

5. But to use many Arguments with you, for the Duty of relieving the needy Saints in general, or for this Contribution in particular, I suppose it needless, you being your selves so forward to it, that I have boaste of your readiness a year ago, which hath quickened the Zeal of many others.

6. Yet have I sent the brethren, left our boasting of you should be in vain in this behalf; that, as I said, ye may be ready:

7. Yet to make sure, I have sent the Brethren, lest it be to do when I come, and my boasting of you fail.

8. Left haply if they of Macedonia come with me, and find you unprepared, we (that we say not, you) should be ashamed in this same confident boasting.

9. For I would not have them of Macedonia, if they come with me, by finding your Contribution unready, think that you are unwilling, to your dishonour and mine, that boaste of you.

Note. That it's lawful to use an honest Craft to draw Men to their Duty, 1. By engaging their Reputation in it: 2. And by affording them by just Praife.

5. Therefore I thought it necessary to exhort the Brethren, that they would go before unto (k k 3)
you, and make up beforehand your bounty, whereas ye had notice before, that the same might be ready as a matter of bounty, and not as of covetousness.

5. Therefore I sent these three Brethren, to desire you that it might be ready, (you having notice of it also heretofore,) that it may appear to be of willing liberality, and not extorted from covetous Men.

6. But this, I say, He which soweth sparingly, shall reap also sparingly; and he which soweth bountifully, shall reap also bountifully.

6. As to the Proportion, I will say this; All shall reap in that measure that they sow.

Note, That Paul's disclaiming Justification by Works, confineth with this Doctrine, That all Men shall be rewarded not only according to the Sincerity of their Hearts, but also according to the Degrees of their Obedient Will and Works.

7. Every man according as he purposeth in his heart, so let him give; not grudgingly, or of necessity: for God loveth a cheerful giver.

7. Let your Will command you in the proportion: Do it not grudgingly, and as urged and constrained against your Wills; but as you are truly willing: For God loveth a cheerful Giver, and not the outward Deed only, which is against or without the Will.

8. And God is able to make all grace abound towards you; that ye always having all sufficiency in all things, may abound to every good work:

8. And it should take off all unwillingness, to consider, that God is All-sufficient to give you by his Blessing such Abundance, that you shall always have enough to furnish you for Good Works, as well as to supply your own Necessities.

9. (As it is written, He hath dispersed abroad; he hath given to the poor: his righteousness remaineth for ever.

9. For God hath promised in his Description of the Righteous, Psal. 112. That he will so blest him that is charitable and liberal in Good Works, that he shall prosper, and have supply from God, for all that he requireth of him, and shall for ever be rewarded for it, as far that which is part of his Personal Righteousness.

10. Now he that ministrith seed to the lower, both minister bread for your food, and multiply your seed down, and increase the fruits of your righteousness.

10. And this is my Benediction and Prayer for you, That God, who giveth both Seed and Increase, will supply all your Wants, and blest your Liberality with the Increase of his Gifts, and the Fruits of your Righteousness to your selves.

11. Being enriched in everything to all bountifulness, which causeth through us thanksgiving to God.

11. That you may be enriched by him in all things, so as to feed your Bounty, which when we distribute, will make many thankful to God.

12. For the administration of this service, not only supplyth the want of the saints, but is abundant also by many thanksgivings unto God;

12. For the distribution of your Charity will not only supply the Saints Necessities, but also cause them to give thanks to God, who lendeth them his Mercies by the Hands of Men.

13. (Whiles by the experiment of this ministration, they glorifie God for your professed subjection unto the gospel of Christ, and for your liberal distribution unto them, and unto all men)

13. The distribution of your Gift will be a convincing Experiment to the Jews, that the Gentiles are converted to a loving Union with them, and are sincerely subject to the Gospel, and that your Faith is not barren, but effectual and fruitful.

14. And
Ch. 10. Paul's defence. II. Corinthians. against defeaters. Ch. 10.

14. And by their prayer for you, which long after you, for the exceeding grace of God in you.

14. And it will provoke thee to pray for you, who greatly value you, for the abundant Grace of God, which sheweth it self by such evident Fruits.

15. Thanks be unto God for his unspeakable gift.

15. And as Gifts and Grace, Wealth and willing Minds, are all the unspeakable Gifts of God; to him we return our chiefest Thanks.

CHAP. X.

Now I Paul my self beseech you, by the meekness and gentleness of Christ, who in presence am base among you, but being absent am bold toward you.

2. But I beseech you that I may not be bold when I am present, with that confidence wherewith I think to be bold against some which think of us, as if we walked according to the fifth.

1. 2. And having pleaded with you for the poor Christians in Judea, let me next speak for my self. Though some among you report, that my bold Speech to you is only by Letters, and that my Presence is inconsiderible, I will by this Letter also use the Meekness and Gentleness which is according to the Command and Example of Christ, in beseeching you not to put me to use that Boldness that else I must do against them that calumniate my Ministrity as Carnal and Self-seeking.

3. For though we walk in the fifth, we do not war after the fifth:

3. For though we yet dwell in the Body, our Ministrity and Life are not from Carnal Principles, to Carnal Ends, nor by Carnal Means.

4. (For the weapons of our warfare are not carnal, but mighty through God, to the pulling down of strong holds.)

4. For it is not Bibles, or Swords, or outward Violence, but more powerful Arms, by which we batter and pull down the Fortresses of Sin and Satan.

5. Casting down imaginations, and every high thing that exalteth it self against the knowledge of God, and bringing into captivity every thought to the obedience of Christ:

5. It is not Mens Estates or Bodies that we conquer by Fines, Imprisonments, or Captivity; but the Conceits, Opinions, and Imaginations of Mens Minds, the Logic of Cavillers, the Philosophy of Opposers, the Pride of Jews and Gentiles, and all their Misapprehensions of the Christian Verity, and Opposition against it, and bring their Thoughts and Minds into Submission to Christ.

6. And having, in a readiness to revenge all disobedience, when your obedience is fulfilled.

6. And tho we call not for Fire from Heaven to revenge our selves, and gratifie our Passions; yet when the Church is let in their Obedience, so that the Wheat may be separated from the Tares, God who hath furnished me with Authority, will not deny me Ability to inflict such Penalties as he judgeth fit for the Improudent, by delivering them to Satan.

7. Do ye look on things after the outward appearance? if any man trust to himself, that he is Christ's, let him of himself think this again, that as he is Christ's, even so are we Christ's.

7. Do you judge by Mens outward Appearance and Obedience, and judge of me by the meanness of my Garbs, and Bodily Sature, and Aspect? if it be Pretense of any Gifts or Authority from Christ, which puffeth up these Men, let them consider, whether we have not as much of thee from Christ to shew as they?
8. For though I should boast somewhat more of our authority, (which the Lord hath given us for edification, and not for your destruction) I should not be ashamed:

8. If I should say, that I can shew more authority from Christ than they can, I should not be ashamed, as unable to prove it: (Yet we pretend to none that is destructive and hurtful to the Church, or any of the Brethren, but only to such Power as is to edifie and do good.)

9. That I may not seem as if I would terrify you by letters. 10. For his letters (fay they) are weighty and powerful, but his bodily presence is weak, and his speech contemptible.

9. I will not seem to terrify you by Letters, contrary to what I say in presence; Though my Accusers say, that my Bodily Presence and Speech are contemptible, and not answerable to my Letters.

Note, That Tradition tells us, That Paul (according to his Name) was a Man of a very little Stature, and his Voice answerably small; and it may be that hence they raise this Report of his Presence and Speech.

11. Let such as one think this, that such as we are in word by letters, when we are absent, such will we be also in deed when we are present.

11. But let such believe, that when I come, my Deeds shall be as awful as my Words are.

Note, That the thing which Paul would have his Accusers fear, was, that by the miraculous Gift of the Holy Ghost they should speed as Elymes did.

12. For we dare not make our selves of the number, or compare ourselves with some that commend themselves: but they measuring themselves by themselves, and comparing themselves amongst themselves are not wise.

12. I will not imitate them in self-commendation and comparison: but it is their folly and self-deceit, to measure themselves by their own self-conceit, and compare themselves with their own Followers, not knowing the Grace of God in others.

13. But we will not boast of things without our measure, but according to the measure of the rule which God hath distributed to us, a measure to reach even unto you.

13. But I will not boast of any thing done beyond the Province and Measure of Gifts assigned and vouchsafed to us of God, as those that would reap the praise of other Mens Labours; but of that which God hath really done by us, of which your selves are part of our Witness.

14. For we stretch not our selves beyond our measure, as though we reached not unto you; for we are come as far as to you also, in preaching the gospel of Christ:

14. You know, that when I extend my boasting even to you, that I boast not of that which I never performed: For you are my Witnesses, as being the Fruits of my Ministry.

15. Not boasting of things without our measure. Thus is, of other mens labours; but having hope when your faith is increased, that we shall be enlarged by you according to our rule abundantly.

15. I boast not of Labour in another Mans Province, and of other Mens Performance (as these do.) But I hope that the increase of your Faith will be the increase of my Advantage, and of my Comfort and Reward, whoever helpeth you, it being the Fruit and Increase of the Seed which I sowed.

16. To preach the gospel in the regions beyond you, and not to boast in another man's line of things made ready to our hand.
16. I hope by your Increase to have the better opportunity to carry the Gospel beyond you, to the Regions that have not yet received it; and not to boast, as curing on other Men's Labours.

17. But he that glisteth, let him glory in the Lord.

18. For not he that commendeth himself is approved, but whom the Lord commendeth.

19. Self-commendation is no just Praise, (but a detraction and shame of Pride and Folly,) But it's God's Approbation and Praise which is our real Honour.

CHAP. XI.

1. Would to God you could bear with me a little in my folly; and indeed bear with me.
2. For I am jealous over you with godly jealousy: for I have espoused you to one husband, that I may present you as a chaste virgin to Christ.

3. But I fear, left by any means, as the serpent beguiled Eve through his subtlety, so your minds should be corrupted from the simplicity that is in Christ.

4. For if he that cometh, preacheth another Jesus whom we have not preached, or if ye receive another spirit, which ye have not received, or another gospel, which ye have not accepted, ye might well bear with him.

4. It is one Christ, one Spirit, and one Gospel, that we have preached, and you received: If your new pretended Teachers have another Christ, and Spirit, and Gospel to preach, and can give better Proof of what they say, than I have done for the Christ, Spirit, and Gospel which I have preached, let them shew it, and let them be born with and received.

5. For I suppose I was not a whit behind the very chiefest apostles. But though I be rude in speech, yet not in knowledge; but we have been throughly made manifest among you in all things.

6. I suppose that I have no way come short of those that are the most eminent Apostles: If my Speech be as mean and rude as they object, so is not my Knowledge, (which is the thing that they pretend to excel in.) But since I need not tell you of this, who have had the Proof of it in my Ministry to your selves.

7. Have
that I do, that I will do, that I may cut off occasion from them which define occasion, that wherein they glory, they may be found even as we.

11, 12. This is not, God knoweth, because I love you not; but because I know how some men watch for an occasion to accuse us, which I will cut off from them, that they may not have an advantage to boast on this account.

Note, That it's very like these Accusers of Paul were some rich Men, that complied with the Times for Interest, and took no Pay of the Churches; but deceived them freely, and reproached Paul as a poor indigent Fellow, that preached for Bread.

13. For such are false Apostles, deceitful workers, transforming themselves into the apostles of Christ.

13. For these false Apostles are deceitful Workers, pretending that they are Christ's Apostles, and acting as if they were such indeed.

Note, It's no wonder then if there be swarms of false Ministers, pretending to be the true Ministers of Christ.

14. And no marvel; for Satan himself is transformed into an angel of light.

14. And no marvel, when Satan does but teach them to do as he doth, who counterfeiteth an Angel of Light, and bringeth in Error and Sin, by bold pretending that it is Light, and extraordinary Knowledge and Vertue.

15. Therefore it is no great thing if his ministers also be transformed as the ministers of righteousness; whole end shall be according to their works.

15. Therefore it is not an incredible thing, that Men should be really the Devil's Ministers, animated and taught by him to do his Work, against the Interest of Christ, and Truth, and Godliness; and yet pretend to go beyond Christ's own Apostles in preaching Righteousness, Wisdom, and Godliness.

Note, That the Pretences of Truth, Orthodoxy, Righteousness, Free Grace, Unity, Peace, &c. are no sufficient Evidence of
of true Ministers. The Devil's Ministers may pretend them all, and may cry down Christ's Ministers as Carnal, Hereticks, Legal, Schismatics, etc.

16. I say again, Let no man think me a fool: if otherwise, yet as a fool receive me, that I may boast my self a little.

16. Take it not for Folly to vindicate my Ministry: But if ye do, yet hear me, try, and judge.

Note, That Paul meaneth, that Boasting is the usual mark of a Fool; but it is no Folly, when the Interest of God and Souls require it: It was seemingly, not really his Folly.

17. That which I speak. I speak not after the Lord, but as it were foolishly in this confidence of Boasting.

17. That which I speak of my self, I speak not as I do the Gospel by Inspiration; and I confess that materially it hath the appearance of Folly in ostentation.

18. Seeing that many glory after the flesh, I will glory also. 19. For ye suffer fools gladly, seeing ye your selves are wise. 20. For ye suffer if a man bring you into bondage, if a man devour you, if a man take of you, if a man exalt himself, if a man smite you on the face.

18, 19, 20. You can easily bear with a Fool, because you are wise your selves: So bear with me, while I do that necessarily, which they do vainly. You can bear with greater Provocations, even with them that would captivate you to Error and the Law, and would make a Prey of you, and make themselves your Lords and Masters, and abuse you.

21. I speak as concerning reproach, as though we had been weak: howbeit, wherein soever any is bold, (I speak foolishly,) I am bold also.

21. I speak of them that reproach me of contemptible Weakness: Though I confess, that Boasting usually signifies Folly, I will say, that I have as much as they to boast of.

22. Are they Hebrews? So am I: are they Israelites? So am I: are they the seed of Abraham? So am I: 23. Are they ministers of Christ? (I speak as a fool,) I am more: in labours more abundant, in stripes above measure, in prisons more frequent, in deaths oft.

22, 23. They boast that they are Hebrews, Israelites, Abraham's Seed, and Ministers of Christ: And am I not I too? Yea, though my Words be like those of a Fool, I say, that I have laboured and suffered more for Christ, by Stripes, Prisons, and daily dying, than they have done.

24. Of the Jews five times received I forty stripes save one. 25. Thrice was I beaten with rods, once was I stoned, thrice I suffered Shipwreck; a night and a day I have been in the deep:

24, 25. Scourged by the Jews to the utmost severity, beaten by the Romans, stoned by the Rabidi, thrice shipwreck'd, a Night and a Day in some darksome dangerous Passage at Sea (or a Dungeon so called, as some think.)

26. In journeying often, in perils of waters, in perils of robbers, in perils by mine own countrymen, in perils by the heathen, in perils in the city, in perils in the wilderness, in perils in the sea, in perils among false brethren; 27. In weariness and painfulness, in watchings often, in hunger and thirst, in fastings often, in cold and nakedness.

26, 27. Note, That the Sufferings which deter Carnal Men from Religion by Shame and Fear, are the Honour of Believers.

28. Be-
Ch. 11. Paul glorietb II. Corinthians. in Afflictions. Ch. 12.

28. Besides those things that are without, that which cometh upon me daily, the care of all the churches.

29. Besides the things that are without my Body, even the Care of all the Churches, which are my daily Care.

29. Who is weak, and I am not weak? who is offended, and I burn not?

30. Every Man's Weakness and Sufferings are to me as my own: The danger of the Tempted and Scandalized is my pain and care for their preservation.

30. If I must needs glory, I will glory of the things which concern mine infirmities.

30. If you will put me to boast, it shall be of that which worldly Men will turn to my reproach, not of any Preeminence, but of my Sufferings.

31. The God and Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, which is blessed for evermore, knoweth that I lie not. 32. In Damascus the governor under Aretas the king, kept the city of the Damascenes with a garion, defErnsious to apprehend me: And through a window in a basket was I let down by the wall, and escaped his hands.

1. Note, That through all this Chapter Paul calls his Boasting Folly, not formally and really, but materially and feigning, because it's Fools that boast uneffectually; when the false Apostles made it his Duty.

2. Note, That it was no small Quarrel of Brethren (like that of Barnabas) which put him upon all this Apology, (which else would not have favoured of Humility,) But it was the Intrusion and envious Accusation of such Jewish, Heretical, false Apostles, as he calleth the Ministers of Satan, who endeavoured to subvert the Gospel, and by disgracing him, to frustrate all his Labours, and destroy the Church: It's like to be done called Nicolaitans, Rev. 2. & 3.

CHAP. XII.

1. It is not expedient for me doubtless to glory: I will come to visions and revelations of the Lord.

2. I know that boasting is un seemly for an humble Minister of Christ: but seeing it is put upon me, I proceed to a higher Matter, even Visions and Revelations from God.

2. I knew a man in Christ above fourteen years ago (whether in the body, I cannot tell; or whether out of the body, I cannot tell: God knoweth) such an one caught up to the third heaven. 3. And I knew such a man (whether in the body, or out of the body, I cannot tell: God knoweth). 4. How that he was caught up into paradise, and heard un speakable words, which it is not lawful for a man to utter.

2. I knew a Man that was act by the Spirit of Christ above himself, who abode fourteen years ago (whether Bodily, or only by mental Extrasis and Rapture, I know not, God knoweth) was caught up to that Place of Glory called the Third Heavens, and caught up thence into Paradise, a Place of Joys, and heard that which neither can nor must be uttered, being unspeakable to the Ears of Mortals, and proper to God's ears.

5. Of such an one will I glory: yet of my self I will not glory, but in mine infirmities.

5. I think this Prose-tale of the Heavenly Glory, worthy to be gloried in: But (though I be the Man) I will not glory in it as my own, who was but passive, and advanced to it by God, to whom all the Glory is due. It is my Infirmities, and bearing Sufferings in the World, which I will call my own, and boast of.

6. For though I would declare glory, I shall not be a fool: for I will say the truth: but now I forbear, lest any man should think of
H. Corinthians. in Afflictions. Ch. 12

9. Most gladly therefore will I rather glory in my infirmities, that the power of Christ may rest upon me.

10. Therefore I take pleasure in infirmities, in reproaches, in necessities, in persecutions, in difficulties for Christ's sake: for when I am weak, then am I strong.

11. I am become a fool in glorying, ye have compelled me: for I ought to have been commended of you: for in nothing am I behind the very chiefest apostles, though I be nothing.

12. Truly the signs of an apostle were wrought among you in all patience, in signs, and wonders, and mighty deeds.

13. For what is it wherein ye were inferior to other churches, except it be that I my self was not burdensome to you? forgive me this wrong.

13. For what Gifts of the Spirit poured out among you? what Signs and Miracles have other Churches excelled you in? The difference between you and others was, that I spared your Purses, and put you to no charge: 
19. Think not that I say all this to intimate my self into your esteem for any ends of my own: I speak it as before God in Christ; it is your education that is my end in this and all things that I do concerning you.

20. For I fear, left when I come, I shall not find you such as I would, and that I shall be found unto you such as ye would not: left there be debates, envyings, wrathes, strifes, back-bittings, whisperings, swellings, tumults: 21. And left when I come again, my God will humble me among you, and that I shall bewail many which have sinned already, and have not repented of the uncleanliness, and fornication, and lasciviousness which they have committed.

Note. I. Though Paul seems to contradict himself in praising the Corinthians to largely in the beginning of this Epistle, and describing them so ill in the end: yet, it is not the fame Perkins that he praises and disgraceth, though of the same church. We must praise all that is good in Men, when we reprove the evil.

Note. II. That the very Characters of factious seduced Professors, are the Sins here named, which therefore we should specially abhor: 1. Debates, 2. Envyings Zeal, 3. Wrathes, 4. Strifes, 5. Back-bittings, 6. Whisperings, 7. Swellings against each other, 8. Tumults. Yet it is very notable, that notwithstanding all these Corruptions, and Abuses and filthy Scandal, Paul neither separateth, nor persuadeth any to separate, but leaveth that to the Heretical, who used to separate themselves into distinct Bodies, for the promoting of their Opinions and Parties.
CHAP. XIII.

1. This is the third time I am coming to you: in the mouth of two or three witnesses shall every word be established.

2. As the testimony of two or three witnesses is required for the conviction of truth, so my second and third admonition warn you, to prevent severity.

3. I told you before, and foretold you as if I were present the second time, and being absent, now I write to them which herefore have sinned, and to all other, that if I come again I will not spare:

4. Though I be absent, my writing may be for warning as if I were present, by which I foretold you, that if I come, I will not forbear to exercise the power given me by Christ.

5. Since ye seek a proof of Christ's speaking in me, which to you-ward is not weak, but is mighty in you.

6. And seeing you call for proof of Christ's speaking in me, you shall have this further proof (the Corporal Punishment of the Impenitent by Miracle or Satan's Execution): Though sure the power of Christ asserting my ministry, hath been so fully manifested among you, that you should have been thereby convinced.

7. For though he was crucified through weakness, yet he liveth by the power of God: for we also are weak in him, but we shall live with him by the power of God toward you.

8. For as Christ in the state of humane weakness was crucified, but by divine power was raised, and liveth; so, as we are conformed to him in weakness and suffering, we shall shew you that we partake of the power of God in our life and ministry.

9. Examine your selves, whether ye be in the faith; prove your own selves: know you not your own selves, how that Jesus Christ is in you, except ye be reprobates?

5. If you question my ministry, do but examine your loves. whether you be Christians or not: If you are not, was it not by the convincing power of God's attestation to my ministry? and do you question that which converted you? If not, you are yet without a saviour, and in your sins: And if you deny Christ in you, and his power shewed among you, you may expect that he will deny you.

6. But I trust that ye shall know that we are not reprobates.

6. And I trust that you shall be convinced that we have not for taken Christ, nor shall be cast off or for taken by him.

7. Now I pray to God that ye do no evil; not that we should appear approved, but that ye should do that which is honest, though we be as reprobates.

7. My prayer is, that you may be saved from sin and seduction, not so much that you may think well of us, but that you may do that which is right, how ill forever you think of us.

8. For we can do nothing against the truth, but for the truth.

8. For as we have no authority or commission to do anything against the truth, but only for it; so we have no desire to do otherwise.

9. For we are glad when we are weak, and ye are strong: and this also we wish, even your perfection.

9. For how much ever we be vilified or afflicted, it is our joy that you are strong, and that it is better with you: yes, it is your perfection that is our desire.

10. Therefore I write these things being absent, left being present I should use sharpness, according to the power which the
the Lord hath given me to edification, and not to destruction.

10. It is to prevent Severity when I am present, and the trouble that you and I shall have in Penalties on you, that I give you this Admonition by Letter: still professing, That Christ hath given me no Power of Tyranny, or against your own good, but only for your Edification. Should I claim any other, it's not of Christ.

11. Finally, brethren, farewell: Be perfect, be of good comfort, be of one mind, live in peace; and the God of love and peace shall be with you.

11. My concluding Valediction is, Be compact together in holy Union; Rejoice in the Lord; Be of one mind in Faith and Love, though you cannot in lesser things; Live in peace; and then he that would be known to us as the God of Love and Peace will be among you.


Now, Out of all this Epistle, That though proud tenderness of our Reputation be a Sin, yet it is a Duty to vindicate it when the Interest of the Gospel and of Souls requires it; which it did more with an Apostle, than an ordinary Minister.
The Epistle of St. Paul the Apostle to the Galatians.

The Introduction:

The Scope of this Epistle is to reduce the Galatians, who began to be seduced by those Judaizers, that would have not only joyned Moses's Law to Christianity, but also would have put that Yoke on the Gentile Christians: And it's like some Heretics joyned with them. To which end he sharply reproves the unfeignedness of the Galatians; evinceth the non-obligation of that Law, and the Carnality of Judaizing, and the Spirituality of the Gospel; and that he had his Gospel by immediate Inspiration from Christ; and that it is not singular from the other Apostles, nor diffusant to it felt, nor to his condescending Practice with the Jews.

Chap. I.

1. Paul an Apostle (not of men, neither by man, but by Jesus Christ, and God the Father, who raised him from the dead). 2. And all the brethren which are with me, unto the Churches of Galatia: 3. Grace be to you, and peace from God the Father, and from our Lord Jesus Christ.

1, 2, 3. Paul an Apostle, not of Men, nor called by Men, but by Christ from Heaven, and by his Revelation, authorized by the Power of God the Father, who raised him from the Dead; and all the Brethren with me: to the Churches of Galatia we with Grace and Peace from God the Father, and our Lord Jesus Christ.

Note. That Paul mentions not [the Church of Galatia], but [the Churches]; every City that had Christians (like our Corporations) having then a Church, not then put down to settle one only Church called Diceflane, instead of multitudes.

4. Who gave himself for our sins, that he might deliver us from this present evil world, according to the will of God and our Father: 5. To whom be glory for ever and ever. Amen.


6. I marvel that ye are so soon removed from him that called you into the grace of Christ, unto another Gospel:

6. I marvel that you, who voluntarily received the Truth from me, are so soon turned from the Gospel of the Grace of Christ, to another Doctrine contrary to this Grace, as if it were the Gospel.

7. Which is not another; but there be some that trouble you, and would pervert the gospel of Christ.

7. Which is far from being Christ's Gospel, contrary to my Preaching, as they pretend; but it is the Doctrine of Men that would trouble you, and would pervert the Gospel of Christ.

8. But though we, or an angel from heaven, preach any other gospel unto you, that which we have preached unto you, let him be accursed. 9. As we said before, so say I now again, If any man preach any other gospel unto you, then that man is accursed.

8, 9. But I pronounce and repeat it, If 1, yes, or an Angel from Heaven, if any Man pretend to preach to you any other Gospel than that which we have preached, or you received, let him be Anathema, renounce him as an excommunicate accursed Person.

Note. 1. That there is no other Gospel to be expected, besides that communicated by K k
Ch. 1. Paul beweath what he was Galatians, before his calling. Ch. 1.

be us by the Apostles, and recorded in the
Scripture. The Dream of a more perfect
Gospel of the Holy Ghost, is wicked.

2. That this Gospel hath fuller Evidence
than if an Angel spake from Heaven, and
is to be believed before, and against such
an Angel.

3. That it is the Peoples Duty to reject
and forsake any Teacher that would bring
another Gospel, or pervert this: Not as
Church Governors, but as Subjects of
Christ, that must be loyal to him, and save
themselves.

10. For do I now persuade men, or God? or do I seek to
please men? for if I yet pleased men, I should not be the servant
of Christ.

10. Do I now preach the Doctrine of
Men, on Man's Authority, to please Men;
or the Word of God, by his Authority, to
please him? Am I the Messenger and
Preacher of Man, or of God? Which do
I serve, and seek to please? For if I please
Men as their Servant, I am none of Christ's Servant.

11. But I certifie you, brethren,
that the gospel which was preach-
ced of me, is not after man.

11. I would have you know, that the
Gospel which I preach is not Humane, from
Man, nor on Man's Authority, nor to gra-
sifie the Will or Worldly Interest of Man.

12. For I neither received it
of man, neither was I taught it,
but by the revelation of Jesus
Christ.

12. I learned it not of any Humane
Teacher, nor took it on Humane Authority,
but from Christ's Revelation.

13. For ye have heard of my
conversation in time past, in the
Jews religion, now that beyond
measure I persecuted the Church
of God, and wafted it: 14. And
profited in the Jews religion, a-
bove many my equals in mine own
nation, being more exceedingly
zealous of the traditions of my
fathers.

13. 14. You have heard how I former-
ly unmeasurably persecuted and wafted
the Church, through excess of Zeal for
the Tradition of my Father, and Religion
of the Jews, &c.

15. But when it pleased God,
who separated me from my Mo-
thers womb, and called me by his
grace, 16. To reveal his Son in
me, that I might preach him a-
gong the heathen;

15, 16. But when it pleased God, who
by his free electing Grace decreed me to
know Christ first my self, and then preach
him to the Heathens, which was a kind of
separating me to it from the Womb, and
when he called me here to by his meer
Grace.

16, 17. Immediately I confer-
red not with flesh and blood: Nei-
ther went I up to Jerusalem, to
them which were apostles before me;
but I went into Arabia, and
returned again unto Damascus.

16, 17. I staid not to consult with any
Man, but presently preached the Gospel,
and went I up to Jerusalem, to learn of the
Apostles thare what to preach, but,
&c.

18. Then after three years I
went up to Jerusalem, to see Pe-
ter, and abode with him fifteen
days. 19. But other of the a-
postles saw I none, save James
the Lords brother.

18, 19. It was three years after, before
I went to Jerusalem, and staid fifteen days
with Peter, &c.

put Paul's coming to Jerusalem near his
Conversion, and mentions not expressly his
three years absence, or being in Arabia;
yet the brevity of the History proveth not
the shortness of the Time: And it was
not three years after his going from Da-
mascus, but after his Conversion. And
Luke, Acts 9. 23. saith, That it was after
much time that he went from Damascus
(which belonged to Arabia), so that it's
like that he spent the three years at or near
Damascus; and when he was escaped,
went presently to Jerusalem.

2. And though it may seem that three
years had been time enough to have fas-
tified the Church at Jerusalem of Paul's Con-
version, yet it seems that he spent that
time in Arabia and Damascus, to avoid
the rage of his Countrymen at Jerusalem; and to his remonstrances occasioned their disaffection.

20. Now the things which I write unto you, behold, before God, I lie not. 21. Afterwards I came into the regions of Syria and Cylicia: 22. And was unknown by face unto the churches of Judea, which were in Christ: 23. But they had heard only, That he which persecuted us in times past, now preacheth the faith which once he destroyed. 24. And they glorified God in me.

Note. All this Paul writeth to prove that he received not the Gospel from the Apostles, or any Man, but immediately from Christ.

CHAP. II.

1. Then fourteen years after, I went up again to Jerusalem, with Barnabas, and took Titus with me also. 2. And I went up by Revelation, and communicated unto them that gospel which I preach among the Gentiles, but privately to them which were of reputation, left by any means I should run, or had run in vain.

1, 2. Fourteen years after my Conversion, I went again to Jerusalem, &c. and told them what Doctrine I preached, and with what success: But severally and privately to the eminent Apostles, that avoiding offence both of Jews and Gentiles, I might not frustrate my Labours to either of them.

3. But neither Titus, who was with me, being a Greek, was compelled to be circumcised. 4. And that because of false brethren unawares brought in, who came in privily to spie out our liberty which we have in Christ Jesus, that they might bring us into bondage:

3, 4. And I would not yield that Titus should be circumcised, because some false brethren crept in to take advantage of the Liberty I used in compliance with the Jews, to take occasion by it to bring us into bondage to the Mosaic Law, and turn our Liberty into Necessity, and to plead that Conformity to it is our Duty, because in some Degree and measure we yielded to it as lawful, at the present, to avoid a greater hurt.

4. To whom we gave place by subjection, no not for an hour; that the truth of the gospel might continue with you.

5. Note. That an outward Act of Compliance, which in some Cases may be lawful, must not be done when it will strengthen Church-Tyrants and Deceivers, who by making it necessary, would turn Christian Liberty into Bondage.

6. But of these, who seemed to be somewhat, (whatsoever they were, it maketh no matter to me: God accepteth no mans person) for they who seemed to be somewhat, in conference added nothing to me.

6. But even Peter, James, and John, who were the Chief Men, and of Reputation, (God taketh not his Grace to the Dignity of Mens Persons, therefore my Case dependeth not on their Worth;) I say, in Conference they added nothing to me, much less taught me any other Gospel than I had learned of Christ, nor found me faulty or defective in my Doctrine.

7. But contrariwise, when they saw that the gospel of the uncircumcision was committed unto me, as the gospel of the circumcision was unto Peter; 8. (For he that wrought effectually in Peter to the Apostleship of the circumcision, the same was mighty in me towards the Gentiles.) 9. And when James, Cephas, and John, who seemed to be pillars, perceived the grace that was given unto me, they gave to me and Barnabas the right hands of fellowship; that we should go unto...
the heathen, and they unto the circumcision.

7, 8, 9. But they being satisfied that I was sent to preach to the Gentiles, as Peter was to the Jews; and that God wrought powerfully in me for the Conversion of the Gentiles, as he did in Peter for the Conversion of the Jews, even by many Miracles; these, who are justly reputed Pillars, perceiving God’s Grace; agreed to take me and Barnabas for their Fellow-labourers; and that we should preach to the Heathens, and they to the Jews.

Note, That Dr. Hammond thus paraphrased it: In every City either of us entered, and to constitute several Congregations in each City, of Jews and Gentiles.] And he, with Greatness, lay, That the two Wines, Rev. 11. are the Bishops and Churches of these two sorts at Jerusalem. If so, Cities had then more Bishops and Churches than one.

10. One by one they would that we should remember the poor; the same which I also was forward to do.

11. That we should make Collections in the Gentiles Churches for the Christian Jews.

Note, That besides the extraordinary Famine, the Jews were generally poorer than the Gentiles; 1. Living in a poor and narrow Country; 2. And having at first fold and given their Lands to the Common Stock.

11. But when Peter was come to Antioch, I withstood him to the face, because he was to be blamed.

11. I withstood him Face to Face, because he was blamed (or, to be blamed) as dissembling.

12. For before that certain came from James, he did eat with the Gentiles: but when they were come, he withdrew, and separated himself, fearing them which were of the circumcision. 13. And the other Jews dissembled like-wise with him; insomuch that Barnabas also was carried away with their dissimulacion.
Ch. 2. Why Paul and the Jews Galatians believed in Christ. Ch. 2:9

for by works of the law shall no flesh be justified.

15, 16. We are they who are Jews by birth, and not the Seed of Heathen idolaters, yet knowing that it is not by the works of the Law, but by faith in Christ that we must be justified, have become Christians, and are not justified by: And shall our Prædico now seem to intimate the contrary, and gain say our Faith?

17. But if while we seek to be justified by Christ, we our selves also are found sinners, is therefore Christ the minister of sin? God forbid.

18. For if you sign us to be sinners, and guilty of Gentilism, because we communicate with the Uncircumcised, you hereby would make Christ to be our Leader and Teacher to sin; for it is he that taught us this: And dare you charge Christ with Sin?

19. For if I build again the things which I destroyed, I make my self a transgressor.

20. For if we that have preached Deliverance from the Law, and that it doth not justify us, do now intimate the contrary by our Prædico, we confess our selves Sinners in teaching such Doctrine heretofore.

21. For I through the law am dead to the law, that I might live unto God.

22. The Law it self hath taught me not to trust it for justification, nor to live in the Bondage of it, but to look for Life towards God by Christ.

23. I am crucified with Christ: Nevertheles I live; yet not I, but Christ liveth in me: and the life which I now live in the flesh, I live by the faith of the Son of God, who loved me, and gave himself for me

24. As Christ was crucified, and took away this Wall of Separation, and Yoke of Bondage; so I am now a Member of his Body, the Catholick Church, and am dead to the Law, and it is to me: But I have a better Life, by which Christ liveth in me, both objectively, as trusted, and loved, and efficiently, by his Spirit. And now it is by Faith in him, who loved me, and gave himself for me, that I live.

21. I do not frustrate the grace of God: for if righteousnes come by the law, then Christ is dead in vain.

21. I do not by returning to the Law make void all the Design of Grace in our Redemption: Christ is dead in vain, if Righteousnes must be by our performance of the Law of Moses, for what need we then any other Sacrifice for sin, or to be redeemed from its Curse?

CHAP. III.

1. O Foolish Galatians, who hath bewitchéd you, that you should not obey the truth, before whose eyes Jesus Christ hath been evidently set forth, crucified among you?

2. So great is your folly in inclining to Judaism, that you seem in it as men bewitched, and deprived of Reason, to turn from Grace to the Law so soon, when Christ crucified for your deliverance hath been so plainly preached and set forth before you.

3. This onely would I learn of you, Received ye the Spirit by the works of the law, or by the hearing of faith?

4. Do but answér me from your own Experience: Have you not received the Spirit your selves? (Come for Miracles, or Tongues, and the Sinne for Sanctification;) If not, you are none of Christ: If ye, then by what means did you receive it? Was it by the Works of the Law? (you will not say it;) or was it by hearing the Gospel of Faith?

3. Are ye so foolish? having begun in the Spirit, are ye now made perfect by the flesh?

3. Are you so foolish, as having received a Spiritual Doctrine, and having received and seen the Gifts of the Spirit by it, which are its Seal, that you should think it your growth or perfection to turn to the Carnal Ceremonies of the Law, which gave you not the Spirit?

4. Have ye suffered so many things.
Believers are justified. Galatians. Believers are justified. Ch. 3.

4. Will you lose all the sufferings which you have undergone? If you turn to the Law, you lose them all.

5. He therefore that ministreth to you the Spirit, and worketh miracles among you, doth he it by the works of the law, or by the hearing of faith?

6. Are the Miracles that are wrought among you, and the Spirit communicated to yourselves, given from God by the Ministry of the Law or its Works, or by the Preaching of the Gospel?

Note. That here is a strong Evidence for the Matter of Fact, That the Gift of the Spirit, and the Working of Miracles, were then things certainly existing: Else when Paul appealed to these reduced Galatians themselves, as to Men that had the Spirit and these Miracles among them, and that with the provoking Words of [Jealous and beseched], how easily would they have confounded him, and said, They knew of no such thing? This had been the likeliest way to turn them from Christianity with force, to make that his Proof, which, if false, must be so known to them all.

6. Even as Abraham believed God, and it was accounted to him for righteousness. 7. Know ye therefore, that they which are of faith, the same are the children of Abraham.

6, 7. As it was by believing and trusting God's Promise, that Abraham was accounted righteous; so it followeth, that it is Believers that are his Seed as Heirs of the Promise.

8. And the Scripture foreseeing that God would justify the Heathen through faith, preached before the gospel unto Abraham, saying, In thee shall all nations be blessed.

9. So then they which be of faith, are blessed with faithful Abraham.

9. So that if the Promise be made to them in Abraham, they that have the same Qualification of Faith, must needs be they that are blessed in him, though they keep not the Law of Moses, which Abraham did not, nor the Gentile Believers.

10. For as many as are of the works of the law, are under the curse: for it is written, Cursed is every one that continueth not in all things which are written in the Book of the law to do them.

10. For all that trust for Justification and Life, to their own doing the Works of that Law, and not to the tree Grace of God in Christ, must needs be cursed, and not justified by it: For it faith, Cursed is every one that continueth not, &c. which no man doth.

11. But that no man is justified by the law in the sight of God, it is evident: for, The just shall live by faith. 12. And the law is not of faith: but, The man that doth them, shall live in them.

11, 12. It's evident, that before God none is justified by the Law: For it's said, that The just by faith shall live: But the Law considered in itself, as distinct from the Promise, doth not give Life on condition of Faith, but on condition of doing all that it commanded. (Though the Law, as subordinate to the Promise, be of Faith.)

13. Christ hath redeemed us from the curse of the law, being made a curse for us: for it is written, Cursed is every one that hangeth on a tree:

13. That Law which curseth us, doth not justify us: But so doth Moses's Law: and therefore came Christ to redeem us from that Curse, suffering as a Sacrifice for us a Cursed Death.

14. That the blessing of Abraham might come on the Gentiles through Jesus Christ; that we might
Ch. 3. Believers are justified. Galatians. Believers are justified. Ch 3.

might receive the promise of the Spirit through faith.

14. That the Blessing which was pronounced to Abraham as a Believer, might come on all (Jews and) Gentiles, who are Believers; and we might through Faith receive the promised Gift of the Holy Ghost, as we have done.

15. Brethren, I speak after the manner of men; Though it be but a man’s covenant, yet if it be confirmed, no man disannulleth or addeth thereto. 16. Now to Abraham and his seed were the promises made. He faith not; And to seeds, as of many; but as of one, And to thy seed, which is Christ.

15, 16. Even Men presume not to violate Covenants: And Gods Promise to Abraham was to him and his Seed, which immediately was Isaac, prefiguring Christ eminently: though as all the Carnal Seed also sprang from Isaac, so all Believers be included as (springing from Christ.)

17. And this I say, that the covenant that was confirmed before of God in Christ, the law which was four hundred and thirty years after, cannot disannul, that it should make the promise of none effect.

17. And to the Covenant to Abraham, as the Father of the Faithful, including a Promise of Christ and his Seed by Faith, was not nulled by the Law, which was Four hundred and thirty years after, But if Justification before was by Faith, it must be so still, and to all true Believers justified.

18. For if the inheritance be of the law, it is no more of promise: but God gave it to Abraham by promise.

18. For if the Blessing meant in that Covenant with Abraham be given on condition of keeping Moses’s Law, then something not by free gift, as it did to Abraham by that Promise: But God gave it freely by Promise to Abraham, without his keeping that Law.

19. Wherefore then serve the law? It was added because of transgression, till the Seed should come, to whom the promise was made; and it was ordained by angels in the hand of a mediator.

19. To what use then was the Law given? To convince Men of Sin, and restrain them from it, and make them know the need of a Mediating Saviour; whom Moses typified as a Mediator, in receiving the Law from the Ministry of Angels.

20. Now a Mediator is not a Mediator of one, but God is one.

20. Now Mediation is between two Parties: Of these, that God is one who made the Promise to Abraham, and justified him by Faith, and surely is not mutable.

21. Is the law then against the promises of God? God forbid: for if there had been a law given which could have given life, verily righteousness should have been by the law.

21. And hath this One God contradicted his Promises by his Law? By no means: Therefore he intended not that the Works of the Law should be our justifying Righteousness; which it must have been, if it could have given Life by the meritorious keeping of it: and so God should have overthrown his former way of Justification.

22. But the scripture hath concluded all under sin, that the promise by faith of Jesus Christ might be given to them that believe.

22. But the Scripture tells us, that all Men are under the Guilt of Sin, and the Law doth not justify Sinners that break it: Therefore none can be justified by it. And this it doth, to teach us, to look for Life by a Promised Christ.

23. But before faith came, we were kept under the law, shut up unto the faith which should afterwards be revealed.
29. And if ye be Christs, then are ye Abrahams seed, and heirs according to the promise.

29. And if ye be Christs, who was eminently Abraham's Seed, in whom all Nations by Faith are blessed, then it must needs follow, that you also are Abraham's Seed in and through Christ, and so are justified as Abraham was, by Faith, without the keeping of Moses' Law.

CHAP. IV.

1. Now I say, that the heir as long as he is a child, differeth nothing from a servant, though he be Lord of all; 2. But is under tutors and governors, until the time appointed of the father.

1. 2. As Heirs enjoy not their Estates in Minority, but under Guardians are used like Servants, till Majority.

3. Even so we, when we were children, were in bondage under the elements of the world:

3. So the State of Legal Ceremonial Bondage was suited to our rude Minority.

4. But when the fulness of the time was come, God sent forth his Son made of a woman, made under the law, 5. To redeem them that were under the law, that we might receive the adoption of sons.

4. 5. But when God, who carrieth on his Works from low Beginnings to Perfection, saw it meet to use us as at Maturity, he sent his Son into the World, who made Humanity was made of a Woman, made under the Law, which he perfectly fulfilled, that he might redeem those that were under the Law from its Bondage and Curfe, that they might henceforth serve him as Sons, not in Legal Terror, but in Love and Joy.

6. And because ye are sons, God hath sent forth the Spirit of his Son into your hearts, crying, Abba, Father.

6. And as Fathers communicate their Natures to their Children, (and not only their Names and Inheritance) so God having called you in Christ by Grace into this
9. And now you have learned the Knowledge of God, or rather were by his free Mercy known first of him, and called home by him, what should move you to encline to forsake this State of Liberty, and of Sons, to become Servants under either Jewish or Gentile Bondage, or that Law whose Ceremonies were tailed to a poor and weak sort of People?

10. Ye observe days, and months, and times, and years.

11. I am afraid of you, lest I have bestowed upon you labour in vain.

12. Brethren, I beseech you, be as I am; for I am as ye are: ye have not injured me at all.

13. Ye know how through infirmity of the flesh, I preached the gospel unto you at the first. And my temptation which was in my flesh ye despised not; or rejected; but received me as an angel of God, even as Christ Jesus.

14. You know that I was so far from obeying any Erks of my own, when I first preached the Gospel to you, that it cost me suffering in the flesh from Persecutors: And though by this I was rendered vile in the eyes of the World, and few will own Men in their Sufferings, yet you did not for this despise me, or reject my Doctrine; yes, you received me as you would have done an Angel, or Christ himself, with Kindness.

15. Where is then the blessedness you spake of? for I bear you record, that if it had been possible, ye would have plucked out your own eyes, and have given them to me.

16. How happy did you then think you selves in the Comfort of the Gospel? And
Ch. 4. We are the Sons of Abraham. Ch. 4.

one by a bond-maid, the other by a free-woman.

21, 22. Did you mark and understand the Law which you hear, you would not desire to be under it. You may read, That Abraham had two Sons, One by Hagar a Bond-ervant, the other by Sarah his Free and Lawful Wife.

23. But he who was of the bond-woman, was born after the flesh: but he of the free-woman was by promise.

23. Imael was born of Hagar by ordinary carnal Generation; but Isaac was born of Sarah, by Gods Promise, and his Power, above the ordinary course of Nature.

24. Which things are an allegory; for these are the two covenants; the one from the mount Sinai, which gendereth to bondage, which is Agar.

24. Which are to be allegorically understood, as denoting the two Covenants; One, that of the Law, given at Mount Sinai, which being a Law of Servitude and Fear, is well signified by Agar.

25. For this Agar is mount Sinai in Arabia, and answereth to Jerusalem which now is, and is in bondage with her children.

25. For Hagar signifies Mount Sinai in Arabia, and prefigureth the present State of Jerusalem, which is outwardly in bondage to the Romans, and inwardly to their Law.

26. But Jerusalem which is above is free, which is the mother of us all.

26. But the Jerusalem above in Heaven, of which true Christians on Earth are Heirs, and to which they belong by Promise, Initiation, and relative Union with Christ, which is the Mother of us all that are Children of Promise, (the Gospel and Spirit coming from Heaven, and our Inheritance being there) is fully freed from all Bondage, and so are we all initially in our Gospel-Liberty.

27. For it is written, Rejoice, thou barren that bearest not; break forth and cry, thou that travailest not: for the desolate hath
hath many more children than she which hath an husband.

27. For it's written, &c. The Christian Church, which before Christ's coming was but in obscure Rudiments, and after was but as a Grain of Mustard-seed, a little Flock, shall become Catholick, and be incomparably greater than was the Jewish Church.

Note, That: whereas many Expositors take [Jerusalem which is above], or [Supernal], to mean only [the Church on Earth], because it is caused by Grace and Revelation from Heaven, and tendeth to it, they carelessly give away a plain Text which proves the Immortality of the Soul, and its Felicity preiently upon our Death: As if [Jerusalem above] were but [Jerusalem on Earth, caused from above] and so was Moses's Law, and the old Jerusalem. The Heavenly Society containeth the Spirits of the just made perfect, with the innumerable Company of Angels, &c. Hab. 12. To this we are joined in the Relation of Heirs. When it is said, That this shall come down with Christ at Judgment, it implies, that it was with Christ in Heaven before; and he hath promised, that where he is, there his Servants shall be also, Joh. 12. 26. And that some Expressions here signify the Church on Earth, is not against this; for the Church on Earth is the lower part of that in Heaven.

28. Now we, brethren, as Isaac was, are the children of promise.

28. We are Children by Adoption and free Gift, and of a free-given Inheritance.

29. But as then he that was born after the flesh, persecuted him that was born after the Spirit, even so it is now.

29. As Ishmael persecuted Isaac, so now the Jews and Carnal Seed do persecute Christians, the Spiritual Seed.

30. Nevertheless, what faith the scripture? Cast out the bondwoman and her son: for the Son of the bondwoman shall not be heir with the son of the free-woman.

30. But as the scripture faith, Cast out the unbelieving Jew, that
c last to the Works of the Law for Life, shall not inherit the saving Privileges of the Christian Church.

31. So then, brethren, we are not children of the bond-woman, but of the free.

31. So then we that are the Children of Promise, faved by Faith, are not under the Bondage of the Law, but delivered from Sin and Curfe by Christ.

CHAP. V.

1. Stand fast therefore in the liberty wherewith Christ hath made us free, and be not entangled again with the yoke of bondage.

1. It is not a vain thing which Christ hath purchased for us; undervalue not this Freedom, and cast it not away, but hold it fast, and do not carelessly return to the Yoke of Jewish Bondage.

2. Behold, I Paul say unto you, that if ye be circumcised, Christ shall profit you nothing. 3. For I counsel again to every man that is circumcised, that he is a debtor to do the whole law.

2. 3. I Paul tell you, That if you be circumcised, as thefe Men tell you must be, (Acts 15.) that is, as it binds you to Moses's Law as the Condition of Salvation, you renounce the Deliverance purchased by Christ, and so he will be no Saviour to you: For, to be so circumcised, is to bind your selves under that whole Law and Covenant of Works.

Note, That as Baptism Physically taken is but Washing, and is not Baptism in the Moral Sense, which is, a Sacred Covenant with Christ by that Figure; just so the Physical Act of Circumcision is not Circumcision in the proper Moral Sense, but using it as a Covenant Sign: And as Abraham used it as a Seal of the Promise to him as a Believer, it is in specie moralis another thing from that used by the carnal Jews, as signing another Covenant: For they used it as a Covenant Sign that they would keep Moses's Law as the Condition of Life; whereas they ought to have used it as a Seal of the Promise made to Abraham and his Seed, and also to bind them sincerely to keep that Law.
4. Christ is become of no effect unto you, whosoever of you are justified by the law; ye are fallen from grace.

5. For what is the Spirit of Christ, which is poured out on the faithful, excepted them to wait in hope of that Blestness, of which we are made Heirs by the Righteousness of Faith.

6. For in Jesus Christ neither circumcision availeth anything, nor uncircumcision, but faith, which worketh by love.

7. Ye did run well, who did hinder you, that ye should not obey the truth?

8. This persuasion cometh not of him that calleth you. A little leaven leavenceth the whole lump.

9. This Judaizing was never taught you by me, that first preached to you, or by God: But a few corrupted Men among you, have brought all your Churches into danger of defection.

10. I have confidence in you through the Lord, that you will be none otherwise minded: but he that troubleth you, shall bear his judgment, whosoever he be.

11. And I, brethren, if I yet preach circumcision, why do I yet suffer persecution? then is the offence of the cross ceased.

12. The hurt that these Men do, who would unsettle and pervert you, is so great, that I would they were even cut off from the Church, if upon personal Admonition they repent not, and so left to God's Judgment, who oft maketh Satan his Executioner on such Men's Bodies.
Ch. 5. Love is the fulfilling flesh, but by love serve one another.

13. Christ hath called you to a State of Freedom from Mosaical Rites, and from the Curse: Use it therefore thankfully; but yet abate it not to any Sin, to despire the weak that yet scruple the forfaking of those Rites, or to serve any Carnal Lust, or Interest, as if you had liberty to sin.

14. For all the law is fulfilled in one word, even this: Thou shalt love thy neighbour as thy self.

14. You are still under a Law; but it is the Law of Love, which, in the Duties which you owe to Man, is fulfilled, if you do but love your Neighbours as your selves, (loosening that you love your selves with a well-guided Love.)

15. But if ye bite and devour one another, take heed that ye be not consumed one of another.

16. But if Seditiousness and Faction conquer Brotherly Love, and set you on hurting one another, you will stir up those whom you hurt to Self-defence and Revenge, and make your selves so many Enemies, that you will be consumed each of other.

17. How foolish or malignant are they that preach down Love and Gentleness, and preach to stir up Men to Wrath, Hatred, and Hurlfulness, that they consider not this, and lay it not to heart with fear?

18. This I say then, Walk in the Spirit, and ye shall not fulfill the lust of the flesh.

19. If you say, That without the Law there will be no restraint of fleshly Sins; I say, Walk in the Spirit of the flesh, that is, by his Spiritual Law, and his Spirits sanctifying Indinations, and then you will overcome your fleshly Lusts, without the Carnal Rites and Corporal Penalties of that Law.

20. For the flesh lusteth against the Spirit, and the Spirit against the flesh: and these are contrary the one to the other; so that ye cannot do the things that ye would.

21. For the Flesh and Spirit are more contrary than the Flesh and Mosis's Political and Ritual Law. It is the Spirit that the Flesh lusteth against; and it is the Spirit that is contrarily inclined, and must overcome it. These contrary Inclinations keep you in such imperfection, that you cannot be as good and blameless as you would be, (and therefore Grace must pardon you.)

22. But if ye be led by the Spirit, ye are not under the Law.

23. But if the sanctifying Spirit of Christ be it that ruleth you, then as you are above the childish Rites, so you are far above the need of terrifying Penalties; for Love will be your powerful Principle.

19, 20. Now the works of the flesh are manifest, which are these: Adultery, fornication, uncleanness, lasciviousness, idolatry, witchcraft, hatred, variance, emulations, wrath, strife, seditions, heresies. 21. Envys, murders, drunkenness, revellings, and such like: of the which I tell you before, as I have also told you in time past, that they which do such things, shall not inherit the kingdom of God.

19, 20, 21. Perhaps you'll say, How shall we know Sin, but by the Law? To which I say, That they being Works of the Flesh, against true Redson, and the Spirit of God, the very Light of Nature, and Christ's Spirit and Spiritual Word doth make them manifest, such as Adultery, Fornication, &c. of which I have told you, and yet tell you, that such shall not inherit the Kingdom of God.

22. But the fruit of the Spirit is love, joy, peace, long-suffering, gentleness, goodness, faith, meekness, temperance: against such there is no law.

22, 23. But the Fruits of the Spirit of Christ in all true Christians (them that are not under the Law of Moses) are Love to God and Men, joy in the hope of Salvation and in doing good, Peace with Confidence, and as much as in us lieth with Men Patience under Sufferings and Wrongs, Kindness and Gentleness, doing all the good we can, Truthfulness and truthing God, Meekness and tameness of Disposition, Temperance and Chastity, &c. The Spirit of God giveth us a Love to all these; so that such need not penal Torment to force them to it, nor doch
Ch. 5, 6. Paul exhorteth to Galatians. Liberality to teachers. Ch. 6.

death the Law condemn any of these:
24. And they that are Christ's, have crucified the flesh, with the affections and lusts.
24. And all true Christians whom Christ will own, have by his Spirit crucified the flesh, with its inordinate Affections and Lusts, in conformity to the crucified Body of their Lord, (though he had no Sin.) And this is more effectual against Sin, (than all the Curves of Mois's Law.

25. If we live in the Spirit, let us also walk in the Spirit.
25. If the Spirit be the Principle of our New Life, let us do the Works of it.
26. Let us not be desirous of vain glory, provoking one another, envying one another.
26. If you be Spiritual, shew it by avoiding vain-glorious Boasting of your own Knowledge and Goodness, and provoking others by proud Contempt or contentious Opposition. See Jam. 3.

CHAP. VI.

1. Brethren, if a man be overtaken in a fault, ye which are spiritual, restore such an one in the spirit of meekness; considering thy self, lest thou also be tempted.
1. If any of you be surprised in Faults, contrary to the bent of his Heart and Life, you that are indeed spiritual and free your selves, shew it by that meekness which is the Fruit of the Spirit, in restoring him by Repentance; and use not rough Severity and Contempt, considering how uncertain you are what Temptation may do upon your selves.

2. Bear ye one another's burdens, and so fulfill the law of Christ.
2. Let other Mens Burdens, Hurr, and Dangers, be to you as if they were your own; help each other to deliverance and safety, and not add to the Load that is upon them: And by this you shall fulfill the Law of Christ, which is the Law of Love.

3. For if a man think himself to be something, when he is nothing, he deceiveth himself.
3. Also! Man is a poor nothing, unable of himself to stand in trial; and the self confident, who roughly handle the Faulty, or contemn them, and so think themselves to be something, do but deceive themselves as the Event will manifest.

4. But let every man prove his own work, and then shall he have rejoycing in himself alone, and not in another.
4. The way of Wisdom is; not to lift up your selves as Wise and Good, by sharp censoing the Faults of others; but closely to try and prove your selves, and your own doings, that so your own Consciences may speak comfort to you, and not to seek Perjury by insulting over the Weak, that others may exalt you.

5. For every man shall bear his own burden.
5. For it is not other Men's Goodness or Sins for which Men shall be rewarded or punished, but their own: And therefore they are most concerned to judge themselves.

6. Let him that is taught in the word, communicate unto him that teacheth, in all good things.
6. And to your Teachers, it is the Hearer's Duty to maintain them, and communicate according to your own Ability for their Provision and Supply.

7. Be not deceived; God is not mocked: for whatsoever a man soweth, that shall he also reap.
7. Let not Men deceive themselves by a barren Profession; for God will not be deceived: All Men shall reap as they sowe and be judged according to their Works.

8. For he that soweth to his flesh, shall of the flesh reap corruption: but he that soweth to the Spirit, shall of the Spirit reap life everlasting.
8. They that seek first Provision for their own Flesh, do live but for a Body that will rot in the Grave; and where then is the Fruit of their Life? (besides the Ruine of their Soul.) But they that in obedience to the Spirit do live a Spiritual Life, for spiritual Felicity, shall receive everlasting Life as their Reward.

9. And
9. And let us not be weary in well-doing: for in due season we shall reap, if we faint not.

9. And let not us be tired with length of labour, or delay of the Reward: Harvest cometh not as soon as we have sown: When God’s due season is come, we shall certainly reap the blessed Fruit, if fainting makes not come short of it.

10. As we have therefore opportunity, let us do good unto all men, especially unto them who are of the household of faith.

10. Let us therefore according to our several abilities do all the good to all men that we can, but especially to Christians, who are the Household or Church of Christ.

11, 12. Ye see how large a letter I have written unto you with mine own hand. As many as desire to make a fair shew in the flesh, they constrain you to be circumcised; onely left they should suffer perfection for the cross of Christ.

11, 12. You see how large a letter your own Danger hath drawn me to write. They that would draw you to conformity to the Jews, are a Carnal sort of Men, that will keep their Worldly Reputation and Safety; and because they cannot suffer Perfection from the Jews themselves, they would draw you to this Conformity with them, that you may seem to justify them in their Sin, and pretend that all others are ignorant of Christian Liberty.

13. For neither they themselves who are circumcised keep the law; but desire to have you circumcised, that they may glory in your flesh.

13. For they keep not the Law themselves, but would keep up their Reputation by getting you on their side, to strengthen their Interest, and make you their Defence.

14. But God forbid that I should glory, save in the crofs of our Lord Jesus Christ, by whom the world is crucified unto me, and I unto the world.

14. But my Gloriing shall not be in worldly Prosperity, and Freedom from Sufferings; but in following a Crucified Christ in Cross-bearing, by whom the World to me is a dead contemned thing, as Christ on the Cross seemed to the Men of the World; and my Esteem and Love of the World are crucified and dead in me, so that I can spare its Ease and Honours.

15. For in Christ Jesus neither circumcision avail anything, nor uncircumcision, but a new creature.

15. For in the Judgment of Christ, the Christianity which is accepted to Salvation, is neither Circumcision, nor Uncircumcision, (though Judaizing Circumcision be now contrary to Grace:) but it is a New Creature, by the Spirit regenerated to God.

16. And as many as walk according to this rule, peace be on them, and mercy, and upon the Israel of God.

16. And the Peace and Mercy of God will be on all them that walk as New Creatures, by the guidance of his Spirit, placing acceptable Religion in this, and not in Circumcision or Uncircumcision. This Benediction I pronounce on them that are the true Israel of God, and will be accepted by him, however judged of by Man.

17. From henceforth let no man trouble me; for I bear in my body the marks of the Lord Jesus.

17. Let not those that profess themselves Christians any more trouble me by their Emulations and Calumnies, and by seducing the Churches: For I carry with me the Marks of my Faithfulness to Christ, even the Sufferings which I undergo for him; which are a better Evidence of his Acceptance, than avoiding Perfection is to my Accusers that would seduce you.

18. Brethren, the grace of our Lord Jesus Christ be with your spirit. Amen.

18. My Benediction and Prayer for you is, That the Grace of our Lord Jesus Christ may be with your Spirit, to guide, justify, and sanctifie you, (which will save you, when Judaism and trusting to the Works of the Law will fail you.) Amen.
The Epistle of St. Paul the Apostle to the Ephesians.

CHAP. I.

1. Paul an apostle of Jesus Christ, by the will of God, to the saints which are at Ephesus, and to the faithful in Christ Jesus. Grace be to you, and peace from God our Father, and from the Lord Jesus Christ.

2. Paul an Apostle of Jesus Christ, called and sent by his Appearance and Voice to preach his Gospel, to which God had chosen me; to the Saints and faithful Christians at Ephesus, my Benediction and Prayer is, That they may have Grace and Peace, Holiness and Confolation, from God our Father, and Christ our Saviour.

3. Blessed be the God and Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, who hath blessed us with all spiritual blessings in heavenly places in Christ:

4. Thanks and Praise be given to God the Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, who hath blessed us with all spiritual Blessings in Celestial, or Heavenly things which tend to Glory, which Christ doth purchase, promise, prepare, and possess for us.

5. According as he hath chosen us in him before the foundation of the world, that we should be holy and without blame before him in love:

6. As he chose us as Members of Christ, whom he chose to be our Head, before the World was made, that we should be holy and blameless, both which summarily consist in holy Love.

5. Having predestinated us unto the adoption of children by Jesus Christ to himself, according to the good pleasure of his will, to the praise of the glory of his grace, wherein he hath made us accepted in the beloved:

5.6. Having predestinated us to become his adopted Children to him in and by Jesus Christ, of his own free and good Will, that to his Grace, wherein he hath made us accepted in his beloved Son, might have the Praise and Glory.

Note. 1. That the Election is from before the Foundation of the World. 2. That it is one Decree or Election of God by which he chose Christ to be our Head, and us to be his Members. 3. It is one and the same Election by which God hath chosen us to the praise and glory of his Grace, to be saved, and to be holy and blameless in Love. On God's part it is by one Act, and on our part it is to one end of Blessedness, (as Generation maketh one Man) though as objectively that one have many Parts, it may accordingly be named Many, and distinguished. And the Essentials are given at once, though the Integral and Augmentation be after given by degrees. 4. That Love is the sum of all Holiness and Blamelessness to which we are predestinated. 5. That we are not only Predestinated to Life on condition of Holiness, but are Predestinated to Holiness itself; and consequently, to Faith and Repentance, and not only on condition that we believe and repent: And Election is of Individual Persons, to Faith, Holiness, and Salvation, and not only of Believers to Salvation, or of Persons to be saved if they believe. A Conditional putting into being or act. Were the Scripture dark in the Point of God's free Election of some to Faith and Repentance, more than others of equal Guilt and Pravity, Experience might fully satisfy us of it.

7. In whom we have redemption through his blood, the forgiveness of sins, according to the riches of his grace; wherein he hath abounded toward us in all wisdom and prudence.

7. In whom we have deliverance by Redemption, through the Sacrifice of his Blood for our Sins, even the forgiveness of all our Sin, which manifesteth the Riches of his Grace and Bounty, from which thing...
Ch. 1. Adoption the true Ephesians. fountain of salvation. Ch. 1.

this Gift proceedeth, in which he a-
bounded toward us in the exercise of that wonderful Divine Wisdom and Prudence in the way of our Salvation by Christ, which to search and know, is the greatest Wisdom and Prudence of Man.

9. Having made known unto us the mystery of his will according to his good pleasure, which he hath purposed in himself:

9. Having now opened to us the Mystery of his own Will and good Pleasure, which he purposed in himself, but was little known by Jews or Gentiles.

10. That in the dispensation of the fulness of times he might gather together in one all things in Christ, both which are in heaven, and which are on earth, even in him.

10. That when he saw the fit time fully come, he might gather into one Universal Church, united to Christ the Head, as his Kingdom and Body, both Jews and Gentiles, yea Angels and Men, the departed Souls and those on Earth, to be One, I say, in him their Head and King.

Note, Those that confine this to Jews and Gentiles, yea and those that exclude Angels, force the Text without proof. For though Angels finned not, Christ may gather us into one Heavenly Society with them, and make us like them, himself being the Head.

11. In whom also we have obtained an inheritance, being predestinated according to the pur-
pouse of him, who worketh all things after the counsel of his own will:

11. In whom also we have our Lot of Inheritance, being thereto predestinated by God, who calleth whom he pleaseth, and worketh all things according to his own Counsel, Wisdom, and Will.

12. That we should be to the praise of his glory, who first trusted in Christ.

12. That we, who were first called, and made Believers in Christ, might be the First-fruits of his Church, and bring him much Praise and Glory by our Service.

13. In whom ye also trusted af-
ter that ye heard the word of truth, the gospel of your Salvation: In whom also after that ye believed, ye were sealed with that holy Spirit of promise,

13. In whom ye trusted, when you had heard the true Gospel of your Salvation; and in and by Christ, after you believed, you received the great Gift of the promised Spirit, which is God's Seal upon you, and the Seal of the Truth of his Promise to you.

14. Which is the earnest of our inheritance, until the redemption of the purchased possession, unto the praise of his glory.

14. Which Spirit is given us by God as the ascertaining Earnest of our Inheritance, to fix us for, and assure us of attaining the Possession of that which Christ hath purchased for those whom he had redeemed to be his peculiar People.

15. Wherefore 1 also, after I heard of your faith in the Lord Jesus, and love unto all the saints, 16. Cease not to give thanks for you, making mention of you in my prayers;

15, 16. Hearing of the continuance and increase of your Faith, and your Love to all the Saints, (and not only to those that conform to your Minds in small or indifferent things) do constantly give thanks to God for your Stability, and daily pray for you.

17. That the God of our Lord Jesus Christ, the Father of glory, may give unto you the Spirit of wisdom and revelation, in the knowledge of him:

17. That he that is the God of our Lord Jesus as Man, who sent him, and raised him from the dead, and glorified him, would give you yet more of the Spirit of Wisdom and Revelation, that you may know yet more of the Mystery of his Love in our Redemption by Christ.

18. The eyes of your understanding being enlightened; that ye may know what is the hope of his calling, and what the riches of the glory of his inheritance in the saints,
Ch. 1. Chrift's exaltation. Ephesians. What we are by nature. Ch. 2.

18. That your Minds being yet more illuminated, you may fuller and dearer know, to what glorious Hopes he hath called us, and what Treasures of Glory he hath promiséd to his Saints, in whom he will be glorified for ever.

19. And what is the exceeding greatness of his power to usward who believe, according to the working of his mighty power; 20. Which he wrought, in Chriff, when he raised him from the dead, and set him at his own right hand in the heavenly places.

19, 20. And how wonderfully God hath manifested his Power in us that believe, in giving us the Spirit of Miracles, Tongues, Prophecy, &c. and the Spirit of Illumination, Faith, Hope, Love, Joy, Patience, to go on in Labour and Suffering for Christ, suitable to the Power which he shewed in raising Christ from death, and advancing him to the Heavenly Glory, where he is Lord of all.

21. Far above all principality, and power, and might, and dominion, and every name that is named, not only in this world, but also in that which is to come:

21. Far above all Princes, States, and Powers on Earth, the greatest Conquerors or Monarchs, whether those that persecuted him and us, or any other, even these above us in the World, that we are going to, Angels, or any sort of Spirits.

22. And hath put all things under his feet, and gave him to be the head over all things to the Church.

22. And hath given him power over all things, and made him Head of the Church; and Lord over all things, for his Churches good, and the Ends of Redemption.

23. Which is his body, the fulness of him that filleth all in all.

23. Which Church is his Body Mystical, the Celestial, Political Society, united to and under him, in which he attaineth fully the Ends of his Redemption, and in whom, as glorified with him, he is effectually a full and perfect Saviour, in whom he will delight, and be glorified: and God, that is all in all things, fully manifesteth his Love and Glory.

Note 1. That the Text distinguished Christ's Relation to his Church, and to all things else. He is Head to the Church by vital influence, as his Body. He is over all things, some as Utensils for the Church, and some as conquered Rebels, or Enemies.

2. How little reason the Church hath to fear malicious Principalities or Powers, or Great Names, or Devils, any further than we fear our selves, lest we yield to Sin by their Temptations, seeing they are all in the power of Christ, and under his Peer. And therefore our sinful fear doth plainly prove our Unbelief, in that degree that is prevaileth.

3. As the same Love, so the same Power of God that was glorified in the Miracles and Resurrection of Christ, is engaged for, and glorified on the Church: And this Glory we shall see in the fulness of time, now the Church (as Christ on the Cross, or in the Grave) seem a forlorn, naked, defolate thing.

4. It is no wonder that Christ taketh what is done to his Church and Members as done to himself, and will judge mankind accordingly.

5. The great Service that Christ requir'd of us in the World, is to contribute utmost Labour and Help for the Church, he himself needing nothing, that we can do.

CHAP. II.

1. And you hath he quickened who were dead in trespasses and sins.

1. And you who are Members of his Church hath he revived and quickened by his mortifying and sanctifying Grace, as by abolishing you from the Guilt of Death, who were in and by your Sin as dead a Spiritual Slaving Good, and liable by God to everlasting Death: your State of was such a State of Death.

2. Wherein in time past ye walked according to the course of this world, according to the prince of the power of the air, the spirit that now worketh in the children of disobedience.

2. In this Sin you lived in your Gentile State, according to the Temporals and Will of Satan, who is by God permitted the Prince of the Power of the Air.
Ch. 2. God rich in mercy. Ephesians.

Air, and by his Temptations wrought in the unperadventable Unbelievers and Ungodly against God's Grace and their Salvation.

3. Among whom also we all had our conversation in times past, in the lusts of our flesh, fulfilling the desires of the flesh and of the mind; and were by nature the children of wrath, even as others.

3. And we our selves were formerly such as they, and lived among them in filthy lusts, fulfilling the desires of our flesh, and our own thoughts and false reasoning, and were by natural corruption (not onely as children of Adam, but also the progeny of heathens) the heirs of God's wrath, obliged to punishment by his justice, as other men, and especially heathens be.

4. But God who is rich in mercy, for his great love wherewith he loved us, 5. Even when we were dead in sins, hast quickened us together with Christ, (by grace ye are saved) 6. And hath raised us up together, and made us sit together in heavenly places in Christ Jesus.

4, 5, 6. But God, who is very merciful, to manifest his own free love to us, when we were as others dead in sins, hath by his own grace begun our salvation, conforming us to the resurrection and exaltation of Christ, by delivering us from the death of sin and guilt, and making us alive to holiness, and giving us the earnest and foretaste of glory.

7. That in the ages to come he might shew the exceeding riches of his grace, in his kindness towards us, through Christ Jesus.

7. That in these latter days he might shew forth the glory of his grace in our redemption by Christ, in which his love and kindness to us is replestant.

8. For by grace are ye saved, through faith; and that not of your selves: it is the gift of God: 9. Not of works, lest any man should boast:

8, 9. For your salvation is of God's mere grace and gift, through your faith in Christ; and this is not of your own contriving, merit, seeking, or effecting; but all of God's own gift, who hath chosen this way, rather than that of works, that none may boast, and ascribe that to themselves which is due onely to God.

10. For we are his workmanship, created in Christ Jesus unto good works, which God hath before ordained that we should walk in them.

10. Not that we hereby exclude good works, by excluding man boasting of his own power or merit: For we our selves are God's work, new made by regeneration, which planted us into Christ, purposely to do those good works, which neither the law nor nature enabled and enclined us to do: These God hath fore-ordained and prescribed for us to live in, and by grace inclined us to do them.

11. Wherefore remember that ye being in time passed Gentiles in the flesh, who are called uncircumcision by that which is called the circumcision in the flesh made by hands; 12. That at that time ye were without Christ, being aliens from the commonwealth of Israel, and strangers from the covenants of promise, having no hope, and without God in the world.

11, 12. And that you may duly value the mercy of your vocation, you must never forget, that you were of the Gentiles, called Uncircumcised by the Jews, and had no knowledge of Christ as promised, or as incarnate, and were no part of that peculiar people the Jews, but aliens, whom they justly refused communion with, and were strangers from the covenant which promised peculiarity, and so had none of the hope of redemption which those promises gave, nor knew how, as reconciled, to be accepted of God, and lived as atheists, without the true knowledge of God, or trust in him, or obedience to him. (though you had many idols.)

13. But now in Christ Jesus, ye who sometimes were far off, are made nigh by the blood of Christ.
Ch. 2. The Gentiles reconciled. Ephesians.

13. But now ye are Christians, you are brought as nigh God as the believing Jews, the Partition being taken down, and the Covenant of Grace founding an Universal Church, purchased and sealed by the Blood of Christ, whose peculiar People now ye are.

14. For he is our peace, who hath made both one, and hath broken down the middle wall of partition between us;

15. For he is the Maker of our Peace with God and one another, and hath taken away the Division between Jews and Gentiles, which was like the Wall which kept the Gentiles in the outer Court of the Temple, and opened us all a way into the Sanctuary.

16. Having abolished in his flesh the enmity, even the law of commandments contained in ordinances, for to make in himself, of twain, one new man, so making peace;

17. Being Man in the common Nature of Man, and offering his Body a Sacrifice for the Sins of all, he hath abolished the Law of Moses, which contained Ordinances Ceremonial, Typical, and Political, with severe Penalties, and made us all one Catholic Church, united in himself the Head.

18. And that he might reconcile both unto God in one body by the crofs, having slain the enmity thereby.

19. And as his one Body was crucified for both, so he thereby reconcileth both to God in one Body or Society, which is his Church, having abolished the Enmity.

20. And came, and preached peace to you which are afar off, and to them that were nigh.

21. And this Gospel of Reconciliation and Unity he hath by himself and his Apostles preached, and offereth Grace and Peace, both to Gentiles and Jews.

22. For through him we both have an access by one Spirit unto the Father.

23. For through his Merits, Intercession, and Covenant, all Believers, Jews and Gentiles, are made the Children of God, and are sealed by his Spirit of Adoption, which is an Intercessor within us, by whom we have access to God.

19. Now therefore ye are no more strangers and foreigners, but fellow-citizens with the Saints, and of the household of God;

19. And now this Reconciliation being made by Christ, you Gentiles are no longer Strangers or Foreigners to the Church or peculiar People of God, but are free Denizens, Burgesses, or En-enfranchised Citizens with the rest of the Holy Society, even Members of the Holy Catholic Church, of Adopted ones, which is as the Household of God.

20. And are built upon the foundation of the Apostles and Prophets, Jesus Christ himself being the chief Corner-stone:

21. In whom all the building fitly framed together, groweth unto an holy temple in the Lord.

22. In whom also are built together for an habitation of God through the Spirit.

23. And as God called the Temple at Jerusalem his Dwelling, so by the Spirit of Christ, you also, with all the rest of the Faithful, are built up as a holy Temple, in which by the same Spirit, God will dwell.

Note. That, 1. The Catholic Church is not only that which was once by the Policy of Emperours and Bishops called Catholic, as National, being in that Empire only, and under its Laws; but as it containeth all Christians in the World. 2. That it is Headed only by Christ, the Center of its Unity. 3. That inspired Apostles and Prophets being the Messengers of new Divine Revels.
Ch. 2. The hidden Mystery. Ephesians. The hidden Mystery. Ch. 3.

Revelation, is its secondary Foundation, by an Authority and Qualification proper to them, and not extending to Bishops or their Councillors, who come after them. 4. Note the great Dignity of the Church, as resulting from this foundation Christ, and the Reconciliation wrought by him. 5. That they that would destroy this Unity and Superstructure, fight against Christ, and would destroy the Church; which is most notably done by setting up a false Head or Foundation, or making false inexplicable Terms of Union, by the presumptuous Canons and Laws of Ultras. 6. That though this Church have no Uniting Head but Christ, yet it must be compact, as the Members of his Body, and have one Faith, Hope, Baptism, and Spirit of Love, and abhor Division as Destruction.

CHAP. III.

1. For this cause, I Paul, the prisoner of Jesus Christ for you Gentiles.

1. Having those great Encouragements, I Paul even glory that I am Christ's Prisoner for the Gentiles' sake, even for preaching the Gospel for their Conversion and Salvation.

Note, That at once Paul was the Jews Prisoner, as his Accusers and Persecutors, and the Heathen Roman Prisoner, as his Judges; and Christ's Prisoner, both finally, as suffering for his sake, and obliquely, as Commissioned for a Persecuted Work; and the Gentiles Prisoner finally, as suffering for his Labours for their Salvation.

2. If ye have heard of the dissemination of the grace of God, which is given to youward:

3. How that by revelation he made known unto me the mystery, (as I wrote afore in few words,)

4. For I purpose you have heard how, for your good, God hath commissioned me to declare and dispense to you the Gospel of Grace, and Gifts of the Spirit, and by Revelation from Heaven by the Voice of Christ, and inwardly by his Spirit, made known to me the Mystery of Man's Redemption, and the Calling of the Gentiles, (as I wrote briefly before.)

4, 5. Whereby when ye read ye may understand my knowledge in

the mystery of Christ) which in other ages was not made known unto the sons of men, as it is now revealed unto his holy apostles and prophets by the Spirit; 6. That the Gentiles should be fellow-heirs, and of the same body, and partakers of his promise in Christ by the gospel:

4, 5, 6. In which you may read my Explication of this Mystery, and perceive that Christ hath acquainted me with it, which in former Ages was not openly and clearly made known to Men, as it is now by the Spirit revealed to the Holy Apostles and Prophets who preach the Gospel; even that Christ would call and take in the Gentiles into the Catholic Church and Covenant, as his peculiar People, and make them partakers of his Promise and Gift of Life in Christ, by the Gospel preached to them.

7. Whereof I was made a minister according to the gift of the grace of God given unto me by the effectual working of his power.

7. Of which Gospel I was made a minister, to dispense it according to that Measure of the Gift of the Spirit by Grace given to me, which wrought effectually in me, and by me, by Doctrine and Miracles to convert the Gentiles.

8. Unto me, who am less than the least of all saints is this grace given, that I should preach among the Gentiles the unsearchable riches of Christ;

8. To me, who am by my former Persecution of the Church the lowest and most unworthy of all Saints, in this Favour and Honour freely vouchsafed, that I should preach to the Gentiles the unsearchable Riches of Christ.

9. And to make all men see, what is the fellowship of the mystery, which from the beginning of the world, hath been hid in God, who created all things by Jesus Christ.

9. And to通知 to all men the Communication and Communion of this Mystery.
Ch. 3. The hidden Mystery. Ephesians. Paul prayeth for the Saints. Ch. 3.

Soterious Grace, which from the very Creation was secretly included (as a Tree in the Seed) in God's making the whole World by Jesus Christ, even that he would redeem and make us all by him.

10. To the intent that now unto the principalties and powers in heavenly places, might be known by the church the manifold wisdom of God, According to the eternal purpose which he purposed in Christ Jesus our Lord:

10, 11. That now in this Collection of the Universal Church in Christ, as in a Glass, or as in the clear Effects, the very Spiritual Principalities and Powers above us in the Heavens might see more of God's eternal Council opened, and manifold Wisdom displayed, than they knew before.

Note, 1. That Superior Spirits are Principalities and Powers, either over Political Societies there, or as Rulers over us here below, as Guardians: See Job 5. 14. Exod. 23. 20, 23. & 32. 34. Num. 20. Gen. 24. 7. 40. Psa. 34. 7. Dan. 10. 13. &c. It's like it's both.

2. That even Superior Powers are not Omnipotent, but may by new Means have new increased Knowledge; and therefore Saints in Heaven are not more knowing.

3. That it is in Heaven that the Great Ends of God, in Redeeming and Gathering his Church, are attained.

12. In whom we have boldness and access with confidence by the faith of him.

12. In whom we all that trust in him, may come with boldness and confident hope of acceptance to God.

13. Wherefore I desire that ye faint not at my tribulations for you, which is your glory.

13. Wherefore, I beseech you, be not discouraged by my Sufferings for preaching to you; for it is your Honour to have the Ministry of your Salvation thus attended by me.

14, 15. For this cause I bow my knees unto the Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, of whom the whole family in heaven and earth is named, 16. That he would grant you according to the riches of his glory, to be strengthened with might by his Spirit in the inner man;

14, 15, 16. For this end I beg of God the Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, of whom all the Blessed Society in Heaven and Earth is named his Family, (or of which Christ Jews and Gentiles are named Christians) That of his abundant Grace, in which he will be glorified, he will by his Spirit fortify your Souls.

Note, 1. It is uncertain whether [of whom] relate to the Father, or to Christ.

2. Though Paul speak specially of the Catholic Church of Jews and Gentiles, there's no reason to exclude the glorified Souls; no, nor the Angels, from being part of God's Family, united in and under Christ.

17. That Christ may dwell in your hearts by faith; that ye being rooted and grounded in love, 18. May be able to comprehend with all Saints, what is the breadth, and length, and depth, and height;

19. And to know the love of Christ, which passeth knowledge, that ye might be filled with all the fulness of God.

17, 18, 19. That Christ may by the constant exercise of your Faith upon him, even dwell objectively in your Hearts, (as one Friend by Love and Truth dwell in another) and effectively possess and abide you by his Spirit; that by his Spirit and your Faith, you may be deeply passed with the sense of God's Love, that you may be filled with Love to him and one another, and it may be the very Habit of your Souls, and a rooted Nature in you; that so being qualified by this Faith and Love, you may be able and fit to measure and understand, as all Saints in their several degrees do, the vast and wonderful Dimensions, and so know the Love of Christ, and of the Father in him, which exceedeth our comprehensive and adequate Knowledge, (or which is more excellent than all the Sciences which Heathens and Hereticks boast of;) that so by Faith and Love your Souls may be filled with the highest degrees of Grace, and the Spirit of God.

20. 21. Now
Ch. 4. Paul exhorteth them to unity.

10, 21. Now unto him that is able to do exceeding abundantly above all that we ask or think, according to the power that worketh in us, unto him be glory in the Church by Christ Jesus, throughout all ages, world without end. Amen.

20, 21. Now to that Almighty God who can do for his People exceeding abundantly, above all that we can desire or ask, believe or conceive in our narrow thoughts, as is intimated even in the Power of Safety and Miracles, which he exerciseth in among us now; To him, I say, be Glory in the Church, by the mediation of Jesus Christ, (in whom the Glory of God's Love shineth to us, and by whom we render Praise to God) throughout all Ages, World without end. Amen.

CHAP. IV.

1. Therefore the prisoner of the Lord, beseech you that ye walk worthy of the vocation wherewith ye are called.

2. With all lowliness and meekness, with long-suffering, forbearing one another in love;

3. And to all the saints which are in Rome, the called unto fellowship of his Son. To all them that love our Lord Jesus Christ in sincerity.

4, 5, 6. There is one body, and one Spirit, even as ye are called in one hope of your calling; one Lord, one faith, one baptism, one God and Father of all, who is above all, and through all, and in you all.

5, 6. More particularly, in these seven respects our Unity doth consist: 1. The Church, which is as the Body of Christ, is one Universal Church. 2. The Spirit of God, which as it were animateth it, is One and the same Spirit. 3. The Grace and Heavenly Glory which is the Hope of Believers, which they seek, and for which they forake the World, is One. 4. The Head, Lord, and Saviour of the Church is One and the same. 5. The Essentials of the Christian Faith, or Creed, are One and the same. 6. The Baptismal Vow, and Covenant, and Profession, in which we are devoted to God, the Father, Son, and Holy Ghost, and united Sacramentally to Christ his Church, is One and the same to all in the Essentials. 7. And all have One God and Father in Christ, who is, 1. Transcendently and absolutely above and over all; 2. And unconceivably penetrateth all: And 3. Is in his Essence most intimately in you all, and is All in all things.

Note. That in these seven things, that Unity of the Church consisteth, which is God's preferr'd and conferred Qualification.
on for Christian Communion in Love and Peace. And that as Satan useth to undo by overdoing (and the Pharisaes had more Laws, Traditions, and strictness therein as needful to Communion than Christ had, who would have Mercy rather than Sacrifice.) So it is by adding a multitude of Enabling Canons, Customs, and Opinions as necessary to Communion, that he hath corrupted and torn the visible Church, and turned Love and Communion into Wrath and Persecution.

And yet this Unity must be kept in Peace, and therefore, both Persecuting, and Consuming, Turbulent Unpeaceableness against those that own the seven Points of Union, should be avoided by Christians, and refrained by Magistrates, who must keep the Peace. And whenever God in mercy will heal the lacerated Church, it will be on these terms.

7. But unto every one of us is given grace according to the measure of the gift of Christ.

7. But though we have all one Spirit, and are One in all the forenamed Essentials of our Religion, yet this Unity is found in very great diversity of degrees of Grace, and both degrees and kind of Gifts, (See, 1 Cor. 12.) as it pleaseth Christ to distribute them.

8. Wherefore he faith, When he ascended up on high, he led captivity captive, and gave gifts unto men.

8. As it is said in Psal. 68. 18. When, &e. So when Christ ascended, he triumphed over Satan, Death, and Hell, and sent down from Heaven the Gifts of his Spirit.

9. (Now that he ascended, what is it but that he also descended first into the lower parts of the earth? 10. He that descended, is the same also that ascended up far above all heavens, that he might fill all things.)

9, 10. And when it is said, that he ascended, it importeth, that he first descended into this lower World, into a low Condition, and into the Grave. And therefore it is the same Jesus who was here humbled in his Defect, who is exalted by his Ascend, far above all Heavens which Man doeth see or know, that thence (as the Sun by the influence of its Heat, and Light, and Motion, filleth all below,) according to the receptive Capacity of each, to our glorified Lord, by his administering Influix, might fill all with common or special Grace, according to their various receptivity.

11. And he gave some, Apostles: and some, Prophets: and some, Evangelists: and some, Pastors and Teachers; 12. For the perfecting of the saints, for the work of the ministry, for the edifying of the body of Christ:

11, 12. And he gave, by Qualification and Ministration, some Apostles, sent by his own Mouth, to be the most eminent Attenders of his Miracles, Doctrine, and Restoration, and Founders of the Churches; some Prophets, by Revelation and Inspiration to confirm the Christian Faith; some Evangelists, whose Work was as eminently qualified to go abroad, to preach the Gospel, and gather Churches, or confirm them, without being fixed to a special Place or Flock; and some Pastors and Teachers (called also Bishops and Elders) who were set over the particular Churches as their Guides and Instructors, as being their special Flocks and Charge. And all these Gifts and Offices are given for that Ministerial Work which God (who worketh by Means) will use, to bring on all his Saints towards the Perfection of themselves and of the Church, and by the Increase, Concord, and Sanctity of the Members, to edify or build up this Body of Christ.

13. Till we all come in the Unity of the faith, and of the knowledge of the Son of God, unto a perfect man, unto the measure of the stature of the fulness of Christ:

13. Till by this increase of Number and Holiness, and Concord, we all Jews and Gentiles make up that Church, which in the Unity of Faith, and Knowledge and Acknowledgment of Christ, attaineth to that degree of perfection, in which consisteth the measure of Grace, and fulness of Stature, which Christ will bring his Church unto, which is that maturity which imitar eth our natural growth from Infancy to full Manhood.

14. That
14. That we henceforth be no more children, tossed to and fro, and carried about with every wind of doctrine, by the sleight of men, and cunning craftiness, whereby they lie in wait to deceive:

15. But speaking the truth in love, may grow up into him in all things, which is the head, even Christ:

16. From whom the whole body fitly jointed together and compacted by that which every joint supplieth, according to the effectual working in the measure of every part, maketh increase of the body, unto the edifying of it self in love.

reception and office according to its proper Place and Office.

Note. There is no Text which is so plausibly wreathed to maintain Popery, that is, One Universal Humane Government of the whole Church on Earth, Monarchical or Aristocratical, (by Pope, Council, or combined Metropolitans, as one Sovereignty) as this: It seeming, to forestalled Men, to speak of the Church as compacted in one Universal Policy, so governed: And it is a Text which must be greatly studied against Dividers, and yet vindicated from Roman Perverters.

I. Doubtless the Text speaketh strongly for Universal Concord, and not only for an uniting of Members in several Congregations, which shall each be Independent, which would be but like so many Limbs cut off from the Body; but for an uniting of Congregations, yes, of all through the World, in one compacted Body: And therefore all Christians must abhor Dissension and Separation, or Schism.

II. Yet it is evident that Paul speaketh of no one Head but Christ, and of no sort of Universal Sovereignty on Earth as under him. And indeed it is an Office that Humane Nature here is not capable of, either in Monarchy or Aristocracy; it's impossible for any Church-Sovereign Power, save Divine, (or Angelical at least) to rule the Church by Legislation, Judgment, and Execution, all over the Earth; much of it being out of our reach, as the Moon is: And the Church is under contrary, enemy, militant, Civil Governors, which maketh it the more impossible. And the only Pretenders have been the great Dividers and Destroyers. What then is here meant, and to be done for Unity?

Not to feign impossible Terms, such as are An Universal Sovereignty, and Multitudes of Humane, Doubtful, Unnecessary Canons; which are the most effectual causes of Discord. But, 1. to take up with Christ's own prescribed terms of Union here laid down, v. 3, 4, 5. If Christ have not made the Laws of Church Union, he is not the maker of the Church; for Unity is essential to it (as to a House or Body). 2. To be one in Love, and represent all Tyranny that would destroy Love and Peace. 3. As in the several Assemblies they must exercise the same Faith and Hope, and love and worship the same God and Saviour, by the same Spirit, so that these Churches must live in love to each other,
other, and avoid all Discord: And if any breach be made between them in Faith or Love, they must use all reasonable means to heal it; which is by Writing or Messengers giving to each other an account of their Faith and Practice; and when need is, confuting in Synods, or one or of divers Nations: Not that such Synods are Governors of many Churches by a Major Vote, or by Metropolitan Power (save as they may exercise the Magistrates Power of the Sword by his Command, which (were such fit) can be given only in his own Dominions, out of which Synods and Metropolitans can have no Political Governing Power: But the Major Vote must be regarded for Concord, which is the use of Synods; yet so that it prevail not against Divine Authority and Law, nor against Reason, or the Churches good. And therefore, 1. Synods are but for Counsel and Agreement. 2. And General Councils impossible and needless, it being impossible and needless that all the World have notice of the Cares of every particular Church, much less that they meet for the redress. 3. And when Corruption and Tyranny (as under the Arians and Papists) have got the Major Vote, the minor are not bound to agree with them, but to dissent. As the Earth is God’s Kingdom, and all Kings are his Officers in their several Kingdoms, but neither any one Man, or many Conuniit in one Arithocratie or Council, are One Sovereign Governing Power over all the Earth; but only should by Consultations seek to keep the Common Love and Peace; even so all Churches and Christians on Earth are Christ’s Kingdom or Church Universal, and all True Pastors are his Officers in their several Churches, but neither one Man, or many Conumnit as one Political Person, or Arithocratie, are one Sumna Potestas over all Christians on Earth; but those that are within the reach and notice of each other should when it’s needful, by Synods and Consultations, keep up Unity of Faith and Love, and all needful Concord. Had not Princes been made too capable of abuse, they would not take well the Doctrine of a late Learned and Triumphant Writer, who tells us, that tho’ de facto, Princes do not, yet they ought to unite their Power in one Council, which should be the brightest Governor of them all: And so, 1. all Kings must be Subjects. 2. Arithocracy must rule Monarchy. 3. How shall all Kings from the Antipodes, or over all the Earth meet? 4. Who shall call them? 5. Where must they meet? 6. Shall they trust their Crowns to Delegate Subjects? 7. What if they must be Heathens and Mohammedans, and most Christian Heretics in each others account? 8. If he be so confounded to limit this Sovereign Diet, who shall limit it, and how? And then the Universal Sovereign is still wanting.

They that dare plead for no more than Universal Communion, should have understood that Communion as such belongs but to a Community, and a mere Community is no Body Politick, or Governed Society, but a Confederacy of Equals (as to Rule.) With respect to God only the World is one Governed Kingdom, and with respect to Christ, the Church in one Ruled Body Politick; But neither of them is One as united in any Vicarious Sovereigns, but in their several Provinces must keep Communion in Faith, Love and Peace.

17. This I say therefore, and reiterate in the Lord, that ye henceforth walk not as other Gentiles walk in the vanity of their mind. 17. Therefore I charge you as from Christ, that you that are Christians live not henceforth as the Unconverted Heathen, that follow their own false Imaginations.

18. Having the understanding darkened, being alienated from the life of God, through the ignorance that is in them, because of the blindness of their heart: 19. Who being past feeling, have given themselves over unto lasciviousness, to work all uncleanness with greediness.

19. Their Understanding being darkened, and they being more strangers to a holy living on and unto God, because of the ignorance and blindness of their Minds, which have lost the very light of Nature, and being stupefied by Pravity and Custom in sin, have given themselves up to fleshly Lusts, to do the filthy acts with greedily desire and delight.

20. But ye have not so learned Christ; 21. If so be that ye have heard him, and have been taught...
taught by him, as the truth is in Jesus:

20, 21. But Christ has taught you, and you have learned a clean contrary course of Life: If indeed you have heard what he teacheth, and have been taught the True Doctrine of Christ.

22. That ye put off concerning the former conversation, the old man, which is corrupt according to the deceitful lusts: 23. And be renewed in the spirit of your mind;

22, 23. That ye put on the new fleshly mind and life, which is corrupt in disposition and practice, by the deceit of sensual lusts: And that you be made New men, in the very bent and habits of your Mind, with New Judgment and Affections.

24. And that ye put on the new man, which after God is created in righteousness and true holiness.

24. And that you become New Men, possessed of New Dispositions, wrought in you by God, according to his Word, and for his Glory, confiding in Righteousness and true Holiness.

25. Wherefore putting away lying, speak every man truth with his neighbour; for we are members one of another.

25. And in particular, as parts of your Righteousness, see that you avoid all lying and fraud, and speak the plain truth to one another; for we are all fellow Members of one Body, and therefore should not be false and fraudulent to each other.

26. Be ye angry and sin not; let not the sun go down upon your wrath:

26. Anger is given us for the due resisting of evil; but use it not blindly, rashly and inordinately to sin; much less may you lie down and continue in such sin.

27. Neither give place to the devil.

27. And do not yield to Satan, who by many provocations would draw you to sin.

28. Let him that stealeth steal no more: but rather let him labor, working with his hands the thing which is good, that he may have to give to him that needeth.

28. If any have by want or error been tempted to steal, or take anything that is another's against his Will, let him do so no more, nor by idleness continue his necessities, but as he is able labor in some profitable work, and that not only to supply his own wants, but to relieve as many others as he well can.

29. Let no corrupt communication proceed out of your mouth, but that which is good to the use of edifying, that it may minister grace unto the hearers.

29. Let no sinful, rotten, or filthy discourse come out of your Mouths, (which will pollute a polluted Heart, and may corrupt the hearers) but let your words be such as are not only harmless to others, but profitable, even that which is useful to edification, (for useless truth it self is not to be chosen.)

30. And grieve not the Holy Spirit of God, whereby ye are sealed unto the day of redemption.

30. For the Spirit of God, which is his Mark and Seal upon you, to prepare you for the day of Salvation, is a hater of all filthiness and vanity, and a lover of Purity and Holiness, and Mutual Edification: And though he have not Paffion and Grief as Men have, yet as offended Men will in displeasure forsake that which is filthy and abhorred, so will the Spirit of God in displeasure forsake a filthy sinner: And that is one of the worst kind of Punishment.

31. Let all bitterness, wrath, and anger, and clamour, and evil-speaking be put away from you, with all malice.

31. And God's Spirit being the Spirit of Love, cast away Malice and all that favoureth it; bitterness, wrath, and hurtful anger, clamorous, fierce and ill and hurtful words.

32. And be ye kind one to another, tender-hearted, forgiving one another, even as God for Christ's sake hath forgiven you.

32. As having the same Spirit in the
same Body, be kind and tender hearted one to another, taking the good or hurt of each other as your own: And as you can easily forbear and forgive your selves, and being that others forgive you, so forgive one another, and that out of the belief and thankful sense of God's forgiving you much more, for the sake of Jesus Christ.

CHAP. V.

1. Be ye therefore followers of God, as dear children:

2. And walk in love, as Christ also hath loved us, and hath given himself for us, as an offering and a sacrifice to God for a sweet-smelling savour.

3. Having therefore so obliging an example of your Heavenly Father, knew that you are his true beloved Children, by imitating him; and let Love be your very Nature and Course of life, remembering still how Christ hath loved us, and given himself for us, an offering and sacrifice for our sins, with which God was highly pleased in him.

4. But fornication, and all uncleanness, or covetousness, let it not be once named amongst you, as cometh saints: Neither filthines, nor foolish talking, nor jesting, which are not convenient: but rather giving of thanks.

5. But let not Fornication or any uncleanness, or filthy lust be once named amongst you, unless by necessary opposition and declamation; for this is the course befudding all Christians, who must be pure or Saints: Nor yet use any ribald talk, or filthy action, nor foolish speaking, nor vain jesting or drollery, the foam of a light vain wit: for these are unbecoming Holy Persons; but rather employ your tongues in thanks and joyful praise to God, and in holy edifying Discourse.

6. For this ye know, that no whoremonger, nor unclean person, nor covetous man who is an Idolater, hath any inheritance in the kingdom of Christ, and of God.

7. Let none pretend that Christianity by freeing them from the Law, giveth them liberty to sin unpunished: For if you are Christians, the Word and Law of Christ hath taught you, that no Whoremonger, or Unclean Person, or Covetous Person, who is an Idolater by loving the World more than God (or one that imiteth Idolaters in lufts), hath rights of Inheritance in Heaven, or in the Holy Church on Earth.

8. Let no man deceive you with vain words: for because of these things cometh the wrath of God upon the children of disobedience.

9. Be not ye therefore partakers with them.

10. Nor let Hereticks or Libertines deceive you with false Pretenances of Liberty; for these are the Sins for which God's Wrath cometh on the Unbelievers, and therefore will do so on all the Disobedient that live in them: Therefore be not you Partakers in the Sin, if you would not partake also of the Punishment.

11. For ye were sometimes darkness, but now ye are light in the Lord: walk as children of light.

12. For you were in darkness formerly your selves, but Christ hath brought you into the light of saving Knowledge: Live then as in the Light, according to the Gospel and Spirit of Christ, and do that of which you need not be ashamed.

13. For the fruit of the Spirit is, in all goodness, and righteousness, and truth) proving what is acceptable unto the Lord.

14. And have no fellowship with the unfruitful works of darkness, but rather reprove them.

15. Communicate not with these Heathens and Hereticks Works of Darkness, and fleshly Lufts, but rather do your best to save Men from them by reproof.

16. For it is a shame even to speak of those things which are done of them in secret.

17. For
12. For their secret Filthiness, which cannot bear the Light, is such as Modernity is both to name.

13. But all things that are reproved, are made manifest by the light: for whatsoever doth make manifest, is light.

14. But all things, when the Light discovereth them, are manifest; and, if approvable, need not fear it: for the Doctrine and Spirit of Christ are a manifesting Light.

15. Wherefore be ye, awake, thou that sleepest, and arise from the dead, and Christ shall give thee light.

16. Which is the sure of Isa. 60.1, which calleth the People that slept in Darkness to awake, that the Lord may shine upon them; which Christ doth now do to true Believers.

17. See then that ye walk circumspectly, not as fools, but as wise, redeeming the time, because the days are evil.

18. See then that you live not carelessly, but with watchfulness and accurate circumspection, not as Fools that see not, or mind not their danger, but as Wise Men, that look on every side, and are careful to avoid all sorts of Evil: And therefore take hold of the present Opportunity, and use well the Light of the Gospel while you have it; for the World is round about you full of Snares and Dangers, which without wise Circumspection cannot be avoided.

19. Wherefore be ye not unwise, but understanding what the will of the Lord is.

20. And be not drunk with wine, wherein is excess; but be filled with the Spirit: Speaking to your selves in psalms, and hymns, and spiritual songs, singing and making melody in your heart to the Lord.

21. Let Wives shew their Subjection to Christ, by submitting to their Husbands, as by his Command. For the Husband is under Christ the Head or Ruler of the Wives, to govern her in Love, and provide her, as Christ is the Supreme Head and Ruler.
Ch. 5. The Duty of wives. Ephesians. Husbands; and children. Ch. 5.5.

Ruler of the Church, and the Saviour of it as his Body.

24. Therefore as the church is subject unto Christ, so let the wives be to their own husbands in every thing.

24. Therefore as the Church is in all things to be subject to Christ, so must the Wives be to their Husbands, in all things belonging to that Relation, under Christ.

25. Husbands, love your wives, even as Christ also loved the church, and gave himself for it:

26. That he might sanctifie and cleanse it with the washing of water, by the word;

25, 26. Husbands, imitate Christ; in loving your Wives, as Christ did his Church, for which (in a special Sense) he gave himself by death, that he might sanctifie it to God, and cleanse it from Sin, by washing away their Guilt and Filth, signified and sealed in Baptism, and by the Promises and Preaching of his Word.

27. That he might present it to himself a glorious Church, not having spot or wrinkle, or any such thing; but that it should be holy, and without blemish.

27. That he may prepare it for the great Marriage-day, and then present it to himself, cleansed and beautified, without Sin, Guilt, or Blemish, but perfect in Holiness, and glorious.

28. So ought men to love their wives, as their own bodies; he that loveth his wife, loveth himself.

28. As Eve was taken out of Adam, so the Union between Husband and Wife is so near, that Men should love their Wives In a sort as their own Bodies; and to love a Wife, should be as the loving of our selves.

29. For no man ever yet hated his own flesh; but nourished and cherisheth it, even as the Lord the church.

29. And as Nature causeth All Men to love, nourish, and cherish their own Flesh, and not to hate it; so must Men do by their Wives, as Christ doth by the Church.

30. For we are members of his body, of his flesh, and of his bones.

30. And as Eve was said to be Adam, Flesh of his Flesh, and Bone of his Bone; so, by this figure, we may say of the Church and Christ in a spiritual sense.

31. For this cause shall a man leave his father and mother, and shall be joyned unto his wife; and they two shall be one flesh.

31. And as it was then said, [A man shall leave, &c.] so must Believers leave all for Christ, as Christ laid down his Life for them; and they shall be made one.

32. This is a great mystery: but I speak concerning Christ and the church.

32. This that is said of Adam and Eve, and of Marriage, did mysteriously prefigure the Marriage of Jesus Christ and the Church; and of this it is that I now speak.

33. Nevertheless, let every one of you in particular, so love his wife even as himself; and the wife see that the reverence her husband.

33. But though I have turned my Speech to Christ and the Church, I repeat my Counsel; Let every Man love his Wife with such an end, constant, and forbearing Love, as he loveth himself; and let the Wife see that the love in loving Submission and Reverence to her Husband.

CHAP. VI.

1. Children, obey your parents in the Lord: for this is right.

1. Let Children be obedient to their Parents, under God, in obedience to him; for he hath commanded it.

2. Honour thy father and mother, (which is the first commandment with promise)

2. Saying, Honour thy Father and Mother: And though general Promises be intimated in the First and Second Commandment, this is the first Commandment that hath annexed the Promise of the Land which God was then leading the Israelites to; as it is said,

3. That it may be well with thee.
Ch. 6. The days of parent.

3. And thou mayst live long, and pro-

6. And men, pleasers, but as the serv-

7. With good will doing service,
Ch. 6. The Christian armour. Ephesians. Tyebius commended. Ch. 6.

flesh and blood, but against principalities, against powers, against the rulers of the darkness of this world, against spiritual wickedness in high places.

12. For the great conflict which Christians are engaged in, is not merely against Men, but against Devils, who by God's Ordination, and the Success of their Temptations, are Principalities and Powers, and the Rulers of the Persons and Ways of Darkness, Ignorance, and Unbelief in the World, and are spiritual Wickedness, above us in the Air.

13. Therefore take unto you the whole armour of God, that ye may be able to withstand in the evil day, and having done all, to stand.

14. Stand therefore, having your loins girt about with truth, and having on the breastplate of righteousness; 15. And your feet shod with the preparation of the gospel of peace.

14, 15. Stand therefore to your Obligations to Faith and Holiness. 1. See that the firm Belief of the Truth of the Gospel, against all Deceivers, be to you as a Military Girdle about your Loins. 2. And that universal sincere Obedience to God, and Uprightness of Life towards all Men, joined to your Pardon through the Merits of Christ, may be to you as a Breastplate to Souldiers in Fight, that no Adversary may have Matter of just Accusation against you. 3. And that the Gospel of Christ, which speaketh Peace to the World, and to your selves, may so dwell in your Hearts, to make you Men of Peace, and in your Mouths to invite others to Peace with God and one another, that it may be you as thole Shoes were to Souldiers, which they put on when they went to War, to keep their Feet from hurt and danger.

16. Above all, taking the shield of faith, wherewith ye shall be able to quench all the fiery darts of the wicked.

16. Above all, see that you firmly believe and trust to the Word and Promises of God, which will be to you as a Shield or Target to a Souldier, by which he is preferred from all the Darts or Shots that are made against him. And though Satan's Darts be fiery Persecution and fierce Temptations, this will defend you, and frustrate all.

17. And take the helmet of Salvation, and the sword of the Spirit, which is the word of God:

17. And trust fully in Christ as your Saviour for Salvation, and this will, as an Helmet (or Head-piece) to a Souldier, defend your chiefest Part from danger. And skillfully use the Word of God, indited and sealed by his Spirit, which will serve you for Defence and Conquest by the help of the same Spirit, as a Sword death to a Souldier.

18. Praying always with all prayer and supplication in the Spirit, and watching thereunto with all perseverance, and supplication for all saints;

18. And because you must do all in dependance on God, see that you be constant in all sorts or parts of Prayer, for your selves and others; even such Prayer as Gods Spirit directeth you to by his Word, and exciter you to by his Grace. And for that end, keep your Minds by watchfulness in a serious praying temper, and be not cold or weary, but hold on; and forget not to pray for all holy persons (and holy things).

Note, That, 1. They that scorn praying in or by the Spirit, scorn the Work of the Spirit in all acceptable Prayer to God.

2. They that forbid Prayer, forbid that which God commandeth, and his Spirit in us as an Intercessor performeth.

3. When God commandeth [All Prayer and Supplication], we must obey him, though many Men would confine us to the Fletters of their narrow defective Words and Books.

4. They
Ch. 6. Paul in Bonds. Ephesians. Tybicus commended. Ch. 6:

4. They that hate, revile, excommunicate unjustly, and persecute those Saints whom God commandeth us to love and pray for, fight under Satan, against Christ.

19. And for me, that utterance may be given unto me, that I may open my mouth boldly, to make known the mystery of the gospel:

19. And let me have a special part in your Prayers, that I may be freed from Fencing Impositions and Restraints, and may have Liberty and Ability boldly to make known the Mystery of Mans Salvation by Christ.

20. For which I am an ambasador in bonds: that therein I may speak boldly, as I ought to speak.

20. For I am in Bonds by Men, though Christ's Ambassador, even for preaching to Men this Gospel of Salvation: But pray for me; that whatever it cost me, I may do my Duty, and speak (though forbidden) as I ought to speak.

Note. That as God worketh by Men, so doth the Devil: And therefore it is no wonder that Paul was in Bonds for preaching Salvation; and that Men make Laws against Praying and Preaching, and if the Devil call it Sedition: For really Praying and Preaching do more to destroy its Kingdom, and save Souls, than Arms can do.

21. But that ye also may know my affairs, and how I do, Tybicus a beloved brother and faithful minister in the Lord, shall make known to you all things:

21. And that you may know how all things go with me. Tybicus will tell you, whom you may curst.

22. Whom I have sent unto you for the same purpose, that ye might know our affairs, and that he might comfort your hearts.

22. I have sent him, that he may represent things truly to you, and help to keep you from discouragement, or undue trouble for my Sufferings.

23. Peace be to the brethren, and love with faith from God the Father and the Lord Jesus Christ.

23. I conclude with this Benediction and Prayer for you. That God the Father of our Lord Jesus Christ will give, maintain, and increase in you all, that confirmed Faith which may fill you with Love, and keep you in Peace and Welfare.

24. Grace be with all them that love our Lord Jesus Christ in sincerity. Amen.

24. And let the Grace, Favour, and Blessing of God be still with all them who love our Lord Jesus Christ with sincere, incorruptible, confirmed Love. Amen.

The Epistle of St. PAUL the Apostle to the PHILIPPIANS.

CHAP. I.

Paul and Timotheus the servants of Jesus Christ, to all the Saints in Christ Jesus, which are at Philippi, with the bishops and deacons: Grace be unto you, and peace from God our Father, and from the Lord Jesus Christ.

1. I Paul, and Timothy, and the gospel which is committed unto me by the commandment of God our Father and our Lord Jesus Christ, which is committed unto me by the commandment of God our Father and our Lord Jesus Christ,

with the Bishops and Deacons there; with them Grace and Peace, which are all Blessings in sum, from God our Father, and Jesus Christ our Lord.

Note. 1. That Dr. Hammond affirming: That Paul meant here all the Bishops and Deacons in Macedonia, or a whole Province, doth this without any cogent Proof; as he faith the like of Corinth, Ephesus, &c. tho it may be granted, that consequent they to whom these Epistles were written were to communicate them to as many as they could.

2. That he contradicted himself in saying, there was but one Bishop in a City, Mm

when elsewhere he faith, there was one of the Jews Church, and another of the Gentiles.

3. That Paul faith it was [the Saints which are at Philippi, with the Bishops and Deacons] to win, which were at Philippi with them. But sure all that were in a Province so great, were not all at Philippi.

And his Conclusion, That every Church in Scripture-times had but One Bishop, with Deacons his Servants, [there being then no middle Order in use:] and that in all the New Testament the Words [Bishop and Presbyter] signified only such as we now call Bishops. Is contrary to the Descriptions of the Churches of Jerusalem, Antioch, Corinth, &c. where, in one Assembly, there were so many Prophets fit for the Publick Ministry, that they needed regulating restraint in Ministering. But thus he must maintain, That de fide no Church had then more than one Presbyter, and so no Bishop more than one fixed Congregation, (being but in one place at one time:) And so that there was no Bishop that governed Presbyters, nor any Presbyters subject to Bishops, (but only to Itinerant Apostles.) So that all that remaineth in controversy will be, Who instituted this middle Order of Presbyters after Scriptures-times? and, Quo jure? and, How it's proved that they had Power so to do?

3. I thank my God upon every remembrance of you. (Always in every prayer of mine for you all, making request with joy)

4. Whenever I remember you, it is with thankfulness to God; and in all my Prayers for you, I do it with joy.

5. For your fellowship in the gospel from the first day until now;

6. For the hearty Communion and Communication in, and for the Gospel, which you have exercised from the first day of your Conversion until now.

7. Being confident of this very thing, that he which hath begun a good work in you, will perform it until the day of Jesus Christ.

8. Not doubting but God, who hath been the Author of this good Beginning, will carry it on, till you are perfected perfect in the day of the coming of Christ.

7. Even as it is meet for me to think this of you all, because I have you in my heart, in as much as both in my bonds, and in the defence and confirmation of the gospel, ye all are partakers of my grace.

8. It is meet that I think this of you all, for you have a great room in my Heart, because in my Bonds and Sufferings, and in all that we do for the defence and confirmation of the Gospel, you have manifested the same Grace, and by your Communication and Co-operation have your part in the Blessing and Reward of my Ministerial Grace and Labours.

8. For God is my record, how greatly I long after you all, in the bowels of Jesus Christ.

9. For God is my Witness, with whom I am partaker of your Welfare, even with that love which Christ hath kindled in me for his own sake, who loveth you.

10. And this I pray, that your love may abound yet more and more in knowledge, and in all judgment;

11. And my Prayer for you is, That you may increase and abound in holy Love to Christ and his Gospel, and each other, and in all spiritual Wisdom and discerning Judgment.

12. That ye may approve things that are excellent; that ye may be sincere, and without offence till the day of Christ;

13. That ye may yet more grow up in the Approbation and Love of the excellent things of Christian Faith, and Life, and Hope, and may be found and sincere in Faith and Life, without warping in Judgment, or scandal in Practice, till the Day of Judgment.

14. Being filled with the fruits of righteousness, which are by Jesus Christ unto the glory and praise of God.

15. And that you may abound with that Righteousness towards God and Man, which is the true Fruit of Faith and of the Holy Spirit, by which you may praise and glorify God.

16. But I would ye should under-stand.
Ch. i. The Faith increased. Philippians. by Paul's sufferings. Ch. i.
derstand, brethren, that the things which happened unto me, have fallen out rather unto the furtherance of the gospel.
12. I think meet to give you notice, lest misinformation discourage you, that my imprisonment and sufferings have not hindered but furthered the Gospel.
13. So that my bonds in Christ are manifest in all the palace, and in all other places;
13. For my imprisonment for Christ, hath but made me, and consequently my Preaching, to be known in the Court, and Places of Judicature, and abroad to others.
14. And many of the brethren in the Lord waxing confident by my bonds, are much more bold to speak the word without fear.
14. And the Example of my Patience, Boldness and Success in Suffering, hath emboldened many of the Brethren, confidently, without fear, to preach and profess the Gospel.
15. Some indeed preach Christ even of envy and strife; and some also of good will. 16. The one preach Christ of contention, not sincerely, supposing to add affliction to my bonds: 17. But the other of love, knowing that I am set for the defence of the gospel.
15, 16, 17. There be some here at Rome, and else-where, that because I reproove them for Judaising by obtruding the Law and Ceremonies of Moses on the Gentiles, and such other Caufes, are quarrellom with me, and reck my Deformation; and while they preach Christ, it is with the mixture of Spleen and Bitterness against me, and in an envious, striving, and reproachful manner, against me; and such as I, who conform not to their Ceremonious Impositions. Thus some preach the same Christ that I do, but contentiously, and not in sincerity, and love, and meekness, but to add to my Bonds the Affliction of Mens Contempt and Disaffection, to turn the Hearts of People from me and my Ministry. But there are others that preach in Christian Love, and carry it with Kindness toward me, knowing that I am called to propagate and defend Christ's Gos-
pel, and that it is that I suffer for, and not for my Paul and Errour, as the other would persuade the People.
18. What then? notwithstanding every way, whether in pretence, or in truth, Christ is preached; and I therein do rejoice; yes; and will rejoice.
18. But though some seek Preeminence, and their own Honour and Interest, and envy me, and joyn too much self-seeking with the Preaching of the Gospel, and do it not with the Love and Sincerity that they ought; yet every way Christ is preached, and I therein rejoice, yes, and will rejoice.

Mts. 1. That they mistake who think Paul speaketh of the Preachers of false Doctrine in any great Point; for he would not rejoice in that. It is but preaching with corrupt Passions and Purposes, perhaps for little Differences, in a spleenick manner, contrary to Love and Peaceableness.
2. Paul here entrench his confessed Different, both against Church-Tyranny, that would forbid those to preach that cross them and their Opinions or Interest, and against those Separatists who cry down the Ministry of those that are faulty in tolerable things, yea that cross them and their Way;
19. For I know that this shall turn to my salvation through your prayer, and the supply of the Spirit of Jesus Christ;
19. For I doubt not but even this accumulating Affliction on me, by envious Brethren, with Heathen Persecutors, shall through your Prayer, and Christ's Spirit, all turn to good, and but further my own and other Men's Salvation.
20. According to my earnest expectation, and my hope, that in nothing shall I be ashamed, but that with all boldness, as always, so now also Christ shall be magnified in my body, whether it be by life or by death.
20. For, as it is my earnest expectation, so it is my comfortable hope, that whether it be by my Life or Death, all that befalls my Body shall be to the honour of Christ, and then I have my End.
21. For to me to live is Christ, and to die is gain.

Mm 2
21. For to me to live, is to serve and honour Christ; he is the End of my Life, and his Work the Business; it is for Christ that I live; and if I die, it will be my gain.

22. But if I live in the flesh, this is the fruit of my labour: yet what I shall choose I wot not.

23. But if God will have me live longer, it will be time given for my fruitful Labour, (or, it will be worth desiring, for my Labour sake;) or, as Bcca. [whereas it will be worth my Labour and Suffering], and what to chuse (if God would leave it to my choice) I know not.

24. For I am in a straight betwixt two, having a desire to depart, and to be with Christ; which is far better:

25. For it is to me a great difficulty to know which is more desirable: I would fain be with Christ, which is far better for me than to be here.

26. Nevertheless, to abide in the flesh, is more needful for you.

27. For my Life seemeth more needful for your further Service.

28. And having this confidence, I know that I shall abide and continue with you all, for your furtherance and joy of faith:

29. And being assured of this, (and knowing withal Christ's Love to his Church) I am persuaded that I shall yet longer continue in Life, for your furtherance, and comfort, and confirmation in your Christian Faith and Hope.

30. That your rejoicing may be more abundant in Jesus Christ for me, by my coming to you again.

31. That when you see me with you again, you may greatly for my sake rejoice in Christ.

32. Onely let your conversation be as it becometh the gospel of Christ: that whether I come and see you, or else be absent, I may hear of your affairs, that ye stand fast in one Spirit, with one mind, striving together for the faith of the gospel:

33. But I beseech you look to this one thing on your own part, that your Conversation may be such as becometh the Belief and Profession of the Gospel of Salvation; that whether I come again to you, or not, I may hear that you stand fast, in One Spirit, actuating you, and with One Mind and loving Concord, (not striving against one another, as Persecutors and Sectaries do, but) cooperating and striving together, to defend and propagate the Belief of the Gospel, (though you may differ about many lesser things.)

34. And in nothing terrified by your adversaries: which is to them an evident token of perdition, but to you of salvation, and that of God.

35. And that you be in nothing terrified by your Adversaries Power or Rage, for their Persecuting, and your Patience, are an evident Proof of their Perdition, but of your Salvation, even by God, who will condemn the Wicked, and justifie the Just.

36. For unto you it is given in the behalf of Christ, not only to believe on him, but also to suffer for his sake;

37. For it is a great addition to your Honour and Felicity, that God hath given you this Blessing, not only to believe on Christ as Christians, but to suffer for him as Martyrs. (For by this you have the Promise of the greatest Reward.)

38. Having the same conflict which ye saw in me, and now hear to be in me.

39. Having the same kind of Conflict with Opposers and Persecutors, which you saw me have when I was with you, and now hear that I have at Rome when I am from you.

Note. It is more violence to the Text, which the Socinians use with Ver. 21, 23, while they expound Ver. 21, of [Gain to the Church by my Martyrdom, and to me only as I shall be rewarded as a Martyr as Christ's coming:] and Ver. 23, of [A desire to depart by Martyrdom, that I may be with Christ at the Resurrection:] or, which is far better for the Church, that will gain more by my Martyrdom, than my Preaching: Clean contrary to what he saith in his Book, Ver. 24, 25, and to theplain Text. Men that can thus use the Scripture, may believe what they like.
Ch. 2. Exhortation to unity, Philippians. and humility. Ch. 2.

1. If there be therefore any consolation in Christ, if any comfort of love, if any fellowship of the spirit, if any bowels and mercies; 2. Fulfil ye my joy, that ye be like-minded, having the same love, being of one accord, of one mind.

3. I adjure or beseech you therefore, as ever you take Christ, our common Head, for your Hope and Comfort, and look to find Comfort in the Exercize of Christian Love to all Saints, and if you are indeed united in the Communion of the same Spirit, (without which you are none of Christs) and if you have any Bowels of Mercy to others, (as all Christians must have,) that you yet make me more joyful by your increas’d Unanimity, that you have all one and the same Affection and Design of Life, that you all love one another as your selves, and be of one accord in your Doctrine and Conscience, and of one Mind and Judgment.

Note, That Paul here supposed that all Christians should live in this Unanimity, Love and Concord, who do but know and agree in the great things which constitute true Christianitie, though they may not have skill enough to know Right from Wrong in many small, indifferent, or circumstantial things. The Church-Tyrants Exposition maketh Paul to scorn them, rather than counsel them; as if he said, I adjure you by all the Comforts of Christ and his Spirit, that you be all so wise as to know all that is in the Bible, yea more, all that any Bishops in Council and all their Canons shall tell you, or command you; yea, that you know not only all the Essentials and Integrals of Religion, but even all the things indifferent, which Canons shall impose on you, to be really indifferent, that is, that every Man and Woman know more than any Emperor on Earth knoweth, or else you cannot live in Christian Love and Comfort: It is this Diabolical Exposition of the Scripture, that hath torn and ruined the Christian World.

2. And yet Paul here implieth, That no Christian should affectedly cuple any lawful Command of their Superiors, or Custom of the Church, but should to avoid Singularity and Disobedience, as to do any thing, save sin, for Peace and Concord.

3. Let nothing be done through strife, or vain-glory, but in lowliness of mind let each esteem other better than themselves.

4. Look not every man on his own things, but every man also on the things of others.

5. Specially take heed of Selfishnes which maketh Men over-regardful of all that is their own, their own Interest in Honour, or Profit, or Opinion; and to set too light by other Mens, yea, to set against the Interest of others to advance their own.

Note, That Self-denial and Love (or, to love others as our selves) are the great Means to keep and call out Schism; and the want of them in Clergy and Laity, is the common Mischief and Ruine of the Churches.

5, 6. Let this mind be in you, which was also in Christ Jesus: who being in the form of God, thought it not robbery to be equal with God:

6. Learn this of Christ, who being God, the Brightness of his Fathers Glory, and the express Image of his Subsistence, (or person) Heb. 1. 3. thought it no Robbery to be Equal with God the Father, being One with him.

7. But made himself of no reputation, and took upon him the form
form of a servant, and was made in the likeness of men:

7. But yet condescended to assume Humane Nature, and so in that which was visible was a Man, and a Servant, obliged to Obedience in the most humble Instance, and so made himself, by this humble Self-denial, of no Reputation with the unbelieving World, that knew not his Divinity thus veiled, yea, counted him a Malefactor.

8. And being found in fashion as a man, he humbled himself, and became obedient unto death, even the death of the cross.

9. And being visible only in his Humane Nature, like other Men, he yet further humbled himself, obeying his Father, by submitting to the reproachful, curfed Death of being crucified, as accused of Blasphemy, and Treason against Cesar.

10. Wherefore God also hath highly exalted him, and given him a name which is above every name:

11. Wherefore God hath highly exalted him in that Manhood, in which he suffered, and hath given him greater Dignity, and Honour, and Renown than any Creature ever had over them all.

12. That at the name of Jesus, every knee should bow, of things in heaven, and things in earth, and things under the earth;

13. That to his Dignity and Power all Creatures should be subject, and Angels, Men, and Devils should by their submission respectively honour his Name.

14. And that every tongue should confess, that Jesus Christ is Lord to the glory of the Father.

15. And that all reasonable Creatures acknowledge Christ's Dominion, to the Glory of the Father.

16. Wherefore my beloved, as ye have always obeyed, not as in my presence only, but now much more in my absence; work out your own salvation with fear and trembling.

17. Wherefore as you have always lived in Obedience to Christ, both while I was with you, and much more since, go on, and finish or perfect that holy Obedience which God requireth of you, for the obtaining of Salvation, and that with holy care and diligence, and warful cautelous fear of miscarriage.

18. For it is God which worketh in you, both to will and to do of his good pleasure.

19. Which I may the more confidently exhort you to in hope, because you are not the prime Agents required to do this meekly of yourselves, but solely under God, the prime Cause of all Good, both of Nature and Grace, who doth not onely give you Power, but worketh in you both the Act of Willing and of Working, of his own good Pleasure.

20. Do all things without murmuring, and disputings:

21. And do all your Works of Obedience to God, in Love and Peace with one another, without murmuring at your Work, or one another, and without provoking Wranglings.

22. That ye may be blameless and harmless, the sons of God without rebuke, in the midst of a crooked and perverse nation, among whom ye shine as lights in the world:

23. That you may be unreprouvable and sincere, the blameless Sons of God, in the midst of a naughty, crooked, perverse Generation, or sort of Men, among whom ye shine as lights in the World.

24. Holding forth the word of life; that I may rejoice in the day of Christ, that I have not run in vain, neither laboured in vain.

25. That in the day of Christ's Judgment, I may rejoice not only in the sincerity of my labour, but in the success that I have not preached, and laboured, and suffered without fruit.

26. Yea, and if I be offered upon the sacrifice and service of your faith, I joy, and rejoice with you all.

27. Yea, if I suffer death as a Sacrifice for the service of your faith, your Constancy.
Ch. 2. Timotheus and Philippians. Epaphroditus commended.

Ch. 2.

Constandy and Welfare will make it matter of joy to me for your sakes.

18. For the same cause also do ye joy, and rejoice with me.
18. And if my sufferings be my joy, let it be yours also; be not discouraged, but rejoice with me.

19. But I trust in the Lord Jesus, to send Timotheus shortly unto you, that I also may be of good comfort, when I know your state.

19. But I hope by the mercy of the Lord, to send Timothy shortly to you, that when by him I know your state, I may have comfort in you, as you may have in me.

20. For I have no man like-minded, who will naturally care for your state.
20. For I have no man equal to him in Love to you, who will care for your state with such affection, even as Nature teacheth Men, to care for their Children as themselves.

21. For all seek their own, not the things which are Jesus Christ's.
21. For all are so much set on minding their own Matters, and seeking their own Interest, that it abateth their Zeal and Diligence in seeking the Interest and things of Christ.

Note. 1. That selfishly to prefer their own carnal Interests to Christ's, is a certain mark of a Graceless Hypocrite. 2. Therefore Paul meaneth not that all are such predominatingly, but that all too much seek their own, and Christ's too little. 3. But that this selfishness is the Plague of the Clergy and Church, culpably in all in various degrees, and predominatingly in False-hearted Hypocrites.

22. But ye know the proof of him, that as a son with the father, he hath served with me in the gospel.
22. But you know what experience you and I have had of him, that with the love of a Son, and the diligence of a Servant, he hath assisted me in my Ministry of the Gospel.

23. Him therefore I hope to send prefently, so soon as I shall see how it will go with me.
23. Him I hope to send as soon as I know, and can by him tell you, how it will go with me.

24. But I trust in the Lord, that I also my self shall come shortly.
24. And I trust that the Lords Mercy will deliver me, and I shall shortly come my self.

25. Yet I supposed it necessary to send to you Epaphroditus, my brother, and companion in labour, and fellow-souldier, but your messenger, and he that ministered to my wants.
25. But I thought good to send you back Epaphroditus, who is my Brother and Fellow-labourer, and Messenger, who from you supplied my wants.

26. For he longed after you all, and was full of heavinesse, because that ye had heard that he had been sick.
26. He longed to be with you, and comfort you by the sight of his health, hearing that his sickness made you sad.

27. For indeed he was sick nigh unto death: but God had mercy on him; and not on him only, but on me also, left I should have sorrow upon sorrow.
27. He was nigh to death, but God in mercy to him and me recovered him, not adding his death to my affliction.

28. I sent him therefore the more carefully, that when ye see him again, ye may rejoice, and that I may be the less sorrowful.
28. Note, That Mercies restored after Danger, affect us more than those continued in Prosperity.

29. Receive him therefore in the Lord with all gladness, and hold such in reputation: 30. Because for the work of Christ he was nigh unto death, not regard-
Ch. 3. Beware of false teachers. Philippians. All lost for Christ. Ch. 3.

ing his life to supply your lack of service toward me.

39, 39. Receive him gladly as returned to you by God, and account such honorable, for it was for the work of Christ, that he willingly hazarded his life by his Travels and labour to be serviceable to me as your Messenger in your stead.

CHAP. III.

1. Finally, my brethren, rejoice in the Lord. To write the same things to you, to me indeed is not grievous, but for you it is safe.

1. Finally Brethren, serve God with joyful hearts: That I write to you the same things which I have formerly taught you, and warned you of, is not through sloth or cowardice in me, but for your own safety, as needful for you.

2. Beware of dogs, beware of evil workers, beware of the circumcision.

2. To wit, that you take heed of the worrying, hurtful sort of Men, who live in wickedness, and calling themselves the Circumcision, are indeed the Conversion, that cut and rend the Churches.

3. For we are the circumcision, which worship God in the Spirit, and rejoice in Christ Jesus, and have no confidence in the flesh.

3. For we are the Children of Circumcised Abraham, who worship God in Spirit and Truth, and have no confidence in Flethly Privileges, or Carnal Ceremonies, our Jewish Worship.

4. Though I might also have confidence in the flesh. If any other man thinketh that he hath whereof he might trust in the flesh, I more:

4. Though if Judaism were matter of trust or boasting, I have more such cause than any of them.

5. Circumcised the eighth day, of the stock of Israel, of the tribe of Benjamin, an Hebrew of the Hebrews; as touching the law, a Pharisee;

6. Concerning zeal, perfecting the church; touching the righteousness which is in the law, blameless.

5, 6. I was Circumcised as the Law required, was an Israelite, a Benjamite, an Hebrew, a Pharisee, the strictest Sect in Religion; not cold in Religion, but a zealous perverter of the Church, which I thought had been against it: And as to the outward observance of the Law of Moses, I seemed to Men to just and blameless, that none accused me.

7. But what things were gain to me, those I counted loss for Christ.

7. But I willingly disclaim all confidence in these, and reject all as loss that would keep me from Christ.

8. Yea doubters, and I count all things but loss, for the excellency of the knowledge of Christ Jesus my Lord; for whom I have suffered the loss of all things, and do count them but dung that I may win Christ.

8. Yes, I reject all as loss and hurtful to me, which stand against the excellency of the knowledge of Christ, for whom I have readily suffered the loss of all things, and count them but as Dung in order to my part in Christ, and that I may be found in him.

9. And be found in him, not having mine own righteousness, which is of the law, but that which is through the faith of Christ, the righteousness which is of God by faith.

9. Not having, and trusting not in that Righteousness which consisteth in keeping the Law of Moses, which is of my own Works, and I accounted formerly to be my justifying Righteousness, but that which is of Faith in Christ, even the Righteousness which is of God free Gift by believing acceptance of his purchased and offered Grace.

10. That I may know him, and the power of his resurrection, and the fellowship of his sufferings, being
Ch. 3. Not to be carnal.

10. By which I shall gain the knowledge of Christ, and of the great Mystery of Salvation by him, and the powerful work of his Grace and quickening Spirit and preserving Providence, answereth in his Members that power that raised him from the Dead, and a Communion with him in sufferings, by which I shall be made conformable to him as Crucified for our Sins; and thus in all be made as a Member suitable to him that is my Head.

11. If by any means I might attain unto the resurrection of the dead:

12. Not as though I had already attained, either were already perfect: but I follow after, that if I may apprehend that for which also I am apprehended of Christ Jesus.

13. Brethren, I count not my self to have apprehended: but this one thing I do, forgetting those things which are behind, and reaching forth unto those things which are before, 14. I press toward the mark, for the prize of the high calling of God in Christ Jesus.

15. Let us therefore, as many as be perfect, be thus minded: and if in any thing ye be otherwise minded, God shall reveal even this unto you.

16. And let all that be found sincere Christians, holding these things that are necessary to Salvation, be thus minded, and with joint endeavour confessing our Defects, thus press toward the End of our Faith in Love: And then, if through imperfection of Knowledge you come short, and differ in other things, while you wait on God in Humility, Love, and Peace, God will in time make you know what yet is wanting to you.

17. Nevertheless, whereto we have already attained, let us walk by the same rule, let us mind the same thing.

18. God that hath sent me to teach you, hath herein also made me an Exemplar to you; I beseech you therefore herein follow me, (in humble striving towards Perfection, uniting in sincere Christianity, and bearing in other things with each other, till God teach you the rest.)

19. (For many walk, of whom I have told you often, and now tell you even weeping, that they are...
are the enemies of the cross of Christ: 19. Whose end is destruction, whose God is their belly: and whose glory is in their shame, who mind earthly things.)

18, 19. For many, of whom I have oft told you, and now mention them with tears, for their own sakes and the Churches, do so live, as that while they are called Christians, they are such Enemies to the bearing of the Cross, in following a Crucified Christ, that they will suffer nothing for their Faith: For taking up Christianity notionally in their Brains, without the Life and Power on their Hearts, the World was never overcome, or their Lust mortified by it; so that their Belly, or fleshly Lust, is the God which they most love and obey; and while they glory that they know more of Christian Liberty than we do, and so lawfully please fleshly Lusts, it is their Shame and Bruiššns which they glory in: And therefore Destruction will be their end.

20. For our conversation is in heaven, from whence also we look for the Saviour, the Lord Jesus Christ: 21. Who shall change our vile body, that it may be fashioned like unto his glorious body, according to the working whereby he is able even to subdue all things unto himself.

20, 21. But our City-freedom, Revelation, Treasure, Converse, and Business is in Heaven, among the Heavenly Society, in the Jerusalem above: From thence, by Faith and joyful Hope, we look for the Saviour, the Lord Jesus, who is our Head and Intercessor there: and who will not only receive our Souls at death, but will also change these vile Bodies, (which being made of the low dissoluble Elements, are a dog to our Souls, and must corrupt like the Flesh of Brutes) and will make them like his own now-glorious Body, (Spiritual, incorruptible, and glorious:) and this he can and will do, how unlikely soever it appears to us, by the exercise of his Omnipotency, by which he can conquer all Difficulties and Enemies, for the accomplishing of the Work of the Salvation of his Church.

Note. 1. That the great difference between miserable Hypocrites and sound Christians is, that the former set most by Flesh and Earth, and the latter by the Hopes of Heaven, to which they subject all worldly Interest, and on which and for which they live and labour most, as Worldlings do for a Worldly Welfare.

2. That a false, sensual, worldly, unmortified Heart, betrayeth Hypocrites into worldly sensual Opinions and Heresies, and they easily believe all to be lawful which maketh for their fleshly worldly Interests and Lusts, because their false Hearts would have it to be lawful.

CHAP. IV.

I. Therefore, my brethren, dearly beloved and longed for, my joy and crown, so stand fast in the Lord, my dearly beloved.

1. Note, That the most amiable Christians have need of Warning and earnest Exhortation against Backsliding by Temptation and Deceivers.

2. I beseech Euodia, and beseech Syntiche, that they be of the same mind in the Lord.

2. Note, It's like he heard of Contention between these two, which he beseecheth them to cease.

3. And I intreat thee also, true Yoke-fellow, help those women which laboured with me in the gospel, with Clement also, and with other my fellow labourers, whose names are in the book of life.

3. And I intreat thee, my true Fellow-labourer, (it's like he meaneth Epaphroditus, but uncertain:) take care of those Women that furthered our Work, (by entertaining us, and suffering for the Faith,) with Clement, and other Helpers, who are of the number of those that God will own.

4. Rejoice in the Lord alway, and again I say, Rejoice.

4. Rejoice in the Interest you have in the Lord, his Grace, and Protection, and Promise of Glory: Yeas, I again urge it on you, Always rejoice.

Note. 1.
Ch. 4. General exhortations. Philippians. Paul's carriage in all states. Ch. 4.

Note. 1. That Christians even in a state of opposition from the world, have always greater cause of rejoicing in God, than of sorrow for the world, (Though if they wilfully sin, it may interrupt their joy, by making them unfit for it, as Wounds and Sickness do the Body.)

2. That holy joy in the Lord is the flower of religion which all Christians should desire, and chiefly labour to attain.

3. Let your moderation be known unto all men. The Lord is at hand.

4. Let all men see, that you put the best sense on all that befalls you from God and Man, and that you take nothing by impatience or uncharacterless at the worst, but can suffer injuries: For God is with you, and the day of his delivering you is near.

5. Be careful for nothing: but in every thing by prayer and supplication, with thanksgiving, let your requests be made known unto God.

6. Let no WANT nor Danger disturb your Mind with anxious distrustful Care: but in every Case, go and open it to God in Prayer, for your selves and others, with Thanksgiving for what you have received, as becometh those who truly trust in God.

7. And the peace of God which passeth all understanding, shall keep your hearts and minds through Christ Jesus.

8. And by this Lenity of Mind, and Truth in God by Prayer, the Peace which you shall have in God's love to you, in your own Souls, and in Concord with the Church, which is of inestimable value, above much national Knowledge, shall, as a Garrison, keep your Affections from disturbance, and your Judgments from Error, through the Grace of Christ.

9. Finally, brethren, whatsoever things are true, whatsoever things are honest, whatsoever things are just, whatsoever things are pure, whatsoever things are lovely, whatsoever things are of good report; if there be any virtue, and if there be any praise, thinke on these things.

10. In general, to conclude, be sure that you cleave to Truth, against Falsity; to things seemly and venerable, against things shamefull; to things just, against Injustice; to things pure, against Lust and Pollution; to things truly amiable, against deceiving Pain; and flattering Attempts; to things deferentially of good report and approved by Men, against Scandal. In a word, let all things that are truly virtuous and praise-worthy be faith, fully minded and followed by you.

11. Those things which ye have both learned and received, and heard and seen in me, do: and the God of peace shall be with you.

12. Practice the Doctrine which you have heard and received from me: and the good Example which you have seen in me: and the God of Love and Peace will be with you, thus walking in Love and Peace.

10. But I rejoiced in the Lord greatly, that now at the last your care of me hath flourished again, wherein ye were also careful, but ye lacked opportunity.

11. I was glad, and thanked God, that your care of my Supply at last revived; not that I suppose it dead before, but that you lacked opportunity of sending to me, rather than Will, and Care of me.

11. Not that I speak in respect of want: for I have learned in whatsoever state I am, therewith to be content.

12. I mean not that I so much rejoice that my Wants were supplied: For I have learned to be of a quiet and contented Mind, in whatever Condition God shall bring me.

13. I know both how to be abased, and I know how to abound: everywhere, and in all things I am instructed, both to be full and to be hungry, both to abound and to suffer need.

14. I know how to be in a low and poor Condition, without repining; and how
Ch. 4. Liberality commended. Philippians. Mutual salutations. Ch. 4.

18. But I have all, and abound: I am full, having received of Epaphroditus the things which were sent from you, an odour of a sweet smell, a sacrifice acceptable, well-pleasing to God.

19. But I certify you, that I received your Gift from Epaphroditus, and it was a very liberal Supply to me; and to encourage you, I add, That under and through Christ, the great propitiating Sacrifice, such Works are the sweet Incense and Sacrifice acceptable and pleasing to God.

19. But my God shall supply all your need, according to his riches in glory, by Christ Jesus.

19. And my God, who employeth me in his Work, will see that you shall lose nothing by furthering his Service, but, out of the Riches of his Glory by Christ, will give a more excellent Supply of all your Wants.

20. Now unto God and our Father be glory for ever and ever, Amen.

20. Now to God, who is Love, and a Father to us through Christ, be glory for all his Mercies, and for and by all his Works, for ever. Amen.

21, 22, 23. Salute every saint in Christ Jesus. The brethren which are with me greet you. All the saints salute you, chiefly they that are of Cæsar's household. The grace of our Lord Jesus Christ be with you all, Amen.

Note. 1. That Christians were all then called Saints, because they were by Profession and Vow devoted to God in the Covenant of Holiness, and were not debauched, as Multitudes now are.

2. That God had his Saints even in a Heathen, Persecuting Emperour's Family.

3. That the Grace of Christ is the Sum of all Benediction on Earth.
The Epistle of St. Paul the Apostle to the Colossians.

Chapter I.

1. Paul an apostle of Jesus Christ, by the will of God, and Timotheus our brother. 2. To the saints and faithful brethren in Christ, which are at Colosse: Grace be unto you, and peace from God our Father, and the Lord Jesus Christ. 3. We give thanks to God, and the Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, praying always for you: 4. Since we heard of your faith in Christ Jesus, and of the love which ye have to all the saints:

3, 4. Note. 1. That Faith and Love are the Sum of Religion, and greater Riches than all earthly things.
2. Love must extend to all Saints, and not only those that are of one Party.
5. For the hope which is laid up for you in heaven, whereof ye heard before in the word of the truth of the Gospel: 6. Which is come unto you, as it is in all the world, and bringeth forth fruit, as it doth also in you, since the day ye heard of it, and knew the grace of God in truth.

5, 6. Note. 1. It is the Hope of Heavenly Felicity, which is the End, and effectual Motive of Christian Love and Duty.
2. It is the true Word of the Gospel that giveth us this Hope. 3. This Gospel divulged to the World is fruitful extensively in the number of Converts, and intensely in their Holiness, when it is so heard as to cause Men to know God's Grace in Truth.

7. As ye also learned of Epaphras our dear fellow-servant, who is for you a faithful minister of Christ; 8. Who also declared unto us your love in the Spirit.

7, 8. Note. It's like Epaphras was he by whom they were converted, or at least their present Bishop.
9. For this cause, we also, since the day we heard it, do not cease to pray for you, and to desire that ye might be filled with the knowledge of his will, in all wisdom and spiritual understanding.
9. True Converts have need to be prayed for, that they may have Spiritual and Practical Wisdom to know the Will of God.
10. That ye might walk worthy of the Lord unto all pleasing, being fruitful in every good work, and increasing in the knowledge of God:

10. That you may live suitably to your professed Faith, sincerely obeying and pleasing God in all things, which is your Worthiness in a Gospel-sense, bringing forth the Fruits of all sorts of Good Works, and increasing in the Knowledge (or acknowledging) of God.
11. Strengthened with all might, according to his glorious power, unto all patience and long-suffering with joyfulness;

11. Note. 1. The glorious Power of God appeareth in his Servants Strength. 2. The Strength of Christians appeareth most in suffering long and patiently for Christ with joy, and not in overcoming Men by Strength.
12. Giving thanks unto the Father, which hath made us meet to be parrakers of the inheritance of the Saints in light:

12. Note. 1. The Inheritance of the Saints is in the Sate and World of Light, that is, of Vision and Glory. 2. God's way of bringing Men to this Glory, is by fitting them for it now by Holiness. 3. This is the Gift which obligeth us to the greatest Thankfulness to God.

13. Who
13. Who hath delivered us from the power of darkness, and hath translated us into the kingdom of his dear Son:

13. Note. The World is divided into two Societies: One under the Power of Darkness, that is, Satan the Prince of Darkness, who leads Men by the way of Ignorance, Error, Unbelief, and Lies, to the utter Darkness of Misery. The other is the Kingdom of Christ, led by him who is the Light of the World, by Truth, Knowledge, and Faith, to the Heavenly Light.

14. When Men are truly converted to Christ, they are initially delivered from the Power, State, and Way of Darkness, into the Kingdom of Christ and Light.

14. In whom we have redemption through his blood, even the forgiveness of sins.

14. Note. Christ's Blood is the Price of our Redemption, and Remission of Sin is much of the Collation and Application. Redemption signifies Deliverance from Bondage.

15. Who is the image of the Invisible God, the first-born of every creature:

15. In whose Humane Nature, Doctrine, and Works, the Invisible God, whose Image he is, is manifest to Man; and who in his Divine Nature was begotten of the Father before any Creature was made, (even from Eternity,) and in his Person, as God-Man, is most Excellent, and is Lord of all.

(This First-born numbereth him not with Creatures, but sets him above them.)

16. For by him were all things created that are in heaven, and that are in earth, visible and invisible, whether they be thrones, or dominions, or principalities, or powers: all things were created by him, and for him. 17. And he is before all things, and by him all things consist.

16. 17. By him, as God, were all things created, and for him; and he is from Eternity before them all, and by him they are upheld in being.

Note. 2. Some by [things in Heaven and Earth], and [Thrones, Dominions, &c.] understand only [Towns and Gentiles], and [the Powers of Men]; but this forced Exposition is groundless: it being certain, that all Heavenly Powers and Orders were created by the Eternal Word, and Paul being here extolling his Magnificence, why should we feign him to leave out the highest Part, which he so plainly expresseth? That Celestial Spirits have potent Superiority both over us and one another, is no doubt.  

II. The ancient Churches and Heretics had so great Contentions about the right Notions of the Nature and Person of Christ, and with such dismal Effects, as make many Lovers of Peace to wish, that such Points had been handled more cautiously, reverently, and peaceably. Four notable Opinions there be about the Natures and Person of Christ.

1. The Orthodox hold, That he hath only two Natures in one Person, the Divine and Humane. And of these, the subtle Philosophers say, that the Humane Nature is no part of his Person, but an Adjunct, because God cannot be a Part. But others avoid this, as dangerous.

2. The Arians think Christ is but a Creature, but is a Superangelical Spirit, the first created, by whom God made all the rest; and that he assumed the Humane Nature, and may be well called God, but not as the Father is, nor of the same Substance: And so, that he hath two Natures, Superangelical and Humane. Of these,

1. Some think that the Superangelical, as a Soul, was assumed onely a Humane Body: And,

2. Some, that he assumed a Soul and Body.

3. A third sort say, Christ hath three Natures; 1. The Divine, producing by Emanation the first created Superangelical Nature, united to it self, and by it creating all other things; and both these Natures in the fulness of time assuming the Humane Nature, (entirely, say some; and a Body Only, say others.)

4. The last and worst is that of the Socinians, that count Christ a meer Glorified Man. This Text feemeth to speak but the first, though the Favours of the third think it is for them; and that other Texts are so alto. They think it was not only the Divine Nature, but the Superangelical, which appeared to Abraham, Moses, &c., in a visible Body, before the Incarnation: And by affecting these three Natures in Christ, they would reconcile the Orthodox and the Arians. The Controversies alter whether
Ch. I. Reconciliation by Christ. Colossians. Reconciliation by Christ. Ch. I.

whether Christ be two Persons or but one, and have two Willis and Operations, or but one, and whether it may be said, That Mary was the Mother of God, and that one of the Trinity was crucified, &c. did grievously rend the Church; of which I have spoken elsewhere, and plainly shewed in what sense Christ is two, yea, many Persons (relatively), and in what sense but one, and in what sense his Willis are two, and in what sense but one.

18. And he is the head of the body, the church: who is the beginning, the first-born from the dead; that in all things he might have the preeminence.

18. And he is now the Head, both by Government and quickening Influence, of the Church, which is his Body Politick, and united to him incomprehensibly, the Spring of Life to us, and the first that rose from Death to glorious Immortality, triumphantly, by his own Power; by whom it is that we live, and shall be raiied: For in all things he is Highest, above all Creatures.

19. For it pleased the Father, that in him should all fulfils dwell;

19. For it seemed good to the Father that Jesus Christ should be filled with all Created Perfection, as well as he hath Divine Perfection, and be the Spring and Treasure of all Good, as the Head over all things to his Church, and the Universal Administrator.

20. And (having made peace through the blood of the cross) by him to reconcile all things unto himself, by him, I say, whether they be things in earth, or things in heaven.

20. And having accepted his Sacrifice on the Cross for a general Atonement and Propitiation, by him to reconcile the guilty, sinful, and cursed World to him, so far as that their Guilt and Sin you should not hinder the Tenders of Free Mercy and Salvation to Jew and Gentile, nor keep his Flock and Faithful Flock from that Heavenly Glory, where Angels and Saints shall be One Blest Society, united in Love to God and each other.

21. And you that were sometimes alienated, and enemies in your mind by wicked works, yet now hath he reconciled,

21. And you, who were not only, as all others, originally guilty, as the Seed of Adam, but also of the Race and Society of Gentile, by your wicked Works estranged from God, and out of the way of his saving Grace, and Enemies to it and him, yet now hath he reconciled by Christ, and taken you for his Children.

22. In the body of his flesh through death, to present you holy and unblameable, and unreprouvable in his sight.

22. By giving up his Body of Flesh to death, as a Propitiatory Sacrifice; and by justifying and sanctifying you, to present you holy, and blameless, and justified as joint before him.

23. If ye continue in the faith, grounded and settled, and be not moved away from the hope of the gospel, which ye have heard, and which was preached to every creature which is under heaven, whereof I Paul am made a minister.

23. I say, you shall be thus perfected at last, if you prove found confirmed Christians, continuing in the Faith, grounded and settled, and by no Temptation be ever turned from the Hope which Christ hath given you in his Gospel; which by Christ's Commission we preach to all Men in this lower World, which is already happily begun, the Church being no more confined to Jews, but gathered out of all the Earth, to which Work Christ hath Commissioned me, who am labouring therein.

Note. That how true soever it be, that found Believers shall be finally Justified in Judgment, and glorified, the Promise given them Right to it but on Condition of Perseverance; and God with Conditional Promises to engage us rationally to our Duty, and as a Means to accomplish his Absolute Decrees.

24. Who now rejoice in my sufferings for you, and fill up that which is behind of the afflictions of Christ in my flesh, for his bodies, which is the church.

24. And I rejoice that God honoureth me to suffer for his Church in so excellent a Work;

PARA. Work: For it is by the Cross, or Suffering, that God will bring the Church to Glory: And as Christ hath perfectly done his own part, as the only Propitiating Sacrifice, so I, with the rest of his Members, must undergo and make up the rest, even for the same Churches fake for which he died, though not as a Mediator, to reconcile God and Man, as he was.

25. Whereof I am made a minister according to the dispensation of God, which is given to me for you, to fulfil the word of God;

26. Of which Church I am made a Servant, by God's appointment and commission, given me for you, as well as for others, that I may fully divulge the Word of God.

27. Even the mystery which hath been hid from ages, and from generations, but now is made manifest to his saints:

28. The great Mystery of Redemption, (God manifested in the Flesh, as the Head and Saviour of the Church) which (though not wholly, yet comparatively) hath been hid from Jews under dark Typers, as well as more from Gentiles by greater Darkness, in all foregoing Ages: But now is plainlier made known to Gods Saints.

29. To whom God would make known what is the riches of the glory of this mystery among the Gentiles; which is Christ in you, the hope of glory:

30. To whom God of his good Pleasure would specially made known the Riches and Glory of this Mystery of Calling the whole World of Gentiles. The Sum of it is, Christ among you, and in you, purchasing, giving, and assorting to you the Heavenly Glory, for which he hath commanded you joyfully to hope. Christ the Way, Glory the End.

31. Whom we preach, warning every man, and teaching every man in all wisdom; that we may present every man perfect in Christ Jesus:

32. To preach this Christ is the Work of our Office, warning and teaching every Man as we have opportunity, neglecting none of any rank, in all the saving Wisdom of the Gospel, that we may prefere as many as possible, perfect to Salvation.

29. Whereunto I also labour, striving according to his working, which worketh in me mightily.

30. In this Labour I am employed; in which with diligence I strive, according to the Grace of him that called me, which wrought in me (or worketh by me) in Power, (confirming my Ministry by Miracles and Success, as well as qualifying me for it.)

CHAP. II.

1. For I would that ye knew what great conflict I have for you, and for them at Laodicea, and for as many as have not seen my face in the flesh:

2. (Conflict) by Prayer, and Care, and Study, to do them good.

Note, Good Men long for the Good of them whom they never saw.

2. That their hearts might be comforted, being knit together in love, and unto all riches of the full assurance of understanding, to the acknowledgment of the mystery of God, and of the Father, and of Christ.

3. That they may grow up to a State of Joy, by holy Union and Communion in Love, and to be yet richer and happier in the full and assured understanding and acknowledgment of the Mystery of God's Love, and of Christ's Grace, in the Promises, Prefigurations, and Performance of our Redemption.

4. In whom are hid all the treasures of wisdom and knowledge.

5. Though it be not discerned by carnal Men, who search more after other Knowledge in the World, the depth, excellency, and benefit of all true Wisdom and Knowledge, are comprised in the Knowledge of God manifested in Christ: This is the true Philosophy, in comparison of which, all other is Vanity and Folly.

4. And this I lay, lest any man should beguile you with enticing words.
Ch. 2. Exhorteth to constancy. Colossians. in Christ. Ch. 2.

4. I tell you this, lest any delude you by the specious o'errating of any other sort of knowledge, called Philosophy, or Traculor, or Entusiastical, or Pharisaical tradition, as if it were somewhat more excellent than the Knowledge of Christ.

5. For though I be absent in the flesh, yet am I with you in the Spirit, joying and beholding your order, and the stedfastness of your faith in Christ.

6. For though I see you not, I am in the Spirit as if I were present with you, affected with joy to hear of your Order, and stedfastness of Faith; but yet I know where your danger lieth.

7. As ye have therefore received Christ Jesus the Lord, so walk in him:

8. Let it be your care to hold fast and practice the Gospel of Christ, as you are already received him and his Word, and turn not to any other way.

9. Rooted and built up in him, and stablished in the faith, as ye have been taught, abounding therein with thanksgiving.

10. As growing downwards in the roots necessary to Trees, or stedfastness and fruit; and as the House must be builded up, then the Foundation is laid: so must you be more and more rooted, and built up, and stablished in the same faith with which you were taught at first, and must abound with joyous Thanks to God, in the increased knowledge, love, and practice of that, ahead of hearing to Novelties or Errors.

11. Beware lest any man spoil you through philosophy and vain deceit, after the tradition of men, from the rudiments of the world, and not after Christ.

12. Beware, which I advise you to beware, is, let any by pretending that the heathen Philosophy is a higher sort of Wisdom and Learning (more methodical, accurate, extensive) than the Gospel of Christ, should decease you, and draw you from the true Wisdom of Christianity, or Heretics, which you may know by Philosophical Precedents to their Precedents, and they should set up the tradition, Books, or Opinions of any Sect of Philosophers, against the Heavenly Doctrine of Christ.

13. Note, That as Moses’s Law was very useful in subordination to the Covenant of Grace, and to Christ; but pernicious to them that set it in opposition to Christ, or in separation from him: so is true Philosophy, which is the Knowledge of the knowable part of God’s Works, useful in subordination to Christ: But the Heathen Sect of Philosophers were the most dangerous Adversaries to Christianity, by deviating its Simplicity, and pretending to far greater Learning, and defying Christians as ignorant and credulous, and using against them their Logical Art and Sophistry, and the Reputation of all their Sciences.

14. For in him dwelleth all the fulness of the Godhead bodily.

15. For as the Divine Nature it felt hath united it felt to, and so dwelleth in his Humane Nature; so in the Person, Doctrine, and Works of Christ Incarnate, God hath treasured up, and by that In-dwelling, placed the fullest Manifestation of himself to Mankind, that ever he will give them in this Life on Earth.

16. And ye are complete in him, who is the head of all principality and power.

17. You need not seek after Wisdom in the Oracles or Knowledge of Demons or Angels; for in Christ you have complete Wisdom, (if you truly receive him, and learn of him) who is not only above all Philosophers and Rabbites, but above the highest Angels or Celestial Powers, and is the chief Revealer of God to Man.

18. In whom also ye are circumcised, by the circumcision made without hands, in putting off the body of the sins of the flesh, by the circumcision of Christ.

19. Nor need you go to Judaism for Circumcision: for you have the true giving Circumcision in Christ, even that of the Heart, made without Hands by the Spirit of Christ, cutting off and casting away the Body of Sin, or Fleathy Lusts.

20. Buried with him in baptism, wherein also you are risen with him through the faith of the operation of God, who hath raised him from the death.

21. And it’s more than a Circumcision of your Lusto that you have in Christ; they
Ch. 2. Christ hath abrogated Colossians.

are dead and buried with him: For so your Baptism signifieth, in which you are put under the Water, to signify and profess, that your Old Man, or Fleshly Lust, is dead and buried with him: and you rise thence, to signify and profess, that you rise to Newness of Life, and Heavenly Hopes, through the Belief of God’s Works that raised Christ from the dead.

13. And you being dead to your sins, and the uncircumcision of your flesh, hath he quickened together with him, having forgiven you all trespasses.

14. And you, that were as dead in the Gullet and Power of your Sins, your Hearts and Lusts, as your Flesh, being uncircumcised, hath God made spiritually alive, as Christ was quickened and raised, and hath absolved you by pardon of all Sin, from the Obligation to Everlasting Death which you had contracted.

14. Blotting out the hand-writing of ordinances that was against us, which was contrary to us, and took it out of the way, nailing it to his Cross.

14. Cancelling the Legal Imposition of Mosaic Rites and Ceremonies, even to us Jews, which might have been produced against us Breakers of the Law to our condemnation, and as it were nailed it to his Cross, while by dying he disabled it: So that you need not think that Judaizing is necessary to your Salvation.

15. And having spoiled principalities and powers, he made a shew of them openly, triumphing over them in it.

15. And when his Cruelties triumphed over him on the Cross, as if they had utterly overcome him, it was but his Conquest and Spoils of all Principalities and Powers, of Devils or Men, that were Adversaries to his Grace and Kingdom, and his open Ostentation of his Victory, and Triumph over them, in that his Crucifixion.

16. Let no man therefore judge you in meat or in drink, or in respect of an holy day, or of the new-moon, or of the Sabbath days:

16. Seeing then that Christ hath abrogated the Mosaic Law, none ought to confute you as Sinners, for not keeping the Ceremonies of the Law, about Meat, or Drink, or in the Point of Feasts and Holy-days, or of the New Moon, or of the Sabbath-days.

17. Which are a shadow of things to come; but the body is of Christ.

17. For these were but Shadows of the things to come, even Christ and Christiannity, which are the Substance shadowed.

Note. That Sabbaths are abolished with the rest of Moses’s Law. As to the Lord’s-day, consider these things distinctly. 1. That all Moses’s Law, as such, bound only the Jews, to whom it was promulgated, and is now abolished, even (faith Paul) that written in Stone. 2. That all the Law of Christ in Nature and Revelation still bindeth us. 3. That the Word (Sabbath) in Scripture, properly signifieth a Day of Ceremonial Rest, in which the Bodily Rest was a Duty directly in itself, as Sacrificing and other Ceremonies were. 4. That the Lord’s-day is never called a Sabbath in Scripture, (however some mistake a Text or two.) 5. That the Lord’s-day is separated by Divine Appointment to the holy Commemoration of Christ’s Resurrection and our Redemption, especially in Sacred Assemblies for Church-worship. 6. That it is of greater dignity than the Sabbaths were, being for more Publitical, spiritual, excellent Work. 7. That on it, Rest is not a Ceremonial Due, as it was on Sabbaths, for it itself; but only a subordinate Duty, that Soul and Body (even of Servants) may be vacant and free for Spiritual Worship: and no Breach of Rest is now a Sin, but, 1. That which hindreth this Spiritual Work; 2. Or is scandalous, encouraging others to Sin. 8. That therefore the Seventh-day Sabbath is abolished. 1. Because Moses’s Law is abolished: 2. And all proper Sabbaths are abolished. 9. That yet (with the ancient Churches) we may well call the Lord’s-day (the Sabbath), (when it tendeth not to Error,) But only by allusion, or metaphorically, as they then called the Table an Altar, the Ministers, Priests, and the Sacrament, and Altar and Thanksgiving, Sacrifice. This is the full Truth, as I have proved in a Let. Trea. 10. Let no man beguile you of your reward, in a voluntary humility, and worshipping of an.
Ch. 2. Chrift the Head. 
CoÌ̂fTians. 
of the Church. Ch. 2, 3.

gels, intruding into those things which he hath not seen, vainly
put up by his fleshly mind;
18. Let no man beguile you of the Rewar\d of Christianity, by pretending greater
self humbling than God commandeth, by
worshipping Angels, intruding into and
pretending to know the things which he
never saw, nor God revealed to him, vainly
puffed up by the Imaginations of his fleshly
Mind, and building on his deluded Con-
jectures and Self-conceits.

19. And not holding the head,
from which all the body by joints
and bands having nourishment mi-
nistr’d, and knit together, increa-
seth with the increase of God.

19. By which they depart from their
due Dependence on Christ the Head, whose
Office it is to be the sole immediate Medi-
ator between God and Man, and the Law-
giver to the Church, who hath given us
sufficient notice what Worship God accept-
th. It is from him the Head (of Life and
Government) that the Body, even the
Church, receiveth its Nourishment and
holily Increase by the Blessing of God, it being
by Joysms and Ligaments of Faith, Love,
and Ministry and Communion for Concord,
conjoined and made a meet Receiver.

20. Wherefore if ye be dead
with Christ from the rudiments of
the world; why as though living
in the world, are ye subject to
ordinances, 21. (Touch not, taste not,
handle not: 22. Which all
are to perish with the using) after
the commandments and doctrines
of men?

20, 21, 22. If then ye be dead to
the Rudiments of all other Matters and Customs
in the World, of Jews or Heathens, in con-
formity to your Crucified Lord, why, as
though yet you were not separated from
the World to Christ, are you subject to
such Ordinances, which Christ never made
you, but hath abolished? as, Touch
not, taste not, meddle not with fish
and such Meats, as unclean, and the
like; which were all temporary things, and
consist in manifest unprofitable Actions,
having no Reward of God, as being but the
Products of the Commandments and Doctrines of
unauthorized Men.

23. Which things have indeed
a show of wisdom in will-worship,
and humility, and neglecting of
the body, not in any honour to
the satisfying of the flesh.

23. Which are the things for which, as
deceitful Shews, the Heretical and Heathen
Seducers pretend to be wiser Men than the
 Apostles and Christians, and to be more pi-
 nous Men, and so would draw you to their
Errors, as being steadier in Voluntary Wor-
ship and greater Humility, and neglecting of
the Body on pretence of being more for
the Soul, and not, as sensual Men do, set-
ting up and pampering the Flesh.

Note. The Description of Paul and
Church-Historians inform us, that these
Heretics made up a Religion of three Party:
1. Of the Name and some Parts of Chris-
 tianity, to keep in with the Christians.
2. Of many Jewish Rites, to keep fair with the
Jews. 3. But the main Substance which they
boasted of, was Pythagorean Heathenism,
in which they pretended great knowledge of
Spirits, Demons, and invisible things, their
Orders, Powers, Offices, Durations, 
which God never revealed, but the deluded
Imaginations of themselves and the said Py-
thagorean and Platonick Philosophers taught
them. In many of which Superstitions, of
Will-worship, Angel-worship, Laws of
Penance on the Flesh, (while the vain Mind
usurpeth Christ’s Legislative Power) too
many of the carnal corrupt Church do imita-
test them to this day.

CHAP. III.

1. If ye then be risen with Chrift,
seek those things which are
above, where Chrift sitteth on the
right hand of God.

1. If then you be true Christians, risen
with Chrift as you profess to the hope of a
Celestial Glory, and to a Holy Life, shew it
by seeking the things which are above,
where Chrift, who you trust in, is as your
Head, over all in glory.

2. Set your affection on things
above, not on things on the earth.

2. Let the Heavenly things, and not the
things on Earth, have your strongest affec-
tions, your Love, your Define, your Hope,
your Joy, your Care, your very Hearts.

3. For ye are dead, and your

N R 2 life
Ch. 3. To put off the old man. Colossians. Exhortations to charity, &c. Ch. 3.

1. Life is hid with Christ in God.

2. When Christ who is our life shall appear, then shall ye also appear with him in glory.

3. For ye are dead to the world and sin, and the root of your Spiritual Life is not in your selves; but both your Objective Life, which is your Hapiness, and the Root of all your Spiritual Life, are out of sight with Christ in God. It is by him that you live, and it is with him and on him that you must live in glory for ever.

4. Mortify therefore your members which are upon the earth; fornication, uncleanness, inordinate affection, evil concupiscence, and covetousness which is Idolatry. 6. For which things sake the wrath of God cometh on the children of disobedience.

5. Therefore, the your Lusto are as it were the very Members of your corrupt fleshly Nature, kill them all, even Fornication, Uncleanness, Inordinate Affections of Love or delight, all evil lustings or desires, and Covetousness, which loveth the Creature above God, and which is Idolaters sin. For it is for these things that the Unbelieving Rebellious World is under the wrath of God.

6. In the which ye also walked sometime when ye lived in them.

7. These sins were formerly your own practises, when you were Heathens among them.

8. But now you also put off all these; anger, wrath, malice, blasphemy, filthy communication out of your mouth. 9. Lie not one to another, seeing that ye have put off the old man with his deeds;

9. But now ye must not only cast off all these filthy sins, but also all that is contrary to Love and Peace, all sinful wrath and malice, and evil speaking and ribaldry, and lying: For all these are the Members and Deeds of the Old Man, or state which you have renounced.

10. And have put on the new man, which is renewed in know-

ledge, after the image of him that created him.

11. And ye have by Conversion become New Men, renewed in Saving Knowledge, unto the Image of that God and Saviour who is the maker of this New Creature.

12. Where there is neither Greek nor Jew, circumcision nor uncircumcision, barbarian, Scythian, bond nor free: but Christ is all, and in all.

13. Where the Interest and Union that we have all in One Christ, who is all in all, doth swallow up all the little differences, of Greeks and Jews, &c. And so must do in our Communion.

14. Put on therefore (as the effect of God, holy and beloved) bowels of mercies, kindness, humility, gentleness, meekness, long-suffering;

15. Let these therefore be your very Habit, and Nature, and Practice, as by Cometh Gods chosen, holy and beloved ones, Bowels of Mercy, Kindness, &c.

16. Forbearing one another, and forgiving one another, if any man have a quarrel against any: even as Christ forgave you, so also do ye.

17. Not. 1. That it is supposed that we are wronged, else there is no need of forgiving. 2. True Christians are known by this Spiritual Nature, as well as by Religious Exercises.

18. And above all these things put on charity, which is the bond of perfectness.

19. But as the most necessary and excellent of all, put on the true endearing Love to others as your selves, for the sake of God, who must be most loved: For as this is the highest Grace which Christ's Spirit worketh in us, so it is that Bond which by uniting Believers to Christ and each other, tendeth to the perfect compagimation, growth, and welfare of the Church, and every Member of it.

20. And let the peace of God rule in your hearts, to the which also ye are called in one body; and be ye thankful.
Ch. 3. Exhortations to charity. Colossians. Several duties. Ch. 4.

15. And let that Peace which God hath given you within, and call thee to exercise, by dwelling in your hearts, bear rule in your lives towards all men, as being of the same Body: And live in continual thankfulness to God.

16. Let the word of Christ dwell in you richly in all wisdom; teaching and admonishing one another in Psalms and Hymns, and spiritual songs, singiing with grace in your hearts to the Lord.

16. Let the word of God so possess your Soul, that you may by it have plentiful Holy Wisdom to instruct and admonish one another, and Holy Affections, that those who have the gift of composing Holy Psalms, and Hymns, and Spiritual Songs for themselves and others use, may do it wisely, and all of you use them with Holy Joy in singing to the Lord.

17. And whatsoever ye do in word or deed, do all in the name of the Lord Jesus, giving thanks to God and the Father by him.

17. And let all that you offer to God in word or deed, in worship or obedience, be done in the name of the Lord Jesus, trusting for acceptance to his Mediation, and offer your daily Thanksgiving to God the Father, by him our High Priest in the Heavens.

18, 19, 20, 21, 22, 23. Wives, submit your selves unto your own husbands, as it is fit in the Lord. Husbands love your wives, and be not bitter against them. Children, obey your parents in all things: for this is well-pleasing unto the Lord. Fathers, provoke not your children to anger, lest they be discouraged. Servants, obey in all things your masters according to the flesh; not with eye-service as men-pleasers, but in singleness of heart, fearing God: And whatsoever ye do, do it heartily, as to the Lord, and not unto men; 24. Knowing that of the Lord ye shall receive the reward of the inheritance; for ye serve the Lord Christ.

18, 19, 20, 21, 22, 23, 24. See all this before Paraphrased, Eph. 5, & 6.

25. But he that doth wrong, shall receive for the wrong which he hath done: and there is no respect of persons.

25. But if Masters or Servants do wrong to the other, though they may escape the punishment of Man, God who respecteth no Mans Person will judge and punish them.
Colossians. Exhortations and salutations. Ch. 4.

5. Use the wisdom toward them that are without the Church, which is needful to keep you from receiving hurt by them, or in doing good to them.

6. Let your speech be always with grace, seasoned with salt, that ye may know how ye ought to answer every man.

6. Let all your speech be the exercise of God's Grace in your Hearts, not rotten, filthy, or vain, but wise and favourably, that you may speak pertinently and fruitfully to every Man, especially in the necessary defence of the truth, against Gain-seekers, and resolving of the doubting.

7. All my state shall Tychicus declare unto you, who is a beloved brother, and a faithful Minister, and fellow-servant in the Lord:

7. Tychicus a faithful Brother, fully shall acquaint you with my Concernments.

8. Whom I have sent unto you for the same purpose, that he might know your estate, and comfort your hearts: With Onesimus a faithful and beloved brother, who is one of you. They shall make known unto you all things which are done here.

8. Aristarchus my fellow-prisoner salute you, and Marcus sibersion to Barnabas (touching whom ye received commandments; if he come unto you, receive him).

9. And Jesus which is called Justus, who are of the circumcision. These only are my fellow-workers unto the Kingdom of God, which have been a comfort unto me.

9, 10, 11. These are all that have helped me here at Rome in my suffering, and have much comforted me.

10. Paphnas, who is one of you, a servant of Christ, salute you, always labouring fervently for you in prayers, that ye may stand perfect and complete in all the will of God.

13. For I bear him record, that he hath a great zeal for you, and them that are in Laodicea, and them in Hierapolis.

13. Note. 1. That Prayer should be a Work of fervent labouring. 2. That Ministers should long for the People's increase in Grace and universal Obedience, more than to promote their own Interest with them.

14. 15. Luke the beloved Physician, and Demas greet you. Salute the brethren which are in Laodicea, and Nympha, and the church which is in his house.

15. Which use to meet there.

16. And when this epistle is read amongst you, cause that it be read also in the church of the Laodiceans; and that ye likewise read the epistle from Laodicea.

16. Note. 1. It was the Duty of the Churches to communicate the Epistles written to them by the Apostles. 2. What that Epistle written to Laodicea was, is concealed to us not to know. It's vain to think that Paul and other Apostles wrote no more Epistles than be in the Bible; or, that God is bound to bring down all that they wrote to us.

17. And say to Archippus, Take heed to the ministry which thou hast received in the Lord, that thou fulfil it.

17. Note. That Bishops or Presbyters may have need to be admonished by the People to take heed to the Ministry which God calleth them to, and not to stagger it over, (much less pervert it) but fulfil it.

18. The Salutation by the hand of me Paul. Remember my bonds, Grace be with you. Amen.

18. In conclusion, I subscribe my Salutation to you. Let the remembrance of my Bonds, remember you of your Duty to me, in Prayer, and receiving of this Word. Grace be with you, is the summary Benediction. Amen.
The First Epistle of St. PAUL the Apostle to the
THESSALONIANS.

CHAP. I.

1. Paul, and Silvanus, and Timotheus, unto the church of
the Thessalonians, which is in God the Father, and in the Lord
Jesus Christ: Grace be unto you, and peace from God our Father,
and the Lord Jesus Christ.

2. To the Assembly of Christians associ-
ated in the professed Belief of God
the Father, and the Lord Jesus Christ,
&c.

3. We give thanks to God always for you all, making men-
tion of you in our prayers, re-
membering without ceasing your
work of faith, and labour of love,
and patience of hope in our Lord
Jesus Christ, in the sight of God,
and our Father.

4. We thankfully remember your work-
ing Faith, your laborious Love, and
patient Hope in Christ, which is all seen
and accepted by God our Father.

5. Knowing, brethren beloved,
your election of God. For
our Gospel came not unto you in
word only, but also in power,
and in the holy Ghost, and in
much assurance; as ye know what
manner of men we were among
you for your fake.

6. For I was assured, that God had
freely elected you to be honoured as a
Church of Christ, in that he sent me par-
ticularly to you, and that with Power of
Miracles, and pouring out of the Holy
Ghost, he confirmed my Ministry, and
caused me to fulfill it, as your Experience
rethlyt you.

6. And ye became followers of
us, and of the Lord, having re-
ceived the word in much affliction,
with joy of the holy Ghost;

6. And because he blessed all with
such Success that you obeyed our Word,
and were converted to God, receiving the
Word in the trial of sharp Affliction and
Opposition, and yet with Joy, and the
participation of the Holy Ghost.

7. So that ye were examples
to all that believe in Macedonia
and Achaia.

7. So that your Example tended to the
happy imitation of all that now believe in
Macedonia and Achaia.

8. For from you founded out
the word of the Lord, not onely
in Macedonia and Achaia, but al-
so in every place your faith to
God-ward is spread abroad, so
that we need not to speak any-
thing.

8. For from you the Word of God
spread abroad, even in many other Coun-
tries it is known; so that I need not tell
it them, to your praise, and their imitation.

9. For they themselves shew of
us, what manner of entering in we
had unto you, and how ye turned
to God from Idols, to serve the
living and true God.

9. They tell abroad themselves, what
Success we had in your Conversion from
Idolatry to the true God.

10. And to wait for his Son
from heaven, whom he raised
from the dead, even Jesus which
delivered us from the wrath to
come.

10. And to wait in Faith and Hope,
that his Son that is raised from death,
and ascended, will come from Heaven
for our Salvation, even Jesus, who deliv-
ereth us from the Wrath that will come,
on Unbelievers.
For your selves, brethren, know our entrance in unto you, that it was not in vain.

1. For you are my Witneffes, that I came not to you in deceit, or any false design or manner.

2. But even after that we had suffered before, and were shamefully entreated, as ye know at Philippi, we were bold in our God to speak unto you the gospel of God with much contention.

3. But our shameful usage at Philippi did not discourage us, but our trust in our God did embolden us to preach his Gospel to you, though in a conflict of great opposition.

4. For our exhortation was not of deceit, nor of uncleanness, nor in guile: But as we were allowed of God to be put in trust with the gospel, even so we speak, not as pleasing men, but God, which trieth our hearts.

5. For I came not to you to deceive you into Error, nor to plead for fleshly Lusts, nor craftily to make advantage of you to our gain: But as God approved and chose me to be put in trust with the Preaching of the Gospel, I do it to please him who trieth our Hearts, and not to please the Humours and Lusts of Men.

6. For neither at any time used we flattering words, as ye know, nor a cloak of covetousness; God is witness.

7. For your selves know, that I flattered you not, nor indulged fleshly Pleasures: and God knoweth, that I made not the Gospel a Cloak to hide any covetous Design.

8. Nor of men sought we glory, neither of you, nor yet of others, when we might have been burdensome, as the apostles of Christ.

9. Nor did I preach up my self, for Vain-glory (Power or Profit), neither with you, or any others; though as Christ's Apostle I might have pleaded my Power, and demanded Maintenance.

10. But we sought not our Gain and Glory, but your Good; and that with all the love and tenderness to you, as a Nurse cherisheth her Children, in self-denial.

11. So being affectionately desirous of you, we were willing to have imparted unto you, not the gospel of God onely, but also our own fouls, because ye were dear unto us.

12. So my strong Love to you made me not onely willingly to preach the Gospel to you, (without any selfish, proud, or covetous design) but you are so dear to me, that I think not my Life too dear for you.

13. For ye remember, brethren, our labour and travel: for labouring night and day, because we would not be chargeable unto any of you, we preached unto you the gospel of God.

14. Ye cannot but remember my great Toil and Labour, how working at my Trade Night and Day, because I would not be chargeable to any of you, I preached the Gospel to you freely.

15. Ye are witneffes, and God also, how holy, and justly, and blamelessly we behavied our selves among you that believe.

16. I appeal to your selves, and to God, as Witneffes, that our Behaviour with you was holy, just and blameless.

17. As you know how we exhorted and comforted, and chargeth every one of you (as a Father dath his children). 12. That ye would walk worthy of God, who hath called you unto his kingdom and glory.

18. As you know how tenderly I exhorted, and comforted, and charged not onely the Assemblies, but every one that I could, speak so, even as a Father will.
will do to every Child; that now you are Christians, you will live as is suitable to the God you serve, and the Kingdom and Glory to which he hath called you.

13. For this cause also thank we God without ceasing; because when ye received the word of God which ye heard of us, ye received it not as the word of men, but (as it is in truth) the word of God, which effectually worketh also in you that believe.

14. And it is the matter of our unceasing thanks to God, that you received not the Gospel as Mens Word, with a meer Humane Faith and Obedience; but as Gods Word, with a Divine: which it appeareth to be, by the powerful efficacy of it on your selves, who are true Believers.

15. For ye, brethren, became followers of the churches of God, which in Judea are in Christ Jesus: for ye also have suffered like things of your own countrymen, even as they have of the Jews.

16. Ye follow the Churches in Judea, in suffering by your own Neighbours, as well as in the same Faith.

17. But we, brethren, being taken from you for a short time, in preference, not in heart, endeavoured the more abundantly to see your face with great desire.

18. Wherefore we would have come unto you (even I Paul) once and again, but Satan hindred us.

19. For what is our hope, or joy, or crown of rejoicing? are not even ye in the presence of our Lord Jesus Christ at his coming? 20. For ye are our glory and joy.
19, 20. For what is that Hope, and Joy, and Crown, for which I labour so hard, and suffer so much? Is it not your Conversion and Salvation, which before Christ at his coming will be my Joy? Yes, ye are our Glory and Joy, that God hath to blest our Labours to your Salvation.

Note. True Ministers of Christ thirst and labour more for Mens Conversion and Salvation, than for Reputation, Honour, Riches, Preferment, or Domination.

2. Though God will reward Faithful Preachers though they have small Success, yet to have great Success, to the saving of many, is far more comfortable, not only now, but at the Coming of Christ.

CHAP. III.

1. Wherefore when we could no longer forbear, we thought it good to be let at Athens alone: 2. And sent Timothy our brother and minister of God, and our fellow-labourer in the gospel of Christ, to establish you, and to comfort you concerning your faith.

1, 2. Note. That in the time of trying Persecutions, Christians have special need of confirming and comforting Helps.

3. That no man should be moved by these affections: for your selves know that we are appointed thereunto.

3. Note. Sufferings for Christ should be so expected, that they should seem no strange surprising thing.

4. For verily when we were with you, we told you before, that we should suffer tribulation; even as it came to pass, and ye know.


5. For this cause when I could no longer forbear, I sent to know your faith, lest by some means the tempter have tempted you, and our labour be in vain.

5. Note. That though censorious Suspicions of Men be forbidden, yet Man is so mutable and weak a thing, that loving Suspicions for preventing Hurt, are necessary to them that have the Care of Men.

6. But now when Timothy came from you unto us, and brought us good tidings of your faith and charity, and that ye have good remembrance of us always, desiring greatly to see us, as we also to see you: 7. Therefore, brethren, we were comforted over you in all our affliction and distress by your faith.

6, 7. Note. That they that by Affliction are not drawn to Sin, are matter of Joy to themselves and their Friends notwithstanding their Sufferings.

8. For now we live, if ye stand fast in the Lord.

9. Your Stedfastness and Victory is the Joy or Life of our Lives.

9. For what thanks can we render to God again for you, for all the joy wherewith we joy for your sakes before our God,

10. We can never be thankful enough to God, for the Comfort which we have in you.

10. Night and day praying exceedingly that we might see your face, and might perfect that which is lacking in your faith?

10. Note. That the Faith of good Christians is wanting (in Act and Object), and needeth Increase and Help thereto.

11. Now God himself, and our Father, and our Lord Jesus Christ direct our way unto you: 12. And the Lord make you to increase and abound in love one towards another, and towards all men, even as we do towards you.

11, 12. Note. That to abound in Love to Saints as Saints, and to all Men as Men, is the State of true Increase in Grace.

13. To the end he may establish your hearts unblameable in holiness.
Exhortation to I. Thessalonians.

holiness and love. Ch. 4.

Ch. 3, 4. Exhortation to I. Thessalonians.

holiness before God even our Father, at the coming of our Lord Jesus Christ, with all His saints.

13. Note, That it is confirmed faith working by abounding love, which is the qualification in which we may stand uncondemned, as truly holy before God, at the coming of Christ to Judgment.

CHAP. IV.

1. Furthermore then we beseech you, brethren, and exhort you by the Lord Jesus, that as ye have received of us how you ought to walk, and to please God, so ye would abound more and more.

2. 3, 4. For ye know what commandments we gave you by the Lord Jesus. For this is the will of God, even your sanctification, that ye should abstain from fornication: That every one of you should know how to possess his vessel in sanctification and honour; not in the lust of concupiscence, even as the Gentiles which know not God:

2, 3, 4, 5. You know how we charged you from Christ, as that which God required in you, that you be a Holy People, and therefore that you be no Fornicators, but be careful to use your Bodies in purity and honour, and not in filthy lust, like the ignorant Heathens.

6. That no man go beyond, and defraud his brother in any matter: because that the Lord is the avenger of all such, as we also have forewarned you, and testified.

6. That no man tread upon or defraud his Brother in any Matter, &c.

Note. Some think that it is Unnatural Lust that is here obscurely named by Modesty: But that it forbids all forible or fraudulent Wrong to another in Body or

Flate, is most probable. And note, That God is especially the Avenger of such Wrongs, in which the Power and Fraud of Oppressors leaveth Men no other Help but God.

7. For God hath not called us unto uncleanness, but unto holiness.

7. It is to Holiness, and from all uncleanness, that God hath called us by Christ: And we must live according to our Vocation, if we are converted indeed.

8. He therefore that despiseth, despiseth not man, but God, who hath also given unto us his holy Spirit.

8. Those therefore that plead for such Sins as harmless, and despise these Bounds of Lust, despise God's own Commandments and him, and not only us that preach them, and they despise the Spirit of Holiness, given by God to all the Faithful, which condemneth these Lusts.

9. But as touching brotherly love, ye need not that I write unto you: for ye yourselves are taught of God to love one another.

9. As for Brotherly Love, you have not such need to be taught it as those that know it: For God (who hath a way of teaching by Efficiency, beyond that of Words) hath taught you to love one another, by giving you this Love, by his Holy Spirit.

10. And indeed ye do it towards all the brethren which are in all Macedonia: but we beseech you, brethren, that ye increase more and more;

10. Note. 1. That it is a wise way to make Men better, to praise so much Good as is in them.

2. Even those that God hath taught by his own Operations, have need to be entertained by Men to increase, even in the Duty of Loving others.

11. And that ye study to be quiet, and to do your own business, and to work with your own hands, (as we commanded you.)

11. And to that end, that you make it your earnest care and Study to avoid all Idleness, and to live in quietness with all Men: And
And for this, that you avoid meddling in other Matters unnecessarily, but mind and meddle with the Business which is your own; and that Idleness call you not on others for Supply, but that you work for your selves, as I commanded you.

Note. That he that will increase in Love, must; 1. Study Quietness: 2. And not meddle uncall'd with other Men's Matters: 3. Not make himself the help of others: 4. And therefore not live in impoverishing Idleness.

12. That ye may walk honestly toward them that are without, and that ye may have lack of nothing.

13. But I would not have you to be ignorant, brethren, concerning them which are asleep, that ye sorrow not, even as others which have no hope.

14. And lest ye be tempted to doleful or over-sorrowful Thoughts of the Dead, like them that believe not a better Life hereafter, I would not have you cherish such Sorrows by ignorance of their case.

15. For it we believe that Jesus died, and rose again, even so them also which sleep in Jesus, will God bring with him.

16. For how can we believe that Christ died and rose, but we must also believe the Resurrection of those that are the departed Members of Christ? He will bring their Souls with him, for they are with him now: and he will raise their Bodies, and so bring the entire Man with him in Judgment.

Note. That Death is called a Sleep to the Faithful, with respect to the Body, and the Rest of the Soul from Sorrows; but not as if the Soul were but in a sleepy Inactivity.

17. For this we say unto you by the word of the Lord, that we which are alive, and remain unto the coming of the Lord, shall not prevent them which are asleep.

18. For I say this not as my Word, but God's. That such of us Believers as shall be found alive then, shall not go before them that are dead to Christ at his coming.

19. For the Lord himself shall descend from heaven with a shout, with the voice of the archangel, and with the trump of God: and the dead in Christ shall rise first:

20. For the Lord himself coming down in his visible Humanity from Heaven, shall call the World together, as Men call Assemblies, by Shout, by Voice, or by a Trumpet; so shall Christ by his unknown way, called the Voice of an Archangel, and the Trumpet of God; and first the dead Christians shall be raised to Life.

21. Then we which are alive and remain, shall be caught up together with them in the clouds, to meet the Lord in the air: and so shall we ever be with the Lord.

22. Wherefore, comfort one another with these words.

23. Then those of us who shall be alive and remain, shall by his Power be caught up with them, to meet Christ in the Air, who will adjudge us to Everlasting Life, and so we shall ever after be with Christ in Glory where he is: Therefore encourage and comfort your selves, and each other, with the lively Belief, the joyful Hopes, and the frequent mention of this most Blessed Time and State.

Note. 1. That though Paul knew not the time, it's a groundless Reproach of Paul by them that say, He thought that, he should have lived here till the coming of Christ to Judgment. Had Paul made Men believe that Christ should come again in that very Age, what a Delusion would it have been to the Churches; and what false Expectations and Religious Duties would it have excited them to? and have tempered the next Age, that saw the frustration, to have revolted to Infidelity.

2. Though we are told, that we must meet the Lord in the Air, and then be ever with him; it pleased not God to give us yet a distinct knowledge of the Place, nor what he will do with the New Earth in which Righteousness will dwell: But where ever it is, it will be in Heavenly Glory with Christ.

3. They that will have true Christian Comfort, must fetch it from the daily and lively Belief and Consideration of this, That
we shall for ever be in Happiness with Christ our Lord, and the holy Society of the Blest.

4. Qu. Why doth not Paul comfort them with the mention of the Souls Immortality and Happiness before the Resurrection of the Body? Ans. Because, 1. It was the Body that suffered by Persecution, and that slept, and that mourned for too much; and therefore it was about it that they needed Comfort. 2. And the Souls Immortality was a more undoubted thing, (without which a Resurrection of the same Man had been impossible.) 3. And the Felicity or Perfection of entire Man is greater than that of the Soul alone, the State of which God hath left clearly and distinctly revealed to us.

CHAP. V.

1. But of the times and the seasons, brethren, ye have no need that I write unto you. 2. For your selves know perfectly that the day of the Lord cometh as a thief in the night.

1. 2. But to write to you of the particular time of Christ's coming, I suppose you expect not, for you have been told, that he cometh as a Thief in the Night, unexpected, Men not foreknowing when.

3. For when they shall say, Peace and safety; then sudden destruction cometh upon them, as travail upon a woman with child; and they shall not escape.

3. So much must the time be unknown, that it will surprise them with sudden unavoidable Destruction when they most presume that all is well with them, and safe.

4. But ye, brethren, are not in darkness, that that day should overtake you as a thief. 5. Ye are all the children of light, and the children of the day: we are not of the night, nor of darknes.

4. 5. But though you know not the time, it will not so surprise you, as Thieves do Men asleep in the Night: For ye are all in the Day-light, and not unprepared, in a state of Darkness.

6. Therefore let us not sleep as do others; but let us watch and be sober.

6. Therefore let this remember you to avoid the careless Presumption, the Vices and unprepared state of the Sleepy World; and relive awake, and in Sobriety.

7. For they that sleep, sleep in the night; and they that be drunken, are drunken in the night.

7. For the Night is the time of sleep, and to hide the shame of Drunkenness by Darkness.

8. But let us who are of the day, be sober, putting on the breastplate of faith and love, and for an helmer, the hope of Salvation.

8. But let us, whom God hath brought out of Darkness into the Christian Light, live soberly, wearing Faith and Love as Soulers do a Breastplate, and the Hope of Salvation as they do an Helmet, to save Heart and Head from all Afflicts.

9. For God hath not appointed us to wrath; but to obtain Salvation by our Lord Jesus Christ.

9. For it is not us, that are his faithful Servants, but his rebellious Enemies, whom God hath appointed to Wrath; but us he hath appointed to obtain Salvation by Christ.

10. Who died for us, that whether we wake or sleep, we should live together with him.

10. Who died for us, that whether we wake or sleep in Body, live or die, we should live with him.

11. Wherefore comfort your selves together, and edifie one another, even as also ye do.

11. Therefore continue as you do to assemble and comfort your selves together with these Hopes, and to edifie one another thereby.

Note. Paul knew that Rulers were against such Assemblies and Exercises. Qu. But must not they be forbidden? Ans. Not as an Act of Obedience, when God commandeth us to use them: But Force may make it impossible to us; as it is to relieve the Poor, when Men disable us, and take away all that we have to give them.

12. And
To esteem Christ's ministers. I Thessalonians. Divers Precepts. Ch. 5.

12. And we beseech you, brethren, to know them which labour among you, and are over you in the Lord, and admonish you;
13. And to esteem them very highly in love for their works sake. And be at peace among your fellows.

12, 13. Acknowledge their Office and Worth, and your Obligations, to them that are truly called to be your Bishops, or Spiritual Guides and Rulers, and labour among you in that Office, and admonish you: And as their Office is high, their labour and your Benefit great, let them be greatly esteemed by you, and dearly loved for their Work. This due Love and Submission to them; and living in Peace among your fellows, will make you a happy Church.

Also, 1. That every Church should have their proper Overseers and Guides among them.
2. That these Pastors are over them in the Lord, and not to be ruled by the People.
3. That the Work of Bishops is to labour among them, and admonish their particular Churches.
4. That their Authority must be owned, and they highly esteemed and loved.
5. That it is for their Works sake that this is due to them, and therefore not to those that work not.
6. The Bishops whom in this Text they were threatened to own, honour, and love, were those that laboured among them, and not only those that lived far off, and never laboured among them.
7. Due Love and Respect between the Pastors and the Flock, and being at peace among themselves, are the way to establish a Church in a prosperous state.

14. Now we exhort you, brethren, warn them that are unruly, comfort the feeble-minded, support the weak, be patient toward all men.

14. Those that are disorderly and unruly, warn: Those that are feeble-minded, comfort: Those that are weak, support, and help them to bear their Burdens: And be gentle, and patient all.

Note, How contrary to this is reviling and destroying all these sorts? yea, filencing the strongest, that fear sinning against God;

by swearing, subcribing, and conforming to the needles and wicked Canons of Papal Usurers.

15. See that none render evil for evil unto any man: but ever follow that which is good, both among your selves, and to all men.

15. Though Men by doing evil to you, deserve evil, return it not by Revenge, by Word or Deed: But let your selves be as good, both to Christians, and to all Men.

16, 17, 18. Rejoice evermore, Pray without ceasing. In every thing give thanks: for this is the will of God in Christ Jesus concerning you.

16, 17, 18. Wheresoeuer you suffer, always rejoice, because this is the Cause of joy and recompence: And let Prayer be your constant Practice, and your Habit of Holy Dole is a continued virtual Prayer. And in every Case give Thanks to God, because your Mercies are still greater than your Sufferings: And this God hath made your Day, by the great Blessings which he hath given you in Christ.


21. Prove all things: hold fast that which is good.

21. Receive not hastily or rashly, without sufficient Proof, any Doctrines, or pretended Revelations, or Prayers: but the Good that is tried and proved, hold fast.

22. Abstain from all appearance of evil.

22. Avoid all Sin so carefully, as not to venture on that which you have just cause to suspect to be false, till you have tried whether it be so or not.

23. And the very God of peace sanctifie you wholly: and I pray God your whole spirit and soul and body be preferred blameless unto the coming of our Lord Jesus Christ.

23. And
Ch. 5. Divers precepts. I. Thessalonians. Divers precepts. Ch. 5.

23. And God who giveth and lovesth thee Peace and Prosperity of his Servants, xandrite; you wholly: And I pray God that you may wholly, in Spirit, Soul, and Body, be so preferred from Sin, that you may stand uncondemned, approved as faithful, at the coming of Christ.

Note. 1. It is of great use for our Comfort and Imitation, to know God to be the God of Peace.

2. Paul meaneth not that their Bodies should live till Christ's coming, or that they should be without all Sin and Blame, but without all condemning Sin, and so justified and forgiven as to their Imperfections.

3. He doth not make Spirit, Soul, and Body three substantial compounding Parts of Man, (as far as can be proved;) but seemeth only to mean, that he defereth that they may stand approved in all these three respects: 1. In the Spirit, that is, the Habits and Disposition of the Soul, looking beyond it self to its End. 2. In the Soul, as it standeth the Body which it animateth. 3. In the Body, as it is the Instrument of the Soul. But of these things even Christian Philosophers differ. 1. Some think, Man hath three distinct Souls, Intellectual, Sensitive, and Vegetative. 2. Some, that he hath two, Intellectual and Sensitive; and that the Vegetative is a part of the Body. 3. Some, that he hath but one, with these three Faculties. 4. Some, that he hath but one, with these two Faculties, Intellectual and Sensitive. 5. Some, that he hath but one, with the Faculty of Intelligence and Will; and that the Sensitive is Corporeal. So little do we know our selves. What I think most probable, I have opened in Methodo Theologia; That Man hath but one Substantial Soul, with both Intellectual and Sensitive Faculties; and that it is uncertain whether the Vegetative be its Faculty, or only the Faculty of the Igneous or Etherial Substance, which is the immediate Vehicle of the Soul. It is enough for us to know so much of our Souls as our Duty in using them, and our Fidelity do require: As he may know to use his Clock, Watch, Horse, Horse, who knoweth not how to make them, nor can anatomise them.

24. Faithful is he that calleth you, who also will do it.

Note. Gods Faithfulness may give the Sanctified great Hope of their Preservation.


Note. 1. Apostles needed the Prayers of weak Christians. 2. The Ceremony of Kissing, and such other, are mutable, fit or unfit, as the Custom of Countreies varieth the Signification.

27. I charge you by the Lord, that this epistle be read unto all the holy brethren. 28. The grace of our Lord Jesus Christ be with you. Amen.

27. Note. That the Epistles written to single Churches were not confined to their use, but by them to be communicated to as many as they well could.

The Second Epistle of St. PAUL the Apostle to the THESSALONIANS.

CHAP. I.

1. PAUL, and Silvanus, and Timotheus, unto the Church of the Thessalonians, in God our Father, and the Lord Jesus Christ. 2. Grace unto you, and peace from God our Father, and the Lord Jesus Christ. 3. We are bound to thank God always for you, brethren, as it is meet, because that your faith growth exceedingly, and the charity of every one of you all towards each other aboundeth.

3. Note. That it is the growth of the Church in Faith and Love, which is the matter of their true Prosperity, and the

Paffors Joy and Thanks to God, rather than their Riches, Honours, or notional Contending Knowledge.

4. So that we our selves glory in you in the churches of God, for your patience and faith in all your persecutions, and tribulations that ye endure.

4. Note, When Worldly Men are ashamed of Christians in Persecution, godly Men rejoice in their Faith and Patience, as being then most honourable.

5. Which is a manifest token of the righteous judgment of God, that ye may be counted worthy of the Kingdom of God, for which ye also suffer.

5. Which is a plain Prognostick, that God, the righteous Judge, will reward you with a part in that Kingdom for which you suffer, as being worthy of it in a sense of Grace, that is qualified as those to whom it is promised and freely given.

6. Seeing it is a righteous thing with God to recompense tribulation to them that trouble you; 7. And to you who are troubled, rest with us.

6, 7. For God ruleth righteously, and it is the way of his Justice, to punish your Persecutors, and give you who are persecuted rest with us his Apostles.

Note, That they who think this is meant of the Destruction of Jerusalem, must think that Paul thought he should live to see it, and that he and they should then have rest on Earth, which were to be deceived, and to deceive them.

7, 8. When the Lord Jesus shall be revealed from heaven with his mighty angels, in flaming fire taking vengeance on them that know not God, and that obey not the gospel of our Lord Jesus Christ:

7, 8. Note, By them that know not God is usually meant the Heathens, which confound them who disapprove but the Destruction of the Jews. And to them in Macedonia it was more to be delivered from the Heathens, who were the Rulers, than from a handful of scattered despised Jews.

2. Christ will appear with his Angels to judge and punish the Ungodly.

9. Who shall be punished with everlasting destruction from the presence of the Lord, and from the glory of his power:

9. Note, That the Phrases, everlasting destruction, and from the presence of the Lord, and from the glory of his power, agree to the usual Scripture-description of Damnation, and not to the Destruction of Jerusalem, without distortion. Nor was it much ascribed then to an appearance of Christ in Glory, that the Heathen who despised him, and killed him, and persecuted his Caefe and Servants, did also destroy the Jews.

10. When he shall come to be glorified in his saints, and to be admired in all them that believe (because our Testimony among you was believed) in that day.

10. Note, The End of Christ's glorious coming will be to be glorified and admired in holy Believers, as having by his Merit, Intercession, and Spirit, made them holy for Glory, and in Justice let them above their Persecutors.

2. So far were the poor Christians from being then such a Glory and Admiration, that they continued above two hundred years after this to be persecuted and made the scorn of the World.

11. Wherefore also we pray always for you, that our God would count you worthy of this calling, and fulfill all the good pleasure of his goodnes, and the work of faith with power:

11. We pray, that God will fit you by his Grace for this, and make you suitable to your holy Calling, and fully perform to you all the Purposes of his Love and powerfully finish your Work of Faith.

Note. Worthiness, in the Gospel-fence, is that Moral Qualification by Grace, to which, as a Moral Condition, God hath promised the blessing.

12. That the name of our Lord Jesus Christ may be glorified in you, and ye in him, according to the
II. Theathians.  

CHAP. II.

Now we becheeu thee, brethren, by the coming of our Lord Jesus Christ, and by our thering together unto him.

That ye be not soon shaken in mind, or be troubled, neither by riot, nor by word, nor by letter, as from us, as that the day of Christ is at hand.

Note, That Sandyfying Grace makes Christians a Glory to the Name of Christ, declaratively, as the Cause is hid in the Effect; and they are glorified in Christ collectively, as the Means in the Obteined, and the Runner in the Prize relatively, as an adopted Son in a nce that adopted him.

true Christianity, and exteneth himsell as above all, &c.

5. 6, 7. Remember ye not, that when I was yet with you, I told you these things? And now ye know what withsholdeth, that he might be revealed in his time. For the mystery of iniquity doth already work: onely he who now letteeth, will let, until he be taken out of the way. 8. And then shall that wicked be revealed, whom the Lord shall consume with the spirit of his mouth, and shall destray with the brightness of his coming: 9. Even him whose coming is after the working of Satan; with all power, and signs, and lying wonders. 10. And with all deceivableness of unrighteousness, in them that perish; because they received not the love of the truth, that they might be saved. 11. And for this cause God shall send them strong delusion, that they should believe a lie: 12. That they all might be damned, who believed not the truth, but had pleasure in unrighteousness.

Note, 1. That Forewarning shoulde be Forewarning. 2. Both the life and fall of Sin and Sinners must have their proper Seasons: as Gods delays are but staying till the duetime. 3. Removing Impediments is the Preparatory work for future events. 4. This great Enemy of Christ is a Man Lawless, and made up of Wickedness. 5. He must be first revealed, and then consumed, even by his Word, Spirit, and Coming. 6. Satan will promote this Enemy of Christ, with Power, Signs, and lying Wonders, and Deceivableness of Unrighteousness. 6. Not receiving the Love of the Truth of the Gospel, nor heartily believing it, but taking pleasure in Unrighteousness, prepare Men for damming Delusions. 7. God is said to send them such Delusions, by penal Defecions and Permitions.

Readers, I dare not take on me to teach you that as true, which I know not my self; nor yet to pretend that I know more than I do. I confes, that I am uncertain, who
who it is that Paul here describes: And
merely to know what other Men say of it,
is no satisfaction to me, especially when
they so greatly differ as they do.
1. Most of the Fathers and Papists think,
that Antichrist here described is some odious
False Christ, who is yet to come before the
End of the World. I have much to say
against that Opinion.
2. Grosais thought that this Chapter
speaks of the Emperor Caisar Caligula chie-
thy, and partly of Simon Magus. So much
may be said against that, as that his Follow-
er Dr. Hammond rejecked it.
3. Dr. Hammond thinks it speaketh one-
ly of Simon Magus. I cannot believe that:
1. Because really this Simon was no such
considerable formidable Person as he de-
scribed him. The few Scraps of History of
Simon recited by him, are very dubious.
No great or publick History of those Times
mention him. He was affrighted into Sub-
mission and Supplication to Peter, Acts 8.
He was not thought worthy the naming after,
in all the sharp Charges against Her-
editics in the Epistles. The Judaisers are re-
proved; the Contusion called Dögi; the
Troubles Paul withstood cut off; the Nic-
Niaus named; and the Woman Jackal; and
many Antichrists, mentioned by John; the
groffet fort of Hereditics frankly described,
and condemned by Peter and Jude: John
forbid us to bid them Good-speed: Paul
bids Men avoid them as recondemned:
The Revelation speaketh yet more fully.
And more of them all mention Simon as the
God and Ring-leader of them. If the Nico-
niaus, and all those that the Doctor call-
eth Grislicy, were known to be the Disili-
plies of Simon, why is that concealed in such
large Reproofs? and why not called Simo-
nians, as well as Nicollaus? If they were
not then known to be his Offspring, it
seems these Heredites had other Fathers be-
fore him, more noted and followed. 2. Sim-
on was revealed before the writing of this
Epistle, Acts 8. and the Heredites before too
common. 3. There were seven or eight other
Heredites described by Ephippianus, as early
as the Simonians and Grislicy, and as bad.
4. Sute Grislicy was not then an unap-
vealed Mystery, if if be mentioned as oft as
the Doctor thinketh. 5. And through Gods
Mercy the falling away first was compara-
tively but of few, and not of so great a num-
ber of Churches or Christians, as was a flop
to their Expectation of the coming of
Christ. It is not noted in Acts 8. that the
Samaritians were seduced by him after they
believed. If it were true, that they
and some at Rome were, what's that to all
the Churches? 6. It is above fifteen hun-
dred years since Simon was revealed, and yet
Christ is not come; how then is that stated
an Observation of Men delayed Expectation of
7. That Christ returning significa but the De-
struction of Jerusalem, is before esteemed to
be very improbable, and fuller might be.
How many hot Persecutions of Christians
after that, do all Church-Historians describe,
in another manner than Simeon's Pranks? And
what could the Jews do through all the Em-
pire, being condemned Vagabonds, but by
way of Rabbis, which the Roman Power re-
thresed? 8. And it seemeth to the
Violent to the Test, to make (now that
whendeth, it seemeth), to signify not
(bim), but (that thing) which whendeth,
even the Christians not yet separting from
the Jews. For, 1. There was no set-time of
separation: Paul did it long before the
Apostles that conversated with them in Judea,
and when they did, none knew. And
Paul withdrew from them to Obdulia,
gave him charge, in one place sooner than in
others; and never so fast, that they forbade
for their Conversion. Nor were any such direful Persecutions an
Evidence of that Separation, as far as if History in-
formeth us. It was the strewed Jews that
were the Rudiments of most of the Chris-
tian Churches in the Empire, to whom the
Gentiles were added. And this Doctor
himself of ancient, that Remon, Aelvain-
dria, Antioch, and such other great Cities,
had two Bishops, and two Churches; one
of the Jews, and one of the Gentiles. And
the Christian Jews did not separate from
their Country-men of a long time.
That which the Apostle mentioneth, the
whole Catholick Church feareth to be
concerned in: whereas the little Pranks of
Simone Magus were like John of Leodi,
and Knipperdolling's, and James Ryley's,
which had a few contemned Followers, in a few
Towns, a little while, and then ended in
Shame: Like the Boys Squibs, compared
to a War.
8. And what Mystery: was there in so
gros Inquiry, as for Simon 'to call blamful
God the Father, &c. any more than to
have seen Hecules or a Bedlam rave?
9. And if such wonders of dates had been
wrought by him, as is here mentioned, as
should delude those that received not the
Love of the Truth to Salvation, History
would
II. The Saltonians.

Ch. 2.

I have felt a strong desire to record my experiences, and not to pretend to the knowledge which I have not. They that are offended at this gap or defect in my paraphrase may turn to many others that know more, or are more confident.

If you say, Why were these Prophets written, if not to be understood? I answer: To be understood by them that can, and not to be Expounded by them that cannot. And I add, that the great beloved Prophet Daniel thus concludes, ch. 13. 9, 10, I heard, but I understood not. And the Angel said, Go thy way, Daniel, for the words are closed up and sealed to the time of the end. And I take it to be no excuse of humility to confess, that in Expounding Prophets I am not fit to be Daniel. That Popery is a heinous corruption of Christianity, I am past doubt: And that it is aggravated by the profession of the Gospel, and Falsifying their sins on Christ.

But for the help of those that are more capable of arriving at certainty than I am, I will distinctly tell the Reader the Paraphrase of the three most considerable parts of Esopusium.

f. V. 3. Let no Man persuade you that Christ's coming is at hand, for it will not be till a great part of the Church shall have fallen away from Christianity, and Mahomet that wick-ed Man and Seducer be revealed, who is a Destroyer, and shall be destroyed. Whose opposition and exaltation himself, not only above all earthly Powers, but above all forms of Divine Worship, both Heathenish and Christian. So that, as if he were a God, he will set up his own Worship, as next to the supreme only God, both in the Temple, at Jerusalem, and throughout all the now Christian Eastern Empire, and a great part further of the World, and under the Title of God's greatest Prophets, will put down God's own Institutions, and Laws, and Gospel, and set up his own in the stead.

6. What it is that stops him, is a thing known to you all, even the Imperial Power, which as it falls, he will rise: For as he is to make his false Religion by a composition of Arianaism, Judaism, and his own Inventions, so the (warm of Heresies, now among us, (Nicolaitans, Bista- nites, Christians, Gnosticks, &c.) are secretly a Mysterious Iniquity preparing for him: Only that Empire that now letteth, must give place to him, by diminution at his first rising, and by its total overthrow in the East, at his full postridge: And if he stand in his time become the open Sedu-
II. The Thessalonians.

Ch. 2.

to the Gentiles, and then destroy by pouring out the Vials of his Wrath upon him, at his latter coming to restore his Church.

9. Even that Pope, with his Roman Church of Papists, whose coming to the Papacy is after that way of working, by force, and cheats, and signs of Miracles, which Satan reaches and giveth them to seduce the Christian World. 10. And with all the deceiving Arts of falsehood, by which unrighteousness is upheld and promoted, to delude those that shall perish for ever: Because they received not the Doctrine when it was delivered, nor held the Christian Faith in Love, but in Power, b.t in Cunnunt, Hypocritite, and Form, that it might sanctifie and save them.

Therefore God justly gave them up by deceptions, to Deceivers and Delusions, to believe a lie. 11. That all these Papists might be damned who believed not the Truth that is contrary to Popery, but had pleasure in its unrighteous Principles and Practices, and in that sensual life which is contrary to the Christianitie which they profess.

III. The third considerable Opinion was thus in the Paraphrase Explication.

1. Pauis's words have relation both to Daniel's words, of Antichrist, so meant, but of the Roman Pope rather, say Calvin and Brightman (who largely proved it).

2. It is so far from being true, that the Christians rejoiced in Christ's finding the Romans to destroy Jerusalem, that they greatly lamented it: The Cities name was precious to them, the first Christians being all Jews, and the Gentiles receiving the Gospel from Jerusalem: Christ went over them when he Prophezied their ruin: Pauis's lamentation was great for them. The ruin was dreadful, 111000 killed, and 70000 carried Captive: And the Apostles were all Jews; and there was a common expectation among the Jews of the Messiah's Glorious Kingdom at Jerusalem, and they called it, The Holy City, and Land.

3. The Abomination of desolation is by Christ himself compared to that spoken of by Daniel the Prophet, which was the destroying the Holy Place and Worship, and setting up Idolatry in its stead. And the Authors themselves of the second Explication (as against the Pope) Expose the Destroying Abomination in Math. 24. to be the Roman Heathen Army coming to lay waste the Holy City and Temple: For that Abomination
of Deception was to go before the flight of men from Jerusalem, or to
concur. And this Text, v. 3, &c. seemeth plainly to follow Christ, and speak of the
same that he spake of.

4. Vespasian and his Son Titus by his Command were the Men that destroyed the Holy City, Temple, and Nation, and the Idolatrous Heathens and their Worship there took present possession, and set up the Deception and Abomination; And his younger Son Domitian destroyed the Chris-
tians, and Proclaimed himself to be God, and to be worshipped with Altars and Sacrifices as God.

5. This Vespasian took on him to work Miracles, healing a Blind Man, and many others: So that some foolish Jews called him the Messiah: and he, and his Son Titus by their flattery and fair lies got great esteem as excellent Men: And their Learned Or-
ators, &c. promoted the honor of Idolatry by theirs.

6. This way of Self-deifying and pro-
moting Idolatry, and Captivating the Jews and all Christians, went on, though not equally, through all the Emperors almost, till Constantine.

7. The attempt of Caius Caligula told the Christians what further to expect, when he Commanded Petronius to set up his Image in the Temple to be worshipped as Jupiter.

Nero’s Cruelty prognosticated much.

8. But Vespasian and Titus were took from the Deception first attempted by the Life of Clodius, Galba, Otho, Vitellius, till he was made Emperor himself.

9. And Christ consumed their Idolatry by his Gospel, and destroyed it by Constan-
tine. These things premised, their Paral-
phrasis is, v. 3. The day of the Lord will not come till the Jews Rebellion and Revolt from the Romans provoke them to destroy them, and then will the wicked Destroyer appear, even the Romans Imperial Pride and Rage, who exalt themselves above all Human Power, and will arrogate the Name and worship of Gods, and put down Gods own instituted Worship, and will have Altars and Images erected to themselves. 6. What de-
layeth them yet you know: They are killing one another for Empire at Rome; and the sin of the poor Jews against Christ and his Apostles is not yet ripe for utter ruine; and then next the destroyer will appear: For their Self-IDolizing is alread-

The Matter of all these three Exposi-
tions in it self, hath a great deal of Truth, that is, Mahomet is an Antichrist (most notorious): The Pope as pretended Univer-
.

13. But we are bound to give thanks alway to God for you, brethren, beloved of the Lord, because God hath from the beginning chosen you to salvation,
through sanctification of the Spirit, and belief of the truth.

13. But when I speak of this pernicious Apostacy of the followers of this Man of an and perdition, it mindeth me to be thankful to God for you, that from the beginning he hath chosen and marked you out for Salvation, by Sanctifying you by his Spirit, and giving you a sound belief of that truth, which these Apostates do deny.

14. Whereunto he called you by our gospel, to the obtaining of the glory of our Lord Jesus Christ.

15. Therefore, brethren, stand fast, and hold the traditions which ye have been taught, whether by word, or our epistle.

15. Therefore stand fast, and hold the same Doctrine which I have delivered to you, whether by Preaching, Discourse, or Writing against all Innovating Seducers.

16. Now our Lord Jesus Christ himself, and God even our Father, which hath loved us and hath given us everlasting consolation and good hope through grace.

17. Comfort your hearts, and establish you in every good word and work.

16, 17. And I have great encouragement to pray for you, in hope that you may be comforted and established in all that is good, because it is to that Christ that is our Saviour, and God who is our Father, and hath already shewed that he loveth us, and hath by his grace given us solid hope, and the foretaste of the everlasting consolation,
Scandal, by avoiding the familiar company of every one professing Christianity, who liveth disorderly, and not according to the Law of Christ which we delivered to him.

Note, 1. That there is a degree of avoiding Familiarity with a disorderly Christian, to shun him into Repentance, and to preserve our selves, and the Honour of Christianity, which is short of a publick Declaration, Excommunication, and casting out of the Church. It is justly called Suspicion, because a Man is not to be Excommunicate till he be proved obstinately Impenitent: But a Man that is guilty of a notorious scandalous sin, may be suspended while he is under tryal whether he will repent or not.

2. Note. That this Command of withdrawing from the disorderly, doth not require that we withdraw from the Church when such intruder, or are there permitted. No more than you must for sake your own House and Family if he intrude: You have right and command to be there tho’ he have no right.

3. Nor doth it make all to be of equal power in Church Matters, nor bind any to go beyond his Power. 1. Of Mens Capacity for Publick Church Communion, the Pastors are Judges: And if they be negligent, its their sin, which will not allow Private Men to for sake the Publick Communion, till the Church so far for sake God as to be forsaken by him. 2. But Private Familiarity is in Private Mens Power, where they may disown the Scandalous by withdrawing from them.

7. For your selves know how ye ought to follow us: for we behav not our selves disorderly among you. Neither did we eat any mans bread for nought; but wrought with labour and travel night and day, that we might not be chargeable to any of you:

7. 8. You know what our Example was, that ought to be imitated: I did not live idly, and look that the Church should maintain me, nor basely hang on any, or needlessly burden them: nor take their bread which I paid not for: but while I taught you, I laboured and toiled at my trade, that I might be chargeable to none of you.

9. Not because we have not power, but to make our selves an example unto you to follow us.

9. My Ministerial Office and Labour made maintenance from you my due, but Idleness I saw was a sin, that had need of Example as well as Doctrine to subdue it.

10. For even when we were with you, this we commanded you, that if any would not work, neither should he eat.

10. Note. Poor Men that will not work when they can, do forfeit the Bread of Charity from Men; but Rich Men that live idly by the means for their Food, and more, even their lives and Souls, to God; but Men may not therefore take it from them.

11. For we hear that there are some which walk among you disorderly, working not at all, but are bate-bodies.

11. By disorderly Persons I specially mean such as I hear some among you are, who live not in any profitable Trade and Labour, but yet are bate, but its about circumstantial, unnecessary or unprofitable by-mates.

Note, That as Idleness is a base sin, which equals Life and Death, so unnecessary and unprofitable Labour is a mis-spending time, and a forfeiture of Maintenance as well as Idleness: and to make a Trade or Daily Employment of vain or unprofitable Business, is but a Cloak of Deceit for an Idle Life: The Slothful and Unprofitable Servants forfeit Wages. Oh what a deal of Business to little purpose hath the World to answer for! much more may be therefore, not labouring, but busily Trifling; men, will find that God gave them Life and Reason for greater things.

12. Now them that are such we command, and exhort by our Lord Jesus Christ, that with quietness they work, and eat their own bread.

12. To live on the labours or cost of others, through base, indulging fitchy cafe, or unprofitable trifling, is to great a sin, that I do command you, and exhort you, by the authority of Christ, and as you will
will obey him, that you avoid it, and that you quietly and willingly get your own living by some profitable labour, and set not other Men's Bread, but your own, and that not the Bread of Idleness.

13, 14. But ve, brethren, be not weary in well doing. And if any man obey not our word by this epistle, note that man, and have no company with him, that he may be ashamed. 15. Yet count him not as an enemy, but admonish him as a brother.

13, 14, 15. If after all this the slothful will not labour, though you are not to cut him off from the Church, as if it were for rejecting an Essential part of Christianity, yet there is a Discipline to be used in the Church towards its Members: Set a note of shame upon that Man, by avoiding familiarity with him: But yet take him not for an Enemy or Heathen, but an offending Christian, and continue to call him to Repentance.

The First Epistle of St. Paul the Apostle to Timothy.

CHAP. I.

1. Paul an apostle of Jesus Christ, by the commandment of God our Saviour, and the Lord Jesus Christ, which is our hope; 2. Unto Timothy, my own son in the faith: Grace, mercy, and peace from God our Father, and Jesus Christ our Lord.

1, 2. Note 1. Apostleship was by God's Call and Command. 2. Christ is the Believers Hope.

3. It is meet to have some special enkindled Love to those that are our Sons in the Faith, converted by our Ministry.

4. As the desire of Worldlings is to worldly Prosperity, so the sum of all holy Christian desires, is Grace, Mercy, and Peace from God the Father, and from Christ.

3. As I besought thee to abide still at Ephesus when I went into Macedonia, that thou mightest charge some that they teach no other doctrine. 4. Neither give heed to fables, and endless genealogies, which minister questions, rather than godly edifying, which is in faith; so do.

3, 4. Note 1. Whether this imply that Timothy was Bishop of Ephesus, is a Question of small moment to them that know what a Bishop then was. A Bishop, &c. Dr. Hammond maintained, had then but one Congregation, and no Subject-Presbyter under him. He certainly had no Power of the Sword to force Men. He was only a Guide to Volunteers and Confraternities, and to none against their will. It is certain, that every Church had at least one such Bishop. (I think usually more.) And no doubt Ephesus had such (either Timothy),
15. The Holy Scripture is as a complete Body, which hath its Accidents and Ornaments, as well as Essentia and Integral Parts, (as Hair, Nails, Colour) &c. But it is the end that is the chief part and must be preferred: And the end of all Christ’s Doctrine and Law is, Charity, or to bring Men’s Souls to the love of God, and Man, and Goodness, as its very Nature: And the grand means to this are, 1. A Heart purified by God’s Spirit. 2. A good Conscience, nor guilty of reigning sin, and justified from the guilt of former sin and present Infirmity by Christ. 3. And unfeigned Faith in Christ, by which we are united to him, and have our part in the foresaid benefits. And this is the Sum of True Christian Religion in few Words, which is more probably instilled on than Jingling Controversies.

6. From which some having swerved, have turned aside unto vain jangling; 7 Deferring to be teachers of the law, understanding neither what they say, nor whereof they affirm.

6. 7. And some that have roved from this Mark, (not taking Religion finally in Love, to be prayed aforesaid) have turned aside to Vain Jingling, or Vain Chat; as if Religion lay in being Doctors of Mosei’s Law; when as they understand not what they say themselves, nor what the things are which they pretend to teach.

Note. 1. They that shew not at this mark (as διδονται signifies) and place not Religion as aforesaid, have ever since corrupted it by Vain Jingling, though not about the same Subjects: Some setting the Churches together by the Fars about unnecessary, curious Notions concerning the person of Christ, or concerning God’s Decrees, and Encounter, and some about the Clergies Universal Domination, and about their Canon Law (worse than was that of Mosei) and their Dunghil of Corruptions and enfuriing Ceremonies, and some about quibbling Notions concerning Justification, Faith, and Works. Satan hath Religious Diversions for them that are above Sensuality. And Ignorant-confidence (with rage) is the usual Character of all such.

8. But we know that the law is good, if a man use it lawfully;
8. We praise the Law as well as they: It is God's Law, and therefore good, if lawfully used; which is to lead Men to Christ, and typical Spiritual things to come, and to condemn and restrain sin, but not to justify Men instead of Grace, nor to be imputed on the Gentiles, or continued, when a better does displace it.

9. Knowing this, that the Law is not made for a righteous man, but for the lawless and disobedient, for the ungodly and for sinners, for unholy and profane, for murderers of fathers and murderers of mothers, for men-flayers, for whoremongers, for them that defile themselves with mankind, for men-stealers, for liars, for perjured persons, and if there be any other thing that is contrary to sound doctrine, 11. According to the glorious gospel of the blessed God, which was committed to my trust.

10. 11. It must be foreknown, 1. That the World was not Lawless that had not Moses's Law: They had the Law of Nature, and the common Law of Grace which was given to Mankind after the fall: And Christ hath now brought us the Holy Spiritual Law of Grace in the most perfect edition. So that sin is condemned where Moses's Law is not received or known. 2. That Moses's Laws, as such, were all Political for the Government of that Republic, even the Ten Commandments, and had Penalties to be executed by Men annexed, as an essential part of it. Now of this Law, faith Paul, He was not made with these Penalties either to bridle us to punish them that WITHOUT IT were Righteous Men, that is, WHO WERE OBEDIENT TO THE LAW OF NATURE, and of Grace, and whose Hearts were ruled with the love of Righteousness, and needed not to be frightened to it by Corporal Penalties; much less for us Christians, who have Christ's Law of Grace, and are sanctified by his Spirit, writing in our Hearts by Love of Goodness: But God knowing the corruption of Man's Heart, did make it for the Breaches, to restrain them by fear from living like Lawless, Disobedient Men, \\

12. And I thank Christ Jesus our Lord, who hath enabled me, for he counted me faithful, putting me into the ministry;

12. Note. It is a great mercy to be entrusted with the Ministry of the Gospel, with Ability and Faithfulness.

13. Who was before a blasphemer, and a persecutor, and injurious, But I obtained mercy, because I did it ignorantly in unbelief:

13. Note. 1. The great mercy of God to great sinners; Even Persecutors and Blasphemers may be converted.

2. That God giveth the greatest mercy without previous merit.

3. The word {here} here means as that Ignorance was a proper cause of God's Mercy: But that it made Paul a more capable receiver of mercy, than he should have been, if he had maliciously sinned against Knowledge.

14. And the grace of our Lord was exceeding abundant, with faith, and love which is in Christ Jesus.

14. And this mercy which called me, hath poured out on me, by the Holy Ghost, an abundant measure of faith in Christ, and love to him and his, which carried me on in his Work with Zeal and unwearied diligence.

15. This is a faithful saying, and worthy of all acceptation, that Christ Jesus came into the world to save sinners; of whom I am chief.

15. This is the Great Article of our Christian Faith, which we may trust in, and of great comfort to us all, and worthy of our thankful acceptation, That Christ came into the World to save Sinners; which I, that am one of the chief, must therefore prophesy with chiefest Thanks.

16. However, for this cause I obtained
obtained mercy, that in me first Jesus Christ might shew forth all long-suffering, for a pattern to them which should hereafter believe on him to life everlasting.

16. But it pleased God to shew mercy to me, to great a sinner, to magnify his grace, and encourage all sinners against despair, that in me Christ might effectually shew his gracious patience and forbearance, and confirm all sinners in the hope of everlasting life, who after shall believe and be converted.

17. Now unto the King eternal, immortal, invisible, the only wise God, be honour and glory, for ever and ever. Amen.

18. The sense of this unsearchable mercy called up my soul (and should do all) to speak with joy the praises of our God, who is eternal, immortal, invisible, the only God, absolutely and, over angels, and all creatures: To him be honour and glory, for ever and ever. Amen.

19. This charge I commit unto thee, O Timothy, according to the prophecies which went before on thee, that thou by them mightest war a good warfare.

19. Holding faith, and a good conscience;

18. Note. 1. By charge is meant holding faith and a good conscience, and keeping the doctrine committed to him by Paul, as a faithful minister and soldier of Christ, against all opposition.

19. It seems some particular prophecy (such as Agabus had of Paul, and many then had) had foretold that Timothy should be a faithful minister.

19. Which some having put away, concerning faith have made shipwreck. 20. Of whom is Hymenæus and Alexander; whom I have delivered unto Satan, that they may learn not to blaspheme.

19. 20. Which some have cast away, and left the Christian faith: Such are Hymenæus and Alexander, whom I have delivered to Satan, as God's executioner of some bodily punishments, to see whether correction will convince them of their blasphemy.

Note. 1. What their blasphemy was, is after shewn, 2 Tim. 2. 17. & 4. 14.

2. That Satan is off God's executioner in correction and destruction, is certain; and that such is the delivery here meant (for want of Christian magistrates): But it was none of Satan's desire, but God's, hereby to teach them not to blaspheme.

CHAP. II.

1. Exhort therefore, that first of all, supplications, prayers, intercessions and giving of thanks be made for all men:

1. As I have often said, The Charity is the end and sum of Religion: I charge you, that this may be sincerely manifested in your religious worship, and that you heartily pray for all sorts of men, that God would save them from sin and misery, and give them grace and mercy; and be thankful for their welfare, as if it were your own.

2. For kings, and for all that are in authority; that we may lead a quieter and peaceable life in all godliness and honesty.

2. For kings, and for all that are in preeminence or superiority, that they may govern us in the quiet serving of God, in godliness and decent conversation with men, without reproach and perdition.

Note. 1. That the character of the rulers that we are to pray for, is not only excellent, but regarded Right; but Right, without Preeminence.

Pray for him that hath the Right of Governing, as far as you can know it: But submit to him that hath received possession, so far as it is right and another's Right; and so far pray for such, that we may live a quiet and peaceable life in all godliness and honesty.

3. For this is good and acceptable in the sight of God our Saviour: 4. Who will have all men to be saved, and to come unto the knowledge of the truth.

3. 4. For this is agreeable to the great mercy manifested in man's redemption by Jesus Christ, who by his death, and co-
venant of Grace, and Preaching, hath showed us how willing he is that all Men should be saved, and come to the knowledge of his Gospel.

Note. 1. That while we obediently pray as God commandeth us, we may confidently expect God's acceptance. 2. An extensive Charity rendereth us like Christ. 3. It is not only all sorts of men that Christ would have to be saved, but he willeth the Salvation of all Men in general, so far as to make a Sacrifice sufficient for all, if all will believe; and to make an Act of Oblivion, or general Pardon, and Gift of Life to all, on Condition of Acceptance; and to send his Messengers promiscuously to all, with the Word of Reconciliation, to beseech them to be reconciled to God. What Christ giveth to all, he willeth and purchaseth for all: But he giveth to all a Pardon, and Right to Life, on Condition of Acceptance: Therefore he is so far willing of their Salvation.

5. For there is one God, and one mediator between God and men, the man Christ Jesus; 6. Who gave himself a ransom for all, to be testified in due time.

5, 6. For it must move us to pray for all, in compliance with this Will of God, that would have all Men saved; because there is One God who is good to all, and One Mediator between God and Man-kind, who took on him the Common Nature of all Men, and gave himself a Ransom for all, revealed in the Seafon appointed of God, (or to be preached to all in due time, as God pleaseth.)

Note. The Controversie about Universal Redemption, too hotly agitated by Baza, Piscator, and others, on one side, and by many on the other, I have fully handled in my Catholick Theologie, and Methodus Theologia; and it needs no more than as aforesaid: 1. Whoever is dammed, it is not because no Ransom was made for him, or because it was not sufficient for him. 2. By God's Will to save all, is meant the Effect of his Will that have a tendency to their Salvation. 3. It is necessary, that God hath made an Universal Act of Grace or Oblivion, giving Pardon of all Sin, and Right to Life in Christ, to all Men, without exception, on Condition of Believing acceptance, and hath commissioned his Ministers to offer this Gift to all Men, to the utmost of their power, and entreat them to accept it; and doth by many Mercies intimate to them, that he willeth them not according to the meer violated Law of Innocency, but on Terms of Grace. 4. Few Christians have the face to affirm, that this Universal Conditional Pardon and Gift (or Law of Grace) is no Fruit of the Death of Christ. 5. If therefore this Act of Pardon was purchased by Christ, and given to all, no modest Race can deny, that he so far died for all, as to purchase for them all that he actually giveth them. 6. It is usual to say that we give a Man a Benefit, (e. g. Life to a condemned Malefactor) if it be given him on the fair Condition of his Acceptance, and brought to his own Will, and he intreated to receive it. 7. If any Wrangler say, that this is unfit Language, (to say, He is willing that Men shall be saved, who offered them Saving freely, unless he also make them willing;) Let him confesse, that it is but the Name that he denieth, and none of the Gifts in question. 8. And be it known, that Unwillingnes comes not from a Physical Impossibility, through the want of Natural Faculties, (as it is with Brutes) but from a voluntary Pravity, which aggravateth the Sin. 9. And the mutable Will of Man is to be changed by Reason: And God giveth Men Reasons in their kind sufficient to persuade them to accept of Christ and Life. 10. And lastly, No Man can say, that Adam when he fell had not Grace enough to make him able to have stood, which he might have used, and should have done, to his actual standing: Nor, that God never giveth such a power to believe (or at least to come nearer the State of a true Believer) to many that might bring it into Act, and do not. This much is enough to end this Controversie with modest Wit.

7. Whereunto I am ordained a preacher, and an apostle, (I speak the truth in Christ, and lie not) a teacher of the Gentiles in faith and verity.

7. This Gospel I am appointed to preach to the Gentiles, (Christ knoweth that I feign not his Communion) and faithfully and truly to be their Teacher.

8. I will therefore that men pray
pray every where, lifting up holy hands without wrath and doubting.

8. According to this my Commission, I give the Directions following to all forts. First, That all Men be much in Prayer to God, not only in the Assemblies, but in all convenient Places wheresoever, open or secret: but that they lift not up to God Hands defiled with any willful Sin, but pure and clean by harmless Conversation; and that they come not to God with Wrath against others, or with a quarrelsome, disputing, contentious Disposition; but in Christian Love.

Note, That the Ceremony of Lifting up the Hands in Prayer, (which was an Act of Corporal secondary Worship) is lawful, and fits where Custom maketh it so, and yet is not necessary by Institution; as Kneeling also is.

9. In like manner also, that women adorn themselves in modest apparel, with shamefacedness and sobriety: not with brodered-hair, or gold, or pearls, or costly array.

9. And for Women, I forbid them not all Ornaments, especially when they come to the Sacred Assemblies; but let them be adorned only with Attire which expresseth Gravity, Modesty and Sobriety; not like proud, vain, or alluring Persons, with curious Dressings of their Hair, Embroidery, Jewels, Gold, or any over-costly Apparel, as those that would seem either Richer or Comelier than they are.

10. But (which becometh women professing godliness,) with good works.

10. But let them take good Works (of Piety to God, and Charity to Man,) for their chiefest Ornament: as they will do, if they are true Professors of godliness. It is thee in which they must excel the Ungodly, and not in Oftentation of Wealth or Beauty.

11. Let the woman learn in silence with all subjection.

11. Let them be Learners, rather than Teachers; and let them use Silence and humble Subjection, and not be over-talkative and matterly; specially silent in the Church.

12. But I suffer not a woman to teach, nor to usurp authority over the man, but to be in silence.

12. I forbid Women to be Publick Teachers, and to usurp an Authority over their Husbands, or over Men in Church-government; but to be quiet, silent, and obedient.

Note, 1. That Paul forbiddeth not Women to teach their Children or Servants, or the elder Women to teach the younger. 2. Nor doth he meddle with Causes of Civil Government; as, whether a Woman may govern a Kingdom, or a City, or a multitude of her own Tenants and Men-Servants.

13. 14. For Adam was first formed, then Eve. And Adam was not deceived, but the woman being deceived, was in the transgression.

13, 14. For God made the Woman for Subjection, by making Adam first, and then making her to be for his help; And the Woman subjected her self yet lower, by being first in the Transgression deceived by the Serpent, and then tempting her Husband.

15. Norwithstanding she shall be sAVED in child-bearing, if they continue in faith and charity, and holiness with sobriety.

15. Yet though her Sin have brought her low, and even under a Curse in the Pain and Peril of Child-bearing, she is, even in that low and sad condition, under God's merciful Protection, and saving Covenant of Grace, which containeth the Promise of this Life, and that to come, if they continue in Faith, Charity, and Purity, with Sobriety.

Or, (Though Sin and Sorrow in Travail came in by the Woman, yet by a Woman Child-bearing a Saviour came into the World, (which is some Reparation of the Honour of the Sex,) And so the Women may be saved as well as the Men by Christ, if they continue in Faith, Charity, Purity and Sobriety.

---

**CHAP. III.**

1. This is a true saying, if a man desire the office of a bi-
a bishop, he desir'd a good work.

1. As for the Office of a Bishop, believe it, he that desir'd it, doth desire a very great and excellent work; it is not a bare Name, Title, Dignity, or place of Honour and Command, but a Work, and a Work of great Importance, and Labour, and Difficulty, which every Deferer is not fit for: Take heed therefore whom thou dost admit.

2. A bishop then must be blameless, the husband of one wife, vigilant, sober, of good behaviour, given to hospitality, apt to teach;

A Bishop must be one: 1. That is not guilty of any scandalous sin since his Consecration. 2. That hath not put away his Wife, except for Prostitution, and married another; much less, that hath two at once. 3. That is vigilant, and wholly addicted to do what he shall undertake.

4. One that is of a sober, moderate temper, and not guilty of Levity and Temerity.

5. One that is of an Orderly, Composed, Decent Temper and Carriage. 6. By Charity to be ready to entertain Strangers, and to take in those that are exposed to want.

7. One that is by Ability and zealous Willingness to teach the Flock the necessary things communicated to the Ministry to communicate.

3. Not given to wine, no strikers, not greedy of filthy lucre, but patient, not a brawler, not covetous;

8. One that is not inordinately in love with Wine or Strong Drink. 9. One that useth no Violence, nor hurteth others.

10. One that studieth not after Gain, nor useth dishonest, uneasily ways of getting.

11. One that by lenity taketh all things in the belt fence, and is not rigorous.

12. One that is against Strife, Contention and Fighting. 13. One that is not in love with Money.

4. One that ruleth well his own house, having his children in subjection with all gravity: 5. (For if a man know not how to rule his own house, how shall he take care of the church of God?)

4. 14. One that ruleth well his own house, the house of God.
1. Timothy.

8. Likewise must the Deacons be grave, no double-tongued, not given to much wine, not greedy of filthy lucre. 9. Holding the mystery of the faith in a pure conscience.

8. The Deacons also must be well qualified Persons; Grave and Fious; not double-tongued, to say and unsay, as Interest leads them; not addicted to much Wine or Strong Drink, not greedy of filthy Gain, as Lovers of Money use to be; and they must be found Believers and of good report.

Note: That here are but two sorts of First Church-Officers noted by Paul, Bishops and Deacons. 2. As every Church had its own Bishop (one or more), so had they their own Deacons. For, as Dr. Hammond writeth, (The Deacons were every where accustomed to attend the Bishop.) But Antiquity never knew what a Deacon of a Diocese or many Churches (or hundreds of Churches) was, till Archdeacons were first new made. Therefore, as no Man was a Deacon of more than one single Church, so no Man was a Bishop of more (distinct from Archbishops), as the fald Doctor de falsa mantinach in Scripture times.

10. And let these also first be proved; then let them sit in the office of a deacon, being found blameless.

11. And even Deacons must not be married, till they are tried and proved, and found blameless.

12. Even so must the Women (or Wives) be grave, not slanderers, sober, faithful in all things.

13. So also must the Women (or Wives) be grave, &c.

Note. 1. It is uncertain whether by Wives, [Women] here, be meant the Deacons Wives, or the Deaconesses that then were appointed to some Care of Women, which then were left for. 2. The Qualifications imply, that Women are made in danger of the contrary Sin; this is, of unlawful Levity, forwardness to backbit, and speak evil falsely, as Accusers of those that displease them, not sober and careful of their Business, nor just in all things.

12. The
Ch. 3. Deacons bow to I. Timothy.

12. The Deacons must not be such as have more Wives than one, or that have injuriously put away one and married another. The good government of their own Children, and Houses also, must shew that they are fit to serve in the Church.

13. For they that have used the office of a deacon well, purchase to themselves a good degree, and great holiness in the faith which is in the Christ Jesus.

14. For although the Deacons be as Servants to the Pтон, they that have used that Office well, are in a degree above the Vulgar, and have matter of Containment, Boldness and Freedom to the management and defence of the Affairs of Christianity.

15. These things write I unto thee, hoping to come unto thee shortly: But if I tarry long, that thou mightest know how thou oughtest to behave thyself in the house of God, which is the Church of the living God, the pillar and ground of the truth.

16. And without controversy, great is the mystery of Godliness: God was manifest in the flesh, justified in the Spirit, seen of angels, preached unto the Gentiles, believed on in the world, received up into glory.
Ch. 4. In the latter times shall be 1. Timothy, a departure from the faith. C. 4

which requireth the ablest Preacher, and the founddest Faith: And he that firmly believeth the same, doth see into a more excellent Mystery than Philosophy, and will be a stable Pillar in the Church.

CHAP. IV.

1. Now the Spirit speaketh expressly, that in the latter times some shall depart from the faith, giving heed to seducing spirits, and doctrines of devils:

1. The Spirit of Prophecy plainly foretelleth us, that in the latter times some who profess themselves Christians shall depart from either the Whole, or some essential Parts of the Christian Faith, turning Apostates, or Hereticks; and this by giving heed to false Revelations of seducing Spirits in themselves or others), and to Doctrines of Devils.

Note. Whether it mean effectively Doctrines taught by Devils, or (as Mr. Mede largely maintaineth) obliquely, Doctrines concerning Demons, or the Nature, Order, and Minds of the Spirits, like the Valentzianism, Aimon, &c. I leave to the Judgment of others.

2. Speaking lies in hypocrisy, having their conscience feared with a hot furnace;

2. Covering their Lies or False Doctrines by Hypocritical Precences (of Piety, or Divine Revelation, or some great Excellency); having Confidences feared and branded as the Perfidious use to be, by their flagitious Lives.

3. Forbidding to marry, and commanding to abstain from meats, which God hath created to be received with thanksgiving of them which believe and know the truth;

3. Note, I think it far more probable, that Paul here speaketh of those Hereticks which made up a Religion of Judaism and Pythagorean Fancies, who taught, That Marriage was of the Devil, to propagate sensual miserable Men; and that Flesh was to be eaten, especially the unclean meats; that of those erroneous Christians ho exspect of every Marriage to the Clergy, and Flesh on certain Days of Abstinence, or that affect the total abstinence of Marriage, and eating Flesh, as a State of special Spiritual, not required of most: For Paul (as aeth

4. For every creature of God is good, and nothing to be refused, if it be received with thanksgiving:

5. For it is sanctified by the word of God, and prayer.

4. 5. For all that God hath made for Food is good and clean, and not to be refused as is in kind unlawful, if it be received thankfully, as from God's Gift, to fit us for his Service; For to such as do thus, it is more than lawful, even a sanctified Means to fit them to serve God, God's Word allowing and giving it them, and Prayer craving his Blessing to that end.

6. If thou put the brethren in remembrance of these things, thou shalt be a good minister of Jesus Christ, nourished up in the words of faith and of good doctrine, whereunto thou hast attained.

6. These things thou must suggest to the Brethren as their Teacher, that thou maist approve thy self a good Minister of Christ; bred up in sound Faith and Doctrine.

7. But refuse profane and old wives fables, and exercise thy self rather unto godliness.

7. But as for the Jewish and Heretical Fancies of Abstinence from Marriage and Meats, and the idle Reasons from Traditions, or Pythagorean Doctrine, which they give for them, avoid them, and let it be thy Business to preach, promote, and practice plain Doctrine and Daies of Godliness; and guide the Flock therein.

8. For bodily exercise profiteth little: but godliness is profitable unto all things, having the promise of the life that now is, and of that which is to come.

8. For no Corporal Authority of Exercise in Religion must be overvalued: The best of them are of small Profit, in comparison of that Godliness which consisteth in Piety and Spiritual.
Spesual Exerices (of Faith, Hope, Love, and their Expressions): But this true Spesual Substantial Godliness is profitable to all that we can juty define, having from God the Promise of all the Good of this Life which is meet for us, and we meet for it; and of that which is to come, after this Life is ended.

9. This is a faithful saying, and worthy of all acception. 10. For therefore we both labour, and suffer reproach, because we trust in the living God, who is the Saviour of all men, specially of those that believe.

9, 10. And what I say of the Promise to Godliness for this Life and that to come, is a Truth most sure, and of greatest moment, and worthy of our greatest acception. For it is on the belief of this, that we labour, strive, and suffer, trustin the Goodness and Promises of God, who is Life, and the Lord of Life, and as their Saviour give them the Mercies of this Life, and that to come, as Men are fitted for each, to all Men; all Good being from him to all the World: But eternal Good being by his Promise secured to all true Believers, (which others reject when it is offered them, for temporal Good.)

11, 12. These things command and teach. Let no man despise thy youth, but be thou an example of the Believers, in word, in conversation, in charity, in spirit, in faith, in purity.

11, 12. These things teach commandingly, as necessary, with Authority: And to behave thy self, that thy Youth expose thee not to Contempts. Be thou an Example, in whom all the Believers may see how they should live, in thy Speech, and thy Conversation, in Love and Spirituality, in found Faith, and spotted Purity.

13. Till I come, give attendance to reading, to exhortation, to doctrine.

13. Till I come, be diligent in Reading the Scripture, (privately for thy self, and publicly to Expound it to the Church,) to apply it by Exhortation, and found Doctrine.

14. Neglect not the gift that is in thee, which was given thee by prophecy, with the laying on of the hands of the Presbytery.

15. Neglect not diligently to use and improve those Eminent Gifts which were given thee, even with Prophecy of thee, as one that would be faithful, by the laying on of the Hands of the Presbytery, or Elders of the Church, when thou wast called and ordained to the Ministry. (For neglect quenches the Spirit.)

16. Meditate upon these things, give thy self wholly to them; that thy profiting may appear to all.

15. Note. That even those that are extraordinarily inspired and qualified, must study hard, and wholly give themselves to that, and all their Ministerial Work, if they would appear good Proficients: Therefore those that have no such inspiration, need not of hard study. And they that wholly add to themselves to the Ministry, have no leisure for Magistracy or Worldly Avocations: Nor can do that for many hundred Churches, which required the whole of a Timothy for one.

16. Take heed unto thy self, and unto thy doctrine; continue in them: for in doing this, thou shalt both save thy self and them that hear thee.

16. In sum, Take greatest heed. First, that thy own Soul and Life be Sound, and Holy, and undefiled, and no. That thy Doctrine be so, and thou diligently labour in it: Continue in this twofold Care and Diligence, and thou shalt secure thy own Salvation, and in all likelihood thy Hearers for God will not deny his Blessing to such Labours.

CHAP. V.

1. Rebuke not an elder, but in treat him as a father, and the younger men as brethren.

2. The elder women as mothers, the younger as sisters, with a purity.

1. When Elders (in Age or Office transgress, use not Magisterial roughness; but Humble Exhortation, as to Brethren: And speak to the Younger with Love and Gentleness, as to Brethren: And spe
to the Elder Women, as to Mothers, with due respect; and to the Younger as Sisters, carefully shunning all that savour of immorality or uncleanness in thought or speech, or looks, or behaviour.

3. Honour widows that are widows indeed. But if any widow have children or nephews, let them learn first to shew piety at home, and to requite their parents; for that is good and acceptable before God.

3. Let those that are Widows indeed, at once, deprived of Husbands and Maintenance, being Aged and unable to work, be maintained by the Church with due respect. But if any of them have Children and Nephews that can maintain them: Let these their Offspring be taught that Piety and Gratitude for all their Parents care of them; oblige them to maintain their Widows, and not to cast them on the Church, and that this is a Duty that God requireth of them, and will accept.

Note. That it is doubted, whether these Widows were Deaconesses, or meerly kept for poverty. I think that it was the Custom of the Ancient Churches to maintain all that are Poor and Aged, and unable to get their own livings, but not to maintain them in Idleness, but to appoint them to employ much of their time, in visiting the sick and poor Women, and counselling the younger for, and giving notice of their Wants and Causes to the Elders; so that the same Women were also as Deaconesses, tho' some that were wiser and fitter than the rest might be more specially thus employed.

5. Now she that is a widow indeed, and desolate, trusteth in God, and continueth in supplications and prayers night and day.

5. By a Widow indeed, I mean one that is desolate, having neither Maintenance, nor Ability to get it, nor Kindred to relieve her, but liveth by Faith and Truth in God, as she is to live upon the Church, so she is bound to serve the Church, byconstant Prayers both alone and with these Women whom she visiteth and instructeth.

6. But she that liveth in pleasure, is dead while she liveth.

6. But she that liveth delicately, and

sporting, and wantonly, with gaudy Ornaments, is a living Carcass.

7. And these things give in charge, that they may be blamed.

7. Acquaint them with these Canons, that the Church and they may be kept from misconstruing.

8. But if any provide not for his own, and specially those of his own house, he hath denied the faith, and is worse than an infidel.

8. But if any of the Church that is able maintain not his own near Kindred, especially those that have right to be kept in his own Family (as Parents have) he liveth contrary to the Christian Faith, that he forgets the Reputation of True Christians, and doth that which the Infidels themselves will condemn, and in that is worse than they.

9. Let not a widow be taken into the number, under threescore years old, having been the wife of one man.

9. Because such Widows, 1. Must be maintained as those that cannot labour. 2. And do resolve against Marrying again, being past the need of it. 3. And must be stay'd. Monitors to the Younger Women, therefore take in none into the Churches charge, that is under threescore years old, and none that hath separated from her Husband, and Married another.

10. Well reported of for good works; if she have brought up children, if she have lodged Strangers, if she have washed the Saints feet, if she have relieved the afflicted, if she have diligently followed every good work.

10. It is her Christian Behaviour before her Poverty, that must be rewarded with the Churches Maintenance: Therefore she must be one, 1. That is known to have done good to others while she was able. 2. Who hath plausibly educated her own Children. 3. Lodged Strangers, &c.

Note. That in that hot and poor Country, those here called Saints usually travelled on Foot, and were Bare-Leg'd, wearing only Sandals or Shoes, and had not lies for Entertainment, with that convenience as
Ch. 5. Of widows.  I Timothy. and young women. Ch. 5.

we have here, nor Money for such charges; therefore it was one of the great works of Godly Charity, for Christians to take Travellers and Strangers into their Houses, and wash their Feet from the Dust contracted daily in their Travail: And to relieve all in want and affliction to their Power.

11. But the younger widows refuse: for when they have begun to wax wanton against Christ, they will marry; 12. Having damnation, because they have cast off their first faith.

11, 12. But receive not a Young Widow into the number of those that serve the Church, and are maintained by it: For as they are not by Age past labouring for themselves, or fit to resolve on a single life for the Churches Service, so when they grow Lustful and Wanton, and weary of the Yoke of Chastity and Church-Service, they will Marry: And so prove Criminal Sinners against Christ, by violating that sort of Devotedness to his Service.

13. And withal they learn to be idle, wandering about from house to house; and not only idle, but tattlers also, and busie-bodies, speaking things which they ought not.

13. And being idle, they learn to go about to House of, and there not only idly pass their time, but to spend it in tattling, or in Idle and unit Chat, and buffing themselves with other Mens Matters, and talking of that which they ought not to talk of.

Note, Qu. But are not Women prone to this, the they be not Devoted to Chastity and Church-Service? Ans. Yes, 1. And therefore Paul speaketh this as the Vice that most Women are strongly by nature addicted to: And that all may see the danger of it and fear it: And indeed how rare are those Women, even that profess to be most Religious, that use not to venture on this Chat, and Backbiting, and Buffoon judging those that are absent, and meddling with things which they should not meddle with. 2. But yet those that are taken up with Family Business of their own, are not so vacane and liable to these Crimes, as the idle are. And therefore what Paul faith of these Young Church-Widows, all Rich Women should read with Application: For Riches tempt them to be idle, and idleness tempts them to the same sins, to spend their time in going from House to House, on pretense of Civil Vitils, and there to talk venterously without a call, of all things and Persons that come into their Minds.

14. I will therefore that the younger women marry, bear children, guide the house, give none occasion to the adversary to speak reproachfully. 15. For some are already turned aside after Satan.

14, 15. My Advice therefore is, That Young Women marry (that have not some special reason against it), and by bearing Children, and educating them Religiously, and guiding their Houses piously and diligently, they may to do the Church the greatest service, and give no occasion to malicious Advertisers to speak evil of the Church, as if it were a Society of idle swatters, and lustful wantons. For some have already forsaken Christianitty, it's like tempted partly by some such Scandals; or at least are ready to believe and report them.

16. If any man or woman that believeth, have widows, let them relieve them, and let not the church be charged; that it may relieve them that are widows indeed.

16. Let all Christians keep the Widows that Nature bindeth them to keep, if able, and not cast them on the Church, and rob Widows indeed, by disabling the Church to maintain them.

17. Let the elders that rule well, be counted worthy of double honour, especially they who labour in the word and doctrine.

17. If the office of Church-elders to be the Churches Guides or Rulers, by the Canon of Gods Laws: Let those that do this well, be counted worthy of double honour, above the common rank of the Faithful, and to be accordingly maintained and obeyed; but especially those of them who are Laborious Preachers, Expounding
Ch. 5. Of Elders.

I. Timothy.

Of Elders. Ch. 5.

Expounding and applying the Word and Doctrine of Christ.

Note. 1. That Elders or Bishops were the fixed Guides of single Churches, (no bigger than our Parishes for number of Souls.)

2. That they had very much work to do besides Publick Preaching: As to judge who was to be taken in by Baptism, or to be openly rebuked, or cast out, or reconciled; to teach from House to House on just occasion, to visit the Sick, take care of the Poor, resolve Doubts, oversee Manners, &c. 3. That usually one Church had many of these, and all found work enough; some may have rendered themselves, and some the Church-Offerings maintained.

4. As all these could not publickly Preach at once, so all were not fitted for it by skill and free utterance: But some one or few that were most able for it, were the ordinary Preachers: And these being the ablest and most Reputed, were quickly made and called the Bishops, being such Presidents and Guides to the rest, as the Presidents of Colleges of Men in the same Office, (Physicians, Philosophers, &c.) are, or as the Chief Justice among the Judges.

5. Yet all the rest were of the same Office, Entertained by Church Guidance in the Word, Worship, Sacraments, and Discipline, and were not mere Lay Men, but were Ordained and Separated to the Sacred Ministry, and wanted not Authority to Preach and Administer Sacraments, and did these on just occasions, the ablest did it most usually. 6. And it was the part of them that were thus employ'd in Publick Preaching (both for converting Infidels, and edifying the Church,) who are said to be laborious in the Word and Doctrine.

18. For the scripture faith, Thou shalt not muzzle the ox that treadeth out the corn: and, The labourer is worthy of his reward.

18. Note. 1. That Honour here includeth Maintenance. 2. That it is the labour of Church Guides which giveth them right to Honour and Maintenance. 3. That the greatest Honour and Maintenance is due to them that are Laborious Preachers and Instructors of the Flock, and not to them that seldom so labour: much less to them that unjustly silence such.

19. Against an elder receive not an accusation, but before two or three witnesses.

19. Seeing no private Man should believe an accusation against a Grave Anciend Perfon, much less against a Person of the Church, without sufficient proof; much less must thou that are President in the Presbytery admit any publickly to defame an Elder in Office by entering his accusation against him without two or three Witnesses; and much less may'st thou believe such an Accusation.

Note. For. 1. It is to be supposed that such are more unlikely to be guilty than other Men. 2. And that for their Works fake, the Wicked or Reproved shall be more malicious and forward to accuse such, and they shall never want False accusers, if such can but find Judges that are willing to believe them. 3. And their defamation is most injurious to Religion, and to the Church.

20. Them that sin, rebuke before all, that others also may fear.

20. Those that sin scandalously, either openly, or after reproof for private sin before two or three, and repent not, rebuke before the Church (or Community of the People, faith Dr. Hammond) that others may be warned to avoid such sins and such impieties.

21. I charge thee before God and the Lord Jesus Christ, and the elect angels, that thou observe these things without preferring one before another, doing nothing by partiality.

21. So heinous is the sin of unjust judging in a Guide of the Church, and is great mischief to the Church, that I do hereby most solemnly charge thee before God, and the Lord Jesus Christ, and the Elect Angels, that thou observe these Rules of Justice, without a haughty or foretold Judgment or Prejudice, and that thou do nothing according to a partial inclination to one Party.

Note. 1. There are Elect Angels, both as respecting Reprobate Devils, and as chosen to the Service of Distinct Churches. 2. Thou know not just how far, and when Angels are present, we may so far presume of their Notice of Church Affairs, and their regard thereof, as to adjure even
I. Let as many servants as are under the yoke, count their own masters worthy of all honour: that the name of God, and his doctrine, may be not blasphemed.

2. Let all that are Servants under the Yoke, whether their Masters be Christian or Heathen, account it their Duty to give them all the Honour and Obedience which is due in that Relation, and not think that Christianity gives them Liberty to disobey them, nor despise them, because of their defect of Religion: But Heathens will re-proach Religion, and Christ, and say, that we teach men to be unfaithful, disobedient, and proud.

3. And they that have believing masters, let them not despise them, because they are brethren, but rather do them service, because they are faithful and beloved, partakers of the benefit. These things teach and exhort.

4. And let no man despise his Master, because they are both Believers, and so Brethren in Christ, for Christian Brotherhood consists with Inequality of Place and Relation, and with Subjection, and doth not level Men in other things, nor encourage Pride or Disobedience: But such must the more willingly do Service unto their Christian Masters, because they are faithful, and Partakers of all the same Blessings of Christianity with themselves, and so more amiable, and therefore should be served out of special Love, and not only for Fear, or Wages. These Duties are of great moment; therefore teach and press them earnestly.

5. If any man teach otherwise, and consent not to wholesome words, even the words of our Lord Jesus Christ, and to the doctrine which is according to godliness; 4. He is proud, knowing nothing, but doting about questions and strifes of words, whereby cometh envy, strifes, railings, evil surmisings.

6. Perverse disputings of men of corrupt minds, and destitute of the truth.
I. Timothy.

8. If we have Food and Raiment, and what is needful to the well-doing of our Work, we have enough and must be contented with it: For, desire of more, except to do good with it to others, is but the sinful Disease of the Mind.

9. But they that will be rich, fall into temptation, and a snare, and into many foolish and hurtful lusts, which drown men in destruction and perdition.

9. But they that love and set their Hearts on Riches, and seek after them, do thereby cast themselves into dangerous Temptations and Snares, and kindle and purge such Desires as shew their gross Folly, and in stead of Gain, do but hurt themselves, and cast themselves into the Gulf of Destruction and Damnation.

Note. 1. Oh how little then do the most of the World, that study and scramble for Riches, think what they are doing all their Lives against themselves! 2. And is it not doleful Blindness in those Roman Prelates, that for Wealth and Worldly Greatness have corrupted Christian Doctrine, Worship, Discipline, and Conversion, and overthrown the Churches Peace, that yet they can say, That Paul here condemneth the Gnostics and Heretics, for that in which they incomparably exceed them.

10. For the love of money is the root of all evil: which while some coveted after, they have erred from the faith, and pierced themselves through with many sorrows.

10. For very much Evil springeth from the Love of Money: (From hence is sinful Care, and Desire, and Grief, and Anger, and Malice, and Envy, and Oppression, and Deceit, and Lying, and Theft, and Murders, and Wars, and Persecutions, and Church-corruptions, and Divisions, needless Law-suits, Bribery, False-Witnese, Perjury, Slander, Railings, and much more such.) And by coveting Money, many have been their own Tormentors, piercing themselves through in Body and Mind with many Sorrows, (vexarious Labours, Care, Fears, Trouble for Disappointments, and torment of Conscience for their Guilt, and oft come to an untimely reproachful Death.) Yea, it hath drawn them to forsake or corrupt the Faith, for worldly Ends.
Whereof to admonish the rich. 1 Timothy. The duty of rich men. 

11. But thou, O man of God, flee these things: and follow after righteousness, godliness, faith, love, patience, meekness.

12. But thou, that art devoted to God and his special Service, abhor and avoid this Love of Money, and all the consequent vices; and follow after the Spiritual Riches, Righteousness, Godliness, &c.

Note. That is blessed which is most Divine, likest to God, and most pleasing to God, and which is the well-fare of our best Part, the Soul, which will never die and fail us, as worldly Riches will.

12. Fight the good fight of faith, lay hold on eternal life, whereunto thou art also called, and hast professed a good confession before many witnesses.

13. Go on by faith to overcome all Temptations, Difficulties, Sins, and Adversaries, and to propagate and defend the Faith: Press toward the Mark, till thou lay hold on Eternal Life, which is the Prize. This is the Life that thou art called out to hope for, to seek, and to obtain, and the Work thou art to do, and hast well begun, and before many Witnesses openly and manfully stood to the Truth.

14. I give thee charge in the sight of God, who quickeneth all things, and before Christ Jesus, who before Pontius Pilate witnessed a good confession; that thou keep this commandment without spot, unrebukable, until the appearing of our Lord Jesus Christ.

15. I must urgently charge thee, before God, in whose Power are all our Lives; and before Christ, who went before us by the Example of a good Confession, not denying the Truth to save his Life, that thou keep this necessary Law of thy Ministry, as spotless and unrebukable, that thou maist be found such at the coming of Jesus Christ.

16. Which in his times he shall shew, who is the blessed and only Potentate, the King of kings; and Lord of lords; who only hath immortality, dwelling in the light, which no man can approach unto, whom no man hath seen, nor can see; to whom be honour and power everlasting. Amen.

17. Charge them that are rich in this world, that they be not high-minded, nor trust in uncertain riches, but in the living God, who giveth us richly all things to enjoy;

18. That they do good, that they be rich in good works, ready to distribute, willing to communicate;

19. Laying up in store for themselves a good foundation against the time to come, that they lay hold on eternal life.

20. O Timothy, keep that which
Paul's charge to Timothy. 1. Timothy. Paul's charge to Timothy. Ch. 6.

The note, I have before shewed, that it was Philosophers, who by their presence of greater Learning were then the Deplirers, and Powerfull Adversaries of Christianity: and the generality of them were taken up with meer useless quibbling and trifling, and striving about Words, and barren Notions, instead of needful, useful Knowledge, so that their famed Sciences were but like Dreams and Childish Babbling; So that it was the Honour of Socrates to call them off to the study of Virtues and things of use, whom Plato followed with a mixture of Vanity: And a smattering in these Sciences, bewitched the Hereticks of that Age. But Paul doth not hereby condemn the true Philosophical Knowledge of God in his Works, nor a carefulness of exact speaking, as to Words and Method, or the accurate sitting of Words to things, and using Art in due measure, and in subservience to great and saving Truth. But further than it thus subscriveth to the Saving Truth of God in Christ, and our duty and hopes of Life Eternal, all that's called Learning and Wit, is but Fooling.

ANNOTATIONS.

Paul's Epistles to Timothy and Titus are the Church-Canons, which the Holy Ghost indited: And sufficient to their proper use and End, tho' still there will be use for Pastoral Determination of such Circumstances, as must be varied according to variety of Persons, Occasions, Times and Places. And no Canons of Men that are contrary to any of these Divine Rules, (I mean such of them as are of universal, fixed Obligation) are Obligations to the Faithful. O how happy had the Church been if these had been better observed, and the Churches not corrupted or torn, by such as Men are destructively or needlessly added, by badness, doubts and numbers answering, or overwhelming the Consciences of those that are most obedient to God.

The Second Epistle of St. PAUL the Apostle to TIMOTHY.

CHAP. I.

Paul an apostle of Jesus Christ, by the will of God, according to the promise of life, which is in Christ Jesus: 2. To Timothy my dearly beloved son:

Grace, mercy, and peace from God the Father, and Christ Jesus our Lord.

1. Note, 1. It is Gods calling Will, and not only his permitting Will, which must warrant any to assume the Sacred Ministry, and prove him a true Minister of Christ.

2. The
2. The Promise of Life in Christ, must have Ministers to proclaim it, and to preach this is their Work.

3. I thank God, whom I serve from my forefathers with pure conscience, that without ceasing I have remembrance of thee in my prayers night and day:

3. Note. It seemeth strange, that a Persecutor, and the chief of Sinners, should say, That from his Fore-fathers he served God with pure Conscience; and to the High Priest, That he had lived in all good Conscience to that day. Ans. 1. Some think he meaneth, (Since I was a Christian, I have served God sincerely, as Abraham, Isaac, and Jacob did;) Others think he meaneth, (Not only since my Conversion, but before, I designed only to serve God;) and though through ignorance I mistook the Master, I did it in zeal to please God, and faithfully obeyed my Conscience. Which ever be the Sense, there is no Doctrinal Difference dependeth on the Controversie.

4. Greatly desiring to see thee, being mindful of thy tears, that I may be filled with joy: 5. When I call to remembrance the unfeigned faith that is in thee, which dwelt first in thy grandmother Lois, and thy mother Eunice; and I am perplexed that in thee also.

4. Note. 1. Though we must love all Christians with a special Love, yet with great difference, as they differ. Choice Christians, and very loving Friends, must be loved above the rest.

5. The more unfeigned and free from Hypocrify, in Faith and Godliness he appears to be, the more amiable is that Christian.

5. God often blesteth the Labours and Examples of Godly Women, to raise up excellent Instruments in his Church.

4. It rendereth a good Christian more amiable and honourable, to be the Offspring of Godly Parents.

6. Wherefore I put thee in remembrance, that thou stir up the gift of God, which is in thee by the putting on of my hands.

6. Note. 1. Gods Spiritual Gifts must be used by our own stirring them up.

2. It is here controverted. 1. Whether it be the Gift of the Ministry, and its proper Necessaries, that is here meant, or the foregoing Gift of the Holy Ghost? 2. Whether it be meant of Pauls laying on his Hands for the former, or the latter?

To these, it may suffice us to know, 1. That Timothy was converted by Paul, and then it was usual for Converts to receive the Holy Ghost for some wonderful Gifts, by the Laying on of the Apostles Hands: And it is not to be doubted, but so did Timothy, long before his Ordination to the Ministry. And who was so likely to do this as Paul? 2. It's not to be doubted, but Timothy, after this, had Imposition of Hands at his Ordination. 3. It is certain, that it was then by the Hands of the Presbytery. 4. It is probable, that Paul was one of them, and the Chief. 5. Therefore, as the next Verse sheweth, that he spake of the Spirit or Gift of Sanctification, not proper to Ministers; so it is certain, that Paul meant this, but not improbable that he meant the other also, but comprehended both.

7. For God hath not given us the Spirit of fear; but of power, and of love, and of a sound mind.

7. For though Jews are under the Spirit of Legal Fear and Bondage, and Unbelievers have a cowardly Fear of Men, this is not the Spirit given us by the Gospel; but it is the sanctifying of the three great Faculties of the Soul, the Excessive Faculty by Holy Power, the Will by Holy Love, and the Intellect by found and sober Judgments: This is the Spirit of Christ.

8. Be not thou therefore ashamed of the testimony of our Lord, nor of me his prisoner: but be thou partaker of the afflictions of the gospel, according to the power of God;

8. Be not therefore ashamed of Preaching and owning the Gospel, or of any Suffering that this will bring, nor of me, who am Christ's Prisoner, as suffering for his Work: But whatever hard usage Men exercise against the Gospel, and the Preachers of it, be content to bear thy part with others,
Ch. 1. Paul's suffering.

Others, as strengthened by the Power of God.

9. Who hath saved us, and called us with an holy calling, not according to our works, but according to his own purpose and grace which was given us in Christ Jesus, before the world began.

9. Who hath saved us from our servitude to fin and Satan, and called us out of the World to be a Holy People, separated to himself; not because by our Works we were a more Deferving People before than others, but according to his own Purpose and Gracious Decree of saving us by Christ, which he had for us before the World or Ages began.

10. But is now made manifest by the appearing of our Saviour Jesus Christ, who hath abolished death, and hath brought life and immortality to light, through the gospel:

10. But now this purpose is opened by Christ's appearing in Flesh, who hath now delivered us from the Power of that Death which was the Wages of fin, affurrying us of a Resurrection, and hath brought future Life and Immortality to our more full assured notice by his Gospel.

Note. That though the Soul's Immortality, and a life of Retribution be knowable by the light of Nature, yet, 1. It is with far less Certainty than the Gospel giveth us. 2. And Nature tells us not with any clearness of a Resurrection of the Body. 3. Nor doth it give Men clear notice of the Conditions of our attaining that Felicity: But Christ by the Gospel hath given us assured notice of all this. And this is the chief thing in which Christ's plain teaching excelleth all the Subtleties of the Trifling, Heathen Philosophers.

11. Whereunto I am appointed a preacher, and an apostle, and a teacher of the Gentiles.

11. To Preach this, and teach the Gentiles I am a Commissioned Apostle, and for this I suffer.

12. For the which cause I also suffer these things; nevertheless I am not ashamed; for I know whom I have believed, and I am persuaded that he is able to keep that which I have committed unto him against that day.

12. But I am not ashamed of my Preaching or Suffering; for I know whom I have trusted, and am persuaded that he can and will keep me in safety, who have committed my self wholly to him, even to the great day (in which all his promises shall be performed.)

13. Hold fast the form of sound words, which thou hast heard of me, in faith and love which is in Christ Jesus.

13. Keep before thee the Form or Summary of Sound Doctrine which thou hearest of me, which consisteth in the Articles of Faith, and the Precepts of Love, of both which Christ is the Object and Sum. (or which form of Sound Doctrine thou must hold fast by a Firm Belief, and Practical Love of Christ and his Cause).

14. That good thing which was committed unto thee, keep by the holy Ghost which dwelleth in us.

14. That good and sure summary of Sound Doctrine which I committed to thy keeping, hold close to, by the Spirit of God who dwelleth in us, to help our Memory, Love and Practice.

Note. Tho' it be not certain that Paul meaneth our Creed in the very Words as now we have them, it is more than probable that he meaneth the same Articles in Sense, which he reciteth, 1 Cor. 15, 3, 4, 5, and elsewhere.

15. This thou knowest, that all they which are in Asia be turned away from me; of whom are Phygellus and Hermogenes.

15. I suppose thou knowest that all the Bishops or Teachers in Asia have forsaken me in my Sufferings, and rejected my Apostolick Authority, or neglect it; of whom are, &c.

Note. 1. That he acuseth them not of Apostacie from Christ, but forsaking him. 2. That those that forsake not Christ or his Church, may forsake a particular Ruler of it, even an Apostle, especially if he be in Prifon. 3. That all the Churches or Bishops in Asia were conjoined in this sin: Sin
Ch. 1. Timothy exhorteth to constancy and perseverance. Ch. 2.

Sin may have the Major Vote of the Bishops. 4. It's like then Timothy was no Bishop of Ephesus which was in Asia, for Timothy forsook not Paul.

II. Timothy. 10, 17. The Lord give mercy unto the house of Onesiphorus; for he oft refreshed me, and was not ashamed of my chain. But when he was in Rome, he sought me out very diligently, and found me. 18. The Lord grant unto him that he may find mercy of the Lord in that day: And in how many things he ministr'd unto me at Ephesus, thou knowest very well.

16, 17, 18. Note, That the particular Acts of Christian Charity are here rewarded with the most hearty Prayers of the Saints, and in the day of the Lord with special mercy. 2. That it is no sinful selfishness to return a Special Gratitude, Love and Prayer for those that have been specially kind to us in distress; especially when by it they manifest a special degree of love and fidelity to Christ.

---

CHAP. II.

II. Thou therefore my son, be strong in the grace that is in Christ Jesus.

1. Let other Mens Cups provoke thee to grow more strong, confirmed and resolv'd in the Doctrine, Practice, Comfort, and Patience of that Grace which is trea

2. And the things that thou hast heard of me among many witnesses, the same commit thou to faithful men, who shall be able to teach others also.

2. Note. 1. That the Senior Pastors must train up others to Preach the Gospel: And this feemeth the Original of Eminent Episcopacy: The Elders introducing their own Scholars were as Fathers to them, and fit to be their Guides. 2. None should be trusted with the Ministry, but Men Faithful and able to teach others. 3. It is the same Doctrine which was delivered by the Apostles which must be committed to Ministers to teach the People. 4. While the Scriptures were yet unwritten or unfinished, the

words which Men heard from the Apostles, were to be their Rule of Doctrine.

3. Thou therefore endure hardness, as a good soilder of Jesus Christ.


4. No man that warreth intanglith himself with the affairs of this life; that he may please him who hath chosen him to be a soilder.

4. A Bishop or Minister must be like a Souldier who maketh it his whole Business, and doth not joyn any other Trade of Life that would take up any of his time.

5. And if a man also strive for Masteries, yet is he not crowned except he strive lawfully.

5. And in the Games in which Men strive for Masteries for a Prize (as Running, Wrestling, Fencing, Fighting) it is not every one that striveth that hath the Crown or Prize, but only he that winneth it by getting the better: And so must a Minister of Christ strive for the Crown of Life, by pursing forth all his care and strength.

6. The husbandman that laboreth, must be first partaker of his fruits.

6. The Husbandman must labour (Plow, Sow, &c) before he reap and gather the Fruit.

Note, God will reward no Pastors but the Laborious, though Men may advance the Proud and Idle.

7. Consider what I say, and the Lord give thee understanding in all things.

7. Note, They that will have God's Word and good Counsel blest by God to their Understanding, must consider of it, even of its meaning, truth, and use.

8. Remember that Jesus Christ of the Seed of David was raised from the dead.

8. If thou deeply consider and remember that Christ was raised from the Dead, as it will infer the truth of all the rest of the
Ch. 2. Shun vain babblings. II. Timothy.

Shun vain babblings. Ch. 2.

remembrance, charging them before the Lord, that they strive not about words, to no profit, but to the subverting of the hearers.

14. Note, Bishops and Ministers have great need to call Men to the serious study of fundamental practical Truths, from vain diverting kinds of study: 2. Such are the Disputes and Contentions about Words or Grammatical Criticisms, and barren Speculations in Arts and Sciences, which profit not by their due subervency to Saving Truths, but subvert Men, by diverting their Thoughts, Love, and Labour.

15. Study to shew thy self approved unto God, a workman that needeth not to be ashamed, rightly dividing the word of truth.

15. Study not for applause, and to humour sick-brains, but to please God, and do all as approved to him; with such skill, and care, and diligence, as becommeth a good Workman that need not be ashamed of his Work, and disgrace not the Work by an ignornant bungling, confused handling; but take great care rightly to order, methodize, and distribute the word of Truth.

Note, That the curious unprofitable trifling with Words be finful, yet the more accurate ordering, methodizing or distributing Truth, letting each in its proper place, and giving every hearer his due part, is the part of a skillful Teacher.

16. But shun profane and vain babblings; for they will increase unto more ungodliness. 17. And their word will eat as doth a canker:

16. But avoid profane and vain Censures and Babelings of Heathen Philosophers or Heretics, who set up a course of Orationation of their Wit by unprofitable Disputes; for the Fruit will be but the Increase of ungodliness: And Vain Proud Wits are so liable to the Infection, that their words will eat like a Gangren.

17. 18. Of whom is Hymenaeus and Philetus: who concerning the truth have erred, saying, That the resurrection is past already; and overthrow the faith of some.

17. 18. Note, It is not certain on what account they said the Resurrection was past, whether
Ch. 2. The Lord's foundation sure. II. Timothy. Whereof to beware. Ch. 2.

1. Whether as the Familists and Quakers by pretending, that it is but an inward Resurrection from Sin, that is meant. Or, 2. As Pythagoreans, saying, That it's but the Transmigration of Souls into other Bodies, which is done here, and no more to be expected. I incline most to this last: It is that which Paul Disputeth against, 1 Cor. 15, that is here meant. And the Doctrine of Transmigration was then so common, and the Heretics had so much from the Pythagorean Philosophers, that it's most likely to be this.

19. Nevertheles, the foundation of God standeth sure, having this seal, The Lord knoweth them that are his. And, Let every one that nameth the name of Christ depart from iniquity.

19. But whoever falls away, God's Foundation on which we build our Hope is sure, and hath a Seal as it were, with this double Inscription; on one side [The Lord knoweth them that are his] (for he hath Decreed their Salvation, and will not lose them) and he hath marked them out by his Spirit, and written on them, Holiness to the Lord: And therefore on the other side is written, [Let every one that nameth the name of Christ depart from iniquity] for God's Decree conjoyneth the End and Means, and he Decreed none to Salvation that are not at once Decreed to Sanification: As his Covenant on his part promiseth us Life, so our Covenant to him obligeth us to Holiness.

20. But in a great house there are not onely vessels of gold, and of silver, but also of wood, and earth; and some to honour, and some to dishonour.

But it is not to be wondered at, if in God's House, which is his Church Visible, or the Professors of Christianty, there be Errors and Scandals, and some Backslide. For it's usual in great Men's Houses to have some Wooden and Earthen Vessels for low and baske usage, as well as Silver and Gold for the Table, &c.

21. If a man therefore purge himself from these, he shall be a vesse unto honour, sanctified and meet for the masters use, and prepared unto every good work.

21. All that (by God's Grace) do purg
CHAP. III.

1. This know also, that in the last days perilous times shall come.

2. Before the End the Times will grow yet harder, more difficult and dangerous.

3. For men shall be lovers of their own selves, covetous, boasters, proud blasphemers, disobedient to parents, unthankful, unholy, without natural affection, truce-breakers, false accusers, incontinent, fierce, despisers of those that are good.

4. Traitors, heady, high-minded, lovers of pleasures more than lovers of God.

5. Having a form of godliness, but denying the power thereof: from such turn away.

6. The sins which will abound are these: 1. They will be enlaved by selfishness, and little care for any but themselves. 2. Lovers of Money, and Covetous. 3. Open Boasters and vain-glorious. 4. Proud. 5. Blasphemers and reproachful. 6. Disobedient to their own Parents. 7. Unthankful. 8. Without Holiness, Profane.


Precipitate, Heady Men. 17. High-minded, put up with Self-conceit instead of Solid Knowledge. 18. Lovers of Pleasure, (Sen-Sensual and Fancifull, as Carnal Men,) more than lovers of God. 19. Having an Image, or Form of Godliness, a new and out-side, in Words, Geffures, Liturgies, Ceremonies and Professions: 20. But the Power of it for Sanctification, mortifying the Flesh, and overcoming the World, and living above, they favour not, but deny and do oppose. From this sort of Men turn away, and have no Communion with them.

Note, If the Apostle had written thus in these latter Ages of the Church, Guilt would have made many accuse him as Describing and defaming them and their Church-Rulers.

6. For of this sort are they which creep into houses, and lead captive silly women laden with sins, led away with divers lusts.

7. Ever learning, and never able to come to the knowledge of the truth.

6, 7. This Evil Spirit is already gone forth, and these Mitchies are begun, (and will increase,) for such are they that thrust themselves into Houses, and there by deceit lead Captive silly Women, who being under a heap of their own sins, and adding led by divers Lusts, or ill Deires, come to the Christian Assemblies, and are still learning, but grow not in found Religion, nor come to any sound knowledge of the Truth, and so are very capable Receptive Objects for any such Deceivers to draw away.

Note, That all the said twenty foresaid Vices, which cleave to creeping Herezicks while they are low, do work with greater power and confidence in them, when they get into Domination.

8. Now as Jannes and Jambres withstood Moses, so do these also resift the truth: men of corrupt minds, reprobrate concerning the faith.

8. And as the Egyptian Magicians withstood Moses to keep Pharaoh from believing him, and that by Magick, so do these resift the True Preachers of the Gospel, by their Magick and Arts now, and by the Sword and Cruelty when they can get into Power; Men of Corrupt Minds, reprobrate concerning
Ch. 3. Paul's example.  

II. Timothy. Scripture suffering. Ch. 3.

concerning the Faith. Unbelievers under the Name of Christians.

Note. That the Names of James and James are taken by Paul from the Tradition of the Jews.

9. But they shall proceed no further: for their folly shall be manifested unto all men, as theirs also was.

9. But as Moses’s Miracles overcame the Magicians, and amazed them, so these shall be float in the pursuit of their Deceit and Heresie and Opposition to the Truth, and shall not proceed much further: But God will confound them, and manifest all their Folly.

10. But thou hast fully known my doctrine, manner of life, purpose, faith, long-suffering, charity, patience. Persecutions, afflictions which came unto me at Antioch, at Iconium, at Lystra, what Persecutions I endured:

10. But for thy establishment I set before thee the Example of my Ministry: Thou hast been fully acquainted with the Doctrine which I have taught, with the course and ordering of my Life, my purpose and design, my faithfulness in my Work, my long-suffering and freedom from Wrath, my love to others, my patient suffering, my Persecutions and Sufferings at Antioch, and other places where I have Preached, and what the Ministry hath cost me.

11. But out of them all the Lord delivered me. Yea, and all that will live godly in Christ Jesus shall suffer persecution.

11. But out of them all God delivered me, so that I went on to do his Work: Yea, such is the malignity of the Carnal World, against that which crosteth their Lusts and Error, and carnal Interest, that all that resolve in a thoroughly Godly Life, and not by flattery or sin to comply with the Wiles of Proud Ungodly Men, but to be true to Christ, shall suffer some sort of Persecution.

12. But evil men and seducers shall wax worse and worse, deceiving, and being deceived.

13. But the sin which hardeneth these Wicked Men to be Persecutors of Godly
II. Timothy.

1. It is no new thing for professors of Christ to endure sound doctrine, but to follow false teachers.
2. It is by their own lusts, or erroneous wills and choice, that professors are seduced by false teachers.
3. Nothing is more dangerous than false teachers.
4. False teachers may be heaped up, and to have the major voice, when sound teachers cannot be endured.
5. And they shall turn away their ears from the truth, and shall be turned unto fables.

6. But watch thou in all things, endure afflictions, do the work of an evangelist, make full proof of thy ministry.
7. That great watchfulness, patience, labouring and suffering, and fulfilling their ministry approvedly in all trials, is the description of a true minister of Christ.
8. For I am now ready to be offered, and the time of my departure is at hand.
9. We have fought a good fight, I have finished my course, I have kept the faith.

10. Henceforth there is laid up for me a crown of righteousness, which the Lord the righteous Judgment shall give me at that day: and not unto me only, but unto all them also that love his appearing.

11. Note, That our ministry and life is like a battle, combat or race for life or death. Only they that overcome shall be crowned. Faithful men may take great comfort when death is at hand, in the confidence, and review of a well-spent victorious life and ministry. Their reward will be a crown of righteousness, given by God as a righteous judge, on gospel worthiness, not on legal merit, but supposing free grace in Christ.

12. To love Christ's appearing, is the effect of a saving faith.

13. Note: That the foresight of evil times by tempting teachers, should make faithful ministers labour the harder in their time.
ed unto Thessalonica: Crescens to Galatia, Tirus unto Dalmatia, One-
ly Luke is with me. Take Mark
and bring him with thee: for he is
profitable to me for the ministery.
12. And Tychicus have I sent to
Ephesus.

9, 10, 11, 12. Note, That, 1. It is not
Chrift that Demas is said to forfake, but
Paul; and not to turn Worldling, but to go
about his Worldly Business unseasonably.
2. Timothy was not then at Eph.fus.

13. The cloke that I left at Troas with Carpus, when thou
comest, bring with thee, and the
books, but especially the parch-
ments.

13. Note, The word translated [the CLOKE]
is very probably by others translated [the ROLL] viz. of Parchment.

14, 15. Alexander the copper-
smith did me much evil: the
Lord reward him according to his
works. Of whom be thou aware
also; for he hath greatly with-
stood our words.

14, 15. Alexander an Excommunicate
Man hath much wrong'd me: God will re-
ward him according to his Works.

Note, Excommunication enrageth impe-
nisent, bad Men.

16. At my first answer no man
flood with me, but all men forfook me: I pray God that may not be
laid to their charge.

16. Note, 1. This was not a forfaking
Paul's Caufe, but his Perfon in danger,
which is too usual a cafe: Herein he follow-
ed Chrift, whose Disciples all forfook him
and fled. 2. It's like Peter was not then
at Rome among the forfakers of Paul.

17. Notwithstanding the Lord
flood with me, and ftrengthened
me; that by me the preaching
might be fully known, and that
all the Gentiles might hear: and I
was delivered out of the mouth of
the lion.

17. But God forfook me not when all
Men forfook me, but was with me, and

strengthened me, in vindicating my Perfon
and Caufe, that while I was admitted to
answer for my self, the Hearers might know,
and Fame might tell abroad, what Doctrine
it is that I suffer for Preaching, and so all
the City of Rome, and others by their re-
port, might hear and have notice of it:
And so I was delivered from the pretence
danger of Death by the Roman Persecutors,
as from the Jaws of a Lion.

Note, 1. Some think that the words [that the Preaching might be fully known] refer
to Paul's longer time to Preach: I exclude
not this, but prefer the other fence.

2. It was no Treafon nor Sin for Paul
to call his Deliverance from the unjust
Judgment of the Civil Power, his being de-
ivered out of the mouth of the Lion.

18. And the Lord shall deliver
me from every evil work, and will
preferve me unto his heavenly
kingdom, to whom be glory for
ever and ever. Amen.

18. And I doubt not but God will still
keep me from all the ill Defigns and At-
tempts of Men against me, at least fo far,
that they shall not draw me to do evil, and
will keep me in a state of Right and Prepa-
tation to his Heavenly Kingdom: In the
hopeful fence whereof I rejoicingly defire
that he be glorified for ever. Amen.

13,20. Salute Prifca and Aquila,
and the householde of Onesiphorus.
Erastus abide at Corinth: but
Trophimus have I left at Milefen
sick.

19, 20. Note, That Trophimus was sick,
though Paul had the Gift of Healing; be-
cause it was not to be common, nor at the
will of Man.

21. Do thy diligence to come
before winter. Eubulus greeteth thee, and Pudens, and Linus, and
Claudia, and all the brethren.

21. Make haft to come, &c.

22. The Lord Jesu Chrift be
with thy spirit. Grace be with you. Amen.

22. The Lord Jesu Chrift, who is our
Mediator and Head, and hath purchased,
chosen and called thee, performed for thee
his saving Office, in keeping thy Soul in
Holiness.
Ch. 4. Paul saluteth II. Timothy. his brethren. Ch. 4:
Holiness and Peace: His Grace (which is the greatest Treasure on Earth) be with you, to keep you and prepare you for Glory. Amen.

Annotations.

Faithful Ministers, whose Work is to Preach the Gospel of Salvation, should have so much of the Form, Belief, and Power of it in themselves, as to pass triumphantly out of the World in suffering for it, and not to think that God useth them hardily: And to be satisfied in God's acceptance, though their Brethren and Converts should forsake them, as the Bishops and Churches of Asia did Paul.

The Epistle of St. Paul the Apostle to Titus.

Chap. I.

1, 2. Paul a servant of God, and an Apostle of Jesus Christ, according to the faith of God's Elect, and the acknowledgment of the truth, which is after godliness: In hope of eternal life, which God, that cannot lie, promised before the world began.

1, 2. Paul, &c. for the propagating of the Faith of God's Elect, and the acknowledgment of that found Doctrine, which is suited to the promoting of godliness, (in opposition to prophanenes and heresies) in hope of eternal life, which is the end of all our faith and godliness, and all our preaching and suffering; which God, that cannot lie, promised before many Ages past.

3. But hath in due times manifested his word through preaching, which is committed unto me, according to the commandment of God our Saviour.

3. But what he so long ago purposed, and darkly promised, he hath in the fittest appointed season manifested by his Gospel through preaching, which is committed to me by the Commission and Commandment of God our Saviour.

Note. That it is doubtful whether by God's Promise, be meant only his secret purpose, or by [τὸ ἀπεσταλμένον διάφως] be meant [many Ages ago.] One of the two it must be; for we cannot feign an actual Promise before the world began, distinct from his purpose.

2. It is not unlikely that he meaneth the Promise first made to Fallen Man, of the Womans Seed, and after oft renewed; and this obscure word was made plain by the preaching of the Gospel upon Christ's Incarnation, Life and Resurrection. &c.

4. To Titus mine own son after the common faith, grace, mercy, and peace from God the Father, and the Lord Jesus Christ our Saviour.

4. Note. The Church hath but one Faith (or Creed) common in the Essentials to every Christian.

5. For this cause left I thee in Crete, that thou shouldst set in order the things that are wanting, and ordain elders in every city, as I had appointed thee.

5. Note. 1. That Titus is not said to be settled in Crete as their fixed Bishop, but left there in his Travels, to settle fixed Bishops there. The Scriptures tell us that Timothy and Titus were Itinerant Evangelists, that went about where Paul sent them to plant and settle Churches. But the plain truth is, that Apostles, and such Evangelists as these, wherever they came, had as great Authority as any more Bishops, and more; and that they stayed in some Countries longer than in others, to settle the Churches; and that the Churches

Q. 9.

2. after
after their Age thought it an honour to be their Charge, and so called them their Bishops. In which sense one Apostle might have twenty or forty Bishops, as he planted and settled so many Churches: But none of them were Bishops fixed and confined to one Church, as those usually called Bishops then were; so that to controvert whether Peter, Paul, Timothy, Titus, Luke, &c. were Bishops, is a mere ignorant strife de nomine, about the name, while we are, or easily may be, agreed of the thing, what work for those Churches they performed. They were Bishops eminenter, transient from Church to Church; but he degraded them, that dignified them annexed to any one as their tie and proper flock.

2. Note further, That Titus ordaining Elders, (that is, Bishops, as Dr. Hammond notes) implicated the peoples confess; for Titus had no forcing power.

3. That Crete is said to have an hundred Cities in it, being but a small Island; and so must have an hundred Bishops, if every City had one. But doubtless Paul meanteth every City that had Christians in it enough to be a Church.

4. That by πόλις, is meant any big Town, such as our Corporations are, and θυτί πόλις, oppidatum, is meant from Town to Town, where there is matter for a Church. And Paul never meant by this to confine Bishops to Cities, and forbid them to Villages, but he nameth Cities or Towns, because then no other places had Christians enow for a Church.

5. Dr. Hammond thinks that these Bishops then were only the single Patrons of single Congregations, having no Sub-Presbyters, but Deacons.

6. The ordering of things wanting, was not adding to their Faith and Religion, or making them a Book of Canons; but seeing them reduced to the obedient and orderly practice of that which the Apostles every where taught and settled.

6. If any be blameless, the husband of one wife, having faithful children, not accused of riot, or unruly.

6. Note, If God blest not the Education of his own Children, 1. The Church would doubt of his Fidelity, or whether God will blest his greater undertaking. 2. And his Family would be a scandal to Religion.

7. For a Bishop must be blameless, as the steward of God: not self-willed, not soon angry, not given to wine, no striker, not given to filthy lucre:

7. Note, That the same man is called a Bishop here, who was called an Elder, v. 5. If then they were distinct Officers, Paul neglected to describe one of them, which is not credible, when he describeth Deacons and Deaconesses. Dr. Hammond confesseth that there were in Scripture-times no Subject-Presbyters, save Bishops, that were under the Apostolick Order; but he thinks that Bishops had power from the Apostles to institute another Order of Presbyters under them afterwards: But 1. Where is there any proof of that? Must Church-Government cut out all Ministers who believe not such an improved Affirmation?

2. It's thus disproved: Paul giveth Timoth. and Titus sufficient Instructions what Officers to Ordain in the Church (which Canons were to be a Guide to all-successing.) But Paul gave them no Instruction or Canon for the Instituting of any New Order between Bishops (or Elders) and Deacons: Therefore it is not credible that any such power was then given to other Bishops, which he gave not to Timoth and Titus.

But as to others, who say that the Apostles and Evangelists were then the only Bishops, I answer, de re, we confess that these had power to go about to gather and settle Churches; and de nomine, whether such may be called Bishops, let them quarrel that have nothing else to do. But besides them, every Town or Church had then their own fixed Bishop, (one or more) and Deacons. If Diocetans or Metropolitan will be Successors of the itinerant Apostles and Evangelists, or General Bishops, let them restore to every Church their particular proper Bishops, and not make Patrons that have not the power of the Keys.

As for them that say, Paul included both Orders under the same names, Bishop and Presbyters. I answer, Paul useth not only the same name, but the same description, and so the Order or Office also must be the same, and both Name and Thing the same.

2. Bishops are God's Stewards, entrusted to govern by his Law, and not Lords of his Church, or of their Faith.

3. By
3. By [self-willed] is meant [self-conciliated, proud men, that must be pleased, and have their own will] and cannot become all things lawful to all men, for their good, but will silence, and excommunicate, and reproach those that are most careful to do God's will, if they do but profess their Wills, and Canons.


8. But a lover of hospitality, a lover of good men, sober, just, holy, temperate.

9. Holding fast the faithful word, as he hath been taught, that he may be able by sound doctrine, both to exhort and to convince the gainayers.

9. Faithfully holding fast the word of faith, even that which we have preached and taught from Christ, that so he may be able to use sound doctrine, both in exhortation, and in Confutation of Opposers.

10. For there are many unruly

10. For there are many disorderly and unruly, foolish vain talkers, deceivers of mens judgments, specially those with corrupt Christians, (before oft described.)

Note, That here it appeareth whom Paul meaneth in his Inveitives in many Epistles, even those mentioned Acts 15. that could have made Christianness but a Supplement to Moses Law; and not Gnosticks or chiefly: Ebion and Cerinthies were the worser degenerate of them, and the Nicolaitians next.

Note, That Paul meaneth not stopping the Seducers mouths by force, but by persuasion by the word; For Titus had power of the Sword.

3 Note. That so great is the weakness and unsteadfastness of many Christians, that whole households may be subverted by the most gross deceivers. If the Apostles Converts were such, no wonder if ours be so.

12, 13. One of themselves, even a prophet of their own, said, The Cretians are always liars, evil beasts, flow bellies: This witness is true;

12. Epimenides, an esteemed Poet of their own, faith, that the Cretians are false, bad and savage, gluttonous and idle; and his words are true, of too many of them, who are not converted from these sins.

13. Wherefore rebuke them sharply, that they may be found in the faith;

13. Note, That sharp or cutting Rebukes are necessary to some, that they be found in Faith and Religion.

14. Not giving heed to Jewish fables and commandments of men, that turn from the truth.

14. Not believing the Jewish Fables, and Traditions, and Commands of Men, which the Pharisees uphold, and which turn men from found Faith.

Note, Do you think that Paul then was for introducing all the vext body of the Papish Canons, and all their corrupt Traditions and Ceremonies?

15. Unto the pure all things are pure, but unto them that are defiled, and unbelieving, is nothing pure: but even their mind and conscience is defiled.

15. They pretend that men are defiled by eating things unclean, not keeping their Days, Traditions, &c. But to Believers who are purified from Guilt and Sin, all Meats, and Days, and things of that nature are clean and lawful, yea sanctified, to further them in serving God. But all things are made unclean, as abuses to sin and evil ends, by them that are unclean and unbelievers; their defiled Minds and Consciences defile all to them.

16. They profess that they know God, but in works they deny him, being abominable, and disobedient, and unto every good work reprobate.
Ch. 1. 2. Directions given to Titus. Titus.

16. It is not these Judaizers and Here-
ticks Profession that they know more of
God, and his Will, than others, that will
prove them wise or good: For their deeds
contradict their tongues: They are pra-
tical Atheists, while they deny God by
their works, and lives, as if they knew
not God to be the Holy and Righteous Go-
vour and Judge of all: For they are
abominable and disobedient, and averse
and unmeet for all good works.

CHAP. II.

1. BUT speak thou the things
which become sound do-
ctrine: 2. That the aged men
be sober, grave, temperate,
found in faith, in charity,
in patience.

1. Note. Sound Doctrine is practical,
teaching men their duties.

2. It was so ordinary with the Jews for
the Younger to reverence and obey the
Elder, that Officers being chosen by sen-
iority (cætoris paribus) it is of no great
moment whether we here expound this of
Office or Age (as most do.) They that
take [Aged] to signify Rulers, some mean
Deacons, some Elders that ruled only, ei-
ther as some, not Ordained to Preach, or
as others, not Ordinary Preachers: But all
unproved.

3. The aged women likewise,
that they be in behaviour as
becometh holiness, not false accu-
sers, not given to much wine,
teachers of good things,

3. That the Aged women who are in
the Church-Catalogue or Lift, that they
behave themselves as becometh holiness,
not to diabolize or calumniate, not addi-
ted to Wine, Teachers of the younger for
in good things.

Note. Whether these were Deaconesses
by Office or not, it is certain, 1. That all
Aged women should instruct the younger.
2. But because few do their duty to pur-
pose, it is of great use in a well ordered
Church, that some few of the fittest be by
Office chosen to this work, that the Mini-
sters may direct their Aged women in it,
and not be themselves too often with the
younger for in private.

4. That they may teach the
young women to be sober, to love
their husbands, to love their chil-
dren. 5. To be discreet, chaste,
keepers at home, good, obedient
to their own husbands, that the
word of God be not blasphem-
ed.

4, 5. It is their work to teach the younger
women to be wife, and of sound Juge-
ment, to love their Husbands, and Chil-
dren, and she in it in their care and beha-
vour, to be discreet and chaste in mind and
behaviour, to keep at home, and look to
their household business, and not affect
to be needlessly abroad in idlenes,
or under
temptations, to be good, and subject to
their husbands, for there is danger that the
misbehaviours of young women may bring
reproach on Religion and the Gospel which
they profess.

6. Young men likewise exhort
to be sober-minded.

6. Note. 1. By Sober-mindedness, is meant
a mind settled in the Truth, guided by
sound Judgment, and not by Passion, nor
seduced by Sense and Appetite, or by
company, or proud Self-constancy, or hasty
Judging, into evil ways. 2. By Pauly
warnings we may note, what the Vices are
that young men, and all forts, are most in
danger of.

7. In all things shewing thyself
a pattern of good works: in doctrine shewing uncorruptness, gra-
vity, sincerity; 8. Sound speech
that cannot be condemned, that he that is of the contrary part
may be ashamed, having no evil
thing to say of you.

7. 8. In all the good which thou woul-
defend thy hearers to, be an emi-
visible Pattern thyself, that they may see
in thy self what thou meactst in Preaching: Let thy Doctrine be entire and
sincere, without corrupt mixture, a
grave, without levity, sound words to
defere nor blame, and cannot be con-
 fused; that gainlayers (for such you must
expect) may be ashamed, having no ill
charge on your Doctrine or Life.

9. 10. Exhort servants to be
obedient unto their own master
and to please them well in all thin
nor answering again: Not pur-
pointing, but fearing all good fi-
elity, that they may adorn the
doctrine of God our Saviour in all
things.
9, 10. Servants, even the lowest, are
by Charge, and must be taught to, be
obedient to their Masters, and in all things
awful belonging to their Government, to
make their care to please them, not
crossing and contradicting them, not feel-
ning the least thing, nor taking anything
that is theirs, which is not allowed them
by their consent, but fearing all conscien-
table trust in; that while, Christian Ser-
vants thus excel all others, it may honour
the Gospel and Religion (more than op-
imative proud Professors do.)

11, 12. For the grace of God
that bringeth salvation, hath ap-
peared to all men, teaching us,
That denying ungodliness and
worldly lusts, we should live sober,
rightously, and godly in this
present world;

11, 12. For the Grace of God by a Re-
deemer, which bringeth Salvation, is made
known now to all sorts of men, and ex-
tended to Servants as well as Masters,
teaching us all (not the vain speculations of
the world, but) to deny all Doctrines and
Practices which are ungodly, and all
worldly lusts, of futility or covetousness,
and that we should live in this present
world, soberly and temperately to our
selves, righteously and charitably to others,
and holily and obediently to God.

13. Looking for that blessed
hope, and the glorious appearing of
the great God, and our Sav-
our Jesus Christ,

13. Animated herein by our believing
expectation of our hoped blessedness, and
the appearing of the glory of that great
God, and our Saviour Jesus Christ, (ac-
cording to his faithful Promise.)

14. Who gave himself for us,
that he might redeem us from all
iniquity, and purifie unto himself
a peculiar people, zealous of good
works.

14. Who gave himself as our Saviour a
Sacrifice for our sins, and a Ransom for our
deliverance, that thereby he might redeem
and save us from the guilt, punishment, and
power of all our sins, and purifie and san-
ctifie a Church to himself, as his Body and
Spouse, for his Glory, and delightful Com-
munion with them, a peculiar people segre-
gate from the polluted wicked world, and
by his Spirit made zealously devoted in
Love and Diligence, to all good works, of
Holiness to God, and Justice and Bene-

Note 1. It was to Redeem us from our
own sin, and its effects, that Christ gave
himself as our Saviour to be a Sacrifice for
us. 2. The Redeemed of Christ (not only
as to sufficiency, but efficacy) differ not
from the polluted world only by name and
profession, and common things, but are a
purified and peculiar people, possessed by
Christ’s Spirit with a Zeal for good works.
3. True zeal is for Good works, and not
for dead Ceremonies, or worldly Interests, or
odd Opinions, and dividing Sects. It is
not furious, and hurtful, and envious, but
first pure, and then peaceable, and sets men
upon earnest endeavours to do good. 4. It
is not only for us that Christ Redeemed
and Purified a Church and chosen People,
but ultimately for himself, and for his own
and his Fathers Glory and Complacency.
As he made the world not as needing it, but
as pleased in his own expressed Glory.

15. These things speak and ex-
hort, and rebuke with all authori-
ty. Let no man despise thee.

15. These necessary practical saving
Truths must be the matter of thy Preach-
ing: And according to the Authority of
thy Office, rebuke gain-sayers, and the dis-
obedient: And let thy Doctrine and Behav-
ior in wildom and gravity, keep thee
from all mens contempt.

C H A P. III.

1. Put them in mind to be sub-
ject to principalities and
powers, to obey magistrates, to
be ready to every good work,

1. Teach them oft to live in due subje-
cion to Chief Rulers or Princes, and those
that have Governing-Authority, and to o-
bey Magistrates, in all things which be-
long to their Office and Authority to com-
mand under God; and to do all the good
they can to all men.
2. To speak evil of no man, to be no brawlers, but gentle, showing all meekness unto all men.

3. To avoid all reproachful and evil speaking of any men, without a necessary cause upon sufficient evidence, to be no contentious stirrers, but apt to take all things in the most favourable sense, using all meekness to all men.

3. For we ourselves also were sometimes foolish, disobedient, deceived, serving divers lusts and pleasures, living in malice and envy, hateful, and hating one another.

3. In our dealing with others we must use compassion, remembering that before our Conversion to Christ, we our selves had those Vices which are reproachful in others; we were witless, unperfervable, and disobedient, deceived in the greatest things, the servants of divers lusts and pleasures, living in malice and envy against others, odious our selves, and with hatred pursuing one another. This was the Gentile life.

4. But after that the Kindness and love of God our Saviour toward man appeared, 5. Not by works of righteousness, which we have done, but according to his mercy he saved us by the washing of regeneration, and renewing of the holy Ghost. 6. Which he shed on us abundantly, through Jesus Christ our Saviour.

4, 5, 6. But when the Saving-kindness and Love of God our Saviour to Fallen Man appeared to us by the Communication and Illumination of his Grace, not for any good works or defers of ours (for we were as bad, as aforesaid) but of his meere free Mercy he saved us from that state of sin and misery, by Regeneration signified and sealed in Baptism, and by the renewing work of the Holy Ghost, which he poured out upon us in the extraordinary measure promised after Christ's Resurrection, both for Sanedification and confirming Miracles.

7. That being justified by his grace, we should be made heirs according to the hope of eternal life.

7. That thus by his Grace, being of wicked Enemies made acceptably righteous, by pardon of sin, and renovation by the Merit and Spirit of Christ, we should be adopted Sons and Heirs of Eternal Life, according to his promise, on which we safely build our hope.

8. This is a faithful saying, and these things I will that thou affirm constantly, that they which have believed in God, might be careful to maintain good works: these things are good and profitable unto men.

8. This is a point of great importance, which I require thee oft to press upon them, that they which are Christians think not that they have nothing to do, but to mind Heaven and pray, and worship God; but that they live in such Callings or Trades in the world, in which labouring diligently, they may be profitable to others, and the publick good, and not make Religion a Cloak for Idlenefs, but spend their time in that which is good and profitable to men.

9. But avoid foolish questions and genealogies, and contentions, and strivings about the law; for they are unprofitable and vain.

9. Note, That though some of these things were pretended to be Learned Speculations, and others to be parts of God's own Word, yet to be employed in converses strivings and disputings, or study, or talk about such little things, to the diverting of us from the study, discourse, and exercise of practical godliness, is fruitless vanity.

10. A man that is an heretic, after the first and second admonition, reject: 11. Knowing that he that is such, is subverted and finneth, being condemned of himself.

10, 11. The overvaluing of such conceits, and trifling disputes, and thinking themselves rarte wise men for these, and gathering Parties to themselves from the Church, to propagate them in Separation, and to draw Disciples after them, is the way of Hereticks: Whatever is such a one (supposing private men do their part) do thou that art a publick Minister duly adm}
Ch. 3. Titus appointed to come to Paul.

with him by meekness and convincing evidence of Truth, once and again; and if he hear not, reject him from the Communion of the Flock: For such a man is fixed in his sin by pride, self-conceit, and a depraved judgment; and being subverted into a sinful Separation, is self-condemned, both by the open profession of his sin, as if it were some glorious Truth and Duty, and by casting himself out of the Communion of the Church, so that he needeth neither Wines nor Judge to cast him.

12, 13. When I shall send Artemas unto thee, or Tychicus, be diligent to come unto me to Nicopolis: for I have determined there to winter. Bring Zenas the lawyer, and Apollos, on their journey diligently, that nothing be wanting unto them.

12, 13. Note; God's Ministers must further all others in his work, as well as work themselves.

14. And let ours also learn to maintain good works for necessity's sake, that they be not unfruitful.

14. And let all that keep in our Communion, as found Christians, see that they live not idly or unprofitably, or on other means cost and labour, but that they live in some Trade and diligent labour, by which they may be themselves maintained, and be fruitful in pius and charitable Communications.

15. All that are with me salute thee. Greet them that love us in the faith, Grace be with you all. Amen.

15. Note; Mutual kind salutations, and benedictions, are meet expressions of Christian Love.

The Epistle of St. Paul the Apostle to Philemon.

1. Paul a prisoner of Jesus Christ, and Timothy our brother, unto Philemon our dearly beloved, and fellow labourer, 2. And to our beloved Apphia, and Archippus our fellow-souldier, and to the Church in thy house: 3. Grace to you, and peace from God our Father, and the Lord Jesus Christ.

1. Note; That to be a Labourer, and Souldier; and a Prisoner for Christ, are the Titles that Paul glorified in, and not in worldly dignities.

4. I thank my God, making mention of thee always in my prayers. 5. Hearing of thy love and faith, which thou hast toward the Lord Jesus, and toward all saints;

4, 5. Note; That 1. Paul made particular mention of Persons and Churches, yet many of both, in his Prayers. 2. True Faith in Christ will produce Love to him, and to all Saints, and not only to those of a Party with us.

6. That the communication of thy faith may become effectual, by the acknowledging of every good thing, which is in you in Christ Jesus.

6. That thy Faith may be manifest by the evident production of all sorts of good fruits, which Jesus Christ hath taught thee, and wrought in and by thee.

7. For we have great joy and consolation in thy love, because the bowels of the saints are refreshed by thee, brother.

7. Note; That when Faith bringeth forth the fruits of liberal Charity to the relief of others, it maketh it and the agent much more amiable, than when it doth not, that it should be sincere and want only ability (as a good Tree laden with choice fruit is more lovely than in the Winter): Much more than when Hypocritic maketh Faith fruiteles.

8. Where-
Paul intercedes for Onesimus.  Philemon.  Paul intercedes for Onesimus.

8. Wherefore, though I might be much bold in Christ, to enjoyn thee that which is convenient, 9. Yet for loves sake I rather befeech thee, being such a one as Paul the aged, and now also a prisoner of Jesus Christ.

8, 9. Church-Rulers must not plead and use meer commanding Authority, when Love and Integrity is more fit for the end, as usually it is with Brethren, and worketh more kindly and effectually.

10, 11. I beseech thee for my son Onesimus, whom I have be- sotten in my bonds: Which in time past was to thee unprofitable, but now profitable to thee and to me.

10, 11. Note, 1. That true Conversion maketh good Servants, as well as good Christians. 2. That the faults of converted Servants should be pardoned by us, as ours be of God. 3. That God's word by a Prisoner may save Souls. 4. That a converted Servant should be valued by the greatest Apostle.

12. Whom I have sent again: thou therefore receive him that is mine own bowels.

12. Note: How dear are the Souls of the meanest to a faithful Minister, and how lovely when converted?

13. Whom I would have re- tained with me, that in thy stead he might have ministred unto me in the bonds of the gospel.

13. Even thou thy self owwest me service while I suffer bonds for the Gospel sake, and I would have kept him to do it for me in thy stead.

14. But without thy mind would I do nothing that thy benefit should not be as it were of necessity, but willingly.

14. But I would not, without thy con- sent, so diopose of one who is rightfully thy Servant, though a fugitive; that thy kindness to me may not be necassitated by my will, but be free as of thy own will.

15. For perhaps he therefore departed for a season, that thou shouldst receive him for ever.

16. Not now as a servant, but a- bove a servant, a brother belov- ed, specially to me, but how much more unto thee, both in the flesh and in the Lord?

15, 16. His temporary departure may end in a durable reception and entertainment; and that not only as a Servant, but as a Brother, beloved specially by me who converted him, much more by thee to whom now he is doubly related, both as a Servant, and as a Fellow-member of Christ.

17, 18. If thou count me therefore a partner, receive him as my self. If he hath wronged thee, or oweth thee ought, put that on mine account.

17, 18. If thou judge me to have right in thy affairs, by the bonds of Christian friendship, receive him if thou wouldest receive me: Set thy loaves by him, and wrongs on my account, and I will give thee satisfaction.

19. I Paul have written it with mine own hand, I will repay it: albeit I do not say to thee how thou owwest unto me even thine own self besides.

19. Rather then Money-matters shall continue a breach, I here give thee a Bill under my hand, that I will repay all that he oweth thee; tho I might tell thee that thou owest me even thy self.

20. Yea, brother, let me have joy of thee in the Lord: refresh my bowels in the Lord.

20. I pray thee, Brother, comfort me with this expression of thy Christian Love and Forgiveness.

21. Having confidence in thy obedience, I wrote unto thee, knowing that thou wilt also do more than I say.

21. I write this as encouraged by a strong persuasion that thou wilt not only obey my desire, but do more for him than I think meet particularly to urge thee to.

22. But withal prepare me also a lodging, for I trust that through your prayers I shall be given unto you

22. Note: That our deliverances must be
1. Christ preferred by the means of the Prayers ic faithful.

2. 24. 25. There salute thee, my fellow-prisoner in perish Jesus; Marcus, Aristarchus, mas, Lucas, my fellow-labou-

3. 24. 25. Note; Paul was not without fellow-prisoners, or fellow-labouers, in his bonds.

The Epistle to the Hebrews.

[Whether by Paul, Luke, or whom, is uncertain.]

CHAP. I.

GOD, who at sundry times, and in divers manners, spake in time past unto the fathers by the prophets, 2. Hath in these last days spoken unto us by his Son:

1. God who hath not left us yet to the right of Nature, to know him by his works of Creation, but in mercy hath more fully formed us by supernatural Revelation, as pleased to do this variously as to Times, Manner, and Degree, and of old spake our ancestors by several Prophets, who were the Messengers of his Word: But in these last days he hath spoken to us by his son (greater than all Prophets.)

2. Whom he hath appointed to be heir of all things, by whom also he made the worlds.

3. Whom he hath appointed to be owner and Lord of all things, as he is God and Man, not only by the prime right of Creation, but as the Redeemer of Man, all power in Heaven and Earth, and all things are delivered to him for the ends of Redemption: And by him, (his Wisdom and Word) he made the Worlds, and all therein.

4. Being made so much better than the angels, as he hath by inheritance obtained a more excellent name than they.

5. For unto which of the angels said he at any time, Thou art my Son, this day have I begotten thee? And again, I will be to him a Father, and he shall be to me a Son. 6. And again, when he bringeth in the first begotten into the world, he saith, And let all the angels of God worship him.

5. 6. He calls Christ his Son in divers Texts (which, though it speak partly of David, yet ultimately meaneth Christ,) and he
Ch. 1. Christ preferred

he commanded the Angels to worship him. But none of this is said of Angels.

7. And of the angels he faith, Who maketh his angels spirits, and his ministers a flame of fire:
7. But he calls his Angels Spirits, and Servants, and a Flame of Fire.

8. But unto the Son, he faith, Thy Throne, O God, is for ever and ever; a scepter of righteousness is the scepter of thy kingdom.
9. Thou hast loved righteousness, and hated iniquity, therefore God even thy God hath anointed thee with the oyl of gladness above thy fellows.

8, 9. But to the Son he ascribeth the name of God, and an Everlasting Throne and Kingdom, and a Scepter of Righteousness, and a Superiority, by Divine Unction, above all others.

10. And, thou Lord, in the beginning hast laid the foundation of the earth: and the heavens are the works of thine hands. 11. They shall perish, but thou remainest; and they all shall wax old as doth a garment. 12. And as a vesture shalt thou fold them up, and they shall be changed: but thou art the same, and thy years shall not fail.

10, 11, 12. He is said to be the Lord who made Earth and Heaven, and who will remain when they perish, and be the same when they are changed.

13. But to which of the angels said he at any time, Sit on my right hand, until I make thine enemies thy footstool?
13. He never said to any Angel, what he said to Christ of his Kingdom, and the saddling of his Enemies.

14. Are they not all ministering spirits, sent forth to minister for them who shall be heirs of Salvation?

14. All those Spirits that are properly called Angels or Messengers, are Spirits appointed and sent forth by God, to minister for them who shall be Heirs of Salvation, under Jesus Christ.

Annotation.

The great difficulty here is, to understand how this description be
tolgeth to the Person of Christ: Whether it be the Divine Nature that is said to be [appointed Heir, &c. the Brightness of God’s Glory, the Character of his Substance, or Person, made better than Angels, begotten this day, set on God’s right hand in power, &c.] or the Humane: Or whether it be spoken of the Person of Christ as in both Natures: and we must not enquire according to which Nature the words are spoken of Christ? I have before said, on Col. 1. 15, 16. how many Opinions about the Person and Natures of Christ have been pleaded for. 1. That of the Orthodox, who affirm but one Person of Christ, and two Natures; though the word [Person] was long refused by many, as not meaning the same with Hypeasths. And subtle Philosophers say, that the Humane Nature can be no part of Christ’s Person, but an Adjunct; because his Person was compleat from Eternity, and the Deity cannot be a Part. But if it were not that the He
teretics will quarrel with it, it may be said, that the word Person is equivocal; and that as Hypeasths is a Person, the Divine Nature is the whole Person; but not as it is

1. That of the wretched Socinians, who sign Christ to be mere Man advanced.
3. That of the Ariants, who make him only the first Creature, or Emanation of God incarnate, super-angelical, Light of Lights, Very God of very God, begotten by Emanation; not made, as other Creatures, but making them all, but yet not of the same Essence or Substance with the Father, but from the same, as a Beam or light from the Sun. This the Church hath condemned these thirteen hundred years, and more.

4. That of some of late, who say that Christ hath three Natures; 1. The Divine. 2. The aforesaid super-angelical, assumed by the Divine in nearest Union. 3. The Humane, assumed by Both. And they think that this Text speaks chiefely of the second, as assuming the third. As it is dangerous to err about any necessary Point concerning Christ's Person, so it is dangerous to be rash in taking up any unnecessary Opinion about so incomprehensible a Mystery.
Obedience to Christ.

Hebrews.

Ch. 2.

Obedience to Christ. Ch. 2.

1. Therefore we that have heard the Gospel of Christ, and especially those who have professed to receive it, should give great earnest heed to the things which we have heard, lest at any time we should let them slip.

2. For if the word spoken by angels was steadfast, and every transgression and disobedience received a just recompense of reward:

3. How shall we escape, if we neglect so great salvation, which at the first began to be spoken by the Lord, and was confirmed unto us by them that heard him. 4. God also bearing them witness, both with signs and wonders, and with divers miracles, and gifts of the holy Ghost, according to his own will?

5. For unto angels he hath not put in subjection the world to come, whereas we speak:

6. But one in a certain place testified, saying, What is man, that thou art mindful of him: or the son of man, that thou visitest him?

7. Thou madest him a little lower than the angels, thou crownedst him with glory and honour, and didst set him over the works of thy hands: 8. Thou hast put all things in subjection under his feet.

8. For in that he put all things in subjection under him, he left nothing that is not put under him. But now we see not yet all things put under him.

9. But we see Jesus, who was made a little lower than the angels, for the suffering of death, crowned with glory and honour, that he by the grace of God should taste death for every man.

10. But we see that Jesus, who was made lower than Angels, for and in his state of humiliation and crucifixion, is already ascended up into Heaven, where he is crowned with glory. And as his Death was suffered in the common nature of Man, and the sins of all men had a casual hand in it, and it was by God's Grace the purchasing Caufe of the conditional Covenant of Grace, and of all the good that men receive, so he died to bring Man to Glory with
Ch. 2. Obedience to Christ. Hebrews.

Obedience to Christ. Ch. 2.

with himself. And therefore that Text may well be understood of the Advancement of Man both in Christ, and his Church, that shall be advanced by him.

10. For it became him, for whom are all things, and by whom are all things, in bringing many sons unto glory, to make the captain of their salvation perfect through sufferings.

11. For it seemed meet to the God of Wisdom, for whom, and by whom all things are, to make Christ the Captain of their Salvation, a perfect performer of his Saving-Office, and to obtain his own Glory in heavenly Perfection by the way of suffering, and to bring all God's adopted Sons to Glory by the Merit of it, and by following him in the same suffering way.

11. For both he that sanctifieth, and they who are sanctified, are all of one: for which cause he is not ashamed to call them brethren.

12. Saying, I will declare thy name unto my brethren, in the midst of the church will I sing praise unto thee. 13. And again, I will put my trust in him: and again, behold, I, and the children which God hath given me.

11, 12, 13. And that it is in and by Christ, that Humane Nature is advanced, as the 2:8. faith, is proved by the Union that is between Christ and us. He that sanctifieth us, and we that are sanctified, are of the same humane Nature, and are as one Body: And therefore, as we must suffer with him, we shall reign with him. Therefore in the Texts that, under other typical persons, speak of Christ, he calls us his Brethren, and Children given him, to whose trust we are committed.

14-15. Forasmuch then as the children are partakers of flesh and blood, he also himself likewise took part of the same, that through death he might destroy him that had the power of death, that is the devil: And deliver them, who through fear of death, were all their life-time subject to bondage.

14, 15. And that he might bring us to Glory with him, as we have Flesh and Blood, he would first be so far made one with us, as to take also Flesh and Blood, that he might be capable of suffering and dying for us; and so, by undergoing death, which we by sin have brought our selves under, and by riving from the Dead, he might conquer Satan and Death, and destroy his Kingdom and Power of Death, which he had obtained by conquering Man by his Temptations, and by God's letting him be the Executioner, where he had been the conquering Tempter; and so that Christ might deliver the Faithful by his Conquest of Satan and Death, from continuance under Death, and from the Danger of Hell, and from the slavish fear of both (Death temporal and everlasting;) who else, by their Guilt, and liableness to be in these, must be all their life time in bondage, both by their Danger and their Fears.

16. For verily he took not on him the nature of angels: but he took on him the seed of Abraham.

16. For it is not Angels that he took hold of, or whose Nature he assumed, and came to save: but he took on him the Nature of Man, the Seed of Abraham, to save Man.

17. Wherefore in all things it behoved him to be made like unto his brethren, that he might be a merciful and faithful high priest, in things pertaining to God, to make reconciliation for the sins of the people.

17. So that he must be in all things like Man, whom he would save, that he might be fit for his undertaken Office, to be an High Priest for us to Godward, and to be merciful and faithful therein, to make Reconciliation for our sins.

18. For in that he himself hath suffered, being tempted, he is able to succour them that are tempted.

18. For he himself having been tempted, and tried by Sufferings, and having overcome them all, he is now more meet to be a Compassionate Helper, the Example, the Teacher, and the Trust of them that must follow him through Temptations; and by his Merit and Victory hath obtained power to deliver them.

CHAP.
HEBREWS. better than Moses. Ch. 3.

ful for the Deliverance and Confirmation of so much of God's Word as was to be spoken to the Jews by him: but Christ, as the Son and Heir, and Master of the House, as his own.

6. Whose house are we, if we hold fast the confidence, and the rejoicing of the hope firm unto the end.

6. This House is the Church, of which we are parts, to be it we hold fast the confident Profession of our Faith, and the joy and glorying in our hopes of the promised Blessedness, firm to the end.

7. Wherefore, as the holy Ghost faith, To day if ye will hear his voice, 8. Harden not your hearts, as in the provocation, in the day of temptation in the wilderness: 9. When your fathers tempted me, proved me, and saw my works forty years. 10. Wherefore I was grieved with that generation, and said, They do always err in their hearts, and they have not known my ways. 11. So I sware in my wrath, They shall not enter into my rest.

7, 8, 9, 10, 11. but seeing he will take none to dwell with him in Glory, but those that persevere, hear and consider what the Holy Ghost said to, and of the Israelites, To day, &c. Neglect not his present Call, and your present Day, to the hardening of your Hearts, as your Fathers did in the Wilderness, by which God's justice was engaged against them, as a People whose Hearts were habituated to Evil, and have not the obedient knowledge of his Ways, and Works, and Will: So that he sware in his just displeasure, that that Generation should not enter into the promised Land.

12. Take heed, brethren, lest there be in any of you an evil heart of unbelief, in departing from the living God.

12. Take warning by these Israelites, and see that there be not in any of you an Evil, unfounded heart, that is prepared by secret Unbelief, to depart in Trial from the Living God.

13. But exhort one another daily,
Ch. 3. Fear falling away.

Ch. 4. Rest is promised.

Hebrews.

13. To this end, one means appointed by God for your perseverance is, speedily and daily to exhort and stir up one another; the Pastors in the Church and Assemblies, and all in their Places and Converse: And the rather, because Sin, of which you are in danger, is a deceitful thing; and they that revolt are made believe, that it is but a receiving of the Truth, or a necessary Self-slaying, and no forsaking of Christ, or Truth, or Godliness.

N. Qu. But what if Rulers forbid us to meet daily for such Exhortation? Ans. God commandeth you to do it in the manner and time that the end requireth, and no man can dispense with his Law. The Christians, for three hundred years, assembled, when forbidden.

Qu. But what if Christian Rulers forbid it? Ans. Christians have more Obligation than Heathens to do good, but no more Authority to do evil, or null God's Laws.


14. For we are made partakers of Christ, if we hold the beginning of our confidence steadfast unto the end.

14. We are initially made partakers of Christ as our Saviour: but if we will attain Salvation by him, we must hold the sufficient Faith (or the Confidence) in which we have begun (or which is our Principle) firm to the end: (For Perseverance is made a Condition of the Promise of Salvation.)

15. While it is said, To day if ye will hear his voice, harden not your hearts, as in the provocation. 16. For some, when they had heard, did provoke: howbeit not all that came out of Egypt by Moses.

15. The Words tell us, that some that heard, after Deliverance from Egypt, provoked God; but it was not all.

17. But with whom was he grieved forty years? was it not with them that had sinned, whose carcases fell in the wilderness?

17. With whom was God so displeased, as Grief here signifieth? Nothing displeased him but Sin. It was with backsliding, disobedient, unthankful murmurers, that would not rest in the Will, and Word, and Providence of God, but must have their own carnal Will fulfilled, and so God in Justice killed them in the Wilderness, after so many Miracles had led them many years towards the promised Land. Take heed therefore, you follow them in the like Sin, to greater punishment, for abusing greater Mercies.

18, 19. And to whom spake he that they should not enter into his rest, but to them that believed not? So we see that they could not enter in, because of unbelief.

18, 19. It was the sinning Unbelievers that he spake should not enter: and it was because of their Unbelief, that they could not enter. Take heed therefore, lest ye fall by Unbelief in Trial: for there is more required to our compleat Salvation, than to our first part in Christ.

CHAP. IV.

L. Let us therefore fear lest a promise being left us of entering into his rest, any of you should seem to come short of it.

1. Seeing then that this Promise of Rest is conditional, if we persevere, and among so many Trials we are in so much danger of our own Heart, let careful fear prevent your falling, and míssing the benefit of the Promise.

Note: Q. Why should we fear that which God's Decree and Grace have made impossible? Ans. 1. God hath not made it impossible in itself, but only hypothetically, or by consequence, from his Decree and Foreknowledge, to any man. 2. His Decree and Foreknowledge conjoin the End and Means; as if he said, This Man shall be saved by persevering Faith, and shall persevere by fearing to fall away, and avoiding the occasions. 3. Weak Christians have not the assurance of God's Election, and therefore can gather no such consequence. 4. So few (if any known) did for many hundred years hold, that no initial right to Salvation is lost; or that all the Christians, beside strong confirmed ones, did persevere; that it is not safe for doubting persons to lay their Salvation on such a Condition.
Ch. 4. Reft to come; Hebrews.

What it is. Ch. 4.

1. Reft to come; specially when it tendeth to the necessary end. The Fathers of the first four hundred years thought, that some
kind of Refting to last for ever was implied in Adam's Innocency, and Cal-
lection, by which the world was to be perfected.
2. For unto us was the gospel preached, as well as unto them; but the word preached did not
profit them, nor being mixed with faith in them that heard it.
3. They had God's Word, and to do: But it did not profit and give them, because they received it not by a sound, con-
formed, practical Belief.
4. For we which have believed to enter into rest, as he said, As I
have sworn in my wrath, that they shall enter into my rest: although the works were finished from the founda-
tion of the world.
5. There is a Reft promised to us be-
evers, as well as the Typical Reft was to
Israel, and the Seventh Day separated for a Sabbath from the Creation, which
granted us our better Reft.
6. For he spake in a certain place of the seventh day on this wise. And God did rest the seventh day from all his works. And in
his place again, If they shall enter into my rest.
7. The Text tells us, that besides the Sabbath-Reft, there was another promised.
8. Seeing therefore it remain-
eth that some must enter therein, and they to whom it was first preached, entered not in because of unbelief:
7. Again he limit-
ites a certain day, saying in David, to day, after so long a time: as
is said, To day if ye will hear his voice, harden not your hearts.
9. For if Jesus had given them rest, then would he not afterward have spoken of another day.
6, 7, 8. It is plain then that some must enter into rest; and Unbelief kept out
them to whom it was then Preached; and David, long after their entrance into Ca-
men, sets them a day for their further en-
trance, which he would not have done, if
Joshua's bringing them into Canaan had
been the full obtainment of the promised
Reft. it followeth, that more than that was
promised.

9. There remaineth therefore a reft to the people of God.

9. The great Sabbathism or Reft then promised to the People of God is yet to come
Note: This Sabbathism or Reft, no doubt, is all the State of the Churches deliverance and felvity by Christ Incarnation and Gloria-
ified, which in the first-fruit is all the Grace which he giveth us on Earth, but in
the mean time, full performance it is the State of Glory.

I have before said why I assent not to
Dr Hammond, who maketh it to be the de-
leverance of Christians from Perfection, and
enjoying peaceable Affembles by the De-
solution of Jerusalem, as if this were the
main Sense of the Text. 1. How little a thing was that in comparison of Saving Grace and Glory? 2. Most of the Chris-
tians to whom Paul wrote, were to die be-
fore that, and so not to see and enjoy it.
3. The Apostles themselves were not to see it and enjoy it. 4. Christianity continued, after that, a perfected hated thing under the Heathen, till above three hundred years, till Constantine's time, though with inter-
missions between the Ten Perfections. Mal-
derers were no more married by the Hea-
thens than by the Jews, who were in Servi-
itude themselves. 5. And if any apply it to the time after Constantine, the mercy indeed was unspeakable, but those that were here written to, were not to see it: And the Voice that is reported to say, Hadie te-
memum frudtor in Ecclesiam, hath by ex-
perience been so far credited, that we must
not prefer the Preterial Grandure and Pow-
er, which shortly was set up, before the
better Reft of Saints, while we think how
much Peaceable Affembles (which the Doc-
ator calls that Reft) through a great part of the
Christian World, have been hindred
and persecuted by Violence, Inquisitions, Prisons, and the Blood of many hundred
thousands more than the Jews killed, by the Canons, and Executions of Papa Great-
ness, and for its Interest.

And it is incredible that to the suffering Believers of that Age, the Holy Ghost,
comparing them with this great Promise of
a Sabbathism or Reft, should not principally
mean the great and glorious final Reft.
For he that is entered into his rest, he also hath ceased from his own works, as God did from his.

For as God is said to rest and sanction the Sabbath, when he ended his six days work: so our Sabbath, or Rest must be a ceasing from our own works, that is, from Sin, from Wilderness Labours, or troublesome means (as sorrow, fear, conflict, etc.) which are short of the End. And from Suffering.

Note: This Verse shows that it is the Heavenly Rest, with the beginning of it by Holiness, which is here meant, for Church-grandure, and full prosperity, have been the cherisher of our own works, and not the ceasing of them.

Let us labour therefore to enter into that rest, lest any man fall after the same example of unbelief.

Let it then be the care and diligence of heart and life, to attain that Rest, and not to lose it by Apostasy, but to take warning by those Unbelievers.

Note: Is it liker to be the destruction of the Jews, and freedom from this Persecution, that should be meant, by an Apostle that gloried in suffering, rather than that Glory which is indeed the end of Christian care and labour?

For the word of God is quick, and powerful, and sharper than any two-edged Sword, piercing even to the dividing asunder of soul and spirit, and of the joints and marrow, and is a discernner of the thoughts and intents of the heart.

For though some may be deceived by a self-flattering heart, and seducing reasonings, and some think to conceal their sin, God's Word is quick and powerful, and sharper than any two-edged Sword, being freighted by the all-seeing God, to search hearts to the bottom, and so discover and separate evil from good, in the secretest thoughts and intents of the heart.

Neither is there any creature that is not manifest in his fight, but all things are naked and opened unto the eyes of him with whom we have to do.

It is (as the Light from the Sun) the word of that God, before whose Eye all hearts and things are in open view, as a dissected body; and such a searching Light is his Word with whom we have to do (or which we are speaking of).

Seeing then that we have a great high priest, that is passed into the heavens, Jesus the Son of God, let us hold fast our profession.

Having then so great a High Priest ascended into Heaven, (the Eternal Word, who ascendeth forth his searching Word) who is able to save, and help us, and destroy us, if we revolt; Let us hold fast our professed Faith and Hope through all our Tryals.

For we have not a High priest which cannot be touched with the feeling of our infirmities: but was in all points tempted like as we are, yet without sin.

For we have not a High Priest that is so far from our natures and weaknesses, as to be unconcerned, and void of compassion towards us, as much as we are towards the Brutes; but one that was Man, and tempted, and persecuted, as much as we are, but without sin.

Note: That Temptation may be with our fin: It is not our fin merely to be tempted.

Let us therefore come boldly unto the throne of grace, that we may obtain mercy, and find grace to help in time of need.

Let us therefore so fully rest in the sufficiency and mercy of our High Priest in the Heavens, as to come (though with filial Reverence, yet) with boldness in the belief of our acceptance, that we may obtain mercy, and find faithful and sufficient help in all our dangers and needs.

(For God will yet be fought unto all.)
Chap. V.

Ch. 5. Christ's Priesthood.

For every high priest taken from among men, is ordained for men in things pertaining to God, that he may offer both gifts and sacrifices for sins.

1. For among men, the High Priest that is one of them, is a person consecrated to officiate for them God-wards, or in things of their concernment towards God, specially in offering Gifts and Sacrifices for sin.

2. Who can have compassion on the ignorant, and on them that are out of the way, for that he himself also is compassed with infirmity.

3. And by reason hereof he thought, as for the people, so also for himself, to offer for sins.

4. And being liable to sin himself, he must offer for his own sin as well as theirs.

5. And no man taketh this honour unto himself, but he that is called of God, as was Aaron.

6. And so Sacred an Office was not to be invaded by Usurpers, without God's call, for by it Aaron was made Priest.

7. So also Christ glorified not himself to be made an high priest: but he that said unto him, Thou art my Son, to day have I begotten thee.

8. And Christ suffered not this honour, at God gave it him, who said, Thou art my Son, &c.

9. As he a priest in another place, Thou art a priest for ever after the order of Melchisedec.

10. And Psa. 110. He saith, Thou art, &c. thou art a King and Priest, as Melchisedec was, and that for ever.

11. Who in the days of his flesh, then he had offered up prayers and supplications, with strong crying and tears, unto him that was able to save him from death, and was heard, in that he feared:

7. Who in the Garden, and on the Cross, when he had offered Prayers with Agony, swearing like Water and Blood, and cried out on the Cross, Why hast thou forsaken me? to him that could have prevented his death, and all the pains which he feared (not with any sinful distrust in God, nor any opposition to his Father's Will, but from that strong averation to suffering and death, as much, which is a property of Humane Nature, and did consent to be a Sacrifice for us:) and he was heard in that he feared, though he must first suffer before he was raised.

8. Though he were a Son, yet learned he obedience, by the things which he suffered:

8. Though he was a Son, and it was he by his suffering, experientially know and knew what it is to obey as the dearest rate, as absolutely subject to the Will of God.

9. And being made perfect, he became the author of eternal salvation unto all them that obey him,

5. And being consummate, or made by the perfection of his performed part on Earth, a perfect Redeemer, he is in the fulness of Power in Heaven become the Author of Eternal Salvation, by Intercession, Pardon, Consecration of his Spirit, and by actual Glorification, to all that hearken to him, and obey him.

Note. 1. That these Texts do not intimate any privative imperfection in Christ's Knowledge or Obedience, or any qualification before: but a negative imperfection cannot be denied to his Humane Nature.

As Adam, new made, knew not all sensible Objects remote, as he did when they came before his Senses; so Christ in his Infancy, and in the Stable at Bethlehem, must not be supposed to know as man, all that after he knew: Yea himself faith after, that he knew not the day and hour, &c. so he had no sensible experimental knowledge of passive Obedience before. 2. He is said to be made perfect...
Ch. 5. Dull Hearers:

in two respects: 1. In the perfect performance of his work on Earth, as any undertaker is called perfect when by undertaking. 2. In his own perfection in Heaven. 3. Obeying Christ is part of the condition of final justification and salvation.

10, 11. Called of God an high priest after the order of Melchisedec: Of whom we have many things to say, and hard to be uttered, seeing ye are dull of hearing.

10, 11. Of which Priesthood of Christ, as compared to Melchisedec, we have much to say, which it is not easy to make intelligible by words, to those that are so unprepared, as you are, by ignorance, and a dull and slow understanding.

Note. 1. All great Scripture Truths be not equally easy to be understood.

2. It is the incapacity of hearers, through defects and want of preparatory knowledge, which maketh Scripture and Teaching not understood.

3. It is no uncharitable discouragement of professed Christians, but an undeniable thing, to say, that great numbers of them are dull hearers, and by ignorance incapable at the present of hard things.

12. For when for the time ye ought to be teachers, ye have need that one teach you again which be the first principles of the oracles of God, and are become such as have need of milk, and not of strong meat.

Note. 1. Men ought to grow in knowledge, according to the time they have to learn. 2. Many after long teaching are ignorant, and must be taught again the same things which they have long ago heard. 3. God's Oracles have Principles which must be first learned.

13. For every one that useth milk, is unskilful in the word of righteousness: for he is a babe.

14. But strong meat belongeth to them that are of full age; even those who by reason of use have their senses exercised to discern both good and evil.

15. Milk is the Dye for Babes, and plain things for young and dull Christians; harder things will but hurt them: Those are for them that by long study and practice have got preparatory knowledge, and a habit of quick, clear, and sound discerning Truth and Error, Good and Evil.

Note. 1. People must be taught but according to their capacity. 2. Harder things in Divinity must be taught them that have learned the easier, and are fit for them. But by [hard things] is not meant unnecessary Curiosities of human arts, nor unprofitable Words, or trifling Controversies: But 1. A more clear, distinct, and satisfying knowledge of the Evidence of the truth and sense of the Essentials.

2. A more orderly knowledge of this method and mutual dependance as one Syteme, that as in a Table or Scheme we may for each member in its proper place.

3. A more extensive knowledge of the useful consequences of the Essentials and Principles.

CHAP. VI.

1. Therefore leaving the principles of the doctrine of Christ, let us go on unto perfection, not laying again the foundation of repentance from dead works, and of faith towards God, 2. Of the doctrine of baptism, and of laying on of hands, and resurrection of the dead, and of eternal judgment.

1, 2. Therefore supposing the Principles of Christian Doctrine, I now pass over such discourse, and will go to lead you to some additional knowledge belonging to the more perfect; not now discoursing of these Principles as to men that have not received them; I mean, 1. Repentance and Conversion from a state of Death, and from Insidelity, and a wicked, ungodly life. 2. A lively belief and trust in God the Father, Son, and Holy Ghost. 3. The preparatory Baptism of John, and the Baptism of Christ, which continueth us professed Christians; what profession is requisite in the Adult, and what Covenant it solemnizeth, what Duties it binds us to, and what Benefits it delivereth and sealeth. 4. The great Gift to Christ's Apostles and Ministers of Authoritative Imp

1. The use of hands, by which the name Holy Ghost was given to others, and Miracles wrought for the confirmation and propagation of the Christian Faith. 2. The certainty of a Resurrection, and future life, including the immortality of Souls. 3. The final Judgment, which will determine men to their everlasting state, and use them accordingly.

3. And this will we do, if God permit.

3. And so I will now pass to some additional truths, by God's assistance.

4. For it is impossible for those who were once enlightened, and have tasted of the heavenly gift, and were made partakers of the Holy Ghost, 5. And have tasted the good word of God, and the powers of the world to come; 6. If they shall fall away, to renew them again unto repentance: seeing they crucify to themselves the Son of God afresh, and put him to an open flame.

4, 5, 6. I will now go back to reach Regeneration to you that, profuse to be already regenerate, though you are tempted to Apostasy: For it is impossible for those who were illuminated to believe in Christ, and were baptized, and regenerate or only heard of the Gospel, and warnings of the Holy Ghost from Heaven, but have themselves had an experimental taste thereof, and been themselves partakers of the Holy Ghost, as well as seen his miraculous Gifts in the Church, and have had an inward experimental taste of the truth and goodness of the Gospel, and the powerful preparations and hopes of the World to come; if they shall really lose all this, and fall from the belief of Christianity, to regenerate or renew these men again to saving repentance, seeing after believing Christ to be the Messiah, they are turned to take him for Deceiver and Antichrist, and content to the pretended Justification of his Crucifixion, and expose him by slander to the same reproach, as his crucifiers did.

Note, 1. That the Apostle speaketh of no other falling away, but to Infidelity, denying Jesus to be the Christ. 2. That is not Temptations to Unbelief, nor a degree of Unbelief mixt with Faith, or Subtling, that he speaketh of, but a forsaking and renouncing Christ. 3. He speaketh not of the mere denial of the Tongue in a passion or fear, but of the renouncing Christ by heart and tongue. 4. He speaketh not of the act of a man in madness, or melancholy, who is not himself, but of a man's deliberate act, that hath free use of reason. 5. He speaketh of no Infidels, or total Apostates, but those that had themselves been partakers of the signal Gifts of the Holy Ghost, and were convinced by experimental gift of the Truth. 6. Therefore it must be noted, that not only truly holy persons, but abundance (if not the greatest part) that did but to believe as to imbody with the Church, had then one fort or other of these miraculous, or rare Gifts for Confirmation of the Gospel, which made Christ, Matth. 7. Bring in the workers of iniquity as wonder-workers in his name; and Paul, Gal. 3, 3, 4, 5. Appealed to the quiddam Galatians, which way they had the Spirit and Miracles. 7. That this must needs be the same Blasphemy of the Holy Ghost, which Christ pronounced unpardonable: For they who had not only seen the Miracles, but had the Holy Ghost themselves for such wonders, could not doubt of the matter of fact, whether such Miracles were extant or not: So that there was no possible way for such to turn Infidels, but by believing that this Witness of the Spirit of Miracles, was a false, deceiving Testimony of Satan, and not God's Testimony: And this was the Blasphemy against the Spirit, Matt. 12. 8. That it is not all that is here meant, that such are not to be abovled by the Church (which ought but to fore-judge, as God will judge, as far as they can;) But that also such can never truly be regenerate and saved. 9. The reason is, because God giveth Faith by means, and the Witness of the Spirit's signal Gifts is the last means for proof that God will give them; and they that after receiving this, reject it by such Blasphemy, are forsworn by the Grace of the Spirit, whom they blasphemonously renounce. 10. Crucifying Christ afflicts importunately charging him to delive Crucifex un, as guilty of the deceit and Blasphemy, for which he was crucified: So that none that believe not the Spirit's Miracles in this, are guilty of this sin, though they be Infidels. Some Ancients, and most Papists explain [impossible] by [difficult]; but I think ungroundedly. 11. Yea, the Jews
that crucified him were not such as here are described; for they had not before believed and received the Holy Ghost: It is the worst reproach of Christ for a professed Christian to say I did believe in him, and had the Spirit of God, and saw and did signal Works or Miracles, and I stood at last that he was but a Deceiver, and all these Gifts were the operations of evil Spirits.

7. For the earth which drinketh in the rain that cometh oft upon it, and bringeth forth herbs meet for them by whom it is dressed, receiveth blessing from God. But that which beareth thorns and briers, is rejected, and is nigh unto cursing, whose end is to be burned.

8. For as the Earth is blest, or judly prais’d, which bringeth fruit when it is watered and manured; but that is called cursed, and bad, whose fruit must be for the fire, which bringeth forth but Thorns and Briars: So God will blest and reward them who fruitfully answr the means which he useth in them; but will curse and burn those who, after the greatest means, and experimental partaking of the signal Gifts of the Spirit, shall turn to reproach and blaspheme him whom they believed in.

9. But beloved, we are persuaded better things of you, and things that accompany salvation, though we thus speak.

9. But though, in the dangerous times, and temptations to Apostacy, I think meet to tell you the dreadful case of such, for your safety, do not interpret it, as though I thought this is, or would be your case: We have reason to hope better of you, that you have the Grace which will bring you to Salvation.

10. For God is not unrighteous to forget your work and labour of love, which ye have shewed toward his Name, in that ye have ministered to the saints, and do minister.

10. For God, who is our most righteous Governor, even in this Life distributeth Rewards and Penalties in Justice: And as,

11. And we desire that every one of you do shew the same diligence, to the full assurance of hope unto the end:

11. Therefore, seeing this is Gods ordinary way, to reward well used Grace with more, I desire that you will hold on in the same diligence, till you reach to the Consummation, or full Assurance of your hope of Perseverance and Salvation, which every young Beginner doth not attain.

12. That ye be not slothful, but followers of them, who through faith and patience inherit the promises.

12. And that tire, weary fligghers make you not deflect, and lose your reward; but that in unweary diligence to the end, you follow them, who, through faith and enduring patience, have won the prize, and poisson the promised felicity.

13, 14. For when God made promise to Abraham, because he could swear by no greater, he sware by himself, Saying, Surely, blessing will blest thee, and multiplying I will multiply thee.

13. 14. 15. So God, who sware by himself to Abraham, (having no greater to swear by) confirmed his Promises of the Multiplication of his Seed, which yet Abraham lived not to see fulfilled; but he patiently waited and dyed in faith, and all the Promises were fulfilled in due time.

15. For men verily swear by the greater, and an oath for confirmation
firmation is to them an end of all strife.

16. For men use, by Oath, to appeal to him that can discern and revenge Perfidiousness; and when other Evidences fail, they end their Strifes by the Confirmation of an Oath.

17. Wherein God willing more abundantly to shew unto the heirs of promise the immutability of his counsel, confirmed it by an oath: 17. And God knowing our weakness of Faith, to confirm the Faithful, who are the Heirs of his promised Happiness, of the truth and immutability of his Decrees, confirmed his Word to us by his Oath, that we might be put quite out of doubt.

18. That by two immutable things, in which it was impossible for God to lie, we might have a strong consolation, who have fled for refuge to lay hold upon the hope set before us. 18. That so, by his Word and his Oath, which are both immutable, and therefore infallible Security, seeing it is impossible for God to lie, we who are fled for refuge from Guilt, and Sin, and Danger, and Misery, to lay hold on the proposed hope of Everlasting Life, might have well grounded and strong Consolation, and not be shaken by any doubts of the Efficacy or Promises of God.

Note, God would have us to have strong Consolation in our Faith and Hope.

19. Which hope we have as an anchor of the soul, both sure and stedfast, and which entereth into that within the vail.

19. Though the things of this Life are much uncertain, this Hope, which is our Support and Comfort, is founded on firm and stedfast Security; and is fetched, by Faith, from the most holy and invisible things, which the Vail of Mortality yet hideth from our sight.

20. Whither the fore-runner is for us entered, even Jesus made an high priest for ever after the order of Melchisedec.

20. Into which invisible, heavenly Glory, Christ is entered, not only for himself, and his own Consummation, but as a Fore-runner for us, to intercede, and prepare felicity for us, and from his fulness of Power, to send down his Spirit, and consummate all that concerneth our Salvation, as a Royal Priest, typified by Melchisedec.

CHAP. VII.

For this Melchisedec king of Salem, priest of the most high God, who met Abraham returning from the slaughter of the kings, and blessed him: 2. To whom also Abraham gave a tenth part of all: first, being by interpretation king of righteousness, and after that also king of Salem, which is, king of peace:

1, 2. This Melchisedec, to whom Abraham gave the Tents of the Spoils, was King of Righteousness by the signification of his name; and King of Peace, interpreting his place: which Christ, is eminently, whom he typified.

3. Without father, without mother, without descents; having neither beginning of days, nor end of life: but made like unto the Son of God, abideth a priest continually.

3. The History of him maketh no mention of his Father, or Mother, or Descents, nor of his Birth or Beginning, nor of his death or end; but describeth him like a continuing Priest, and a Type of the Son of God, who abideth a Priest continually.

Note, The Jews think he was Shem, whole Beginning was not seen by the new World, nor his End by the Old, nor his Death mentioned: But this is a presumption: Had it been good for us to know more of him, God would have told us more.

4. Now consider how great this man was, unto whom even the patriarch Abraham gave the tenth of the spoils.

4. When Abraham, from whom the Levitical Priesthood, and the peculiar Seed, sprung, gave him the Tents of all the Spoils, it tells us how great a man Melchisedec was.
5. And verily they that are of the sons of Levi, who receive the office of the priesthood, have a commandment to take tithes of the people, according to the law, that is, of their brethren, though they come out of the loins of Abraham.

6. The Law allowed Aaron, and the other Priests, to take Tythes of their Brethren that sprung from Abraham.

7. But he whose descent is not counted from them, received tithes of Abraham, and blessed him that had the promises. And without all contradiction, the less is blessed of the better.

8. And here men that die receive tithes: but there he receiveth them, of whom it is witnessed that he liveth. 9. And as I may so say, Levi also, who receiveth tithes, paid tithes in Abraham.

10. For he was yet in the loins of his father, when Melchisedec met him.

8, 9, 10. And here it is Mortal Men that take Tythes: but Melchisedec is mentioned as if he had not died: And Levi, who receiveth Tythes, paid them, then being in Abraham's Loyts.

11. It therefore perfection were by the Levitical priesthood (for under it the people received the law) what further need was there that another priest should rule after the order of Melchisedec, and not be called after the order of Aaron?

11. This proves that the Levitical Priesthood (and consequently the Law) was not perfect, nor gave perfection: else what need had there been of another more excellent Royal Priesthood which was promised.

12. For the priesthood being changed, there is made of necessity a change also of the law.

12. And if there must be a more excellent Priesthood than the Legal, there must needs be some other more excellent Laws, appointing them their work: For the old Priesthood had their work prescribed them by the Law of Moses.

Note. That they who deny Christ to be a Law-giver, deny his Royal Priesthood, and deny him to be Christ.

13. For he of whom these things are spoken, pertaineth to another tribe, of which no man gave attendance at the altar. 14. For it is evident that our Lord sprang out of Judah, of which tribe Moses spake nothing concerning priesthood.

13, 14. And the translating the Priesthood to Judah, the ruling Tribe, of which Christ was, proved the Change of the Law.

15. And it is yet more evident: for that after the similitude of Melchisedec there ariseth another priest, 16. Who is made not after the law of a carnal commandment, but after the power of an endless life.

15, 16. And it is yet more evident, that there must be a higher Priesthood than Aaron's, because he must be made as Melchisedec; not by Linical Succession, according to the Law of Moses, but with reference to a state of Immortality, as to its Rise and End.

17. For he testifieth, Thou art a priest for ever after the order of Melchisedec. 18. For there is verily a disannulling of the commandment going before, for the weakness and unprofitableness thereof.

17, 18. And this express testimony of another sort of Priesthood afterward, that the Law, which they were to execute, was to cease, as weak, insufficient and unprofitable.
Note; Quest. Is not the Gospel Priesthood then, in conformity to Christ, to be Kings, and above all Kings, under Christ the King? or Kings and Priests to be the same? Answer. 1. Let them here on Earth follow Christ in his humiliation, who said, My Kingdom is not of the World; and then, when they come to him in Heaven, they shall reign as Kings. 2. Our uncertain Collections are not to sure a way to know Christ's Will, as his own Words; who hath plainly forbidden Secular Dominion to his Ministers, and given them a far other Description and Character. 3. But by the use of the Church Keys, they have the Government of Church-Communion, which, as it hath a nearer relation to the Heavenly Kingdom, is there in nobler than Secular Power.

19. For the Law made nothing perfect, but the bringing in of a better hope did; by the which we draw nigh unto God.

19. For the Law of Moses did all as an imperfect thing, which was not, of itself, to make Man, or his Service perfect, with all Hopes and Comforts, but to lead him towards a better Revelation, which bringing a fuller notice of Pardon and Grace, Life and Immortality, advanced us nearer to God, and gave us more bold and comfortable Access to him, in order to our Heavenly Fruition.

20, 21. And in as much as not without an oath he was made priest; (For those priests were made without an oath: but this with an oath, by him that said unto him, The Lord sware, and will not repent, Thou art a priest for ever after the order of Melchisedec.)

20, 21: And this Change God sweareth to, which was not done by Aaron's Priesthood: which sweareth its Certainty and Immutability.

22. By so much was Jesus made a Surety of a better Testament.

22. Note, 1. The word here translated [Testament] signifies God's Statutes, Law, proposed to us for our Comman-Cominent and Obedience, and promising Grace and Glory; and signifies the same thing as [the Law of God.] And not a meer before Promiss, without Precepts, Condition or Penalty.

23. And they truly were many priests, because they were not suffered to continue, by reason of death. 24. But this man, because he continueth ever, hath an unchanged priesthood.

23, 24. And so the Levitical Priesthood was in many successively, because they were mortal: But Christ living for ever, is only one and the same, and there is no other. Note, Therefore Christ hath no mortal Vicar, to be an universal High Priest.

25. Wherefore he is able also to save them to the uttermost, that come unto God by him, seeking he ever liveth to make intercession for them.

25. And this is the great Comfort of Believers, that he is able to save us in all Extremities, even at Death, and to Eternity of Blessedness, seeing he ever liveth, by his Intercession, to finish his saving Work for all that come by him to God. Friends die, and all worldly Helps may fail, but Christ will never die.

26. For such an high priest became us, who is holy, harmless, undefiled, separate from sinners, and made higher than the heavens.

26. For our Condition required such an High Priest, who is holy, free from doing ill, or suffering any more from any Enemies, clean from all Sin of his own, and is separated from the Condition of ungodly Man that dwells on Earth.

27. Who needeth not daily, as those high priests, to offer up sacrifice, first for his own sin, and then for the peoples: for this he did once, when he offered up himself.
Ch. 8. The faulty Covenant. Hebrews.

27. Who had no sin of his own, as the High Priests had; and therefore, for his own sin he needed not to offer any Sacrifice, though he did it to perfect his undertaking Work for us. Nor needed he offer often for the sins of the people; for his once offering up himself, was a sufficient Expiatory Sacrifice.

28. For the law maketh men high priests, which have infirmity; but the word of the oath, which was since the law, maketh the Son, who is consecrated for evermore.

29. For the Law had none to make High Priests of, but mortal Sinners; but the Word of the Oath, Psal. 110, which was since the making of the Law, maketh the Son of God High Priest, who is holy, without sin, immortal, and consecrated to an everlasting Priesthood.

CHAP. VIII.

1. Now of the things which we have spoken, this is the sum: we have such an high priest, who is set on the right hand of the throne of the majesty in the heavens: 2. A minister of the sanctuary, and of the true tabernacle, which the Lord pitched, and not man.

1. The sum of all that's said is this. We have such an High Priest, who is advanced to the highest honour and power in glory, called God's Throne of Majesty in the Heavens. As Man, a Minister indeed, or the prime Administrator; but it is of the true and heavenly Sanctuary and Tabernacle, not like that which was made by Man, but which the Lord hath made for the glorifying of himself in his glorified Saints with Christ, where we shall in presence worship him for ever.

3. For every high priest is ordained to offer gifts and sacrifices; wherefore it is of necessity that this man have somewhat also to offer.

3. And he were no High Priest, if he had nothing as Gift or Sacrifice to offer.

4. For if he were on earth, he should not be a priest, seeing that there are priests that offer gifts according to the law.

4. And if he were on Earth, he should not be a Priest according to the Law, because there are such already, and it was entailed on the Line of Aaron: (And Christ's Sacrifice when he was on Earth, was not according to the Law, but supralegal.)

5. Who serve unto the example and shadow of heavenly things, as Moses was admonished of God, when he was about to make the tabernacle. For see (faith he) that thou make all things according to the pattern shewed to thee in the mount.

5. And the Levitical Priesthood on Earth, was made to perform those Administrations, which are but shadows of the heavenly things, having some notifying and instructing resemblance to them as figurative; which God darkly intimated to Moses when he charged him to make the Tabernacle in the Wilderness according to the pattern which he had seen in the Mount. So that the Earthly Tabernacle and Worship is but a figure or shadow of the Heavenly.

6. But now hath he obtained a more excellent ministration, by how much also he is the Mediator of a better covenant, which was established upon better promises.

6. But Christ's Priestly Ministry is more excellent, as he is the Mediator of a better Covenant, than the meer Law of Moses was. (Though the Promise that were before and with the Law, was an obscure Gospel.) It is better, as having better Promises; even clearer and fuller; and more confirmed by God's Oath, and Seal, and Earmark. It hath Promises of fuller Pardon, greater Grace and Privileges, and furer and greater Glory.

Note: That both the Mosaical and the Christian are named in Scripture, both a Law and a Covenant; for they have the same parts, viz. Precepts, Promises, and Threats, and Obedience must be consented to. As proposed by God, with his Antecedent Mercy, it is a Law, and a proposed Covenant (𝐷 perror). As consented to by Man, it is a Law accepted by Subjects, and a mutual Covenant (𝐷/error.) See
Ch. 8. The new Covenant. Hebrews.

See (Hebrews) his Preface to Annotations on the New Testament of the Names.

7. For if that first covenant had been faultless, then should no place have been sought for the second.

8. For if the first Covenant had been perfect, God would not have made the second better.

9. It is not here called, the First Covenant, as if no other had gone before it; for there was a former with Adam, Noah, Abraham: but as it is the first of three. And it was a Covenant of Peculiarity, distinct from the common one, and the Promis.

8. For finding fault with them, he faith, Behold, the days come (faith the Lord) when I will make a new covenant with the house of Israel, and the house of Judah:

9. Not according to the Covenant that I made with their Fathers, in the day when I took them by the hand to lead them out of the land of Egypt, because they continued not in my covenant, and I regarded them not, faith the Lord.

8, 9. For he intimateth the defect of the Mosaic Covenant, when he faith, Behold, the days come, &c. I will make with them a new Covenant, of greater and tender Mercy; for the former they quickly forsook, and I forsook them.

10. For this is the covenant that I will make with the house of Israel after those days, faith the Lord, I will put my laws into their mind, and write them in their hearts: and I will be to them a God, and they shall be to me a people.

10. But this is my new Covenant which I will make with all Abraham's believing Seed: I will sanctify them by my Spirit, and thereby give them a saving knowledge and love of all my necessary Laws, and their Duties, as if they were written in their minds and hearts; and I will be to them a God (which is their All) and will love and cherish them as my peculiar people.

Note, That this Promise is not made to Israel, as a peculiar, political Body (for their Policy was to be dissolved) but as a part of the Catholick Church, which are Abraham's believing Seed. 2. Therefore it being supposed that it is to Believers that this Promise is made, it followeth, that it is a Promise on condition of preceding Faith: As Vocation giveth Faith, which is the Condition of consequent Justification and Sanctification. Though all be of Grace, God's Wisdom maketh the Condition a means to introduce the rest.

11. And they shall not teach every man his neighbour, and every man his brother, saying, Know the Lord: for all shall know me, from the least to the greatest.

12. And it shall not be doubted to them, whether the Lord or Baal be the true God, as it hath been with this united People, who have so long lived in Idolatry: For all the Church of Believers, from the least to the greatest, shall know and own me to be their God, and not need to be again taught it, as an unknown thing.

Note, That this speaketh not against the necessity of Humans Teaching: for it is by such Teaching that God is supposed to give them the knowledge of himself. Nor doth it mean that it shall be needless to teach the best to know God better: for to know him is the sum and perfection of Knowledge, and 'tis Life Eternal. But the meaning is, That it shall not be an unknown thing, that the Lord is our God.

12. For I will be merciful to their unrighteousness, and their sins and their iniquities will I remember no more.

12. For the greatness of my Mercy shall forgive all the sins of their unconverted state, and not charge them upon them, to their Destruction, and all the Infirmities of their Regenerate state.

Note, That this Promise of Justification, as well as the former of Sanctification, suppliceth them to be Believers in order of Nature first, as the Condition.
Ch. 9. The different Hebrews. Ch. 9.

13. In that he faith, A new covenant, he hath made the first old. Now that which decayeth and waxeth old, is ready to vanish away.

13. This term of a new Covenant implies, that the old one must then be abolished: and the time is come.

CHAP. IX.

1. Then verily the first covenant had also ordinances of divine service, and a worldly sanctuary.

1. The Mosaical Covenant had its proper Ordinances of Service to God, and an earthly, temporary Tabernacle.

2. For there was a tabernacle made, the first wherein was the candlestick, and the table and the shew-bread, which is called the sanctuary. 3. And after the second vail, the tabernacle which is called the holiest of all.

2, 3. This made Tabernacle had two parts: In the first, called the Sanctuary, was the Candlestick, &c. And within the second Vail was the Holiest of all.

Note. Some out of Philo say, that the Tabernacle (and the Temple after) was made as an Image, or Figure of the World, and therefore called Worldly: the outward part figuring the lower World, in which was the Candlestick with six Branches; and one in the midst, signifying the Planets; and twelve Loaves on the Table, signifying the Fruits of the Earth: The inmost signifying the highest Heavens. But 'tis presumptuous to trust our Wit too far in feigning Divine Significations: And 'tis groundless hence to gather, that it was called a Worldly Sanctuary.

4. 5. Which had the golden center, and the ark of the covenant overlaid inward about with gold, wherein was the golden pot that had manna, and Aaron's rod that budded, and the tables of the covenant; And over it the cherubims of glory shadowing the mercy-seat; of which we cannot now speak particularly.

4. 5. In it was the Golden Censer, for Incense; and when the Priest went in; and the Ark overlaid with Gold, in which, or near it, was the Pot of Manna, and Aaron's Rod, and in it the Table of the Commandments of the Covenant; and over it, the Images of Angelical Cherubims, shewing God's Glory, when it appeared to men; which also shadowed the Covering, or Mercy-Seat.

6. Now when these things were thus ordained, the priests went always into the first tabernacle, accomplishing the service of God. 7. But into the second went the high priest alone once every year, not without blood, which he offered for himself, and for the errors of the people.

6, 7. Into the first part of this Tabernacle, the Priests went to perform the ordinary Service: But into the second went only the High Priest once a Year, but not without the Blood of Calves and Goats, which he offered for such sins of himself and the people, as were expiable.

8. The holy Ghost this signifying, that the way into the holiest of all, was not yet made manifest, while as the first tabernacle was yet standing:

8. By this the Holy Ghost signified, that under that Law, or Tabernacle-state, the Access of Sinners to God, for assured Acceptance here, and Glory hereafter, was not yet clearly, fully, and with satisfying Assurance revealed, nor by that Law, as such, conferred: for it was referred to the coming of the Messiah: (Though the Promise, or Law of Grace, saved men then.)

9. Which was a figure for the time then present, in which were offered both gifts and sacrifices, that could not make him that did the service perfect, as pertaining to the conscience.

9. Which figuratively signified the time then (or now) present, when the Gifts and Sacrifices were offered, which could not suffice to perfect the Acceptance of the Offender,
Ch. 9. The New Testament

Hebrews.

ferer with God, or to cleanse him from the
Confidence and Guilt of Sin.

2. Which ffood only in meats
and drinks, and divers washings,
and carnal ordinances imposed on
them until the time of reformation.

10. I speak now of the Laws of Nature,
of Godliness, Charity, Justice and So-
briciety, which are common to the Jews
with us, and other People, but of the
positive Institutions of bodily Service to
God, proper to Moses’s Law. And these
Laws, in such Outwards as the Body per-
formed, called Rights and Ceremonies,
Meats, Drinks, Washings, which God in-
deed imposed on them, as a material part
of their Obedience; but it was as suited
to their Carnality and Minorly, till the
Mjshah’s Reformation set up a better Law
and Worship.

11. But Christ being come an
high priest of good things to
come, by a greater and more per-
fect tabernacle, not made with
hands, that is to say, not of this
building:

11. But Christ is come a High Priest of
the Everlasting, promised in the Gospel,
even to procure us Grace and Glory, offi-
ciating in a greater and more perfect Ta-
bernacle, even his Body, now glorified in
Heaven (having done his preparatory work
on Earth) which was not built as Ta-
bernacles are on Earth.

12. Neither by the blood of
goats and calves: but by his own
blood he entered in once into the
holy place, having obtained etern-
al redemption for us.

12. And not as the Levitical Priests, by
the Blood of Goats and Calves, offered for
Expiation; but by obedient and voluntary
offering his own Blood a Sacrifice for the
sins of the World, he obtained his en-
trance into the state of Glorious Exaltation,
there to intercede for us, and rule us, hav-
ing here, by his Merit and Sacrifice, pur-
chased Eternal Redemption for us, which
thence he will bestow.

13. For if the blood of bulls,
and of goats, and the ashes of an
heifer sprinkling the unclean, san-
difichieth to the purifying of the
flesh.

13. If these be by Divine Inuition
effectual against corporal legal Uncleaness,
by a Ceremonial Sanctification, the Figure
of the Timinal.

14. How much more shall the
blood of Christ, who through the
eternal Spirit, offered himself with-
out spot to God, purge your con-
sciences from dead works to serve
the living God?

14. Most certainly then shall the Blood
of Christ, who by the Eternal Spirit offered
himself, Soul and Body, a Spotless Sacrifice
to God the Sovereign righteous Judge, to
cleanse Soul and Confidence from the Pow-
er and Guilt of dead Works (which signify
a Death in Sin, and tend to Death for fin,
) to serve the Living God, who will accept
us to an everlasting Life.

Note: By the Eternal Spirit, by which
Christ offered himself, some Expositors un-
derstand Christ’s Immortal Soul voluntarily
resigning his Life. 2. Others understand
the Holy Ghost, the Third Person in the
Trinity, by whom Christ is said to be con-
ceived, and to do his Miracles. 3. Others
understand his own Divine Nature, as the
Second Person. It’s hard to be sure what
is meant; but it is of no great moment,
seeing it is certain that indeed he did it by
all these three. There is a fourth Opinion
of some that understand it of a prime supe-
roangelical Nature of Christ, which they
think, by Eternal Emanation, cometh from
the Deity united to it, which they make a
middle Third Nature in Christ; and in
which they suppose it is that, as a Creature,
he is advanced above all Angels; be-
cause they take Angels and Men to be
species distinct; and that if Humane Nature
must be set above Angels, in it self, it must
thereby change his species, and be no more
humane. But to be wise to Sobriety in
such Mysteries is safe, and not to pro-

15. And for this cause he is the
mediator of the new testament,
that by means of death, for the
redemption of the transgressions
that were under the first testament,
they which are called might re-

Digitized by Google
receive the promise of eternal inheritance.

15. And for this cause Christ became Mediator between God and Man, to procure, seal, and promulgate the New Covenant, or Law of Grace, that his Death doing that which no other Sacrifice could do in expiation of the Jews sins, committed under the Mosaical Covenant, (as well as of the rest of the World,) they which are by his Call made found Believers, might by promise be secured of the Eternal Inheritance, and possessed of it in due time.

16. For where a testament is, there must also of necessity be the death of the testator. 17. For a testament is of force after men are dead: otherwise it is of no strength at all whilst the testator liveth.

16. 17. And Christ being by his Spon- sion to be a Sacrifice, his Donation doth pre-suppose his Purchase; and thence his Covenant hath also the nature of a Testa- ment, which supposeth the Death of the Testator, and is not of Efficacy till then, to give full right to what he bequeathed.

Note, That the eminent Evangelical Kingdom of the Mediator, in its last full Edition, called the Kingdom of Christ, and of Heaven, distinct from the obscure state of Promise before Christ’s Incarnation, began at Christ’s Resurrection, Ascension, and sending of the eminent Gift of the Holy Ghost, and was but as an Embryo before.

18. Whereupon, neither the first testament was dedicated without blood.

18. Therefore the first as figurative of the second, was consecrated and sealed in Blood.

19. For when Moses had spoken every precept to all the people, according to the law, he took the blood of calves and of goats, with water and scarlet-wool, and hyssop, and sprinkled both the Book and all the people, 20. Say- ing, This is the blood of the Testament which God hath enjoined unto you. 21. Moreover, he sprinkled likewise with blood both the

tabernacle, and all the vessels of the Minisfry. 22. And almost all things are by the law purged with blood: and without shedding of blood is no remission.

19. 20. 21. 22. Note, 1. God purposely instituted all these bloody Purifications to prepare Christ. 2. The Curtum of Sac- rificing from the fall, must arise from Divine Institution, and not by reason of natural Invention, as some now affirm: And no doubt but it is propagated among all Idolaters through the World: 1. By Tradition from Adam; 2. Corrupted by Devils, who would be worshipped as God, and that to end promote the imitation of God; 3. The Papists sprinkling of Holy Water, is such another corrupt Imitation, setting up their Ceremony instead of God’s, which Christ abolished.

23. It was therefore necessary that the patterns of things in the heavens should be purified with these, but the heavenly things themselves with better sacrifices than these.

23. These Ceremonies being ordained to prepare and notice things that are in Hea- ven, and belong to Heaven, it was meet that such Blood should be the purifying Ceremo- ny: But the heavenly things themselves must be purchased, and the Souls fitted for it purified, and the Covenant consecrated by a more precious Sacrifice, even the Blood of the Lamb of God, which taketh away the sins of the World.

24. For Christ is not entred into the holy places made with hands, which are the figures of the true, but into heaven it itself; now to appear in the presence of God for us.

24. For it was not to officiate in a Ta- barnacle made by Man, that Christ became our High Priest, but (though his Sacrifice was offered on Earth) it was to officiate by continued Intercession for us in the Hea- vens, in the Presence of God’s Glory, of which the other was but a Type.

25. Nor yet that he should offer himself often, as the high priest entred into the holy place, every year with blood of others.

26.
For then must he often have suffered since the foundation of the world: but now once in the end of the world, hath he appeared to put away sin by the sacrifice of himself.

26. Note 1. Christ's once offering was sufficient: it may oft be commemorated, but only once done. 2. It is unspeakable joy to Believers, that Christ is for us, as our High Priest, entered into Heaven. For he hath promised that we shall be with him were he is. And where else now shall we desire to be? 3. The Days of Christ here, were the declining latter part of the World, called the End; as fifty or sixty years old is the end, that is, the latter part of Man's Life. How near then is it now to an end, 1684 after?

27, 28. And as it is appointed unto men once to die, but after this the judgment: So Christ was once offered to bear the sins of many, and unto them that look for him shall he appear the second time, without sin, unto salvation.

27, 28. And as it is with the common state of Man on Earth, who must all once die, and then be doomed to their endless state; so Christ was once to die as a Sacrifice for the sins of many; and to them that wait for him in the prepared state of Faith, Hope, Obedience and Patience, he shall appear again, but not any more to bear the punishment of their sins, but to justify them publickly, and take them to his Glory.

CHAP. X.

For the law having a shadow of good things to come, and not the very image of the things, can never with those sacrifices which they offered year by year continually, make the comers thereunto perfect.

1. For the Law having but in it's Ceremonies a shadow of the great Heavenly Blessings of the Gospel; and not the clear Image (or Draught or Map) of the things themselves, doth shew by the frequent yearly iteration of those Sacrifices, that it doth not perfect the Sacrificers.

2. For then would they not have ceased to be offered, because the worshippers once purged, should have had no more confidence of sins.

2. For then they would have ceased to be offered, because the Worshippers once pardoned and cleansed, should have no more Confidence of Guilt, or remaining Fruity.

3. But in those sacrifices there is a remembrance again made of sins every year. 4. For it is not possible that the blood of bulls and of goats, should take away sins.

3, 4. Note 1. This Text doth not deny, that the faithful Jews were then forgiven, nor that the Law conduced to it, as used in subordination to the antecedent Promise and Law of Grace: But without this Promise, the Law could not do it. 2. Nor doth this infer, that we may not mention, lament and beg pardon for our old sins, while we live on Earth: Not that renewed sins have no need of a renewed Pardon; but no need of a new Sacrifice.

5. Wherefore when he cometh into the World, he faith, Sacrifice and offering thou wouldest not, but a body hast thou prepared me: 6. In burnt-offerings, and sacrifices for sin thou hast had no pleasure: 7. Then said I, Lo, I come (in the volume of the book it is written of me) to do thy will, O God. 8. Above, when he said, Sacrifice, and offering, and burnt-offerings, and offering for sin thou wouldest not, neither hadst pleasure therein, which are offered by the law: 9. Then said he, Lo, I come to do thy will, (O God) He taketh away the second, that he may estabish the second.

5, 6, 7, 8, 9. David, as a Prophet, foopelling Christ, faith, &c. taking down Sacrifices as insufficient, and introducing Christ's obedient Sacrifice of himself.
10. By the which will we are sanctified through the offering of the body of Jesus Christ once for all.

10. And by this Decree of God, giving us a Saviour to be a Sacrifice for our sins, we are (as far as belongeth to the Expiating Sacrifice) made a holy People unto God, the sins of the faithful, by this price being pardoned, and Reconciliation made.

11. And every priest standeth daily ministring and offering of tentimes the same sacrifices, which can never take away sins.

11. And the Priests must be still Sacrificing the same things, never finishing the Expiation.

12. But this man after he had offered one sacrifice for sins for ever, sat down on the right hand of God: 13. From henceforth expecting till his enemies he made his footstool.

12, 13. But Christ having offered but one Sacrifice for sins, as sufficient, for ever, sat down in the possession of Glory, and universal Dominion in the Heavens, on the Right Hand of God, where he will reign, till he hath subdued all his Enemies, even all that opposeth the perfection of his Work of the Salvation and Glory of his Church.

14. For by one offering he hath perfected for ever them that are sanctified.

14. For all the faithful and sanctified are by that one Offering, as a sufficient Expiating Sacrifice, freed from all Guilt and Sin now initially, and shall be perfectly without any other Expiating Sacrifice, for ever.

15, 16, 17. Whereof the holy Ghost also is a witness to us: for after that he had said before, This is the covenant that I will make with them after those days, faith the Lord, I will put my laws into their hearts, and in their minds will I write them: And their sins and iniquities will I remember no more. 18. Now, where remiifi-
Ch. 10. New Covenant Benefits Hebrews. and Duties. Ch. 10.

promised, having our Hearts cleansed by Christ's Blood (which the Sprinkling figured under the Law) from the conscience of Guilt, and the love and power of Sin, and our bodily practice purified from Uncleanness, (tyrannized by the Washings under the Law, and sedulously signified by our Baptism.)

23. Let us hold fast the profession of our faith without wavering: (for he is faithful that promised.)

23. Let us against all subtle, deceitful Adversaries, and against all cruel Persecutors, under all Trials and Sufferings, hold fast both our Hope and Faith, and the open Profession of it: For he is faithful who hath promised us the endless Felicity, which will pay for all, and exceed all our expectations.

24. And let us consider one another, to provoke unto love, and to good works:

24. Let none of us live meekly to our selves, but let our selves with studious diligence to promote the Sanctity and Salvation of each other, which is not done by vain janglings and faction, but by provoking one another to love, and to good Works, and each to be a common blessing in his place, by profiting others.

25. Not forlaying the assembling of our selves together, as the manner of some is: but excluding one another; and so much the more, as ye see the day approaching.

25. Not forlaying either the more full Church-Assemblies, or any Christian Converse and Communion, by which ye may excite and edifie one another; as some do out of cowardly fear of suffering, and some through self-love, and want of brotherly love, and through coldness in Religion. And the more resolved should ye be in this, because the time of suffering is short, and the day of your deliverance draws on, and cannot be far off.

Note: Qu. 1. What if the Rules forbid Church-Assemblies, or at least inferiority Converse? Ans. So they did for three hundred years, when yet Christians lived by Command from Christ. And his Enemies (as is said, hereofore,) did do more good; but are not authorized to do more mischief, and forbid good, than Christians. But yet, though we may not fearfully forbear the Duties of Piety and Charity, (no more than Daniel did praying, or the old Christians preaching and meeting,) when we can perform them, 1. We may forbear this or that particular meeting or action, when it would do more hurt than good; 2. And when imprisonment or banishment make it impossible, it can be no Dury.

Qu. 3. Who be they that must exclude one another? Ans. Not every one that hath a proud self-conceit, or matterly talkative Disease, may needlessly gather Assemblies to ease his Stomach. On pretence of Dury:

But the truly qualified and called Persons must exclude in Church-Assemblies, by Office, and occasionally such other well qualified men as he shall there call forth or allow: And in inferior occasional Converses or Meetings, such qualified Persons as have best ability and opportunities to do good: Even as overseers by Office relieve the Poor, but every man that can, must do it in Charity. And as the Physician by calling must heal the sick and wounded; but any in charity may offer such help as others need, and he is able, not usurping the Function of the Physician.

26. For if we sin wilfully after that we have received the knowledge of the truth, there remaineth no more sacrifice for sins,

27. But a certain fearful looking for of judgment, and fiery indignation, which shall devour the adversaries.

26, 27. And the dreadful case of Apostates must deter you: For if you wilfully forsake Christ, and Christiinity, after you have received the knowledge of the truth of it, by the Spirit, and all those miraculous Evidences by which hath prevailed hitherto, you must never look for another Saviour, nor that Christ should come again to be sacrificed for you: Reject him now, and nothing remaineth but a dreadful expectation of his Vindictive Judgment, when his Enemies that refused his Reign, shall be brought forth to destruction, Luke 19.

Note: Of this see before on Chap. 6. what this sin is.

28. He that despised Moses law, died without mercy, under two,

§ 1
or three witnesses. 29. Of how much forer punishment, suppose ye, shall he be thought worthy, who hath trodden under foot the Son of God, and hath counted the blood of the covenant whereby he was sanctified, an unholy thing, and hath done despite unto the Spirit of grace?

28, 29. Capital, presumptuous sins, and contempt, were punished by death by Moses law. And as Christ bringeth greater mercy, the contempt of him deserved far greater punishment, when men by renouncing Christianity, treat under foot the Son of God, by calling him a crucified Deceiver, and count the Blood of the Covenant (which was shed to sanctify them, and reconcile them to God,) which they professed to believe, were joined with the Saints, to be the blood of a justly crucified Malefactor, and a profane thing, and thus do despise also to the Spirit of Grace, which is Christ's Witness on Earth, and by the Testimony of whole miraculour and sanctifying Gifts, they once professed to believe in Christ, and receive his Doctrine; and now they will reproach these Gifts and Testimonies of the Spirit, as Delusions, and not of the Spirit of God.

Note, The Fallens, of their Doctrine, who say, that the Gospel is a bare absolute Promise, and no Law, and hath no proper threatening of Penalty.

30. For we know him that hath said, Vengeance belongeth unto me, I will requite, faith the Lord: and again, The Lord shall judge his people. 31. It is a fearful thing to fall into the hands of the living God.

30, 31. Note: Grace puts us not out of fear of Danger. 2. None so dreadful as a Vindictive God. And, 3. Apostates, who reject Christ and his Salvation, fall into the hands of God's terrible Justice.

32. But call to remembrance the former days, in which after ye were illuminated, ye endured a great fight of affictions:

33. Partly whilst ye were made a gazing-flock, both by reproach-
Ch. 10. Perseverance and Patience. Hebrews. The Nature of Faith, Ch. 11

your Constancy, you might receive the promised Reward.

37. For yet a little while, and he that shall come, will come, and will not tarry.

37. For (though to unbelief and impatience it seem long) it is but a very little time, till Christ will come to end your fears and sufferings, and fulfill your hopes: And he will not delay or tarry at all, beyond the due approaching time.

38. Now the just shall live by faith: but if any man draw back, my soul shall have no pleasure in him.

38. It is by the firm belief of the Promise of Glory (purchased by Christ) that the just do overcome Temptations, hold on in Duty and comfortable hope, and are finally saved: But if any man forsake this Faith, and its Profession, either through fraud, flattery, or fear of men, God will forsake him, and have no pleasure in him.

Note; Dr. Hammond applieth it to [for forging Publick Worship] as the Gnosticks did; which indeed backsliders u'e to do when such assembling is perfecuted: And his note should warn them to take heed of such forging Publick Worship, who live where Men are tolerated to be Atheists, and not to worship God at all, but not to be Christians, and to assemble for God's Worship, unless they will be stigmatized with the profession or practice of some imposed wickedness; though this Atheism and Persecution pretend Christian Order.

39. But we are not of them who draw back unto perdition; but of them that believe, to the saving of the soul.

39. But I hope you will approve your selves faithful Christians, and not of the looone united faith, who by Sophistry or Persecution are drawn to revile, and turn back to their own destruction; but of them who believe with sincerity, firmness and constancy, to the saving of their Souls.

CHAP. XI.

1. Now faith is the substance of things hoped for, the evidence of things not seen.

1. And seeing it is by Faith that you must obtain all this Victory, and Persevereance and Salvation, it greatly concerneth you to understand rightly what that Faith is by which the just must live, and how it differeth from the living by sight and sense on worldly things, which is the case and life of the Children of Perdition. This Faith is the subsistence, or firm and confident expectation from God of the things which we believing hope for, and which maketh them by the security of a faithful Promise, to be effectual Motives to us, as if they were even present: And it is the convincing evidence, or demonstration in the mind, of the unseen things which God revealeth, by which they prevail with us against all the visible Vanities of this world. This realizing things future and unseen at certain by God's Promise, and overcoming Temptations from things seen and present, is our saving Faith.

2. For by it the elders obtained a good report.

2. It was by this effectual Belief and Trust in God's Promise for things unseen, preferred before things seen and present, that the Ancients are said to be approved of God.

3. Through faith we understand that the worlds were framed by the word of God, so that things which are seen were not made of things which do appear.

3. How can we know but by believing God's Revelation, that Heaven and Earth were created and formed by the Word of God, so that all this great and well ordered Frame which is seen, was made not of things which appear.

Note; This latter part is diversly expounded. 1. Some, as Calvin, expound it thus [The things that are seen were made to be as a Glass or Image of the things that are unseen.] That they are so, is true; but few receive this as the sense of these words.

2. Others expound it as equal to [the seen Worlds were made not of things seen, therefore of nothing, or no preexistent matter.] This most Protestants receive.

3. Others take framing or compounding to prepostpose existent matter to be composed, and say, that was the Chaos in which the Form was unseen.

4. Others, following the Vulgar Latin: Erasimus, &c. translate it, [the things, which
Examples.

which are seen, were made of things unseen: And on this Text and Supposition some build a frame of Philosophy, viz. that all things are made or flow from God; so as that the nearest effects are the most pure and noble, and the remotest most gross, and made by transmutation and condensation, and so that Earth is but incalculable Humor, and Humor (or Water) incalculable Air, and Air incalculable Fire, and Fire incalculable Vegetative Spirit, and that incalculable intellectual Spirit: And so that all visible Bodies are made of invisible Spirit debased, which again may be refined to invisibility. But these are the frothy dreaming Prefumptions of unhumbled Wits; and wise Men will rest in the maturer of God's Revelations.

4. By faith Abel offered unto God a more excellent sacrifice than Cain, by which he obtained witness, that he was righteous, God testifying of his gifts: and by it he being dead, yet speaketh.

4. By this Faith it was that Abel offered to God a more excellent, and therefore more acceptable Sacrifice than Cain: By which he obtained God's Judgment and Record, that he was righteous (and so far was justified by it in God's account) God by some notable Sign shewing, that when he rejected Cain's Offering, he accepted Abel's; And by this Sacrifice, and God's Attestation, though his malignant Brother murdered him, his Acceptance, recorded by God in Scripture, yet speaketh his Honour, and our Imitation.

Note 1. That Abel's Faith producing his Offering, was not any other, but that for which God judged him righteous.

2. That the brief History maketh it not fully clear, wherein the difference of their Offerings lay, save that 1. Abel's being of the Firstlings of Living Creatures, was in its nature more excellent than Cain's of Vegetables. 2. And the nobler Effect shewed a nobler Cause, or Faith.

But seeing, 1. That it's most probable that the Duty of Sacrificing came from no Original, but Adam's Tradition of God's Command. 2. And that the use of it under Moses's Law, expoundeth it after, we may conceive, 1. That it was to signifie that Man was to believe that Death was deserved by Man's sin: 2. That by Death the Mediator was to redeem him: 3. And that as the Beast was offered to God, they offered their own lives to him, in hope of the Immortality of the Soul, and a better Life, which Death was the way to. And in this Faith Abel excelled Cain.

5. By faith Enoch was translated, that he should not see death, and was not found, because God had translated him: for before his translation he had this testimony, that he pleased God.

5. It was by trusting God for a better, unseen Life, that Enoch was made fit for, and obtained to be translated by God without dying, and so was no more seen on Earth: For before it is recorded of him, that he pleased God, who thus rewarded him.

Note 1. That though Enoch died not by any Corruption of his Body, no doubt but it had such change at its entrance into Heaven, as the Bodies of the living Saints shall have at Christ's Second Coming (which proveeth a transmutation of Elements by Scripture Testimony) and as Christ's own Body had, which made it suitable to the Heavenly Region: For Flesh and Blood cannot enter into the Kingdom of God. It is made a spiritual, incorruptible Body, as ours shall be.

2. It is like that this intimated, how God would have used Man, if he had not by sin contracste the Guilt of threatened Death.

3. But it's certain, that it is recorded to tell us whether it is that Faith and Holiness do tend, and that there is a better Life.

6. But without faith it is impossible to please him: for he that cometh to God must believe that he is, and that he is a rewarder of them that diligently seek him.

6. Those that please God must needs be happy; for that is happiness itself. But it is impossible to have a Heart or Life that pleaseth God, without a trusting belief of these two Articles; 1. That God is both the very and only God, infinite in all Perfection; 2. And that he is, as our Ruler and Benefactor, the full Rewarder of all them, that with sincere Diligence seek to please him, in the obedience of his Governing Will, or his Law, revealed to them.

Note;

Note: He that thinks there is no God, can neither love, trust, or obey him: And he that thinks he is impotent, ignorant, or bad, or any way imperfect, thinks that he is not God, and giveth him but the name of God, while he denieth and blasphemeth him. And he that thinketh that he is not Man's Ruler morally by Law, but only physically by Motion, like lifeless Engines, will never obey his Laws, and therefore will live after his Lufts, and be far worse than savage Brutes, as abusing a nobler Nature. And he that thinks that God will let Men be losers by their most costly and diligent Obedience, takes him to be none of our Governor, or to be unjust, and so not to be God indeed: Nay, if he believe not that his Holiness and Goodness will be pleased with, and abundantly reward such sincere Diligence. And he that believeth not a Life of great Reward after this, cannot well believe that God is such a Rewarder of them that diligently seek him, seeing what they suffer here.

Qu. But are these two Articles enough to Salvation?

Ans. He that sincerely and truely believe and practise these, shall not perish; but what more is necessary, God will make known to him: For of a truth (whoever deny it) God is no Respecter of Persons but in every Nation he that feared God, and worketh Righteousness, is accepted of him. And if a Soul that truly loveth God, and is accepted of him, should be in Hell, Heaven it self should be in Hell.

7. By faith Noah being warned of God of things not seen as yet, moved with fear, prepared an ark to the saving of his house, by the which he condemned the world, and became heir of the Righteousness which is by faith.

7. Note 1. God’s Revelation was Noah’s Warning. 2. The Flood neither seen, nor likely in itself was the thing revealed and believed, with the way to escape. 3. True Belief will be effectual in an obedient use of God’s appointed means of Salvation. 4. The belief of God’s Threatenings is a part of Saving Faith. 5. Faithful Obedience to God, condemmeth the unbelieving, rebellious World. 6. All these acts of Faith go to make us Heirs of the Righteousness of Faith, that is, to be saved, as those that God accounteth acceptably righteous. 7. To be moved with the promised Glory, and threatened Misery that is unseen, is the Life of Faith.

8. By faith Abraham when he was called to go out into a place which he should after receive for an inheritance, obeyed, and he went out, not knowing whither he went.

8. Why did Abraham go, when God called him into an unknown Land, but that he practically trusted and believed God, that he would give it his Seed for an Inheritance?

9. By faith he sojourned in the land of promise, as in a strange country, dwelling in tabernacles with Isaac, and Jacob, the heirs with him of the same promise. 10. For he looked for a city which hath foundations, whose builder and maker is God.

9, 10. And why did he (and Isaac and Jacob) sojourn there in Tents as Strangers? but because he believed that God would give his Pottery Cities there (such as Jerusalem) strong and walled, instead of Tents, and would give him in the mean time a place in the Heavenly Jerusalem, for his Faith and Obedience to God.

11. Through faith also Sarah her self received strength to conceive seed, and was delivered of a child when she was past age, because she judged him faithful who had promised.

11. And Sarah past Age, brought forth Isaac, because the trusted God’s Promise, against natural probability.

12. Therefore sprang there even of one, and him as good as dead, so many as the stars of the sky in multitude, and as the sand which is by the sea-shore, innumerable.

12. Thus the numerous Seed of Isaac sprang from one, dead to generating, by believing God.

13. These all died in faith, not having received the promises, but

having seen them afar off, and were persuaded of them, and embraced them, and concluded that they were strangers and pilgrims on the earth.

13. Both Abraham and his posterity long lived as strangers, before the promisement of God was given to their successions, which they received not themselves. And Abraham wasordeawed Carnit's Day, and rejoiced, and his believing seed, died in faith, which saw him afar off, and the heavenly glory promised by him, and yet lived not to see the promised Messiah, but concluded that they were pilgrims on earth, though they believed and embraced the promises.

14. For they that say such things, declare plainly that they seek a country.

15. And as they trusted themselves for strangers in Canaan, believing that they were not yet at home, and were but seekers of a country promised; so note that were True Believers, confessing that they were but strangers and pilgrims on earth, declare that it was a better place than earth that they fought and hoped for.

16. And trul, if they had been mindful of that country, from whence they came out, they might have had opportunity to have returned.

17. And it was not Chaldea, whence they came, which they fought for, they might have returned to that.

18. But now they desire a better country, that is, an heavenly: wherefore God is not ashamed to be called their God: for he hath prepared for them a city.

19. But it was a better Country which they desired; and though the carnal Seed looked but to Canaan, the True Believers took Jerusalem but as a Type of the Jerusalem above, and chiefly desired an Heavenly Country; and it was specially in relation to Heaven, that God condescended to be called The God of Abraham, Isaac, and Jacob, and the God of Israel; for it's there that he will gloriously own and govern them.

Note 1. The force of Christ's Argument against the Sadducees, from God's relation to Abraham, &c. is here expanded.

2. They err, that think Believers of old expected not a Heavenly Felicity: Though Mosaic's Law, as it was Political, to be the Rule of Magistrats' judgment, reached not to high, yet as subordinate to the Promise or Covenant of Grace, it did.

17. By faith Abraham, when he was tried, offered up Isaac: and he that had received the promises, offered up his only begotten son. 18. Of whom it was said, That in Isaac shall thy seed be called.

19. It was by believing and fulfilling the Promise of God concerning his Seed in Isaac, that Abraham, when God thereby tried him, offered up even that Son to Death, to whom the Promise of Multiplication was made, and the Nation to be blest in his Seed.

20. Accounting that God was able to raise him up, even from the dead: from whence also received him in a figure.

21. For he believed that God's Promise must be fulfilled, and could not be broken for want of Power, no more than for want of Wisdom or Goodness; and that he would rather raise him from the dead, than break his word: And indeed he received him again, as it had been from the dead (in which he prefigured Christ's Resurrection and ours.)

Note. The great difficulty of Abraham's case was, how he was bound to take that to be God's Voice, which bid him murder the innocent, and to break God's Law of Nature: Must not we try the Spirit by the standing Law of God in nature? And 1. God is the absolute Lord of all Lives, and can do no man wrong; And Abraham knew that he could make both Isaac and himself amends; yea, that he could and would presently raise him to life again. 2. And by full evidence and experimental proof, he knew that it was God that spake to him: But we are supposed to have more cause of doubting where we must try the Spirit. We must believe no pretended Revelation against certain foreknown Truth; nor yet believe God, upon a proud pretense that we know that to be Truth, which indeed we know not.
20. By faith Isaac blessed Jacob and Esau concerning things to come.
21. By faith Jacob, when he was a dying, blessed both the sons of Joseph, and worshipped, leaning upon the top of his staff.
22. By faith Joseph, when he died, made mention of the departure of the children of Israel, and gave commandment concerning his bones.
23. By faith Moses, when he was born, was hid three months of his parents, because they saw he was a proper child, and they were not afraid of the king's commandment.
24. By faith Moses, when he was come to years, refused to be called the son of Pharaoh's daughter.
25. By faith Moses, when he was ten years old, spoke unto Pharaoh, and hardened Pharaoh's heart, even as the Lord had said.
26. By faith they passed through the red sea, as by dry land: which the Egyptians sought, but could not reach.
the Egyptians asaying to do, were drowned.

34. How durst they have ventured into, and through the Red Sea, but that they believed God, that he would there deliver them by that Miracle? when the Egyptians were drowned, who went not in by Faith, but by Presumption.

Note: It is a great Controversie among Expositors, whether the Israelites passed quite through the Sea to the other side, or rather went in, and came out, as in a semicircular course on the same side; because their Journeys are after said to be on the same side where they entred, and so they think it was but to draw in the Egyptians.

35. By faith the walls of Jericho fell down, after they were compassed about seven days.

36. And others had trial of cruel mockings, and scourging, yea moreover, of bonds and imprisonment. 37. They were fomented, they were fawned upon, were tempted, were slain with the sword; they wandered about in sheep skins, and goat skins, being destitute, afflicted, tormented.

38. Of whom the world was not worthy: they wandered in deserts, and in mountains, and indens, and caves of the earth.

39. All these were accounted as bad men, unworthy to live, as others, peaceably in the world. But were they such indeed? No; but such, of whom the World was not worthy. And many of them
Ch. 11, 12.

them retired from the Converse of the World, into Dens, Caves and Mountains.

Note: Oh, the difference between God's Judgment of a Saint, and Man's! The World is not worthy of those scorned, persecuted Saints, whom their Persecutors call Rogues, unworthy to live. They are not worthy of their Company, Example, Counsel, or other benefits: For they know not what a Saint is, nor the worth of a Saint, nor how to use him; yea, they hate him, and drive such away, as they do the Offers of Christ and Grace.

39. And these all, having obtained a good report through faith, received not the promise: 40. God having provided some better thing for us, that they without us should not be made perfect.

39, 40. And all these true Believers were justified by God's own Testimony, left on Record to their praise. But still it was things unseen and future which they believed, and for which they suffered all this Martyrdom and pain: And though God gave them their Reward in Heaven, they lived not to see the Incarnate Saviour, and that Kingdom of the Messiah, the Catholick Church advanced by the pourings out of the Spirit of Christ; which were the promised Blessings, which God had told them, he would give in the fullness of time. For God had provided those greater Blessings, of the Kingdom of Christ in its more perfect state, and the fulness of that Spirit, for this Age of the World in which we live, and would not let them, in those former Ages before our time, partake of this more perfect Church-state: Even as we now believe Christ's Glorious Coming, and wait, and suffer Persecution in Hope; and yet must not live on Earth to see it, as the last Age will do, but must dye first, and be raised to enjoy that sight.

C H A P. XII.

1. Whence seeing we also are compassed about with so great a cloud of witnesses, let us lay aside every weight, and the sin which doth so easily beset us, and let us run with patience the race that is set before us.

1. Seeing then we that are now called out to Tryal, have before us the Instances of all the Faithful that have been before us, who have conquered all the impediments of their Salvation, by the effectual Belief of God's Promise of unseen things, let us quit our selves like men, and, as Runners in a Race, let us be so far from turning to the World, as to cast off all worldly Incumbrances which would hinder us, and to avoid all sin, in which, without great care, we shall be entangled, and let us run with patience and perseverance the Race, in which, by God and our Covenant, we are engaged; (for it is for our Salvation.)

2. Looking unto Jesus the author and finisher of our faith, who for the joy that was set before him, endured the cross, despising the shame, and is set down at the right hand of the throne of God.

2. Let us fix our Eyes on Jesus, the Author and Leader of our Christian Faith and Course, and the Perfecter of it, who hath by his Doctrines and Example, proposed it to us in that perfect form which he will own and crown; who himself was moved by the future proposed Joy, which was to be the Reward of all his Mediatorial Works; for which he endured the pains of his Cross and Sufferings, and despised the Shame and Scorn that attended it, in comparison of the desired End, which he hath now attained; and is set down in Triumph and Glory, next the Throne of God.

3. For consider him that endured such contradiction of sinners against himself, lest ye be wearied, and faint in your minds.

3. If you will well study Christ, and consider how, and why he endured such Opposition and Contradiction of wicked men, who by sin, slyly accused him of sin, it will greatly strengthen you against weary Tiredness, or fainting Cowardice.

4. Ye have not yet resisted unto blood, striving against sin.

4. It is but little which you have yet been put to. If you will be crowned, you must be prepared to lay down your lives, rather than wilfully to sin.

5. And
5. And ye have forgotten the exhortation, which speaketh unto you as unto children, My son, despise not thou the chastening of the Lord, nor faint when thou art rebuked of him.

6. Have ye forgotten the Lord's gentle words, as of a Father to his Children: My Son, &c. Prov. 3. 11.

7. For whom the Lord loveth, he chasteneth, and scourgeth every son whom he receiveth. 8. If ye endure chastening, God deal eth with you as with sons: for what son is he whom the Father chasteneth not? 9. But if ye be without chastisement, whereof all are partakers, then are ye bastards, and not sons.

6, 7, 8. Note. 1. Chastisement is one sort of punishment, distinguished from destructive punishment, in that it is not only for a warning to others, but also for the amendment of the Offender. No Man correcteth another; but for a fault, and that maketh it punishment. 2. It is not any derogation from the perfection of Christ's Satisfaction, that we are punished, for he never intended to make us lawless, or that our sins should not be punished at all: His Law of Grace hath penalties annexed. A Father hath fatherly justice and punishment for his Children; and Christ is not a King, without such Justice. 3. Even the Sufferings of Martyrs are of a mixt nature, partly for sin, even Adam's and their own, (God not on Earth taking off all the first curse, but making a Medicine of it for good) and partly for the tryal and reward of Faith. 4. Pardon of sin is not perfect in this life; else, no chastising penalty would remain.

9. Furthermore, we have had fathers of our flesh, which corrected us, and we gave them reverence: shall we not much rather be in subjection unto the Father of Spirits, and live?

9. We reverently submitted to the Correction of our Parents (whole Authority was theirs, and they were liable to do it amiss:) And shall we not much more submit to God, who is the Infinite Spirit, and Father of Spirits, as well as of our flesh (and is of infallible Wisdom, and never doth amiss) and will fit our Spirits by suffering, for a better Life.

10. For they verily for a few days chastened us after their own pleasure, but he for our profit, that we might be partakers of his holiness.

10. For they chastened us as well as being to us, as they thought good, though sometimes in caulescent anger, but God doth all in Wisdom and Mercy, for our good, to make us more holy, which is to be more happy, as liker to himself.

11. Now no chastening for the present seemeth to be joyous, but grievous: nevertheless, afterward it yieldeth the peaceable fruit of righteousness unto them which are exercised thereby.

11. Indeed, Suffering, as such, is grievous, as a hurt to Nature (and a Fruit of Sin to be chastised.) It is not to be expected that Pain should be pleasant; but it is the Fruit of it which is good, which is Peaceable Righteousness, making us more Righteous and Holy, which is Peace in the Soul, as Health is to the Body. This is the Fruit, when we have been tried and exercised by it.

12. Wherefore lift up the hands which hang down, and the feeble knees: 13. And make straight paths for your feet, left that which is lame be turned out of the way, but let it rather be healed.

12, 13. Therefore seeing Nature is weak, and young unsettled Christians are apt to discouragement and fear, and fainting, to labour to strengthen and encourage your selves and one another, and avoid tempting Seducers, and keep under the Help in publick and private, which God hath appointed for you; and avoid all Sandals which may turn the Weak out of the way, who already go but lamely in it, but rather labour to heal such weaknesses.

14. Follow peace with all men, and holiness, without which no man shall see the Lord.
14. Let peace with all men, as much as in you lyeth, be (not only your desire, but) your study, care, and diligent pursuit; and incontinence and purity of heart and life, without which, none are capable of the blest sight of God’s pleased Face, either here by Faith, or hereafter in glorious fruition, Matt. 5:8.

15. Looking diligently, left any man fail of the grace of God, left any root of bitterness springing up, trouble you, and thereby many be defiled:

15. Make it your diligent care that none of you fail of found believing, obeying and enjoying that Grace which is offered you by Christ in the Gospel, and you have professed to accept; lest any ill and dangerous Doctrine, or fleshly Lust or Practice spring up among you, and cast you into trouble and danger, and the Churches be defiled by them, while the Weak and Unstedfast are carried away, and catch the infection.

16. Left there be any fornicator, or prophane person, as Esau, who for one morrel of meah sold his birthright.

16. Left Seducers and fleshly Lust draw any to Fornication; or any be to prophane, and set to light by Christ and Grace, and Glory, as to love them all for the base things of the World, and to prefer Wealth and sensual delights before them: Like Esau, that set to light his Birthright, as to sell it for one Dhu of Meah.

Note: What a base price all ungodly men do set on Christ and their own Salvation! What bath the Fornicator, the Drunkard, the Glutton, the Worldling, the Ambitious, Proud, and Oppreßors, for all, but the base portion of a beast?

17. For ye know how that afterward, when he would have inherited the blest, he was rejected: for he found no place of repentance, though he sought it carefully with tears.

17. For the Text tells you, that after, when he would fain have had that Blest of Primogeniture which he sold, and sought it of Isaac with tears, Isaac rejected him; and would not retract what he had said of Jacob.

Note: This intimeth a warning of the danger of the contempt of Grace, left God withdraw the Offers, or leave men to the power of Temptation as deterred. But, 1. It determineth not any thing about the damnation of Esau. 2. Nor that he truly repented of his sin against God (but only of his loss of the privilege of the elder Brother,) and yet could not be forgiven (but that this loss could not be recalled.)

3. Nor that any one that truly repenteth, and is converted, shall not be forgiven: For the contrary is a great part of the Doctrine of the Gospel.

18. For ye are not come into the mount, that might be touched, and burned with fire; nor unto blackness, and darkness, and tempest.

19. And the sound of a Trumpet, and the voice of words, which voice they that heard, interpreted that the word should not be spoken to them any more.

18, 19. For ye are not in the Infant and Wilderness State of Israel, when they must hear from God out of a Mountain on Earth, which was touchable (but must not be touched) and which terrified them with flames of Fire, and Blasphemies, and Darkness, and Tempest, signifying the distance of an reconciled Man from God: where they heard the sound of a Trumpet, and a terrible Voice of words, which fear made them desire that they might hear no more.

20, 21. For they could not endure that which was commanded: and if so much as a beast touch the mountain, it shall be stoned, or thrutht thorow with a dart. And so terrible was the light, that Moses said, I exceedingly fear and quake.

20, 21. This signified, how little they could bear the things commanded. And the distance and dreadfulnes was such, that a Beast must dye if it touched the Mountain. And Moses himself (as we may gather by Consequence and Tradition) did fear and quake.

22. But ye are come unto mount Sion, and unto the City of the living God, the heavenly Jerusalem, and to an innumerable company.
company of angels: 23. To the general assembly, and church of the first-born, which are written in heaven, and to God the judge of all, and to the spirits of just men made perfect: 24. And to Jesus the Mediator of the new covenant, and to the blood of sprinkling, that speaketh better things than that of Abel.

22, 23, 24. But the state of relation to which ye are brought, as Christians, is more spiritual and sublime: You are come in faith, relation, hope and initial participation, to that state of holy worship which Mount Zion typified, and to that blessed Church which is gathering on earth, and consummated in heaven, which Jerusalem typified, and may well be called the Heavenly Jerusalem, the blessed City of immortal ones dwelling with the living God: And to Myriads, or numberless multitudes of Angels, inhabiting those vast and glorious Regions (where you shall see that the number of the glorified Spirits were not few:) And to that advanced state of the Church, in its triumphant, joyful Communion, which answered a General Assembly of the Princes of the Tribes of Israel, who had the honour of Primogeniture; even those who are the enrolled Citizens of Heaven; (here they have Right, and there Possession.) And more than all this, you are come as adopted Sons to God the Judge of all; and to the Spirits of the consummated, or perfected, just Men, with whom, as we are here united by one Spirit and Love into one Body, so there we shall live in the perfection of this Love, and Union, and Communion: And to our Glorified Saviour, the Mediator of the New Covenant; by whom it was purchased, made, sealed and executed; and who, according to the Tenor of it, mediates for us with God, and from God to us: And, as the way hereto, to the real Purification by his Sprinkled Blood, which the Blood of the Passover and Sacrifices typified; and which cryeth not against us, as Abel’s Blood did, for Revenge, but saveth us by satisfying Vindictive Justice. This is the Society and State of the Faithful.

25. See that ye refuse not him that speaketh; for if they escaped not, who refused him that spake

on earth, much more shall not we escape, if we turn away from him that speaketh from heaven.

25. Therefore your Motives, both of Fear and Hope, being so exceeding great, with your greatest care, see that no Temptation draw you to refuse him that is the great Teacher and Author of Salvation, for if they escaped not who rejected Moses, and the Law delivered by him, who was but a man like us on earth, certainly we shall not escape, if we turn away from God, who sent his Son from Heaven, and thence also speaketh to us by his Spirit.

26. Whole voice then shook the earth, but now he hath promised, saying, Yet once more I shake not the earth only, but also heaven. 27. And this word, Yet once more, signifies the removing of those things that are shaken, as of things that are made, that those things which cannot be shaken may remain.

26, 27. Whole Voice shook the Earth, when he delivered the Law. But now he hath promised, once more to shake even Heaven, as well as Earth. Which signifies, that he will remove the things so shaken, as made to be transitory in their use; that the things, whose designation, use and nature are perpetual, may remain without them: that is, that the Law of Moses shall be removed, to make way for Grace; and the corrupted form of Heaven and Earth to make way for Glory, even the new Heaven and Earth that must follow.

28. Wherefore we receiving a kingdom which cannot be moved, let us have grace, whereby we may serve God acceptably with reverence and godly fear. 29. For our God is a consuming fire.

28, 29. Seeing therefore that the Gospel is the Doctrine and Gift of an unmoving Kingdom of Christ in Glory, which we receive in Right when we are true Believers, and in possession at the last; and so we have the strongest motives to Holiness and Perseverance, let us serve God with the greater diligence and reverence, that we may be meet for his Acceptance, and with
Ch. 13. Admonition to Charity. Hebrews.

with a Godly fear of falling off, and of his Displeasure if we should prove Hypocrites or Apostates. For the Gospel is not only a word of Promises, but hath its Threatenings and Terrors, as well as the Law, against all refusing Unbelievers, Hypocrites and Apostates, to whom even our God, so rich in Grace, will yet prove a Consuming Fire.

CHAP. XIII.

1. Let brotherly love continue. 2. Be not forgetful to entertain strangers, for thereby some have entertained angels unawares.

1, 2. And as to your particular Duties, I subjoin these brief Precepts of Christian Morality. 1. Be sure to keep up that Special Love which Christians owe to one another (notwithstanding tolerable Infirmities and Differences) above the common Love which they owe to all men: and avoid all that would destroy this Love.

2. Shew this, among other means, by your Hospitality, entertaining Travellers that need Entertainment: For to Abra-

ham, Lot, and others, have entertained Angels, thinking that they were men: (And Christ, at Judgment, will say, I was a stranger, and ye took me in.)

Note: That in these Countries, Inns were not so ready as with us; and Christians were most poor men, not able to bear their own Charges in their Travel.

3. Remember them that are in bonds, as bound with them; and them which suffer adversity, as being your selves also in the body.

3. Seeing all the Members of Christ's Body must suffer if one suffer, think of those that are Prisoners, especially for Christ or Righteousness, with such Compassion, as if their CASE were your own; and so in all other Cases of Adversity, remembering also, that you are yet in a Body liable to as great Affliction.

4. Marriage is honourable in all, and the bed undefiled: but whoremongers and adulterers God will judge.

4. Account and use Marriage as God's Constitution, honourably, and keep the

Marriage-bed undefiled: But Fornicators and Adulterers God hath, and will judge.

5. Let your conversation be without covetousness, and be content with such things as ye have. For he hath said, I will never leave thee, nor forsake thee.

5. Let your hearts be kept free from the love of Money, and the sinful desires, cares, and fears and troubles which thence arise; and be content with God's Allowance, be it less or more: for his Promise to Joshua is applicable to all the Faithful; [I will never fail thee, nor forsake thee.]

6. So that we may boldly say, The Lord is my helper, and I will not fear what man shall do unto me.

6. And as to our Dangers or Sufferings from men, on the same account we may say as David did, having the same Relation to God, and the same Promises, The Lord is my helper, I will not fear man, &c. (further, my soul giveth me cause to fear, that God may use them as the chastising Instruments of his Displeasure.)

7. Remember them which have the rule over you, who have spoken unto you the word of God, whose faith follow, considering the end of their conversation.

7. Remember your Bishops, or Guides (both the Dead and Living) who have spoken to you the Word of God: Remember what Doctrine they taught you, and how faithfully they preached, and owned in suffering: and consider what was the main end of all their Doctrine and Life, even Jesus Christ, who is and shall be still the same, and no new Gospel, or Doctrine, which Corrupters do cry up.

8. Be not carried about with divers and strange doctrines: for it is a good thing that the heart be established with grace, not with meats, which have not profited them that have been occupied therein.

8. Be not carried about (as Children in a strong Wind, Ephes. 4:13) with various Dog
Ch. 13. Alms, Obedience

Doctrines, or such as are new and strange to the Church of God: for Christ and his Gospel being but one and the same still, your duty and interest is to establish your hearts in the Doctrines and Covenant of Grace through Christ, which is your Strength, and the Bread of Life, and not to judge and turn back to the shadowy, abolished Ceremonies, in Sacrifices and differences of Meats, which did not only partake, but even profane those that used them.

10. We have an altar, whereas they have no right to eat, which serve the Tabernacle.

10. We are not without a more holy and profitable Sacrifice and Sacred Food than theirs, even Christ (who is the Lamb of God that taketh away the sins of the World) whose saving Sacrifice we feed on by Faith, and commemorate in our Communion, while his broken Body, and his shed Blood they did not partake of, who offered Beasts in Sacrifice, in the Service of the Tabernacle, as we now do; but we were employed about the shadows of it: And those that stick still in these abrogated Rites, have no Right to our Altar.

11. For the bodies of those beasts, whose blood is brought into the sanctuary by the high priest for sin, are burnt without the camp. 12. Wherefore Jesus also, that he might sanctify the people with his own blood, suffered without the Gate.

11, 12. For as the Beasts slain for Atonement, whose Blood was brought into the Sanctuary, was not to be eaten by the Priest, but burnt without the Bounds of the Camp of Israel: So Christ, when he was to be offered, to sanctify the People with his Blood, went without the Gates of Jerusalem to suffer, signifying that (as they rejected him, as unworthy to live with them, so) he departed from them, and their Political and Legal State.

13. Let us go forth therefore unto him without the camp, bearing his reproach. 14. For here have we no continuing city, but we seek one to come. 13, 14. So let us go out to him, from the Jewish State, and Ceremonial Law (and also from the Heathen World) and submit to the Reproach of the Cross, which must be expected: We must forsake both the Jewish Policy, and the World, or else we cannot follow Christ; for the Christian Church is not fixed, as the Jewish was to a fixed place, to one City; nor have we any fixed seat on Earth, in which we may glory, is our Home or abiding place; but by faith in God's Promises, through Christ, we hope and seek for one to come, even the new and heavenly Jerusalem. 15. By him therefore let us offer the Sacrifice of praise to God continually, that is, the fruit of our lips, giving thanks to his Name.

15. Therefore, instead of Jewish Sacrifices, let us by Christ, our great Intending High Priest, offer daily to God the Sacrifice of Praise from a believing, thankful heart, and give thanks to him for Christ and all his Gifts; and this heart, from the Fruit of our lips will be more acceptable than the Fruits of the Earth, or any bloody Sacrifice of Beasts.

16. But do to good, and to communicare forget not, for with such sacrifices God is well pleased.

16. But there is another sort of Sacrifice very pleasing to God also, which you must not forget, even Beneficence and Bounty; doing all the good you can, and communicating to the relief of those that need.

Note: The name of Sacrifice and Altar, as well as Priefts used, as here, by allusion or similitude to those of old, may lawfully be used, as here they are, and were by the Primitive Christians, even as the Last Day was called the Christian Sabbath. It is no dishonour to Christ, to say that we may offer Sacrifices acceptable unto God, so be in subordination to his Sacrifice, so our Gospel-worthiness is but subordination to his Memorious Righteousness.

17. Obey them that have the rule over you, and submit your selves, for they watch for your souls, as they that must give account, that they may do it with joy, and not with grief: for that is unprofitable for you.

17. God that hath made the Bishop or Pastor to be your guiding Rulers in Church.
Ch. 13. Obedience to Hebrews.

Church-Affairs, obligeth you to obey them, and to submit your selves to their Government, and not to live as unruly, or in confusion: for the charge of watching for your Souls is committed to them, so far as belongeth to their Office, by teaching, publickly and privately, and personally watching over the State and Conversation of every single Person to their power, and instructing, exhorting, reproving, comforting; enrufted with the Administration of the Seals of God’s Covenant, and with your publick Church-Communion, by judging of men’s capacity, and receiving or excluding, binding or loosing, by the power of the Keys. And of all this they must give account to God; which, as it will be terrible to them if they be unfaithful, so it will be to you, if their faithfulness be without success; which else, will be to the joy of them and you. And they have not any constraining power of the Sword, and can govern and profit you only as voluntary, by your own consent; and therefore, as you love your comfort, and regard them, and their Labours and Comfort, obey them, by obeying God’s Word, which they preach.

Note. 1. That those Bishops which God commandeth men to obey, are those that watch for the Souls of all the Flocks, as men that must give account of all; and not those that have many hundred, or score of Churches, without any other Bishop, save one, and never see, or know, or once hear the names of one of many hundred, called their Flock, much less ever taught them, or gave them the Sacrament.

2. That God having trusted the Pastors, by Office, with Church-Government by the Keys, it is very false that the people should govern it by Vote: Though it is true, that being governed but as Voluntiers by the Pastors, their Consent is needful to their Subscription, and to their Profit and Salvation.

18. Pray for us: for we trust we have a good conscience in all things, willing to live honestly.

18. Our Work and Charge being so great, and of such Importance to yourselves, while some revile and persecute us, and some turn from us, and disobey our Doctrine, do you pray for us, that God will guide, strengthen, support and prosper us: For our Confidence is our Witness, that we are faithful in our Ministry and our Lives.

19. But I beseech you the rather to do this, that I may be restored to you the sooner.

19. And put up this one Request also for me, that I may the sooner be restored to the comfort of your Service.

20. Now the God of peace that brought again from the dead our Lord Jesus, that great Shepherd of the sheep, through the blood of the everlasting covenant, 21. Make you perfect in every good work to do his will, working in you that which is well pleasing in his sight, through Jesus Christ, to whom be glory for ever and ever. Amen.

20, 21. My chief Benediction and Prayer for you is, that God, who will be called, The God of Peace, as being the Giver, the Lover, and the Objective End of Love and Peace, who raised our Lord and Saviour from Death, whose Resurrection is the great Encouragement of our Hope, even him who is the chief Pastor of all his holy Flock, by the Purchase of the Blood of the Everlasting Covenant; compact, frame and fit you, by Holiness and Union, for every good Work, to do his Will, and work in you (by his Spirit, as he commandeth you in his Word) that which is well pleasing in his sight: (To please him being the ultimate End of the whole Creation, and as here begun, the way thereto.) To whom be Glory in this perfect fulfilling of his Will, for ever and ever. Amen.

22. And I beseech you, brethren, suffer the word of exhortation, for I have written a letter unto you in few words.

23. Know ye that our brother Timothy is set at liberty, with whom, if he come shortly, I will see you. 24. Salute all them that have the rule over you, and all the Saints. They of Italy salute you. 25. Grace be with you all. Amen.

22, 23, 24, 25. Note. 1. So bad is Man: even Christians, through the Reels of their Corruption, that when the most important, comfortable Doctrine is delivered
Ch. i. Joy and Patience

James.

The General (or Catholick) Epistle of St. J A M E S
(the Apostle, say most Copies.)

Whether the Writer was one of the Twelve, called the Son of Alpheus; or rather, the Son of Cleophas, Cousin-German to Jesus, and called his Brother, is uncertain.

The drift of the Epistle is:
1. To establish the Christian Jews in a well ordered, religious Course of Life, and fortify them against Tribulations.
2. To shame a sort of Scribes, who misunderstood, and abused the Doctrine of Justification by Faith, and turned Religion into Opinion; and yet were not only Magisterial Bathers of their great Knowledge, but did it by a censorious, contentious Contempt of others, and making Obscenity of their supposed Wisdom, as Heretics use to do, by a proud and wrangling self-exalting way.
3. To reprove the Over-valuing of the Rich, and their Contempt of the Poor, and the Guilt of Sensuality, Worldliness and Pride, that had corrupted some among them.

1. James a servant of God, and of the Lord Jesus Christ, to the twelve tribes which are scattered abroad greeting.

1. Note 1. Ten of the Tribes, ever since the Reign of King Hosea, were scattered by Captivity, and the rest were in great numbers dispersed through much of the Roman Empire; partly by the many Inursions and Wars which had brought them to Ruine by Conquerours; and partly, by the smallness and poverty of their Countrey; so that at first the Apostles, when they travelled into Heathen Countreys, began their Preaching, and Church-gathering with the Jews Synagogues, which they found there.

2. My brethren, count it all joy when ye fall into divers temptations. 3. Knowing this, that the trying of your faith worketh patience.

2. 3. Note 1. He speaketh not of direst Temptations to sin, as cast into us by the Devil, or carnal allurements, and fleshly appetite and lusts; but of Tryal by suffering for Christ and Righteousness chiefly; and partly next for such correcting Tryals from God, as tend to our amendment.

2. It is not the suffering that is matter of joy, in it self, but the good effects of a proved Faith, and increased Patience. Tryals, because they tend to this, should be received with joy; but when they cause this, much more.

3. But let patience have her perfect work, that ye may be perfect and entire, wanting nothing.

3. 4. Note 1. The care of a tryed, suffering Christian, should be to look to his Faith and Patience (as the Goldsmith doth to his Gold in the fire) and to see that they be duly and fully exercised, and have their perfect work.

3. A full or perfect exercise and use of Patience in great Tryals, beweth a strong, entireChristian, and hath great joy; when
Ch. 1. Stedfastness in Faith, James. against Temptations. Ch. 1.  

1. The use of Patience mixt with much patience, sheweth a lame Christian, and giveth but little joy.

2. To despise, or fret, or swell, with matter, revengeful thoughts against our Persecutors or Enemies, is contrary to found Christianity.

3. If any of you lack wisdom, let him ask of God, that giveth to all men liberally, and upbraideth not, and it shall be given him.

4. Wisdom is necessary both for the guidance of you in all your difficulties and duties, and the management of all your religious affairs: And all Parties pretend to the greatest Wisdom, to draw People to be their Disciples. But if you would be truly wise, seek it not by running unto Heretics, but by sincere prayer to God, who is the bounteous giver of it, and doth not, as Heretics, reproach you with your weakness, but mercifully vouchsafeth to each the humble.

Note. 1. Prayer is a great and necessary means to get true Wisdom. But as for outward things, so for Wisdom, we must not only pray, but labour, and use God's other helps. Study without Prayer, maketh but ungodly talkers, whose dreaming knowledge will but condemn them: And Prayer without Study, and a learning of the wife, is but a self-deceiving idle tempting of God.

5. But let him ask in faith, nothing wavering: for he that waketh is like a wave of the sea, driven with the wind, and tossed.

6. For let not that man think that he shall receive any thing of the Lord.

7. But fee that your Belief of God's power and Goodness, and the truth of his promises to faithful Suitors, be firm and sound; for if you doubt and wave at this, you will but be toft about like a wave of the Sea: When you cannot trust God, every temptation and difficulty will overthrow both your hope, and your incontinency: And such have no Promise that God will hear them; it is but presumption expect it.

Note. That the Faith here mentioned not an assurance of our own sincerity, but that God will give us what we ask, as being sure, fit to receive it: But it is a resolution coming to the Christian Verity, and a sound belief that God is most able, and faithful in performing all his Promises, and will give all the good which we ask, and are meet to receive. Disbelieving our selves is not disbelieving God.

8. A double-minded man is unflame in all his ways.

9. A man whose mind and heart hangs doubtful and unresolved between God and the World, Christ and Infidelity, Heaven and Earth, Holiness and Sin, is sickle, and still unfruitful.

9, 10. Let the Brother of low degree rejoice in that he is exalted; But the rich, in that he is made low:

10. Because as the flower of the grass he shall pass away. For the sun is no sooner risen with a burning heat, but it withereth the grass, and the flower thereof falleth, and the grace of the fashion of it perisheth; so also shall the rich man fade away in his ways.

11. For riches are too inconsiderable things to make any great, just alteration on our minds: They are transitory, and so is man, like the flower, whose sweetnes you may use for a moment, but it fades presently before the heat of the scorching Sun.

12. Blessed is the man that endureth temptation, for when he is tried he shall receive the crown of life, which the Lord hath promised to them that love him.

12. It is the tried Christian that is an blessed man, who after suffering and temp.
Ch. 1. Purity and Sincerity

13. Let no man say when he is tempted, I am tempted of God: for God cannot be tempted of evil, neither tempteth he any man.

14. But as to the seducing of temptation, which is not to try our constancy, but to draw men to sin and ruin, let no man charge that on God as his doing; for as God cannot be tempted to sin, nor possibly love it, so be tempteth no man to it (much less forceth them to it, or unreservedly, by determining premonition, makes them sin).

15. But every man is tempted, when he is drawn away of his own lust, and envieth.]

16. Do not err, my beloved brethren. Every good gift, and every perfect gift is from above, and cometh down from the Father of lights, with whom is no variableness, neither shadow of turning.

17. Be not deceived about the caues of good and evil; sin and death are from our selves; but every good and perfecting Gift is of God's free Grace and Donation, even from above, from the Father of Lights, who, (as the Sun is the same in its nature and action, though Earth and Clouds of interposing, make it seem to us as varying, by its rising and setting, and turning away its light into shadows, when the change is not in it, so) God is unchangeable, and our changes and shadows are not from any mutability, or shadowy alteration in him, but from our selves.

18. Of his own will will he make us with the word of truth, that we should be a kind of first-fruits of his creatures.

19. It was of his own good Will and Grace that he hath regenerated us by the true Word of the Gospel (and not of any Defect of ours) and that he made us as the First-fruits sanctified to him (so that all good is of God, and all evil of our selves and the Devil.)

20. Wherefore, my beloved brethren, let every man be swift to hear, slow to speak, slow to wrath.

21. Therefore watch over your selves, if you would be safe; and particularly observe these three Rules: 1. Be swift to hear as humble Learners, while proud Men are forward to be Teachers, before they were ever profitable Learners. 2. Be slow to speak, and not as proud men, full of words, because full of self-conceit, reader to reach than to learn, telling what they think they know, while the humble are learning to know more; and when in multitude of words there is seldom innocency; but the rash and talkative say that which must be repented of. 3. Be slow to wrath.

22. For the wrath of man worketh not the righteousness of God.

23. For a wrathful Mind is very unfit for that righteousness which God requireth in and of us: It puts the Mind out of a composd, holy frame, and unfitts it for communion with God: It blindest and perverteth the Judgment, and destroith the Love and Peace. A wrathful man scorns to love his Neighbour as himself, nor doth as he would be done by.

24. Wherefore lay apart all things, and Superfluity of Naughtiness, and receive with meekne the engraven word, which is able to save your souls.

25. And
Ch. 1. Purity and Sincerity

11. All that cast away all fitchiness out of your thoughts, affections, speech and practice, and all externenious naughtiness (or that superstition, which is but a provocation for the flesh, to satisfy its lust) and with humble, tractable meekness, receive God’s Word, not only opinionatively, but as the Graft is taken into the Tree, or your Food, when it is digested into Blood and Flesh, thus made an incarnated Word; and so received and digested, it will save your Souls.

22. But ye doers of the word, and not hearers only, deceiving your own selves.

23. For if any be a hearer of the Word, and not a doer, he is like unto a man beholding his natural face in a glass:

24. For he beholdeth himself and goeth his way, and straightway forgetteth what manner of man he was.

23. But who so looketh into the perfect law of liberty, and continueth therein, he being not a forgetful hearer, but a doer of the work, this man shall be blessed in his deeds.

25. But he that well considereth the Covenant of Grace, or the Gospel, which is Christ’s Law of Liberty, or Liberation, giving us deliverance from the Jewish Law, and from Sin, and Guilt, and Wrath, and Death, and dwelleth in the study of it, till it turn to spiritual life digested and ingrafted in him; and is not a forgetful hearer, but a doer of that which is required to Salvation, even sound Faith, Repentance, sincere Obedience, and Patience, this man shall be blessed in so doing.

Note, 1. They grobly deny Christ to be King, which say that he hath no Law.

2. His Gospel Covenant hath Precepts, Rewarding Promises, and Penal Threats, and therefore is a proper Law.

3. It giveth pardon on condition of Faith and Repentance (to be performed by Divine Grace) and Salvation on condition of added Obedience and Perseverance, and so is a Law of Liberty. Christ is the Author of Eternal Salvation to all them that obey him.

4. This doing his commandments, which is made his imposed condition, is the necessary entitling qualification for blessedness, Rev.

22. 14. Blessed are they thus do his commandments, that they may have right to the Tree of Life, and may enter in by the Gates into the City.

26. If any man among you seem to be religious, and bridlest not his tongue, but deceiveth his own heart, this man religion is vain.

16. If any Man among you seem to others, or himself, to be Religious, (and perhaps of a higher form than others) and yet bridlest not his Tongue from backbiting, flandering, or reproaching his Brethren, to render them contemptible and unlovely, and from speaking ill of Men without either Truth, or a just cause; this Man’s sinful practice doth shew that his Religion is but ineffectual and vain, and doth but serve to deceive his own Heart.

For that which doth not save Men from Sin, will not save them from justice.

27. Pure religion and undefiled before God and the Father, is this, to visit the fatherless and widows in their affliction, and to keep himself unspotted from the world.

27. There is great contending among Christians, whose way of Religious Worship is the purest, and best pleasing to God. That is the pure and undefiled Religion in God’s sight, who is our Father, which is effectual to sound practical Charity, and to a pure, unspotted, holy life; even with true Love and Liberality, to relieve those that are in distress, and to keep Heart and Life clean from the love of the World; and the Temptations of Wicked, Worldly Men, (as seeking in hope for a better World.)
Chap. II.

My brethren, have not the faith of our Lord Jesus Christ the Lord of glory, with respect of persons.

1. And ye that profess to believe the Glory of our Lord Jesus Christ, which the poorest Christians shall partake of, equally with the rich, and to which all worldly Glory is but vanity, must not now make a great difference in the Church between Rich Men and the Poor, by a worldly respect of Persons for their Riches.

2. For if there come unto your assembly a man with a gold ring, in goodly apparel, and there come also a poor man, in vile raiment. 3. And ye have respect to him that weareth the gay clothing, and say unto him, Sit thou here in a good place; and say to the poor, Stand thou there, or sit here under my footstool:

4. Are ye not then partial in your selves, and are become judges of evil thoughts?

2, 3, 4. If in your Church-Assemblies you inordinately shew respect to Men for gay cloathing, as rich, and fat light by Men, that by their Garb seem Poor, do you not shew a carnal partiality, by over-valuing Wealth, and a Judgment misguid ed by evil estimation?

Note. 1. That this speaketh not against honouring Magistrates, but Riches. 2. Nor against a prudent respect to the Rich, so far as by their Wealth they may be engaged to do more good than others. 3. And I think those mistake, that rather expound this of meetings of Bishops for Judicature (as Dr. Hammond) than other Church-Assemblies: For, If they mean any forcing Judicatures, Christians had none such, there being then no Christian Magistrates that had the power of the Svard. And if Bishops had been like our Diocesans, and so distant, they could not have travelled so far as such must do to keep up ordinary Judicatures, without a total deterring their chief work for their Flocks. 3. And as they truly were (Congregational Bishops) over no more than one of our Parishes, their distance between City and City was too great for this, without the like omissions. 4. Christians having then no Judicial Power but as Arbitrators, the contenders chose what Arbitrators they thought best. 5. Their Publick Church-Government was exercised in the same Assemblies which met for Worship, which therefore are like here to be mentioned with respect to their most usual business, and not the rarer. 6. It is the whole Church, and not the Bishops only, that is here admonished. 7. It is too hard a censure for rich men to use, as are pleading for too much honour to Bishops, to suppose them to early guilty of so much partiality and carnal respect to fine Cloths and Riches, and so much Injustice in Judging as this Doctor's Exposition doth suppose: It's liker to be the vulgar fault.

5. Hearken my beloved brethren, Hath not God chosen the poor of this world, rich in faith, and heirs of the Kingdom, which he hath promised to them that love him?

5. Consider how God himself confuteth your overvaluing Rich Men, and vilifying the Poor: Is it not mostly of the Poor that your Churches confit? Is it not them that God hath chosen, Poor in the World, but Rich in Faith, to be here made Heirs, and hereafter Possessors of that Kingdom of Glory, which he hath promised to them that truly love him.

6, 7. But ye have despised the poor. Do not rich men oppress you, and draw you before the judgment seats? Do not they blaspheme that worthy name, by which ye are called?

6, 7. Yet you despise the Poor, whom God himself clouteth and honoureth: And doth not your own experience and suffering condemn you? Who is it but Rich Men that oppress you by tyranny, and draw you, like Malefactors, before their Courts of Judicature? Do they not Blaspheme the name of Christ, and Reproach your Religion?

8. If ye fulfil the royal law, according to the scripture: Thou shalt love thy neighbour as thyself, ye do well.
8. I persuade you not to hate men for their riches, but not to think that thee allow you to partial a differing: If you obey God’s great Command, as the Scripture teacheth you, to love all sorts of your neighbours as your selves, according to the various degrees of their true amiableness (be they rich or poor) you then do well.

9. But if ye have respect to persons, ye commit sin, and are convinced of the law as transgressors.

9. But if you thus inordinately respect men differently for their wealth, not only the Gospel of love, but the Law of Moses convicted you as sinners, Exodus 23:3, Lev. 30:15, Deut. 1:16, 17.

10. For whatsoever shall keep the whole law, and yet offend in one point, he is guilty of all.

11. For he that said, Do not commit adultery; said also, Do not kill. Now if thou commit no adultery, yet if thou kill, thou art become a transgressor of the law.

10, 11. And that Law condemneth all that continue not in all things therein written, to do them; and we are bound by God’s Law in force to universal obedience. If you keep all other Commands, and presumptuously break one, you are contemners of the Law, and so interpretatively break all.

12. So speak ye, and so do, as they that shall be judged by the law of liberty.

12. And though you are delivered from Moses’s Law, and the Covenant of Works, remember that Christ is your King, and Law-giver, and you are not lawless; therefore so speak, and so do, as they that are under his Law of Liberty and Grace, and shall be judged by it, by Justification or Condemnation.

13. For he shall have judgment without mercy, that hath shewed no mercy; and mercy rejoiceth against judgment.

13. For though this be a Law of Mercy, it will condemn the unmerciful without mercy; it hath its conditions of Life or Death, though none but vVhat consisteth with Grace: But the merciful shall find mercy at Judgment: And God’s mercy in Christ as the cause, and their mercy to men for his sake, as the condition, will prevail against condemning Judgment.

14. What doth it profit, my brethren, though a man say he hath faith, and have not works? can faith save him?

14. Is not a mere wordy Profession an unprofitable thing to your selves, as well as to others? Will professing Christianity, and saying you believe, profit you to Salvation, if you obey not Christ, and live not according to the Gospel.

15, 16. If a brother or sister be naked, and destitute of daily food, And one of you fay unto them, Depart in peace, be you warmed, and filled: notwithstanding ye give them not those things which are needful to the body: what doth it profit?

15, 16. Will good words clothe the Naked, or feed the Hungry? Is it not like a mocking of them?

17. Even so faith, if it hath not works, is dead being alone.

17. Even so your notional knowledge and belief, and the bare profession of Faith, if it produce not the fruits of Obedience, Love and Mercy, is but an unessential, dead thing in itself, sheltering a dead soul, and is dead as to your Justification and Salvation.

18. Yea, a man may say, Thou hast faith, and I have works: shew me thy faith without thy works, and I will shew thee my faith by my works.

18. Any one may say to this Man, if thy Religion be found, it will have life and power, and be known by its fruits: Canst thou shew and justify thy Religion or Belief, without any good works or fruits, as I can do mine by them?

19. Thou believest that there is one God, thou dost well: the devils also believe, and tremble.

19. It is part of thy Religion to believe that there is One God: This is well done; it is a most fundamental Truth, but it
Ch. 2. Good Works.

James.

20. But wilt thou know, O vain man, that faith without works is dead? 21. Was not Abraham our father justified by works, when he had offered Isaac his son upon the altar?

20, 21. But art not thou a vain Man, that knowest not that Faith is but a dead Opinion, ineffectual to justify and save, if it be ineffectual to Works? Dost thou not discern how plainly the Scripture confesseth thee? Was it not Doing in Faith, or a Faith that causeth working Obedience, by which Abraham was justified, who was the Father of the Faithful? when he offered his Son Isaac, and God said, Gen. 22, 16. Because thou hast done this thing, and hast not withheld thy Son, thy only Son, in blessing wilt I bless thee, &c.

22. Seest thou how faith wrought with his works, and by works was faith made perfect?

22. You may see that his Faith made him obey God’s Command, and the obedient vancouver of it, did constitute it a found, effectual Faith, vwithout which it could not justify him.

23. And the scripture was fulfilled which faith, Abraham believed God, and it was imputed unto him for righteousness: and he was called the friend of God.

23. And this is the true sense of the Scripture, which faith, Abraham believed, &c. that is, he so far believed and trusted God, as to offer up his Son; and this trust vworking by such Obedience, or this practical effectual trust, was so accepted by God, that though he vwas not perfect vwithout Sin, God accounted him a Righteous Man, that vwas meet for the free Salvation of his Grace, and to be called, The Friend of God.

24. Ye see then how that by works a man is justified, and not by faith only.

24. You see then that by such necessary doing God’s Will, which is the produce of an effectual Faith, and theweth it to be lively and sincere, and not a dead Opinion, a Man is accounted just by God, according to the Covenant of Grace through Christ, and not only by bare believing, or not by believing only void without obeying.

25. Likewise also, was not Rahab the harlot justified by works, when she had received the messengers, and had sent them out another way?

25. And was it not by Doing by Faith, or a Faith causing Obedience that Rahab was justified?

26. For as the body without the spirit is dead, so faith without works is dead also.

26. For as it is a dead spiritless body that cannot stir, so it is a dead, moral, ineffectual belief, that commandeth not a Man’s life and action: It’s dead in itself, and dead as to Mens Justification and Salvation.

Annotations.

Nothing but Mens misunderstanding the plain drift and sense of Paul’s Epistles, could make so many use it for a matter of great difficulty to reconcile Paul and James, where there is no considerable flaw of contradiction. I have shewed the scope and sense of Paul before the Epistle to the Romans, 1. Ths his arguing is to prove that it is not the Law of Moses that can justify any Man in a meer doer of it; nor any works at all in commutative Justice, making the reward to be of debt for the value of the works, and not of free grace; but that justification must needs be of Gods free gift, and therefore by the Merits of our Redeemer, and therefore that a fiducial acceptancy pratical Belief of Gods free gift, Covenant or Promise, of Grace and Glory, for, in, and with Christ, is the condition to our part (to be performed by his Grace) which is our Moral Qualification, or repective disposition, on which God by his Covenant giveth us right so the solid free Gifts (Chrifts Grace and Glory.) This Faith Paul never described by some one single Physical act of the Soul, but as a Moral act of the Man; as we use the Word in humane converse: As if one say, if you will truft me as your Physician, I will cure you, if you take me for your Tutor, I will teach you; Here to trust or take him, signifies a confenting trust, to be

Digitized by Google
be medicined and to be taught by such a one. If one say to a condemned Beggar, trust me and I will give thee a Lord-ship in a Foreign Land, it signifies a trust confusing practically to go with him and trust his Convoy, and forsake his own Country. And James never questioned this Doctrine; but some Vain Men (as James calls them) misunderstand this and spin us out a Web of their own Vanity, and feign it to be Paul's Doctrine. 1. They say that Paul by Faith meaneth not Faith, by which we are laid to be justified, but only Christ, (who doubtless is a chief object of that Faith.) 2. That God the Father, or the Holy Ghost, are none of the object of Faith as it is justifying. 3. That it is not Christ himself, as Prophet or King, but only as Priest that is this object. 4. That it is not all Christ's Priest-hood, but only Sacrifice and Righteousness, that is this object, and not his Heavenly Intercession. 5. That it is not Christ's Sacrifice and Righteousness as merely meritorious of our Pardon and Life, but as it was paid and performed by Christ as our Surety in our Legal Reputative Person, and so is imputed to us as our own, because done by another in our name and stead, as one payeth a debt by another that was bound for him. 6. That so far as Faith is here meant, it is but one single Physical act of Faith in Specie: And there they are utterly disapproved. 1. Whether it be an act of the understanding, or will, or both? 2. Whether one act can be the belief of many objects, viz. of Christ's Sacrifice, Obedience, Promise, Pardon, Heaven? &c. 7. Ye many say that it is but one individual act that we are justified by (which no mortal Man can know, the individuation of the Souls acts being obscure, and the objects being always many conjunct and) they say that it is only our first act of Faith, and that all following acts of the same sort, finding us justified, cannot justify us any more than works. 8. They say that Faith justifieth only as an Instrumental Cause, and not as a Moral qualifying receptive condition or disposition. 9. They say that believing in the Father and the Holy Ghost, and hoping for Heaven, and praying for Mercy, and Repenting of Sin, and Loving-God and our Saviour, and his Word and Saints, and Thankfulness for Grace, and Obedience to Christ, and Patience, and forsaking all for him, are the Works which Paul meaneth to exclude from Justification, and so is Faith in Christ's Righteousness as an Act, but not as an Instrument. 10. They are utterly disagreed whether Faith justifie by appropriating only Christ's active Righteousness, or also his Passive, or also his Divine Righteousness and Perfection. 11. They say that by 'Imparting Faith for Righteousness' is meant that not our Faith, but Christ's Righteousness, is imputed in its self (and not its merited effects only) to be our own, because we performed it by him. 12. They say that it is the very Law of Innuency and Works that justifieth us, as having perfectly fulfilled it in and by Christ. 13. They (must) hold that in Christ we have both perfectly kept the Law, from Birth till Death, by impuited Obedience, and yet satisfied for not keeping it by his sufferings, as if perfect obedience impuited could I conflict with sin. 14. They say that God's Corrections are no Punishments, because else Christ's Suffering was insufficient, and God should punish one Sin twice. 15. And that our pardon and Justification is perfect as soon as we believe. 16. And that no more is needful to our continued Justification, than to its beginning. 17. And that yet more is needful to our Salvation than to our final Justification. Many such humane Inventions Man's Brain hath spun our, and made a Doctrine of their own, and called it Paul's. And James, having to do with carnal Gospellers, that thought to be favored for being of a right Opinion, and calling this, Faith, doth 1. Tell them that this is no: that true Christian Faith which hath the promise of Justification and Salvation, but that is a powerful, practical belief and trust. 2. Therefore their Doing that while Faith confusion and engageth them to do, must justify that Faith to be found, which must justify them as the condition of life. 3. And that therefore this Efficiency or Doing of this Practical Faith, is part of the condition of their Justifications, and it justifieth the Man himself, 1. As it justifieth his Faith, and so justifieth him to be a sound Believer, and not an Infidel or Hypocrite. 2. In that the effectual, operative nature, and consequent to obey, is essential to that Faith it self. 3. In that as a Faith accepting Christ, and consenting to obey him as the Author of Eternal Salvation, is the condition of our first entering into a State of Life and Justification, so
Ch. 3. The Government of the Tongue.  

James.  

and able also to bridle the whole body.

2. Your zeal goeth out by censuring others, as great sinners in comparison of you (perhaps for not observing your ceremonies and traditions, and not taking you for their teachers) but fear sin in yourselves; ye, left your censorious, reproachful, unbridled tongues should prove worse than that which you censure others for. He that hath most power to rule his Tongue, and sineth not in words, is like to be the most perfect Christian, and can rule his actions by the same obedience and wisdom which doth rule his Tongue.

3. Behold, we put bits in the horses mouths, that they may obey us, and we turn about their whole body  

3. As we rule the whole bodies of horses by a bridle in the mouth; so, could you bridle your mouths, it would both signify a power to rule your lives, and much promote this.

4. Behold also the ships, which though they be so great, and are driven of fierce winds, yet are they turned about with a very small helm, whithersoever the governor listeth.

4. So the Pilot by so small a thing as the helm, ruleth great ships, that are under the force of winds.

5. Even so the tongue is a little member, and boasteth great things:

5. And Man's Tongue is but a small part of the body, though it boast great things; and the Government of that little Member, is a great part of the Government of the Man.

5. Behold how great a matter a little fire kindleth: And the tongue is a fire, a world of iniquity: so is the tongue amongst our members, that it defileth the whole body, and setteth on fire the course of nature, and it is set on fire of hell.

5. The Tongue in the Body, and the World, is like fire among much combustible matter. As a little fire kindleth much, so this little Member doth both kindle and

CHAP. III.

1. My brethren, be not many masters, knowing that we shall receive the greater condemnation.  

1. And as I thus admonish you against the error of hypocrisies, who take their dead opinions and professions for a justifying faith; so must I do against another vice, which that sort of hypocrisies are guilty of: Their pride and self-conceit maketh them think that their knowledge is much higher than other Christians; and that they are the finest men to be teaching masters, and reprovers; and so they are all forwarder to teach, and magisterially confute others, and use their tongue to condemn others as most of them in knowledge, and to boast of themselves; and all their talk runs in a teaching, and not a learning way. But I warn you to avoid this proud and matterly spirit; for it will make your sin the greater, and without excuse, and increase your condemnation.

2. For in many things we offend all. If any man offend not in word, the same is a perfect man,
7. For every kind of beasts and of birds, and of serpents, and things in the sea, is tamed, and hath been tamed of mankind:
8. But the tongue can no man tame.

8, 9. It is an unruly evil, full of deadly poison. Therewith bless we God, even the Father; and therewith curse we men, which are made after the similitude of God. 10. Out of the same mouth proceedeth blessing and cursing:

8, 9. It is to us, and in the world, an unruly evil (till grace shall tame it) and infecteth our selves and the societies where we live, with the mortal poison of many great sins. The same hypocrites, who praise God, and worship him with it, do reproach their brethren with it; not only men that have some of God's image in their natural faculties, but those that are God's true servants, better than themselves, who are renewed to God's image in holiness by grace.

10, 11. My brethren, these things ought not so to be. Doth a fountain send forth at the same place sweet water and bitter?

12. Can a fig-tree, my brethren, bear olives-berries? either a vine figs? so can no fountain both yield salt water and fresh.

10, 11, 12. Do you not perceive that your ill speech of tongues, which vilifie, speak evil of, and condemn good Christians for not being of your minds, do confute themselves, when the same tongues profess to honour God, and boast of wisdom and religion in your selves: If you were as wise and godly, as you profess,
your tongues would not, by speaking ill of your brethren, shew the contrary. No fountain sends forth sweet water and bitter, fresh and salt; no fig-tree brings forth olives: The tree is known by its fruit.

13. Who is a wise man and endued with knowledge among you? let him shew out of a good conversation his works with meekness of wisdom.

13. Are any among you, indeed, as much wiser, and knowing and excelling others, as you would be thought when you cenfure or despise them: Shew it, if you would have any wise man believe you, not by proud boasting or talking against others, but by the true fruits of the spirit, even a better conversation than theirs in all your dealings, and by more good works, with that humble meekness which signifies true wisdom.

14. But if ye have bitter envying and strife in your hearts, glory not, and lie not against the truth.

15. This wisdom descendeth not from above, but is earthly, sensual, devilish,

14, 15. But if you have a bitter zeal and envy, and uncharitable heart-raging and strife against your brethren, pretending truth, orthodoxy, or religion for your swelling envy and emulation, and talking and preaching down love and peace, to make those that differ from your side, to seem hateful or contemptuous, in comparison of your, your profession of greater knowledge and religiousness is but proud boasting, and lying against the truth: This wisdom, and this preaching and course, is not of God, not such as he will own. It is from an earthly and sensual principle, your own praise or profit, or magisterial will, or some carnal interest is at the root; if you could know your selves, you might see this: Yea, it is so far from excelling others, that it is a devilish wisdom, a devilish zeal, and devilish preaching and disputing, which you glory in.

16. For where envying and strife is, there is confusion, and every evil work.

16. For where envious zeal and strife prevail, there is still faction and unquietness, (or sedition, tumults, and unquietness
Ch. 3. Mildness, Freedom, James.

ledness still for change, and this cherisheth all sorts of evil works, which men will think to be all good or lawful, to serve their contentious zeal, and to further their changes and carnal ends.

47. But the wisdom that is from above is first pure, then peaceable, gentle, and easy to be entreated, full of mercy and good fruits, without partiality, and without hypocrisy. 18 And the fruit of righteousness is sown in peace of them that make peace.

17, 18. But if you would know among the several Pretenders, whose knowledge, and religion, are zeal and zeal from above, the fruit of the Spirit, which God will own, these are the sure marks of it. 1. It is first for true Purity of Heart and Life: It will not chuse sin, on any presence, so far a Men can know it. If any be for wilful, deliberate conformity to sin, or for a loose and sensual Life, or against serious Godliness, and a holy, heavenly, sober and just Life, this is not from the Spirit of God. 2. It is next to this, addicted to peace, and will seek it by all lawful means. 3. It is addicted to the best sense of another man's cause, and to a gentle, and not a rigid, censorious judgment. 4. Easily yielding to good persuasions, and not stiff in ill Opinions or Ways. 5. Full of Mercy to others, and of all good Works or Fruits to his power, as being devoted to do good. 6. Without censorious partiality, as Schedaries, that can see nothing but what seemeth to make for their own Party and Opinions, (or, without a wavering unresolv'dness in the Christian Religion.) 7. Without Hypocrisy, or false pretenders. And though the erroneous and contentious in both extremes, do use to vilifie or abhor Peace-makers, who serve God according to this supernal wisdom, yet those men, who labour to make peace, are lousing, in this Work of Peace, the fruit of true Righteousness, as guiltless of the Crimes of the extreme Contenders, and of the Tumults raised by them: And when the Harvest of God's Judgment cometh, they shall reap this fruit to themselves: And if the Contreys, where they live, are worthy of such Fruits, they must reap it from this Seed of Peace-making Labours.

from Wrath and Lust. Ch. 4.

CHAP. IV.

1. From whence come wars and fightings among you? come they not hence even of your lust, that war in your members?

1. The Jews are in frequent Seditions and Fightings among themselves, in which many erroneous Christians join with the Unbelievers, in a blind Zeal for their Law and Nation. And do you think it is from true Zeal that their Wars arise? No, it is from their own sensual, worldly Lusts, the first war in themselves, and then disturb the common peace.

2. Ye lust, and have not: ye kill, and desire to have, and cannot obtain: ye fight and war, yet ye have not, because ye ask not.

2. You covet and fight, and kill, in your mistaken desires of your Law and Liberties; and you do but lose your Blood and Labour, by going your own sensual way, and not seeking to God for Counsel, Conduct and Success, who must give all Good, and that in his own way.

3. Ye ask, and receive not; because ye ask amiss, that you may consume it upon your lusts.

3. Yes, you will be Religious in your Sin, and make your Prayers to God for Deliverance from the Roman Power, and for your Country's Liberty. But they are carnal Prayers; and God rejecteth them; for it is but that you may live in great Plenty, Power and Pleasure, enjoying sensual Prosperity, that you pray to God for your Deliverance.

4. Ye adulterers, and adulteresses, know ye not that the friendship of the world is enmity with God? whosoever therefore will be a friend of the world, is the enemy of God.

4. You that by your Perfidiousness to God, are like peridious Adulterers, loving the World best, whilist God is in your Mouths, know ye not that this Love of the World, as his Competitor, is Enmity to God; and that he is God's Enemy that loves it predominantly?

5. Do ye think that the scripture faith in vain, The spirit that dwelleth in us lusteth to envy?

5. Is
Ch. 4. Pride, Detraction, James, and Judging others. Ch. 4.

and if thou judge the law, thou art not a dcer of the law, but a judge.
11. And give over your Reproach and Cenfirsionis against the Gentile Christians, that do not observe your Ceremonial Law, by which you encourage their Persecutors; for both the Law of Christ, and the Law of Moses, which you profess to own, do bid you love your Neighbour as your self, and forbid such uncharitable Cenitures; so that by condemning your Brethren, you condemn the Law: And this is not to keep either Moses's Law, or Christ's, but to set your selves above both, by making your selves Reproving Judges of them.

12. There is one law-giver, who is able to save, and to destroy: who art thou that judgest another?

12. Christ, and none else. (Saith Dr. H.) hath Authority to give Laws to us: There is but one Law-giver, who hath the absolute and final Power of Life and Death eternal, Salvation and Damnation. Who art thou that darest arrogate this Judgment? Or what Power hast thou to judge another, or accusation another, any further than truly to tell Men vvhom Christ will judge and cast away?

13. Go to now, ye that say, To day or to morrow we will go into such a city, and continue there a year, and buy and sell,

and get gain: 14. Whereas ye know not what shall be on the morrow: for what is your life? It is even a vapour that appeareth for a little time, and then vanisheth away.

13, 14. You are too much set on worldly Prosperity: and you plot for Gain, as if you were secured of long abode on Earth; and you lay your Designs with presumptuous Confidence, where and how long you will dwell, trade and gain, whereas your Life on Earth is a mere uncertain fugitive Vapour, quickly gone.

15. For that ye ought to say, If the Lord will, we shall live, and do this, or that. 16. But now ye rejoice in your boasts: all such rejoicing is evil.
Ch. 5. Wicked Rich Men.

15, 16. Whereas ye should remember the uncertainty and shortness of your lives, and design and do all in submissive dependence on the Will of God: But you fetch your Comfort from worldly things by your own vain prefiguration of long life, and hope of worldly prosperity: All such prefigurative carnal Comforts are evil.

17. Therefore be to him that knoweth to do good, and doth it not, to him it is sin.

17. And the brevity of Man's life, and the vanity of worldly gain, are things so notorious and undeniable to all men, especially to Christians that to let these Vanities loozen you from Christ and your obedience, is utterly unexecusable.

CHAP. V.

1. Go to now ye rich men, weep and howl for your miseries that shall come upon you.

2. But as do those that will yet cleave to the world, and take no warning, let me tell you to your sorrow, that dreadful miseries are coming upon you, the foretongue of which should make you weep and howl instead of your deceitful joy.

2. Your riches are corrupted, and your garments are moth-eaten. 3. Your gold and silver is cankered, and the rust of them shall be a witness against you, and shall eat your flesh as it were fire: ye have heaped treasure together for the last days.

2, 3. What are these Vanities which you have so inordinately affected? Your beloved Riches are not only corruptible, but corrupted by you, to your own sin and hurt: Your rich Clothing is a Moth-eaten Vanity: The Gold and Silver, which you have treasured up, is cankered and rusty, and the guilt signified by that rust, shall condemn you, and corrode your Consciences as fire. At great cost and labour you have treasured up Riches, but it is in effect, to be a prey to your enemies in the day of your destruction, and a witness in God's day of the judgment against your selves to your own confusion.

4. Behold the hire of the labourers, which have reaped down your fields, which is of you kept back by fraud, crieth: and the cries of them which have reaped, are entered into the ears of the Lord of sabbaths (or hoasts).

4. You Jews are addicted to covetousness, and by that to injury and oppression, and you deny poor labourers their wages, and defraud them, and God heareth their cries, and will revenge them on you.

5. Ye have lived in pleasure on the earth, and been wanton: ye have nourished your hearts, as in a day of slaughter.

5. Your riches have been provision for your sensuality: You have by them made provision for the lust of the flesh, and lived in pleasure, revelling, and luxury, and lasciviousness, and have fed and drenched the flesh, and its delights, as in a continual feast.

6. Ye have condemned and killed the just, and he doth not resist you.

6. Your riches have lifted you up into power, which you have abused in condemning and killing innocent men, who have not resisted you, but endured all.

Note 1. Some think that the Jewish Christians are here meant, to whom the Jews wrote; but sure they were not so degenerate. 2. Some think it was the Gnostick Heretics. 3. I think it is much more probable, that by an Apostle, he speaketh to the rich infidels, to introduce his exhortation to the Christians to patience.

7. Be patient therefore, brethren, unto the coming of the Lord: behold the husbandman waiteth for the precious fruit of the earth, and hath long patience for it, until he receive the early and latter rain. 8. Be ye also patient, stablish your hearts: for the coming of the Lord draweth nigh.

7. But as for you, perfected Christians, bear all this patiently, without discouragement, tiredness, or wavering in your faith: For the time is short, and the coming of Christ for your deliverance is not far off: If in your husband, ye leave yourself not to reap as soon as you have sowed, but wait for the harvest and fruit, and for the showers that must ripen it; should you not more patiently wait for greater things, when the time will quickly come?
9. Grudge not one against another, brethren, let ye be con- lemmed; behold, the judge standeth before the door.

9. Make not too great a matter of your Wrongs, nor quarrel among your selves, as the Jewish Zealots, mentioned by Jeptha, did) left while you condemn one another, all condemn themselves, and sitting and devouring one another, you be devoured one of another: Stay but a little, and the Judge, who is at hand, will avenge you of your Enemies, and end all your Quarrels, which Ignorance and Pride have made, and kept up among your selves.

10. Take, my brethren, the prophets, who have spoken in the name of the Lord, for an example of suffering affliction, and of patience.

10. You justly honour the Prophets, who have spoken, as sent from God: Remember how they were used, and how they suffered, and let them be your Example, and imitate them in Patience.

11. Behold, we count them happy which endure. Ye have heard of the patience of Job, and have seen the end of the Lord: that the Lord is very pitiful, and of tender mercy.

11. It is part of our Faith, to believe that they are happy who patiently suffer for Righteousness sake: You have heard of Job's Patience, and of the end which God intended and accomplished, which tells us, that God is full of Pity and Mercy to us, when he afflicted us.

12. But above all things, my brethren, swear not, neither by heaven, neither by the earth, neither by any other oath: but let your yea be yea: and your nay, nay: left ye fall into condemnation.

12. And I must specially exhort you to avoid customary, needless Swearing by Heaven or Earth, or any Oath; but let No and Nay serve you, and be true of your Word, that you be not drawn into a just Supplication of Falseness, (or condemned for prophaning the Name of God.)


13. In your affliction, have present recourse to God by Prayer (in Faith and Hope) and when you are cheerful and merry, turn it to God's Praise and Thanksgiving for his Mercies, in singing Holy Songs to God.

14. Is any sick among you? let him call for the elders of the church, and let them pray over him, anointing him with oil in the name of the Lord: 15. And the prayer of faith shall save the sick, and the Lord shall raise him up; and if he have committed sins, they shall be forgiven him.

14. 15. When any of you is sick, let him send for the Bishops or Pastors of the Church, and let them pray over him, anointing him with Oil in the Name of the Lord, as a sign and means which he hath appointed for miraculous Cures: And if it be the Prayer of Faith, and he be a Person capable and fit for that Deliverance, it shall recover him from his Sickness, and God shall raise him; and if his Sickness be a corrective Punishment for any sin that he hath committed, God will forgive him, and take off that Penalty, if he repent.
Ch. 5. The Efficacy of Prayer. Ch. 7.

James 4:8

Note 1. That this implied, that each Church had divers Elders: and whereas Dr. H. thinks it meanteth one single Bishop, who, the ancients say, visited all the Sick, you may see then how great their Dioceses were. Should all the Bisk Men in London, or in many Countries, fend for the Bishop, he would come but to a few of them, at least forty or eighty Miles off: But it will be said, He may do it by others: And why not give Orders and Sacraments by others, (as Lay-men now use the Keys,) And if the Work be proper to Bishops, those others then are made Bishops; if not, others may do it.

2. Anointing (being healthful to dry Bodies in those hot Countries) was used by Christ's appointment for miraculous Cures, and never made a Duty or Sacrament to continue when Miracles cease.

3. Sicknesses are usually corrective Punishments for Sin; and to forgive the sin as to that Penalty, is to remit the Punishment, and heal the sick.

4. The Promise of Pardon and Recovery, preface the Person penitent, and fits for that Deliverance.

16. Confess your faults one to another, and pray one for another, that ye may be healed: the effectual fervent prayer of a righteous man availeth much.

16. Therefore penitently confess your Faults to one another (especially to the Elders that visit you) and pray one for another; for this is the likely way of your Recovery: the effectual, fervent, instant Prayer of a Righteous Man is of great force or prevalence.

Note 1. An impenitent Man is unfit for Pardon; and therefore, for Deliverance from Punishment; and he that doth not penitently confess and bewail his sin, cannot be judged a true Penitent; and therefore cannot be prayed for with that Faith and Hope as we may do for the Penitent. This is not to be a customary thing, or only to a Priest, but it's a Duty both in Sickness and Health, wherever the expression of Repentance to others is a Duty. By which alas, we know how rare true Repentance is, when even Professors of Zeal in Religion are sharp in confessing and blaming others; and except a very few humble Souls, if they be never so justly blamed or reproved, do swell against the Reprover with Pride and Indignation as if he were their Enemy: And they that separate from the Churches for want of Discipline, are earnestly for others, but cannot bear on themselves; nor so much as endure Confutation of their Errors, but take him very much against Godliness, who speaketh against their Misdemeanors and Faults; and too many (like the Prophet) will turn again and all to rend him.

17. Elias was a man subject to like passions as we are, and he prayed earnestly that it might not rain; and it rained not on the earth by the space of three years and six months. 18. And he prayed again, and the heaven gave rain, and the earth brought forth her fruit.

17, 18. Think not that Prayer is a vain or unfruitful thing, though we be sick and faulty men. Elias was but a man, liable both to sufferings, and to a troubled mind in them, as we are; yet on his earnest Prayer, it rained not on an idolatrous Persecuting Country for three years and a half; and as his Prayer, it rained again, and the Land was fruitful.

19, 20. Brethren, if any of you do err from the truth, and one convert him; Let him know, that he which converteth the sinner from the error of his way, shall save a soul from death, and shall hide a multitude of sins.

19, 20. I beseech you, Brethren, be neither negligent or dissembling to the care of men in error, nor yet impatient with them that would detect your Errors, and convince you and bring you to Repentance (as proud impenitent Persons are); But know that (as all men, alas, are too prone to error) if any man err from the truth (through ignorance or a corrupted will,) and one convert him, he that converteth a sinner from his error in mind or life, doth not only do that which tendeth to save his life from Gods punishing stroke, but also shall save his Soul from everlasting death, and procure the Pardon of his manifold sins, not only so far that the Church, but God himself, shall receive him into a reconciled state.
The First Epistle General of (the Apostle) Saint PET E R.

CHAP. I.

1. Peter an apostle of Jesus Christ, to the strangers scattered throughout Pontus, Galatia, Cappadocia, Asia, and Bithynia, 2. Elect according to the foreknowledge of God the Father, through sanctification of the Spirit unto obedience, and sprinkling of the blood of Jesus Christ: grace unto you and peace be multiplied.

1. Peter an Apostle (not called the Universal Bishop or Head, or Governor of the Church,) to the dispersed Jews through Pontus, &c. chosen by grace, out of that unbelieving forlorn Nation, according to God's foreknowledge and unsearchable Counsel, to Sanctification by the Holy Ghost, and to Obedience, and to a State of Reconciliation and Justification, by the Merit of the Blood of Christ applied. Grace and Peace multiplied to you, is my Prayer and Benediction.

2. Blessed be the God, and Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, which according to his abundant mercy, hath begotten us again unto a lively hope, by the resurrection of Jesus Christ from the dead.

3. Blessed be God the Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, who out of his abundant mercy, for the manifestation and Glory of it, hath regenerated us to a living hope, even a hope of Glorious Life, procured, notified and secured to us, by the Resurrection of Christ from the dead.

4. To an inheritance incorruptible, and undefiled, and that fadeth not away, reserved in heaven for you: 5. Who are kept by the power of God through faith unto salvation, ready to be revealed in the last time.

4. 5. Not to such a corruptible, defiled, fading Inheritance, as Earth is to its lovers, but to an Inheritance incorruptible, undefiled and holy, never fading, reserved by the Divine Love and Decree, and by the Possession, Intercession and Promise of Christ, for you who are true Believers, and are kept by the power of God through that Faith, which he hath given you, and you keep and exercise unto Salvation, which are long will be gloriously revealed to your sight and possession, the last time being not far off.

Note;
what manner of time the Spirit of Christ which was in them did signify, when it testified beforehand the sufferings of Christ, and the glory that should follow.

10. 11. Of this great Salvation and Kingdom of Christ Incarnate, which is dated from his Resurrection, and perfected at his next coming, many Prophets foretold in their manner and degree; and they enquired, and diligently searched, more explicitly to have known it, and the time when it should be, when the Spirit in them foretold that the Messiah must suffer, and in general, that Glorious things should follow.

12. Unto whom it was revealed, that not unto themselves, but unto us they did minister the things which are now reported unto you by them that have preached the gospel unto you, with the holy Ghost sent down from heaven, which things the angels desire to look into.

12. And it was revealed to them, that it was not to come to pass in their days, and that it was not they, but ye that should see the Messiah, and his Special Kingdom, and the things which since his Resurrection, are now preached to you by his Ministers, with the Seal of the Holy Spirit sent down in a special abundance from Heaven, to be the Witness of Christ, and the Sanctifier of Souls; a mystery so great, and of so excellent importance, that the Angels think it worthy their search.

13. Wherefore gird up the loins of your mind, be sober, and hope to the end, for the grace that is to be brought unto you at the revelation of Jesus Christ.

13. Wherefore, as runners gird their Cloaths to them, that they trouble them not; do you sanctify your minds with holy Resolution, and soberly watch, and keep up your Hope until the end; for that Glorious effect of Redemption and Grace, which you shall see and enjoy at the day of Christ's Glorious appearing, which shall answer all your Hopes.

14. As obedient children, not fashioning your selves according
1. Salvation by Christ I. Peter.  

Ch. 1.  

... 14. And as obedient Children of God, to whom you are reconciled, no more living as you did in the time of your ignorance, in fleshly lusts, and worldly vices:  

15. But as he which hath called you is holy, so be ye holy in all manner of conversation;  

16. Because it is written, Be ye holy, for I am holy.  

17. And if ye call on the Father, who without respect of persons judgeth according to every man's work, pass the time of your sojourning here in fear:  

18. Forasmuch as ye know that ye were not redeemed with corruptible things, as silver and gold, from your vain conversation received by tradition from your fathers;  

19. But with the precious blood of Christ, as of a Lamb without blemish and without spot.  

20. Who verily was foreordained before the foundation of the world, but was manifest in these last times for you;  

21. Who by him do believe in God that raised him up from the dead, and gave him glory, that your faith and hope might be in God.  

22. Whom God had fore-ordained before the foundation of the World; but (though oft prophesied of) was not incarnate and manifest in the flesh, till these last times, even for you that live since his coming, who are not by him, drawn, as we are falsely accused, from the true and only God, but by him are taught the true knowledge of God, and to believe that God to be God indeed, wise, good and almighty, who raised Christ from the dead, and gave him glory; and so that your Faith and Hope might be ultimately in God alone, by Christ's Meditation.  

22. Seeing ye have purified your souls in obeying the truth through the Spirit, unto unfeigned love of the brethren: see that ye love one another with a pure heart fervently.  

23. And as you have purified your souls from former error and sin, by obeying the Gospel, by the work of God's Spirit, unto unfeigned love of Christian Brethren, be sure to keep up that Love, and with a pure heart, and deep affection, to love each other.  

24. Being born again, not of corruptible seed, but of incorruptible, by the word of God which liveth and abideth for ever.  

25. Seeing you are not only Brethren by corruptible generation and relation, but of incorruptible seed, by the Word of God, who liveth and abideth for ever, and so must your incorruptible love to each other, which is part of your incorruptible nature.  

26. For all flesh is as grass, and all the glory of man, as the flower of grass: the grass withereth, and the flower thereof falleth away:  

27. But the word of the Lord endureth for ever.  

And this is the word which by the gospel is preached unto you.
24, 25. For all flesh, and all its glory, is a fading, dying thing, like the grass and flower: But God's Word is everlasting Truth, as Christ the Author is, and is our Guide to an Everlasting Life: And this true Word is it which we preach to you by the Gospel, and befeecheth endless constancy in your holy love and obedience.

CHAP. II.

1. Wherefore laying aside all malice, and all guile, and hypocrisy, and envy, and all evil speakings, 2. As new born babes desire the sincere milk of the word, that ye may grow thereby:

1, 2. Lay aside therefore, and renounce all naughtiness, and all deceit, and hypocrisy, or counterfeiting, and all envy, and all speaking evil of others. And as new born babes, desirous, and seek, and drink in the rational Milk, (or intellectual) without fraud and mixture, that you may grow up to Salvation by it, which the mixture of heresie, or hypocrisy wovest vitiate, and inveigles against others wovest but turn it against your selves.

3. It to be ye have tasted that the Lord is gracious. 4. To whom coming, as unto a living stone, disallowed indeed of men, but choosen of God, and precious.

5. Ye also as lively stones, are built up a spiritual house, and holy priesthood, to offer up spiritual sacrifices, acceptable to God by Jesus Christ.

3, 4, 5. And if you are Christians indeed, and have had a Spiritual relish of the love of God in Christ, you must suppose his Church to be like an House, in which every stone is a living man, and Christ is the chief Foundation stone, as the Lord of Life, on whom all the building is erected, rejected indeed by the Jews, and Heathen Rulers, but choosen of God to this blessed Office, and more Precious than any Pearl, and coming to him the Foundation as to many living stones your selves, you being cemented to him, and to one another, are made one Spiritual House of God, yea as a Temple, in which you are all Priests, to offer Daily Sacrifice to God; which will accept through the Intercession of great High Priest Jesus Christ: For Prayer and Praise may be thus spoken (Think thus of Gods House, and you will be for sweeping and repairing it, will never be for dividing, dimming or separating from it.)

6. Wherefore it is contained in the scripture, Behold, I have laid in Sion a chief corner stone, precious; and he that believeth on him shall not be confounded.

6. This the Scripture foretold. Lay in Zion, &c. That is, I have built Church a Saviour, and a King, and the Church shall be founded: shall be put to shame, by the fruits of their Faith, Hope and Obedience, and put their trust in him.

7. Unto you therefore who believe he is precious; but unto them which be disobedient, as the stone which the builders disdained, the same is made the head of the corner, And a stone of stumbling, and a rock of offence, even to them which stumble at the word, being disobedient, unto whom also they were appointed.

7. To you who believe, as being esteemed precious, so will he be a stone of grace of his grace to you: But to them that obey not the Gospel, but are under the rejecters of him, he whom the Jews Rulers did refuse, is the foundation of the Church, and feed his Kingly Power. He is that which they stumble and fall, and on which the Adversaries do in pieces, even they that unbeliever, and quarrel against him: To which disturbed their sin is the righteous God, to them.

9. But ye are a chosen nation, a royal priesthood, a peculiar people, should shew forth the praises of him, who hath called you out of darkness into his marvellous light:

9. But as the Israelites were
proper Covenant of peculiarity, separated to God from the rest of the World, and called a chosen Generation, a royal Priesthood, an holy Nation, a peculiar People, especially as typifying the Christian Church; so are you more eminently a chosen Seed of Christ by his Spirit, a dignified Kingdom of Priests, who are all designed to reign with Christ; and all may have access to God, a Nation or sort of men sanctified by dedication to God, though all the World be his, you are his peculiarly, and have the Covenant and Privileges of Peculiarity, having greater mercies than the rest of the World, that as Priests, you may stand daily before God, and celebrate his praises, who hath called you out of the darkness of ignorance, and unbelief, and wickedness, into that marvellous Light, by which you know him the Father of Lights.

10. Which in time past were not a people, but are now the people of God: which had not obtained mercy, but now have obtained mercy.

11. Who were under the Roman Captivity, and scattered over the Earth, and alienated from God by unbelief, but now are made Christ’s Free-men, and Fellow-Citizens with the Saints, and have obtained that mercy, which unbelievers do receive.

12. Dearly beloved, I beseech you as strangers and pilgrims, abstain from fleshly lusts, which war against the soul.

13. But you are yet Strangers and Sojourners in the Countries where you are scattered, and indeed on Earth; therefore earnestly beseech you to abstain from that fleshly pleasure and life, which usually the fruit of wealth and prosperity in the world, and are warring Enemies, against the holy Inclinations, Motions and Works of the Holy Spirit.

14. Having your conversation honest among the Gentiles, that whereas they speak against you as evil-doers, they may by your good works which they shall behold, glorifie God in the day of visitation.

15. And let your conversation, among the Heathens, be so just, and decent, and exemplary, that they that now speak against you, as if you were a sort of bad, deluded, contemptible men, through prejudice and malicious fame, may by your excelling all others in good works, rejoice, and give glory to God, when he shall visit you with deliverance from your oppressors, and shall exalt you.

16. Submit your selves to every ordinance of man for the Lord’s sake, whether it be to the King, as supreme. 14. Or unto governors, as unto them that are sent by him for the punishment of evil-doers, and for the praise of them that do well.

17. For so is the will of God, that with well-doing ye may put to silence the ignorance of foolish men.

18. Your Peace and safety is not to be look’d for by resisting and conquering the Powers that are over you, but by due submission and patience while you obey God, to silence those ignorant, foolish men, who, falsely reproach you as a turbulent and unruly sort of People, for differing from them in Religion, and obeying God before men.

19. As free, and not using your liberty for a cloak of maliciousness, but as the servants of God.

20. You are indeed Christ’s Free-men, delivered from true servitude to Sin and Satan; but you are God’s Servants, and must obey him, in using your Christian Liberty to his glory, in your appointed way of duty; and not as a covering for any evil.


22. In short; Give all men their due respect: Love all Christians, especially Christian Societies or Churches, with a special
22. Who did no sin, neither was guile found in his mouth.
23. Who when he was reviled, reviled not again, when he suffered, he threatened not, but committed himself to him that judgeth righteously.
24. Who never did ill, in word or deed, and yet being scornd and reviled, he returned not to them the like, nor gave them one ill word for another; nor threatened revenge when he suffered by them, but prayed for the pardonable, and committed all to God the righteous Judge.
25. Who his own self bare our sins in his own body on the tree, that we being dead to sin, should live unto righteousness; by whose stripes we were healed.
26. And never think much to imitate the Patience of your Lord, considering what he did therein for us: For it was the punishment of our sins, which, as a Sacrifice, he bare in his suffering body on the Cross, that we being dead to sin, as he died for sin, might live to righteousness; as he revived and rose: And he that beareth you by his own stripes, will not let you be finally loosed by any stripes which you endure in obedience to him.

22. For ye were as sheep going astray, but are now returned unto the Shepherd and Bishop of your souls.
23. For in your state of ignorance and unbelief, you were like wandering, lost Sheep, but now you are converted, and come home to the true Shepherd and Bishop of your Souls, who keepeth you, and will feed and fave you:

**CHAP. III.**

1. Likewise, ye wives, be in subjection to your own husbands, that if any obey not the word, they also may without the word be won by the conversation of the wives:
1. And though wives be not Servants, yet a loving subjection and obedience to their Husbands is their duty; so that their Husbands be unbelievers, and are not converted by Ministers preaching, yet the conversation of their Wives may be such.
1. Peter.

Ch. 3. The Duties of Wives

Ch. 3.

2. While they behold your chaste conversation coupled with fear.

3. Whose adorning, let it not be that outward adorning, of plaiting the hair, and of wearing of gold, and of putting on of apparel:

4. But let it be the hidden man of the heart, in that which is not corruptible, even the ornament of meek and quiet spirit, which is in the sight of God of great price.

5. For after this manner in the old time, the holy women also who trusted in God adorned themselves, being in subjection unto their own husbands.

6. Even as Sara obeyed Abraham, calling him lord, whose daughters ye are as long as ye do well, and are not afraid with any amazement.

7. Likewise ye husbands, dwell with them according to knowledge, giving honour unto the wife as unto the weaker vessel, and as being heirs together of the grace of life, that your prayers be not hindered.

4. But labour to excel in that which is the truest and precious ornament, which is the New Creature, of a right frame of heart, which is not like beauty, or apparel, or gold, a corruptible thing; and specially an humble, meek and quiet spirit, void of pride, and passion, and of an unquiet mind, that troubleth it self, and those that are about such; that is hardly pleased, nor can live pleasingly to others, but keep themselves, and their Families in discontent, and uncomfortable trouble. God is the Judge of our amiables, whom you must specially please: And he highly valueth this meek and quiet spirit.

5. For after this manner in the old time, the holy women also who trusted in God adorned themselves, being in subjection unto their own husbands.

6. This was the chief adorning of those holy Women, whose praises you read of in the Scripture, who trusted in God, being in reverent and loving submission to their Husbands.

7. Even as Sara obeyed Abraham, calling him lord, whose daughters ye are as long as ye do well, and are not afraid with any amazement.

8. And thus Sarah, the believing Wife of Abraham, the Father of the Faithful, obeyed and reverenced her Husband, and spake of him as her superior, and you will be the Daughters and Successors of her Faith and Blessing, as long as you do well, and are obedient to God and your Husbands, and give not way to those vexations, caustics fears, which your Sex is much liable to, and which signifies too little trust in God, especially when they would fright you from your duty.

9. Likewise ye husbands, dwell with them according to knowledge, giving honour unto the wife as unto the weaker vessel, and as being heirs together of the grace of life, that your prayers be not hindered.

10. And you, Husbands, must dwell with them, as becometh those that should teach and guide them, and therefore should excel them in knowledge, and help to edify them; and because their parts are supp

63, 64
Ch. 3. Unity, and Patience  I. Peter.  

in Persecution. Ch. 3.

8. Finally, be ye all of one mind, having compassion one of another, love as brethren, be pitiful, be courteous: 9. Not rendering evil for evil, or railing for railing: but contrariwise blessing, knowing that ye are thereunto called, that ye should inherit a blessing.

8. Yea, let all Christians be of one mind, and live in concord, not exagitating, but compassionating, each others infortunates and sufferings, loving as Christian Brethren ought: pitiful to those that need you, and humble and courteous to all; not hurting those that hurt you, nor railing at those that rail at you, as if you might lawfully revenge evil with evil; but contrarily bless those, and give them good words, which give you evil ones: For Christ by his Word, Example and Mercies, hath called and obliged you to this, that you may be blest of God.

10. For he that will love life, and see good days, let him refrain his tongue from evil, and his lips that they speak no guile. 11. Let him eschew evil and do good, let him seek peace, and enufe it.

11. For as it is said, Psal. 34. He that will love life, &c. Seeing you love life, and would live in peace and quietness, the likeliest means to attain this is, 1. To keep your Tongues from speaking evil of any man, and from all other evil. 2. And from falseness, deceit and dissimulation, (for it is mens own unbridled Tongues which bring most of their troubles on them, and false words that hide faults, at last detected, expose men more.) 3. Avoid all real evil, and then your Righteousness will appear through the Veil of malicious flanders, and falseness will be detected, and not long hide your Innocency. 4. And do all the good you can to all men, as well as your immediate Duty to God: And Nature having a love to such as do us good, and a reverence of God, such good works, and well doing, will powerfully justify you in the Consciences of most men. 5. And stand not contentiously on your right, but whatever men are or do, seek peace with all, and be not soon weary, but follow after it till in hope.

12. For the eyes of the Lord are over the righteous, and his ears are open unto their prayers: but the face of the Lord is against them that do evil.

12. And this is not meer policy to please men, but whatever they be, it is God that your lives and peace depend on, and he that commandeth this, is pleased with it, and his Eyes watch over you for good, to save you from unreasonable men, and he heareth their prayers in all distresses: while evil speakers and doers, God himself is more against, than men.

13. And who is he that will harm you if ye be followers of that which is good?

13. If your Zeal in Religion be a Zeal of good works, to fret your selves earnestly, as to obey God, so to do good to all men; he must be a very impious and diabolical man, that will for this fret against you: It is the likeliest way to your quietness.

14. But and if ye suffer for righteousness sake, happy are ye, and be not afraid of their terror, neither be troubled:

14. But I confess such blinded, unreasonable, malignant Slaves and Executioners Satan hath, that will persecute you, even for Righteousness sake: But this is the way to, and prognostick of your reward and happiness: And therefore let not men threats, rage, or cruelty, terrifie or trouble you, seeing you shall be unspakely gainer by it.

15. But sanctifie the Lord God in your hearts, and be ready always to give an answer to every man that asketh you a reason of the hope that is in you, with meekness and fear:

15. But let God always be in your hearts.
Ch. 3. Unity, and Patience. I. Peter. in Persecution. Ch. 3.

18, 19, 20. Being put to death indeed as to the flesh, but made alive as to the Spirit, (or by the Spirit,) in which (or by which) he went and preached to the Spirits in Prison, which hereafter, in the days of Noah, were refractory, and harden'd in sin and disobedience, while the long-suffering of God endured them, and waited for their Repentance, while the Ark was making and preparing, and Noah preaching to them; yet so impenitent were they to the left, that only eight were saved by the Ark.

Note: It's no wonder that Expositors of this Text differ: Some think that by the Spirit should rather be [in the Spirit] or [as to it] put in direct distinction from the Body; and that it's an Argument for the immortality of the Soul, by quickened being meant only that his Soul was alive, while his Body was dead; and that in that Soul he went then and preached to imprisoned sinners, that were drowned in the Flood, say some, to shew them his Triumph, and what Salvation they left; and say they, This is it that is called his Deceiv'd; g to Hell, say others, to offer them mercy once again; say others, to bring some penitents from their long imprisonment: But others think, that by Spirit is meant the Power of God, or the Divine Nature of Christ, or the Holy Ghost, (not Christ's Soul again entering into his Body) and that the preaching meant, was by Christ's Spirit in Noah before the Flood, and not after his Death. To name other Expositions, or the Reasons given for each, would but perplex the Reader, unless I were able to clearly affect one of the Expositions, as to confute all the rest. They that think Christ's Soul and Godhead preach to Spirits while his Body lay in the Grave, suppose that those Spirits knew it whom it concerned: But if it had been necessary for us to know not only Christ's preaching to our selves but to them, he would surely have more clearly told it us.

21. The like figure whereunto, even baptism, doth also now save us (not the putting away of the filth of the flesh, but the answer of a good conscience towards God) by the resurrection of Jesus Christ:

21. And that Salvation from the Deluge by the Ark, prefigureth our Salvation in
the Church from God's wrath by Baptism, and that through the power of Christ's Resurrection, to which we begin our Conformity, when we are raised to Holiness by his Spirit, as we rise out of the Water in Baptism: But by Baptism I mean not that the outward act of washing the Body serveth to this Salvation; nor must you think that God layeth it on any outward Ceremony, save as it is the exercise of our Obedience and Faith: But it is the faithful answer to God of a resolved Soul in the Covenant of Baptism, who when asked, doth profess and promise to believe in, and give it up itself, to God the Father, Son and Holy Ghost, and to Renounce the World, the Flesh and the Devil, Baptism is but the celebration of this saving Covenant; and it is Covenanting sincerely that is the Condition of Salvation, and Washing is but the sign.

22. Who is gone into heaven, and is on the right hand of God, angels, and authorities, and powers being made subject unto him.

22. And well may I say, that Christ's Resurrection saith sincerely baptized Covenanters, as God by the Ark did Noah, &c. when Christ thus risen, is gone into Heaven, advanced to the highest Authority and Honour, all Angels, and all Authorities and Powers in Heaven or Earth, being made subject, as his Enemies to their voice, and his Servants to their joy, shall shortly find; so that he is fully able to give and do for us whatsoever he hath promised, and we need.

CHAP. IV.

1. Forasmuch then as Christ hath suffered for us in the flesh, arm your selves likewise with the same mind: for he that hath suffered in the flesh, hath ceased from sin: 2. That he no longer should live the rest of his time in the flesh, to the lusts of men, but to the will of God.

1, 2. Let then the sufferings of Christ have their due effect on you, in conforming you to his death, that you may, as crucified or dead men, give over sinning, being as dead to fleshly lusts; that ye no longer live the rest of your time in the flesh, according to the lusts of your selves, or any temp-

3. For the time past of our life may suffice us to have wrought the will of the Gentiles, when we walked in lasciviousness, lusts, excesses of wine, revellings, banqueting, and abominable idolatries:

3. Alas, we did too long live according to Heathen Sensuality (and that time cannot be called back) even in lasciviousness and lusts, (either fornication or immodesties that tend thereunto) and in excess of wine or strong drinks, in revellings, and banqueting, or unnecessary feastings, to gratify fleshly appetite and lusts, and in the Bacchanals and jovialties of their idolatry.

4. Wherein they think it strange that you run not with them to the same excess of riot, speaking evil of you:

4. And though it is monstrous and against humanity, that reasonable men should thus live like brutes, yet they stand and wonder at you, as if you were the monsters, or strange people, because you will not be as bad and mad as they; and run with them brutishly against God, and Faith, and Reason, into this sensual excess of sports, lust and riot.

5. Who shall give account to him that is ready to judge the quick and the dead.

5. But the time is near when, for all this, they must come to Judgment, and a sad account they must shortly give to the Righteous Judge of all the World.

6. For, for this cause, was the gospel preached also to them that are dead, that they might be judged according to men in the flesh, but live according to God in the spirit.

6. But wonder not at their obloquy, nor imitate them; but look to the Example of the Martyrs, and those that are dead in Christ, who received and obeyed the Gospel preached to them, that while they were judged and perfected in the flesh according to the rage of men, they might live in the Spirit unto God, and obtain his Glory through all such suffering.

7. But
7. But the end of all things is at hand; be ye therefore sober, and watch unto prayer.

8. And above all things have fervent charity among yourselves; for charity shall cover the multitude of sins.

Note 1. The two Extremes that in all Ages have torn the Church, should have regarded these words of Peter.

1. The Papal Church-teasers, that persecute all that confess not to their Canons, Forms and Shadows, should have remembered above all things (even above your pretended plea for Obedience to you, and Decency and Order) have fervent Love: 2. And the paffive Separatifs, that can find faults enough in the Orders and Forms, and Ceremonies of Churches, to separate from the communion of almost all on Earth, should have deplor'd received such Texts as this [above all your superstitious pretences to more purity of Churches, and better Discipline, have fervent charity.]

3. It is but partiality and jealousy of the Cause of Justification against the Papists, which maketh some excellent Expositors distort this Text, so as to exclude from its sense, God's covering of our sins; because they consider not aright. 1. That Pardon, as continued and as renewed for daily renewed sins, hath more for the condition of it required in us, than the first Pardon and begun Justification hath: The first act of found Faith svereth for the beginning, but the

continuance of it, with its necessary fruits, is necessary to the continuance and renewing of Pardon. 2. That the Faith which is required to Justification and Pardon, is giving up our selves to God the Father, Son, and Holy Ghost, in the Baphtinal Covenant: That is, our Christianity, which is not put in opposition to that Love or Repentance, which is still implied as part of the same Covenant Content, or its necessary fruit: but to the Works of the Law of Moses, or of Works, or any that are set in competition with Christ, and Free Grace.

If prejudice hindred not Men, the reading of the Angel's words to Cornelius, and of Christ's [forgive, and ye shall be forgiven] and the Parable of the pardoned Debtor cast into Prison for not pardoning his Fellow-servant, with Jam. 2. and Matth. 25. would end all this controversy.

9. Use hospitality one to another without grudging. 10. As every man hath received the gift, even so minister the same one to another, as good stewards of the manifold grace of God.

10. As God hath given more or less of Riches or any of his gifts to any one, let him proportionable use them by free communication to them that need, remembering that all you have is freely given you of God, and that you are but his Stewards, and receive it not for provision for your Pride, or flethy Lufts, but for your Master's use, of which you must give an account.

11. If any man speak, let him speak as the oracles of God: if any man minister, let him do it as of the ability which God giveth, that God in all things may be glorified through Jesus Christ; to whom be praise and dominion for ever and ever. Amen.

12. Beloved, think it not strange concerning
Ch. 4. Comfort in Persecution. I. Peter.

concerning the fiery trial, which is to try you, as though some strange thing happened unto you.

32. Note. 1. Persecutions are for the trial of our Sincerity and Strength; and therefore our use of them, is to come out approved and refined. 2. No Christians should count them strange, because Christ taught us to expect them, and calls us to count our cross, and forake all. And counting them strange, swether that we came not to Christ on his terms of taking up the Cross, and Self-denial, as we ought.

33. But rejoice, as much as ye are partakers of Christ's sufferings; that when his glory shall be revealed, ye may be glad also with exceeding joy.

34. But instead of dejection, let it be your joy, that ye are now partakers of Christ's sufferings, that you are conformed therein to him, and suffer for him, that so you may have assurance that you shall be glorified with him; and meet him with exceeding joy at his great appearing.

35. If ye be reproached for the Name of Christ, happy are ye, for the spirit of glory, and of God resteth upon you: on their part he is evil spoken of, but on your part he is glorified.

36. Your patient suffering reproach for Christ, is a part and prognostick of your happiness: And should they that believe this, be impatient of their own good? For the Spirit of God, which is your Glory, and Glorifich him, and proveth his Love to you, is it that forbiddeth you: And as he is dishonoured by their Reproaches, for which they will suffer, so he is glorified by your fortitude and fidelity, for which you shall be fully rewarded.

37. But let none of you suffer as a murderer, or as a thief, or as an evil doer, or as a profane-body in other mens matters.

38. But sin is worse, and more shameful than suffering; and therefore be sure that you avoid Guilt, and that none of you suffer. 1. As a Murtherer, or hurter of others; 2. Or as a Thief or Defraudor of any; 3. Or for any evil deed; 4. Nor for playing the Bishop in other Mens Char-

Suffering of Christ. Ch. 4.
ges, or medling with other Mens matters, butly without a just call.

39. Yet if any man suffer as a Christian, let him not be ashamed, but let him glorifie God on this behalf.

40. But if any suffer patiently for Christ, or for well doing, take it not for a shame, but for an honour, and so behave your selves in it, as to honour God who honoureth you.

41. For the time is come, that judgment must begin at the house of God: and if it first begin at us, what shall the end be of them that obey not the Gospel of God?

42. As it is said, Ezek. 43. 4. 5. So now God, being entring on a course of judgment, will begin with the correction and trying of his Children, in which the Indels will by Execution increase their Guilt: And our sufferings now are a dreadful prognostick of theirs that follow in the end.

Note; How little caufe Wicked Men have to be glad of the Churches sufferings, when it prognosticateth a far more heavy Judgment on themselves!

43. And if the righteous scarce be saved, where shall the ungodly and the sinner appear?

44. And if the Righteous be saved (though certainly, yet) by so much labour, cost and suffering in this life, O how will ungodly Sinners stand in Judgment before a just condemning Judge?

45. Wherefore let them that suffer according to the will of God, commit the keeping of their souls to him in well doing, as unto a faithful Creator.

46. Therefore let us see that, if we suffer, it be for matter and manner according to God's will, and let our duty and well-doing be our care; and so let us wholly commit our Souls to the keeping and Love of our faithful Creator, and quietly trust him to preserve and save them.

C H A P. V.

1. To the elders which are among you I exhort, who am al-
Ch. 5. Elders to feed I. Peter.

1. The elder and wiser for being usually made Pastors of the Churches, I, who am an Elder in Age and Apostleship, and a Witness of Christ's Sufferings, and, on the Mount, had a glimpse of the Glory which shall be fully revealed and communicated, and have my right to it, and part in its fore-taste, do exhort and beseech them faithfully to over-see, and feed, and take care of, all the Flock which is among you; taking the Over-sight, or Episcopacy, of it, not as a burden unwillingly, but willingly; not for filthy Lucre, because the Pastors have double Honour and Maintenance, but out of love to Christ and the Church, with a ready cheerfulness to undergo all the trouble and danger of it.

Note 1. The Office of true Bishops is to feed and guide the Flock that is among them. What are they then, that have the name and title of being sole Bishops over a thousand, or many hundred or score, of Flocks, which are so far from being among them, or being fed by them, that the hundredth person never heard them teach, or saw their faces?

2. Though most Expositors apply μὴ ἀφεναικαιωθῶν, αλλὰ ἐρωτῶν, not by constraint, but willingly, to the Bishop's unwillingness of his work, yet Dr. Hammond applieth it to the Bishop's manner of guiding the Flock, as not constraining them by force, nor using violence in an active sense. And whether these words prove it or not, other Scriptures, and the nature of the Case, prove that Bishops have no power of Corporal Force, but of ruling by God's Word, and that none but Volunteers are capable of Church-privileges and Communion, and Pastoral Conduct.

3. They that seek and take a Bishoprick for filthy Lucre of the Benefice, Wealth and Worldly Honour, are Intruders that come not in Christ's way: And they that also cast out the use of the Keys from the particular Churches among them, and instead of it, rule secularly, by destructive force, and profligate the power of the Keys, by committing them to uncappable Lay-Men, to be used, sua modis, contrary to their nature and end, yea, against God for obeying God; do take God's Name and their sacred Titles in vain, for which God will not hold them guiltless.

3. Neither as being lords over God's heritage: but being enamples to the flock.

3. Nor, as if they were Lords of the Church, to domineer over the People of God, and rule them by the Sword or outward Force, or command them by Laws or Impositions of their own, besides the Ordering of Christ's own Ordinances in subservient Circumstances, for the Churches Edification, nor to extort from them a large Maintenance: But as becoming Enamples to the Flock, of all the Humility, Self-denial, Love and Patience, and all other Virtues which they preach.

Note: How can Men be such visible Examples to many hundred Flocks that never knew them?

4. And when the chief Shepherd shall appear, ye shall receive a crown of glory that fadeth not away.

4. And though you have no reward from Men, when Christ, the Redeemer, and Owner, and chief Ruler, Lover and Defender of his Church, shall come to Judgment, you shall receive from him your full reward, even a never fading Crown of Glory.

5. Likewise ye younger, submit your selves unto the Elder: yea, all of you be subject one to another, and be clothed with humility: for God resistereth the proud, and giveth grace to the humble.

5. And as Juniors are usually strict to be subject, you that are young, and Inferiors, submit your selves to the Teaching and Guidance of the Elder, especially the Pastors: Yea, let all Christians be as teachable, and willing to learn, and to Please the righteous Wills of one another, as if they were your Rulers, and you their Subjects: not inflicting too much on your Self-will, and Self-interest, or Liberty. And let Humility, which will cause this...
Condescension and Complaisance, be to you as your very Clothing and Ornaments, instead of proud Ostentation in Garb and Carriage: for God sets himself against proud Men, to bring them down, but the humble he doth countenance and exalt.

6. Humble your selves therefore under the mighty hand of God, that he may exalt you in due time: 7. Caring all your care upon him, for he careth for you.

6, 7. Seeing then that God's Judgments are abroad in the Earth, and it is the Almighty God in whose hand we and all things are, humble your selves under his hand, that he may exalt you in his appointed time: And wholly trust him with all your Concerns, and cast away all fruitful Care, for his Love and Providence will be your full Security.

8. Be sober, be vigilant; because your adversary the devil, as a roaring Lyon, walketh about, seeking whom he may devour.

8. Be sober, and not entangled with Baits of fleshly Pleasure; and be not careless, but as always watching: For the Devil, who pleadeth against you as your Accuser, is unwarried in Ravenous, Murderous Rage, seeking Night and Day to deceive you with his Temptations, and destroy you.

9. Whom resist steadfast in the faith, knowing that the same afflictions are accomplished in your brethren that are in the world.

9. Be steadfast therefore in the Faith, from which, Satan, by Temptations, would discourage you; and resist his ill Suggestion, occasioned by your Sufferings, remembering that it is not your case alone, but others also suffer with you: Yea, all that will live Godly in Christ, shall suffer Persecution.

10. But the God of all grace, who hath called us into his eternal glory by Christ Jesus, after that ye have suffered a while, make you perfect, stablish, strengthen, settle you. 11. To him be glory and dominion for ever and ever. Amen.

10, 11. But the God of all Grace, who hath already effectually called us into that state of Grace, in which we have right and comfortable hope of attaining his eternal Glory by the Redemption and Intercession of Christ Jesus, after you have suffered the short time of his Appointment, compagine and perfect you, and your several Churches, and establish, strengthen and settle you more firmly by the shaking of these Tryals, blessed by his Grace. And the Glory and Dominion which are his, he acknowledged in his praise for ever. Amen.

12. By Sylvanus, a faithful brother unto you, (as I suppose) I have written briefly, exhorting and testifying, that this is the true grace of God wherein ye stand.

12. By Sylvanus, a trusty Brother to you, as I reckon, I have written with sufficient Brevity; the scope of all being to exhort you to stand fast, and to testify to you, that this Christian Faith which we have preached, and you profess, is that true State or Kingdom of Grace, foretold by the Prophets, and expected by your Forefathers, and that there is no other Saviour, or way of Life; and therefore let no Deceivers, or Persecutors shake you.

13. The Church that is at Babylon, elected together with you, faitheeth you, and so doth Marcus my son.

13. Note: Some by Babylon, understand Rome: But seeing forcedSeneces are not to be received without cogent Reasons, I rather take it plainly for Babylon in Assyria, or that in Egypt.

14. Greet ye one another with a kiss of charity: peace be with you all that are in Christ Jesus. Amen.

14. Let the constancy of your mutual Christian Love be, on all meet occasions, expressed, by friendly kisling of Men with Men, and Women with Women (being now the ordinary expression of it,) Holy Peace (the Summary of Prosperity) be with you all, that are the true Members of Christ, the great Peace-maker. Amen.

Note 1.
Note, 1. That the thing made a common Christian Duty, is not Kissing, which is a mutable significatio; but it is Indecent Love epxr, $d. 2. But Kissing being then the common significatio of Love, was a Duty, where that signifying use, by custom, was continued as needful. 3. That 'tis doubtless, that all significant Actions, even in Worship, which are mention'd in Scripture, are not of standing Duty; nor such forbidden, that are not there mention'd or commanded in particular. For when God commanded in general the Expressions of Love, Humility, Reverence, Consent, &c. he leaven'd it to the Custom of the Countries, or natural Aptitude of the Action, or the Consent of many, or the Conduct of Rulers, by what Action these things shall be express'd: As Love, by this Kiss, or by Embracing, or making Hands; and Humility, by putting off the Hat, bowing, kneeling, &c. or Reverence, by the same Action (even in Worship) kneeling, bowing, standing, prostration, being uncovered, &c. Consent, by holding up the Hand, standing up, writing, &c. But this is no Warrant for them who will invent many practices, or things, which have no such significatio of Aptitude, and put on them a significatio of their own deviling, and command this to be used as a Badge and Symbol of Christianiety, and Federal Sign with God and Man, like Christ's own Sacraments, at least in a great part, and then to make thee the Tect and Condition of Christian Communion, ejecting and silencing all Christ's Ministers, and cutting off all Christians from Church-Cummonion who dare not use them, lest thereby they break the Law of God.

The Second General Epistle of Peter the Apostle.

CHAP. I.

Simon Peter, a servant and an apostle of Jesus Christ, to them that have obtained like precious faith with us, through the righteousness of God, and our Saviour Jesus Christ. 2. Grace and peace be multiplied unto you through the knowledge of God, and of Jesus our Lord.

1. Simon Peter, &c. to all Christians who have obtained the same precious Faith with us, which is founded in the precious price of our Redemption, and advancement to the Dignity of being Sons of God, through the Righteousness of God, which is manifested in his way of justifying us by the Merits of Christ's perfect Righteousness. Grace and Peace, which are the greatest Blessings that Man is capable of on Earth, be multiplied to you, which must be only through the knowledge of God, and of Jesus our Lord.

3. According as his divine power hath given unto us all things that pertain unto life and godliness, through the knowledge of him that hath called us to glory and vertue.

3. As his Divine Power hath, in and by Christ provided and given us all things necessary to Life present and everlasting, and to Godliness, which is the right use of this Life, and the way to a better: and this through the Knowledge of Christ, who hath called us to future Glory, and present Vertue.

Note; some read it [by Glory and Vertue] and expound it [by the Voice from Heaven that called Christ, the Beloved Son, and the Vertue or power of signal Miracles.]

4. Whereby are given unto us exceeding great and precious Promises; that by these you might be partakers of the divine nature, having escaped the corruption that is in the world through lust.

4. By which Calling are given unto us exceeding great and precious Promises, even God's Covenant of Grace, sure and sealed, that by these, as his Deed of Gift, or Instrument, conveying to us our Right to Christ,
Christ, and Grace, and Glory, we may be made Partakers of the Divine Nature, not only relatively, as it is in Christ, but also inherently, as it is the Renovation of our own Souls, to a holy Inclination Godward, by the Spirit of Adoption, like the love and likeness of a Child to the Father; being advanced hereby above the sensual corrupt Nature, and escaping the Pollutions of fleshly Lusts, which the World is defiled with, and would defile us by.

Note: Though a Nature strictly signifies some essential part, or inseparable Inclination, it here signifies a holy inclining Habit, called, A Nature, by resemblance; it being not the effect of a meer Art or Opinion, but a fixed Complacency, Love and Bent of the Soul towards God, and Holiness, and Heaven.

5. And besides this, giving all diligence, add to your faith, virtue; and to virtue, knowledge; and to knowledge, temperance; and to temperance, patience; and to patience, godliness; and to godliness, brotherly kindness; and to brotherly kindness, charity.

6. 7. And having the Divine Nature, let diligent Exercise reduce it to particular holy Habits. As you are Believers, let your Faith shew it self in holy Strength and Fortitude in all that is your Duty; and to that add a daily increasement of Knowledge in the things of God; and to that add a careful mortifying all fleshly Lusts, and abstaining from all forbidden Sensuality; and to that add, Patience under all wrongs, Crosses and Afflictions; and to that add, a zealous, holy, heavenly Observance of all the Duties of the first Table, or of Religion, publick and private; and to that add, a special Love to all Christian Brethren and Friends: And let all grow up to that highest Love to God, and to all Men, as he is interested in them, with an addidcedness to do them all the Good you can, which is the top of all our Graces.

8. For if these things be in you, and abound, they make you that ye shall neither be barren, nor unfruitful in the knowledge of our Lord Jesus Christ.

8. If you have these blessed Graces of Sanctification, you will be clearly differentiated from formal Hypocrites, whose Faith and Religion is but a barren, unfruitful Speculation; an Art, and not the Divine Nature.

9. But he that lacketh these things, is blind, and cannot see afar off, and hath forgotten that he was purged from his old sins.

9. But he that boasteth of his Faith, without these Virtues, is like a purblind Man, that can see nothing, but what is just near to him. Could they, with a lively Faith, foresee the things to come, it would waken their sluggish Souls to all this: And could they rightly look back to their Baptism, they would remember that they there virtually vowed all this, and were sacramentally washed from their old sins.

10. Wherefore the rather, brethren, give diligence to make your calling and election sure: for if ye do these things, ye shall never fail:

10. Therefore see that ye use your utmost diligence in the things aforesaid, that your Calling and Election may thereby be made firm, established and sure: For if you do these things, you shall not miscarry, nor come short of Salvation.

Note: It is a frivolous Contention that is raised about this Text; some disputing that it is only meant of sure Notification to our Consciences; and some, that it is to make us meet Objects of God's Decorative Election, and to make an uneffectual Calling turn to a more effectual. By Eletus is often meant God's actual taking us out of the World, into the Church; and is the same with Calling. The Greek here signifies, to make firm, and not only to make known. God's Promise is our Title to Salvation: This Promise maketh Faith the Condition of our first Right; but the Fruits of Faith, the Condition of our continued and final Right to Salvation. Therefore, as there is somewhat on our part necessary to our first Justification, besides God's part; so is there something more on our part necessary to our Right to Salvation, if we survive our Initiation which Christ describeth, Mark 25;) And the doing of this, making us capable Receivers of God's Free Gift, may as properly be said to make it sure, as our Faith to justify us: that is, it maketh up our Title.
16. For we have not followed cunningly devised fables, when we made known unto you the power and coming of our Lord Jesus Christ, but were eye-witnesses of his majesty.

17. For our doctrine of the Glorious Coming and Kingdom of Christ, is not a cunningly devised Fable; For we were eye-witnesses of a glimpse of that Glory in his Transfiguration, which he foretold us of as a resemblance of his last coming, and his Kingdom.

18. And this voice which came from heaven we heard, when we were with him in the holy mount.

19. And we have also a more sure word of prophecy, whereunto ye do well that ye take heed, as unto a light that shineth in a dark place, until the day dawn, and the day-star arise in your hearts:

20. Moreover, I will endeavour, that you may be able, after my decease, to have these things always in remembrance.

Note: That we must not be careful only for our own life time, but for a Succession and Continuance of Truth and Godliness when we are dead; left it die with us. Therefore we write,
II. Peter. Teachers, and Seducers. Ch. 2.

Ch. 1. False Prophets.

Note. The Word [more sure] signifies not more sure than the Gospel, but [very sure.] Or more sure to the Jews, than Peter's bare word of the Transfiguration, and Voice, on the Mount.

20. Knowing this first, that no prophecy of the scripture is of any private interpretation. 21. For the prophecy came not in old time by the will of man: but holy men of God spake as they were moved by the holy Ghost.

20, 21. But this you must first know, that no Prophecy of Scripture is to be expounded as speaking only of thosc Persons, whom the Speaker first meant, whether himself or others, nor according to the Speakers proper private thought: For the Prophecy came not in old time, by the Speakers own Wisdom, Knowledge, Invention or Will; but holy Men of God, were moved by God's Spirit to speak those Words, which signified more than they designed, or always meant and understood themselves.

Note. It seems strange to me that ἐξήγησις ὄπλος [proper or private interpretation] should be commonly by excellent Expositors misinterpreted, as if it spake of [proper or private Expositors] and so let Men on disputing who must be the Publick Expositor, when the Words plainly speak of [proper or private sense, or objective exposition.] As when David oft spakeeth Words which are immediately true of himself, or of Solomon, you must not expound them as meant properly of them who were private Persons, and so Types: For it was the Holy Ghost speaking in them, whose sense must be known, who meant Christ the publick Person as typified by the private, of whom they were first verified: And whether David (as in Ps. 2. 19. and such other) meant more than himself, and his Kingdom, or not, the Holy Ghost meant more. If Grotius were in the right, that [say meant but Jer. or Jsaiah in Isa. 53. it is certain that they were but typical, and the Holy Ghost meant Christ]. So that the plain sense is, that Scripture-Prophesy, receiving its full sense from the Spirit, and not from the Speaker, must not in our Exposition be appropriated narrowly to those private men, by whom, or of whom, they were proximately meant by the Speaker.

CHAP. II.

1. But there were false prophets also among the people, even as there shall be false teachers among you, who privily shall bring in damnable heresies, even denying the Lord that bought them, and bring upon themselvesswift destruction.

1. But one of your great Trials will be, as theirs of old, by false Prophets. So by false Teachers, who will rise up among your selves, and will by secret seducing Persons, with whom by familiarity they have advantage, bring in sects, holding damnable Errors, even by plain consequence denying Christ that bought them, while they deny what is essential to his Person and Offices (or teaching that he may be dealt with the Tongue in dangers for self-preservation, because God will have Mercy and not Sacrifice, as long as the Heart doth not deny him.

Note 1. That all Christians have need to be fortified against false Teachers, as well as against perverting Enemies.

2. Christ is called The Lord that bought them, not because they falsely professed that he bought them, as some say, but because he purchased and made to them a Deed of Gift of Christ, pardon and life, to be theirs on condition of believing Acceptance. And because they should not perish for want of a sufficient Sacrifice for sin.

2. And many shall follow their pernicious ways, by reason of whom the way of truth shall be evil spoken of.

2. And many that profess'd Christianity, shall be seduced by them, and follow their pernicious ways, by reason of whom malignant Enemies will take occasion to speak evil of Christianity, and make a Reproach of Truth and Godliness, as if we were all like this scandalous Sect.

3. And through covetousness shall they with feigned words make merchandise of you; whose judgment now of a long time lingereth not, and their damnation flumbereth not.

3. Note. 1. That the worldly covetous men, who are most to be suspected to be Traitors to the Church, as Judas was against Christ.
Christ for (for what will ye give me?) 2. All their seducing confidant Harangues, to this end, are but false and feigned Words. 3. Their business is to fell Souls to the Devil for their own Worldly Benefit, Gain or Honour, as Judas did his Master. 4. God is hastening to judge such Men with speed, as he did Judas, when his Gain was too hot to hold, and he hanged himself for betraying the Innocent.

4. For it God spared not the angels that sinned, but cast them down to hell, and delivered them into chains of darkness, to be reserved unto judgment: 5. And spared not the old world, but saved Noah the eighth person, a preacher of righteousness, bringing in the flood upon the world of the ungodly:

4, 5. Note, 1. These Angels were not in a fixed immutable state, but mutable by Free Will. 2. Their own sin was the cause of their misery. 3. For it they were cast down to Hell, that is a state of misery, reserved for more; though they are said to be the Powers of the Air, and to rule in the Children of Disobedience. 4. There they have their Prince and Kingdom. 5. Pride and Malice against God and Man, and Wickedness is their quality, warring against Christ and his Kingdom. 6. Tempting Men to sin is their Employment. 7. Their way against the Church is by LYING, MALICE and MURDER, in which wicked Men are their Slaves and Instruments. 8. So far as Men yield to sin by their Temptations, they fall into the fuller Power of them, both for further Temptations and Execution, by God’s permission.

6. And turning the cities of Sodom and Gomorrah into ashes, condemned them with an overthrow, making them an ensample unto those that after should live ungodly.

6. And with Fire from Heaven destroying Sodom and Gomorrah, and the adjacent villages, both Men and Houses, that the History of them, and the Tainting Lake that now poiletheth the place, might be a warning to the Ungodly.

7. And delivered just Lot, vexed with the filthy conversation of the wicked. 8. (For that righteous man dwelling among them, in seeing and hearing, vexed his righteous soul from day to day with their unlawful deeds.)

7, 8. Note, 1. Lot is called Just, from the report of his Life, though after he fell into very great sin.

2. Just Men are grieved at the overbreeding Wickedness of the Times and Places where they live, specially their Filthiness and their Rage against the Just.

3. God will deliver the Just from the Wicked, and from his Judgments on them.

9. The Lord knoweth how to deliver the godly out of temptations, and to reserve the unjust unto the day of judgment to be punished:

9. We may well trust, that God, who as he is just, and a hater of Sin and a lover of Righteousness, so knoweth how to deliver the Godly out of Temptations, so far as they should not be conquered by them, though they be tried, and to reserve the wicked and opposing Enemies to a full vindictive punishment at the Day of Judgment, though they prosper and triumph now.

10. But chiefly them that walk after the flesh, in the lust of uncleanness, and despise government; Presumptuous are they, self-willed, they are not afraid to speak evil of dignities.

10. Note; Dr. Hammond, who supposeth this spoken of the Gnostics, would sure think it a heinous Aggravation, if Governors themselves should prove Borborites or Gnostics, and walk after the Flesh, in the Lust of Uncleanness, and suppress Piety by Power. To use Dignities for sin, is worse than to despise them, or speak evil of them, for being evil; though this also is bad, and must be avoided. 2. The Dr. thinks that the Dignities here meant, are Apostles; I rather think it is Civil Rulers.

11. Whereas angels, which are greater in power and might, bring not railing accusation against them before the Lord.

11. Whereas the blessed Angels, which have more Power than Men, when they plead against Devils themselves, do it not.
by railing. Accusation, (as the instance in. Zachary thew.)

12. But these, as natural brute beasts, made to be taken and de-
stroyed, speak evil of the things, that they understand not, and shall
utterly perish in their own cor-
rup- tion.

12. But these are like wild brute Beasts, whom all Men seek to destroy for their
hurtfulness, and do speak Evil in proud ig-
norance of Doctrines, Practices and Per-
sons, which they understand not. do stir
up Men against themselves, and shall be
destroyed in their sin.

13. And shall receive the re-
ward of unrighteousness, as they
that count it pleasure to riot in the
day-time: spots they are and ble-
mishes, spotting themselves with
their own deceivings, while they
feast with you; 14. Having eyes,
full of adultery, and that cannot
cease from sin, beguiling unstable
souls: an heart they have exer-
cized with covetous practices;
cursed children:

13, 14. They shall be doubly punished
for living in Unrighteousness, and sensual
Riot, in the Light of the Gospel and Pro-
feッション of Christiandity. You admıt such to
feast with you, even as if they were of
your Societies, at Love-feasts and Sacra-
ments; but they are disgraceful Spots and
Blemishes in your Assemblies, and a Dis-
honour to the Christian Name: Their un-
clean Hearts have ungovern’d Eyes, fed
with enticing Objects of Lust, and let in
the Impregnations of filthy Pleasure into their
Imaginations, deceiving themselves, and
spotting away their own Souls, while they
allure and deceive others. Their Imagi-
nations and Minds are so habited to such
filthy Vice, that they cannot cease from it,
being unstable, and by the power of Sen-
suality cannot obey their own Convictions:
And where Lust reigneth, Covetousness ru-
leth to maintain it: They are such as God’s Word doth pronounce accursed,
whatever they profess.

15. Which have forsaken the
right way, and are gone astray,
following the way of Balaam, the
son of Beor, who loved the wages
of unrighteousness. 16. But was
rebuked for his iniquity: the
dumb as speaking with many
voice, forbade the madness of the
prophe-
ter.

15, 16. Covetousness hath drawn them
from the right way of Truth and Godli-
ness, and they stray in the way of Balaam
the Son of Beor, whom the Hire that bri-
bbed him to do Evil, was prevalent with to
attempt it: But he that by reason of the
love of Money and Honour, could not see
the Evil of his own Way, was rebuked by
dumb As, whom God made speak, to
evince and forbid the madness of such a
Prophe-
ter.

17. These are wells without wa-
ter, clouds that are carried with a
tempest, to whom the mist of
darkness is reserved for ever.

17. These are like Wells that have no
Water, having a barren Profession, that
will not save them: Clouds that seem to
be for fruitful Rains, but are only for
tempestuous Whirlwinds or Hurricanes,
dark in themselves, both now and for ever,
as well as troublesome and hurtful to oth-
ers.

18. For when they speak great
swelling words of vanity, they
allure through the lusts of the
flesh, through much wandering,
those that were clean escaped from
them who live in error.

18. For when they boast of their extra-
or-dinary Knowledge (of Angels, and other
unknown things, as the Heretics described
by Erroneous, Epiphanius, &c. then did ) and
withal, make Fleshly Licentiousness to be
Christian Liberty, their vain boasting
Words are but to serve their Fleshly Lust,
alluring by base Lasciviousness, some who
were quite come off from Heathenish and
Jewish Errors.

19. While they promise them
liberty, they themselves are the
servants of corruption; for of
whom a man is overcome, of the
same is he brought in bondage.

19. They tell the simple, that flesh-
pleasing and Lust is part of their Christian
Liberty, and that we are ignorant that
know not such things; when under all these promises of Liberty, they are the Slaves of Lust themselves, being conquered by them, and in bondage to them.

20. For if it after they have escaped the pollutions of the world through the knowledge of the Lord and Saviour Jesus Christ, they are again intangled therein, and overcome; the latter end is worse with them than the beginning.

21. For if after they have been convinced of the Heathen Abominations and filthy Practices, and have renounced them in Baptism, and forsaken them, and joined in the Communion of Saints by the acknowledgment of Christ, and the Christian Verity, they shall again return to the prac- tising of the same sins, on pretence of Knowledge and Christian Liberty, and so be overcome, their End will be more sinful and miserable, than was their Heathen fate of ignorant Pollution.

21. For it had been better for them not to have known the way of righteousness, then after they have known it, to turn from the holy commandment delivered unto them.

22. For their sin and misery had been less, if they had never known the way of righteousness revealed by the Gospel of Christ, than after they have known it, to forsake the owning or practice of the Commandments of holy and righteous living, which they received.

Note; Sins against present or former Knowledge in great Instances, have dangerous Aggravations, as coming from contempt of God, or odious deprivation of judgment after.

22. But it is happened unto them according to the true proverb, The dog is turned to his own vomit again, and the sow that was washed, to her wallowing in the mire.

23. But it is with them according to the Proverb, The Dog, &c. Their Natures were not renewed by the Holy Ghost, and made Holy or Divine; they were Dogs, though they had digg’d their Vomit, and Swine, though they were wash’d: No wonder then if temptation draw them to return to their Vomit, and to the mire of filthy sin again.

Note, What sort of Men these here described were, is not agreed on by all Expositors: But thus much seems clear, 1. That they were professed Christians. 2. That they lived in Sensuality and Fornication. 3. That they taught that these were lawful, and the use of them was Christian Liberty. 4. That to make this good, they joined with some Sect-matters, that boasted of more Knowledge than the Apostles and their Followers had, (as most Heretics do.) 5. That yet they did not wholly separate from the Christian Churches, nor the Churches cast them out (as they ought.) For they are said to feast with them, to be pets and blemishes to them, and Rev. 2. & 3. shews, that too many Churches had such among them, and did tolerate them; and that whole Societies were in danger of being corrupted by them; and the Churches threatened to be punished for having such Members. 6. Whatever Name some put on them, its plain they were those that are called Nicolaitans in Rev. 2. & 3. Qu. What if Bishops, Priests and People, should become such debauched, courteous Sensualists, and also set against serious Godliness, and seek the reproach of it as Hypocrisy and Fanaticism, and the bannering and communicating of the most Godly Ministers and People, and so become a Gnostick or Nicolaitan Church? As for taking their local Communion, if you can have better; and if you cannot, do not approve or commit any of their sin, nor own any incapable of the Ministry by Heresy, or open Enmity to Godliness, but either worship God only in private, or protest against their sin, when you joyn with them only in good.

CHAP. III.

1. His second epistle (beloved) I now write unto you, in both which I stir up your pure minds by way of remembrance: 2. That ye may be mindful of the words which were spoke before by the holy prophets, and of the commandment of us the apostles of the Lord and Saviour,
Ch. 3. The Certainty of our II. Peter. coming to Judgment. Ch. 2.

1, 2. This second Epistle, with the former, I write to you, as to those that are pure from the Evils which I describe, but have need to be reminded of what you have learned from the Prophets, and been commanded by us the Apostles of Christ.

3. Knowing this first, that there shall come in the last days fencers, walking after their own lusts.

4. And saying, Where is the promise of his coming? for since the fathers fell asleep, all things continue as they were from the beginning of the creation.

3. And here I first remember you, that, as you have been foretold, in the last days before Christ's coming there shall arise Unbelievers, that shall make a Mock at the Promise of his coming, and thereby harden themselves in a filthy wicked Life, saying, How long shall we stay ere we see Christ come? What's become of the Promise of it, whether so long awed Men with? It's long since the Fathers, who, you say, Believed in him, were dead; and none of them are risen again, nor yet see Christ come; the World continueth as it did from the Creation.

5. For this they willingly are ignorant of, that by the Word of God the heavens were of old, and the earth standing out of the water and in the water. 6. Whereby the world that then was, being overflowed with water, perished. 7. But the heavens and the earth which are now, by the same word are kept in store, reserved unto fire against the day of judgment, and perdition of ungodly men.

5, 6, 7. For it must be long of themselves, if Men, professing Christians Knowledge, do not know what a Change was once made since the Creation; that God's Word made the Heavens and the Earth, and that this Earth being partly in the Water, and partly out of it, separated from Seas and Clouds; by this Water, the World of Men that lived in the days of Noah, were drowned. But by the same Will and Word of God, the Heavens and the Earth that are now, are kept from being drown-
ed, being referred to another sort of ruin, even by Fire, when the time is come, in which God will publickly judge and destroy ungodly Men.

Not: It is strange how any Expositor can think that this Text speakseth only of the Destruction of Jerusalem and the Great Flicks, when it is referred to the drowning of all the World; 2. And it speakseth of the Heavens and the Earth that are now, which are more than Jerusalem; 3. And it refers it to the Promise to Noah to drown the World no more; 4. And, faith, it is referred to Fire; 5. And that at the Day of Judgment and Perdition of the Ungodly, and not of the Jews only.

8. But (beloved) be not ignorant of this one thing, that one day is with the Lord as a thousand years, and a thousand years as one day.

8. But you must not ignorantly measure God's Time by the measure of us Men: For one day is with the Eternal God as a thousand years, and a thousand years as one day: Time is soon gone with us, but to Eternity it is as nothing.

9. The Lord is not slack concerning his promise, (as some men count slackness) but is long-suffering to us-ward, not willing that any should perish, but that all should come to Repentance.

9. The Delay is not because God is slack as to the performing of his Promises, (as Slackness signifies some culpable Omission among Men:) But it is because he is long-suffering to us Men, not delighting in, or willing any Man's Destruction as such, but that all should come to Repentance.

Note 1. God's Will, as totally different from all Effects, is only his Essence, and is immutable, and is not denominated his Willing This or That; 2. But his Will, which is but the Effects of his Essential Will, is manifold, and doth begin, and end, and change. And, 3. His Will, as it is but the Relation of his Essential Will to those Effects, and an extrinsic Denomination from them, is also manifold and mutable: And it is in these two last Sentences that Peter faith, that God is not willing that any should perish, but all come to Repentance; that is, God hath provided a sufficient Sacrifice for their Sin in Christ; he reprieveth them.
from deserved Damnation, and patiently endureth them; he offereth Pardon and Salvation to all that will accept it, who hear his Offer; he giveth all the World undeserved Mercy, and obligeth them to repent in hope of more, and bindeth all the World to certain Duties as Means of their Recovery and Salvation, and with none according to the meer Terms of the Law of Innocency [why perfectly or else.] Mis daily Mercies lead to Repentance and Hope: He commandeth his Ministers to beseech them to be reconciled and saved: He bringeth Life to their own Wills, and giveth them abundant Reasons and Motives to accept it, &c. 1. That he doth this de facto, no Christian can deny, 2. Therefore he is said to will their Repentance and Salvation, 1. As th. Effects of his Will are called his Will; 2. Or as his Will is named only as related to these Effects. Thus much well considered may end this Controversie.

But the day of the Lord will come as a thief in the night, in which the heavens shall pass away with a great noise, and the elements shall melt with fervent heat, the earth also and the works that are therein shall be burnt up.

But as Men sleep, not knowing when a Thief will come in the Night; so shall Christ's coming surprize Men unexpected; in which the Heavens, so far as they belong to Man, and partake of any of the Corie for our Sins, shall pass away with a great and dreadful Noise like a Storm; and the Elements shall be dissolved with fervent Heat; and all this Earth, and all Men's Works thereon, shall be consumed by this Fire.

Note: It is marvellous preceptitious that could make any Learned Man think, that all these Words signifie nothing but the Destruction of Jerusalem.

Seeing then that all these things shall be dissolved, What manner of persons ought ye to be in all holy conversation and godlinesss.

Note; The true Belief of the Day of Christ's coming to Judgment, and the Dissolution of all this lower World by Fire, should convince all Christians, that a Holy Conversation and Godliness should be endeavoured with all possible Care and Diligence. And those Men that think they can be truly Godly and Holy over much, do not believe seriously such a Change and Day.

Looking for, and hasting unto, the coming of the day of God, wherein the heavens being on fire shall be dissolved, and the elements shall melt with fervent heat.

Looking for, and earnestly desiring the coming of this Day of God, when the lower Heavens and Earth shall thus be dissolved, and the Elements melt with the fervent fiery Heat. (The joyful Day of our perfect Deliverance and Salvation.)

Nevertheless we, according to his promise, look for new heavens and a new earth, wherein dwelleth righteousness.

But we, according to his Promise, look that God should by these dissolving Flames refine Heaven and Earth, and having consumed with them all Sin, and the Wicked hence, should make (as he formed this out of the Chaos) a new Heaven, and a new Earth, an Habitation for Righteous Persons, where Sin shall prevail no more.

Note 1. He that maketh this new Heaven and Earth to succeed the Destruction of Jerusalem, sorely forget, 1. That the Heathens for near three hundred years after persecuted the Christians far more bloodily than the few poor Jews did, or could; and that Church-History faithfully very little of the Jews Persecution in comparison of the Heathens, or of any Martyrs that died by them. And sure, if it was the time of the Ten Heathen Persecutions that was the New Heaven and Earth, it's strange. 2. And if it were at three hundred years after Christ, that the New Heavens and Earth come, it seems, far short of this here promised. What was in the Days of Conflantine, Martian and Tetradevis, they in Peter's days must never see. But the Day of Christ they were all to see.

Wherefore (beloved) seeing that ye look for such things; be diligent that ye may be found of him in peace, without spot and blameless.
14. Note 1. It is not before Death that Peter would have them look for this change, whatever it was: He lived not himself to see Jerusalem destroyed, and be and Paul died by the Heathen Power, though the Jews accused them; and the Jews were more hated than they.

2. Whether the new Heaven and Earth be, as many of the old Fathers thought, a restitution of all things to the state they were in before the Fall, for which the whole Creation groaneth and travaileth in pain to be delivered; and that either for a thousand Years, or for Perpetuity; and who shall dwell in the new Earth; and whether Heaven and it shall be made to like, as that the same Men shall inhabit both? &c. These are Doubts, which I think, it must be the Day of Performance that must resolve. As also, whether accordingly there were other Heavens and Earth destroyed for Sin before the Creation of this. But Christians Care should be to be diligent to be found in a state of Safety and Peace, and without Spot and Blameless, and leave unknown things to God; and then whatever this blessed Change be, we shall have our part in it.

15. And account that the long-suffering of our Lord is salvation, even as our beloved brother Paul also, according to the wisdom given unto him, hath written unto you.

15. And think not that God neglecteth you by Delays, but that he suffereth the wicked World so long, that he may gather all his Chosen to Salvation that are yet to be born and called, as Paul hath shewed, Rom. 9.

16. As also in all his epistles, speaking in them of these things, in which are some things hard to be understood, which they that are unlearned and unstable wrest, as they do also the other scriptures, unto their own destruction.

16. Note 1. They that refer [in which] to [these things] and not to [his Epistles] pervert the Text; for it puts [in which] recommended. Ch. 3. as contradistinct to [other Scriptures] and not to [other things]. And it's many other things much more than these, that were wrested to Destruction. And Peter himself even here speaketh as hard things of this as ever Paul did. 2. It pleaseth God to put hard things in the Scripture for our Exercise. 3. Yet it is Men ignorant insubility that wresteth such to their Destruction; for there is as much very plain, as may bring Men to Salvation. And if, as to the difficult parts, they will, 1. But search as humble Learners. 2. And not take on them to know before they do, but confess their Ignorance, it may stand both with Salvation, and the Churches Peace. 3. And if they must by Men be inclined to either side, let them lay plainly, I hold not this by Divine Faith, as part of my Religion, but as an Opinion on the trust of Man.

17. Ye therefore, beloved, seeing ye know these things before, beware lest ye also being led away with the errour of the wicked, fall from your own steadfastnes.

17. The Scope of what I have said is to warn you, that having timely notice of all these things, ye most diligently take heed, lest any of these sensual Professions, or Heretical Backsliders, or Scoffers, deceive you, in Waving, or Unbelief, or Heresie, or Sensuality, to fall from your Spiritual Steadfastnes in Faith, and Hope, and Holy Living.

18. But grow in grace, and in the knowledge of our Lord and Saviour Jesus Christ: to him be glory both now and for ever, Amen.

18. But contrarywise, labour diligently to grow in all Grace (in Faith, Love, Holiness, Patience, Hope, &c.) and in the Knowledge of our Lord and Saviour Jesus Christ (his Person, Office, Undertaking, Performance, Humiliation, Resurrection, Doctrine, Example, Spirit, Intercession, Glory, Kingdom and Judgment:) That a Glory belongeth to him, you may glorify him now, and in the sight of his Glory, for ever, Amen.
The First Epistle General of JOHN the Apostle.

I. John.

For our Imitation.

Ch. 1. Christ described

CHAP. I.

1. That which was from the beginning, which we have heard, which we have seen with our eyes, which we have looked upon, and our hands have handled of the word of life.

2. Wherefore there are many Hereticks springing up about the Person, Doctrine and Works of Christ, I shall declare to you that which was from the beginning (his Godhead, or say others, that of him which was decreed from Eternity; or as others, that whre is true of him from his Beginning or Incarnation) and (that same Christ vwhom we have heard and seen with our Eyes, and looked on, and our Hands have handled, even the Humane Body of Christ the Word of Life.) Or as others, (that God's which we have heard, that Person, and those Works which we have seen, and him whom we have handled, as these concern the Gospel of Life.)

3. For the life was manifested, and we have seen it, and bear witness, and shewed unto you that eternal life which was with the Father, and was manifested unto us.

4. For Christ, who is Life in himself, and the Fountain of Life to us, was manifested in flesh, and we have seen him, and bear Witiess, and preach to you the ETERNAL Divine Life and Nature of Christ, which was eternally with the Father, and was manifested to us.

5. That which we have seen and heard, declare we unto you, that ye also may have fellowship with us; and truly our fellowship is with the Father, and with his Son Jesus Christ.

6. I say, we declare to you that of Christ, which we ourselves have seen and heard, that so what we had by seeing and hearing, you may have from our Testimony, who have seen and heard Christ himself; and to you may be our Communication partake of the same Faith and Grace, as we our selves do, and may continue in our Communion; and that is no other than to have the same Father and Saviour from, and with whom it is that we have Communication and Communion, and not to turn from them.

7. And these things write we unto you, that your joy may be full.

8. And the end of my writing this to you, is the compleating of your own Joy and Salvation.

9. This then is the message which we have heard of him, and declare unto you, that God is light, and in him is no darkness at all.

10. The first and great part of Christ's Doctrine, and our Message, is to teach us to know God himself; and first, that he is Light, and in him is no Darkness at all.

Note 1. The Apostle telling us what God is, speaketh in the Abstract, to let us knowv that it is his Essence, and not a meer Accident that he meaneth. And as God's Image in Man's Soul hath three Es- sentiating Faculties, Vitality, Understanding and Will, which are eminently Self-motions, Light and Heat, or resembled by these; so God is here called LIFE, v. 1. LIGHT, v. 5. and LOVE, c. 4. v. 8.

11. When God is called LIGHT, it is spoken but metaphorically, and signifieth his KNOWLEDGE or WISDOM, as it is his Essence, and as Communication, giving the Light of Knowledge to all that have it, and widely ruling them by his Laws: And also the GLORY of this, and all his Perfections, as Refugent to the Creature: For Glory and Light are off the same in sense.

12. When it is said, There is no darkness in him, it meaneeth, No Ignorance, nor Privation, nor Uncomfortableness, as Darkness is.

13. If we say that we have fellowship with him, and walk in darkness, we lie, and do not the truth: 7. But if we walk in the light, as he is in the light, we have fellowship one with another, and
the blood of Jesus Christ his Son cleanseth us from all sin.

6, 7. If we say that we live in Communion with God, and yet are in the darkness of Unbelief, Ignorance, Error and Wickedness, we do but lie: But if we walk in the Light of Holy Knowledge, Faith and Purity, we have mutual Communion with God, and with his Son Jesus Christ, whose Blood doth cleanse us from all Sin.

Note: Qu. Is it not Fanaticism to talk of Fellowship with God, or Communion either? Ans. Fellowship is too harsh an English Word: But Communion is the thing meant, consisting in receptive participation from God, and accepted returns to God. And this is no Fancy, but the only Restitude and Felicity of our Souls: If you conceive not how, think how the Eye hath Communion with the Sun: Really, 1. By receiving its luminous Beams, or emitted Light, by the receptive Aptitude of the vitivle Faculty and Organs. 2. By such an Emission, or active Congress, by which the Light and Sun are seen.

8. If we say that we have no sin, we deceive ourselves, and the truth is not in us.

9. If we say, that we need not Christ thus to cleanse us from Guilt and Corruption, as having no sin; this is but self-deceiving Falshood.

5. It we confess our sins, he is faithful, and just to forgive us our sins, and to cleanse us from all unrighteousness.

9. But if we with true Repentance confess our Sins (always to God, and humbly to Man, when either Reparation of any ones Wrong, or Satisfaction to the Church offended, or the curing of Scandal, and Honour of Religion, or the Ease or Information of our own Consciences require it); God that hath promis’d it, is faithful and just to forgive us our Sin, and to cleanse us from it’s Guilt and Power.

10. If we say that we have not sinned, we make him a liar, and his word is not in us.

11. But if we will either pretend to sinless perfection, or else break God’s Command, and say, that it is no sin, but a duty, or an indifferent thing, and so justify our Selves or our sins, this is to give the lie to God’s Word, which therefore doth not rule such men.

CHAP. II.

1. My little children, these things write I unto you, that ye sin not. And if any man sin, we have an Advocate with the Father, Jesus Christ the righteous.

2. And he is the propitiation for our sins: and not for ours onely, but also for the sins of the whole world.

1, 2. I write to you as to Babes, who need help and confirmation, in your temptations by Seducers, that you may not be drawn by them to take sensuality, or such like evils, to be lawful, nor to live vitually or impudently in any sin: But if any man, contrary to the bent and tenor of his heart and life, be guilty of any sin of impenitency, let him not despair, but flee to our Advocate with the Father, Jesus Christ, whose perfect Righteousness merited our Pardon: For he is the Propitiation for our sins by virtue of his Sacrifice, now interceding for us in Heaven: And he is a Propitiation sufficient for the sins of the world (to far as that none of them shall be damned for want of a sufficient Sacrifice, but only for want of accepting his Grace) and actually effecting the Pardon of all in the World, who believingly trust and accept him and his Grace.

3. And hereby we do know that we know him, if we keep his commandments.

3. And because uneffectual Faith is but self-deceit, and he pardoneth sin to none but to the sincerely penitent and obedient; it is by this that we must be known to be found Believers, if we sincerely keep his Commandments.

4. He that faith, I know him, and keepeth not his commandments is a liar, and the truth is not in him.

4. He that professeth the Knowledge and Faith of Christ, and calleth himself a Christian, and yet doth not sincerely keep his Commandments, is an Hypocrite and Liar, and is not what he professeth to be.
5. But who so keepeth his word, in him verily is the love of God perfected; hereby know we that we are in him. 6. He that saith, he abideth in him, ought himself also so to walk, even as he walked.

7. Brethren, I write no new commandment unto you, but an old commandment, which ye had from the beginning: the old commandment is the word which ye have heard from the beginning.

8. It is not novelty that I bring you, as Seducers do; but that same old Commandment which Christ and his Apostles preached when they first brought the Gospel to the World: I call it old, because it is the Word which you heard from the beginning of Christianity.

9. Again, a new commandment I write unto you, which thing is true in him, and in you, because the darkness is past, and the true light now shineth.

10. Yet it may be called a New Commandment which I write, as it is the: Doctrine of Divine Love newly and more resplendently shining forth in the work of our Redemption by Christ; and there is true and just reason to call it new, both in Christ and in you: In Christ, because he is the newly incarnate, crucified, glorified demonstration of God's Love to Man, and the eminent Messsnger of it, accordingly obliging to a new and extraordinary Love to God, and one another: And in you, because, as you are renewed by, and to this special Love; so as new men you live therein: For the darkness of a life of malice and ungodly inessential past, and the true Light now shining is ever accompanied, when it is effectual, with the Heats of Love and Obedience.

11. He that truly loveth his Brother, abideth in the light, and hath not his love, is in darkness even until now.

12. I write unto you, little children, because your sins are forgiven you for his Name's sake.

13. I write unto you, fathers, because ye have known him that is from
from the beginning. I write unto you, young men, because you have overcome the wicked one.

12, 13. And this Command of Love and Obedience is such, as all sorts of you must receive. I urge it on you that are Children in Christ, because, being washed lately in Baptism, and the Blood of Christ, from your sins, you should love much, because much is forgiven you. I urge it on you, ancient Christians, because you have long been taught to know this Commandment, and to know the Love of God in Christ, which doth enforce it. I urge it on you that are strong Christians, because you have conquered the Devil, who is the Wicked One, and the grand Enemy of Love.

13, 14. I write unto you, little children, because ye have known the Father. I have written unto you, fathers, because ye have known him that is from the beginning. I have written unto you, young men, because ye are strong, and the word of God abideth in you, and ye have overcome the wicked one.

13, 14. Again I say, that you may not neglect it; I urge this Commandment of Love and Obedience on all sorts among you: On young Christians, because, to know God, as he is Love and a Father to us, is your chief Principle of Faith. On you, ancient Christians, because it is your old Religion. On you, strong Christians, because you that have most Strength and Victory over Satan, must have most of this Grace of Love and Obedience.

15. Love not the world, neither the things that are in the world. If any man love the world, the love of the Father is not in him.

16. And I must accordingly warn you against the Love that is contrary to this Divine, Christian Love; which is the carnal, inordinate Love of this World, and Worldly Interest and Things. Avoid this with all possible care; for in that measure that you thus love the World, you are so far deflitter of the Love of God; else it would prevail against it.

17. For all that is in the world, the lust of the flesh, the lust of the eyes, and the pride of life, is not of the Father, but is of the world.

18. For, All that is the Bait of Sensuality in the World, whether it be the pleasures of Appetite, Lust, and other Senes, or the pleasing of a covetous, lucreful, or vain imagination by the Eyes; or Preference, Domination, pompous Living, and Pride of Life, are none of them, the way to Communion with God, and Salvation; but are the Worldly Interest, and Temptation of the Flesh, which turn men’s hearts to the World, from God.

17. And the world passeth away, and the lust thereof: but he that doth the will of God, abideth for ever.

18. Little children, it is the last time: and as ye have heard that Antichrist shall come, even now are there many Antichrists, whereby we know that it is the last time.

19. I yet speak to you, as Children liable to Deceit. It is now the latter part of the Age of the World; And, as you have heard that Antichrist shall come, so, even now there are many false Teachers risen up, who, in several sorts and measures, are Adversaries to Christ: which shews us that, indeed, it is already the beginning of the last Age.

Note: Of the Controversie about Antichrist, see the Notes on 2 Thess. 2. there are four Opinions, very commonly pleaded for; and others, by few.

I. Most of the old Doctors and Christians, that have left us their Thoughts, took Antichrist to be a false, pretending Christ, that should rise up towards the end of the World, little dreaming that the Pope was he; much less, that all the visible Christian Church was then, in its most flourishing state, Idolatrous and Antichristian, as some hold. By which it appeareth, that it is a Point that Godly Men may be ignorant of: for few now, but the Papists are of this Opinion. II. Others.
II. Others think that Mahomet is the great Antichrist, as being that open Enemy of Christianity, who, by pretending hatred to Idolatry, hath set up himself, and won more of the World, than all the Christian part of the Earth, by far.

III. Most Protestants hold, that the Pope is the Antichrist; but they greatly disagree of the time when he began to be so: Some say, at the Church's Deliverance by Con- stantine, which was three hundred and four years after the Birth of Christ: Some say, about Anno 604. when Phocas named Pope Basilica the Third, Universal Bishop in the Empire. And hence rise a Doubt, whether the same Claim made not John of Constantinople Antichrist before, and so there be not two Antichrists: And whether the like Ambition made not Cyril, Bishop of Alexandria, and other Patriarchs of Alexandria, and divers other Bishops, to be so many Antichrists. Some say, He began about Hildebrand's time, when the Claim of Universal Head, and Vice-Christ over all the World began, with power over Princes; which was above a thousand Years after Christ. And some few say, He began about Innocent the Third; when the General Council of the Lateran owned that Power, with Transubstantiation, and the Murder of Reformers, as Heretics. The Reasons for the Opinion that the Pope is the Antichrist, you may find in many Volumes, and particularly Bishop G. Downame's.

IV. Others think that Antichrist was a false Christ, who was to appear in the days of some of the Apostles, or that Generation, to seduce the Jews into Rebellion against the Romans, to their destruction. And they are very confident that John here meant no other than Christ himself meant in Matt. 24, and received his Notice from none but Christ, and that Christ's own words are the surest Notification, who is the Antichrist: For, It is mentioned here, not as a thing known only by special Inspiration to them, or to the Apostles, but as a received former Prophecy; [As you have heard that Antichrist shall come.] And which way did they hear it, but by the Apostles, as from Christ; whose words the Evangelists have not omitted? Now Christ's words were, [Many shall come in my name, saying, I am Christ, and shall deceive many. Here he doth not fix the name on any one, more than on others. And it is certain that Christ was not mistaken, but what he foretold did come to pass: though we read not of any that was expressly called Christ, and commonly so believed, that was not, because none attempted to deceive men, but because their success was small, and soon fled, and not like Mahomet's. Beza, on the Text, Matt. 24. faith, In my Name, if they shall usurp the Name of the Messiah, or Christ. Such was that Dositheus, whom Theophilus speaks of, and Simon, and Thudas; and after them, Manes, who also chose his twelve Apostles. And in our Memory, the Munster Anabaptists attempted the same; and after them, David George, the Prince of the Libertines.] So James Nailer lately, the Quaker, whose Tongue he Parliament bored through, whip'd him, and imprison'd him till he died, for solemnly pernouncing Christ, riding into Bristol.] But there were others that promised to deliver the Jews, till they drew them into Rebellion, to their destruction; and so took on them to redeem Israel, though they called not themselves the Christ. Almost all Expositors agree, that these were the Antichrists meant by Christ, Matt. 24. But, tho' these were then shortly to arise, it followeth not, but that more such might arise after them; and such was Mahomet, above all others. Noxious by his Alcoran, Kingdom, and Success. And as Elyon, Christ, and some other Heretics, were against Christ in some degree, so more notably is the Pope in that degree, as he arrogated Christ's Prerogative, and maketh himself a Vicarious Head of the whole Church on Earth. So that the grant, that such Popes are one set of those Antichrists that should after arise, but that the Pope is not he that is meant by Christ in Matt. 24, nor here by John.

And whereas Matt. 2 Thess. is objected for One Man of Sin, &c. they say, that it is not Anti-hrift properly, that is there mentioned; but the Anti-God, the Roman Idolatry, Emperor, that caused Jerusalem's Desolation, and set up there the Idol of Abomination.

There is the like mention of Antichrist again, Ch. 4. 3. [Every spirit that confesseth not that Jesus Christ is come in the flesh, is not of God: And this is the spirit of Anti-christ, whereby he hath heard that it should come, and even now already is in the world.] So, Ch. 2. 20. [He is Antichrift, that denieth the Father and the Son.]

And, 2 John. [For many deceivers are entred into the world, who confess not that Jesus...}
Ch. 2. Antichrist.

I. John.

Antichrist. Ch. 2. 19. They went out from us, but they were not of us: for if they had been of us, they would, no doubt, have continued with us: but they went out, that they might be made manifest, that they were not all of us.

19. These Deceivers (the Nicolaitans, Eban, Corinthus, &c.) were indeed in our Communion, and went out from us; but they were never sincerely of the same Faith and Spirit with us; else they would have stayed with us: But they went out, and were separated, and set up their Heresies, that they might shew that they were never found in the Faith.

20. But ye have an unction from the holy One, and ye know all things.

20. But the most holy God and Saviour hath anointed you with his holy Spirit, which will lead you from pernicious Error, into all necessary Truth, if you obey him.

21. I have not written unto you, because ye know not the truth: but because ye know it, and that no lie is of the truth.

21. It is not as supposing you ignorant of the Truth, that I write to you; but because you know the necessary Truth, and therefore may the easier reject all inconsistent Falshoods.

22. Who is a liar but he that denieth that Jesus is the Christ? he is antichrist that denieth the Father and the Son. 23. Whosoever denieth the Son, the same hath not the Father: but he that acknowledgeth the Son, hath the Father also.

22, 23. And who is the dangerous Liar, but he that denieth that Jesus is the Christ, and consequently, denieth the Father?

Note: The scribes of History leave it uncertain, what sort of Seducers John meaneth; whether some that fell to finite Infidelity, directly renouncing Christianity, or only such as Ebon, Corinthus, and others, that denied somewhat of Christ’s Being, his Manhood, or his God-head, or his real Suffering: Or those that were to Moses’s Law, and held, that Christ may be denied.
I. John.

by Faith, 

28. And now, little children, abide in him, that when he shall appear, we may have confidence, and not be ashamed before him at his coming.

29. If ye know that he is righteous, ye know that every one that doeth righteousness, is born of him.

G H A P.
Ch. 3. God's Love, and God's I. John. Children described. Ch. 3.

Ch. III.

1. Behold; what manner of love the Father hath bestowed upon us, that we should be called the sons of God; therefore the world knoweth us not, because it knew him not.

1. Let us therefore, instead of forsaking Christ, admire the wondrous Love of God to us, that hath, in Christ, adopted us to be his Sons. Indeed our Dignity is unknown to the unbelieving World; for they know not Christ to be the Son of God, and how then should they know us?

2. Beloved, now are we the sons of God, and it doth not yet appear what we shall be; but we know, that when he shall appear, we shall be like him; for we shall see him as he is.

2. And it is no wonder if our Condition be unknown to the unbelieving World; for though we are already  the Sons of God, and have Right, by Promise, to future Glory, our future Glory is yet unseen, and what we shall be, doth not appear to the World, or to our own sight: But we know by Faith, that when Christ appear-eth, we that are his Members, shall, in our several measures, be made like our glorified Head, in the perfection both of Soul and Body, and place and state of Blestedness. For he hath promised that we shall be with him, and therefore shall see him as he is, and therefore be made capable of such a sight, and glorious Communion.

3. And every man that hath this hope in him, purifieth himself, even as he is pure.

3. And knowing that, without Holiness, none can see God; and that, it is the Pure in Heart that have the Promise of seeing him, therefore all that have a true effectual Hope of seeing him, will make it their chief care to purifie themselves, that such Likeness to Christ may render them capable of such a blest sight.

4. Whosoever committeth sin, transgresseth also the law: for sin is the transgression of the law.

5. And ye know that he was manifested to take away our sins, and in him is no sin.

4. 5. For, to sin, is to transgress, and break God's Law: For that is the definition of Sin. And ye know that Christ came in the Flesh, to be a Sacrifice for Sin, and to take it away, and destroy it, and never sinned himself; and all this, that he might vindicate God's Law and Holiness.


6. So far, as any Man is in him, and is taught and ruled by him; so far is he freed from all Sin: And all his true Members are delivered from the predominating love and practice of all known Sin; and are willing to know all, that they may avoid it. And he that would not know it, and when he doth know it, doth not hate it more than love it; and so far forlack it, and to conquer the Dominions of it, and live in sincere and willing holy Obedience in the course of his Life, may boast from that he is a Christian; but indeed, hath no true saving Knowledge of Christ.

7. Little children, let no man deceive you; he that doth righteousness, is righteous, even as he is righteous.

7. Be not so childish, as to be deceived by the vain words of any that pretend to be Righteous before God, on any account whatsoever, while they live in Unrighteousness and predominant Sin; as if God would justify the Wicked for their Opinions or Presumptions. It is he that, being called, justified and sanctified by the Merits and Spirit of Christ, doth live in a sincere Obedience to him, and labours to be like him, in Holiness and Love to God and Man, whom God will call a Righteous Man, and save him as such, when he is Judge.

8. He that committeth sin, is of the devil; for the devil sinneth from the beginning. For this purpose the Son of God was manifested, that he might destroy the works of the devil.

8. So far as any Man sinneth, so far he is
Ch. 3: Braterly Love

I. John.

God, but of the Devil: Nor he that doth not
unfeignedly love all Christians, as Chi-
ristians; and Men, as Men; and live in
Charity to them accordingly.

Note: That wicked Men are called, The
Children of the Devil, because they are like
him, and do his Will: And the World
swarmeth with Men so like to Devils, as
Lying, Malicious and Miscifions, as maketh
it easy to believe, that there are Devils,
and a Hell.

11. For this is the Message that ye heard from the begin-
ing, that we should love one anoth-
er.

11. For this is the Message which Christ, the Lord of Love, did commit to us, and
from the first, we have Preached to you,
that Love is the very Sum and End of Law
and Gospel.

12. Not as Cain, who was of
that wicked one, and flew his
brother: and wherefore flew he
him? because his own works
were evil, and his brother's rig-
hteous.

12. That we be not like wicked Cain,
who was of the Diabolical Disposition and
Practice, and killed his own Brother. And,
why did he kill him? Not for any ill de-
sert, nor for any harm that he had done
him: But because he was bad himself;
and his Works bad; and his Brother's
Righteous, and, by difference, condemned
him.

Note: Doubtless, God permitted Adam's
first Son to be Wicked, and Murder his
Righteous Brother, to shew the World,
that a State we are first in, since the Fall,
by natural Pravity; and that we are,
as such, the Children of the Devil, till Grace
recover us: And to expound the Enmity
put between the Seed of the Woman, and
of the Serpent; and to tell us, what a
War will be continued upon Earth, from
the days of Cain and Abel, till the End;
and that Superiority and Cruelty will usu-
ally be against the Righteous, whose Vic-
tory is mostly by patient Suffering and
Death.

13. Marvel not, my brethren, if the world hate you.

13. If the ungodly Successors of Cain,
whose own Works are evil, do hate God-
liness and Conscience, and hate you for
them,
them, take it for no strange or unexpected thing: it hath been so since Cain's days, and will be so, as Christ foretold.

14. We know that we have passed from death unto life, because we love the brethren: he that loveth not his brother, abideth in death.

15. Love being the great work of God's renewing Spirit on the soul, it is by love, especially to all true Christians, that we know that we are changed from the carnish, corrupt state of death, into the state of holy life. Whatever else men have, if they have not true love to others, especially to godly Christians, they are yet dead in sin.

Note. 1. By [The Brethren] here is meant, [Christians are such:] Not only those of some party in opinion which we like, nor only those that are friendly to us, nor yet all men, or all called Christians alike; though all men must be loved as men. It is to love God in man, and man for his sake, so far as God's amiableness shineth in them; specially, to love God's holiness in holy persons.

2. It is not all love to godly Christians, as such, that will prove us translated from death to life; but to love them, and God in them, better than the pleasures and wealth of the world. The cheap love of such as vili men vell, but will be at no great cost or danger for any, because they love their money better, is the hypocrites love.

16. Whosoever hateth his brother, is a murderer: and ye know that no murderer hath eternal life abiding in him.

Note. 1. How dreadful a sentence this is against malignance, or factious haters of brethren.

2. But the self-deceit of murderer hypocrites is, by taking brethren for no brethren; but as the papists, first call them heretics, schismatics, fanatics, puritans, rebels against the pope or church, that they may justify their hating, murdering, imprisoning, silencing, and ruining them. As the scribes were loth to know whovvho was their neighbour, so are they loth to know who is a brother: but God will know his children, though men call them by reproachful names. Alas for the murderously generation, that

Preach, write, and strive to destroy this. Upright, and say, they killed them, as ruined them in love; (that is, they hated them in love.) Woe to them, when God shall judge them.

3. Every degree of unjust hurt or hatred is a breach of the sixth commandment: but the meaning is not every degree, or mistaking wrong, as is bad as actual murder, or as sure a sign of death. Alas! how few else would live.

17. Hereby perceive we the love of God, because he laid down his life for us, and we ought to lay down our lives for the brethren.

16. As God hath manifested his love to us, by laying down for us the life of our Redeemer; so if we be God's children, we must learn of him (as to love our enemies, so) if God should call us to it, as needful to better ends than our lives, to lay down our lives for Christian brethren.

18. But whose hath this world, and is good, and seeth his brother have need, and shutteth up his bowels of compassion from him, how woe is the love of God in him?

17. And if love must make us die for others, surely those have no true love of God, and to the brethren. as God requires, who cannot lay down part of their abundance (perhaps superfluity) for them, but while they are well able, yet cannot find in their hearts to relieve them, but shut up the bowels of their compassion from them.

Note: O the dreadful account that many of the rich must give, that shall all the year, while their poor neighbours hunger and spend forty times more in (needless) house-keeping, as they call their luxury than on the poor.

18. My little children, let us not love in word, but in deed, and in truth.

19. Let not your love be hypocritical, which will bring forth no better fruit than good wishes, and fair words, but show the truth of it by your cost and real helps.

And hereby we know that we

Ch. 3. True Love, and Faith. 1 John.

We are of the truth, and shall assure our hearts before him.
19. It is by such efficacy and real fruit that we must know that we are true Christians, and not hypocrites, and must have assurance that our hearts are true to God.

20. For if our heart condemn us, God is greater than our heart, and knoweth all things. 21. Beloved, if our heart condemn us not, then have we confidence towards God.

20, 21. For if our Consciences tell us that our love is barren and fruitless, and to condemn us of hypocrifie, God is greater, and more acquainted with our hypocrifie than our Consciences: But if our conscience truly witnesseth the sincerity of our love by the fruits of it, then this assurance of our sincerity giveth us boldness towards God.

22. And whatsoever we ask, we receive of him, because we keep his commandments, and do those things that are pleasing in his sight.

22. And if we do God's will sincerely, obeying his Commands, and the things that please him, he will hear our Prayers, and grant our just desires, and give us that which is good for us; whereas, if we love iniquity, and live therein, God will not hear our Prayers.

Note: They that deny that holy, sincere Obedience, is any condition of God's hearing our Prayers (because 'faith hath the promise) contradict the scope of Scripture.

23. And this is his commandment, that we should believe on the Name of his Son Jesus Christ, and love one another, as he gave his commandment.

23. And the sum of all this acceptable duty is but this, To believe truly in Jesus Christ, our Redeemer, our Teacher, King and Intercessor, and to obey his great Command of loving one another; with all such God is pleased, and heareth them.

24. And he that keepeth his commandments, dwelleth in him, and he in him: and hereby we know that he abideth in us, by the Spirit which he hath given us.

24. And if we keep Christ's Commands (of fruitful Love in Faith) there is a near Communion between Christ and us; we dwell in Christ as his Members, and he dwelleth in us; and his dwelling in us is by the Spirit of Love and Holiness (the Seal of his Promise) which he hath given us: (He that keepeth Christ's Commandments (especially of Love) hath his Spirit;) And Christ dwells where his Spirit dwells.

CHAP. IV.

Beloved, believe not every spirit, but try the spirits, whether they are of God: because many false prophets are gone out into the world.

1. There be many false Teachers, who pretend to Revelation as Prophets, who teach you the Doctrines of Sensuality, Worldliness and Malice, contrary to the Doctrine of Holiness and Love, which I have taught you: Therefore believe not that every Man speaketh by God's Spirit, whom pretendeth to it; nor that every strong suggestation in your selves is from God's Spirit, which seemeth such before you try it: But try all pretences of the Spirit, whether they come indeed from the Spirit of God, or rather from Satan, or Men's own Imagination corrupted by pride.

Qu. How shall we justly try Spirits, or spiritual pretences? Ans. By somewhat that is more easily known, and no otherwise: And that is two things; 1. The common certain notices of the Light and Law of Nature. 2. By the Infallible words of the Spirit in Christ and his Apostles, and Prophets: For both these are the sure Word of God, vvhich doth not contradict himself: Our gifts of the Spirit are lower than the Apostles, and must be tried by theirs, vvhich were given them to record a Rule for us.

2. Hereby know ye the Spirit of God: every spirit that confesseth that Jesus Christ is come in the flesh, is of God. And every
Ch. 4. Mutual Love.

I. John.

God is Love. Ch. 4.

very spirit that confesseth not that Jesus Christ is come in the flesh, is not of God: and this is that spirit of Antichrist, whereof you have heard, that it should come, and even now already is it in the world.

2, 3. By this ye shall know whether they which are of God: For the Spirit of God is the Spirit of Christ, sent by him to be his Advocate, and plead his Cause, and do his Work in the World, and therefore heareth witness of him: If therefore these Teachers, truly and openly in the face of danger, do own, profess and preach Christ Jesus, as the Incarnate Word and Son of God, sent from Heaven to redeem, teach, rule and save us; this Doctrine is of the Spirit of God. But if they deny the Godhead, or Manhood of Christ, or that he is indeed the true Incarnate Saviour, Prophet, Priest and King, or will not own him in hazards or sufferings, but deny him to save the flesh, and teach Men to do; this Doctrine and Spirit is not of God: But this is the Spirit of Antichrist, which you have been foretold should come, and is already in the World.

Note: By the Spirit of Antichrist is not here meant, the Spirit sent by Antichrist, but the same Doctrine that Antichrist will vend, and therefore from the same Spirit that abode Antichrist, which is a Spirit of opposition to Christ. And in these times Ebion, Gramissus, and many other Heretics did, some deny Christ's Manhood, some his Godhead, some his Death, and some his Resurrection, and each part of his Office was denied: That among all these Simon Magnus only should be the Antichrist, I see no reason to believe, of which more before and after.

4. Ye are of God, little children, and have overcome them because greater is he that is in you, than he that is in the world.

4. But your Faith in Christ is of the Spirit of God, vwho dwelleth and voketh in you, and you have overcome the worldly seducing Spirit, its Doctrines, Baits and Temptations; for God's Spirit which is in you, is more powerful than the Spirit which deludest the World.

5. They are of the world:

13. Hereby know we that we dwell in him, and he in us, because he hath given us of his Spirit.

14. By this sure evidence we know that God and we do, as it were, dwell in each other, and have blessed Communion; because he hath given us this Spirit of Holy Love.

15. And we have seen, and do testify, that the Father sent the Son to be the Saviour of the world.

16. And we are the Preachers of Faith and Love; as we have seen, so we testify, that God the Father glorified his Love, by sending his Son to be the Saviour of the sinful world.

17. Whosoever shall confess that Jesus is the Son of God, God dwelleth in him, and he in God.

15. It cannot be that any Man can soundly believe such astonishing Love, that God was manifested in flesh, or that the Father sent his Son into flesh, by his Doctrine, Example, Suffering, Merits, Redemption and Intercession to save us, and shall confess this, whatever suffering it cost him, but that Man must needs be posseted by God's Spirit of holy Love, and God dwelleth in that Man by his Spirit, and that Man in God as the great Object of his Faith and Love. (For with the Heart Man believeth to Righteousness, and with the Mouth Confession is made to Salvation, Rom. 10.)

16. And we have known, and believed the love that God hath to us. God is love, and he that dwelleth in love, dwelleth in God, and God in him.

17. And knowing, and by Faith believing the Love that God hath to us, and hath declared in Christ, we again conclude, that GOD IS LOVE, and he that dwelleth in Love (as his ruling habit of Soul, and practice of Life) dwelleth by Communion in God (as the Eye in the Light; and a Friend by Love dwells in his Friend,) and God by his Spirit of Love in him.

Note: I prefer this Verse before all the Humane Learning in the World.
17. Herein is our love made perfect, that we may have boldness in the day of judgment: because as he is, so are we in this world.

18. And our Love is for this blesse effect, that we may joyfully now foresee, and stand at last before him in judgment, as the Lord, to whom by Love we are endeared and united: For as his Interest is dearest to us in this World, and we obey and follow him in suffering; so it is that we may come to him in Glory, with whom our Life is now hid.

19. There is no fear in love, but perfect love casteth out fear: because fear hath torment: he that feareth, is not made perfect in love.

20. For though our darkness and guilt would keep us under terror, lest God should destroy us, or our weakness make us fear the power of Man, and bodily Calamities and Death, yet the Love that I speak of, hath none of this terror in it; but were it perfect, it would fully quiet the Soul, and cast out all distrustful painful fear: For though cautious preventing fear of all danger is necessary in this Life to our safe avoiding evil, and the awe and reverence of God is the duty of every Creature; yet tormenting or painful troubling fear cometh from distrust, and sheweth that our Love is yet imperfect.

Note: This is spoken both of tormenting fear of God and Man, of Hell and of Death, Sicknesees and Crosses here. For he that by Faith is fully persuaded of God's great and special Love to him, such as he hath manifested by Christ, and thereupon doth love God entirely above all, in that measure, cannot fear that such a God will Damn him, or leave him to the Malice of Men or Devils, and by Death it fell do him any hurt inconsistent with dearest Love. If Wives and Children fear not being Murdered by loving Husbands or Fathers: Perfect Love would make us fully quiet in our trust in God. Painful fear of Hell, Death, Sicknesees, Poverty or Persecutors, doth shew a distrust and doubting of God's Love (who could shew quickly save us by such a word as made the World) and an imperfection of our Love to him as caused by this distrust. Fear may stand.

born of God: and every one that loveth him that begat, loveth him also that is begotten of him.

1. Note; That it is believing God and not Man only, a Divine Faith, and not a Humane, a sincere Faith, and not a doubting Opinion, that is here called Believing. Believing this on the word of our Rulers or Teachers is good, but it is but preparatory to Religion, and the Belief of God: And it is a matter of such great importance to believe it sincerely as God’s Word, that God was manifest in flesh, and appointed Christ to the Office and Work of Sanctification and Salvation, that it is not possible but such a found Belief must fill the Soul with love to God, and carry it up to a Holy and Heavenly State, as the Regenerate are: Nor is it possible but such should love that Saviour, who is the Image of God’s Love.

2. By this we know that we love the children of God, when we love God, and keep his commandments. 3. For this is the love of God that we keep his commandments, and his commandments are not grievous.

2. 3. And you must know, that it is not all Love to one another, or to good People, that will prove us regenerate (for Men may love them as their Friends, for loving them, or for being of their Opinion, Seek or Party, or for their Interest, &c.) But your Love to Men as God’s Children is sincere and saving, when it is God himself that you love most, and them for his sake: And when his Love maketh you keep his Commandments. And his Commandments are not heavy, nor have any thing in them which Men should be unwilling to keep, but should be both our Work and Pleasure.

4. For whosoever is born of God, overcometh the world; and this is the victory that overcometh the world, even our faith.

4. God’s Spirit is stronger than the Evil Spirit that ruleth the Ungodly World; and therefore all that are truly regenerate, do overcome the Love and Temptations of the World, though not perfectly, yet in prevalency. And how do we overcome the World, but by firm believing in Jesus Christ, and the Love of God, that will bring us to a far better World: The things believed prevail against the things seen, in all that are true Believers indeed.

5. Who is he that overcometh the world, but he that believeth that Jesus is the Son of God?

5. Where do you see any truly overcome the Love of this World, but they that believe that Jesus Christ hath purchased, and promised, and will give them a better? And how else should we overcome the World, but by believing in him that overcometh it, and is preparing a place for us in Heaven, and hath made us the Heirs of Glory?

6. This is he that came by water and blood, even Jesus Christ, not by water only, but by water and blood: and it is the Spirit that beareth witness, because the Spirit is truth.

6. This is he that, as he was baptized, so he instituted Baptism, for the cleansing of Souls: And as he was Crucify’d, to be a Sacrifice for Sin, so doth he, by his Sacrament and Grace, communicate this Sacrifice in its Benefits to us, which his Crucifixion signified, when both Water and Blood run out of his pierced Side. He cleanseth us, not by Water and Baptism alone, but as a Sacrifice, by Water and Blood, and at a dearer rate. And the Witnes’s, by which God attesteth all this to be his Truth, is, the Gift of his Spirit.

7. For there are three that bear record in heaven, the Father, the Word, and the holy Ghost: and these three are one. 8. And there are three that bear witnes’s in earth, the Spirit, and the water, and the blood: and these three agree in one.

7.8 For there are three in Heaven, who have given us their Witnes’s to the Grace on Earth; even, the Father, who hath from Heaven declared Christ to be his Son; and the Word, or Godhead of Christ, which he shewed in his Miracles, Resurrection, &c. And the Holy Ghost, sent down for Infallibility, Miracles, and Renovation of the Faithful. And these are Three, as yet
to be One. And on Earth, we have seen
these three Witenesse attesting one thing
by Agreement, even the Spirit in the Souls
of Believers, in their Miracles and Holiness
sealing the Truth; the Water of Baptism,
and the washing of their Souls from Sin;
and Christ's Blood and Sacrifice, which is
our Expiation, signified in the Lord's Supper;
and as Christ, on the Cross, first
recommended his Spirit into his Father's
Hands, and thus out of his pierced Side
came Water and Blood.

Note: Though much of these Words,
Ver. 7, 8, be not in many ancient Cop-
ies of the Bible, we have more reason
to think that the Arrians left them out,
than that the Orthodox put them in;
other Texts that attest Christ's Godhead
being so used. But however, it need not
offend the Faithful, there being so many
other Texts which attest the Trinity.

9. If we receive the witness of
men, the witness of God is great-
er: for this is the witness of God,
which he hath testified of his
Son.

9. If the Witness of Credible Men end
Controversies among us, much more must
the Witness of God be believed: And this
mentioned, is God's own Testimony of
Christ.

10. He that believeth on
the Son of God, hath the witness in
himself: he that believeth not
God, hath made him a liar,
because he believeth not the record
that God gave of his Son.

10. He that is a true Believer in Christ,
hath the Spirit of Christ, which hath re-
generated him: (for, if any Man have not
his Spirit, he is none of his.) And this Spi-
rit of Power, Wisdom and Holiness, is
most certainly from God, and an intollible
Evidence, that God owneth the Gospel:
therefore all these have the witnessing
Evidence of Christ in themselves. And he
that believeth not to have a Testimony of
God, doth make him a Liar, as if he gave
the Holy Spirit as a false Witness of Christ,
to deceive the World.

11. And this is the record, that
God hath given to us eternal life:
and this life is in his Son. 12. He
that hath the Son, hath life; and he
that hath not the Son of God, hath
not life.

11, 12. And the sum of the Gospel, at-
tested by God and his Spirit, is this; that
God hath made a free Gift of Gifts, of Per-
don and Salvation to the World, even the
Life of Grace and Glory; but so as that
this Life is given us in and with Christ, who,
with all the Blessings, is offered to Men, on
condition of believing acceptance: (As a Wo-
man in Marriage, hath the Man with his
Fiat; and as we chose our Physician for
Phyliss, our Teacher for Learning, our
Ruler for Government, &c.) He that
Christ upon believing Acceptance, as his
Saviour, hath Life initially, and Title to
Salvation: And he that hath not Christ,
through his Unbelief and Refusal, hath not
Life.

13. These things have I writ-
ten unto you that believe on the
name of the Son of God, that ye
may know that ye have eternal
life, and that ye may believe on
the name of the Son of God.

13. These things I have written to you
that are true Christians, that you may know
what a Treasure you have in and with
Christ: even, Right to Eternal Life, and
its Beginning here: and that you may go
on confirmed, and constant in the Faith.

14. And this is the confidence
that we have in him, that if we ask any
thing according to his will, he will
hear us.

14. And through our Interest in Christ,
his Merits and Intercession, we have suf-
cient Ground of Confidence that, by and
through him, our Prayers are heard, and
that he will give us whatever we ask,
which he hath promised to give, and we
are fit to receive.

15. And if we know that he
hear us, whatsoever we ask, we
know that we have the petitions
that we desired of him.

15. And if he thus hear your Prayers,
we may reckon that, in his time and way,
he will give us whatever Particular we
ask, if we and our Prayers be qualified
for his Promise.

16. If any man see his brother
sin a sin, which is not unto death,
he shall ask, and he shall give
Ch. 5. Christ’s Power in 

I. John. 

our Salvation. Ch. 5.

him life for them that sin not unto death. There is a sin unto death: I do not say that he shall pray for it. 17. All unrighteousness is sin, and there is a sin not unto death.

16, 17. And this Comfort you have, in your Prayers for others, as well as for your selves: God will hear you for those, who are qualify’d for the Mercy which you beg for them, according to his Promise. Death, temporal and eternal, is the Wages of Sin; but with great difference. There are many Sins of Infirmity, which we hate and strive against; (as vain Thoughts, Words, Passions, Coldness in Duty, Imperfection in all Good;) and all Sins that stand with true Repentance, and the predominant Love of God and Holiness. The Law of Grace doth pardon, through Christ, and not damn any for: But Pardon must be asked, and shall be obtained, for the faithful, penitent, qualified Person. But God hath told us, that he doth not pardon the Impenitent and Unconverted, that had rather keep their Sin, than leave it; and are unequalled for Pardon. Your Prayer to God, to pardon such, shall not prevail, while they are impenitent; much less for them that are Inhabitants of the Holy Ghost. And God’s own Children may fall into some Sins that are to be punished with Bodily Death, or Slaine: Magistrates must put to Death Murderers, and other capital Offenders; and when Magistrates do it, God will oft-times do it Without them, himself; (as he did on Ananias and Sapphira, and others.) In this safe, if one be to be executed by Justice, or be under God’s Justice, that will put him to Death, you may pray for his Soul, but you must not pray for his Life, though he repent; because it is against God’s Law, and the common Good: And if you should pray for the Recovery of such a Man in Wickedness, God hath not promised you to recover him: No, not any of his own children, when their dying time is come.

18. We know that whosoever is born of God, sinneth not; but he that is begotten of God, keepeth himself, and that wicked one toucheth him not.

18. We know that all that are born of God, hate Sin, and overcome it in the course of their Lives; and live in no reigning Sin which is predominant, but only hated Infirmities, which conflict with sincere, predominant Faith, Obedience and Repentance, (nor have any Sin at all, so far as they have the Divine Nature;) but they warually keep themselves from the prevalence of Satan’s Snares.

19. And we know that we are of God, and the whole world lieth in wickedness.

19. And, though Christ’s Flocks here be less than the World, we see by experience, that we are of God, led by his Spirit, obeying his Laws, pleasing his Will, living to him, and hoping for his Glory, and that the unconverted World is wholly set on Wickedness and Mischiefs; so notorious is the difference between the Faithful, and the Ungodly World (which foretells the future difference.)

20. And we know that the Son of God is come, and hath given us an understanding, that we may know him that is true: and we are in him that is true, even in his Son Jesus Christ. This is the true God, and eternal life.

20. In a word, by all aforesaid, we are certain of the truth of our Religion: We are sure that the Son of God is come, and Christ is he; and by his Doctrine and Spirit, hath enlightened us to know the true and only God, and his Will: and we are, by Faith and the Spirit, planted into him who is the Truth, even into Jesus Christ. So that we are sure it is the true God that we believe and serve, and the Gift and Title to Eternal Life, that by Christ we do receive.


21. I speak to you in love, as if you were my own Children; but with care of you, as to your Weakness, and what Temptations the Idolatrous World afflicts you with: As Christ hath called you out of the World, from Idolatry, which you have renounced; as you love God, and your Saviour, and your Souls, hold close to Christ, and return not to Idols, nor partake of their Sacrifices, nor seem to own them by Idolatrous Communion. Amen.
The Second Epistle of St. JOHN (the Apostle)
is most commonly thought, but not certain.

CHAP. I.

1. The elder unto the elect lady, and her children whom I love in the truth: and not I only, but also all they that have known the truth: 2. For the truth's sake which dwelleth in us, and shall be with us for ever.

1, 2. Note: It seems this was some choice Woman, that was a great Support and Helper to the Christians, and eminent in Piety, and steadfastness in the Faith, tho' some few groundlessly think, that it was some Church that he calleth Lady.

3. Grace be with you, mercy and peace from God the Father, and from the Lord Jesus Christ, the Son of the Father, in truth and love.

3. Grace, Mercy and Peace from God the Father, and Christ the Son, are the true, unvaluable Blessings I wish you, to confirm you in the vvo great parts of Religion, Truth and Love.

4. I rejoiced greatly, that I found of thy children walking in truth, as we have received a commandment from the Father.

4. I greatly rejoiced, that I found thy Children both holding fast the Christian Truth, and living in the Practice of it, as the Father commanded us to preach and do.

5. And now I beseech thee, lady, not as though I wrote a new commandment unto thee: but that which we had from the beginning, that we love one another.

5. The Sum of my writing to thee is, not any Novelty, but the old, great Law of Christ: Be sure that we keep up true Christian Love (which Satan is an Enemy to.)

6. And this is love, that we walk after his commandments. This is the commandment, that as ye have heard from the beginning, ye should walk in it.

6. And the Love, in which we all must live, is our Union and Concord in keeping his Commandments; even the same Gospel which, from the beginning, was committed to us: (For both new and false Doctrines, and a sinful Life, do break the Union and Peace of Christians.)

7. For many deceivers are entered into the world, who confess not that Jesus Christ is come in the flesh. This is a deceiver and an antichrist.

7. For there are many Heretics now come to that deceiving path, that they deny Christ himself; either his Godhead, or Manhood, or Office, or Work; yes, his Incarnation; as if his Body were but a Fantast. These are Deceivers and Antichrists.

8. Look to your selves, that we lose not those things which we have wrought, but that we receive a full reward.

8. Look to your selves with watchful Care, that no Temptation draw you to backslide, and you lose all your former Belief and Labour, nor we our Ministerial Labour on you: but hold on, that you and we may attain that full Reward that we seek.

9. Whosoever transgresseth, and abideth not in the doctrine of Christ, hath not God: He that abideth in the doctrine of Christ, he hath both the Father and the Son.

9. As it was by the Doctrine of Christ, that you were brought into your blessed Knowledge and Relation to the Father and the Son, so, if you fall from that Doctrine,
3. For I rejoiced greatly when the brethren came and testified of the truth that is in thee, even as thou wast in the truth.

4. Note 3. Soul-Mercies are the greatest Mercies, and matters of the greatest Joy for one another. 2. Good Reports of our Brethren is a Duty tending to the comfort of Ministers and Friends.

5. I have no greater joy than to hear that my children walk in truth.


7. Beloved, thou dost faith-fully whatsoever thou dost to the brethren, and to strangers: 6. Which have born witness of thy charity before the church.

8. Note 5. Soul-Mercies are the greatest Mercies, and matters of the greatest Joy for one another. 2. Good Reports of our Brethren is a Duty tending to the comfort of Ministers and Friends.

9. And if thou further furnish and help them in their Travel, it will be a laudable, Christian Duty, doing as to God's Servants, who, for Christ's Name sake, went out of their Country, to preach abroad (or were persecute out) and took nothing of the Gentile Christians, towards their Maintenance in their Travels.

10. We therefore ought to receive such, that we might be fellow-helper to the truth.

11. To entertain and further such, is part of our Duty for the propagating of the Gospel.

9. I wrote unto the church, but Diotrephes, who loveth to have the pre-eminence among them, receiveth us not.

9. I wrote for them, to the Church, my Testimonial, and Desire of their Reception: But their Bishop, Diotrephes, who loveth to rule as pre-eminent among them, receiveth not us Jews (or my Letters and Request to the Church for them)

10. Wherefore if I come, I will remember his Deeds which he doth, prating against us with malicious words: and not content therewith, neither doth he himself receive the brethren, and forbideth them that would, and casteth them out of the Church.

10. Note 1. By remembering his Deeds and Words, is meant sharp rebuking him before all, at least, 2. It's like that this Diotrephes was Pastor, (or Bishop) else he could not have cast such out of the Church: At least he was some great man that usurped that Power: But sure no Lay-man did so early usurp the Keys. 3. By this we see that the Pride of domineering Bishops began early to be Schismatical, and divide the Church by Tyranny: Yea, it grew arrogant to oppose and reject the beloved Apostle, and maliciously to prate against him. There is no Man or Cause so good, but a malicious Bishop, or other Man, may prate against it. As there are few Mutinies dangerous in Armies, unless headed by some Commanders; so there are few Schisms much dangerous in the Church, but those that are headed by Bishops or Clergy-men. 4. It is uncertain whether it was to receive them to Communion, or only to Hospitality, that Diotrephes opposed: But it's like it was both, because he cast out their Receivers from Communion.

3. It is not certain whether he did it on any difference of Opinion, or occasional Quarrel; but it is most like it was that he was a Gentile Christian, and too much defied the Jews, as they cenfured and separated too much from the Gentiles, Rom. 14. Gal. 2. Thus Separation on both sides soon began, and even Peace-making Apostles could not be heard by the Dividers.

11. Beloved, follow not that which is evil, but that which is good, He that doth good, is of God: but he that doth evil, hath not seen God.

11. Imitate not such proud, hurtful, uncharitable, dividing Examples; whatever it pretend to, a hurtful, uncharitable course is not of God; such are not true Believers, and know not God aright. But it is doing Good that mult shew that we are of God. By their Fruit ye shall know them.

Note; Clergy Roman Cruelty by Inquisitions, Prisons, Ejecting True Ministers, &c. shew that they are not of God, tho' they pretend Power, Order, Unity, Faith, as if it were for God and Truth.

12. Demetrius hath good report of all men, and of the truth it self: yea, and we also bear record, and ye know that our record is true.

12. Both by common Report, and his own Good Works, and our True Wines command Demetrius.

13, 14. I had many things to write, but I will not with ink and pen write unto thee. But I trust I shall shortly see thee, and we shall speak face to face, Peace be to thee. Our friends saluate thee. Greet the friends by name.

13, 14. Note; Kind Remembrances and Greetings are suitable to Christian Friendship.
The General Epistle of St. J U D E (most probably the Apostle.)

CHAP. I.

J U D E the servant of Jesus Christ, and brother of James, to them that are sanctified by God the Father, and preserved in Jesus Christ, called: 2. Mercy unto you, and peace, and love be multiplied.

1. 2. Note; Men being judged of according to their Profession, all Christians are called Sanctified Persons.

3. Beloved, when I gave all diligence to write unto you of the common salvation: it was needful for me to write unto you, and exhort you that ye should earnestly contend for the faith which was once delivered unto the saints.

3. Note. The common Salvation signified but that way to Salvation which all must go in that will be saved, God's High-way to Heaven; Christ and his Gospel.

2. The Apostles writing more against Herekicks and Jews than Heathen, tells us, That the Church hath more cause usually to defend the Truth against pretended Religious Zealots, and Sects that are Erroneous, than against open Pagans, who are not animatted by so much blind Zeal against them; therefore they know not the Churches Cafe, who fear none but profane Enemies.

3. Though Love and Meekness may be predominant in Christians, earnest contending for the Faith against corrupting Herekicks is of a Duty. But if this be pretended for odious Censures, Excommunications, Persecutions, or dividing Contentions against Christians of the same Faith, for their Differences about lesser things, and for tolerable Imperfections, or for doubting of unnecessary Opinions, Ceremonies, Forms, or Humane Canons, it will be no cover for the Sin.

4. It is the Faith first delivered to the Churches by the Apostles, that Corrupters deprave, and we must contend for, and must be the Test of our several Differences.

5. Keep Faith and Religion found among it's Professors, and it will overcome the World.

4. For there are certain men crept in unawares, who were before of old ordained to this condemnation, ungodly men, turning the grace of our God into lasciviousnes, and denying the only Lord God, and our Lord Jesus Christ.

4. For there are crept in by little and little, as in the dark, some Men that Christ had before told us should arise, (or God decreed to condemn for their Sin) ungodly Men, that though they did seem Christians, have turned the Doctrine of God's Grace in Christ, into a Doctrine and Practice of Lasciviousnes and Licentiousnes, and denying Jesus Christ, who is the only Lord God, and our Lord (or the only God and our Saviour, &c.)

Note. One of Satan's chief ways against the Church and Religion, is to corrupt it by Herecless. 2. Corrupters creep secretly into the Church, at unawares, and do not openly bring in all at once: 3. Though God ordain or decree no Man's Sin, he both decreeth and foretelleth their Condemnation for Sin. 4. It is ungodly Men that are usually the great Corruptors of the Church and Doctrine. 5. Libertinism, Loosefenes and Sensuality, are the usual dangerous ways of such Corruptions, as being the way most suitable to Man's corrupt Nature, and which will have most Followers.

5. I will therefore put you in remembrance, though ye once knew this, how that the Lord having saved the people out of the land
Ch. 1. Horrible Punishment

Jude. of False Teachers. Ch. 1.

land of Egypt, afterwards destroyed them that believed not.

5. As the Israelites perished in the Wilderness for Unbelief, after all their miraculous Deliverances from Egypt; so shall the Revolters perish, notwithstanding their Baptism and fair beginnings.

6. And the angels which kept not their first estate, but left their own habitation, he hath reserved in everlasting chains under darkness, unto the judgment of the great day.

6. And the Angels that stood not in their Integrity, but fell by Sin, God hath shut up as it were Prisoners in Chains (though they go about all the Earth with Temptations,) in certain Expectation of fuller Condemnation at the great Day of Judgment.

7. Even as Sodom and Gomorrah, and the cities about them, in like manner giving themselves over to fornication, and going after strange flesh, are set forth for an example, suffering the vengeance of eternal fire.

7. As Sodom, &c. were by Fire from Heaven utterly destroyed, by God's revenge Judgment.

8. Likewise also these filthy dreamers defile the flesh, despise dominion, and speak evil of dignities.

8. So these Hereticks, dreaming of high Wisdom, are turned to Flethy Luks, and to despise Government, and speak contemptuously or reproachfully of Superiors, as if Christ had freed Men from Humane Rule, and made all equal, and all things lawful (when yet they deny even Christ himself, in some Essentials of his Person or Office.)

9. Yet Michael the archangel, when contending with the devil, he disputed about the body of Moses, durst not bring against him a railing accusation, but said, The Lord rebuke thee.

9. Yet Michael the chief Angel contending with a principal Devil about the rebuilding of the Jewish Temple, Zech. 3.

durst not bring railing Accusation, but appealed to God.

Note 1. There are Differences and Superiors among the Angels and Devils. It seems by Dan. 10. 13, 21. that Angels have their several earthly Provinces in charge, and that Michael was Prince of the Jewels. The badness and vanity of Malignants will not justify railing Accusation against them, when it may not be used against Devils; yet their Evil must be detected: that it may be frustrated. 3. By the Body of Mofis, I do understand his buried Body in which Satan Would have Idolized, and others his Body in the Basket, which Satan would have had drowned: But by Zech. 3. it is more like to be the Temple, Law, and Jewish Policy, called the Body of Mofis, and the Church is called the Body of Christ.

10. But these speak evil of those things which they know not; but what they know naturally, as brute beasts; in those things they corrupt themselves.

10. But these, pretending to know what they do not, speak evil of the things which they know not, being proud and ignorant of their Ignorance, but what natural Sense or Reasonableness constraineth them to know, their Lust prevaleth against it, and they live in Debauchery, as if they knew it not to be Evil.

Note: It's the common mark of Erroneous Men to be confident where they mistake, and to censure and speak evil freely of that which they never understood, and to sin against that Knowledge which they have, or easily might have.

11. Wo unto them, for they have gone in the way of Cain, and ran greedily after the error of Balaam for reward, and perished in the gain-laying of Core.

11. Woe to them, for they have imitated Cain in offering God a faithless Sacrifice, and envying and persecuting them that do better. And they are covetous Worldlings, that, like Balaam, would do Evil for Reward or Gain: And they have imitated Core in opposing Mofis and Aaron, Magistrates, and Apostles, and shall perish as they did.

12. These are spots in your feasts of charity, when they feast with you, feeding themselves with our
Ch. The Godly grow in Grace by Prayer. 

Ch. 12. These are the Disgrace of your Love-Feasts and Communion, which they turn into a Sensual Feast, not fearing Prophanation or Excess: Hypocrites, like empty Clouds, that water not the Earth, but carried about with the Winds of worldly Interest or Seduction; like fruitful Trees, twice dead and rooted up by Apostasie from their first Profession.

Note: It is a Wonder that the Apostle no more reproveth them for admiring such to their Communion, as it seemeth by these Words they did.

13. Raging waves of the sea, forming out their own flame; wandering stars, to whom is referred the blackness of darkness for ever.

14. Unquiet, fierce and raging Persons who while they pour out all Words of others, do but foam out their own flame: Teachers they will needs be, as Stars to the Churches; but they are but Erratick Stars or Comets, that shall end in endless Darkness to themselves, while they boast of Light to others.

15. And Enoch also the seventh from Adam, prophesied of these, saying, Behold, the Lord cometh with ten thousands of his saints.

16. To execute judgment upon all, and to convince all that are ungodly among them, of all their ungodly deeds which they have ungodly committed, and of all their hard speeches, which ungodly sinners have spoken against him.

17. But beloved, remember ye the words which were spoken before of the apostles of our Lord Jesus Christ: 18. How that they told you there should be mockers in the last time, who should walk after their own ungodly lusts.

19. These be they who separate themselves, sensual, having not the Spirit.


Note 1. It's like this Prophecy of H. noch was received by Tradition. 2. This description sure is not of the destruction of Jerusalem, but of the great day of the Lord, terrible to all the wicked, and the malignant Adversaries of Godliness.

16. These are murmurers, complainers, walking after their own lusts, and their mouth speaketh great swelling words, having men's persons in admiration because of advantage.

16. These are men that swell, and murmur, and complain against Government, and all that cross their Opinions or Lusts after which they walk; and they use big and boasting words, as men that were more knowing than all others (in Philosophical Fancies, and the Orders of Angels, and Ages, and Things above, and of Christian Liberty, &c.) and they extol the men for advantage of themselves, and of their Sect, who are their Leaders and chief favourites.

17. But beloved, remember ye the words which were spoken before of the apostles of our Lord Jesus Christ: 18. How that they told you there should be mockers in the last time, who should walk after their own ungodly lusts.

17, 18. But remember the words which Peter and other Apostles have spoken hereunto, that told you such men should come, and keep to the first Doctrine of the Apostles.

19. These be they who separate themselves, sensual, having not the Spirit.

19. These separate themselves into a distinct Sect, as if they were above the Apostolical Churches; but their actions shew that they are sensual, carnal men, not at all sanctified and guided by God's Spirit, as the faithful be.

Ch. 1. John writes to the Revelation. Seven Churches of Asia. Ch. i.

They are revolved from true Faith and Love; You must by God's Spirit keep your selves in unfigned Love to God, and to his Truth, and one another, waiting in Faith and Hope for Eternal Life by God's Mercy in Christ.

22. And of some have compassion, making a difference. 23. And others have fear, putting them out of the fire: hating even the garment spotted by the flesh.

23, 24. And as to your dealing with such erroneous men, it must be differently as they differ, even tenderly and compassionately with some; and with others you must deal more severely and sharply, as with Lot in Sodom, or men in a house that is on fire, where death, if not quickly prevented, you must fear, and therefore be importunate with them: But seek to save them all, and not to use any violent or hurtful course. And your selves must hate and avoid all degrees of filthiness and sensuality.

24, 25. Now unto him who is able in all temptations, notwithstanding your own weakness, to keep you steadfast in Faith and Holiness, from falling into the snares of Herecism or Ungodliness, and to present you faultless (as being faithful and upright, and your sins forgiven) before the presence of his Glory at his coming, that you may see him, and stand before him with exceeding joy, (when the wicked are condemned) I say, to him the only God of infinite Wisdom, to our Saviour, be Glory, and Majesty, and Dominion, and Power, now and ever; so it will certainly be; and such is the prayer of all the faithful.

The Revelation of St. John the Divine.

CHAP. I.

1. The revelation of Jesus Christ, which God gave unto him, to shew unto his servants things which must shortly come to pass; and he sent and signified it by his angel unto his servant John:

1. Note 1. It is eminently called the Revelation, as being by Vision and Prophetick notice an extraordinary Revelation of future things.

2. Note 2. He well observeth hence the Order of God's Revelation to his Church. First, God himself is the Fountain; he revealeth it to our Mediator, as Man, (who knoweth all things as God:) that according to his Office he may be the Light and Teacher to his Church. Christ revealeth it to Angels, the Holy Ghost and Angels reveal it to Apostles and Prophets; they reveal and record it to the Church, where all must learn it, but specially Teachers, to tell it to the People.

2. It is things to come that are here revealed; therefore I cannot receive those two Learned mens Explication, who make it a History in a Prophetick style, and say, that most, or very much of it, was done before it was written.

4. The word ( shortly) made them expand almost the whole Book of things all fulfilled about Confamines time, or presently after Alaric's sacking of Rome. But ( shortly ) may signify no more than, 1. That these things will shortly be begun, though not quickly finished. And, 2. That a thousand years is with the Lord but as one day. But I confess that so much, as can be proved already done, we must as feign to be yet to come.

5. It is most like that this John was the Apostle, but it's not certain.

2. Who have record of the word of God, and of the testimony of Jesus Christ, and of all things that he saw.

2. Who by this Writing truly telleth the Churches, what Christ by his Angel told him, as a faithful Witness of Christ; and of all that he saw and heard in this Vision and Revelation.
Ch. 1. John writes to the Revelation. Seven Churches of Asia. Ch. 1.

Revelation: some things that then were, may be mentioned, to introduce the Prophecy of things to come.

3. Blessed is he that readeth, and they that hear the words of this prophecy, and keep those things which are written therein for the time is at hand.

3. Note: It is a desirable thing, and an addition to that man's wisdom and happiness, who understandeth this, and all other Scripture Prophecies; but this concludeth not that no other are blessed, or that many attain that degree of happiness. (For I think I never knew one such.) But the necessary parts of Christianity, which are in this Prophecy mixt with darker passages, all must keep that will be blessed.

2. The Time of their beginning was at hand, and the End not far off.

4. John to the seven churches in Asia. Grace be unto you, and peace, from him which is, and which was, and which is to come, and from the seven spirits which are before his throne:

4. 1 John send you this holy Greeting and Benediction, Grace and Peace (the greatest blessings) be to you from the Eternal God, and those Angels whom he hath made your special Guardians.

Note 1. That it is Angels (and not the Holy Ghost's seven Graces) that is here meant, is after manifest.

2. Why they are called Seven, some say, because Seven goeth for a number of perfection, whence the Seven Planets, the seven days of the week, &c. But this is but men's conceit, and no part of God's Word. Nor can we prove hence, that God hath set seven Angels above all the rest. But all that we can know of it, is, that John, being commanded to write to seven Churches, numbereth the Guardian Angels accordingly from their Charges.

3. This is no Prayer to these Angels, but a notice that God's Mercies are communicated to those Churches by their Ministry, and this message sent by them from Christ.

4. The naming of the seven Spirits before Christ, is no preferring them as above him: But Christ is after named, because much more is to be said there of him together.

5. Why seven Churches only are named, men variously conjecture: some say, because they are spoken of Prophetically, as in their names seven states of the Universal Church, or its notable parts, to the end, are signified. But this (being impossible to be proved) is rather to pretend another Revelation, than to expound this. Others say, that it being only the Pro-Consular Asia that John wrote to, these seven being the Metropolitan City-Churches, did comprehend all the rest, as parts under them. But 1. This is but a Human Imagination, without any proof. 2. If they meant that these were then made Ecclesiastical Metropolits, it's a fiction without, and against, Historical evidence, which tells us of a far later date of Metropolitan Churches. 3. If they mean that they were Metropolits only in a Civil sense, and that the Apostles, in planning Churches there, purposed or ordained that afterwards Church-power should follow the Order of the Seats of Civil Power, I answer. 1. That this is a crude unproved Assertion, and therefore of no authority or credit. 2. And it's known, that it was four hundred years after that this was decreed by a Council as a new thing. 3. And this was so far from being Apostolical, that it confounded the Church, letting in superiority the worst men that could but get into a Metropolis, and putting all Bishops and Churches at present under the Power of the People and Presbyters of one City, which was a Metropolis, and chose their own Bishop: Yea, Dr. Hammond thought that then no Bishop had any Presbyters under him, and so there were none but his People to chuse him; (for the Neighbour Bishops did not, though they ordained him:) Yea it turneth Churches upside down at the will of every Emperor, Heathen, Infidel or Christian, who can enfranchise or disfranchise Cities at his pleasure. 4. And there is no proof that these seven were all and only the Civil Metropolitical Cities of Asia.

3. Both these then being men unproved Imaginations, yea and unlikely, it remaineth that these seven Churches were most eminent in Asia, both for greatness and those tryals, virtues and faults which Christ was pleased to note as the occasion of this message; And if it be necessary to send a message to seven, it belongs not to us to ask him, why he sendeth to no more.

5. And from Jesus Christ, who is
Ch. 2. Christ's coming, 

is the faithful witness, and the first begotten of the dead, and the prince of the kings of the earth:

5. Note. 1. By [faithful witnesses] is meant, the faithful and certain Messengers and Revealer of God's will to man: 2. By [first begotten] is meant, both the Greatest and most Excellent, and the first in order and authority, rising from the dead, is the cause that we shall Rile. 3. He is Prince of the kings of the Earth, not only as Greater than all kings, but as over them all in power, by whom they reign, and who doth dispose of all, Eph. 2. 23, 25. Matt. 28. 19. 20. 22. 22. John 1. 3. 13. John 1. 1. 15, 16, 17. Phil. 2. 9, 10, 11.

5. Unto him that loved us, and washed us from our sins in his own blood, 6. And hath made us Kings and priests unto God and his Father; to him be glory and dominion for ever and ever. Amen.

6. To this Glorious Lord and Saviour, who shewed his wonderful Love to us, by his giving up himself a Sacrifice for our sins, that the Merit of his Blood might cleanse us from guilt and sin, and justify us from it before God, and who hath chosen and sanctified us and made us by his Grace, a peculiar holy People to God, dignified in our Relation to Christ as Kings in honour, and brought us near to God like consecrated Priests, to offer him our daily service acceptable through Christ; To him, I say, shall be Glory and Dominion for ever, in the acknowledgment whereof let all his Saints rejoice.

7. Behold, he cometh with clouds, and every eye shall see him; and they also which pierced him, and all kinds of the earth shall wail because of him: even so, Amen.

7. I have oft before enquired whether this Coming of Christ be 1. his Coming by the Roman Armies to destroy Jerusalem, 2. Or his setting up Christianity in the World, and destroying Heathenism, 3. Or his Coming at last in Glory. The matter is true as to all the three: But the Text seemeth most strained by the first Explication, and least by the last; Every way he is dreadful to his enemies. But every eye feareth him not the first way; nor did the destroyed Jews acknowledge it to be by him.

8. I am Alpha and Omega, the beginning and the ending, faith the Lord, which is, and which was, and which is to come, the Almighty.

8. I am everlasting, before all Worlds, and without end, and he who hath Power over all.

Note. These words seem to be the words of Christ, and not of God the Father. And with the sixt verse, which ascribes to Him everlasting Glory and Dominion, do seem plainly to speak the Godhead of Christ.

9. I John, who also am your brother and companion in tribulation, and in the Kingdom and patience of Jesus Christ, was in the isle that is called Patmos, for the word of God, and for the testimony of Jesus Christ.

9. I John, who was your brother and companion, undergo the like sufferings as you do, in the same belief and subjection to Christ in his Kingdom, and in patient enduring for his sake, was in the isle of Patmos, whither I was banished for my Testimony, and preaching the faith of Christ.

10. I was in the Spirit on the Lords-day, and heard behind me a great voice, as of a Trumpet.

10. I was there in a transporting rapture by the Spirit of God, on the first day of the week, called by the Church The Lords day, (observed in commemoration of his Resurrection;) And I heard a voice call to me as low as a Trumpet.

Note 1. The vain cavil of those that deny the [Lords day] here to mean the Christians day of holy worship, even the first of the week, I have fully confuted in a book called the Divine appointment of the Lord's day. And it needs no confirmation to those that are acquainted with Church History, who know that this day hath been kept holy as of Apostolical ordinance and practice by the universal Church ever since the Apostles daies, the Heretics themselves confessing.

2. Christ
Christ owned his own day, and the of his banished solitary servant; communication of these extraordinary revelations, and by the exaltation of influence.

Saying, I am Alpha and the first and the last: that thou seest, write in a and send it unto the seven who in Asia, unto us, and unto Smyrna, and unto Pergamos, and unto Thyatira, and unto Sardis, and unto Philadelphia, and unto Laodicea.

Note 1. The first sentence is out of Breach Copies, but is before spoken. The description of Christ's eternity. This was written by Christ's command.

And I turned to see the one that spake with me. And I turned, and I saw seven golden candlesticks.

And I beheld the midwife of the seven Candlesticks, one like unto Son of man, clothed with a vesture down to the feet, and girt about the paps with a golden girdle.

One in the shape of a Man who was a representation of Christ in splendid clothes.

15. Whether it was the Angel that thus spake to Christ, or Christ himself who did this appearing shape immediately ascertain.

4. His head and his hair were as white as snow, his eyes were as a flame of fire.

And his feet like unto fine gold, as if they burned in a furnace, and his voice as the sound of many waters.

15. Christ's apparition signifies his majesty, by his fiery eyes and ears, his dreadful voice, to affect all with reverence, and his foes with terror.

16. He and he had in his right hand seven stars, and out of his mouth went a sharp two-edged sword, and his countenance was as the sun shineth in his strength.

16. And in his right hand were held seven Stars, which signifies the pastors of the seven Churches, commissioned and upheld by him: And a two-edged Sword, from his mouth, signified his Word went forth with power, to convert and save the Elect, and to convince and condemn the obstinate rejectors: And his countenance was glorious as the Sun in its clearest appearance.

17.And when I saw him, I fell at his feet as dead: and he laid his right hand upon me, saying unto me, Fear not, I am the first and the last.

17. He laid on me his supporting hand of Love, when his terrible Glory had cast me at his feet, and bid me not to fear. (for his Glory is joyful to his Servants, thought terrible to his Enemies:) He is my Almighty, Eternal God, and my Hope.

18. I am he that liveth, and was dead: and behold, I am alive for evermore. Amen, and have the keys of hell and of death.

18. I am Christ who was lately Incarnate on Earth, and crucified for your sins, and now live your King and Intercessor in Glory, and shall die no more: And death, and all separated Souls are in my power, to be taken into Happiness, or cast out.

19. Write the things which thou hast seen, and the things which are, and the things which shall be hereafter.

19. Write these Revelations for posterity, which contain what thou seest, and the Exposition of some things that already exist, and the Prophesy of many things to come.

20. The mystery of the seven Stars which thou sawest in my right hand, and the seven golden candlesticks. The seven Stars are the angels of the seven Churches: and the seven candlesticks which thou sawest, are the seven Churches.

20. Note: It is a great Controversy what is meant by Angel here; Some say that the Prophetic phrase being primarily...
Ch. 2. The Angel of Ephesus. Revelation. The Angel of Ephesus. Ch. 2.

1. To the Pastors and Elders of the Church of Ephesus, by the name of their Angels. These things faith Christ before described, and commanded me to write them.

Note 1. I believe not that Timothy was their Bishop in the ordinary sense, as a fixed Pastor of that Church alone, but that he itinerant course (described in Scripture, doing the work of an Evangelist) was there sometime, and is therefore by the Ancients called their Bishop, as Apollos; they were called Bishops, for planting and taking care for many Churches; when as there is not the least proof that they appropriated any Dioceses or Churches to each, as their proper charge, which other Apostles might not use the same Authority with, or were fixed to any.

2. I believe it yet less probable that Timothy was the Angel here accused, of leaving and falling from his first love.

2. I know thy works, and thy labour, and thy patience, and how thou canst not bear them which are evil, and thou hast tried them which say they are apostles, and are not; and hast found them liars:

3. Thy good works, and great labour in the Gospel, and thy patience in suffering for it, are not unknown or disregarded by me: And it is thy praise that thou dost not countenance nor tolerate among you, the seducing Hieretics, and wicked men; and that thou hast pretended Inspiration, as sent of God, thou hast tried, and rejected them as proved Liars, and false Apostles.

4. And thou hast born, and hast patience, and for my names sake hast laboured, and hast not fainted:

3. Note: Christ loveth and prayeth that which is good in the Churches, while he reproveth them for that which is evil.

4. Nevertheless, I have some things against thee, because thou hast left thy first love.

But for this I reproved thee, that you might turn again, and live; for I am not come to destroy, but to save. And now, arise, and repent, and do thy first works; otherwise I will come unto thee quickly, and will remove thy candlestick out of his place, except thou repent. He that hath an ear, let him hear.
ch. 2. The Angel of Smyrna. Revelation.

The Angel of Smyrna.

1. For I was cold, declining taste, by negligence.
2. Remember therefore from whence thou art fallen, and repent, and do the first works, or else I will come unto thee quickly, and will remove thy candlestick out of his place, except thou repent.
3. Look back on thy first Love and works, and think whether it was not then better with thee, and whether thou hadst any cause to decline; Return to thy first works, or else I will shortly visit thee with the heavy punishment, of taking the Ministry and Gospel from thee.

Note 1. Declinations from former Love and Duty are displeasing to God, and tend to worse. 2. It is a grievous punishment to have the Gospel and Ministry taken away, either by Wars, Devastations, Persecution, Silencing, and worst by wilful Exultation.

6. But this thou hast, that thou hast the deeds of the Nicolaitans, which I also hate.

6. It is commendable in thee, that thou hast the deeds of the Nicolaitans, for I am there.

Note 1. It is lawful to distinguish such Heretics as are not to be tolerated in Church-Communion by the names of their leaders: But this should not be done against tolerable differences, as tending to divide those that should all unite in the Christian name.

2. God hateh licentious Doctrines and deeds, and so must we.

2. Whence these Nicolaitans had their name is not known certainly, but doubtless the tradition in History tells us, that Nicholas the Deacon, Acts 6, had a beautiful Wife, and he was blamed as jealous of her; and that therefore he brought her forth, and bid her how should she take her, to show that he was above all filthy lust, and that some people, misunderstanding him, thence took occasion to plead for the lawfulness of Forcation. The Herefie of these hateful Nicolaitans lay, 1. In making light of Forcipation, 2. In disputing the Heathens government, as if Christian Liberty lay being from under its power. 3. And in teaching that to avoid suffering men might deny Christ with the mouth, while the heart denied him not. 4. And that they might eat things offered to Idols, so they despised the Idol in their hearts. Paul, Acts 15, had before told these Ephesians, that grievous Wolves should enter and devour, and that of their own selves men should arise speaking perverie things, to draw Disciples after them: And it seems thus warned, they hated the Herefie. And St. John himself lived in Asia, and is said to die at Ephesus, who no doubt would warn them (and was above Timothy.)

7. He that hath an ear, let him hear what the Spirit saith unto the churches. To him that overcometh will I give to eat of the tree of life, which is in the midst of the paradise of God.

7. Let all that hear or read these words of the Spirit to the Churches, set their hearts to them with regard, as of great and common importance: To him that in the day of Tryal and Temptation doth overcome, by being true to Christ, and keeping his Innocency, I will give a part in everlasting Happiness, signified by the Tree of Life in Paradise.

Note 1. Striving without overcoming in Temptation, so far as to keep our uprightness and faithfulness, will not save men (much less lazy-wills.)

2. Though Faith put us at first in a state of Righteousness and Life, to those that survive, Perseverance and Victory are conditions of Salvation.

3. It seems that the sense of the Tree of Life in Paradise, Gen. 3, is here expounded to be, Everlasting Life of Blessedness with God, and so in the New Jerusalem after, ch. 21, 22.

8. And unto the angel of the church in Smyrna write, These things saith the First and the Last, which was dead, and is alive.

8. Note: Christ is not barely named, but described by Divine Properties, to awe the Church with reverence to him, and to resolve them to Trust him, who can deliver and reward them.

9. I know thy works and tribulation, and poverty, (but thou art rich) and I know the blasphemy of them which say they are Jews and are not, but are the synagogue of Satan.

9. I know with approbation and praise, thy labour, and sufferings, and worldly poverty.
poverty; but thou art rich in grace: And I know that blaspheamous Sect, that tempe and reproach thee, who by obtruding Mas- fess's Law on the Churches, (or at least (cem Jews to avoid their malice) do trouble the Churches against Purity, Unity and Peace, and are Satans Synagogue, as this doing his work.

10. Fear none of those things which thou shalt suffer: behold, the devil shall cast some of you into prifon, that ye may be tried, and ye shall have tribulation ten days: be thou faithful unto death, and I will give thee a crown of life.

10. Fear not though thou must suffer; and I foretell thee what thy sufferings will be: But I will fully reward thee.

Note. 1. Certainty of suffering may con- flict with the Cquest of cowardly fear.

2. It is the Devil that impioeeth and persecuteeth Christ's Servants, when his wicked Servants do it by his Temptation.

3. Prisons and Persecutions are for the Tryal of the Faithful. Our care therefore must be, that we fall not in the Tryal.

4. Ten days is a short time, yet seemeth long to the flesh.

5. The Crown of Life Everlasting is the sure reward of true Martyrdom and Perseverance in Tryal.

11. He that hath an ear, let him hear what the Spirit saith unto the Churches. He that overcometh, shall not be hurt of the second death.

11. These Warnings of the Spirit to the Churches are recorded as of great Concernment for all. It is they that overcome the Love of this Life and World, even unto death, if God call them to Martyrdom, that shall escape that foretold Death that, after this Life, will befall the Ungodly.

12. And to the angel of the church in Pergamos, write, These things faith he which hath the sharp sword with two edges.

12. To the Pastors and People of the Church of Pergamos, noted by the word Angel, Christ, that hath his dreadful Justice, as well as Iaying Mercy, fendeth this Message.

Note. 1. Once for all here note, that Churches were then named from Cities, because Proximity was needful to Communication. And among Christians, there should be so great Unity, that they that live in one Proxi- mity (like our Parishes or Towns) should al- ways be one Church, unless the uncapable Multitude force them to divide in one City, into many Churches; in which still Proxi- mity should be observed, and unless the great Corruption, or Violence, of any Church do necessitate any to congregate by themselves, for their safety and duty. For if the faults of a Church, and any of its Members, be but tolerable, for which God doth not break their Communion, but they should bear with, and receive each other: But if they are intolerable, for which God doth not break their Communion, but their Worship, they are no true Churches, and must be forsook of all, as no true particular Christians, and must be cast out.

13. I know thy works, and where thou dwellest, even where Satan's seat is, and thou holdest fast my Name, and hast not deni- ed my faith, even in those days wherein Antipas was my faithful martyr, who was slain among you, where Satan dwelleth.

13. I know, with Approbation, all thy good Works, and that thou dwellest where Satan ruleth in the Heathen multitude; having there an idol Temple, and Roman, persecuting Powers; and that ye haft had faft the Profession of Christianity, and not denied me in Persecution; even in the days when Satan's Instruments murder my faithful Martyr, Antipas.

Note. We have no other certain History of Antipas, and his Cafe, but only the uncertain Stories of Papias, and the Menologus. It is clear from the time of his suffering is unknown.

14. But I have a few things against thee, because thou hast there them that hold the doctrine of Balam, who taught Balac to cast a stumbling-block before the children of Israel, to eat things sacrificed unto idols, and to commit fornication.
Ch. 2. The Angel of Thyatira. Revelation. commended and reproved. Ch. 2.

14. Though all this Good be found in thee, I am offended that thou so committest the Hereofie of the false Teachers, as to permit some of them in thy Communion, who, as Balaam for Gain taught Balac how to enchain the Israelites into sin by Women, so they lay Snares and Temptations before Men, by teaching them, that it is lawful to eat things offered to do's, and to commit Fornication.

Note: Had not this Church tolerated these filthy Heretics in their Communion, Christ would not have blamed them for their meer Neighbourhood.

15. So hast thou also them that hold the doctrine of the Nicolaitans, which things I hate.

16. And thou hast yet in thy Communion some that hold the Doctrine of the Nicolaitans, which maketh light of Adulteries, which is hateful to me.

Note: Christ hateth all such false Doctrines corrupt Faith and Manners.

15. Repent, or else I will come unto thee quickly, and will fight against them with the sword of my mouth.

16. Repent of thy connivance at this wicked Sect and Doctrine, and cast out them that will not be cured; or else with the two-edged Sword, which goeth out of my Mouth, I will shortly cut of these Heretics, and punish thee for bearing with them.

17. He that hath an ear, let him hear what the Spirit saith unto the churches. To him that overcometh will I give to eat of the hidden manna, and will give him a white stone, and in the stone new name written, which no man knoweth, saving he that receiveth it.

18. And unto the angel of the church in Thyatira, write, These things saith the Son of God, who hath his eyes like unto a flame of fire, and his feet are like fine brass.

19. To the Church of Thyatira, Pastors and People represented by their Angel, hear and regard this message from the Son of God, whose glory and dreadfulnes was signified by his appearing to me, with Eyes like a flame, and Feet shining as burnish'd Brass.

19. I know thy works, and charity, and service, and faith, and thy patience, and thy works, and the last to be more than the first.

19. I know and commend thy good Works and Charity, and Ministration to the Saints, and thy Fidelity and constant Patience in Tryals, and that thy last Works excel thy first.

20. Notwithstanding, I have a few things against thee, because thou sufferest that woman Jezebel, which calleth her self a prophesetess, to teach, and to seduce my servants to commit fornication, and to eat things sacrificed unto idols.

21. And I gave her space to repent of her fornication, and she repented not.

20. Note 1. Even a few faults in a laudable Church may be a provocation to the Justice of Christ. 2. Suffering corrupt Doctrines and Seducers in a Church, is a sin which Christ will not pass by. Suffering was not opp-fiice to Banishing, Imprisoning, Killing: For the Church had no such power or command. But it was forbearing that sharp Reproof, Confination and Excommunication which was the Churches duty. 3. Whether there were really a Woman among them that promoted this Wickedness, by pretence of Prophetick Inspiration, or whether, by the Woman Jezebel, be meant the whole Sect of Nicolaitans or Gogsticks, is uncertain. But...
Ch. 2. The Angel of Thyatira

Revelation, commanded and reproved. Ch. 2.

It's certain that the Heavens tolerated was the same as was before reproved, and that Paul was put so oft to write against, viz., Fornication and Idol-Sacrifices, pleaded for as lawful for Christians to partake of, so they kept their Faith and Hearts to God. 4. Impudence after God's Patience and Warnings, ripened Men for Judgment.

22. Behold, I will cast her into a bed, and them that commit adultery with her, into great tribulation, except they repent of their deeds. 23. And I will kill her children with death, and all the churches shall know that I am he which searcheth the reins and hearts: and I will give unto every one of you according to your works.

22, 23. Instead of a Bed of Lust, I will cast her, and all her seduced Sects, into a Bed of great Tribulation, except true Repentance and Reformation prevent it, so that all the Churches shall see my heavy Plagues on them, and shall know that I am the Judge, and hate, and judge the most secret lusts and sins; and will judge you, and all Men, according to your works.

Note: Judging is either Justifying or Condemning, and Executing accordingly. Our first Justification, which maketh us Just, and to Accounts, 1st, is not according to any works strictly so called, unless you will call it a work, believingly to Accept a free gift: Nor is our Justification in Judgment according to the works of the Law of Innocency, or of Masis, or any that can be thought to make the Reward not of Grace, but of Debit: But it is according to our performing the Covenant of Christianity, made by Christ the condition of Salvation.

24. But unto you I say, and to the rest in Thyatira, as many as have not this doctrine, and which have not known the depths of Satan, as they speak, I will put upon you none other burden. 25. But that which ye have already, hold fast till I come.

24, 25. Note: Some Copies have [And] and some leave it out. If it be [you and]
1. A nd unto the angel of the church in Sardis write, These things saith he that hath the seven Spirits of God, and the seven stars; I know thy works, that thou hast a name, that thou diest, and art dead.

1. To the Angel, that is, the Pastors and People, of the Church in Sardis; Thus saith he who is the Lord of Angels and Ministers.

Note: Though the Spirits before were named before Christ, it was not as preferring them before him; for he is here said to have them, as he hath the Pastors.

I know what thou art and dost: And that thou art reputed by Men, to be an excellent Church: But thou art declined to a cold and decayed state, even like to Death.

Note: Profession, and outward Splendor, make Churches and Persons applauded, vying the life and power of the Religion they profess, are next to dead.

2. Be watchful, and strengthen the things which remain, that are ready to die: for I have not found thy works perfect before God.

2. Be awakened from thy Self-satisfaction and Coldness, and revive and exercise that Good which thou hast, that it may be strengthened; for I find much Hypocrisy and Formality in thee, and not that Soundness, Seriousness and Zeal which God will require.

3. Remember therefore how thou hast received and heard, and held fast, and repented. If therefore thou shalt not watch, I will come on thee as a thief, and thou shalt not know what hour I will come upon thee.

3. Remember what Doctrine my Apostles taught thee, and hold fast that, and receive no other. Repent of thy Backsliding: For if thou do not awake and watch in thy Preparation, I will come upon thee with my Judgments, as a Thief cometh on Men asleep, when thou art most careless, and dost least expect me.

4. Thou hast a few names even in Sardis, which have not defiled their garments, and they shall walk with me in white: for they are worthy.

4. Though the greater part of that Church be as dead in their declining, some few there are yet in it, who have kept their Innocency from Heresie, Vice and Cowardly Shrinking: And these shall have the honourable Reward of their Uprightness; for they are worthy of it, according to the Law of Grace, which promiseth it to such alone.

Note: Yet these few Names are not commanded to separate from the rest.

5. He that overcometh, the same shall be clothed in white raiment, and I will not blot out his name out of the book of life; but I will confess his name before my Father, and before his angels.

5. He that overcometh in this Life of Tryal, shall be clothed with the Glory which signifieth the Reward of Innocency, and is the mark of Dignity and Honour; (for such then was White Raiment:) And I will own him openly, before my Father and his Angels, as one whom is enrolled as a Citizen of Heaven, among the Elect of God.

Note: If White Garments now be seemly for conquering Saints, they are unmeet for them that are overcome by the World, and the love of its Honour, Wealth and Power, and by fleshly Lusts.

6. He that hath an ear, let him hear what the Spirit saith unto the
Ch. 3. The Angel of Philadelphia Revelation. and Laodicea. Ch. 3.

the Churches. 7. And to the angel of the church in Philadelphia, write, These things faith he that is holy, he that is true, he that hath the key of David, he that openeth, and no man shutteth, and shutteth, and no man openeth:

6, 7. Note; Christ is described by his Holiness, and Truth, and absolute Power of Governing and Judging, to awe and to comfort the Faithful.

8. I know thy works: behold, I have set before thee an open door, and no man can shut it: for thou hast a little strength, and hast kept my word, and hast not denied my name.

8. I know and approve thy Fidelity: And I opened thee a Door of Advantage, to do good in converting infidels, and to enjoy the comfort of it; and none shall shut this Door against thee: For thou hast kept some strength of Faith and Courage, and hast not denied me by Heretike nor Cowardize.

9. Behold, I will make them of the synagogue of Satan (which say they are Jews, and are not, but do lie) behold, I will make them to come and worship before thy feet, and to know that I have loved thee.

9. And as for those Hereticks that, pretending Judaism, corrupt Christianity, and are but the Synagogue of Satan; I will make them acknowledge the vanity of their Errors, and the honour of thy Fidelity; and to confess that I have loved and justified thee therein, against their Acquisitions.

10. Because thou hast kept the word of my patience, I also will keep thee from the hour of temptation, which shall come upon all the world, to try them that dwell upon the earth.

10. I will give thee a special Exemption from the Persecutions which the Heathens will shortly suffer, to try those on earth, that profess thy Name. (Which, no doubt, was performed.)

Note; Though the best are oft singled out for Persecution, usually the most obedient Churches escape above others, and most have a hand in bringing it on themselves.

11. Behold, I come quickly: hold that faith which thou hast, that no man take thy crown.

11. My performance of all this, is not far off; for the Tryal of the Churches, and thy Preservation. But see that thou hold fast still thy Innocency, Fidelity and Patience, that thou lose not the Crown, for want of Perseverance.

Note; The best Churches and Christians have need to be warned to take heed, lest they backslide, and lose all their labour and reward. Even where God decreeth to cause Men to perish, he decreeth to cause it, by holy fear of falling, and by the use of Watchfulness, and diligent Obedience.

12. Him that overcometh, will I make a pillar in the temple of my God, and he shall go no more out: and I will write upon him the name of my God, and the name of the city of my God, which is new Jerusalem, which cometh down out of heaven from my God: and I will write upon him my new name.

12. Him that overcometh in all the Trials of this life, I will make an honourable Member of the glorified Church, (called a Pillar, as Timothy is called a Pillar and Basis of Truth, in the House of God;) and he shall there dwell for ever: And I will signify him, as with a written Name, both of My God, and of the City of my God, the New Jerusalem, which is now gathering in Heaven; and when it is compleat, shall thence come, and appear with me in Glory: And I will write on him my new Name, The Glorified Redeemer.

Note; The whole Name, thus set together, will be, [An adopted Son of God and an Heir of the New Jerusalem from Heaven, and a living Member of Christ, the Glorified Redeemer.]

13. He that hath an ear, let him hear what the Spirit saith unto the churches.
Ch. 3. Christ's Call

Revelation. to Sinners. Ch. 3.

13. All that have ears, and hear what Christ, by his Spirit, faith to all these Churches, should say it deeply to heart, for their own Instruction and Admonition.

14. And unto the Angel of the church of the Laodiceans, write, These things say the Amen, the faithful and true Witness, the beginning of the creation of God.

14. Thus saith he who is the Truth, and by whom, all God's Predictions are, and will be fulfilled; the faithful Witnesses of God, to Man, by his Word and Sufferings; the Head and Chief of all God's Creatures.

Note: This Text is diversely expounded, as men's Judgments differ. 1. The Arians hence gather, that Christ is but the first of Creatures, by whom God made the Rth. 2. Peter Sterry, and that Party, who hold three Natures in Christ, the Divine, the Prime-created (Super-angelical,) and the Humane, say, It is his middle Nature that is here called, The Beginning of the Creation of God. 3. But the commonest Judgment of the Church is, that it is Christ, as in both Natures, thus called; because he is the Head, or Chief, of all Creatures; or, say some, as he is the Cause and Father of the new Creature, by Grace.

15. I know thy works, that thou art neither cold nor hot: I would thou were cold or hot.

16. So then because thou art lukewarm, and neither cold nor hot, I will spew thee out of my mouth.

16. I know thy case and curfew, that thou art not for open Heresie or Indelity, but professe Christianitie; but it is with Tepidity, without such Zel as the Faith and Hope of Christians requireth. If thou were cold, and for downright Indelity or Heresie, I would judge thee accordingly: And if ye were found and zealous Christians, I would own you. But being of a lukewarm Indifferency, like Hypocrisie, that professe Christianitie, with Referves for Worldly Safety, I will disown thee with disdain.

Note. 1. Not that God had rather men were stark nought, than half Christians; but, as he had said, I should sooner have judged thee accordingly, and thou wouldst not have aggravated thy sin with Professeion of Christianitie, nor have dishonoured me so much by it, 2. God will disown luke-warm, worldly Hypocrisie; not all, whose Zel is defective, and are too luke-warm, but all that have not so much Zel, as to prefer Christ before the World.

17. Because thou sayest, I am rich, and increased with goods, and have need of nothing; and knowest not that thou art wretched, and miserable, and poor, and blind, and naked.

17. Note: 'Tis like, The Oftentations of this Church came from some worldly Prosperity; and outward, lifeless Formality in Religion, with the decay of the Power of it. When true Religion decayeth in any, 'tis usually accompanied with Self-Esteem, and boasting, when they should learn, not to be high-minded, but fear. When they have turned Religion into a lifeless Image, they dance about that Image, and honour it.

18. I counsel thee to buy of me gold tried in the fire, that thou mayest be rich; and white raiment, that thou mayest be clothed, and that the shame of thy nakedness do not appear; and ancient things, and eyes with eye-salve, that thou mayest see.

18. I counsel thee to seek earnestly to me for found Understanding in the Faith, against all Heresie; and for the Grace of Confirmation, against all deceitful Wavering and Referves; and for the Grace of sincere Righteousness and Holiness, that thou bear not the shame of Hypocrisie, and halting between Heresie, or Indelity, and saying Truth; and for the Illumination of my Spirit, to know the danger of Heresie and Hypocrisie.

19. As many as I love, I rebuke and chasten: be zealous therefore and repent.

19. If I for sake you not, but shew my love to you, it will be by chastening you, to revive your Care and Zel. If therefore you love not Chastening, prevent it by Zel and Reformation.

20. Behold, I stand at the door, and knock: if any man hear my voice,
Ch. 3, 4. John seeth God's voice, and open the door, I will come in to him, and will sup with him, and he with me.

20. I have my time of offering Mercy, and desiring you to entertain it: And if any Man hear and obey this Call, I will come in by my Spirit, and take habitual Possession of him, and have spiritual Communion with him, and be with me.

Note: Though it be not without the Grace of Christ that we open to him when he knocks, and receive his offered special Grace; yet, in this, he layeth so much on Man, as to make our Opening, that is, our Accepting-Faith, the Condition of his Entering for a fixed Habitation by habitual Love and Holiness. On which account, Divines use to say, that Faith and Repentance, wrought first in Conversion, are the Conditions or Qualifications for consequent Justification and Sanification.

21. To him that overcometh will I grant to sit with me in my throne, even as I also overcame, and am set down with my Father, in his Throne.

21. To him that overcometh all the Temptations of this Life, so far as to keep his sincere Faith, Love and Obedience to the End, I will give a Participation in my Kingdom, Power and Glory, even as I obtained my Glory, by overcoming Satan and the World.

Note: This expounds what is meant before, by Ruling the Nations with a Rod of Iron.

22. He that hath an ear, let him hear what the Spirit saith unto the churches.

22. Note: Let every Man that hath an ear and Heart, lay close to heart these Reproofs, Warnings and Promises of Christ to these seven Churches; for it concerneth them all.

Again note that, notwithstanding all Christ's Reproofs and Threatenings, to many of these Churches, he biddeth no one separate from them.

CHAP. IV.

1. After this I looked, and behold, a door was opened in heaven: and the first voice which I heard, was as it were a trumpet-sounding with me, which said, Come up hither, and I will shew thee those things which must be hereafter.

1. After this the Vision, that I saw, was as if a door had been opened to Heaven, &c.

Note: 1. Not that Heaven hath a Door, but the Vision was to be linked to the Capacity of a Soul in Earth. 2. The Notices which advance Man's Understanding on Earth, come all from Heaven. 3. And if thirstier must we look and seek, if we will know the things of God.

2. And immediately I was in the Spirit: and behold, a throne was set in heaven, and one sat on the throne.

2. And immediately I was in a Place, the Spirit acting me as above the Body: And God revealing things according to my Capacity, I thought I saw a Throne, the Seat of Royal, Glorious Majesty, and a Royal Person sat on the Throne.

3. And he that sat was, to look upon, like a Jasper, and a Sardius Stone: and there was a rain-bow round about the throne, in sight like unto an emerald.

3. And the Power and Glory of him that sat on the Throne was represented to me, as by the similitude of precious Stones, a Jasper, and a Sardius: And his Glory, and faithful keeping of his Covenant, was represented to me, by the Appearance of a Rain-bow, like an Emerald in colour, round about the Throne.

4. And round about the throne were four and twenty seats, and upon the seats I saw four and twenty elders sitting, clothed in white raiment, and they had upon their heads crowns of gold.

4. Note: The Apparition, being made to him that was a Jew, was a Representa- tion of the Jewish Camp in the Wilderness, with the Tabernacle in the midst; according to which also the Temple-Worship was formed to bear some Similitude: And the Christian Assemblies had some resemblance to that: Some think it related to the Church at Jerusalem, which had (fay they) twenty four Elders; say some, twelve
Ch. 4. John sees God's Throne Revelation.

And Glory, &c. Ch. 4.

twelve Apostles, and twelve Elders; others, that it is to the Bishop of Jerusalem, and four and twenty City-Bishops of Jerusalem, who use to sit in Council with him, who yet (saith Dr. H.) were then but the sole Pastors of single Assemblies, without any other Elders under them, but were after to have such. Others think it intimate, that all Churches should unite in such Synods as consist of twelve Teaching Elders, and twelve Ruling Elders that are not Teachers. Rather all Churches and Pastors are signified by Twenty Four. But all these are but Men's unproved Thoughts, save only that in general, the Vision appeared in resemblance of such an Assembly as is here described: And it is clearly intimate, I. That the Elders have a proper Dignity, and Honour, and Power, signified by their Seals, and White Raiment, and Crowns of Gold. I would not have ignorance, proud Lads, that can but get a Lay-Patron to present them to a Benefice, where they may live in the Guilt of betraying Souls, to call themselves these Elders, nor to reign in White Raiment that they have Crowns of Gold.

5. And out of the throne proceeded lightnings, and thunders, and voices; and there were seven lamps of fire burning before the throne, which are the seven spirits of God.

5. Note 1. The Glory and Terror of the Heavenly Apparition is thus expressed: From the finitude of the Temple-Worship, and more fully of the Church-Worship and Sacred Assemblies, whence must proceed the Light of Doctrine, the Thunder of Reproof, and just Centuries, and the Voices of common Content and Praise to God. Whether it signify the Lording Lightnings, and Thunders, and Excommunications of Lay-Chancellors, Officials, Surrogates, Commissaries, &c. that use an absent Bishop's Name over (not one Parish only, but) many Score or Hundred Parish-Churches, I leave to the Arguments of the Author.

2. The Seven Lamps are expounded of the Seven Spirits of God, relating, as some suppose, to the Lamps which were continually to burn before the Tabernacle, Exod. 17. 20. and after before the Temple: And as others think, to the Seven Deacons at Jerusalem. Others think it is the Seven Guardian Angels of the Seven Churches, to whom John specially directs all this Book, though for the use of all others.

But of this, and other such Paffages, the great Doubt is, whether really there be not, in the Spiritual World which John saw, such things as be describ'd, and the Institutions about Tabernacle, Temple, and Church-Assemblies, be not formed to some resemblance of these? Or whether all be spoken only of the things below, of which the superior World hath no real Similitude, but by Fiction?

6. And before the throne there was a sea of glass like unto crystal: and in the midst of the throne, and round about the throne, were four beasts, full of eyes before and behind.

6. Note: Before the Tabernacle and the Temple there was a great broad Vessel of Water, called a Sea, for the Priest to wash in, Exod. 20. 18. 1 Kings 7. 23. signifying the Purity required in the Worshippers of God; being as Crystal, tells us, that no Spots or Hypocrisie is unseen to God. (Though some make this to signify the multitude of Worshippers.)

The four Beasts, some say, resemble the four Standards and Camps of Israel in the Wilderness, or as others, the four Evangelists: But it is like to mean the Executioners by Providence and Miracles of Christ's Will and Power, full of Eyes, as knowing all the Affairs of the Sons of Men about which they are employed, called Living Creatures for their Executive Power.

7. And the first beast was like a lion, and the second beast like a calf, and the third beast had a face as a man, and the fourth beast was like a flying eagle.

7. Note: As these four agree with the Apparition in Ezekiel 1. 10. in the main (notwithstanding some small difference) so it is observable which Dr. Hammond notes from Ezekiel 4; that these were the Eucharistical on the four Ensigns or Standards of the Camp of Israel, a Lion for the Camp of Judah, a Man for the Camp of Reuben, an Ox for the Camp of Ephraim, and an Eagle for the Camp of Dan: And an Ox and Calf are oft used for the same. And these four are noted to be the chief in their several kinds; the Lion among wild Beasts; the Ox among the tame and serviceable; a Man among all Animals; and
and an Eagle among Birds. To conjecture what God would signify by them to Israel must needs be uncertain: I know nothing liker than an imputation of Duty and Prophecy, that Israel should be victorious over their Enemies, and valiant as a Lion, wise, and in Dominion as Man, and should have a fertile and plentiful Land, signified by the Ox, and be Seraphick and Divine in the holy Worship of God, signified by the Eagle that mounteth Heavenward in her Strength. And it’s like such Blessings are hereby signified to be conferred on the Church; some fix the signification on Angels, some on Ministers: And let probable are theirs that think Peter, John, Paul and Barnabas are meant. or they that apply it to the four Evangelists, or four Patriarchs.

8. And the four beasts had each of them six wings about him, and they were full of eyes within, and they rested not day and night, saying, Holy, holy, holy, Lord God Almighty, which was, and is, and is to come.

8. Note; The Beasts resembling the Standard-Bearer in the Camp, are likest to signify both the Angels in Heaven, who glorifie God’s Attributes, and serve him in the performance of his Promises to the Church; and also to the Apostles, and Prophets, and Evangelists, and Pastors, who do their part herein on Earth. See Is. 6. 2. of their Wings.

2. Holy, holy, holy, may relate to the Trinity, but certainly signifieth that the Holiness of God is that for which he is loved and praised by Angels and Saints. His Holiness is his perfection, and Tranquility above all Creatures, being the end of all, to whom they are devoted; and consequently his perfect Contrariety to all Evil.

3. The celebrating of the Praises of the Most Holy God, is the unceasing Work of Heavenly Spirits, and most of the Work of Ministers and Church-Assemblies on Earth.

9. And when those Beasts give glory, and honour, and thanks to him that sat on the throne, who liveth for ever and ever. The four and twenty elders fall down before him that sat on the throne, and worship him that liveth for ever and ever, and cast their crowns before the throne, saying, 11. Thou art worthy, O Lord, to receive glory, and honour, and power, for thou hast created all things, and for thy pleasurable they are and were created.

9, 10, 11. Note, With the chief Angels concur all the heavenly Host, in magnifying the Holy, Eternal God, as shining forth in the Glory of all his Works, by him, and for him, by his efficient Will, and for his omnipolent Will fulfilled, they being all created, preferred and ordered. And this Heavenly Work is to be imitated by the Churches on Earth, whose Pastors leading the People, must concur in the Praises of the most Holy, Ever-living God; and those Churches that are dry and scant in these Praises of God (how much soever the Word be there preached) are defective, and unlike their Pattern. These Passages are best expounded in the three first Portions of the Lord’s Prayer; Let thy Name be hallowed, Thy Kingdom come, and Thy Will be done on Earth, as it is in Heaven. Neither Heaven nor Earth must be left out in the Exposition.

CHAP. V.

1. And I saw in the right hand of him that sat on the throne, a book written within, and on the backside sealed with seven seals.

1. I saw a Roll called a Book, in his Hand who sat on the Throne, written on both sides, but the Roll was sealed up with seven Seals.

Note; The Roll contained God’s Decrees, as they were to be fulfilled according to this Prophecy: And it’s like they were seven Rolls together making one Book.

2. And I saw a strong angel proclaiming with a loud voice, Who is worthy to open the book, and to loose the seals thereof?

2. Note; Every Angel or Man is not worthy or meet to be the Expositor and Mediator of God’s Mysteries to Man.

3. And no man in heaven, nor in earth, neither under the earth, was
5. The Sealed Book,

was able to open the book, neither to look thereon.

3. It was a Work and Truth too high for any mere Creature in all the World: None of them was worthy.

4. And I wept much, because no man was found worthy to open and to read the book, neither to look thereon.

4. I lamented that the Creature should be found so unworthy, and God's Mysteries be kept unknown.

5. And one of the elders said unto me, Weep not: behold, the Lion of the tribe of Judah, the Root of David, hath prevailed to open the book, and to loose the seven seals thereof.

5. One of the Elders, that were at the Throne, comforted me, and told me that Christ, who is called the Lion of the Tribe of Judah, and the Son of David, and Root of Jesse, was found worthy by the Dignity of his Person, and his Merits by Man's Redemption, to open to the Church all the Mysteries of God, which it was meet for Man to know, and to looie the Seals.

6. And I beheld, and lo, in the midst of the throne, and of the four beasts, and in the midst of the elders, stood a Lamb, as it had been slain, having seven horns, and seven eyes, which are the seven Spirits of God, sent forth into all the earth.

6. Upon this glad Tiding, I looked and saw Christ in the likeness of a Lamb, wounded and bloody, as he was sacrificed, which signifies that it was by the Merit of Redemption that he had his Power over all; And he seemed to have seven Horns and Eyes for the Exercise of Government, by Judgment and Victory over his Enemies, and Illumination of his Church, and the full notice of all that concerneth his Government; which is done by the Spiritual Powers, or Angels and Ministers, whom he sent forth from God into all the Earth: Or, as others, by the manifold Gifts of the Holy Ghost, which is his Agent or Advocate on Earth.

7. And he came and took the book out of the right hand of him that sate upon the throne.

7. He that alone was worthy, received Power from God, both to open the Mysteries, and execute them.

8. And when he had taken the book, the four beasts, and four and twenty elders, fell down before the Lamb, having every one of them harps, and golden vials full of odours, which are the prayers of saints:

8. Nes, Who were the four Living Creatures (here ill translated Beasts, when one was a Man) was before enquired, but its hard to know, only they seem to signify some greater than the Elders. Some Papists think they were the four first Patriarchs, and the Elders the Counsels. Its more probable than so, that they were all the forms of Ministers that were entrusted with the first Gathering of Churches, and feasting the Gospel by Miracles, as distinct from the fixed Church-Bishops called Elders. That is, that they were Apostles, Prophets, Evangelists and Miracle-workers as such. But all is doubtful.

2. That both the Living Creatures and the Elders were Men on Earth, is plain by their Work here described: They are Priests that, in the Sacred Assembly, do by Office Speak for and Lead the Church in offering up the Common Prayers to God, and also the Prayers of the Congregation. That there be any Angels that resemble this Office in Heaven, we cannot conclude from so obscure a Text.

Hence we see, 1. That Church-Guides are the Worshippers of Jesus: 2. Though we cannot hence prove that God's Prayers must be used with Harps and Musical Instruments, they that use such have a fairer Pretence to prove them lawful (as doing God's Will, on Earth, as John saw it remembered in Heaven) than any can shew to prove it unlawful. 3. Ministers in offering up the Churches Pray and Prayers, are Submediators under Christ.

9. And they sang a new Song, saying, Thou art worthy to take the book, and to open the seals thereof: for thou wast slain, and hast redeemed us to God by thy blood, out of every kindred, and tongue,
Ch. 5. The Pow'r Glory, &c. Revelation.

tongue, and people, and nations;
10. And hast made us unto our God, Kings and Priests: and we shall reign on the earth.

9,10. Note, 1. Christ is to be praised in the Church with a new Song, or Psalms suited to his Works of Redemption and his Glory, and not only with the Jewish Psalms and Worship (though those Psalms also may be used.) 2. Though the Collective Phrase of gathering out of every Nation, makes some think that it is an Assembly of Glorified Saints in the Heavenly Jerusalem, called the General Assembly of the First-Born, and the Spirits of the perfected just; that it here primarily meant, it seems more probable that it is the Church on Earth alone: And that it is the fift Ages by Faith, and the following also, by some experience of the Churches deliverance by Constantine, that mention reigning on the Earth: The Saints departed indeed shall judge the World. To be Kings and Priests to God, is to be endowed with Power, and Honour, and Holiness, and employed accordingly in God's Administrations and Holy Worship.

11. And I beheld, and I heard the voice of many angels round about the throne, and the beasts, and the elders: and the number of them was ten thousand times ten thousand, and thousands of thousands;

12. And I looked, and I seemed to hear innumerable Angels, joying with the Living Wights and Elders, in the Praises of Christ for Man's Redemption.

Note, That this signifies the multitude of Believers, or of Ministers through all the World, is not to be prov'd. But that it is meant properly of Angels is most probable. And it is to be noted that when the Living Wights are but Four, and the Elders but Twenty Four, the Angels that praise Christ are Millions and numberless. So Heb. 12, 24. Whence note, that its Ignorance that calls God more severe than merciful, because its but a few of this World that are sanctified and glorified; when as the vast and glorious Regions above seem, to Reason and by Scripture, to have so many Millions of Angels, that its like the Damned are very few to them.

The greatest Kingdom is not near so great and glorious, in comparison of one Jail and one Gallows, as the Heavenly Regions are in comparison of this Spot called Earth, or the place of Execution, called Hell.

13. Saying with a loud voice, Worthy is the Lamb that was slain, to receive power, and riches, and wisdom, and strength, and honour, and glory, and blessing.

12. These Angels joined with the Churches in the Praises of Christ, ascribing to him to him, in their praises, all Power and Glory, &c. as deserved by his Redemption of the World by his Death.

Note, Those Angels that join with us in Christ's Praises, and are present in our Assemblies, and Guardians of us and them, and pitch their Tents about us, and bear us up in their Hands, and rejoice in our Convention, and are ministering Spirits for our Good, are not so ignorant of us and our Concerns and our Prayers, as some imagine.

We have many ignorant Men that think they know more of our Cafe here below than the Angels do; when they force know so much as may keep them from being Seducers, and Dividors, of the Church. They are sure but ill Guardians, who know as little of our Affairs as these Men think. Christ faith that the left Christians have their Angels who behold the Face of God; And why are they called their Angels, and what do they for them with God, if they know not our Condition and Concerns? And though this will not warrant Praying to them, which themselves in this Book seem to disown; yet we ought not to think that mistake of those ancient Fathers and Churches to be greater than it was, who thought that, as Pastors on Earth offer up the Congregations Prayers and Praises to God, so there is an answerable Office of Angels to offer them, as from them to Christ, who offers them to God the Father: And who thought, as a Man might pray a Minister to pray for him, so he might do an Angel, though it be an Error, one is no more Idolatry than the other.

13. And every creature which is in heaven, and on the earth, and under the earth, and such as are in the sea, and all that are in them, heard I, saying, blessing.


Revelation, the Seals. Ch. 6.

And I saw when the Lamb opened one of the Seals, heard as it were the noise of many waters, one of the four Beasts saith, Come and see.

And I saw, and behold, a pale horse; and he that sat on him had a bow, and a crown was given unto him, and he went forth having a bow to conquer.

And there went out another horse that was red: and power was given to him that sat thereon, to take peace from the earth, and that they should kill one another: and there was given unto him a great sword.

And when he had opened the third Seal, I heard the third Beast saith, Come and see. And I beheld, and lo, a black horse; and he that sat on him had a pair of balances in his hand.

And I heard a voice in the midst of the four Beasts say, A measure of wheat for a penny, and three measures of barley for a penny; and see thou hast not the oil, and the wine.

And when he had opened the fourth Seal, I heard the voice of the fourth Beast say, Come and see. And I looked, and behold, a pale horse; and his name that sat on him was Death, and hell followed with him: and power was given unto them over the fourth part of the earth, to kill with...
with word, and with hunger, and with death, and with the beasts of the earth.

7, 8. Judgment shall proceed from Scar-city to Death and Ruins by Famine, Wars and Plagues, which shall destroy a great part of the Jews (at least.)

9. And when he had opened the fifth seal, I saw under the altar, the souls of them that were slain for the word of God, and for the testimony which they held.

9. Note; The Heavenly Apparition relating to the Church on Earth, with the name of an Altar, and I think justifies the use of it now.

2. The Souls of Martyrs live in Heaven, and therefore do other Saints, which prove the Immortality of Souls. To be under the Altar is to be in the Heavenly Communion with them that offer Sacrifice to God: And to be commemorated at the Altar by the Church on Earth, that pray for Deliverance from Persecutors.

3. There be not only Praises, but Prayers in Heaven, and that for Justice on Persecutors on Earth; therefore they know that their Blood is not avenged.

4. How then are miserable Persecutors like to escape, when Heaven and Earth pray against them?

10. And they cried with a loud voice, saying, How long, O Lord, holy and true, dost thou not judge and avenge our blood on them, that dwell on the earth?

10. Note; This was not from Uncharitableness, but Conformity to God's Holiness, Justice and Truth: The Revenge desired being the Vindication of God's Holiness and Truth, which he had promised.

11. And white robes were given unto every one of them, and it was said unto them, that they should rest yet for a little season, until their fellow servants also, and their brethren, that should be killed as they were, should be fulfilled.

11. They were cleard in White, which signifies Righteousness and Dignity, in acknowledgment of their Fidelity; but the Revenge must be delayed till the rest were killed; especially, by some, by the Jews, that must kill more, that or that Generation might come all the righteous Blood shed, from Abel, till the last.

Note; God oft delays his judgment, but while more, and greater Sins prepare for heavier Plagues.

One Reason why we are not presently avenged, and delivered from Persecutors, is, because more must yet suffer, before they are ripe for signal Vengeance. Our Sins may be under the Altar in Heaven, clasped in Whirl, before the Day of Revenge.

12. And I beheld when he had opened the sixth seal, and lo, there was a great earth-quake, and the sun became black as sackcloth of hair, and the moon became a blood; 13. And the stars of heaven fell unto the earth, even as fig-trees cast her untimely figs when she is shaken of a mighty wind.

12, 13. The great Calamities that were to follow (on the Jews, say some, and on the World, say others) were so dismal, that they were represented to me, as the darkening of the Sun, and the Moon looking like Blood, and the Stars falling from Heaven; as if Heaven and Earth were dissolving.

14. And the heaven departed as a scroll when it is rolled together; and every mountain and island were moved out of their place.

14. And it was represented to me, the Dissolution of Heaven, and Subversion of the Earth.

Note: Some think, this is only of Subversion of Judea. Others (because this was done already) that it was the Overture of the Heaven Powers by Con- tinum. Others, that it was the breaking the Empire by the Galls... And one that it is the last Dissolution of the World.

15. And the kings of the earth, and the great men, and the rich men, and the captains, and the mighty men, and every bond-man, and every free man hid themselves in the dens and in the rocks of the mountains.

16. And
Ch. 6. The Six Seals, &c. Revelation. The four Angels, &c. Ch. 7.

16. And said to the mountains and rocks, Fall on us, and hide us from the face of him that sitteth on the throne, and from the wrath of the Lamb: 17. For the great day of his wrath is come; and who shall be able to stand?

15, 16, 17. Note. 1. If this was meant of the Ruine of the Jews, it was indeed exceeding dreadful: and dreadful have God's Executions been on Heathens, and other Enemies of Christ.

Note 2. Great ones, nor Numbers, will save none from Misery and Terror, when the day of God's revenging Justice is come, which they would not before believe. Any sort of hope of Deliverance would be then welcome: but all Help will fail, and all Hopes will be in vain, to them that know not the day of Grace.

Proud Men are able now to oppress the Innocent, to scorn the Faithful, and to domi-
nine in the Ruins and Blood of Saints; ca-
numinating them, as the vilest Malefactors: But wicked Princes, Lords, and Judges, and bloody Souldiers, will then all cry out, The great Day of his Wrath is come, and who is able to stand?]

CHAP. VII.

And after these things, I saw four angels standing on the four corners of the earth, holding the four winds of the earth, that the wind should not blow on the earth, nor on the sea, nor on any tree.

1. God's Decree for the suspending of his dreadful Executions (specially on Judea) was declared to me, by the Apparition of our Angels, standing on the four Corners of the Earth, who were to hold the four Winds from blowing to the hurt of any creature.

Note 1. The Winds are called Four, according to popular Opinion.

Note 2. By this, it is not unlikely that the four Beasts are so numbered, with respect to the four Quarters of the Earth, signifying the Executioners of Providence.

2. And I saw another angel ascending from the east, having the seal of the living God: and he cried with a loud voice to the

four angels, to whom it was given to hurt the earth and the sea,

3. Saying, Hurt not the earth, neither the sea, nor the trees, till we have sealed the servants of our God in their foreheads.

2. Note. 1. The East, where the Sun first rises, is noted in Prophecies, as the way, whence we are to expect our Blessings, from Christ, the Rising Sun: whence came the old Ceremony of worshippimg, in the Church, only towards the East.

3. The Seal of God is, his gracious, sealed Commission.

3. The loud Voice and Cry signifies, God's great Care to preserve the Faithful.

4. The Seal in the Fore-head is, God's Notification of those whom he will preserve. In Ezek. 9, 4, it is as by the Letter. But the Text seems to mean no more than that God made known, to the destroying Angels, every one that was to be preserved.

4. And I heard the number of them which were sealed: and there were sealed, an hundred and forty and four thousand, of all the tribes of the children of Israel. 5. Of the tribe of Judah were sealed twelve thousand. Of the tribe of Reuben were sealed twelve thousand. Of the tribe of Gad were sealed twelve thousand. 6. Of the tribe of Aser were sealed twelve thousand. Of the tribe of Nephthali were sealed twelve thousand. Of the tribe of Manasses were sealed twelve thousand. 7. Of the tribe of Simeon were sealed twelve thousand. Of the tribe of Levi were sealed twelve thousand. Of the tribe of Issachar were sealed twelve thousand. 8. Of the tribe of Zebulon were sealed twelve thousand. Of the tribe of Joseph were sealed twelve thousand. Of the tribe of Benjamin were sealed twelve thousand.

4, 5, 6, 7, 8. All these were to be preserved from the Destruction coming.

Note 1. Not that there were just twelve thousand.
Ch. 7. The Number, &c. Revelation. of the Seal. Ch.

thousand of each Tribe; but that the number was great in itself, tho' small, as to the number of them that perished. 2. Joseph is put for Ephraim, and Dan is left out; some think, the Tribe being almost worn out; or for what other Reason, is unknown.

9. After this I beheld, and lo, a great multitude, which no man could number, of all nations, and kindreds, and people, and tongues, stood before the throne, and before the Lamb, clothed with white robes, and palms in their hands:

9. And it was not only the Believing Jews that were to be preferred, but the Gentile Christians, in a multitude innumerable, who worship God joyfully in holy Assemblies, celebrating honourably the Praises of Christ, represented by their Spirits magnifying God and the Lamb joyfully in Heaven.

10. And cried with a loud voice, saying, Salvation to our God which sitteth on the throne, and unto the Lamb.

10. They praised God, and their Redeemer, as the Author of Salvation.

Note; The Heretics of these Times (as such do now) accursed those great Multitudes, and separated from them, as unworthy of their Communion, while they were unworthy of Church-Communion themselves.

11. And all the angels stood round about the throne, and about the elders, and the four beasts, and fell before the throne on their faces, and worshipped God.

12. Saying, Amen: blessing, and glory, and wisdom, and thanksgiving, and honour, and power, and might be unto our God for ever and ever. Amen.

11, 12. And I saw the multitude of Be-levers (or Ministers) represented by all the Angels, joyning with the four Living Wights, and with the twenty four Elders, who represented the Church of the Christian Jews, celebrating the Praises of God and the Lamb; ascribing to him everlasting Blessing, Glory, &c.

13. And one of the elders an-

fswered, saying unto me, What are these which are arrayed in white robes? and whence came they?

14. And I said unto him, Who art thou? and he said, I am he that liveth, and was dead; and, behold, I am alive for evermore, Amen; and have the keys of Death and Hades.

13, 14. And one of the Elders, to inform me, asked me whether what those were that stood and cried with a loud voice. In the first place, 'salvation to our God which sitteth on the throne, and unto the Lamb.' This is the way in which the old Syriac version renders it: 'Salvation to our God, that is seated on the throne, and to the Lamb.' The Vulgate version gives it thus: 'Salvation to our God, who sitteth on the throne, and to the Lamb.' The latter is the preferable reading, as it is the more consistent with the context. The context is also more forcible in the former sense. The context is also more forcible in the latter sense.

15. Therefore are they before the throne of God, and serve him day and night in his temple; and he that sitteth on the throne shall dwell among them. 16. They shall hunger no more, neither thirst any more, neither shall the sun light on them, neither any heat.

15, 16. Note; It is not the least difficulty in this Book, to know when the events really of what is done in Heaven, when of what is done on Earth, and of both. This Text seems to chiefly of what is really done; for To expound it only of the Liberty came to the Christians after the Deluge of Jerusalem, is improbable. For the Perfections succeeded. To expound the Advancement of the Church by Antiquity, must make it to speak of Species of Christians that formerly and of no individual Person, but that were then alive; and is believed by them that believe the voice from Heaven, Hadst versus in Ecclesiast, and that is quickly Papacy, and Church which sprang out of it. And yet, to inferior Church-mervices from this seemeth also unsafe.

17. For the Lamb whch is the midst of the throne, shall lead them, and shall lead them living fountains of waters.
Ch. 8. The seventh Seal.

Revelation.

Ch. 8.

And when he had opened the seventh seal, there was silence in heaven about the space of half an hour.

And I saw the seven angels which stood before God, and to them were given seven trumpets.

And another angel came and stood at the altar, having a golden censer, and there was given unto him much incense, that he should offer it with the prayers of all saints upon the golden altar, which was before the throne.

And the smoke of the incense which came with the prayers of the saints, ascended up before God, out of the angel’s hand.

4. And God received, as grateful, the Prayers of his People, as offered by the Ministers, and by Christ.

5. And the angel took the censer, and filled it with fire of the altar, and cast it into the earth: and there were voices, and thunders, and lightnings, and an earthquake.

6. And upon the Acceptance of the Saints’ Prayers, followed the kindling of God’s avenging Judgments on the Earth.

7. And the seven angels, which had the seven trumpets, prepared themselves to sound.

8. Then did the Messengers of God’s Judgments prepare to publish, or sound, them forth.

7. The first angel sounded, and there followed hail, and fire mingled with blood, and they were cast upon the earth: and the third part of trees was burnt up, and all green grass was burnt up.

8. And the second angel sounded, and as it were a great mountain burning with fire was cast into the sea; and the third part of the sea became blood: 9. And the third part of the creatures which were in the sea, and had life, died; and the third part of the ships were destroyed.

9. That no place should escape, the next degree of Judgment was represented by a Mountain of Fire, cast into the Sea, which turned the third part of the Sea into Blood, &c. signifying increased Wars and Bloodshed, by Sea and Land.

The particular Signification Expounders are utterly disagreed in. Dr. H. takest it for the Bloodshed by Injuries in Galilee: Others, for the Barbarians ruining the Roman Empire: Others, for Heresies in the Church: Others, for the Bishops Strife for Superiority.

10. And the third angel sounded, and there fell a great star from
Ch. 8. The seven Angels.

from heaven, burning as it were a lamp, and it fell upon the third part of the rivers, and upon the fountains of waters: 11. And the name of the star is called wormwood; and the third part of the waters became wormwood; and many men died of the waters, because they were made bitter.

10, 11. And next, the Judgment vvas, the infecting of the Rivers, and Waters, vvth the mortal Bitternes, by a Star from Heaven, that was mortally bitter, falling into them. This signifies the further extensive progress of the Punishment.

Some take this for the Fall of a great Captain of the Jews: And some, for one of their scribes, seducing Prophets: And some, for the Fall of the Western Empire: And some, for Arrius: Some, for Pelagius: Some, for Mahomet: And some, for Heretics in general.

12. And the fourth angel founded, and the third part of the sun was smitten, and the third part of the moon, and the third part of the stars; so as the third part of them was darkened, and the day shone not for a third part of it, and the night likewise.

12. On the sounding of the fourth Angel, the groans of the judgment was represented to me, as the darkening of the third part of the Sun, Moon and Stars; signifying the fall of some great Powers, Ecclesiastical or Civil.

Some explain it of Vespasian’s destroying a third part of the Cities of Judea: Some of the beginning of the Siege Jerusalem: Some of Titus’s taking Rome: Some, of the Corruption of Prelacy, before Popery: Some, of Arrianism: Some, of the general Corruption of the Church by Popery.

Lira takes the four Angels to be the four Heretics (as he doth the four Beasts to be the four Patriarchs.)

13. And I beheld, and heard an angel flying thorow the midst of heaven, saying with a loud voice, Wo, wo, wo to the inhabitants of the earth, by reason of the other voices of the trumpet of the three angels which are yet to sound.

19. This punishment extended but to a third part. But I heard an Angel flying in the midst of Heaven, lowly crying, Wo, wo, wo for the greater plagues that were yet to come.

Some expound this out of Joseph, one Jesus Son of Annias that, for many years before the siege, went about announcing this wo: Others divers the ways.

CHAP. IX.

1. And the fifth angel sounded, and I saw a star fall from heaven unto the earth: and to him was given the key of the bottomless pit. 2. And he opened the bottomless pit, and there arose a smoke out of the pit, as the smoke of a great furnace; and the sun and the air were darkened, by reason of the smoke of the pit.

1. 2. Note: By this, some say, is meant that Jewish Seducer that headed the turbulent Zealots in the Siege of Jerusalem: Others apply it to Arrius: Most Provosts take it for the Pope: Some take it is Christ that had the Keys of Death as Hell, defending to let loose these destroyers. And the Smoke is by Prophecy mostly taken for the obscuring of holy Dwellers and Manners; but by theSwifts of Confusions in Jerusalem by the Zeal (as the Murderers were called.)

3. And there came out of the smoke locusts upon the earth: and unto them was given power as the scorpions of the earth have power. 4. And it was commanded them that they should not harm the grass of the earth, neither any green thing, neither any tree, but only those men which had not the seal of God in their foreheads.

3, 4. Note; That this was an increase of God’s Plagues, is clear; and that it was to be by Souldiers, that were not to make a utter defolation, but to captivate and with the Enemies of Christianity. But the particular scene is controverted. Some take it for the foretold rage of the Zealots of Jerusalem; some for the beginning of the Roman Affaults; some for Constantine’s exclusion of the Heathens; vvh whom yet did not kill them, but give them a disgraced liberty of Idolatry; some take it for the first rising of the Saracens and Mahometans; and some take them for Devils that are called Locuits; some for Hereticks; and most Protestants for the Papal Clergy and Erys; and these by [burning] mean deceiving

5. And to them it was given that they should not kill them, but that they should be tormented five months; and their torment was as the torment of a scorpion when he striketh a man. 6. And in those days shall men seek death, and shall not find it, and shall desire to die, and death shall flee from them.

6. The Torment of Christ’s Enemies shall be worse than Death, so that they shall wish for Death, and not obtain it. Some by this understand the Famine in Jerusalem, and the Zealots tormenting the Inhabitants, to make them confess where their Bread or Food was. Others otherwise.

7. And the shapes of the Locuits were like unto horses, prepared into battel; and on their heads were as it were crowns like gold, and their faces were as the faces of men. 8. And they had hair as the hair of women, and their teeth were as the teeth of lions. 9. And they had breast-plates as it were breast-plates of iron, and the found of their wings was as the found of charrets of many horses running to battel. 10. And they had tails like unto scorpions, and there were stings in their tails; and their power was to hurt men five months. 11. And they had a king over them, which is the angel of the bottomless pit, whose name in the Hebrew tongue is Abaddon, but in the Greek tongue hath his name Apollyon.

7, 8, 9, 10, 11. That this is the description of a terrible Army of cruel Men, seemeth plain, but who they were, and wwhen, is not so plain: Whether the fore-said Jewish Zealots, (vvh; got out of the Country into the City, and used the Inhabitants cruelly;) Or whether it was the Roman Army, or the Arabian Mahometans (vvhich many had rather think, than that all this obscure Vision spake but of things already done, and known to John, and those of his time, if it was in Domitian Days.) And the Abaddon their King, both forts think was the Devil; though some say, it is Christ, and some an Angel that had power to let out such Destroyers. Five months being the just time of the Zealots Rage, before Titus came against the City, confirmeth the first fort of Expositors in their Opinion: But, as I said, most Protestant Writers take this King to be the Pope, or the Devil as asking him, and the Locuits to be the Frys and Clergy and all their Tormentings and Destroyings to be spiritual: But it’s hard to think that Deceiving should be meant by such Tormenting, as made Men wish for Death: For their Excommunications and Persecutions cannot be meant, because those are more against good Men, than the bad; and though some of their Doctrines be uncomfortable, they have more that flatter Men in Sin.

12. One wo is past, and behold, there come two woes more hereafter.

13. Thus one of the three Woes referred to the three last Trumpers, is past, and two follow.

14. And the sixth angel sounded, and I heard a voice from the four horns of the golden altar which is before God, saying to the sixth angel, which had the trumpet, Loose the four angels which are bound in the great river Euphrates.
13, 14. Those that expound all this of the destruction of Jerusalem, think that by Emperors is meant Rome, and that the four Angels there bound, was the Roman Legions which Vespasian had thought, till he saw what would become of the Empire, when Galba, Otho, and Vitellius were killed, and he was chosen Emperor; and then he went on to the Siege; Or else that the Syrian Legions, having marched as far as Ephesus, were there stop'd. But this Explication hath much said against it: Especially that these were then things past, and that in the 20th the men are described as gross Idolaters, which from then were not.

Many others expound it of the Arabians and Turks, who dwelt beyond Ephesus, out of the Roman Territories, till they invaded and spoiled them.

15. And the four Angels were loosed, which were prepared for an hour, and a day, and a month, and a year, for to slay the third part of men.

15. Some gather from an hour, a day, a month and a year) that from the first great invasion and taking of Babylon to the fall of the Turks, it will be exactly in 1696, that is, twelve years hence: which time will expound. The four Angels some take for four Mahometan Generals, and parts, before they united in one. And by slaying the third part of men, their cruel devastations and successes.

16. And the number of the army of the horsemen were two hundred thousand: and I heard the number of them.

16. The number of the Roman Army some: But most say the number of the Mahometans was exceeding great, like locusts over-spreading all the Countries.

17. And thus I saw the horsemen in the vision, and them that sat on them, having breath-plates of fire, and of jacinth, and brimstone: and the heads of the horses were as the heads of lions, and out of their mouths issued fire and smoke, and brimstone.

17. They appeared terribly as fired to destroy; But some expound it of their fallacious Doctrine.

18. By these three was the third part of men killed, by the fire, and by the smoke, and by the brimstone, which issued out of their mouths.

18. Multitudes say some killed by the Romans; and, say most others, the exceding great numbers killed by the Mahometans, Saracens and Turks.

19. For their power is in their mouth, and in their tails: for their tails were like unto serpents, and had heads, and with them they do hurt.

19. They are both fierce and venemous, and every way destructive. Some expound mouth and tail, of the front and the rear of their Armies.

20. And the rest of the men, which were not killed by these plagues, yet repented not of the works of their hands, that they should not worship devils, and idols of gold, and silver, and brass, and stone, and of wood, which neither can see, nor hear, nor walk:

21. Neither repented they of their murders, nor of their forceries, nor of their fornication, nor of their thefts.

20, 21. To take this for the Gnostic, and the Spiritual Idolatry of the Jews, seems very unlikely. The Mahometans, say others, made the destroying of Idols their chief profession, and have not only rooted out Image-worship from the Eastern Christians, but turned since many great Kingdoms and Empires from Heathenism to Mahometanism: But they repented not under those destructions.

CHAP X.

1. And I saw another mighty Angel, come down from Heaven, clothed with a cloud, and a rainbow was upon his head, and his face was as it were the sun, and his feet as pillars of fire.

1. The circumstances describe the Glory of this Angel, which some take for Christ, and some for a proper Angel.

2. And he had in his hand a little
Revelation.

The Book, &c. Ch. 11.

The book open: and he set his foot upon the sea, and his foot on the earth.

1. The plain sense is, that he shewed the veracity of his Commissioned power and land comprehending the World (now) and that the Book was the Decree God committed to him to execute. But a confused sense is manifold: Some think it was God's Decree to destroy Jerusalem, and that Sea and Land was Galilee and Judea: And others that it was God's Decree to destroy the Roman Heathen power, and deliver his Servants: And others that it was his Decree to destroy all oppressing Powers, and set up Christ's thousand years reign in Righteousness: And others that it was his Decree to end the World, and come in judgment.

3. And cried with a loud voice: when a lion roareth: and when he had cried, seven thunders uttered their voices.

3. His terrible Aspect and Cry, was to prepare for a progressive Increase of the plagues, signified by seven Thunders, which are louder than Trumpets.

4. And when the seven Thunders had uttered their voices, I was about to write: and I heard a voice from heaven, saying unto me, seal up those things which the seven thunders uttered, and write them not.

5. Say some, Because the Plagues are so grievous, that (on Jerusalem, say some; on the Empire, say others; on the Papacy, say others) they shall be known by experience, and not by words. Therefore write them not (as all, say some; or not yet, say others.)

6. And I saw him that liveth for ever and ever, who created heaven and the things that therein are, and the earth and the things that therein are, and the sea and the things that are therein, that there should be time no longer. 7. But in the days of the voice of the seventh Angel, when he shall begin to sound, the mystery of God should be finished, as he hath declared to his servants the prophets.

8, 9. He spake by God, that there should be no longer delay; that is, say some, of the Destruction of the Jews, but till Adrian's time; or, as others, of the Ruin of the Roman Empire; or, as others, of the Churches Deliverance from Popery and Persecution; or, as others, that there shall be no longer Duration of this World: But that, at the seventh Trumpet, God's decreed Judgments shall be accomplished. Or, as Lira, that the Adrian Heresie should no longer prosper.

8. And the voice which I heard from heaven spake unto me again, and said, Go and take the little book which is open in the hand of the angel which standeth upon the sea, and upon the earth. 9. And I went unto the angel, and said unto him, Give me the little book. And he said unto me, Take it, and eat it up, and it shall make thy belly bitter, but it shall be in thy mouth sweet as honey.

10. The Voice bid me take the Book, &c. And I asked the Angel for it, who bid me eat it, &c. It shall be pleasant to thee, to know what will be as News, but bitter to know such heavy things: or, it will be sweeter to thee, to fore-know the Churches Deliverance; but bitter, to know the dreadful Judgments that effect it, (against the Jews, say some; the Roman Empire, say others; the Papal Church, say others, &c.)

11. And I took the little book out of the angel's hand, and ate it up, and it was in my mouth sweet as honey: and as soon as I had eaten it, my belly was bitter.

14. And he said unto me, Thou must
must prophesie again before many peoples, and nations, and tongues, and kings.

11. Say some, When Tity hath destroyed Jerusalem, there is more for thee to prophesie of, which many following Emperours, and their Armies, will do against them, especially Adrian, to finnish their Destruction. Or, as others. There are yet greater, and more dreadful things to be told thee, against many Nations and Kingdoms. Or, as others; The Work of Prophecies, or preaching the Gospel, suppressed by the Pope, and his Prelates, shall be revived again, and prosper, before the end.

CHAP. XI.

1. And there was given me a reed like unto a rod, and the angel stood, saying, Rise, and measure the temple of God, and the altar, and them that worship therein.

1. Say some, to measure the Temple and the Altar-places, as referred from Adrian's building an Idol-Temple, which, say they, he did only in the Outer Court. Say others, Measure the Church, which shall be reduced to a Conformity to the Word of God, after all its Pollutions by Popery. Or, Measure is, signifies, that the Church will be a small and measurable thing under the Papacy, and even obscured, but not forsoaked of God.

2. But the court which is without the temple, leave out and measure it not; for it is given unto the Gentiles; and the holy city shall they tread under foot forty and two months.

2. Say some, the outer Court, and the City was rebuilt by Adrian, called Elias, for the Gentiles to live in, and a Temple built for Jupiter, and so continued three years and a half, as Antichus prophesied it, Dan. 7. 25. Say others, The outer Court and the City left to the Gentiles, is that great part of the visible Church left under the Papacy to such gross Idolatry, as that it hath but the name of Christian, as deathing restored Gentilisme, and is rejected of God. Some take the 42 months literally, for a certain time of three years and a half, and some for uncertain time. Christ was three years and a half, in his Ministerial labour. And this number is five times here recited: Therefore like to be strictly meant. Some old Wriders and some Papists understand it strictly of the reign of an Antichrist, which they think is yet to come: some of the time of the Papal reign, which they say will be 1260 years beginning between 365 and 455, and ending between 1625 and 1715, in which space Baby loss will fall. Others set the time differently.

3. And I will give power unto my two witnesses, and they shall prophecy a thousand two hundred and threescore days, clothed in sackcloth.

3. Note, There is great diversity of opinions who these Witeesses are: And yet most Profeaters think that their time is past, or the moft of it, and this Prophecy fulfilled: And Prophecies use to be plain when they are fulfilled. Some new men say that they were the two Churches in Jerusalem, of the Jewish and the Greek Language, and their two Bishops, who preached all that time against the sins of Jews and Gentiles: For they think that the Jews and Greeks, not understanding the same Language, had in Jerusalem, Antioc, Rome, Alexandria, and other great Cities, two Churches and Bishops. Others, that the two Witeesses are Enoch and Elias, that shall come when Antichrist cometh Other, that they are the Old and New Testament, which the Papacy shall oppose: or, as others, the Preachers of the Old and New Testament, named two, because but few, but yet enough to promote the Reformation. Brightman faith, It is the Scriptures, and the Assemblies of the Faithful. Others, that it is the Godly Magistracy and Miniftry, which the Papacy will cast down. Others, that God will hereafter send two, with the Spirit of Enoch and Elias, in whom all this shall be literally fulfilled: Others, that it is the Martyrs that have in several times opposed Popery to the death; Called two in allusion to many old couples of Witeesses, Moses and Aaron, Caleb and Joshua, Ezra and Nehemiah, Haggai and Zachary, Zerubbabel and Joshua, to which Zach. 4. 11. This Text specially relateth Moses and Elias on the Mount, &c.

Clothed in Sackcloth, is doing their Office in a time of great affliction: And all this, some think, may be applied to divers couples,
couples, that God hath used in diversetimes and parts of his Church: As to the Waldensius and Albigensius; to John Huss and Jerome of Prague; to John Frederick Duke of Saxony and Philip Landgrave of Hesse: long imprisoned by Charles the fifth, and after delivered; to the Lutherans and the Reformed; to King Edward VI. and his Uncle Protector Duke of Somerset, &c. Even as Christ sent out his Disciples by two and two, Paul and Barnabas, &c. Lyra’s conceit that Silverius and Mannus were the two witnesses against the Eutychians is vain.

4. These are the two olive-trees, and the two candlesticks standing before the God of the earth.

5. These are resembled to the two mentioned, Zech. 4. These are as Olive Branches that empty themselves into the Lamps, even the Servants of the Lord of the World for his Church.

6. And if any man will hurt them, fire proceedeth out of their mouth, and devoureth their enemies: and if any man will hurt them, he must in this manner be killed.

7. If any will persecute or slay them, God will revenge their cause: it refers to Elias that brought down fire from Heaven to destroy the Captains and their fifties, 2 Kings i. 10. and to Moses, Numb. 16. Or say others. The word in their mouths shall be as fire against all false Doctrines and Corruptions.

8. These have power to shut heaven that it rain not in the days of their prophecy: and have power over waters, to turn them to blood, and to smite the earth with all plagues, as often as they will.

9. And the Power that God gave their Ministry and reforming endeavours, and the revenge that God will use against their Persecutors, were expressed to me, resembling Elias, whose Prayer stoppeth the rain for three years and a half, and the plagues which God by Moses inflicted on Egypt: Christ intimating this, Matth. 17. When Moses the chief Law-giver, and Elias the chief Prophet, were the two great wit-

These words (where our Lord was crucified) seem to favour their Expulsion, who apply all this to Jerusalem. But most Protestants take it for the Roman State of Papal corruption. And some by their Caricatures, say, is meant the dark carcase of the Scripture, or Religion, or Assemblies, which only is left among them. But it feareth me to mean perfons: And whether the same thing, as this killing and reviving the Witnesses, may not be done at Jerusalem, and elsewhere, again and again in several ages, (the Church, having had its days and nights,) I yet know not.

9. And they of the people, and kindreds and tongues, and nations, shall see their dead bodies, three days and an half, and shall not suffer their dead bodies to be put in graves.
And not only their persecuting enemies, but the duddled rabble and people, shall see their oppression and insult over them, and not suffer them to be restored, or honoured.

10. And they that dwell upon the earth shall rejoice over them, and make merry, and shall send gifts one to another, because these two prophets tormented them that dwelt on the earth.

10. The enemies of the Church, and the ungodly rabble, shall triumph and rejoice together in their revenge and conquest of those Prophets, and that in the revengeful face of their own suffering by them, whose preaching was a torment to them, who by Godly Magistrates also had been punished or restrained from their sin.

Note. Oh how mad y do the wicked rejoice, for their victory against the men that would have saved them. 2. One of the great causes of the violence of Silencers and Persecutors is, the remembrance of their own sufferings by godly Magistrates and Ministers, by Punishments and Reformations.

11. And after three days and an half, the spirit of life from God entered into them, and they stood upon their feet, and great fear fell upon them which saw them.

11. Either the same men, or men of the same Spirit and Office, were restored to the same Power and Works to the great wonder of good men, and the great confirmation of the bad.

12. And they heard a great voice from heaven, saying unto them, Come up hither. And they ascended up to heaven in a cloud, and their enemies beheld them.

12. The Voice of Christ, say some; of the chief Rulers, say others: Come up hither, that is, say some, to Heaven as the reward of their former Service, as Christ ascended in a cloud, and as Moses was called away and buried by God, and Elias carried up, Moses not seeing what Jeshua must see, and Elias being only Translated from a wicked Generation before Jeshua executed God’s Judgments on them; so Magistrates and Ministers, that do great things for the Church, are usually taken up to Heaven before they see the desired issue, which is left to their Successors: Not David, but Solomon, must build the Temple. Or, as others, come now into the desired state of the visible Church reformed from Popery and Impiety. Their advancement convinced some, and terrified others of their Adversaries.

13. And the same hour was there a great earthquake, and the tenth part of the City fell, and in the earthquake were slain of men seven thousand; and the remnant were affrighted, and gave glory to the God of heaven.

13. Say some, Adrian rooted out those Jews that did not turn Christians, and set up the Image of a Swine at the Gate, to put them in despair, upon which the rest turned Christians, and glorified God. Say others, nine parts of Rome were destroyed before, and under the Papacy only the tenth part of old Rome was left, and that fell by this Earthquake: Say others, the first stir by Preaching, Divisuring and War about Religion, quickly cast down the tenth part of the Roman Church, and then many others turned Protestants: Some think, it was the fall of old Heathen Rome; and some think that the killing of the Witnesses (by Papal Cruelty) is yet to come, and that Popery shall be restored a few years, and then fall for ever. It seems to relate to the case of Elisha and Elijah, after whose time the House of Ahab dreadfully fell by Jeshua.

14. The second wo is past, and behold, the third wo cometh quickly.

14. Note: Thus far some think that the Revelation showed Jeshua nothing but what was done many years before, and visible to all men there, that is, that all was but the destruction of the Jews; and that of these three last Woes, the first was by the Zealots, the second by Titus, (in which, faith Josephus, Eleven hundred thousand Perfons were killed by Sword and Famine, besides the Captives carried away;) The third by Adrian, when the Faction of Bar Cochba was cast out of Jerusalem and were pursued, in which, some say, five hundred thousand were
Ch. 11. Twenty-four Elders. Revelation.

Ch. 12.

were killed, some say. Eight hundred thousand, and some twelve hundred thousand.

Others say, that all the West respects later times.

And the seventh angel sounded, and there were great voices in heaven, saying, The kingdoms of this world are become the Kingdoms of our Lord, and of his Christ, and he shall reign for ever and ever.

The forefaid new Expositors take this for the Triumph of the Church for the Jews destruction, and the ceasing of their Persecution, and the uniting of the Jew and Gentile Christians in one Church at Jerusalem, where Adrian gave them that freedom by which they prospered.

Others think that this Verse speaks of the Christian Emperors owning Christianitie, and putting down Heathenism: Others think it speaks of the great Success of the Reformation against Popery: Others think it means of Christ's thousand years Reign: And others think it speaks of the last Judgment. I see not why we may not take it for the flourishing of the Gospel in the Catholic Church, begun when Persecution abated, but most notably promoted by Constantine.

And the four and twenty elders, which sat before God on their thrones, fell upon their faces, and worshipped God, 17. Saying, We give thee thanks, O Lord God almighty, which art and wast, and art to come, because thou hast taken to thee thy great power, and hast reigned. 18. And the nations were angry, and thy wrath is come, and the time of the dead, that they should be judged, and that thou shouldest give reward unto thy servants the prophets, and to the saints, and them that fear thy name small and great, and shouldest destroy them which destroy the earth.

16, 17, 18. The Twenty four Bishops of Judea, by some: Rather, the Ministers of the Catholic Church, represented by four and twenty Elders in the Vision; or the whole Church, say others: And those in Heaven, say others. The Reign mentioned is variously expounded, as aforesaid; 1. As against the Jews. 2. As against the Heathen Emperors. 3. As against the Pope, by the Reformation. 4. As of the Fall of Mahometanism, and the Turkish Empire. 5. As of the Millennium, and the Refutation and Judgment that shall be then. 6. As of the last Judgment.

And the temple of God was opened in heaven, and there was seen in his temple the ark of his testament, and there were lightnings, and voices, and thunders, and an earth-quake, and great hail.

And there was opened the temple of the Age, and the ark of his testament was seen, and there were lightnings, and voices, and thunders, and an earth-quake, and great hail.

And there appeared a great wonder in heaven, a woman clothed with the sun, and the moon under her feet, and upon her head a crown of twelve stars.

And there appeared a great wonder in heaven, a woman clothed with the sun, and the moon under her feet, and upon her head a crown of twelve stars.

1. Some Popes, and their Flatterers, have said that, by the Woman in Heaven, is meant, the Pope, and Church of Rome in its Power; and by the Sun is meant, their spiritual Power, as Key-bearers of Heaven; and by the Moon is meant, all Princes Secular power as under the feet of the Papal Church, at least, in order to the ends of the spiritual Power, by which he may, if they deferve it, excommunicate and depose them.

By others is understood the Christian Church, now raised to Honour, and flourishing in Grace and Wildom, and having worldly Prosperity as a lower part of her Blessing; or, (say others) trampling on Wealch, and worldly things, with a holy Con-

Contemne: And known by this Ensign of Honour, that the twelve Apostles were its Founders, under Christ; and that still they hold fast the Apostolical Doctrine, and depart not from it by humane deprivations, or by heretical Seduction and Corruption. This is a Crown of Glory to the pure Church, being not yet seduced from Christian, Apostolick Simplicity.

2. And the being with child, cried, travailing in birth, and pained to be delivered.

2. She laboured with earnest desire to propagate Christianity through the World. Some refer this to the Jewish Church defining Christ’s Nativity; but most, to the labours of Ministers to spread the Gospel; and some, specially, to the Conversion of the Roman Empire.

3. And there appeared another wonder in heaven, and behold, a great red dragon, having seven heads, and ten horns, and seven crowns upon his heads.

3. The Devil appeared in the shape of a great red Dragon (specially Mars, vvhom the Heathen Romans took for their special God.) His seven Heads and Crowns signify his great Power, especially at Rome, the City that had seven Hills, and ruled in the Earth: And the ten Horns are the Kingdoms or Provinces of the Roman Empire.

4. And his tail drew the third part of the stars of heaven, and did cast them to the earth: and the dragon stood before the woman which was ready to be delivered, for to devour her child as soon as it was born.

4. By his Tail, say many, is meant, his Subtilty; by Hereticks he corrupted a third part of Christians; which, faith Dr. H. vvas by Simon Magus, and the Gnosticks: Say others, by all the Swarm of Herefies. (Lyra Faith, all this is spoken of the War of Cofes, King of Persia, against the Christians.) Most Protestants say, it is meant of the Roman, perverting Emperors Succesfess, acted by Satan, who sought to extirpate Christianitie.

5. And she brought forth a man-child, who was to rule all nations with a rod of iron: and her child was caught up unto God, and to his throne.

5. This Child, say some, was Christ; others say, Constantine; most say, the Church, as prosperous, which in Constantine’s time, was to be advanced to Power, and prevail against Heathenism, both by the Word, and by the Sword: Or this Christ, by the Church, was thus to rule: Or, as others, the Martyrs, taken up to God, triumphed by suffering, and furthered the Glory of the Church. Others think it meaneth that, in the days of the heathen Heathen Emperors, Alexander Severus, Philip Arabs, Constantius Chlorus, &c. the Church travailed, as in the Pains of Childbirth; but was to suffer with patience, as in the Wilderems, till Decius, Diocletian, Max. Hercul. Maxentius and Licinius had done persecuting: And then it was delivered by Constantine, to an advanced, free Church-STATE.

6. And the woman fled into the wilderness, where she hath a place prepared of God, that they should feed her there a thousand two hundred and threescore days.

6. Say some, the Church throughout the Empire, perfecuted by Nero for three Years and a half, was put to worship God in Obscurity, and as in flight: (But Nero’s Persecution was before John wrote this, if under Domitian.) Others, more probably, refer it to the later Roman Persecutions, under which God kept his Church till its Deliverance. And some understand it of Antichrist’s driving the pure Church, as into a Wilderemess.

7. And there was war in heaven: Michael and his angels fought against the dragon, and the dragon fought and his angels: 8. And prevailed not, neither was their place found any more in heaven.

7. Some expound this of the Confis at Rome, between Simon Magus and Simon Peter (long before John wrote this, if the story be true.) Others more probably say, it represents the Churches Persecution by the Heathen Emperors (especially Diocletian, Maximius, Licinius, &c.) and their final overthrow by Constantine, by a War
Revelation. with the Dragon. Ch. 12.

the blood of the Lamb, and by the word of their Testimony, and they loved not their lives unto the death.

11. Not only Christ, but the Faithful under him, conquer Satan, and Heathens, and all the Churches Enemies. 1. By the Blood of Christ, vvhose Sufferings, trusted to, are the Merit of their Successes. 2. By the Word of God, preached, pleaded and witnessed by them. 3. By their Sufferings and Martyrdoms.

12. Therefore rejoice ye heavens, and ye that dwell in them: two to the inhabitants of the earth, and of the sea, for the devil is come down unto you, having great wrath, because he knoweth that he hath but a short time.

12. Lyra thought that this was Ceres, King of Persia, who, being conquered by Heractius, gave the Church great cause of joy, but wofully oppressed his own Subjects; though, being old, he had not long to do it. Dr. H. faith, it was the Churches joy, and the Devils rage, for the Overthrow of Simon Magnus; and that now he fore-saw the Fall of his Kingdom, he set on foot Nero's Persecution. Others That, the Empire turning Christians, the Devil raged, by Julian, Valens, and such others, for a little while, both against Laity and Clergy. Some think that it is properly thoe in Heaven that rejoice: Others, that it is the Church on Earth: Others, that it is both. And some say, It is upon the Approach of the Millenium, after the Fall of Antichrist.

Note 1. To be delivered from Satan, and see his Kingdom fall, is matter of great joy. 2. If Satan rage, because he knoweth that his time is short, how much should we be quickened to Diligence and Hope, when we all know that our time on Earth is short.

13. And when the dragon saw that he was cast unto the earth, he persecuted the woman which brought forth the man-child.

13. Saith Lyra, when Ceres saw that he was conquered by Heractius, he persecuted the Christians in his own Dominions, vwhom Heractius relieved by two Armies. Saith
Ch. 12. The Beast with seven Heads, &c. Ch. 1.

Revelation. Seven Heads, &c. Ch. 1.

Men, who, for connived there, help

17. And the dragon was with the woman, and went make war with the remnant her seed, which keep the commandments of God, and hastened testimony of Jesus Christ.

17. Some say, this is Domitian and Pagan's Perfection: Others, that it was Arrian, when Satan saw he was disfitted of Heathen Rome: Others, that it was his setting up the Papacy, as it perfects particular Christians, for not corrupting religion.

Note. There is no hope of a desired Peace with Satan, or Diabolists, will such, though Christians must study, as much as in them lie, to live peaceably with all Men; and specially, to live love and Peace among themselves. The Devil will not lay down his War against Christ till he be cast down and bound; but the Members of Christ's Body should not war against each other.

The poor Albigenese, &c. were left, by Dioclesian, driven into a barren, miserable Country, and after murdered by Pope and Papists.

CH AP. XIII.

1. And I stood upon the sand of the sea, and saw a beast arise out of the sea, having heaven heads, and ten horns, and upon his horns ten crowns, and upon his head the name of blasphemy.

1. Most of the old Fathers express this of an Antichrist, that should come toward the end of the World. Some take it to be the second Caesar that succeeded his Father in Persia. Others tie the Beast to be the state of the Heathen Religion at Rome; the seven Heads signify either seven Emperors, or the six Hills; and the ten Horns, and the Crown the Confederate Kingdoms; and the name of Blasphemy, the Titles of Rome, cita: A Goddes, and the eternal City, with Idolatrous Profession. Others take the Beasts here, to be but one, under two relations; that is, the Pope, or Papacy: Or say some, the Roman Kingdom under it.
Ch. 13. The Beast with

Revelation. Seven Heads, &c. Ch. 13.

Pope, and the Papacy it self, as Ecclesiastic. Some take the Devil to be this Beast; some, the Turkish Empire; some, the Greek Empire: And some take this first Beast to be the Roman Empire, as Christian. The hardest part of the Controversie is between them that say, It is Heathen Rome, and those that say, It is Papal Rome: And the Reafons which they give against each other, seem stronger than the affecting Reafons of either side; of which, many Volumes are written. Some say, that the seven Heads are seven Kings, which went immediately before Antichrift; and that the name of Blasphemy is, say Rome, the Titles given the Pope (as God, and Universal Head, or Bishop, and Christ's Universal Vicar, that can forgive sin, and bring Souls from Purgatory, &c.) Or, as others, his Idolatry.

2. And the beast which I saw was like unto a leopard, and his feet were as the feet of a bear, and his mouth as the mouth of a lion: and the dragon gave him his power, and his seat, and great authority.

2. The Leopard was the Type of the Greeks, the Bear of the Persians, and the Lyon of the Babylonians: And all are set together, to signify the Crueltie of the first Beast, and variety of its Exercise. This was the Heathen Idolatry, as exercized by Domitian, &c. say some, to which Satan made the Imperial Power to contribute its utmost help. Or, as others, it was the Papal Idolatry and Crueltie, which Satan now propagated by Christian names and pretences, as before he had promoted the like, in the name of Heathens Gods.

3. And I saw one of his heads, as it were wounded to death, and his deadly wound was healed: and all the world wondered after the beast.

3. To pass by those, that expound this of the Son of Cæsar, King of Persia, some take it for the burning of the Capitol at Rome, the Head-Temple of Idols; either in Vitellius's Stirs, when after Vespasian rebuilt it; or in Titus's Reign, when, being burnt by Lightning, Domitian rebuilt it. But it seemeth unlikely that all this should be spoken of so small a matter as a Temple. Others expound it of the fackling and taking of Rome five times in forty two Y.ars, by the Goths and Vandals; and the Recovery, by Justinian, and Belisarius, and Narses. The most Learned Protestant's say, the deadly Wound of the Beast was, the Overthrow of the Heathen, Roman, Religion and Power; but what the Healing was, is the doubt: Julian's Cure was too short to be meant: Most think, that the very erecting of the Papacy is meant, as revolving Devilish, or Idolatry, under the Christian name. Other Protestant's think, that the many Schisms in the Papacy, was the deadly Wound: And that it was healed by the Councils of Constance and Bafet. And others think, that the Reformation gave the Pope the Wound; and that the Revok to Popery, in France, by Hen IV. in England, by Queen Mary; in Germany, by the Overthrow of the Palgrave, &c. was the healing of it. To wander after him, is, to follow him in blind Devotion.

4. And they worshipped the dragon which gave power unto the beast, and they worshipped the beast, saying, Who is like unto the beast? who is able to make war with him?

4. That is, say some, They worship the Devil, under the name of Heathen Gods, for making their Empire so great, and repairing the Wound of their Religion. Say others, They honoured and served the Papacy, and him that ered it, thinking it had been God, when it was the Devil admiring the Sanctity and Power of the Papacy.

5. And there was given unto him a mouth speaking great things, and blasphemies; and power was given unto him to continue forty and two months.

5. This the Ancients expound, of an Antichrist not yet come: And others, of Domitian: And others, of the Pope.

6. And he opened his mouth in blasphemy against God, to blaspheme his name, and his tabernacle, and them that dwell in heaven.

6. Say some, He blasphemed the true God and Christ directly; (that is, Domitian, perfecuting Christians.) Say others, 'Tis the Papal Blasphemy, by Transubstantiation,
Ch. 13. The Dragon, Revelation. The two Beasts, &c. Ch. 17.

7. And it was given unto him to make war with the saints, and to overcome them: and power was given him over all kindreds, and tongues, and nations.

7. Those that take the first Beast to be Mahomet himself, with his Arabian, Saracen Powers, and the second, to be the Turkish Mahometans; do easily tell when, and how the Saints were overcome, and Nations subjected to him. But several Objections lie against this, and so there do again. those that apply it to Domitian: And why it may not more plausibly be applied to some following Persecutors, especially Diocletian, I see not yet. But that it is meant of the Papal Tyranny, is the more easily believed by many who know the truth of the History, that all the ten Heathen Persecutions, &c. together, were a little thing, compared to the Papal Blood-thed. Made truly tells us, that Perian reporteth (and divers second him) that, in France alone, a Million of the Albigensians and Waldensians were killed: And that Sander de Vis. Man. l. 8 dem. 34. confesseth, that infinite Lollards were burnt in Europe. And that Vergerius faith th' -t, within thirty Years, an hundred and fifty thousand were consumed by the Inquisition, and such Means. And the numbers murdered in Bohemia, and other Countries; and since then, in the Low-Countries, France, England, Ireland, &c. render the ten Persecutions by Heathens, as described by our most aggravating old Church-Historians, to appear but as Morose to the Papal Sacrifices.

8. And all that dwell upon the earth shall worship him, whose names are not written in the book of life of the Lamb slain from the foundation of the world.

8. And his great Power and Victories shall cause the generality of worldly men, to own, admire and obey him (whether it be the Heathen Rome, or Mahometans, or the Pope;) except those chosen Children of Wisdom, whose names, from the foundation of the World, were by God's Decree written in the Book of the Lamb, or in the Catalogue of those who were to be saved by Christ Crucified.

9. If any man have an ear, let him hear. 10. He that leadeth into captivity, shall go into captivity: he that killeth with the sword, must be killed with the sword. Here is the patience and the faith of the Saints.

9. 10. Let all Christians regardfully mark what I say, that they be not by the forces of Persecutors or Tyrants, tempted from their Patience, Contency or Duty: Though these great Conquerors and Persecutors are a while adored for their Success and Power, in the end they shall be used as they used others, commonly when they have conquered and triumphed, other conquer them, and triumph over them; and when they have killed many, they are usually killed themselves; Few safer Conquerors die the common death of all Men. Therefore the Hwy Wisdom of God teacheth his Saints, as much as is possible, to avoid War, even defensive, and to overcome by Faith and Patience, especially in the case of Persecution, and of private and particular persons towards injurious Rulers; though Kingdons may exercise self-defence, lest they tempt all their Neighbours to make them their prey.

11. And I beheld another beast coming up out of the earth, and he had two horns, like a lamb, and he spake as a dragon.

11. Many say, that by Another Beast is meant the former in another respect, and that they are but one. But when the true faith, it is another, with so many names and As of difference, such pretension hath not exposed the sense, but made it, and may say any other improvable thing. Others that say, the first Beast was Heathen Rome, and the second Papal Rome, will as hardly as the former make it probable, the Heathen Rome was one of the Pope's Heads if be be the Beast: Was the first Beast one of the many Heads of the second Beast? Or, was the Heathen Religion or Heathenism, was the wounded Head of the first Beast, then the Pope was not the first Beast, for that was not one of his Heads, especially as its overthrow by Confession,
Dr. H. that say the second Beast, or Magicians or Magick, if confine it, speak as improbably, was the second, his Lamblike or him to be an Hypocrite pre-

Truth, and his Dragon-like or him to be the Devil's Agent.

reasons to prove both one, being to explain Text, some think rather thirt Beast was the Idolatrous Em-

that so cruelly set up Image-Wor-

the East and West, and the Pope Beast that flattered them, and excommunicated those that insisted them, and his first notable as obtained by engaging himself to the Image-Worshippers, and flattering them, and withal Pipin, and Ch. Martel, and maintain him in his Rebellion, by

the Western Empire, and then most succeeding Princes in the

come think that the Pope is the firt and the second are his Councils, and priests, and Clergy, and Jefuits, and bar cry him up, and persuaide the Obeyer and follow him, according diversal claim.

The difficult Objections against all should incline us rather to think the Heathen Empire that is the firt. I should (by reviewing the Hi-

Fact) think that the second Beast is Apollonius fabled of by Philo-

and Hierocles, but) the whole land Literate Tribe; Learning and spend out of itself, being then as much of the Glory, Pride, and of Rome, as the Military Power, ball flew anon how ordinary it was firt Beast, the Imperial Military to arrogate the name of God's, and

Temple, Altars, and Sacrifices: the second Beast, Poets, Orators, Cosmographers, Historians, as well as, and Southfivers, and Magici-

al Priests, all flattered and applauded Blasphemous Emperours; and at Learning of these Men was set in, Christianity, as despised foolishly: As they did with Paul at Athens, the Learned Romans count Christsians

and ignorant Barbarians: Learning and carnal was as great a Glory as Arms, and it's doubtful whether the Imperial Power, or the Literate

ion and Scorn, did more hinder the reception of Christianity. But Christ and his Cross at last conquered both, and used both to promote the Gospel. Yet this might be said to arise out of the Earth; for when it was used for enmity and strife against Christ, it was foolishness with God, and as James faith, ch. 3, was earthly, sensual and devilish, causing confusions, and every evil work.

12. And he exerciseth all the power of the first beast before him, and causeth the earth, and them, which dwell therein, to worship the first beast, whose deadly wound was healed.

12. If it be the Heathen Empire that is spoken of, 1. Then it seemeth like that the deadly wound was the shame and taking of the Empire by the Deaths of Tiberius, Caligula, Claudius, Nero, Galba, Otho, and Vitellius; every Emperour, between Augustus and Vespasian, murdered by others or themselves, and the Suspension of Vespasian at first, or afterward the slake that Heathenish had there by the Wildom and Honesty of the Antonines, and after of Alexander Severus, and Philip yet the first soon repaired by Vespasian, Titus and Domitian, and all the rest at last by Dio-
clesian (after Decius, Aurelian, &c.) And the Learned Tribe did live in Power, and in their Senate, and all their City-Officers, exercice such splendid pomp and Rule, as the Emperour did in his place: And caused the Roman City and Empire to vournish their victorious blasphemous Emperours, and with them to continue the common idolatry.

13. And he doth great wonders, so that he maketh fire come down from heaven in the earth in the fight of men,

13. This Roman Learning is used to overtake Truth and Christianity, and to make Men believe that the Sun and Moon and Stars are Gods, and have Oracles where they speak, and that it is they that conquer the Enemies of Rome; so that their power was in the Vision represented to me, as if they brought down fire from Heaven.

14. And deceiveth them that dwell on the earth, by the means of those miracles, which he had power to do in the sight of the Beast,
beast, saying to them that dwell on the earth, that they should make an image to the beast, which had the wound by a sword, and did live.

14. Their powerful Oratory and Learning deceived the ignorant multitude, to erect Images to their victorious Blasphemous Heathen Emperours, who recovered from the foreaid wound by the military murders: Images, and Altars and Sacrifices, are to be made the means of worshipping them.

15. And he had Power to give life unto the Image of the beast, that the image of the beast should both speak, and cause that as many, as would not worship the image of the beast, should be killed.

16. And they so deceived the people as that the Oracles seemed to them to speak, and to tell them as from the Gods, that they must kill all those that would not worship the Image of the Emperor, and the Gods that he worshipped, and would not be of his Religion.

17. And he causeth all, both small and great, rich and poor, free and bond, to receive a mark in their right hand, or in their fore-heads:

18. And that no man might buy or sell, save he that had the mark, or the name of the beast, or the number of his name.

19. It was the custom of the Romans, in those times, to mark both Servants, and many Souldiers, as notes of relation and approbation, mostly on their Arms or Hands, by which the person marked, as by a Badge, Livery, or Colours, owned his Master or Captain: And also to mark their Slaves, and punished pernicious, with a Brand of Disgrace, in the Face or Hand: The mark of Servants, or Souldiers, was sometime his Masters Escorneon, or chosen Badge, and sometime his name, and sometime the Chief Letters of his name, which leaving out the rest, stood for the name (as M. for Marcus, L. for Lucius, S. P. Q. R. for Senatus Populique Romanus, &c.) And it sometime fell out that those Letters were numeral (M. D. C. L. I. V. are with us) Now this Text serveth to some to mean that the flattering Literate Tribe in Rome (Orators, Senators, Poets, Priests, Artists, &c.) were the Second Beast did, by their Laws, Orations, Poems, Comedies, Oracles, and Decrees, cause the People commonly to come under obligations, thus to enslave themselves to the Idolatrous Emperors, to own them as pesty Gods, and offer at their Altars and Sacrifices, and to Worship the Idols also which they worshipped, and so to be the owners of, and actors, in their Idolatry: And in order hereto to honour them by receiving their Badges, or their names, or the Chief Letters of their names: And it fell out that the Chief Letters here meant were Numerical and Nominaive both, and made up 666.

And if it be, (as most Prophets think) Romans-Papal, that is the Second here meant, then as the First Beast is the Popacy, as Idolatrous and Potent, so the Second is likely to be the flattering Clergy, who are to the Popes much like what the Literate Romans aforeaid were to the Heathen Emperours: I mean his Prelates, Councils, Jesus, and Fryars of all sorts; They have pretended to abundance of Miracles, to advance the Popacy and its corruptions of Religion, in so much that they make fish Miracles one of the Chief Marks of their Church. Gregories Dialogues, and other, led the way; and their monstrous Legends feign so many, and so shamefully (of St. Francis, St. Domastic, and multitudes more) as makes Man suspect that this tribe are the miracle-working beast; nor but that many Miracles are true, that are written of Gregory Necessar. Martin, and others, by Enfyl. Socrat. Sulip. Severus, Augustin, &c. Which were all for the confirmation of the Christian Faith, and not for Popery: And many of the Men, and others, of whom these fictions are written, were holy Men, and God did some wonders at their Prayers; And it is this which the Legends take occasion from to add their multitudes of falsehoods, and then to perwade Men, that all these were Miracles wrought for Gods adherence to Popery: It being usual for that Clergy to persecute the living Saints that are not for their wills and ways, and to canonize those, as wonders of sanctity, whose strictness and austerity is joined with submission to the Papal dominion. Such Men: Writing,
Ch. 13. Of the Beast. Ch. 13.

Writings as Barmine, Bellarmine, Gene-

rand, &c. With their many sable Coun-

cils, and Jesuits that compass Sea and

Land to promote the Papal Kingdom, do

even more much more fully to do the part of

the second Beast for the Papacy, than the

Poets, Priests, &c. did for the Headless

dolarton Empire. And the Mark in their

right Hand or Forehead, seemeth to be

some professing Badge, by which they tie

each other to worship the Beast and his

mage, that is, subject themselves, by con-

sent, to the Papal Sovereignty and Canons,

and Idolatry, or corrupt Imagery and fendi-

al worship: And herein the Papacy so far

exceedeth the severity of the said Heathens,

that they do, by the Laws of their Church,

dutiful Oaths upon all the Clergy to be-

lieve many new Articles of Faith, and to

obey the Pope, yea, and on Princes to ex-

terminate all that the Pope will but call

Heretics; and that those temporal Lords

shall be excommunicated, deposed and
damned, that will not do it. No Man, cal-

led by them a Heretic, may so much as

make a will, or have the benefit of the

Law, no not of his liberty, or life, but be

comermed in the inquisitions, or burnt.

No Minister may preach Christ's Gospel,

that is not a Subject of the Pope; nor any

Christian else meet to Worship God, no nor

read the Bible in a known tongue, but by

his License, and theirs that he empower-

ethese things are far more than to forbid

buying and selling without the Mark of

the Beast, or his Name.

18. Here is wisdom. Let him that hath understanding count the number of the beast: for it is the number of a man, and his number is six hundred threescore and six.

18. Here is work for the Sagacity of a sharp witted Man: Let such try to find out the Beast by the number of his Name; for it pleaseth not God more plainly to reveal it. It is numeral Letters, which name a Man: And the Letters are $\chi\zeta\alpha\mu\nu\omicron\upsilon$, which in numbering signify DCLVIII or 666. About this name and number the Fathers, Papists, and Protestants, are of many minds among themselves. The first general difference is, whether it signifies the name of a Man properly, or only some other mark that belongeth to him, called his name? And the next whether the name belong to a single person, or to a state, or policy, or party? Of the Protestants many think it a man's name, but belonging to the Papacy in Common: *Quinis* takeris it for the Canon Law and Decretals: *Brother* for *Adomiam*, *Exx. 2. 13.* Brightman reciteth these, and divers names, found out by divers fancies, *Titan*, *Lambast*, *Nestor*, *Caco*, *Oedipus*, *Alcestis*, *Blabera*, *Palma*, *Bagus*, *Amnos*, *Astris in Artes*, *Ecclesia*, *Italia* and *Romagnus.* All which he rejecteth, and fasteneth on that which *Irenæus* chose of old, which is *Latine,* and he thinketh that this number of the name, to be received, was meant of the Greeks, who were brought to submit to the Latin Church; And so all the Greeks that so submit, receiving the number, are joined in the guilt and damnation with them that had the Mark, or the Name it self.

This is clear that all they, that only find out a name, or number, which are not imposed, and by the subjects received, speak not at all to the Text. It is only the receiving of the mark, name or number that is here mentioned: It is the subjects Badge. If the recked word *Latine* be used as added to Catholic, and put instead of *Roman,* it may reach the Papists, whose name and Badge now is to be *Roman Catholic,* as distinct from all others, that are but meer Christian Catholics.

But lately most Protestants take the number of the name to be but some characteristic acts or marks: Some say, it is the Syteme of Papal Corruptions in Doctrine and Worship; some (as Mr. Potter) make it the number of 25, as the square root of six hundred fifty six, and he largely tells us how many ways it suiteth *Rome.* But how is this number of 25 received as a Badge by reprobrates? Some say, that Patriarchall and Metropolitan (and such like) Idolaters and Persecutors are the Image of Papacy, and that PERJURY is the mark of the Beast, who by false Oaths; bindeth all to him, and to his Prelates; so that who soever will not be persuried, by false and wicked Oaths, are not received into his Church, nor tolerated by them: And I read not in History that ever any party on Earth did so long, and so violently, bind men by wicked Oaths, and involve all sorts in heinous Perjury, as the Pope and his Prelates have long done and do: *Abbot Vespergus* lamenteth it in his dates that Priests and People were commonly involved...
The Number

Revelation.

of the Beast. Ch. 13:

in Perjury. Swear, or Suffer, is their Law; and, when interest requireth it, unswearing and forswearing is as violently imposed, and whole Countries absolved from their Oaths to their Sovereigns. PERJURY, PERFIDIOUSNESS and PERSECUTION seem to be the mark of the Papal Dominion: And (as my old fellow Minuter in the same Congregation) Mr. Nath. Stephens faith, The name of the Beast feemeth like to be his assumed Power, or pretended authority; to which it is that he maketh all to swear: And the Oath or Subjection is not to the Number, but to the Power or Persons marked by that Number; the Number being but the Name abbreviated, and the Name the notification of the Party, or Policy, to which men consent.

But Mr. N. Stephens thinks that 666 is the time between the beginning of the Roman Monarchy, according to Daniel's computation, as it respected the Church, which was in Pompey's time, and the rise of Anti-Christ, which he thinks was in 666. (Anno Dom.) and so is just 666 years: For he recketh (as many others do) the title of Universal Bishop given Boniface 3. by Phocas, to set up Antichrift first; and the antecedent Fall of the Roman Empire to be that by the Goths, &c. But I am past doubt, that neither wicked Phocas, nor Boniface themselves, did mean that the Universality should extend over all the World, but only over the Empire; for what pretence could Phocas have to give power or titles to his Subjects, to rule in all Princes Dominions on Earth? They only meant that he should be before the Bishop of Constantinople, the Prime Bishop in the Universal Empire; and that Leo challenged before Phocas. But the claim, of Governing all the World, came up by degrees long after both; and it was about 700 years before the Popes cast off their Subjection to Emperours and Kings.

On the other side, those that appropriate all this to Heathen Rome, are not of one mind. Some take the Beast to be the Heathen Worship as it stood at Rome, and the Roman Empire, supporting it, to be represented by seven Heads, that is, particular Emperours or Hills, and the ten Horns to be ten Confederate Kings, and Tributary: And that Domitian is specially meant, as a self-idolizing Blasphemer and Persecutor, for three years and a half; and that the Magick, Auguries and Oracles, are the second Beast; and specially Apollo; That the Image is the Idol-worship set up in the rest of the Empire in imitation of Rome: And all were compelled to bear some Mark of their God, or his Name, or some Numeral Letters signifying his Name, branded on them; but that it being not revealed, then what these Letters signify, cannot be known now, for that it was a discriminating note received by some, and not by others.

But others think, that Vishpash was the Beast, and Anti-Hrift, 1. Because some fo- lilh Jews took him (as they had done Herod) at first to be the Messiah. 2. Because he answered to Antichus Epip, who before him violated and profaned the Temple and Worship. 3. Because Christ seemed to lead them to that interpretation, Matth. 24. by assimilating the case to that in Deut. 4. Because he was said to work Miracles, to cure a blind man, &c. 5. Because he destroyed the Sacred Nation, and enslaved the remainder; which the Christians were far from rejoicing in, being still much inclined to the honour of Jerusalem, and thinking that a glorious Throne of Christ was there to be erected, and grief for them, as Paul did, Rom. 10. &c. had these gather the name from the Letters of Teitan, as if Titus had been so called by allusion to Titan, And Hefechiah's faith that Titan was to be written as of old Terz, as containing the number of 666.

Others rather lay the name and mark on all the Heathen Emperours, as Idolaters and Persecutors, or Enemies at least to Christians. And, 1. They may well prove that it was very ordinary with them to cast some degree of Deity while they lived, to be Deified by the Senate, or their Successors, when they were dead; and to have Altars erected to or for them, and Sacrifices offered accordingly. Of Augustus himself there is full evidence, Virgil, and Horace, Deifie him, and mention his devoted Sacrifices and Altars. So doth Valerius Maximus invoke Titus, and Propertius calls him God. Claudius is called Divus in an old Monument. The Deifying of Caesar Caligula, and Domitian, is commonly known: It is no wonder that the great worth of the Antonines, specially M. Aurel. Philop;us, made the Roman Deifie him when he was dead, and would have done so, for his sake, by his Successor of the Antonine Race, had not they, the inhumane Villanies of Commodus and

Heliogabalus changed their minds, (though Antoninus accepted not this while he lived.) Many Emperors presumed to Deify their Wives when dead: And indeed building Temples over their dead Bodies, and erecting Altars there, was too soon imitated by the zealous Christians over the Graves, Bones, or Suffering places, of the Martyrs. Aureli. Victor faith indeed, that Diocletian was the first after Domitian (and Caligula) that suffered himself publicly to be called LORD, and named and adored as God: (But not the first that was Deified by the Senate, or Flatterers, especially Poets.) And that they used to mark or stigmatize their Servants, Soldiers and Slaves, he that will read may see in Pignorius de Scrib, out of Ambros. de obit. Valent. Plin. jun. Ep. Antonius; Petronius Arbiter, Sueton. de Calig., Actius Amidemus Medic.

And it is not impossible to invent congruous Numerical Letters that might be the abbreviations of their names: And though John writing in Greek put [X ε' δ'] Yet seeing the Emperors and Roman Subjects were Latin, who can doubt but that the Letters, being at once Nominative and Numerical, were Latin, and not Greek, however Teitan, and Oulpius, and Livianus, and Latianus, &c. be instituted by many.

For instance [T. FLAV. VESPAS. C. DIV.] is the Abbreviation of [TITO FLAVIO VESPIASIANO CAESARI DIVO] (The Father and Son had the same name) the Numerical Letters are [D. C. L. V. V. I.]

[T. FLAV. DOM. C. D. I. VOT.] that is, [TITO FLAVIO DOMITIANO CAESARI DIVO VOTUM] the Numerical Letters of the Abbreviation are [D.C.L.V. V. I.] Gaiba, Otha, Vitellius are not worth the naming.


[EL. ADRIANO C. AUG. VOTUM] that is, [DIVO AELIO ADRIANO CAESARI AUGUSTO VOTUM] D. C. L. V. V. I.

[Div. E. L. U. VER. ANTON. C.] that is, [DIVO AELIO LUCIO VERO ANTONINO CAESARI] D. C. L. V. V. I.

So [DIV. AUREL. ANTON. C. VOT.] that is, [DIVO AURELIO ANTONINIO CAESARI VOTUM] D. C. L. V. V. I.

So [DIVO VALLER. C. VOT.] that is, [DIVO VALERIANO CAESARI VOTUM] D. C. L. V. V. I.

So [DIVO AUREL. C. VOT.] that is, [DIVO AURELIANO CAESARI VOTUM] D. C. L. V. V. I.

I do but give Instances how easy it is to conceive how such nominal marks might be given and received: But that de facto it was just so, or why that Number is chosen, who can tell.

CHAP. XIV.

I. AND I looked, and lo, a Lamb stood on the Mount Sion, and with him an hundred forty and four thousand, having his Fathers name written in their foreheads.

1. Next the Vision shewed me Christ, as a Lamb standing on Mount Sion, &c. These hundred forty and four thousand, seem to be only the faithful Christian Jews, that stuck to Christianity through suffering, the number being the same, as Ch. 7. and the number of twelve, which is the square-root of this number, noting a respect to the twelve Tribes, as the number of twelve Apostles did: Therefore the place is called Mount Sion, (their holy place,) whether it be in Heaven, or in the Catholic Church that they are supposed to be. Doubtless many Christian Jews thought that the New Jerusalem should be in the place where the Old was at Christ's coming. The Name of God (and of the Lamb, say some Copies) in their foreheads signified their open Profission of Fidelity to the Father and the Son, and God's gracious noting them for his own. And it helps us to expound what the mark of the Beast was, even some open signal obliging Profession of Idol-Worship.

2. And I heard a voice from heaven, as the voice of many waters, and as the voice of a great thunder: and I heard the voice of harpers harping with their harps. 3. And they sung as it were...
were a new song before the throne, and before the four beasts, and the elders, and no man could learn that song, but the hundred and forty and four thousand, which were redeemed from the earth.

2, 3. The voice of many Waters signified the multitude of Converts that by the Gospel were gathered to this Church on Mount Sion, who praised God with the Melody of Harps, or joyful Psalmody; And it was new Psalms of Praise for Man’s Redemption, and the Grace of Christ which they sung, as before God and the Cherubims, and the holy Church, which none of the Jews were fit to sing, gave the foresaid chosen faved number.

4. These are they which were not defiled with women, for they are virgins: these are they which follow the Lamb whithersoever he goeth: these were redeemed from among men, being the first-fruits unto God, and to the Lamb,

5. And in their mouth was found no guile: for they are without fault before the throne of God.

4, 5. The Vision being of those in Heaven, as the Precedents of the Christian Church at Jerusalem, that should afterward succeed them; they were the first-fruits of the Apostles Ministry, described Acts 1. & 2. & 3. & 4. who were eminent in Purity and Love, free from Idolatry and Fornication, as a People chosen out of the Jewish Nation unto Christ; and as they were holy on Earth, they are faultless and perfect now in Heaven.

6. And I saw another angel fly in the midst of heaven, having the everlasting gospel to preach unto them that dwell on the earth, and to every nation, and kindred, and tongue, and people.

6. Whether the midst of Heaven have the Mythical fames that divers give, or be only [sent from Heaven to Earth] I know not: Some say, it is called the Everlasting Gospel, because it was decreed from everlasting; some, because it dureth to everlasting, or tendeth to life everlasting. By the Gospel some understand only the glad tidings of the Fall of the Roman Empire; some, the Doctrine of Reformation, and tidings of the Fall of Popery; and some, the common Doctrine of Salvation by Christ, as it was now more freely and universally to be published to the Gentile World.

7. Saying with a loud voice, Fear God, and give glory to him for the hour of his judgment is come: and worship him that made heaven and earth, and the fountains of waters.

7. Away with your Gods that are as Gods, and turn to and fear the true and living God, who made Heaven and Earth: For the time is come that he will judge and destroy Idolaters. Other Expositions I omit.

8. And there followed another angel saying, Babylon is fallen, is fallen, that great city, because she made all nations drink of the wine of the wrath of her fornication.

8. Another part of my Vision was another Angel, &c. implying a further revelation to me. Whether it signifies another sort of Preachers on Earth, and who: as some say, the Albigenses and Waldenses, or Luther, Zwinglins, or Ilyricus and his Century Writers, let them tell the know.

Babylon is here described (and more fully after) to be that great City that drew all Nations unto Idolatry, whether it was Rome as Heathen, or Rome as Papal, or Rome as containing both, see my Advertisement.

9. And the third angel followed them, saying with a loud voice, If any man worship the beast and his image, and receive his mark in his forehead, or in his hands.

10. The same shall drink of the wine of the wrath of God, which is poured out, without mixture, into the cup of his indignation, and he shall be tormented with fire and brimstone, in the presence of the holy Angels, and the presence of the Lamb.
of her Plagues; and the Judgment that 
overthrew her shall extend to all her 
companions in Idolatry, and also the pun-
ishment in the life to come; And Christ 
and his Angels will execute and behold it, 
as just and good.

Some, to save their charity, say that 
damnation is not denounced to all that only 
have the Name of the Beast, or the 
Number, but only to them that receive his 
Mark, as his slaves, and worship him and 
his Image. But I think receiving his Name, 
and its Number, is included in receiving 
the Mark. But all may be pardoned to the 
penitent Believers.

Whether this Angel be Luther, Chem-
ninitas, Whitaker, and such others, I leave 
to the proof of the affirmers: Its enough 
to me, that this additional revelation and 
punishment, is notified to John as by an-
other Angel.

Though many think that only temporal 
punishment is here meant; doublets the 
same sin deserved more.

11. And the smoke of their 
torment ascendeth up for ever and 
ever. And they have no rest day 
or night, who worship the beast 
and his image, and whosoever re-
ceiveth the mark of his name.

11. Though temporal calamity be here 
included, this seems plainly to mean Hell: 
And the Mark of his Name, is here made 
equal to [His Mark] ver. 9. O the refuls 
miserly that is prepared for the impene-
trate!

12. Here is the patience of the 
Saints; here are they that keep the 
commandments of God, and 
the faith of Jesus.

12. This misery of impenitent Idolaters 
and Enemies of Christ, will shew the 
World, how wise and happy the Saints 
were, that by patient suffering did over-
come, and kept to the end, the Commands 
of God, and the Faith of Jesus. Faith, 
Obedience and Patience, are all necessary 
to Salvation.

13. And I heard a voice from 
heaven saying unto me, Write, 
Blessed are the dead which die in 
the Lord, from henceforth, yea, 
faith the Spirit, that they may rest 
from their labours, and their 
works do follow them.

13. Though it be always happy to be at 
Rest with Christ, the sufferings of those 
times will be so great, as will make it seem 
a reasonable blessedness, to go to that Rest, 
where they shall no more labour or suffer, 
but receive the fruit of their labours and 
works performed for Christ on Earth. Some 
make this to be but a promise of after-
freedom from Persecution here: The Text pro-

dveth a Blessedness for separated Souls before 
the Resurrection: For [a rd] (hence-
forth) signifies from this time forward. 
The Socinians therefore abuse the Text, 
that make the Blessedness to be but Resting 
in a state of death, till the Resurrection. 
For life, with God's service and acceptance 
in a time of Persecution, is a greater bless-
ing than meer death.

14. And I looked, and beheld, 
a white cloud, and upon the cloud 
one fat, like unto the Son of man, 
having on his head a golden 
crown, and in his hand a sharp 
sickle. 15. And another angel 
came out of the temple, crying 
with a loud voice to him that sat 
on the cloud, Thrust in thy sickle 
and reap, for the time is come for 
thee to reap, for the harvest of 
the earth is ripe. 16. And he, 
that fat on the cloud, thrust in 
his sickle on the earth, and the 
earth was reaped.

14. 15,16. Some understand this of an 
Angel in the likeness of a Man, but mott 
of Christ, or an Angel like Christ. The 
other Angel seemeth to signify but another 
part of the Vision, and execution Reaping 
the harvest, is punishing sinners ripe for de-
struction.

17. And another angel came 
out of the temple which is in hea-
ven, he also having a sharp sickle.

18. And another angel came out 
from the altar, which had power 
over fire, and cried with a loud 
cry to him that had the sharp sickle, 
saying, Thrust in thy sharp sickle, and gather the clusters of 
the vine of the earth, for her 
grapes are fully ripe.
Ch. 14. Vintage of God's Wrath. Revelation. The Seven Angels. Out of the Beast PER, as referring to Caesar and St. (State) and in a word, most half the Revelation speak of it. But unless they can prove that the Beasts have their Offspring, their Fathers Image, and are off, Cains offspring was, for that the Son is asked over by them in several Ages, which was asked by the Son rather than this, confine the Empires that Empire and State, that did suffer under when John wrote.

Ch. 15. And I saw another heaven.

1. And I saw another heaven.

2. And I saw as it were a sea of glass, mingled with fire, and them that had gotten the story over the beast, and over his image, and over his mark, over the number of his name, and stand on the sea of glass, and the harps of God.

3. And they sing the song of Moses the servant of God, and the song of the Lamb, saying, Great and marvellous are works, Lord God Almighty, and true are thy ways, thou of faine.
And the dreadfulness of God's Wrath, as a consuming Fire, striking even his Worshippers with Fear, and in the Execution disturbing the Church's Peace, was represented to me by the filling of the Temple with Smoke, from the Glory of God.

Ch. XV. The seven Vials, Revelation. and their Plagues. Ch. XVI.

1. And I heard a great voice out of the temple, saying to the seven angels, Go your ways, and pour out the vials of the wrath of God upon the earth.

1. I heard a great Voice out of the Temple, sending these Angels to pour out the Vials, and execute God's Wrath.

2. And the first went and poured out his vial upon the earth: and there fell a noisome and grievous sore upon the men which had the mark of the beast, and upon them which worshipped his image.

2. Of the great Plague in wicked Commodus's Reign (that killed, in Rome alone, two thousand a Day;) and of the like, in the Reign of several Persecutors, even till Constantine's Reign; and of the Bloodshed and Fire, and the resemblance of this, to the Plagues of Egypt: See Dr. H. on the Text, and Grotius before him. Others say, It is the Papists Torment of Conscience, when Popery is fallen.

3. And the second angel poured out his vial upon the sea, and it became as the blood of a dead man: and every living soul died in the sea. 4. And the third angel poured out his vial upon the rivers and fountains of waters, and they became blood.

3. That these signify a progress of the same Judgment on the Idolaters, is clear: But whether, by the Sea, and the Rivers and Fountains, signify things so distinct, as many think; and which, of their many conjectured Significations, are right, I cannot say.

5. And I heard the angel of the waters say, Thou art righteous, O Lord,
Ch. 16: The Seven Angels. Revelation.

Lord, which art, and wast, and shalt be, because thou hast judged thus:

5. The Angel that executed God's Judgments on the Idolatrous Nations, performed it with Praise and Glory to God, for his Justice on persecuting Idolaters.

Note: The Angels in Heaven were not ignorant of what God thus did on Earth: And as God's Mercy hindred not his Execution of Justice, so their pity kept them from triumphing over these destroyed Sinners, and giving God the Glory of their Punishment.

6. For they have shed the blood of saints and prophets, and thou hast given them blood to drink, for they are worthy. 7. And I heard another out of the altar say, Even so, Lord God almighty, true and righteous are thy judgments.

6, 7. N 1. God and Angels will rejoice in the terrible Revenge of the Blood of Saints. 2. The Angel from the Altar signifies, the Content of the Souls under the Altar, and of the Church of holy Worshipers on Earth, who pray for Deliverance.

9. Were it never so certain, that it is Idolatrous, Heathen Rome that is here meant, it consequently inferreth that, if Papal Rome have equalled, yea, far exceeded them, in shedding the Blood of Saints, their Punishment shall be as great, or greater. It is no small Aggravation of Papal Blood-shed (by Martyres, Inquisitions, Burnings, &c.) that they suffer all on Christ himself, and do it as Christians; yea, and, in so many Ages, make it the necessary Defence of their Kingdom: And they shall find, that God knoweth a Saint when Men call him a Heretic; and will not be so mocked, as to disown Christ's Sheep, for such forged Marks.

8. And the fourth Angel poured out his vial upon the sun, and power was given unto him to scorch men with fire. 9. And men were scorched with great heat, and blasphemed the name of God, which hath power over these plagues; and they repented not, to give him glory.

8, 9. Some take this to signify a great Drought, and Dearth, that came in the Days of Commodus; and after, of Maximinus.

Many take the Sun here, for Antichrist, the call of himself: Others, for Governors: Some, for the King of Spain; Some, for the German Emperor; or some fitch Papal Luminary: Some, for the Scripture, as tormenting Papists: Some, for Christ, a sending forth his Word and Judgments. I can go no further than the general sense: That a greater Plague, that fell on the Idolatrous Empire, made them lay all the Blame on the Christians, and rage the more; but cured not their Idolatry, or Persecution.

10. And the fifth Angel poured out his vial upon the seat of the beast, and his kingdom was full of darkness, and they gnawed their tongues for pain. 11. And blasphemed the God of heaven because of their pains and their fires, and repented not of their deeds.

10, 11. The plain, general sense of all this, is, to liken Idolatrous, persecuting Rome, and the suffering Christians, to Pharaoh, and the Israelites; and liken God's Plagies on Rome, to the Egyptian Plagues: And to tell us that, as Pharaoh's Heart was hardened, till Destruction fell on him and his, so will be the Idolatrous Romans.

By the Seal of the Beast is meant Rome, with the Imperial Power (or Papal, say many;) and by Darknes, the Confusions there, and Diminutions of their Glory: In Heathen Rome these were many and great; the Soldiers setting up, and pulling down, and killing Emperors, till they set the Empire to Sale; Emperors set up, and warring against each other; few dying a natural Death: Valerian taken, captivated, and made his Footstool, by Supersede, and fled. To be an Emperor, was the next way to Murder, or some odious Dishgrace and Death, by him that could overcome and kill him.

And Papal Rome was subdued by the Barbarians. Other Expectations are many.

12. And the sixth Angel poured out his vial upon the great river Euphrates, and the water thereof was dried up, that the way of the kings of the east might be prepared.

12. That this signifies a further progress towards Idolatrous, persecuting Rome's Destruction, and the Church's Deliverance, is clear;
Antichristian, Civil Powers, and Antichristian Ecclesiastical Powers, to draw Men to Popery and Idolatry, that they may be destroyed when God shall judge them. The day of God, some take, as before, for Constantine’s Victories against Idolaters; others, for the Day of the Pope’s Fall; and others, for the last day of Judgment.

15. Behold, I come as a thief; Blessed is he that watcheth, and keepeth his garments, lest he walk naked, and they see his shame.

15. My coming will be, when Men expect me not; Blessed is he that prepareth not for Shame and Confusion, when his Sin and Hypocrisy shall, by my Judgment, be brought to light, by complying with the Higher Powers in Sin, as thinking that I will be long in coming, to take down Sinners, and set up Saints.

16. And he gathered them together into a place called in the Hebrew tongue, Armageddon.

16. The Devil’s Prophets provoked them to gather, and fight to their Destruction.

Note: Here the Dragon is expounded to be Devils: And this word, Devils, in this Book, usually signifies, those Idols (Jupiter, Mars, Apollo, &c.) which the Romans worshipped instead of God: (For Paul tells us, It was Devils that they worshipped.) And it being the Spirits of these Devils, or Heathen Idols, that are set out, it seemeth most probable, that it is the War with the Heathen Idolaters that is here meant. Dr. H. after Gresius, noteth that, in the Fight at Rome, Maximus had a hundred and seventy thousand Foot, and eighteen thousand Horse, of Romans, Italians, &c. and Constantine had ninety thousand Foot, and eight thousand Horse, of Germans, Gauls, and Britains: and that the Victory was of such consequence, that, from that day, the Account of Years, by Indictions, began to commemorate the Deliverance of City and Church; (which since, is turned into accounting from the Birth of Christ.)

But others say, It is the Day of the Fall of Antichrist: And some say, Of the Destruction of the Turks. And some say, He that gathered them together, is Christ, or God, by his permitting Providence, for their Destruction.

17. And the seventh angel poured out his vial into the air, and there came a great voice out of the temple

17. The Angel, that poured his Vial into the Air, signified, the coming down of God's Plagues from Heaven, on the Generality of the Enemies. And the Voice out of the Temple signified, that it is done by God's Decree, for the Vindication of his holy Worship, and his Church.

[Is it done?] That is, The last Plague on the Roman Pharaoh is now pouring out, and he is to be drowned in the Red Sea. God's Judgments are accomplished for the Extermination of the Heathen Roman Empire, and the revenging the Blood of the Saints, shed by them. As Pharaoh's Cruelties increased, before the Israelites were delivered, so Diocletian made the cruellest Slaughters, before the Heathen Beast was to be destroyed: and then they were ripe, and the time was come. Or, as others say, The time of the Fall of Popery and Antichrist. Or, as others, The end of the World.

18. And there were voices, and thunders, and lightnings: and there was a great earthquake, such as was not since men were upon the earth, so mighty an earthquake, and so great.

18. The great Comotions which went to these great Changes, and Subversion of the Heathen Powers, was represented to me, as by Thunderings, Lightnings, and the greatest Earthquake. Say some, it is the Changes by the Offrogethi, and such others: Say others, there were literally such dreadful Earthquakes before Teotillas took Rome: Say others, it is yet to come before Antichrist's Fall: And say others before the Day of Judgment.

19. And the great city was divided into three parts, and the cities of the nations fell; and great Babylon came in remembrance before God, to give unto her the cup of the wine of the fierceness of his wrath.

19. And Rome was then divided between Heathens, Chriftians, and Worldly Men, that were indifferent for Religion: Or, say others, Heathens, Orthodox, and Heretics: It's taken from Ezek. 5. Others say, that literally the third part was destroyed by Teotillas; and say others, by Alaricus; others say, it is three in relation to the three Princes, the Dragon, the Beast, and the false Prophet; others, that Antichrist's Kingdom was falling by being divided in itself.

20. And every island fled away, and the mountains were not found.

20. As Earthquakes shake Mountains and Islands; so all the Dependents of Rome fled with it.

21. And there fell upon men great hail out of heaven, even stones about the weight of a talent: and men blasphemed God because of the plague of the hail; for the plague thereof was exceeding great.

21. God's Executions bruised and broke them, as great Hail would do the tender Plants, and yet they did but blaspheme God the more. A Talent is Three Score and Twenty Pounds. God's Judgments purged and scattered Roman Citizens, say some; the Papists, say others; and all wicked Christians, say others.

C H A P. XVII.

1. And there came one of the seven angels which had the seven vials, and talked with me, saying unto me, Come hither, I will shew unto thee the judgment of the great whore, that sitteth upon many waters. 2. With whom the kings of the earth have committed fornication, and the inhabitants of the earth have made drunk with the wine of her fornication.

1. Say some, I. I will shew thee who is coming from God on Imperial, Heathen, Idolatrous Rome, who by Power and by Learning (by the first and second Beast) hath drawn Kings and Nations with her Idolatry.

Others say, it is Papal Rome, and they prove it, because if they had not been married to God before by the Profession of Christianity, they could not have been Adulterers. To which the former say, 1. That Fornication may be the Sin of the unmarried. 2. That by Fornication is meant Idolatry, and God's right may be...
BABYLON THE GREAT, THE MOTHER OF HARLOTS, AND ABOMINATIONS OF THE EARTH.

5. The Name written was [Mystery, Babylon, &c.] that is Mystical (not literal) Babylon, the great City Rome, the Mother of Idolatry and Wickedness, propagating them, by her Power and Learning, to all the Nations of her Dominions, and further in the World. As Babylon was the Idolatrous, cruel, Captivator of the ancient Jews, overthrowing their Kingdom; so was Idolatrous, proud Rome, the Captivator and Persecuter of Jew and Gentile Christians, and the great Enemy of the Church.

6. And I saw the woman drunken with the blood of the saints, and with the blood of the martyrs of Jesus: and when I saw her, I wondered with great admiration.

7. And the angel said unto me, Wherefore dost thou marvel? I will tell thee the mystery of the woman, and of the beast that carried her, which hath the seven heads and ten horns.

8. And upon her forehead was written, MYSTERIE,
under the Papal form: Many other expostulations I pass by. They, that expend all of Pagan Rome, say that the sin is (I shall notice the Beast, which is the Roman Emperor, by that one who now reigneth which is Domitian.) He was in the Government when his Father Vespasian was abroad: And he after caressed while his Father and Brother Titus reigned, and then resumed it, raised by Satan to persecute the Church, and then is finally killed himself.

Ruler 9. d. I am now shewing thee the fall and destruction of the Beast and Whore, and will now notice him to thee accordingly: The Beast or Emperor at this fall will be the bloodyest of all persecutors, Diocletian: Of whom then it may be said, He was Emperor, but discouraged by the ill success of his persecution, he, with Maximian, Hercolius, laid down the Empire, and both betook themselves to a private life: But after the Devil would have restored them, and they attempted to rise out of their privacy; but did it to their own destruction, being both killed when Constanine prevailed: As were Licinius and Maximinius, who would have done their work. So that when Constanine was destroying the Pagan Empire, it was true, that Diocletian (and Maximian, Hercolius) was Emperor, and now is not, and yet is, that is, in being, though not in power, but will rise to his perdiction.

And the Idolaters shall be stricken with wonder and consternation, when they see so cruel and great a Tyrant so brought to nought.

9. And here is the mind which hath wisdom: The seven heads are seven mountains, on which the woman sitteth. 10. And there are seven kings, five are fallen, and one is, and the other is not yet come: and when he cometh, he must continue a short space.

11. And the beast that was, and is not, even he is the eighth, and is of the seven, and goeth into perdiction.

9, 10, 11. That the Seven Mountains are thofe of Rome is very plain: But who were the Seven Kings I confess I know not. Here is Work for a searching Head (the Mind that hath Wisdom.) But it is Mas-
unto the beast. 14. These shall make war with the Lamb, and the Lamb shall overcome them: for he is the Lord of Lords, and King of Kings, and they, that are with him, are called, and chosen, and faithful.

13. 14. The ten Idolatrous dependent Kingdoms, shall assist and support the Roman Pagan Empire with their Power and Strength: But Christ, who overcometh Rome, will overcome them also; for he is over all Kings and Kingdoms, and will help the Christian Army under Constantine. Or, say others, ten Kings shall give their Power to the Pope, and make War against Christ, that is, his Doctrine and Worship, and Christ and the Reformers shall overcome them. But these cannot be the same barbarous Kingdoms of Goth, &c. forementioned, but mostly others.

15. And he saith unto me, The waters which thou sawest, where the whore sitteth, are peoples, and multitudes, and nations, and tongues.

16. This Idolatrous Roman Power ruleth over many great and populous Nations of the Earth: Or, as other, the Papal Idolatrous Power is upheld by many Nations, even all the Empire.

17. And the ten horns, which thou sawest upon the beast, these shall hate the whore, and shall make her desolate, and naked, and shall eat her flesh, and burn her with fire.

18. The ten Nations, that before upheld the Roman Idolatry, shall turn against her, and be the Instruments of her destruction. The Britains, Gauls, Germans, and divers others, first fought with Constantine against the Pagans, and many more of them after turned Christians. Or, say others, the foresaid Goths, Vandals, &c. shall overthrow the remnant of Pagans in Rome. Or, say others, The Reformation shall be vrought by Princes that have forsoken Popery. Whether it speak only of destroying the Idolatrous Roman Power, or of destroying the Houses, or City it self, is controverted: The latter is not yet performed, nor the first as to the Papacy.

17. For God hath put in their hearts
Ch. 18. The Fall of

hearts to fulfil his will, and to a-
gree, and give their kingdom un-
to the beast, until the words of
God shall be fulfilled.

17. God hath so over-rulled them, and
all their Hearts, that eventually they shall
serve the Pagan Empire, say some, or the
Papal Power, say others, till the time
that God will pull them down, as he fore-
told.

Note; God can so order things, that all
his Judgments shall be executed by sinners,
without causing any one of their sins.

18. And the woman, which thou fawest, is that great city,
which reigneth over the kings of
the earth.

18. It is certainly Rome that then reign-
ed. It is certain then that Pagan, Imperial
Rome, was at that time the Beast, on
which the Whore fate: And certain that
Pagan Idolatry was it that then made
Rome the Whore: Rut whether (besides
this,) Christian Imperial Rome under Con-
sstantine, or under the Western Emperors
after, or Imperial Constantinople, or Rome
as the Popes Seat (before 606, or after on-
ly, or when) he the Whore. And whether
their very different sort of sin make them
two or three Whores, or the Concord, in
general, or similitude, make Pagan and
Papal Rome to be the same Whore, as
meant in this Text, thefe and other are the
doubts: But the certain part must not be
doubted of.

CHAP. XVIII.

1. And after these things, I
saw another angel come
down from heaven, having great
power, and the earth was lightened
with his glory.

1. The Fall of Rome is so great a work
that it was foreseen me, as by an Angel
of vondrous Glory. Thofe that tell us
that his Angel was an eminent Preacher,
and fuch other particularities of filling the
Earth with his Glory, go further than my
knowledge goeth.

2. And he cried mightily with a
strong voice, saying, Babylon
the great is fallen, is fallen, and
is become the habitation of devils,
and the hold of every foul Spirit,
and a cage of every unclean and
hateful bird.

2. The Language of those times was to
call deferted ruined places where no Man
dwelt, the places haunted by Devils, and
Goblins, and Satyrs and Owls and Ser-
pents. So that this signifies Desolation:
And the Jew then thinking that, as Baby-
lon that before captivated them is de-
stroyed, so the very City of Rome would
be, the Prophecy calleth the Destruction
of the Pagan Empire and Idolatry, with all in
retinue of Literate upholders, by the name
and titles of the Destruction of the City.
For it was not Babylon, as a City, nor qua
Roma, as this City, nor as a Rich and
Great City, But as the Great Idolatrous
Power which captivated and perfecuted the
Church, Therefore it is destroyed, not as
a Great or Rich City, but as Babylon: And
so it is desolate. Some think that this is
spoken of it, as when Rome was burnt in
part by Terilius, and the remnant of Pagan
destroyed by Arianus: That's more than
I can prove. But it being the Pagan Em-
pire, that captivated the Church, that
made it Babylon, I think Babylon fell when
that fell, though many Papas did sur-
vive.

3. For all nations have drunk
of the wine of the wrath of her
fornication, and the kings of the
earth have committed fornication
with her, and the merchants of
the earth are waxed rich, through
the abundance of her delicacies.

3. For their Power and Learning have
spired the Poyon, or Drunkenness, of their
Idolatry to all Nations, and the Kings of
the Earth have been encouraged in the
guilt; and her Wealth and Grandure, have
promoted all Pride and Sensuality in the
Nations, that have Traded with her, or
depended on her. Others say, It is the
file of pardons, indulgencies, and Cer-
monies and Church-preferences, that are
her Merchandise and Delicacies.

4. And I heard another voice
from heaven, saying, Come out
of her, my people, that ye be
not partakers of her sins, and that
ye receive not of her plagues.

9. For
4. 5. That is, Away from Idolatrous Pagan Rome, as Lot fled from Sodom; if you love your lives and Souls avoid all partaking in her sins: Eat not things offered to Idols, imitate them not, and comply not with them in any act of Idolatry, for other sin: For the time of her Destruction is at hand, and you may suffer with her if you sin with her, and fly not from her.

6. Reward her even as she rewarded you, and double unto her double, according to her works: in the cup which she hath filled, shall she be filled.

6. God, who is her Judge, will have on lay doubly more on her than she laid on you by Persecution: And this is no injustice; it being for sin against him, and not only as against you. This gives the Nation of God’s execution by Confiantsins: it alloweth no private Men to take Arms against Government, on pretext of removing the injuries of the Church.

7. How much she hath glorified herself, and lived deliciously, so much torment and sorrow give her: for the faith in her heart, I a queen, and am no widdow, and shall see no sorrow.

7. The sins of Sodom were Pride, fullness, idleness, and unmercifulness: And pagan Rome, grown proud and sensual by Power and Wealth, shall now suffer destruction, and dejection. Or, Rome Palm that faith, I am the successor of Peter, and the Mother of all Churches, shall be jected, and destroyed for her Pride and Inuery.

8. Therefore shall her plagues come in one day, death, and mourning, and famine; and she shall be utterly burnt with fire; for strong is the Lord God who judgeth her.

8. The Fall of the Pagan Empire shall be sudden and terrible, like the burning of a City. Or, say others, The remnant of Pagans shall be burnt out of Christian Rome by Alaricus, &c. Say others, Papal Rome shall be cast down: Say others, burnt. But it is not like if the City were burnt, but some would rebuild it, as we did London.

9. And the kings of the earth, who have committed fornication, and lived deliciously, with her, shall bewail her, and lament for her, when they shall see the smoke of her burning: 10. Standing afar off for the fear of her torment saying, Alas, alas, that great city Babylon, that mighty city! for in one hour is thy judgment come.

9. The Nations, that were her Companions in Idolatry, shall bewail her great and sudden fall. Obj. Papal Rome falls not suddenly. Ans. We know not what it may do yet: But it’s certain Pagan Rome did.

11. And the merchants of the earth shall weep and mourn over her, for no man buyeth her merchandise any more, 12. The merchandise of gold and silver, and precious stones, and of pearls, and fine linen, and purple, and silk, and scarlet, and all tyme wood, and all manner vessels of Ivory, and all manner vessels of most precious wood, and of brass, and iron, and marble, 13. And cinnamon, and odours, and ointments, and frankincense, and wine, and oil, and fine flowers; and wheat, and beast, and sheep, and horses, and chariots, slaves, and souls of men.

11, 12, 13. The Pride and Greatness of Rome,
Ch. 18. The Saints rejoice

Revelation.

out Babylon. Ch. 18.

and 4th.) Or, say others, The Fall of Rome Papal was thus represented: But others say, that Rome Papal shall be thus really burned and destroyed.

20. Rejoice over her, thou heaven, and ye holy apostles and prophets, for God hath avenged you on her.

20. It was this same Roman Idolatrous Power which murdered the Holy Apostle and many Prophets that are now in Heaven: And they shall rejoice in the vindicative justice of God: And so shall the Church on Earth: Not, as it is revenge on private Enemies, but as it is Gods public deliverance of his Church, and vindication of his Truth and Cause and Glory.

21. And a mighty angel took up astone, like a great millstone, and cast it into the sea, saying, Thus, with violence, shall that great city Babylon be thrown down, and shall be found no more at all.

21. The Pagan Empire was never again restored; for Julian did but begin to attempt it, and was killed, before he could so much as lay any foundation for it. Yet Rome was never more the fear of the Empire, much left of the Pagan Empire: For Constanofinopolis did burn, as it were, take up his Quarters there for a short time, and remove the fear to Constantinople: And his Successors in the West, had but the lesser part of the Empire, and were, sometimes at Rome, and sometimes at Milan, and sometimes at Ravenna, and after in Flanders and Germany.

22. And the voice of harpers and musicians, and of pipers, and trumpeters, shall be heard no more at all in thee: and no craftsman, of whatsoever craft be he, shall be found any more in thee: and the sound of a millstone shall be heard no more at all in thee.

23. And the light of a candle shall shine no more at all in thee: for the voice of the bridegroom, and of the bride, shall be heard no more at all in thee: for they merchants were the great men of the earth.

22, 23. Thus, as by the Emblem of a City totally razed and deforced, was the Fall of Pagan Rome represented to John: And that you may know, that it was not the burning and deforction of the material buildings that is meant, he now tells you that, by the Merchant, he meant the Nations that conferred to, and upheld, her Idolatry, and power.

24. And in her was found the blood of prophets, and of saints, and of all that were slain upon the earth.

24. God dealt thus severely with her, because she had not only been the Murderer of Apostles and Prophets, and the aversive Christians, at Rome and abroad, in all her Dominions, in upholding her Idolatry, but (as Jerusalem) had by imitating former Persecutors, justified them, and to sufferer for all. The [considering of] Isai. 11.23. 

25. Will help to expound all this.

26. Other says, It is Papal Rome, and how the Blood of Apostles and Prophets was found in her, they tell us from Matt. 23.5. And how the Blood of Saints will be found in her, is easily proved.

C. H. P. XIX.

And after these things I heard a great voice of much people in heaven, saying, Alleluia, salvation, and glory, and honour, and power unto the Lord our God:

1. The Saints in Heaven, and the Chri-

2. For true and righteous are his judgments, for he hath judg-

3. And again they said, Alleluia:

4. And the four and twenty elders, and the four beasts fell down, and worshipped God that sat on the throne, saying, Amen, Alleluia.

4. And the converting Praises of the Church, especially of Christian Jews, was represented to me under the of-mentioned similitude of the Temple-Worship, where the Twelve Tribes were doubly represented (by twelve Oxen, and twelve Lions) and four Cherubins were about the Mercy- Seat. Jews, and Gentile Christians, praise God for the Fall of Babylon.

5. And a voice came out of the throne, saying, Praise our God, all ye his servants, and ye that fear him, both small and great.

5. And God himself, and his Ministers, called to all his Churches to join in these his Praises.

6. And I heard as it were, the voice of a great multitude, and as the voice of many waters, and as the voice of mighty thunderings, saying, Alleluia: for the Lord God omnipotent reigneth.

7. Let us be glad and rejoice, and give honour to him: for the marriage of the Lamb is come, and his wife hath made her self ready.

8. And to her was granted, that she should be arrayed in fine linnen, clean and white: for the fine linnen is the righteousness of Saints.

6, 7, 8. And the raising of the Catholic Church in numbers, and extent, and power, to the visible Glory of Christ, was represented to me by the Voice as of a great multitude, &c. saying, Praise the Lord, for his Kingdom is coming in Power, and his Church shall be promoted by the Rulers of the Earth, and the Kingdoms of the World shall be visibly the Kingdoms of the Lord, and of his Christ; And Christ...
Ch. 19. The Marriage of

and his Church will appear to the World in Honour and Joy, as Marriages use to be celebrated. And the Catholick Church shall be clothed with the notes of Honour and Purity, or Righteousness, (for shall publickly worship him in his instituted Ordi-

nances.)

9. And he faith unto me, Write, Blessed are they which are called unto the marriage-supper of the Lamb, And he faith unto me, These are the true sayings of God.

9. Happy are they that shall see the Fall of Babylon, and the Deliverance and Advancement of the Christian Church, and shall have their place and part in that publick Reign of Christ, by his Christian Magistrates and Pastors, and in the publick praises of the flourishing Christ (much more they that shall see his Reign in the Kingdom of Glory.)

10. And I fell at his feet to worship him: and he said unto me, See thou do it not: I am thy fellow-servant, and of thy brethren, that have the testimony of Jesus, to worship God: for the testimony of Jesus is the spirit of prophecy.

10. I thought that I owed so great honour to such a Messenger of so glad Tymings, that I fell at his feet to worship him, (not with Divine Worship, as God, but as his Angel,) but he forbade me, and bid me worship God only, and not Angels, by such prostration: (For though we may, by prostration, do worship to a Prince or Parent, yet to do it to Angels that are invisible, will be too like the Heathen sort of Worship, and encourage those that offer Angels, unwarrantable Worship,) I am a Servant of Christ, and a fellow-servant to thee and thy Brethren the Prophets; and your Office of publishing the Gospel, and mine in this Prophecy, are much like: The Spirit of Prophecy, by which you are Christ's Messengers and Witnesses, is that Testimony of Jesus, which you and I, as fellow-servants, are in our several capacities employed.

11. And I saw heaven opened, and behold, a white horse, and he that sat upon him was called

faithful and true, and in righteousness he doth judge and make war.

11. Having spoken in general of the Fall of Babylon, he now sheweth how Christ in its overthrow will do Execution on those his Enemies, till he have rooted them out; and how the Beast will struggle before he be quite destroyed, and that not in Rome only.

12. His eyes were as a flame of fire, and on his head were many crowns, and he had a name written, that no man knew but he himself. 13. And he was clothed with a vesture dipt in blood, and his Name is called, The word of God.

12, 13. His flaming Eyes signify his Glory and Omnipotence; and his many Crowns, the many Kingdoms which he shall subdue and reign over. What is his unknown Name, is, we must not enquire. His bloody Vesture signifieth his Victory over his Enemies, purchased with his Churches deliverance by his own Blood: And his known Name is, The Word of God.

14. And the armies, which were in heaven followed him upon white horses clothed in fine linen, white and clean.

14. And the Executioners of his Justice on Babylon, &c. were represented to me by an Army of heavenly ones following him on white Horses, and clothed white, &c.

15. And out of his mouth went a sharp sword, that with which he shall smite the nations: and he shall rule them with a rod of iron: and he treadeth the winepress of the fierceness and wrath of Almighty God.

15. The word of his Mouth is, as a fiery Sword, to overcome the Heathen World and all his Enemies, by converting his Churches, and denouncing his Judgments on uncurable, which he will execute, and presently by the Sword of his Wrath by whom he will crush the Rebels, and them he will execute God's Vindictive Office.

16. 18.
16. And he hath, on his vesture, and on his thigh, a name written, KING OF KINGS, AND LORD OF LORDS.

17. And I saw an angel standing in the sun, and he cried with a loud voice, saying to all the fowls that fly in the midst of heaven, come and gather together unto the supper of the great God: 18. That ye may eat the flesh of kings, and the flesh of captains, and the flesh of mighty men, and the flesh of horses, and of them that sit on them, and the flesh of all men, both free and bond, both small and great.

19. And I saw the beast, and the Kings of the earth, and their armies, gathered together to make war against him that sat on the horse, and against his army. And the beast was taken, and with him the false prophet, that wrought miracles before him, with which he deceived them that had received the mark of the beast, and them that worshipped his image. These both were cast alive into a lake of fire burning with brimstone.

20. The Pagan Emperors were converted, and with them the Literate Seducers. (Senators, Orators, Poets, Philosophers, Augurs, Aruspices, Priests, who by such Poetical Fable is, as Ovid's Metamorphoses, and by celebrated Predications, Oracles and such pretended Miracles as Eunapius boasteth of by many of their Philosophers, but especially by the power of their abused Learning, called by Paul the Wisdom of the World, which is foolishness with God, and Science falsely so called) who deceived the Princes and People into a high Opinion of their Idols, and a contempt of Christianity, as foolishness: The Imperial Power, and the Learned Seducers, were rooted out, and, as Sodom, cast into utter destruction, and judged to damnation.

Others say, that the Beast here is the Pope, and the false Prophet, with him, is himself also, he being the Beast as Civil Ruler, and the Prophet as Ecclesiastical: But the Text plainly maketh them two.

Others say, it is the Pope and his Clergy, Jesuits, Fryars, &c.

21. And the remnant were slain with the sword of him, that sat upon the horse, which proceeded out of his mouth: and all the fowls were filled with their flesh.

21. The memory of their conquered Emperors and Philosophers, Senators, Poets, &c. is continued in History (as Pilate's in the Creed) to their perpetual shame, and so they are said to be cast alive into the Lake: But the multitudes of Souldiers and People, that fought for them, were slain and cast into Oblivion; or some converted by the Word, and some confounded. Or, as others, the Papists are some converted, and others for obstinacy condemned.

C H A P. XX.

1. And I saw an Angel come down from heaven, having the key of the bottomless pit, and a great chain in his hand: 2. And he laid hold on the dragon, that old serpent, which is the Devil and Satan, and bound him a thousand years. 3. And cast him into the bottomless pit, and shut him up, and set a seal upon him, that he should deceive the nations.
nations no more, till the thousand years should be fulfilled: and after that, he must be loosed a little season.

1, 2, 3. And I saw the souls of the servants of God, which were slain for the Word of God, and for the testimony which they held: and they had the rest of the dead, which lived not again, from the time of the first resurrection. But their souls were gathered unto God, and given to Jesus Christ.

Note 1: There shall be no more war, neither sorrow, nor crying, neither shall there be any more meat upon the ground, for the former things are passed away.

Note 2: The first resurrection shall be at the end of the world, when Christ shall appear in his glory, and shall deliver his saints, who shall reign with him a thousand years, and shall be set at the right hand of power, and shall reign a thousand years, and shall receive glory and honor and power, and the kingdom shall be given to the Lord, and his Christ, to sit on the throne of his kingdom for ever and ever.

Note 3: The first resurrection shall be at the end of the world, when Christ shall appear in his glory, and shall deliver his saints, who shall reign with him a thousand years, and shall be set at the right hand of power, and shall reign a thousand years, and shall receive glory and honor and power, and the kingdom shall be given to the Lord, and his Christ, to sit on the throne of his kingdom for ever and ever.

Note 4: The first resurrection shall be at the end of the world, when Christ shall appear in his glory, and shall deliver his saints, who shall reign with him a thousand years, and shall be set at the right hand of power, and shall reign a thousand years, and shall receive glory and honor and power, and the kingdom shall be given to the Lord, and his Christ, to sit on the throne of his kingdom for ever and ever.

Note 5: The first resurrection shall be at the end of the world, when Christ shall appear in his glory, and shall deliver his saints, who shall reign with him a thousand years, and shall be set at the right hand of power, and shall reign a thousand years, and shall receive glory and honor and power, and the kingdom shall be given to the Lord, and his Christ, to sit on the throne of his kingdom for ever and ever.

Note 6: The first resurrection shall be at the end of the world, when Christ shall appear in his glory, and shall deliver his saints, who shall reign with him a thousand years, and shall be set at the right hand of power, and shall reign a thousand years, and shall receive glory and honor and power, and the kingdom shall be given to the Lord, and his Christ, to sit on the throne of his kingdom for ever and ever.
And when the thousand years are expired, Satan shall be loosed out of his prison, and shall go out to deceive the nations, which are in the four quarters of the earth, Gog and Magog, to gather them together to battle: the number of whom is as sand of the sea.

There are several Explications of this; some say, that by the Thousand years, is meant precisely that time, which shall out either from Constantinian’s Edict 611. or the Turks subduing Greece, or from Armenia’s lacking Rome, till the Turks took Constantinople; and that the Fall of the latter Churches, under the Infidel Pow’rs, was the letting loose of Satan; Others say, that a thousand years signifies only a long undetermined time, and that it was the Churches prosperity, till the Papacy imposed all, and tyrannized. Others say, that a thousand years before Antichrist could come: Others, that it will be a thousand years after the Fall of the Papacy, which Religion shall flourish under holy Princes and Pates: Others, that after the Fall of the Papal Antichrist, Christ will visibly return, and set up a holy Kingdom, and chief Seat shall be at Jerusalem.

Some say, that it will be a Resurrection Bodies, some only Political. Some say, as the Thousand years began at Christ’s Birth, or at the Apostles Preaching: Others, the destruction of Jerusalem, and ended about Hildersham’s time. Some, (as before) at Constantinian’s Empire, and ended at 8th 8, that killed the Albignies, &c., that it began at 1560. He that woven which of these is the right, let tell it, for I do not. By Gig and Maj, many understand the Turk; Others, forts of Christ’s Enemies: Whoever be, a War they will attempt against Church, and will be overthrown.

And they went up on the breadth of the earth, and compass’d the camp of the saints a’round, and the beloved city: and came down from God out of heaven, and devoured them.

This Text seemeth the hardest of all: Those that say, the holy City is Constantinople, some of them are put to that Gig and Magg’s destruction, as by fire is yet to come: But the Text seemeth to speak of it, as done before they could take the City. Others say, it was Tamerlane, (an infidel, and therefore, from God, against his own inclination;) that raised Babur’s Siege, and carried him about in a Cage of Iron in Icon, till he willyfully daubed out his own Brains; and fo Andronicus was delivered. Others refer it to Baldwin’s, and other Christians taking Constantinople, against the Turk’s Power: But because the Turk after took it, these seem not to agree with the Text. Others think it is a War yet to come, say some, at Jerusalem, which shall by Christ be made the Holy City, or his Chief Royal Seat; and there will be his Thousand years Reign on Earth. Others take the Holy City to mean the Reformed Churches, which shall again be assaulted by all sorts of Enemies, before the day of Judgment. And some take the Camp of the Saints, and the Beloved City, to be the seven Asian Churches to whom John wrote. Whatever it be, if it be part, I understand not what, or when it was; if it be to come, time must expound it. In general it is sure, that Enemies will oft assault the Church, and God will defend it.

And the devil, that deceived them, was cast into the lake of fire and brimstone, where the beast and the false prophet, are, and shall be tormented day and night, for ever and ever.

When Christ hath delivered his Church from Pagan Cruddy, the same Dragon, or Devil, will seek new Instruments to assault it, from age to age, and most notably at the last: But he shall be conquered after all, and be cast out into Torment, as the Pagan Powers and Deceivers were.

And I saw a great white throne, and him that sat on it, from whose face the earth and the heaven fled away, and there was found no place for them.

Some think that this speaketh not of the day of Judgment, but of the coming of the Jews: And some think the meaning is, that when Christ sets up the Thousand years refined Church, (by a Resurrection, and his visible presence, say some;) or by a holy Government and People, and Deliverance from Enemies, say others.)
both the Power of Infidels, (Turks and Heathens,) which are meant by the Earth, and the Corrupted Church, (both Papal and Greek; &c. meant by Heaven) shall all vanish, that the Holy City may take place. But most say, it describeth the day of judgment.

12. And I saw the dead, small and great, stand before God, and the books were opened: and another book was opened, which is the book of life: and the dead were judged out of those things, which were written in the books, according to their works.

13. Then they that were written in the book of life were judged to life everlasting: and those not written were judged to death. And another book was opened, and the book of life was opened; and the dead were judged out of those things which were written in the books, according to their works.

14. And death and hell were cast into the lake of fire: this is the second death. And whosoever was not found written in the book of life was cast into the lake of fire.

Mr. Potters, and many others, expound all this confusedly, (and the two following Chapters) of Christ’s judging, rewarding, and punishing men in this Life: But others as confusely, of the Life to come. Though this make the Text difficult, it maketh not great Doctrinal controversies, both being commonly believed.

C H A P. X X I.

1. And I saw a new heaven and a new earth: for the first heaven, and the first earth, were passed away, and there was no more sea.

2. And I John saw the holy city, new Jerusalem, coming down out of heaven from God, prepared as a bride adorned for her husband. And I heard a great voice out of heaven, saying, Behold, the tabernacle of God is with men, and he will dwell with them, and they shall be his people, and God himself shall be with them, and be their God. And God shall wipe away all tears from their eyes; and there shall be no more death, neither sorrow, nor crying, neither shall there be any more pain: for the former things are passed away.

3. And he that was dead came to life, and the graves were opened; and many bodies of the saints which slept arose, and came to life. And they went up on white horses: and the power and the glory of Christ was given unto them. And they were arrayed in white robes, and they were told that they should rest yet for a little season, until their fellow servants also should be clothed, even as they were. Then came unto me one of them, and said unto me, We are the servants of God and of Christ, and will worship God and his Christ: and there is no lie in our mouth, for we are the servants of God.

4. And I John saw another angel come down from heaven, having the key of the bottomless pit and a great chain in his hand. And he laid hold on the dragon, that old serpent, which is the Devil, and Satan, and bound him a thousand years. And he cast him into the bottomless pit, and shut him up, and set a seal upon him, that he should deceive the nations no more, till the thousand years were fulfilled: and after that he must be loosed a little season.

5. And I saw thrones, and they sat upon them, and judgment was given unto them. And I saw the souls of them that were beheaded for the witness of Jesus, and for the word of God, and which had not worshipped the beast, neither his image, nor had received his mark upon their foreheads, or in their hands; and they lived and reigned with Christ a thousand years. But the rest of the dead lived not again until the thousand years were fulfilled. This is the first resurrection. Blessed and holy is he that has part in the first resurrection: let him hear what the Spirit saith unto the churches.

6. And I heard a loud voice saying in heaven, Now is come salvation, and strength, and the kingdom of our Lord, and of his Christ: for he that is mighty hath done great things; and holy is his name. And behold, he cometh with clouds; and every eye shall see him, and they also which pierced him; and all kindreds of the earth shall wail because of him. Yes, verily, I say unto you, There is come salvation, and strength, and the kingdom of our Lord, and of his Christ: for he that is mighty hath done great things; and holy is his name. And behold, he cometh with clouds; and every eye shall see him, and they also which pierced him; and all kindreds of the earth shall wail because of him.
Chapter 21: The Heavenly Jerusalem

Revelation: Chapter 21

It is true that at Constantine's deliverance, the Church was set as a New World. And I am in hope yet, that there may be such a Reformation and advancement of Piety and Unity before the last day, as may be called a New World, in a fuller sense: But not up to this description of the New Jerusalem.

And he said unto me, It is done: I am Alpha and Omega, the beginning and the end, I will give unto him, that is a thirst, of the fountain of the water of life freely.

Say some [I am he, that hath thus delivered the Church from Idolaters and Persecutters; and now all, that will, shall have the blesshed Priviledges of the Church.] Rather [I have prepared the Church for the state of Bleffedness; and I, that am the principal efficient and ultimate end of all, will give life everlasting, in the new Jerusalem, to every believing thrifty Soul.]

He that overcometh shall inherit all things; and I will be his God, and he shall be my Son.

He that overcometh Temptation to the end, shall, as my Son, inherit full felicity in me, who will be his God.

But the fearful, and unbelieving, and the abominable, and murderers, and whoremongers, and forcerers, and idolaters, and all liars, shall have their part in the lake, which burneth with fire and brimstone: which is the second death.

But those that, being cowardly, for-fake me for fear of suffering, and trust not me, and those that live indkiness and cruelty, and unrighteousness and Idolatry, and all false deceivers, shall be damned.

And there came unto me one of the seven angels, which had the seven vials full of the seven last plagues, and talked with me, saying, Come hither, I will shew thee the bride, the Lambs wife.

By the Bride is meant the new Jerusalem, that is, say some, the delivered Church in Constantine's time and after: Say others, the reformed Church at the
10. And he carried me away in the spirit to a great and high mountain, and shewed me that great City the Holy Jerusalem, descending out of Heaven from God.

11. Say some, the Church, as here advanced to purity and liberty by the Heavenly power: Rather the Souls, that were with Christ, coming with him to meet those that shall be then alive and changed, advanced to that perfection, in which they shall for ever be glorified with the Lord. Though some glimpse of this may be in happy reformation, concord and deliverance here before.

11. Having the glory of God: and her light was like unto a stone most precious, even like a jasper stone, clear as crystal:

12. And had a wall great and high, and had twelve gates, and at the gates twelve angels, and names written thereon, which are the names of the twelve tribes of the children of Israel.

12. John being a Jew, and the Jews the first Christians, who had commonly an expectation of Christ's more special relation to them than to others, and they being the first Specimen of the Catholick Church, the Revelation of the new Jerusalem (and perhaps also of some antecedent happy state) is represented as shaped to the Jews' expectations; and as typified by the old Jerusalem. And its wall is its strength and safety, and separation from others. Its gates are for entrance, and the Guardian Angels numbered according to the Twelve Tribes; as were the Apostles, who yet founded all the Churches.

13. On the east three gates, at the north three gates, on the south three gates, and on the west three gates.

13. Note. Not that this must be thought the shape of it, but that its glory was represented by such a shape.

14. And the wall of the city had twelve foundations, and in them the names of the twelve Apostles of the Lamb.

14. As the Church on Earth is founded by the Doctrine and Witness of the Twelve Apostles, so is the new Jerusalem described as related to them, it being but the Church militant perfected and made triumphant.

15. And he that talked with me had a golden reed to measure the city, and the gates thereof, and the wall thereof. And the city lieth four-square, and the length is as large as the breadth: and he measured the city with the reed, twelve thousand furlongs: the length, and the breadth, and the height of it are equal.

15. By this representation, (like that in Ezekiel) the summit, and perfection, and greatness of the new Jerusalem was signified.

16. And he measured the wall thereof, an hundred and forty and four cubits, according to the measure of a man, that is, of the angel.

17. The Angel appearing as a Man, his measure is taken as a common human measure.

18. And the building of the wall of it was of jasper, and the city was pure gold, like unto clear glass. And the foundations of the wall of the city were garnished with all manner of precious stones. The first foundation was jasper, the second sapphire, the third chalcedony, the fourth emerald. The fifth sardonyx, the
the sixth fadus, the seventh chrysolite, the eighth beryl, the
ninth a topaz, the tenth a chrysoprasus, the eleventh a jacinth,
the twelfth an amethyst.

18, 19, 20. That the New Jerusalem is
represented by these precious stones, as
firm, precious, lucid and glorious, and by
the number of twelve, as suited to the
Twelve Apostles, and so in them to the
Twelve Tribes of Israel, as typical of the
New Jerusalem; is all that I understand of
these: what each precious stone distinctly
signified, you may read in them that
know, (or take on them to know) more.

21. And the twelve gates were
twelve pearls, every several gate
was of one pearl, and the street
of the city was pure gold, as
were transparent glass.

22. If there shall be any state, on this
side Eternity, which answereth this Glori-
ous representation, how much more will
the perfect Glorious Triumphant Church
answer it?

22. And I saw no temple there-
in: for the Lord God Almighty,
and the Lamb, are the temple of
it.

23. Some exprop this of liberty to
serve God in every place, as well as in
Temples (who yet would destroy them as
Conventicles, that do so.) But the Text
seemeth to mean, that this New Jerusalem
is the perfect state, which is above our in-
tituted lower means, God will be our
All.

24. And the city had no need
of the sun, neither of the moon,
to shine in it: for the glory of
God did lighten it, and the Lamb
is the light thereof.

25. Prophetical Hyperboles and Allego-
es, may put as high terms as these for a
state of pure reformation, and Church
prosperity: But seeing that it must be a
force, and not an explication, which for-
traineth it, without proof, we must be-
vee that it hath a higher accomplishment.

24. And the nations of them,
which are saved, shall walk in the
light of it: and the kings of the
earth do bring their glory and ho-
our into it.

24. And those, that shall be converted
out of all Nations, of the Gentiles, shall,
as well as Abraham, and the Christian,
and lay up and find a treasure with
Christ in the New Jerusalem.

Note: They that expound this of the
Thousand years Reign of raised Martyrs at
Jerusalem, and they that expound it of a
peculiar Jewish Church there, after the
Jewish Conversion, say, that the Nations
round about shall not have the same Con-
firmation and Glory, as the New Jerusa-
lem, but be liable to Trials still. Dr. Hammond
who expounds it of the Churches prosperi-
ety after Constantine's Success, gives these
Reasons. 1. Because the New Jerusalem
defended from Heaven. Actio 1. So
it may to Judgment, and yet return to Hea-
nen. 2. Or rather, the New Heaven and
Earth shall be open as one. An Immortal
Glory, in the New Earth after the Resur-
rection, may be the New Jerusalem. 2. He
argueth from Gal.4.33, as if the Jerusalem
above were only the Church Militant: But
that we deny.

25. And the gates of it shall
not be shut at all by day: for there
shall be no night there. 25. And
they shall bring the glory and ho-
nor of the nations into it.

26. There shall be no danger of the
entrance of Enemies or Traitors: But all
Worldly glory and blessings by Saints re-
ferred to this end, shall there be found in
the transcendental perfect state.

27. And there shall be no wife
enter into it any thing that defili-
eth, neither whatsoever worketh
abomination, or makeath a lie; but
they which are written in the
Lamb's book of life.

27. Sure this proveth that it is some-
vvhat better than the Thousand years after
Constantine: that is here meant; for alas,
how much abomination and deceit en-
tred in that time! what hatred, false
acculations, worldliness, pride, cruelty
and contention? 2. Note: None but
Saints cleansed from gross sin, will be
found written in the Lamb's Book of Life.
It is a vile slander on the Orthodox Do-
rine of Election, that vve say, the Elect
may be saved have wickedly ever they
live: when we say, that it is one Degree
of God that eleeth men to be holy, obedi-
ent, persevering, and be saved.

CHAP.
Ch. 22 'The New Revelation: Jerusalem. Ch. 22:

5. And there shall be no night there, and they need no candle, neither light of the sun; for the Lord God giveth them light, and they shall reign for ever and ever.

5. There shall be no want of Knowledge, nor need of Ministers, Teaching, Scripture, or such means. For God will be to them above, and instead of these; and they shall reign for ever. And what more can be hoped for by man? Why should forced Expulsions darken this?

6. And he said unto me, These sayings are faithful and true. And the Lord God of the holy prophets sent his angel to shew unto his servants, the things which must shortly be done.

6. As Christ, Matt. 24, told them of such Devastations as that Generation should see, and yet adjourn the Signs of the End of the World; and so doth he, by this Revelation, shew John the fall of Pagam Babylon and the Churches Deliverance, and yet shortly annex a thousand years after, and then the end of the World: All was to be shortly, but not shortly equally with the first parts. But it is not to be said, that he almost past by the things that were shortly to be done, and said almost all of the Papal Rome. The certainty of the Revelation is the Hope and Joy of firm Believers.

7. Behold, I come quickly: blessed is he that keepeth the sayings of the prophecy of this book.

7. Think not that I delay my coming, as slack of performing my Promise: Some of this will be quickly done, and the rest is long. To understand and believe this Prophecy will be comfortable: But to keep the Precepts of it, avoid the Sins threatened, believe the Promise of my Victories and Coming, and wait in Patience, is needful to all.

8. And I John saw these things, and heard them. And when I had heard and seen, I fell down to worship before the feet of the angel, which shewed me these things.

8. Note: All faulty Worship of Angels...
Ch. 22. The Coming

Revelation. of Christ, &c. Ch. 22.

Is not Idolatry, nor maketh a Church idolatrous: It was not Divine Worship which John gave the Angel: If really he wrote most of this Book against Popish Idolatry, as many think, he would never be twice guilty of worse than their praying to Angels and Saints themselves, when he condemned: For they worship them not, as Gods, though amis. John thought Veneration was the Angel's due.

9. Then saith he unto me, See thou do it not: for I am thy fellow-servant, and of thy brethren the prophets, and of them which keep the sayings of this book: worship God.

9. See before cap. 19. 10. God is jealous of any thing too like Idolatry. Note; Are Angels our Fellow-servants? Love them then, and be thankful to God for their Love and Help; and rejoice in this Privilege, and think it not unlikely that you should live with them for ever. O what a People should we be then in Holiness!

10. And he saith unto me, Seal not the sayings of the prophecy of this book: for the time is at hand.

10. The most of it is to be performed ere long, in the ruin of the Pagan persecuting Empire.

11. He that is unjust, let him be unjust still: and he which is filthy, let him be filthy still; and he that is righteous, let him be righteous still: and he that is holy, let him be holy still. 12. And behold, I come quickly, and my reward is with me, to give every man according as his work shall be.

11, 12. I come quickly to fulfil and execute this Prophecy; and then I will take and judge Men, as I find them; there shall be no more place for Preparation; as it was with the wise and foolish Virgins, Matt. 25. when the midnight Cry was, The Bridegroom cometh, as I find you, I will use you.

13. I am Alpha and Omega, the beginning and the ending, the first and the last.

13. I am God eternal, the First Cause, and Ultimate End of all things, able to fulfill my Will and Word.

14. Blessed are they that do his commandments, that they may have right to the tree of life, and may enter in through the gates into the city.

14. Blessed are they that do what Christ requireth to Salvation in his Law of Grace, (or purifie their Heart and Life) that they may, by his Free Gift, have right to enter into the New Jerusalem, and live with Christ for ever.

15. For without are dogs, and forcers, and whoremongers, and murderers, and idolaters, and whatsoever lovethe and maketh a lie.

15. For all filthy, cruel, persecuting, Idolatrous Persons, and Liars, and deceitful Teachers, and Hypocrites, (though called Christians,) are out of the Holy City, as Dogs are turned out of the House.

16. I Jesus have sent mine angel to testify unto you these things in the churches. I am the root and the off-spring of David, and the bright and morning Star.

16. I Jesus have sent my Angel to tell these things to John, that he may tell them to the Churches of Asia, and by them to others (the matter much concerning those Churches then alive.) Take theses as my own Words, who am the Messiah prophesied of, as the Root and Son of David, and am the Light of the World, sent to teach Men the Way of Life.

17. And the Spirit and the Bride say, come. And let him that heareth say, come. And let him that is athirst, come. And whatsoever will, let him take the water of life freely.

17. And seeing Church-deliverance now, and the Glory of the New Jerusalem at last, are the effects of my coming, as my Spirit teacheth Men to desire my coming, and my Church and Chosen do desire it; so let all desire it that would partake of that Felicity. For all shall have it by my Free Gift, who do but believingly desire it. For I will not out none but final obstinate Refusers.

18. For
18. For I testify unto every man that heareth the words of the prophecy of this book, If any man shall add unto these things, God shall add unto him the plagues that are written in this book: 19. And if any man shall take away from the words of the book of this prophecy, God shall take away his part out of the book of life, and out of the holy city, and from the things which are written in this book.

18, 19. If any wilfully corrupt this Prophecy, in Words or Sense, to draw Men from believing it, to the Belief of their own corrupt Additions, God will add to them his Plagues, and deprive them of any part of the Blessings here foretold, and shut them out of this Holy City of God.

Note: It's dangerous to make bold, Cabalistical, Fanatick Exploitations of this Book, and to call our own Concess the Sense of the Revelation: And it's dangerous groundlessly to expect more Prophecies of God's Usage of his Church; or to add to any of his Word, or diminish from it, and further any of our Favours on Christ, and on his Spirit, which hath benemufed the Book, which must be the Universal Churches Rule of Life.

20. He which testifieth these things, faith, Surely I come quickly. Amen. Even so, Come Lord Jesus.

21. The grace of our Lord Jesus Christ be with you all. Amen.

21. I conclude all with this best Request to God for you, and Benedicition to you, that the Grace of our Lord Jesus, which is our Preparation for Glory, and our Earnest, Pledge, and Foretaste of it, may be with you, to prepare you, and Seal you up, as the certain Heirs of the Blessed State, and save you from all Sin, and Temptation, and Enemies that would deprive you of it. Amen.
An Advertisement.

ADVERTISER,

Give you notice, (which I desire you not to forget in the reading of this Parable,) that it is but some General Notes, and not a proper Exposition of the Relations, which I offer you. And that I heretofore to you, that very much of understand not: And if this offend any, that is, I should have better studied, 1. That you suffer fools gladly, seeing your silv is not wise. 2. That I am Divisius Alexandrinus, and most of the Ancient Fathers, even Augustine professed, that they understood it not: Yes, incomparable Calvin professed not the Thousandth Part of it; And his Partner Buse would give us it, next to none: And both refused to write a Comment on it. 3. I honour you more than I, and contradicted them nor: I had rather say too little (where you have said enough) than say more than I know. 4. It is not through me that I am ignorant: Women and Boys think they know herein what I do not, but I confess that Despair is much of the Cause. Forty years ago, when I was but young, I studied it (I doubt too soon,) and read Bright-riser, Pareus, and after that Made, Potter, and many more, besides such as Downhamus de Antichristi, Broughton, and other such, besides the An: of Belterrmin, etc. I met with many Divines and Laymen, who had chosen it the chief Study of their Lives; and I found so great Diversity of Opinions, five confident going four ways, and so little Proof of what they propounded, that I despaired of being so much wiser than they, as to come to satisfaction, by laying by more necessary Studies, and make this be the business of the rest of my life, yet I durst not do. Afterwards I convert with my Fellow-Labourer, B. Stephens, who hath written of it, and was much upon it in his Discourse, but not be drawn to a deep Study of it: And when since I read Mr. Durham, etc. and Groton, and Dr. Hammond, and many Annotators, I confess Despair, not needful Business, made me do it but superficially: And when I had for my written the rest of this Paraphrase on the New Testament, I proposed to have hing of any more of the Revelations, than of the three first Chapters, professing understood it not. But after, being both to omis wholly any part of the New Testament, and thinking that the renewed Study of that, which speaks so much of the Jesus, might be suitable to a pained Dying Man, I thought of it more search than I had done heretofore, but have not now either the strength of Wit, or of Time, that are necessary to so hard a Work, and therefore presume not to others, but refer the Readers to them that have more thoroughly studied and explain, than I can do: But yet I thought that those Generals, which I understood, useful to unlearned Readers, though they made them no wiser than I am my hile thos, that are above me, have enough higher to read.

ye offended that I name so many Men’s Opinions, I answer them, 1. Had I which of them was right, I would have mentioned that only: But when I know (and their Difference tells us that they know it not themselves,) how can I hope so partial as to name one, and pass by all the rest? And how should I know that one must be? When Lira had given us the Exposition of much of it, he tells us, that these are other Men’s Expositions, but he thinketh them improved if ever he come to understand it himself, he will tell us the true Meaning; if he had not failed, I should have thought that Lira deliraffe, though the Saying Lira non Liraffe, non mundus deliraffe, My Friend, Mr. Matth. Piti, in his
An Advertisement.

his Synopsis, hath raised greater Diversity of Opinions than I have done; where the Arguments for them may be partly seen, which my short Notes must not take in.

The Points which are too hard for me, are these especially.

I. Whether the Dragon, Beast, or False Prophet, or Whore, be the Special Antichrist?
   And whether the Cae of Antichrist be here much, or at all, medled with?

II. Who is the first Beast? Chap. 13.

III. Who is the second Beast?

IV. What is the Image of the Beast?

V. What is his Mark received, and what his Name, and what is the number of it received?

VI. What is the Whore?

VII. Who are the two Witenegels? and where, and when killed?

VIII. What is the binding of the Dragon, and the Thousand Years Reign, and Re- 
   surrection, and where?

IX. What, and when, and where, is the Army against the Holy City, and the Wars of Armageddon?

X. What, and where, and where, is the New Jerusalem?

I. As to the first, I long took it for granted, that Antichrist is here spoken of, even the same mentioned by John in his Epistle, and by Paul, 2 Thes. 2. 2. But, to my Admi-
   ration, when I search, I could find neither the Name of Antichrist, nor an ascertaining 
   Description of him; so that I began no think better of the most Learned Judicious 
   Rem. Zenett, who took Mahomet to be the Antichrist, though the Popes Crimes might 
   allow us to take him for one of those other Antichrists, of whom John faith there were 
   many. And if any find him here characterized, as called the Beast, the false Prophet, and 
   the Whore, I will caveat his Pardon, for my choosing to take up with the Scripture 
   Names. I am not wiser than the Revealer of these things, in naming such as he here 
   speaketh of, why are not the Names here given us sufficient? I will explain the 
   word [Antichrist] where I find it; and the words, [Beast, false Prophet, Whore, &c.] 
   where I find them. I dread Fiction and Addition. Of the Description I shall speak 
   after.

II. Who is the first Beast, is of great Importance, of which I find many Opinions,
   those of the Fathers, and the Papists, I pass by: These now among us stand chiefly in 
   competition.
   1. Those that say, it is the Roman Empire, as containing both the Papal 
      and the Papal State: 2. Those that say, it is the Papal Civil Power only, as upheld by 
      Papal Princes, the Ten Kings: 3. Those that say, it is only the Papacy, or Antichrist, 
      who is the first Beast, as in Civil Power, and the second, in Ecclesiastical. 4. Those 
      that say, it is only the Pagan Empire. (Others I pass by that say, 5. It is the Great 
      Eastern Empire; 6. Or the Turkish Empire; 7. Or a future unknown Antichrist; 8. Or 
      the Devil.)

1. Mr. Mede, faith, the first is the common Opinion, but not true, he is for the 
   second; and Mr. Durham, and many of late, for the third, and all of them against the 
   4th. I shall not further mention their Reasons against each other, but only those that 
   were brought for the Papacy, either alone, or with its Supports, and those that are brought 
   against the 4th Opinion, (which is for the Pagan Empire.)

I. They say that the first Beast must needs be the Papacy (or its Supports.) 1. Be-
   cause John saith the rising of it, so that it was then to come: But Pagan Rome was before 
   2. Because he succeth the Dragon in his Seat. 3. It is the Pope that owneth the 
   Names of Blasphemy. 4. He is Adored. 5. He only healeth the Wounded Head.
   6. He is contemporary with the Ten Kings with Crowned Horns. 7. He is contem-
   porary with Babylon, which is Pagan Rome. 8. All the Texts agree to Pagan Rome. 9. He 
   is Antichrist, who is to sit in the Temple of God. 10. That which hindered, was to be 
   removed before his Revelation, which was the Empire as Pagan.

II. And they say, it cannot be the Pagan Empire. 1. Because that was rising 
   before. 2. Because it was not that Power, which was the sixth Head, but the seventh 
   and eighth, and ascended out of the bottomless Pit, with whom the Ten Kings were 
   receive Kingdoms. 3. Because the Pagan Empire was not contemporary with Babylon.
   4. This Beast was to continue 1260 Years, whereas the Pagan Empire continued 10 
   360. 5. It had not the ten crowned Horns. 6. The Roman Pagan Empire was not
An Advertisement.

fully obeyed, being God, but so is not the Beast. 7. The things said Chap. 19. agree not with it.

And here the sixth Doubt is coincident, What is the Where? For if it be only Papal Rome, then, say they, the Pope is the Beast. And this they prove. 1. Because it is a Mystery, which Heathen Idolatry was not. 2. Antichrist sits in the Temple of God. 3. Because it is that Rome, that must be for ever desolate, and a place for Devils and sinners. 4. The Fall of Babylon was to be, after the Faithful were come out of it. 5. Pagan Rome sold not Souls, nor made the Nations drunk with the Cup of her fornication. 6. She was not married to Christ, and therefore could be no Adulteress. 7. She had no False Prophet, as here described, to seduce and work Miracles, but did all by Force, &c.

II. But because it is an Advantage to the Reader, to know the Judgment of Men in the Connexion of the Parts, and Mr. Brightman Feemeth to have done his Work, with pious a Zeal and as great Learning and deep Study as any Man, I shall sum up his Opinion about this matter; Having on Daniel strongly proved (after Calvin) that the Passages, commonly expounded of Antichrist, are mistaken, he faith that it is the Roman Power that they mean, who were above all called Gods, that is, all Princes, and hath the Abomination (not making, but made) Desolate, was the utterly casting out the old Jewish Temple-Worship, which was good till abrogated, and abominable afterward: that this was done by the Destruction of the Temple, but perfected in Julian's time, by God's overthrowing it, when he attempted to re-erect it. And on Rev. 13. And forward he faith, 1. That Antichrist, the Pope, is both the first and second Beast, and Latinus his Name, &c. 2. That the first 1000 years began with Constantine, who was the Man-child, and bound the Dragon, 3. That the binding him is, that he shall no more sit up Heathenism. 4. But Antichrist began at the same time, and reigned all the while that the Dragon was bound, even from Constantine; and the Church was in the Wilderness. 5. The first Resurrection began 1300, when Mephistopheles, Wickeelf, and others began Reformation. (But I am persuaded that those, after Abigail's, and before Segoua, were before Constantine; Reymersius confesseth that they called themselves Apocalypse, and said they were from Sylvester's, that is Constantine's time: Why then is Wickeelf (who hath many Errors) set above them?) 6. The rest of the Dead in Popyry not by Reformation. 7. The second Death is Hell Fire. 8. A second 1000 years, of Church-Reformation and Prosperity, then began at 1300, when the Dragon was let loose: Antichrist began at his binding, and the happy 1000 years Reformation at his oosing. 9. His loosing set up the Turk, Gig and Magog, (Scythians) to a War against the Saints. 10. The Camp of the Saints was Europe. 11. The Holy City was the Converted Jews, and the place of the War in Judea, where the Turks shall wonderfully be utterly destroyed, by Michael the Angel of the Jews. 12. The Beast that deceived him, is the Turk himself. 13. The Beast, and False Prophet in Hell with him, Antichrist, who falls a little before him. 14. The Judgment, and second Resurrection, Chap. 20. 11. are the full restoring of the Jews. 15. The Dead, small and great, are the Jews, that till now rejected Christ. 16. The Sea and Earth giving up their Dead, are all Countries sending home the Jews converted. 17. Death and Hell, and the Lake, are Turks and Papists that shall detain the Jews no longer. 18. The Thrones and Reign of those Dead, is the Destruction of their Enemies on Earth. 19. Or He Elect Jews shall be in that Church. 20. What the first Heaven and Earth is, that shall be done away, he doth not know, but thinks it is the old Jewish way of Worship, shall cease at their Conversion. 21. No more Sea, is no more False Doctrine. 22. No more Death, is no more sharp Punishment, and that the Sting of Death shall be taken ut: 23. And the new Glorious Jerusalem, described in the 21st and 22nd Chapters, in his City or Church of the Converted Jews at Jerusalem, the rest being restored with them. Why I incline to Learned Mr. Calvert's Opinion, that the Conversion of the Jews is long past, the obstinate Jews being mostly destroyed by Turks and Adrian, and the Christian Jews being very numerous quickly, and all, that stayed in Judea, as much made to Kingdom of Christ, by Profession, in the Days of Gryl, Juvenal, and after, when their Country was replenished with Bishops, Churches and Monasteries, and many abroad once then Converted, (as Lyra, Tremellius, and others, were,) as other Christian Kingdoms were, (where some full are Infidels, I have showed on Rom. 11.)
An Advertisement.

But the most wonderful part of the expected Miracle is, that all these Thousands, if not Millions of Jews, that live scattered through the World, and now are the most vile, and Barbarous, ignorant and worldly Persons, living among Turks, and Papists, where they hear not the Gospel, should all without Preaching or Teaching be not only Converte
d at once, but made such Wife and Excellent Christians, as are fitter to constitute a
Glorious Church, than we that have been taught so long. If God have promised that
not only a Nation, but a New Jerusalem, should be thus born, or come down from Hea
ven, in a day, it must be believed; But doubtlew it will be a Miracle incomparably ex
celling all that Christ and his Apostles did; yea Millions of Miracles at once: And there
fore we may expect such proof as faith needeth in so strange a case. And as God is re
specter of Persons, for the Jews never proved, since Abraham's days, under the Law,
under Judges or Kings, or since, so wise or excellent a People, as may prognosticate such
Advancement. And God ueth in to work by means, Christ and his Apostles converted
none without the Word: And Paul faith, how shall they believe on him, of whom they
have not heard? and how shall they hear, without a Preacher, and how shall they Preach,
unless they be sent? And these Expositors tell us not that Preachers shall be sent to the
scattered Jews, into all Turkish and Papist Lands, to learn the Languages, and convert
them at once. It is worth the Reader's perusal, c. 7. p. 217. how he justly derided
Bellarmine, as supposing that Antichrist will put down God's Worship in all the Earth,
telling him that he hath an hundred forty eight Thousand Thousand times five hundred
fifty Thousand nine hundred and nine Miles to travel, to do it, (and so much have Uni
versal Popes and Councils, to take charge of,) which will hardly be done in three years
and a half: and yet killing mens Souls is a less work than to make them alive.

It's doleful to think what Satan hath gained by corrupting the Church, by wicked
Bishops, making that his Game, when Pagan Power fell; partly by tempting in World
ly wicked men by Wealth and Honour, and partly by making Ungodly Princes the do
ctors of Bishops, (and Ungodly Patrons the choosers of Priests,) and when men ruled by
Satan choose them, Satan himself oft chooseth them: Who, by their wickedness, Ma
lignity and Persecuting the best men, have tempted those Christians, who most hate em,
to call almost all the Church Antichristian, and fly from it as worse than Pagan Rome,
and to lose much of their Love to all that are called by such abhorred names. Had the
Pastors of the Church been all Holy, Humble men of Love, and not men of Wicked
ness and Blood, their Power and Interest would have been the Joy of Pious men Bet
enough of that side.

II. On the other side, they that say the contrary, thus express their sense.
1. The first Beast is the Roman Imperial and Military Power, not as such, but as the
Grand Power of Idolatry, first, and next, as the Captivator and Persecutor of the Chi
ristian Church, of Jews and Gentiles.
2. The Image of the Beast is both the Idol-Statues, Images, and Altars of their I.:
Gods, and of themselves, both which by their Laws were to be worshipped with Sacri
fices, and other acts of Idolatry.
3. The second Beast is the Senate with all the Literate Idolaters and Flatterers, Ori
tors, Philosophers, Priests, Poets, Comedians, Augusts, &c. as Learned defenders of
Idolatry, and reproachers, and Enemies of Christianitie.
4. The name of the Beast, was the name of the Idol-God, whom they were to Wor
ship, and of the Idolized Emperors, as called Divi and Dii, and honoured by Alan
and Sacrifices.
5. The Mark was a Sigma, or Badge, then usually received by Servants, and Sol
diers, and Votaries, as an obliging mark of Subjection.
6. The number of the name was some abbreviating Letters, part of the mark, and
here proved to be numeral; though at this distance, we cannot say what they were.
not whether they still the same.
7. Receiving the mark was perfect content, and usually by such a Badge.
8. The Woman Where was the City of Rome, not merely as a City, or as Rome, or a
Rich, or as Powerful, but as Idolatrous and captivating the Church.
9. The Witnesses were the Jew and Gentile, Christian Teachers, Prophets, Mirac
Worshippers and Martyrs, that had the spirit, as the first Christians had, for signal Testime
to the Gospel, Miracles long continuing in some degree. These are their Expositions.
An Advertisement.

Their Reasons they begin first of the Whore, or the seat of the Beast, which they say must needs be Pagan Rome. 1. Because it was expressly said by the Angel, who purposely explained it to be, the great City which ruleth over the Kings of the Earth. 2. Not a Church which is under Princes, but properly a City. 2. Not only pretenders to a Power of Church Keys; but proper Rulers by Power of Arms. 3. Not only over the Church, (oft called Heaven,) but over the Kings of the Earth, (noting those without.) 4. Not shall Rule but doth Rule, as a visible mark, by which John might know the Whore.

This being so plain, that only violence can obscure it, may be, say they, a Key to all the rest.

2. Ch. 17. 2. The Kings of the Earth had at that time committed Fornication with her; and the Inhabitants of the Earth were then drunken with the Wine of her Fornication, else it could not be to John a notifying mark. But the Papacy was not of many hundred years after in being.

3. John was brought into the Wilderness to see it, which was the then Persecuted State of the Church: And it was to comfort him and that Church, in hope of a near Deliverance; for they were things that must shortly be done.

4. Her name nothings her [Babylon the great, the Mother of Harlots, and Abominations of the Earth.] 1 Babylon, 2 Babylon, captivating the Christians, as old Babylon did the Jews; 3 Babylon, of the great, as them being, who the great power was small; 4 Babylon, or Nurse, and Upholder of the most Abominable Idolatry and Wickedness, nor in the Church, but of the Earth, 5 Babylon, Power and Learning, upholding the Worship of Sun, Moon, Stars, and Men; of Jupiter, Saturn, Sol, Mars, Mercury, Pallas, Venus, Neptune, and numberless Idols, by Paul called Devils; and the wickedness of life, described by Paul, Rom. 1 Epes. 4. 18, 8c.

5. The names of Blasphemy were hers reproaching Jews and Christians with scorn, and ascribing Gods names and works to these their Idols, and to Men.

6. The vast Riches and Luxury of her described, punctually agree with Pagan Rome.

7. She was then drunk with the Blood of Prophets, and Martyrs, which the Pope then was not. The Angels undertaking to open the Mystery, must not be thought rather to obscure it.

8. She had been a Persecutor of both Jew and Gentile Christians, who both gave God Thanks for her fall.

9. The Whore sat on seven Mountains, But so did not the Papal Civil Empire.

10. The assent Kings had not received Regal Power, being but as Servants to the Beast, and the Whore; But Popish Kings are Kings indeed.

11. They were unanimous in upholding the Whore: But Popish Kingdoms long stood against the Papal Power.

12. They fought against Christiannity till they were conquered, v. 14. But so did not many Popish Kingdoms.

13. People, multitudes and Nations, more notise Pagan Rome than Papal.

14. C. 18. They were to reward her double, as she had used them. But so we must not do by Papists.

15. The Kings of the Earth lament her fall. But the more the Pope fall the more they rejoice, except the House of Austria, and a few more.

16. Her fall cometh suddenly, as in an hour; but the Pope standeth yet after 150 years, beginning to fall.

Moreover about the Beast, they say.

1. It is said, he was, and is not, and yet is: But the Papacy was not then, nor is, after it was not.

2. The seven Heads of the Beast, had the name of Blasphemy. But if the Heads were the seven Species of Government, the name of Papal Blasphemy, was not on six of them at least, but only of Pagan Blasphemy: Therefore it was Pagan Rome, or its Empire, that they headed.

3. The seven Pagan sorts of Government, were not seven Heads of the Papacy, or Roman Church; therefore the Papacy or Roman Church, was not the Beast: For they were the Heads of the Beast. And the woundine of one of the Heads, shews that all the seven were Heads of one, and the same Beast.
An Advertisement.

4. *Who is able to make War with the Beast*? It tells us, that it was by Armour, and not by mere Hypocrisy and deceit. That was the part of the first, and not of the second.

5. It is all that dwell on the Earth, (without that Church) that worship him: that dwell in heaven, and the Tabernacle, and name of Christ, be Blasphemed.

6. They worship the Dragon for giving Power to the Beast: But by the Text faith is meant the Devil; and it is those Devils that Pagans thought Rome, that is, Mars, Jupiter, Apollo, &c. But Papists worship not the Man up the Pope.

7. The Dwellers on the Earth worshipped the first Beast, whose deadly wound was healed, in the judgment of all them, that says, the very enemy Papacy was the healing of that Wound: For it was not Wounded as a Beast was in being. And if it was Pagan Rome, or Idolatry, that the Papacy healed, and not the healing party, was the first Beast.

8. It's contrary to divers express Texts, that the first and second Beast are Therefore they, that make the Pope the second, must acknowledge and the first.

9. The number of a man, received, cannot be found of Papal Rome.

10. All that receive the mark and name of the Beast are (without converte nor tormenting for ever) But we cannot say of all that own the Papacy: But converte, and prejudice against Protestants for their divisions, make many think that the Papal Church is the beast for its unity, and antiquity, and extent, and those of others. When we read the Writings of such Men as Bernard, Gesner, Kempis, Grotius, Piscator, Tannerus, Sales, &c. And the lives of such as Fb. Nerius, &c. we may, &c. Yea, the Writings of such as Bonaventure, and divers Schoolmen, is so much of truth and holiness in them, that forbids that Judgment. Further that it is Pagan Rome that is the Whore, and its Empire, as Idolatry and usurious, is that the first Beast, and not the Papacy, they argue thus.

1. If it be Papal Rome, it is either the City as building and place, or it is the City as a Policie. For 1. The material City of Pagan Rome, was as much defiled as Papal Rome, and yet continued. 2. Else when the Pope dwells elsewhere, he would follow him. For above 100 years, much of Italy it self placed the Pope in the Patriarchs of Aquitania. Rome may fall, and the Papacy stand: it has not been taken, and fack't, and long possessed by Goths and others: Even Charles 5. by Philip Buron, fact' it.

2. If in the Policie, either 1. As related to Rome. 2. Or as elsewhere places what it is that Policie, that is the formal composition of the first Beast?

1. It is not Empire as such; for all Power is of God, and was to be derelict to Rome: Else all Emperors would be such Beasts, (or, as they say, Antichrists.)

2. It is not Empire meerly as Roman: For then both the Heathen Emperors been the Beast; (or Antichrists,) without respect to their fin, And Constantinian, Jovian, Theodosius, Marcian, &c. the great Blessings of the Church been Antichrists, of the Beast: Or at least those good Emperors been Rome.

3. It is not Empire meerly, as found in a person of bad Qualities and Life: every wicked Emperour and King would be the Beast, (or their Antichrist,) and that were not personilly vicious, would be none.

4. It is not every Emperour or King, that is an Usurer or invader: For the Emperors would be the Beast.

5. It is not every one that is Ambitious, and thriving to be highest and greatest: For then there would be a great many Antichrists in the World.

6. It is not every one, that in Church Power would be highest, for then John would have been Antichrists; and so would many Bishops of Cen and Alexandria, if not many in most other Lands among the fellows.
An Advertisement.

... every one that pretended to, and usurpeth, a sort of Power that God a: For so do many Imposers of most Parties.

... every one that joineth Civil and Ecclesiastical Power in one Person: For so seduced, and so did Cyril, and other Alexandrian Bishops, and thence of Con-... and what Episcopal Countries have not such? If you say, that this is a kin... or preparatory, I say, our Question is not what it is, a kin, or preparatory, it, that formally constitute it?

... every one that is a Persecutor; for so alas have been too many in most places, nor is it all that promote Herefire or Blasphemy by Persecution. For us, and many Arrian Kings (and Councils), Genericus, Humericus, The-... etc.

... not all that were Idolaters in any degree, for so is now four sixths of the people such as; all inward Heart-Idolaters; as are all that are Covetous, and love better than God, and obey Man against him. Nor is it all that give Saints undue or sinful Veneration: for so John twice offered Prostration to the An-... and so did the Council of Nice, to the Images of Saints, and especially the Vi...: And so did many of the Eastern Emperors, and Tharsius drew in almost... Bishops; yes, many were faultily long before Popery came in.

... the being of any of these at Rome, that constitute the Beast or Antichrist, could not do it elsewhere; For Theodoric, Odoacer, and other Arrians, Blasph-... and Persecutors in Rome, were not the Beast or Antichrist. It must (say these Men) be somewhat differing from all these; which we can find in me, but not in Papal. If the same thing will make the Pope, (and all Papists) Beast, that would not make another such, there must be some special Reason.

... they, it must be remembered, that it is confessed to be Civil Power, and Faithful, that constitute the first Beast, and Rome is this Seat. Now, 1. The thing was not settled at Rome, but at Constantinople, when Christianity came in power. Popes were most Martyrs and Sufferers till Constantine's time; and long after Submission to Emperors, yea even to Arrians, and to Usurpers: And Alex-... Constantinople used as much Force as they. It was 606 years before Phoca-... face 3, the Universal Bishop; by which he never meant, the Universal Em-... Or Civil Government: (No, nor Universal Ecclesiastical any further than the)

... was long after this, that the Claim of deposing Kings as Excommunicate, in moot by Gregory the Seventh, and long after that, before it was determined at an Council. Most Christian Kingdoms opposed it all along: William the Con... and William Rufus, and others, in England: Philip, and others, in France: it is denied to this day, and much in Spain: The German Emperors, Henry the and Fifth; and Frederick and Otto long fought against it, and some of them took... and unmade Popes, and used them as their Subjects: The Princes of Italy were, from Age to Age almost always in War against the Popes: The Easterners before mastered them, till Pipin, and the two Charles's used the Papacy to... Empire, and after were Masters of the Pope themselves: The very Citizens of Rome, from Age to Age, proved with them for the chief Power in Rome it did not overtop them, till they got Foreign Princes to help them. To this day, the not Imperial Power over other Princes, save indirectly, as nullifying the Title, Excommunicate, falsely pretending that they may excommunicate them, and that in... then reject them as no Kings. Is all this an Universal Empire, and was he Whore for 700 Years, or not? It is supposed that Idolatry and Persecution over the Whore, and her Civil Power, the Beast. Transubstantiation is the grossest... the first, and that is a Novelty: A few odd Men wrote for it a little sooner, cier Church owned it not by Law, till the Fourth Lateran Council under Innocent... almost twelve hundred years after Christ. And excess of Veneration to Saints... angels, most Churches on Earth owned, and still own, (the Greek, Armenian, A... Our Divines have proved Purgatory, and almost all their Abuses of thatacy, to be Novelties; (see Moulins de novit. Papism, Blondel de Ecles. Rives's De... of de Pudis, &c.) Now here we are divided. 1. Some say Rome was the Whore ipec 300; And so all, or near all, the Church of Christ in the Empire was the Beast,
An Advertisement,

or Whore, or both: (except the few poor Men in Piedmont and Langueo: for I am of the Opinion, that they kept their Simplicity and Integrity ever since Diosclius's Persecution,) and then all the Glory of the best Ages of the Church is darkened into Shame, and the triumph for its Deliverance from Pagan Captivity, turned to our Confusion. (I have fully in my History of Councils described the mischiefs of Clergy-Ambition, by never thought that such Mens Faults so overthrew all Christ's Church in the Empire, as to make it Antichristian: A holy humble Ministry upheld it, while some ambitious civil Prelates troubled it,) as even a Heathen Am. Marcellius witnesseth, speaking of Damasus's case. If Christ had no Church Visible so many hundred years, then he was no Christ, or King, of a Visible Church, which is a solid Conclusion for Opposers of Antichrist. Doth he say worse against Christ himself?

2. Others say, that Rome began to be Babylon the 606, under Boniface the third and Paschasius, (on the grounds before confused.) 3. Others begin it under Boniface the eighth. 4. Others begin it with Hildebrand's Usurpation over Princes, between 1000 and 1100 years after Christ. 5. Others begin it with Innocent the third, who in the Leuven Council generally first owned that Usurpation and Transubstantiation, and bloody Persecution for it, which before were owned but by little Factionary Parties. 6. Others prove to that that Council made no Decrees, and so that it was not then.

Now, if Rome for 606 years, or for 1000, or for 1100 years was not Babylon, then Pagan Rome was not then, nor Christian Rome, and no Man kneweth when it began to be so: And then almost all our most confident late Explications are quite overthrown. But doubtless John was told of a Babylon, a Whore, a Beast, which was much weaker than this. The fix or seven Species of Pagan Government, were not the Heads of Christian Papal Beast, that was to rise 1000, or 600 years after Christ. See Bishop Lertow's Pref. to his Brutum fulmen of their Novelty.

With these Reasons, this sort of Exposers add the Answer to the contrary Objections. And to the first they say, that the Rising of the Beast out of the Sea, doth but dwell the Order of the Vision to John, and that not the Beast was not yet in being; and may mean Domitian or Diosclius, not yet come. To the second they say, the Objection beg the Question. 3. And so of the third. 4. To the fourth they say, that their Signifieth not Continuance, but Operation, to which some Copies join magis, be made With War: And they say, that neither here, nor cap. xxi. of the Word Preaching, is meant a thousand two hundred and sixty years, but Days, as expressed even three years and an half. 5. To the fifth they say, it had the ten Crowned Heads, which is the same States, which were Crowned Horns, when they became militant and cruel. 6. They say, that the Pagan Empire, as the Beast commanding Idolatry, was not to be obeyed. 7. They say, Pagan Rome is called Mystical, not Literal Babylon, and their Mysteries of Worship also were Idolatry. 8. They say, that it is not Anarch of the Temple, but the Beast blaspheming it, that this Text mentioneth. 9. They say, that Pagan Rome, as such, is totally defeate, and for ever, but the Papal is not. 10. The faithful came away from Babylon's Idolatry and Sin before her Fall, and were called on to avoid her most carefully, just when she was falling, left just then the falling Babylon fall on them: But Papal Rome, being not yet fallen, were no Christians then 1300 years under the Reason of that Call? 11. They say, Pagan Rome sold Slaves, and bought them, and sold Souls to Idolatry, worse than Popery. 12. They say, that the unmarried Heathens may be guilty of Fornication. yea and of Adultery, by reason of God's sight to them: And the Fornication here is but Idolatry, and it's said to conclude that Heathen Rome was not Idolatrous. 13. Lastly, They say, that their Sects, and all the Learned Patrons of Paganism, and Reprovers of Christianitie, better agree the Character of the second Beast, and false Prophet, than either the Pope as pleading in himself, or his Agents pleading for his Civil Power.

I should next have told you the Difficulties that pose me about the other Queries: but I fear perplexing the Readers, and must not be so large. I mention what I have done, to tell you why I understand not the Revelations, and cannot help it that I am wiser than excellent Calvin, nor than all the ancient Fathers, (though I disown the Conceit of a future Antichrist at the end of the World.)

I done.
An Advertisement.

not but many, in blind Zeal, will call this my confessed Ignorance a warping pery (though I have long in my Writings against Popery confessed the very nis I must bear from them, that bear more from themselves, and from whom n beareth more. It's a small thing for one Man to be confounded by those Perions, e hardier almost all the Church of Christ on Earth: But when I try whether r any more than I, I find little more than a believing that to be the sente of stand, those good Men say it is, whom they most value.

I will therefore know more of my own Opinion: And I will freely tell it

much persuaded, by impartial consideration of the Text, that the Roman Im-ver, as the Upholder of Heathen Worship of Devils, Idols, and themselves, and ers of the Church of Jews and Gentiles, was the first Beast, and that Rome in A was Babylon, and the Whore, that made all Nations drunk with her pom- actry, and the whole Current of the Book seemeth plainly to drive at this, r of the subordinate particulars I understand not.

Neither the Papacy be another Beast, or Whore, there meant, and the Text mean Beasts, and two Whores, or the Similitude, notwithstanding so many Diflimiled six hundred, or seven hundred, or a thousand years interruption, make thef or whether it be Antichrist that is the Beast, I will neither affirm, nor deny, s Evidence to prove the Affirmative.

That my Judgment is of Popery, the Reader may fully see. 1. In one Sheet ring its Errours, 2. In a Book called, The Safe Religion. 3. In another called, r Catholicick. 4. In two of the true Catholicick Church against Johnson, alias 5. In one called, The Christian Religion certain without Popery. 6. In one called, ae Satisfaction, which is the True Religion. 7. One called, Naked Popery. If tis not the Censurers Zeal, him, that is ignorant, be ignorant, and he that is 1. be so still.

I do judge of Popery by the knowledge of its particular Errours and Sins, and the Revelations, or any thing which I understand not. If the Pope be the great ift, which I neither deny, nor affirm, because I know not, (as I have long ago ed,) I think that it is formally, as he is by claim the Vice-Christ, Vicarius Christi, in whom an Universal Sovereignty Ecclesiastical over the whole Church on Earth, (and r a Nation only,) and that he began with that Claim, to which his many Cor- ses are joined to make up a Body of Iniquity: Were there no more to be said that Church, than, 1. This Claim of Universal Government. 2. And the use of Ignorance, by forbidding the Reading of the Scripture in a known Tongue, r Licenser, and Latin Prayers and Service, and an Ignorant Clergy. 3. And the a Doctrine of Transubstantiation. 4. And the vile Corruptions of much of Worship. 5. And their horrid Blood-Guiltiness, by which they do uphold their om called a Church. I take those Popes and Papists, who own all this, to be liable, God, to greater Punishment, than the Beast, and false Prophet, mentioned in the stoins; it being far worse to sin thus under the name of Christians, and Christ’s and holy Bishops, than as Infidels and Heathens, to whom (as to Sodom) it shall be in the Day of Judgment than for thee.

Therefore I judge, that a Confederacy or Coalition with the Church of Rome; in these Sins, or in the very form of a Church Headed by a pretended Universal Head om, is to be abhorred by all sound Christians: And I am glad that this Kingdom nt against all Foreign Jurisdiction, Civil or Ecclesiastical; though Union and Counwith all Foreign Churches must be as far kept as we are able, not partaking of their.. But I have long ago (in my Key for Catholicick) proposed the desirable Terms for a Coalition, but) for neighbourly Peace, that we may live in Love and Quiet, and not as those that still take themselves bound to destroy each other.

On these Grounds I judge of Perions according to their Personal Guilt, and not by general Name of Papists. I abhor those that are wicked, and that own the f reat sedne, but not all that are called Roman Catholics, that live in the fear of God, in Charity. I will try Uncertainties by Certainties, and not deny Fundamentals in opinion to Mens By-Opinions. I am certain that I must love a Christian, as such, and as much as in me lieth I must live peaceably with all Men, and avoid all unnecessary

D d 4

Division,
An Advertisement.

Division, Wrath and Hatred; and I am sure that, Blessed are the Peace-makers, &c. (whatever Error calleth them) they shall be called the Children of God! I am sure, that I must (unnecessarily) speak Evil of no Man; and that flandering and false swearing are Diabolical Works; and that the Wildom is from beneath, which causeth Envy and Strife; and, in a word, that LOVE is Christ's Work and Character, and Hatred the Devil's: But I am not sure that the Church of Rome hath these 1000 or 1300 years been the Where, and Babylon, meant in these Texts; nor that yet all Papists shall be tormented, as worshipping the Beast, or his Image, &c.

I am sure, that the Visible Church will have Scandals, and ambitious Men; and yet that its Deliverance in Constantine's time, and the following Ages, was a wondrous Mercy, which Heaven and Earth did rejoice in, and praiseth God for: And it was a great part of Christ's coming to Reign by Christian Princes, and that the Kingdoms of the World were made the Kingdoms of Christ: Therefore I dread the denying Christ his Kingdoms, and reproaching even the best Ages of his Church on Earth as Antichristian, lest deny him to have any Church Visible at all, or tempe Men to Infidelity, by saying that Christ is so little a King, and came to so little a Work in the World, as to have no Church, save the perfected part, till A. M. 300, and the Reformers since 1560, save a few latent Persons. Men will judge of the Workman by his Work, and of Physicians by their Cures: And though it be honourable to save one Soul, they will tempt men to dishonour Christ, that call almost all his Church Antichristian. I would not under one Man; but should I mistake, and slander Millions for thirteen hundred years together, how great were my Guilt!

VII. I dread the turning Religion into a humane, hurtful, love-killing Faction, if abhor Millions and Millions meerly on my uncertain Exposition of the Revelations, I am not do it in Faith. If one ask me why do I do it, and I say, because they are of Babylon, or worship the Beast, and ask me how I know it, I must say that I know not; But must here believe it because Mr. A. M. B. Mr. C. &c. say so: And so which found their Faith, and their Hierarchy of us as Heretics, on the Credit of their Teachers, that say so, to shall we ours on the Word of our Teachers. And here I dread the Effects, viz. abhorring Men causelessly, corrupting our Prayers and Sermons and Bibles, and fathering all on God, condemning all as favouring Popery, who have not contracted this hating Discafe; crying down many good and many harmless things, merely because they come from the Beast and Babylon. Temples themselves, good Prayer, excellent Ministers and Churches, yea Baptism itself, have been cried down and condemned, as Babylonish and Antichristian, and a ground of endless Divisions, and farring in every Shadow that Rome hath had to do with, is thus late; yea the Seekers greatly counseled that say, Scripture, Church and Ministry, are lost in the Wilderness, and the Church feigned to be brought into the Wilderness, just when it was brought out of it, (which was the Pagan Persecution,) even the Protestant Churches are condemned as being yet Antichristian; and the Martyrs, that suffered by Papists, yea, and those suffered in the 3d, 4th, and 5th Centuries by Arrians and others, are all made by many to be the Children of Babylon; and a War proclaimed between professed Christians, by which all the Romanists are tempted to hate and destroy us, as those that would do so by them. And all this by the expounding the Revelations of that, which no Man, the hath not more Knowledge than I, can find that it faith, or meddle with: And the needful, while we have plain Texts enough that condemn Popery, and all Sin, by which we may abhor bad Men, without the Danger of hating the Children of God. Christ is in our Creed, but Antichrist is not. All the old Fathers were not Papists the took not the Pope for Antichrift: But more probability of it may be gathered from the Texts than from the Revelations.

VIII. To say, I know not what I would know and cannot, is easier to me, than the dread of being guilty of the Sin threatened in the Conclusion of this Book, that God will all the Plagues in it to them that add to it, and blot his Name out of the Book of Life, who taketh from it. (I deny not other Men's Knowledge, but my own: I know not the mortal Discafse of the World:) To add to the Sense is to add to the Book: To say, this is the Sense, when I know it not, and where five of the wight are four minds (and common Christians take all on trust) this exposeth me to the dread of this heavy Curse.
An Advertisement.

ought excuse me not to the Reader, it excuseth me to my Conscience, whose
most more fear than Man's, lest I prefer my Interest in the good Opinion of
ed censorious Dividers, before the pleasing of God, and my Salvation, and
am going from this World to him: And if all this seem too much to any, the
danger of the Churches, the extremes of many and their evil Effects, these,
and the confessing of those who falsely interpret my History of Bishops and
make it seem otherwise to me.

not modest Conjectures, if Men will but confess their Uncertainty, when they
so, and not make an uncertain Opinion an Article of Faith, and sacrifice to
fundamental Truth or Dury, the Churches Peace or Christian Love, nor use it
a partial, hating, dividing Zeal. Good Mr. Brightman did with a pious
mine many things very confidently, which Time hath already confuted: He
added that the Blessed Resurrection, and date of Christ's Thousand Years Reign
Jerusalem, shall be 1695, eleven years hence. Thomas Rogers, and many
have been blamed by setting Times, which being past have confuted them.
It frightened some others from that Boldness, who yet in other Uncertainties have
confident, as that they have drawn many good People thereby to measure their
Charity. I am far from thinking, that deeper Students are as ignorant here,
but I would not have all that are as ignorant, look upon as Aliens. And I
am at least able to expound Prophecies than Daniel, who yet thus concludeth,
9. And I heard, but I understood not: Then said I, O my Lord, what shall be
these things? And he said, Go thy way, Daniel, for the Words are closed up and
the time of the end.

I make no doubt, but the Revelation is God's Word, though I under
not 1), and that it is not useless: Yea, so much as I do understand, is of exceed-
forable Use: Though I know not whether the New Jerusalem will come down
even before, or at, the common Resurrection, it rejoiceth me that it will come:
having condescended to describe it, as glorious, by corporeal Similitudes, to
have no full Idea's of things Spiritual, it is a meet means of our Comfort, by
similitude to conceive of that Glory; and even to imprint them on our Minds, to
our Defires of that Blessed State, and make us Love, and long for Christ's ap-
, and cry daily, Come Lord Jesu.

I was writing this, there came to my hands [face Vespas his Ver. Observat.
In the Receiveth the magnitude of Rome, when it was in its Grandeur, (it being about
us above) and how it decreated, and that Constantinople destroyed Rome far more, and
the Gothis, by building Constantinople; so that within 80 years it was not the
tal big, as in Aurelian's time: And that when Rufus and Victor wrote, there
not the 20th part of the old City; and that now, under the Pope, it is so far
containing the Seven Hills, that it is almost all contained in the Campus Martius,
mainly not now scarce the two hundredth part of the old City. And that it was
called Babylon the Great, we read that old Babylon was near as great as Rome at the
, and by Herodatus, and some others made greater.

answered to this, that it is the same City still, known by the same name.
it hath nor either the same Situation, Magnitude, Power, Dominion, and Idol-
ification, by which John was to know it, nor would that Description agree to it
By many such Reasons I suspect that the Questions, (who is the Beast? which is Ba-
and who is the Antichrist?) are not the same in the Scripture Sense, nor must
the same Solution.

any, that are Friends to Papal Usurpation, and Church-Corruption, shall think that
half of Ignorance of these Prophecies, is any advantage to their ill Cause; I will
tell them, that it is far more dreadful to the Pope, and all his Flatterers, and
ners, to be plainly condemned by the known Laws of Christ, which all Christians
ve as paft all doubt, than to be under the Dread of a dark and converted Prophe-
To them that say, the Pope is the first and second Beast, the Whore of Babylon, the
of Sin, the false Christ or Antichrist, you have the Shift of a Contempt of his Words, as
controversied overturned thing, but who knoweth not, that the plain Law of God con-
eth, that the Proud, the Worldly, the Malignant, the Idolatrous, Murderers, Persecutors,
the Enemies of Christ's Gospel and serious Godliness, are Satan's Slaves, and shall not
enter;
An Advertisement.

enter into the Kingdom of God? Can any man, that readeth but vvhat Bariniu, Bariniu, Genbrard, and the most flattering of your Historians, say of the Popes from An. 700, till 1400, think that God ovned and guided so vvick'd a fort of Men? I again tell those, that are angry at my History of Bishops and Councils, that I doubt not but God had, in all Ages, a visible Church of Pious Christians, kept up by the lover of Bishops and Pastors, and some of the higher (Patriarchs and Metropolitans) but it was by these Majorites, and Ambitious Men, that corruption, cruelty and dissension, chiefly entered; and they being uppermost, a few of them, by noise, ostentation and domineering, past for the whole Church with undiscerning Men.

And here to shew you how the Pope hath succeeded the most Bloody Pagan Persecutors, and out-done them, I will instance, in a History not sufficiently understood by most.

Diocefan murdered more Christians than all the former Pagan Persecutors, and together. Among others he dealt so cruelly and inhumanly with them in France and Spain, and Russia, as forced many to stand upon their defence to save their Lives; two Commanders, Amandus and Eliaus head them, and railed them, that were but Country Clubmen, into Arms: Much of France and Spain favoured them. Diocefan made Herculinus Maximianus Cesar, and sent him with an Army against them. In this Army was the Theban Legion, whose Colonel was Mauritian; at the Alps Herculinus would try his Soldiers, by Idolatrous Tricks, whether they would fight against these Christians called Rebels, or not: The Theban Legion said they could fight against bad Men, but not against good Men, but would rather submit their lives to his pleasure; (not being able to resist if they would): So he decimated them, and killed 700, and with the rest of his Army quickly routed the Country-Clubmen, and besieged their very strong Castle, and killed them all, and overthrew their Fortresses. Many score thousand are said to be killed, and the Name Bagauda put on them in scorn, (like Tories and Whigs) as spoyling Thieves and Robbers.

And what's all this to the Roman Pope? Anf. These were the Christians murdered by Diocefan and Herculinus, Pagans; the Relicks of the Fugitives continued in Leguedock, Piedmont, Russia, &c. from age to age, till at last reviving to a more free opposition to Popish Tyranny and Corruption, they were murdered by the Pope, by Simon Montford, and his Crusade's, and others after) to a far greater number than by Herculinus Max. So that some Historians reckon two Millions killed in all, in the end, and other parts. And it is not more wicked for a professed Vicar of Christ, to murder Millions of poor Christians, for being against his Tyranny and Corruption, than for a Pagan Emperor, that had Civil Dominion, to kill not half as many?

I know it will be doubted by some. 1. Whether these Bagauda were Christians, being it is said that they never resisted their Persecuting Princes, but bowed only Prayer and Tears? And 2. Whether the Albigenese and Waldenses were their Successors? The History is of great Weight. I prove both parts.

1. For the first, let these following Testimonies together.

Hieronymus, in Chron. 2993. [" Diocefan took Maximianus Herculinus into Parness of the Empire, who restored Peace to France, the multitude of Russick being exterminated, who called their Faction by the Name of Bacauda."]

Videl de Cisariab. [" By the departure of Carinus, Eliaus and Amandus, afflicted most of the Cities, waffing the Countries, by raising a Band of Countrymen and Robbers, whom the inhabitants called Bacauda."]

Eutropius Li. 9. [" When the Countrymen in France had raised Tumults, and took the Name of Bagauda to their Faction, and had Amandus and Eliaus for their Chiefs, Cesar sent Maximianus Herculinus to subdue them."]

Pompon Letus. [" Maximianus did with marvellous Speed suppress, and preceded root out the Tumults in France, vvhich Amandus and Eliaus, on presence of Tyre, vvhich Amandus and Eliaus, on presence of Tyre, had raised, vvith the whole Faction of the Bagauds, by vvvhich Name the vvhich Name the Vhich Name the Russick called themselves."]

Pandius Orfus Li. 7. C. 25. [" When in France, Amandus and Eliaus gathered a Band of Russicks, which they called Bagauds, had raised pernicious Tumults, he (Diocefan) made Maximianus, Surnamed Herculinus, Cesar, and sent him into France, who by Military Power easily bridled the Power, and confused Band, of the Countrymen."]
An Advertisement.

An speakeith plainer, Lib. 4. de Gubern. ["The Bagauds being spoiled, and killed, by bad and cruel Judges, when they had left the Right of Right, lost also the Honour of the Roman Name: And their Infidelity is inthem: We impute to them the name of their own Calamity: We impute the eh we made ourselves; and when we have compiled them to be crimcall them Rebels, and call them, destroyed Wretches. For what else was do them Bagauds, but our iniquities, and the dishonesty (or naughtiness) of What but their Precepts and Rapines, who turned the name of the Praise into the gains of their own Treasure; and made the Tributary Impostions in their prey? Who, like cruel wild Beasts, did not rule those committed to us, but devoured them; and were not maintained (or fed) only with the skins, (as most Robbers use,) but with tearing the men, and, as I may say, their blood. And the matter was so managed, that the Men that were slain killed by the Robbery of the Judges, begun, as it were, Barbarians, they were not suffered to be Romans: For they were fain to be, what they been, because they were not suffered to be what they had been, and they refrained to defend at least their Lives, because they saw that they had utter their Liberty.]

Frejnic's Glossary lately Printt at Paris, Vol. 2. ["In the word [Bagaud.] there were Christians. See Florinsius in Hortinger's Eclog. Histor. life of Abb't Boblen, published by Cuspetius in the end of Bede's works "] the History-writer in his History which he composèd—affirmeth that the forede was by Maximianus Herculis overthrown to the very ground, and utterly ed; because Amandus and Eliasus, (Christians Cultores Sithi,) who were of Christian Religion, would not be subject to the Sacrilegious Roman Princes: For Maximianus, having gathered an Army of Romans, and joyning to him the of the Thibian Souldiers, drew towards them, that he might utterly destroy the of the Bagauds; And passing over the Alps with his Army, and reteling weary Edurum, commanded to invite all to the Fantasick Sacrifices, and to take upon the Sacreds of the Gods, that they would with one mind fight against the (for Companies) of the Bagauds: And the rest of the Christians where ever he decreed should be kill'd by all men. But when this came to the ears of the Captain of the Thibian Legi'n, viz. that Cesar commanded them to fight a Christians, he faid to him (the Emperor,) we know how to fight against Immen, but to destroy godly men, and Fellow Citizens, we are utterly ignorant, so our Arms you see, but we resist not, for we are reader to die than to kill: o they joyfully yielded their necks to the Executioners, and, by the Torment of Bodies, part to the Heavenly Glory. Then Cesar proceeding, and coming to the of the Bagauds, so long besieged it by Land and Water, till after a long time took it, with the poiffellers, whom he kill'd with Svورد and Fire: And soght to nought the Castle, that besieds the ruins of the Ditches, no signs appearing any Fortifications. As among other Castles it was wals with Minution, more dent than the Imperial, so by the Roman Emperor it was brought lower by Action. And the Inhabitants of the said Castle, who (as I before noted) were Christians, despoiling the care of their Body for the Love of God, are to be believed we paffed to the Heavenly Kingdom by Martyrdom, so far this Author. also the Life of St. Maurice in Hist. Lomard. is called (faith Ferraris,) Bagardum Casrum; and St. Manv. des Folses, testi: riu, to this day, and is pag. Gal. ad. Matronam fivu. etw Parvis; And turned Monastery.

I may see more yet in Martinius Omnaist, in the word Bagiotes, for that he maather Scaliger, to be their Country name, and their Enemies after used it for the of Rebels, and Rogues, and Sodious People.

include vvhich Martinus his words hereon, ["Et talis est mos, &c."] Such is the use of one, who being called (or called) Clement, delight to be Inlament: The of vvhose Reputation and Government, is as vvas their Predecessor Reiboam, ambition and Luxury do this, so great vweight is in that one Rule [MODERATE HINGS ARE DURABLE,] and the Prudence, in Publick and Family Go-
An Advertisement.

* venement to proportion our Expenses to our Estates, &c. But it will not be went

"vwith Human affairs, as long as the Wildom from above is excluded, and the Wildom

"that is earthly, sensual and devilish, taketh place in the World. But yet let us to

"suffering of any evil, draw us to do any evil: For it is the greatest evil not to be

able to bear evil.

Out of all this, it is evident, 1. That the horrid oppression and cruelty against Chri

tians in Diocletian's time did drive these Christians, in France, to a Ruthick self-de

fence, under the conduct of Amandus and Elhanus. 2. That it was for resisting a

fight against them, that the Theban Legion was decimated, (and Severly killed by long

and with all for not swearing and sacrifying to the Gods. 3. That it was the great

Numbers of Christians, (whose multiplication Baptists describeth in Diocletian's days)

that caused him to destroy them, left they should grow too strong for him (as Pater

did by the Istrœites.) 4. That yet these self-defending Christians sped well, and

suffered more, than they had done if they had fled. 5. That we see that the Pope

Emperor called Rebels, and Seditious Rogues, such Writers as the Author of the

Life of that Babylon doubt not to number with Glorified Martyrs: How well is

them answer.

II. But what is all this to the Popes of Rome? Ans. It seemeth clearly to be the

Successors of these that the Popes after murthered. For, 1. There is no doubt but though

many that took Arms were kill'd, and their Cattle demolish'd, the greatest part were not in

Arms, and therefore laved themselves by flight, and hiding, specially Old

Men and Women, and Children. 2. No doubt but they fled to the most Mountain

and defered parts, as safest. 3. No history tells us of their flying so far as the aged,

and Women, and weak could not go, but to Landwick, Pecquem, Rustica, and

about the Alpes. 4. The People murthered by the Popes, were found most in their

country houses, and are of the very like description. That there were some Manions

among them, who disgraced the rest, and made Bernard, Peter Clanciens, and Wel

Lefr. Strob. and others accuse them hardly, it is no wonder: The Apostles' Churches

had Heretikes, Luther's Reformation was accompanieth with many disgraceful Sects; nor

is it marvel that we read of no great noise against or about them, for some hundred

years after Diocletian, and that they were not called Albigenese, Waldensia, &c all of

late. For it was many hundred years after, before the Bishops turned to pervert their

Fellow Christians openly: And when they did, there were poor people and hand

fled (as the Britains into Wales,) where they were neither a desirable prey, nor any great

annoyance to any: And when some Teachers after more openly cried down the Pope

Tyranny and Corruptions, then they began to be more defamed and persecuted. 5. Al

narmes, that well knew them, testifith that they were more dangerous than new r

Sects, because they boasted of their Antiquity, that they were called Apo

ick, and had continued what they then were from the days of Silvester; And Silvester lived in

Constantiæ time, and was Bishop of Rome about An. 314., and so lived in Diocletian's

time; so that either theyse Albigenese were the Successors of the murthered Bogards, or

another fort just like them in the same Country, which no reason can imagine. Of their

Antiquity see more in Paul Perin, and Morland's History of them, but especially at

large in Bishop Uher de Successione Ecclesiænum.

I think then it is manifest by this History that the bloody Popes and Papists, did mur

der the fame fort of Men, (yea three or four times more in number,;) by Sword and

Inquisition, (not only there but in Germany, Bohemia, Poland, &c. whose they were dis

perct,) which Diocletian and Max. Herculius murthered; (and yet honour St. Martin,

and the Theban Legion, that would not fight against them, as they do St. Martin, the

separateth from the Bishops that were but for killing a Gustick Preistianist;) And it is

not the Name of a Heretick, that will Cloak such Hypocritical Cruelty, or de

ceive Christ, that he shall not know his Flock, if men miscall them. To own Christ

and the Gospel, and to murder Thousands, or Millions in his Name, as if he took it for

acceptable Service, is incomparably a more aggravated crime, than the most bloody Pa

gan Perfection was.

Obj. These were Hereticks, and deserve death. Ans. 1. And were they worse than

Beathen Idolaters and Infidels, and must three or four parts of the World be put to

death?

Obj.
An Advertisement.

they were Baptized, and so were Reformation. Answ. 1. And do they revolt to
again now? 2. Is Infant-Baptism of so small consequence, as that the Papists
all that revolt from it? Is not this the way to make Antipedo-baptists, or
and keep Men from Christianity? But observe Michaelis ed. Memoriam,
your Historians change them to have been against Infant-Baptism? Did you
still they were Baptized?

what was their Heretie, how can we know better than by your bloody Laws
The General Council 4. at the Lateran under Innocent 3. tells us
by Transubstantiation, (and disobeying the Pope:) And all Temporal Lords
or exterminate all such, and all others, that they will call Heretics, on
communication, Deposition, and Damnation. So that all that renounced
enemies were Heretics, and all such to be destroyed or exterminated, and
solved from their Allegiance to Temporal Lords that will not execute it; and
grievous Penalties are added. And seeing General Councils are the Rules of
of the through Papist, be not angry with them that call both your Pope
1, and Church, Antichristian, who thus exceeded Diocletian, and Max. Her-
their Work.

is how then can you hold that the sole Visible Church was never the Seat, or So-
our-christ, in any one Age?

Very well: Christ was Christ, the Head of his Church, as visible and invisible.
Age. 1. Three or four parts of the Christian World were then, and are now,
the Pope: This very bloody Council said, c. 4. "That the Greeks rejected
an Pope, and so far abhorred the Latines, that if Latine Priests did but cele-
their Altars, their Greeks judged them defiled, and would not use them again;
had washed them, yea they rebaptized those whom the Latine Priests blows
and they once a year excommunicated the Popes long, and they owned not Tra-
ition: And they, with the Abbessins, Armenians, and all such others, were
four times more than the Papists.

Who may not easily know that a Pope, and such a Council called General, are
Westem visible Church, real or representative? Is not unlikely that forty to one
against them. King John's Ambassador was one of the Conscuses, who then
conscussed against Stephen Langton, Archbishop of Canterbury; and to conquer his
and Kingdom, gave his Kingdom to the Pope, and took it as from him.
such a King had the choice of Bishops, they would no more represent the Church
than he and his Court represented the Kingdom, when he gave it away, and fought
it; and those Bishops that the Pope chose did as little represent it, being more
fingers of his Will, than of the Churches: And how few Bishops were in such
is, besides those that the Pope made or consecrated to? When he, and the Emperours
were in War, the Emperor's Bishops condemned the Pope's, and the Pope's Bl-
condemned the Emperor's, and these Servants of two Men in Power, were not
preservers of the Church. The multitude of lower quiet Bishops, Pastors and Peo-
the Visible Church, more than England was a Visible Kingdom distinct from
's Court; for the Pope was but an Ufprising Head, which that King then was not.

Then you make two visible Churches in Europe. Anj. Yes; Christ had one dissuaded
he World; and the Pope made another, by Ufipation and Rebellion, which was
in Rome, as any Rebel might do that could get Strength, to set up a Party in
, to call him King, in some part of a Kingdom.

an Antichristianity as this, I make no doubt but the Papacy did become guilty
and none that owned it as such, and received their Mark, can be innocent; but
embraced by clearer Evidence than dark Prophecies; but I will not therefore say
me, all of, from Am. 304. (Or any other,) that lived before this contracted Grief,
so many at Rome, and other Countries, prepared the way; nor yet of all called
s, who own not the Crimes, and Characters of such Men; and much less of all
ible Church in any one Age; And least of all the Visible Church, since 304, or
about. The World hath already seen a great deal of publick Sin and Misery, in
by the Emperours of Pagans, Mahometans, and Christians, conquering and being
nered, turning and overturning, Thousands and hundred Thousands murdered, &c.
than I can mention in Daniel, or the Revelations.
An Advertisement.

In this Judgment I am (in Pain and Languishing) waiting for my Change; and Hope: a World, where all is expounded, and all Wickedness, Malignity, and Divisions are our, and Holiness, Love and Concord perfected, and all perfectly pleased in pleased God.

And as I can easily bear the Reproach of those that accuse me for no better understanding the Revelations, and of all that accuse me, of being either too little against Popery and Antichrist, or too much, being shortly to be above the ignorant Oblivion of the Extremists; so Readers, I earnestly advise you, that you never take Faction for Religion, nor lying or betraying Truth, for its Defence: Let them prove that Popes have not been Antichrists that can: It's none of my Work. But if you are never so sure that it is indeed, pull him not down by calling Truth, Duty or things lawful, Antichristian, nor by telling Men that all Protestants are Idolaters or Antichristian, if they forfake nor in Communion of all our Parochial Protestant Churches, and of all other Reformed Churches that are as bad as they, that the Papists may re-enter into them as defected Garrisons, and find no respite: Nor by telling the World that all our Laws against Popish Repeal to punish them, for not doing an unlawful thing, which all Protestants should refuse as well as they. This is no likelier a way to pull down Antichrist, than Raking and Tearing the Reformed Churches, by unlawful Snares, and silencing the Faithful Ministers of Christ. But above all, begin not the Papal Antichristianity, with the beginning of the Christians Deliverance by Constantine, nor too soon; nor feign it to be Universal: Read such Books, as Jewell, Rivet, Blondel, Peta, Moulin, Dalleus, &c. If you read Scholars, which prove the Novelty of Popery, and the confidant Offer of the present Bishop of Lincoln, Dr. Barlow, (no Stranger to Antiquity, or Books,) that he will reason, and turn to them. "Let them prove by any full and concluding Reason, that any Christian Church in the World acknowledged, or the Church of Rome herself acknowledged, and publickly pleaded for, such a Papal Supremacy as now they pretend to, for 1000 years, after our blessed Saviour, and for my own part, I will confess, and retract my Error.

Let them prove by any such concluding Reason, that any Church in the World (Catholic or Western, Greek or Latin,) did acknowledge (what now the Pope and his Party so earnestly and vainly contend for,) the Pope's Infallibility, and his Supremacy over all General Councils, for 1500 years after our Blessed Saviour, and for my part, I will retract what I have here affirmed, and be (what I hope I never shall be) their Prophylete.

Nov. 22.
Natalis Antebis.
Ætatis Suae, 70.

RICHARD BAXTER.
A POSTSCRIPT.

HESE Memoranda on review I think meet to annex.

1. It is a great Question whether our four Evangelists in the Greek do recite the very Words of Christ (and others) or tranlante them: And it dependeth on the Question, Whether Greke or Caldee (called Hebrew) was then that Vulgar Tongue in we must suppose Christ spake. And hitherto most Learned have supposed that it was the Caldee, and so that Christ’s words delivered to us but as translated. But the very learned Isaac Vossius newly asserted very confidently, that it was the Greek that was then common Tongue. I am no competent Judge; but several Pass-hinder me from assenting. 1. Act. 21, 37, 40. [Canst thou speak?] Whether this was [Vox dubitantis, or admirantis] is doubt-but which ever it was, it plainly implieth that Greek was not most usual Tongue. And v. 40. [He spake unto them in the Hebrew Tongue] &c. 22. 2. When they heard that he spake in the Hebrew to them, they kept the more silence.] This implieth that the Vul-gar underfoold it.

Act. 2, 8, 9, 10, 11. All the People named, tho’ in the Roman Inces, heard the Apostles speak in their own Tongues: Which teach that all these Countreys kept their own Languages, and that Greek was but the Learned’s Tongue, as Latin and Greek are now us; which few but Romans and the richer forta learnt, and com-ly used.

The Experience of the World tells us, how hardly the Vulgar ge their common Tongue: Wales, Cornwall, Ireland, &c. tell us this, the English is but rich Men’s Language, after many hundred years quest of the Britains, &c.

Whereas I have mentioned in the end the Bagauda, or Baquetes, as affirmed by the, the Life of Bobeline, &c. to be Christi-, and it seemeth to cross them that say, Christians never resisted the Heathen Em- by Arms: Let it be noted, 1. That there is probability that they were all Christians: For Writers make so great a number in France Bagaudarum etiam mem- minit Eusenius in Pa- nagyr, de Scholis Inflam- randis, us & Vita S. Mauricii Mart. Ex qua Christianos suisse decem- murr. Ex Glossario Doc. Fresne vocat Bagauda.
A Postscript.

and Spain to be for them, as sheweth that it was also the poorer for of the Vulgar Heathens that joined with them. 2. That however ho-
ly Salavian excuse them, and the Life of Biblesiae saint them, the ge-
nerality of Christian Writers disown them, and their Fact, and not
that I have seen do not so much as call them Christians, (as the thre
in Hottinger's Eccl. Hist.) though they deny it not. 3. And the Histo-
ry tells us, that God did not prosper them: There were many tho-
sands of them killed upon their Restistance, more than it's like Perse-
cution would have killed, however bloody Dinkfeian was. 4. An
those forenamed Historians make their Arms the occasion of the De-
cemating the Thebean Legion, and the Death of Mauritius and his Co-
pany: and the Persecution of Felix and his Companions, by Decius
Helvetia. 5. And they have left an Evil Name behind them, etc
among Christians as well as Heathens.

III. I will purposely omit much about the Mark of the Beast and
Number of his Name, lest I put thoughts into inquisitive Heads, which
may be abused. But whereas some eminent Doctors thought, that e-
the Beast had his Mark, Christ must have his in Christians Forheads,
and pleaded Ezek 9. 4. that the letter Tau was like the Crofs, for the
use of that Symbol. That most excellent Divine and Grammarian,
Matthias Martinus (the Light of Breme, and of the Synod of Dur-
thus confuted him in his Lexic. lib T. (against Origene and Breme)
"There are seen at this day the Cyn called Siciles, which are everyday
bed up at Jerusalem, and were in use under the Kings of Judea. In th
Cyn the same Letters are engraven which are read in the Samarian
Writings, without any the least change: And to think that the Lami of
the ancient Hebrews were other than those that are seen in those
Siciles, and which under the Kings in Judea, were in the Commerce
of the Jews, is extreme Folly and Unskilfulness. And the Samarian Tau
is far unlike a Crofs.

This proveth that the Samaritan was the old Hebrew Letter.

2. And as the Beast chose his own Mark, and left not the choice to
his Servants, so Christ hath chosen Baptism, and the Supper, and
leaveth it not to us to make more Sacraments, and Marks for him a
our pleasure.

But yet I would advise Protestants to take heed that they harden no
Papists, by calling that Crofs the Mark of the Beast, which the o
Churches called the Mark of Christ; such Oppositions strengthen the
Opposed.

III. Whereas some do before they see my Book, accuse me loud
as if I pleased that the Pope is not Antichrist, and that unreasonably:
them know, that as I say nothing but what I have summarily laid
that Point in all my Books these 27 years; so that it is a
question I little meddle with, having greater Arguments and
against Popery: My ignorance of most of the Revelations, I protest
and long have done: My Doubts on that are not who is Antichrist, or
who is the first and second Beast, ch. 13, and what is Babylon, and
A Postscript.

be Witnesses, &c. And so far am I from opposing wiser Men, that hereby crave their help for my better information, as a willing humble Learner. And as the Questions of the Catechism occasion Men's unfruitful Answers, so I am in hope that as I again recite some Difficulties, in which I need their Help, it may tend to their greater learning of the Truth. And nothing is held safer than that which hath had the greatest Objections and Difficulties solved: For instance,

I. Whether the Anti-god, 2 Th. 2. and the Beast, Rev. 13. and the Antichrists, Mat. 24. and 1 Jth. be the same, or divers? And whether he Rev. 20:2: of Antichrist at all?

II. Whether Mat. 24. 5. [Many shall come in my name, saying, I am Christ.] and v. 15. The Setter up of the Abomination of Desolation] be not two sorts: The first Antichrist's, and the second to the Romans, and 1 Jth. 4. 2. And this [the Spirit that confesseth not that Jesus is come the Flesh is τὸ ἐν αὐτῷ χειριστὸν is that Spirit of Antichrist] differ not accordingly from Rev. ?

III. Clear it better, that though Rome then eminently ruled over the Kings of the Earth, and fate on Seven Hills, and had all the Wealth and Glory there described, and Idolatrously worshipped Jupiter, Mars, and a multitude of Gods (called Devils by Paul) and Deity'd their Emperours, worshipping them with tears and Sacrifices, and by their Power and Learning kept up this fornicating Idolatry over a great part of the World, and also captivated the Church as Babylon had done the Jews, yet Pagan Rome was not Babylon, nor the Imperial Power of the First Beast, nor the literate Promoters of all this the Second Beast.

IV. That though the Angel told John how he might himself then now Babylon and the Beast, yet he meant not that it was that Pagan Rome and Power at all, which then had those Marks, but Papal Rome, which was to arise 600 or 1000 years after, which John was not to see.

V. Shew when Papal Rome began to be Babylon, and it's Power the east? Whether when Constantine delivered the Church from Pagan r when Phocas called Boniface Universal Bishop, or when Greg. 7. fell in murthering them by his Church Keys, &c.

VI. And why John of Constantine was not as much Antichrist, who aimed the same Power: And all Primates, seeing it was but a Priacy in the Empire, and not over all other Princes Dominions in the Earth, that Phocas gave or meant.

VII. Whether all the Christian Godly Emperours, succeeding the rians, and sitting at Constantinople, and not at Rome, were the Beast so?

VIII. And seeing it's commonly said that the Civil Power was the first Beast, and the Ecclesiatical the Second, and the Pope is both; prove that the Pope was the first Beast the first 800 years or more, while he was a Subject to the Emperours and the Gothish Kings; and
since, when he had not half so large a Civil Power as the Emperour, or King of France, Spain, &c. but Rome it self, and most of Italy near him fought against him.

IX. Seeing the Pope claimed his Ecclesiastical Power, many Hundred Years before his Civil Power, and yet is both the first and second Beast, and the seventh and eighth Head, evince it that the second Beast, and the eighth Head was so many Hundred Years before the first Beast and seventh Head, when the Office of these was to promote the Worship of the first.

X. Seeing the seven Heads are seven sorts of Supreme Power, and all of one Beast, and one Babylon; and that Papal Rome and its Civil Power, was so many hundred years younger than Pagan Rome, evince it that the Pagan Six Governments were Heads of Papal Rome, or else the Pope was the seventh and eighth Head of Pagan Rome: or else that Pagan and Papal Empire were but one, though of different Species of Idolatry, and of many hundred years distance from each other.

XI. Whether Papal Rome, which If. Vellius faith is almost confin'd to the Campus Martius, and sits not on half the Seven Hills: nor (faith he) containeth above the 200th part of the old Rome's ground, be rather the City on seven Hills, than that which John knew to be such indeed.

XII. Whether when we differ about the Birth of the Papal Beast, so much that some begin him 304, some 606, some near 1160, some about 1300. it will not let us at as great difference about the Thousand Tears, the times of the Trumpets, Vials, &c. and about a great part of the Revelations.

XIII. Clear it up, that those Popes who claimed not Universal Supremacy, Infallibility or Power, over Princes or Councils, were the two Beasts and Antichrist, as well as those that did.

XIV. And that verily the two Beasts were but one in two relations, viz. the Pope as Civil Emperour, and as the Church Supreme, tho' many plain Words seem to make them two, and of two Orders and Offices.

XV. And that really there were Six Supreme Powers at Rome before Popes; where four of the six, if not five, were not Supreme, but under the Senate, which yet is made none of the six.

XVI. And that the Vision past over all the cafe, Sin, Idolatry, Persecution of Pagan Rome, as far as is supposed by most with us.

XVII. And that the two Witnesses are Protestants that never work Miracles, preaching down Popery, and are not the old Ministers, few and Gentile, or Eastern or Western, preaching down Pagan Rome, tho' it be as certain as History can make it, that for 300 years Miracles against Paganism were wrought; and when Dioclesian had killed them, God revived the testimony of Miracles 100 years after that, and then exalted the Preachers to another kind of Power. And the special qualification of the Witnesses, seemeth to be miracle-working to confound Idolaters and persecutors, (cho the particulars be named in a Prophetical strain.)
A Postscript.

find Cyprian challenging the Pagans to come to their Assent men possessed by the Devil, and they should hear and see field to the power of Christ, and acknowledge him: And Au- in his time tells us of Miracles wrought in the open Church in. And Sulpitius Severus, a Learned Godly Man, and his Co tells us of many that Martin wrought. And of Gregory Naocet Thaumaturgus I think none denied it. (to pass by many others) though Gregory of Rome, and Beda, and perhaps Sulpitius, and o before that, may over-magnifie them, and upon false reports, d (as credulous) more than was true, it would be a far worse to believe none of them, than it was in them upon others re believe too much. And indeed it hath always been the Devils make Truth discredited, by stirring up rath Zealots, to mix tisvood, and so Unda by Overdoing, (as they did here in many of Prodigies 1652.) And the Papists Legends have almost red the belief of these real Miracles, which Christs famous Wit both in the Eastern and Western Churches, wrought; which done to acquit Poperly (for it was not then in being) but Christi And hereby the Church grew to that greatness and glory, Eusebius describeth in the reign of Dioclesian, who killed thm of their increasing strength; and yet in Constantine’s days, and God raised Miracle working a while, till Heathenism was brought and the Church had power over them, and then Heaven restrai at power, and gave it to men on Earth but rarely, or no more, vel not if it puzzle such as me (who confess my self but a no this study) to find Expositors, sometime take the Papal Civil tour for the Beast, and that many hundred years before there n such, and sometime say Idolatry is the Beast, and sometime a Jazz Rome is the Beast, and sometime that it is the Roman Empr as comprehending both the Pagan and Papal Emperour: me making the Pagan Soveraign Power to be Heads of the Paus, (when indeed the most of them were no Soveraigns at all) me making the Papacy both the Beast and the Head of the Beast; same Papacy to be Two Beasts (first and second) and two heads seventh and eighth) of himself: And putting the Ecclesiastical or Civil and Imperial, or long before his Imperial. Making the Emperour of the Roman Empire: Making the Pagan Empire bounded and healed Head of the Papacy, expounding Cap.13.12. Dece Beasts excersing the power of the first [before him] that is, himself] causine men to worship the first Beast] that is, himself; Pagan Empire, or both. And C. 17.8. The Beast that was and is now] oth Beast that shall be.] And c. 15. Where the Whore sitteth is (Where he sitteth hereafter) And 18. The great City which reigneth is (which sign by Papacy.) And c. 13. (in his heads the name of Beas) but on [one of his seven Heads, or two in one.] And that the of the Beast is the Beast himself, as he is the Image of the Pagan re, which yet is not the Beast, E c c 2 That
That then the Text plainly maketh the ten Horns, or Kings, c.13.1. to belong to the seven Heads (which are Kings also, c. 17. 10.) they are yet said to belong only to the Pope, and not at all to the other six. That when it is said, c.17. 10. that when the seventh King (or Head) is said to continue a short space, the Pope is said to be that King, who hath continued so long, and is by the same men said to be he that shall continue forty and two months of years, on c. 13. 5. To avoid which, some make the first Christian Emperours the seventh King or Head, (taking Kings not for Individual, but Species of Government) when yet the Species was the same with that of Pagan Emperours, and far at Constantinople and not at Rome, and continued longer than the Pagan Empire. These and many such difficulties, being well removed, (which I desire by naming them) the Revelations will be better understood.

But I intreat the Answereers not to put the Solution as in the Creed, nor too rigorously condemn all that do not presently understand them. If some still shall judge of the Papists, as they do of the Greeks, Abissines, Moscovites, &c. that have much lamentable Ignorance, Error and Sin, and shall defeat among them the crimes of Ambition, Ignorance, corrupt Worship, bloody Persecution, and such like; and yet be uncertain whether they are all Antichristian, and the Papacy and Papal Rome to be the Beasts and Babylon, and therefore shall Love good men and distress the bad, though both called Papists, being afraid of hating whole Kingdoms as a party, and afraid of the dreadful curse of adding to this Prophesie; do not over hastily condemn such men.

Obj. But it’s passionately said [Is this a season to say so much, to abate men’s hatred of Popery] what if one had wrote thus in the days of Bonner and Gardiner.

Answ. 1. It is not to abate any just hatred of Popery, but an unrighteous hatred of men, and of Christians, though faulty. 2. Either what I say is True or False: If false, it’s worse than unseasonable (and professed ignorance is not falseness.) If true, it can never be unseasonable when the case of so many Christian Souls and Kingdoms, is so much concerned in it. It is never unseasonable to hate, Accuse or Condemn, Kingdoms and Millions through many Ages, upon mistake, and to be unwilling to try whether it be so or not. True Christian Charity is never to be unseasonable. 3. Were it in the time of Bonner (as it is not) it were then most seasonable, to speak such truth, as seven Men from running into Extremes, and sinful hatred and accusations of Millions unknown, when Persecution maketh the Temporons strongest to such Sin. 4. I write more for others that shall see such helps, when I am dead, than for the present time: and then it may not be judged unseasonable Sinful means of our own devising, the they seem Necessary to the Present advantage, will prove pernicious, though called before Seasonable. 5. If Papists be bloody and set upon destruction, as the Objectors say, It is Sin and Folly to increase and Sublime their wrath. What causeth Hatred more than to be Hated? Seeking
A Postscript.

Seeking to shame and destroy men, is the most effectual way to engage them to shame and destroy you. Is it not much for hurting you, that you are so much against the parties that you suffer by.

If you think that I love popery better than heretofore, I here tell you that I retract none of the arguments which in eight or nine books I have published against them. If you can better confute them, I hinder no man. If you contend all those writings, so do not the papists, who have determined not to answer them till I am dead or disabled. In the mean time, the nominal protestant on both extremities, are to publish many volumes of false accusations against me, that at least, the papists may have this to say, 'The protestants and sectaries have ever and ever declared him to be an unconfessible incredible lyar. But there is none of this work in heaven.'

1. That which no church of Christ understood or owned for 600 or 1000 years after Christ, and which such excellent men as Basil, Chrysostome, Augustine, &c. and such reformers as Calvin, profess that they understood not, (and about which the most studious and confident expounders greatly differ) it is not to be judged necessary to be now understood and owned for the measure of our faith and love to others.

But such are the expositions of the Revelations, which are now doubted of. Ergo, &c. 2. That which the generality of godly christians understand not, but must take upon the bare credit of their teachers (who, mostly understanding it not themselves, and the rest so differ that four men being of three opinions, most must needs be in the wrong,) is not to be taken as the measure of our orthodoxy or love to others. But such are the expositions now questioned. Ergo,

3. That which tendeth to the hardening and confirming of papists (and increasing the rage of the cruel part of them) is not to be obstructed on all godly people as a necessary means against them.

But so doth the laying the protestants cause upon these doubtful disputable expositions of the Revelations (while we have the creed and commandments, and all the plain scripture to try mens faith and practice by) Ergo,

4. It is very dangerous to lay so great a stress on mens opinions of things, which they can take but upon trust from their disagreeing teachers, when if they should prove wrong, it will involve them in the guilt of unchristian disaffection to many ages, kingdoms, and millions of christians, and sinful discord, and false desires and prayers to God, and running into many sinful extremities. But this is the case in question: where I am not sure of many mens exposition of the Revelations, I am sure that God is love, and he that dwelleth in love dwelleth in God, and God in him; and he thatareth his brother is a murderer, and no murderer hath eternal life abiding in him; and he is a lyar that saith he loveth God, and loveth not his brother. And a man's soul must not be ventured on such sin as this, by doubtful opinions of traditions,
A Postscript.

traditions, Incomparable David Blundel bore very great cenure of his Brethren, for confuting the Fable of Pope Joane, and yet did thereby good service to the Reformed, and none to Popery; nor are the Learned Readers now angry with him.

Reader, If thou cenure me for saying all this, know that the present clamour (and consequently, necessity) of many against my Book before they saw it did Exert it, from

A Lover of TRUTH, LOVE, and Beneficence, and a hater of FALS:HOOD, MALIGNITY and HURTFULNESS.

Mr. Baxter's own Account of the Cause of his Imprisonment, left under his own Hand to be Printed with his Paraphrase.

READER,

It's like you have heard how I was for this Book by the instigation of Sir Roger L'esrange and some of the Clergy, Imprison'd near two years by Sir Geo. Gefferys, Sir Francis Withins, and the rest of the Judges of the Kings-Bench, after their Preparatory restraints and attendants under the most reproachful words, as if I had been the most odious person living, and not suffered at all to speak for myself; and had not the King taken off my Fine I had continued in Prison till death. Because many desire to know what all this was for, I have here written the Eight Accusations which (after the great Clergy search of my Book) were brought in as seditions. I have altered never a word, accused, that you may know the worst: What I said of the murderers of Christ, and the Hypocrite Pharisees, and their sins, the Judge said I meant it of the Church of England, though I have written for it, and still communicate with it. The accused words are The Paraphrase I. On Mat. 5. 19. II. On Mark 3. 6. III. On Mark 9. 39. IV. On Mark 11. 31. V. On Mark 12. 38, 39, 40. VI. On Luk. 10. 2. VII. On Job. 11. 57. VIII. On Acts. 15. 2. Note, these were all: Though a Reverend Doctor that knoweth his own name put into their hands some Accusations out of Rom. 13, &c. as against the King to touch my Life, but their discretion forbid them to use or name them.


FINIS.


2. A Pacifying Praxis or Dialogue about the Five Articles, Justification, &c. proving, that Men here contend almost only about ambiguous Words, and unrevealed things. (3.) Pacifying Disputations gainst some Real Errors, which hinder Reconciliation, viz. About Physical Predestination, Original Sin, the Extent of Redemption, sufficient Grace, Imputation of Righteousness, &c. Folio.

---

His Treatise of Episcopacy. Quarto.

---

His Life of Faith, in Three Parts. The First is a Sermon on Job 11. 1., formerly Preached before his Majesty Charles II. and published by his Command: With another added, for the fuller Application. (2.) Instructions for confirming Believers in the Christian faith. (3.) Directions how to live by Faith, or how to exercise it upon all occasions. Quarto.

---

Treatise of Knowledge and Love compard. In Two Parts. 1. Of falsely pretended Knowledge. 2. Of true Saving Knowledge and Love. (1.) Against hasty Judging, and false Conjectures of Knowledge. (2.) The Excellency of Divine Love, and the Happiness of being known and loved of God.

---

Catholick Communion. In Five Parts. Against both Extremes. Quarto.

---

Church Concord, containing (1.) A Diffusive from necessary Division and Separation, &c. (2.) The Terms necessary for all Churches and Christians. Quarto.

---

Church History and Councils abridg’d. Quarto.

---

History of Councils enlarged and defended. Quarto.

---

National Churches, their Institution, Use, &c.

---

The Catechizing of Families: A Teacher of Householders how to teach their Households. Useful also to Schoolmasters and Teachers Youth. Octavo.

---

Against the Revolt to a Foreign Jurisdiction, which would be England its Perjury, Church-Ruine and Slavery. In two Parts. The History of Men’s Endeavours to introduce it. 1. The Confusion of all Pretences for it. Dedicated to the Archbp. of Canterbury.

---

Key for Catholicks: Opening the Jugling of the Jesuits.

---

Full and easie Satisfaction concerning the Safe Religion. The Glorious Kingdom of Christ described, and clearly vindicated against the Afferters of a Future Calling and Reign of the Jews, and a Thousand Years before Conflagration, and the Afferters of a Thousand Years Kingdom after the Conflagration, &c. Quarto.

---

The Scripture-Gospel defended; and Christ, Grace and Free Justification Vindicated against the Liberrines, &c. Octavo.

---

Cain and Abel, Malignity: Enemy to Serious Godlines, to an Holy and Meaty State of Heart and Life detected, &c. Octavo.

---

His Paraphrase on the Psalms of David, in Metre, with other Hymns.

---

His Funeral Sermon. Publish’d by himself.

---

His Search for a Schismatike. All by Richard Baxter.
MR. Boyle's Notion of Nature.
— His Final Causes.
— His Martyrdom of Theodora and Dydimus.
— His Experiments & Observat. Physic.
— His Christian Virtus.
— His Nat. History.
— Seraphick Love.
— His Medicinal Experiments.
Lord Vicount Shannon's Characters, and Moral Discourses.
— His Letter to an Athieftical Acquaintance.
Plutarch's Morals, Englished by several hands, Five Volumes.
Kirkwood's New Family-Book, with a Preface by Dr. Hornbeck.
Abbadies Truth of the Christian Religion.
Counsellor Mavor's Legacy to his Son.
Osborn's Works, Divine, Moral, Historial and Political.
Baxter's Call to the Unconverted.
Quintilian's Declamations Englished.
Dyer's Works.
Foxes and Firebrands.
Monsieur Thevenot's Travels, Fol.
Busbequius Epistles of an Embassie to Turkey.
Art of Thinking.
Bishop Hopkin's 3 Vol. of Sermons and Discourses.
— His Exposi. of the Commandments.
— Lords' Prayer.
Bishop Uther's Life and Letters, Fol.
Youth's Comedy.
Gouge's Word to Saints and Sinners.
— His Christian Directions.
The Countefs of Warwick's Life.

BOOKS Printed for John Wyat at the Rose in St. Paul Church-yard.

Family-Devotions for Sunday Evenings, in two Volumes, each containing Thirteen Sermons, with suitable Prayers for two Quarters of the Year. The third and fourth Volumes will speedily be committed to the Press, which will compleat the Authors design of making a course for the whole year. By Theophilus Dorrington.

An Enquiry into several Remarkable Texts of the Old and New Testaments, which contain some Difficulty in them, with a Probable Resolution of them; in two Volumes. O8avo.

A Discourse concerning the Authority, Style and Perfection of the Books of the Old and New Testament, with a continued Illustration of several Difficult Texts of Scripture throughout the whole Work. In three Volumes: 8vo. All written by John Edwards, B.D. Late Fellow of St. John's College in Cambridge.